

UNIVERSITY
OF FLORIDA
LIBRARIES



GREENE & Co.
NEW & SECOND-HAND BOOKSELLERS
16, CLARE STREET,
DUBLIN.

D. T. DOHERTY,
STEAMPRINTER & LITHOGRAPHER
BOOKBINDER,
WHOLESALE & RETAIL STATIONER
58, ANN STREET, BELFAST.



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD

A Monthly Journal,

UNDER EPISCOPAL SANCTION

THIRD SERIES.

VOLUME VIII.—1887.

“ Ut Christiani ita et Romani sitis.”

“ As you are children of Christ, so be you children of Rome.”

Ex Dictis S. Patricii, Book of Armagh, fol. 9

DUBLIN :
BROWNE & NOLAN, NASSAU-STREET.
1887.

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Nihil Obstat.

GIRALDUS MOLLOY, S.T.D.,
CENSOR DEP.

Imprimatur.

✠ GULIELMUS,
Archiep. Dublin., Hiberniae Primas.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Act of Perfect Contrition and Perfect Charity, The	865, 991
Alphabet, The	147, 350
Altars and Chancels, Dimensions and Proportions of	492
Among the Graves—V.	681
Aquinas, St. Thomas, The Politics of	690
Arran of the Saints	118
Augustinian Literature, Recent	1069
Barry, Robert, Bishop of Cork and Cloyne, 1647-1662	702
Bigotry	481
Bossuet and Claude	1016
Canadian Sketches	979
<i>Catholic Dictionary</i> , The Brown Scapular and the	794, 1004
Chancel, Dimensions and Proportions of Altars and	492
Charity, Perfect, The Act of Perfect Contrition and	865, 991
Church Abroad, The 77, 162, 255, 373, 456, 550, 634, 1035, 1133	
Civil Law in Ireland, Clerical Ministry and	324
Clare West, Proselytism in: A Retrospect	411
Claude, Bossuet and	1016
Clerical Ministry and Civil Law in Ireland	324
Comerford, O.S.A., Dr. Patrick, Bishop of Waterford and Lis- more, 1629-1652, Memoir of	1082
Communion, Frequent	57
Contrition, Perfect, and Perfect Charity, The Act of	865, 991
CORRESPONDENCE:—	
Deaf and Dumb, On the Oral System of teaching the	167, 261, 642, 749 833, 951
George, Mr. Henry, The Economic Doctrine of	1044, 1133
Intermediate System, The Examination Papers under the, and Public Opinion	268
Missa Pro Populo in Ireland	744
Nationalization of the Land	947
Plurality of Ancient Benefices	744
Rosminian Philosophy, The	85
Council of Trent, Sketch of the History of the	193
Deaf and Dumb, The Oral System of Teaching the (See also Correspondence)	1093
De Burgo, Dr. Hugh	577, 731, 828
Diocesan Synod, Phases of the	399

	PAGE
DOCUMENTS :—	
Absolution, General, and Blessings, with Plenary Indulgence	563
Abstinence Union, Catholic Total, Brief of His Holiness	
Leo XIII. on, addressed to the Right Rev. Dr. Ireland,	
Bishop of St. Paul, Minnesota	476
Administration, Letters of, Official Notice regarding Pro-	
bate of Wills and	853
Benedict XIV., The Decree of, published for Holland in	
1741, is extended to all the Dioceses of the United States	
in which the Decree <i>Tametsi</i> has been published	278
Church, Indulgences retained in a New	661
Confraternities, Scapular, Decree of the Sacred Congregation	
of Indulgences on various points relating to the Blessing	
of Scapulars and Privileges of	1045
Daily Offerings, Indulged Form of	186
English Martyrs, Beatification of the Fifty-four (See also	
“ Rites ”)	182
Erhard, (St.) Bishop of Ardagh, and Secondary Patron of the	
Diocese of Ratisbon, Interesting Correspondence between	
the Most Rev. Dr. Woodlock, Bishop of Ardagh, and	
the Most Rev. the Bishop of Ratisbon, regarding	88
Exposition, Altar of, on Holy Thursday, Decree of the	
Congregation of Rites regarding	1049
Feast Days of Obligation, The Number of, in the United	
States reduced to six	276
Indulgences, Decrees of the S. Congregation of	185, 1142
Italy, Prohibition to take part in the Elections in	662
“ Knights of Labour,” Important Statement regarding the	
Association of the, prepared by Cardinal Gibbons and	
presented by his Eminence to the Cardinal Prefect of	
Propaganda	461
“ Knights of Labour,” Letter from Cardinal Manning to an	
eminent prelate expressing his adhesion to the views put	
forward by Cardinal Gibbons regarding the Association	
of the	475
Leo XIII., Letter of His Holiness to the Archbishop of	
of Cologne	555
Leo XIII., Letter of His Holiness to Cardinal Gibbons on	
the Catholic University for the United States	558
Leo XIII., Letter of His Holiness on the Study of the	
Natural Sciences	560
Manning, Cardinal, Letter from, to an eminent prelate	
expressing his adhesion to the views put forward by	
Cardinal Gibbons regarding the Association of the	
“ Knights of Labour ”	475
Mass pro populo, Decree of the S. Congregation of the	
Council regarding the Pastoral obligation of offering	753

DOCUMENTS—*continued.*

Mass, S. Congregation of the Council regarding the obligation of a Parish Priest to offer, for his separate parishes .	1051
Matrimonial Dispensations, Decree of the Sacred Penitentiary regarding the mode of executing certain .	756
Mixed Marriages, Letter of S. Congregation of the Holy Office to the Cardinal Archbishop of Strigonia on the subject of .	749
Nuptial Bénédiction, Decree of the S. Congregation of Rites regarding the .	660
Passion of Our Lord, The Offices of the, take precedence of the Offices, even Primary, of Feasts of equal rite in occurrence and concurrence .	281
Pœnitentiae, Decisions of the S. Penitentiary regarding the Interrogations to be made in certain cases in foro Pœnitentiae .	92
Privileged Altar, The Indulgence of the .	564
Probate of Wills and Letters of Administration, Official Notice regarding .	853
Quasi-Domicile purposes, Request from the Plenary Council of Baltimore that a mere residence for a month would suffice for—Request deferred .	280
Rites, Decree of the Sacred Congregation of, for the Introduction of the Cause of Beatification or Declaration of Martyrdom of two hundred and sixty-one Venerable Servants of God, who were put to death in England for the Faith .	380
Rosary, Decree of the S. Congregation of Indulgences regarding the .	754
Rosary Documents all issued since 1883 .	924
Scapulars, Decree of the S. Congregation of Indulgences on various points relating to the Blessing of, and the Indulgences and Privileges of Scapular Confraternities .	1045
Scapular of Mount Carmel, Condition for Enrolment in the .	658
Scapulars, Indulgences of the .	562
Sciences, Natural, Letter of His Holiness Leo XIII. on the Study of the .	560
Stipend for Requiem High Mass, Reply regarding the, addressed to the late Bishop of Providence, U.S.A., by the Cardinal Prefect of the Congregation de Propaganda Fide, dated July 10th, 1885 .	659
Trappists, Decree of the S. Congregation of Bishops and Regulars declaring that the Institute of the, is approved by the Holy See as a part of the Cistercian Order .	755
University, Catholic, for the United States, Letter of His Holiness Léo XIII. to Cardinal Gibbons, on the .	55

DOCUMENTS—*continued*.

United States, The Number of Feast Days of Obligation in the, reduced to six	276
Vagi, Decision of the S. Congregation of the Council in an instructive Matrimonial Case regarding	851
Vestments, Decree regarding the Materials to be used in	758
Wills, Probate of, and Letters of Administration, Official Notice regarding	853
Feast of the Holy Name, The Origin of the	905
"Forma Substantialis" of Scholasticism, The	917
French Schools and Republican Rulers	769
Gallic Muses, The German and	42
German and Gallic Muses, The	42
Graves, Among the—V.	681
Great Britain, The Leakage of the Church in	343
Holy Name, The Origin of the Feast of the	905
Haynes' Observations on the state of Ireland in 1600	1112
Indian Mutiny, Some Catholic Reminiscences of	513, 603
Inniskeel	781
Ireland, Clerical Ministry and Civil Law in	324
Ireland, The Holy Wells of—Westmeath	818
Irish Bishops of Lindisfarne, The	289
Irish Bishops, Important Resolutions of the, on Coercion, the Land Bill, and the Education Question	477, 657
Irish Language, Is it worth preserving?	595
Irish Missionary Types	875
Iûrad—Its History, Signification and Tense	739
"Leakage" of the Church in Great Britain, The	343
Lindisfarne, The Irish Bishops of	289

LITURGICAL QUESTIONS:—

<i>A Cunctis</i> , The Prayer, in the Mass	1031
Advent 1886, The Last Wednesday in	76
Antiphon of the Blessed Virgin, The, should it be always said twice in the Office?	1033
Calendar and <i>Ordo Officii Divini</i> for May and June 1887, The	71
Chalice, Carrying the, to the Altar	1034, 1131
Commemorations on the Feast of the Patron	1031
Communion Cloth, Substitute for the usual	370
Confession as a condition for gaining an indulgence, when must it be made?	368
Confession, Weekly, for Current Indulgences	157
Corporal, Extending the, at beginning of Mass	1034
Dolour Scapulars	369
Feast of the Most Holy Redeemer, Preface to be said on the Indulgence, Confession as a condition for gaining an, when must it be made?	1132
Indulgences, Weekly Confession for current	368
	157

LITURGICAL QUESTIONS—*continued.*

Lunette, Consecrating the Host on the Glass	1132
Marriage Ceremony, The	161
Mass-to be said, Case of difficulty in determining the	1030
<i>Missa pro pace</i> on the Second Day of the Quarant' Ore	369
Office, should the Antiphon of the Blessed Virgin be always said twice in the?	1033
<i>Ordo Officii Divini</i> for May and June, 1887, The Calendar and Patron, Commemoration on the Feast of the	71 1031
Quarant' Ore, <i>Missa pro pace</i> on the Second Day of	369
Scapulars, Dolour	369
Suffragia, The, in the Votive Offices	372
Votive Offices, The Suffragia in the	372
"Materia Prima" of Scholasticism, The	618
Missionary Types, Irish	875
Mivart's (Dr.) Defence of Theism 1, 97, 303, 421,	961
Mozarabic Rite, The	808
New Zealand, Some Reasons why Catholics lose the Faith in	205
Nomina Patriciana	385, 886

NOTICES OF BOOKS :—

Annales de Philosophie Chrétienne	668
Annunziata; or, the Gipsy Child	666
Battle of the Faith in Ireland, The	187
Canonical Procedure in Disciplinary and Criminal Cases of Clerics	1144
Castle of Coetquen The, or, Patira	96
Catholic Truth Society's Publications	767
<i>Catholic World</i>	670
Church of Old England, The	670
Children's Mass, The	767
Civilization of the Eastern Iranians in Ancient Times	93
Clothes of Religion, The	572
Coiner's Grave, The	671
Companion to the Catechism, A	287
Compendium Theologiae Moralis (Lehmkuhl)	863
" " " (De Varceno)	1052
Consolation to those in suffering	576
Conversations on the Blessed Sacrament	765
Cornelii Taciti Annalium Liber I.	960
Edward the Sixth	669
For the Old Land	667
Gems of Catholic Thought	572
Giordano Bruno e i suoi Tempi	569
Glimpses of a Hidden Life	286
Glories of Divine Grace, The	669
Golden Sands	95
Great Means of Salvation, The	671

NOTICES OF BOOKS—*continued*.

PAGE

Handbook of the History of Philosophy	761
History of St. Cuthbert, The	857
Hymn to the Eternal	667
Indifferentism ; or, is one Religion as good as another ?	953
Introduction to English Rhetoric	666
Irish Songs and Poems	672
Lalla Rookh	767
Leaves from St. Augustine	665
Legends and Records of the Church and Empire	958
Life of Antonio Rcsmini Serbati, Founder of the Institute of Charity, The	190
Life of Brother Paul O'Connor, The	286
„ Frederick Lucas, M.P.,	282
„ Jean Baptiste Muard	565
„ „ Leo the Thirteenth	768
„ „ St. Cuthbert	858
„ „ St. Cuthbert (Ven. Bede)	1053
Little Compliment of the Season	576
Marriage	758
Maxims and Counsels of St. Ignatius Loyola	95
Maxims of Christian Perfection	862
Maynooth College Calendar	955
Meditations on the Sufferings of Jesus Christ	864
Memoir of Father Felix Joseph Barbelin	1054
Month of the Dead	576
Moore's Irish Melodies	767
Moy O'Brien	861
Names of the Eucharist, The	764
Old Religion in England, The	571
Our Divine Saviour and Other Discourses	856
Percy's Revenge	672
Poetry of Sir Samuel Ferguson, The	672
Purgatory, Dogmatic and Scholastic	479
Religious Houses of the United Kingdom, The	480
Revelations made by Our Lord to Blessed Margaret Mary	860
St. Teresa's Pater Noster	568
Salve Regina	672
School of Divine Love or Elevations of the Soul to God, The	96
Select Recitations	768
Sermons at Mass	567
Sermons of the Rev. Joseph Farrell	573
Sermons from the Flemish	1056
Shamrocks	763
Short Papers for the People	663

NOTICES OF BOOKS—*continued.*

Simple Readings on some of the Parables	576
Some Historical Notices of the O'Meaghers of Ikerrin	859
— St. Germaine Cousin	576
Stonemason of Saint-Point, The	671
Tales of Eventide	1143
Theologia Moralis	1054
Thoughts of St. Alphonsus Liguori	576
Throne of the Fisherman built by the Carpenter's Son	956
To-day's Gem for the Casket of Mary	95
Where was St. Patrick born? (<i>Dublin Review</i>)	1055
Olier, Jean Jacques, Founder of the Sulpicians, The Life of	28
Orders, Religious, The Origin of	673
Palladius, St. Patrick and	723
Patrician Documents	229
Patriciana, Nomina	385, 886
Patrick (St.), Palladius and	723
Philosophy, The Rosminian (See also Correspondence)	214, 331
Politics of St. Thomas Aquinas, The	690
Popular Speaking and Preaching	1057
Probabilism, On	506, 587, 712
Proselytism in West Clare: A Retrospect	411
Religious Orders, The Origin of	673
Republican Rulers, French Schools and	769
Rosary Documents	924
Rosminian Philosophy, The (See also Correspondence)	214, 331
Sacristies, Arrangement of	492
Scapular, The Brown and the <i>Catholic Dictionary</i>	794, 1004
Scholasticism, The "Forma Substantialis" of	917
Scholasticism, The "Materia Prima" of	618
Sulpicians, The Life of Jean Jacques Olier, Founder of the	28
Synod, Phases of the Diocesan	399
Theism, Dr. Mivart's Defence of	1, 97, 303, 421, 961

THEOLOGICAL QUESTIONS:—

Absolution from Heresy	625
Acceleratio Partus	453
Baptism, may the Minister of, act as Sponsor?	364
Butter, The use, on certain Vigils	70
Buying and selling, The Price in	364
Casus sub Impedimento Metus	452
Chaplain of a Workhouse, Duty of the, to non-Catholic inmates in danger of death	454
Communion, Fast required for	450
Confession of Doubtful Sins	359
Domicile, The kind of, required for receiving Orders from Episcopus Domicilii	629
Doubtful Sins, Confession of	349

	PAGE
THEOLOGICAL QUESTIONS— <i>continued.</i>	
Fast required for Communion	450
Fasting Obligation, A Case under the	548
Heresy, Absolution from	625
Idiots, Capacity of, for the Sacraments	630
Impedimento Metus, Casus sub	452
Marriage, Consent of Parents in	631
Marriages, Mixed, and their consequences. Important cases	63
Minister of Baptism, May the, act as Sponsor? . . .	364
Negotiatio and the Annexed Censure	1123
Orders, The kind of Domicile required for receiving from	
Episcopus Domicilii	629
Parents, Consent of, in Marriage	631
Partus Acceleratio	453
Price, The, in buying and selling	364
Quasi-Domicile	545
Secret Societies and the Confessional	547
Sickness, The, in which the Viaticum is given . . .	451
Selling, The Price in Buying and	364
Sponsor, May the Minister of Baptism act as? . . .	364
Sponsorship by Proxy	547
Various Questions	252
Viaticum The, The sickness in which it is given . . .	451
Vigils; The Use of Butter in certain , , .	70
Workhouse, Duties of the Chaplain of a, to non-Catholic inmates in danger of Death	454
Thomas (St.) Archbishop of Canterbury, The Habit of . .	526
Thomas (St.) Aquinas, The Politics of	690
Thomas (St.) Was he a Thomist?	441
Trent, Sketch of the History of the Council of . . .	193
Universals, The Controversy on	128
Vacation in 1886	20, 137, 242
Viaticum, Thoughts on the	539
Westmeath, The Holy Wells of	818

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

JANUARY, 1887.

DR. MIVART'S DEFENCE OF THEISM.

IT occurs to me that there has not yet appeared in the RECORD any sufficient notice of Dr. Mivart's latest work,¹ which is now going through a second edition. And yet it is a notable book,—notable both for the importance of the questions which it treats, and for the conspicuous ability with which they are treated. It belongs, however, to the third rather than to either the first or second of Bacon's classes; if lightly tasted or hastily swallowed, it is a rather disagreeable pill of little utility; but when chewed and digested it will be found to give out juices of sweetest savour, as well as of greatest efficacy both for the correction of philosophic thought and for the sustainment of intellectual life.

Many priests who are fairly read in the philosophy of the Schools, feel a want somewhere;—as if the old principles would not harmonize with modern progress; as if the peripatetic philosophy were brushed aside by the rapid rush of physical science in these latter days. Chemistry seems to many to have done away with substantial forms in inorganic matter; and evolution threatens to be equally destructive to the old notions which prevailed about living things. We are taught to believe more in gases and molecules, in forces and modes of motion. Dr. Mivart has done noble work for those who feel the difficulty here suggested; without prejudice to others one may be allowed to link with his name that of Fr. Harper.²

¹ "Nature and Thought." London: Burns & Oates.

² "Metaphysics of the School." London: Macmillan & Co.

Dr. Mivart is too well known to need any introduction to the readers of these pages. Without, however, committing myself in any way to all his views, it may not be out of place to remark how exceptionally well his life-training has fitted him for the defence of Theism. For he knows what few know,—both sides of the question. Having struggled, as he himself tells us, out of the philosophy of ‘nescience,’ he has taken a foremost part in the controversies which are connected with Darwin’s theories; he is therefore well qualified to tell us what materialists mean. He knows their books as well as they do themselves; many of their ablest men in England he has met; he has discussed the leading questions with them personally; in private intercourse and in the press they have combated his opinions. And he is no less a master of the old than of the new philosophy.

It is not my purpose to review here all the questions which Dr. Mivart has treated; such a task would demand extensive knowledge of biology and physiology, not to mention other natural sciences,—knowledge to which I have no claim. As a rule, however, his books culminate in a defence of Theism. He is a student of nature, but only to feel the insufficiency of the study; he is not content with observation and experiment, he is a philosopher and must know the *why*. Every harmony of force, every new process of development, every shade of beauty, serves but as a link in the great chain of causes by which he, as every true philosopher, is led up to God.

In explaining Dr. Mivart’s defence of Theism, I should like, as far as possible, to make use of his own words and his own form of argument; but they are not such as some readers may be accustomed to. I will claim the indulgence of putting the case in my own way, drawing occasionally on other sources for arguments which, perhaps, Dr. Mivart may think of little worth. The chain of reasoning and many of its links shall be supplied by him; here and there I shall venture to make additions from other sources.

The doctrine of Theism is based on the following theses.
 (1) There was always something. (2) There is and must

always have been underneath, behind, and distinct from matter, an agent which ever works in and through matter, and which created it, if it ever was created. (3) This hidden agent is itself without cause. (4) It is a substance complete and rational, and therefore a person. (5) The Personal First Cause is such that all created intelligences and wills are bound to submit to Him; nay more, He is such that all possible wills and intelligences should, if created, be bound so to submit themselves. Let us consider these theses in order.

THESIS I.

“There was always something.”

Reasonable minds will have no difficulty in admitting this; it is a truth based on a well-known principle,—nothing can come into existence without a sufficient cause. If ever there was nothing, no thing could ever begin to be. Hence materialists, when off their guard, contend that matter was always in existence; this is an admission of our first thesis.

The foregoing argument is based on two suppositions;—(1) that *there is something*; (2) that the principle of causation is necessarily true,—that is, true for all space and all time, nay independently of both space and time. No sane man, at least out of Germany, seems disposed to deny the first of these propositions; and indeed who can assert that at least he himself does not exist?

Around the second proposition, however, a fierce controversy rages, the leader of our opponents being Mr. Mill.

Our adversaries would have us believe that no principle can be said to be necessarily true; the most they admit is that, owing to our associations, we cannot imagine how certain propositions can be false. Thus, for instance, we cannot see how parallel straight lines can ever anywhere enclose a space; but they may do so elsewhere or at another time. Nay it is contended that if a reasoning being were brought up between two railway tracks, and if it could see them extend ever so far and apparently approach to a point, and if it could never advance to that point to test the reality of the meeting,—it is contended that such a being should conclude that parallel straight lines must enclose spaces.

I had occasion before¹ to refer to this question; and as it will crop up again further on in this argument, I shall not now delay to discuss it further. If the Association teaching were true, it would follow that in some of the stars the shortest way from point to point might be round a curve, triangles might each have angles equal to ten or a thousand right angles, there might even be such things as square circles. More curious still, if the same doctrine were true, it might be at the same time false: for how can an Associationist know that in Aldebaran his own philosophy *must* hold good, and that the teaching of the Schoolmen, though false here, may not be necessarily true in Sirius? ²

THESIS II.

“There is and must always have been underneath, behind, and distinct from matter, an agent which ever works in and through matter, and which created it, if it ever was created.”

In explanation of the conditional clause at the end of the thesis, I may premise that I wish as far as possible to keep clear of disputed points; and it is disputed whether we could ever know from reason alone that the world was created. St. Thomas and a great body of the Schoolmen held that it could not be known.

The proof of the thesis is based on the following propositions: (1) Matter of itself is unable to produce all the substantial changes which are continually taking place around us. (2) Our intellect forces us to acknowledge that certain judgments are necessarily true; but if there were nothing but matter, there could be no necessary truth. (3) Our reason tells us that we are free and subject to a moral law; but if there were nothing but matter, there could be no free will and consequently no moral order.

It may bring out the force of this line of argument if I remark, before proceeding to deal with the propositions, that they are all denied by materialists. These philosophers hold

¹ RECORD, August, 1884.

² See Ward's "Philosophy of Theism," vol. i., Essays i-vi.; Mivart, "Lessons from Nature," chap. ii.

(1) that matter contains in itself the promise and potency of all the phenomena of nature ; (2) that there are no such things as necessary truths ; and (3) that free will and the moral law are a delusion. Let us now examine our propositions in order.

PROPOSITION I.

“Matter of itself is unable to produce all the substantial changes which are continually taking place around us.”

It would very much simplify the controversy about the potency of matter, if we knew thoroughly what matter is. But we do not know it thoroughly ;—not we certainly, much less the materialists.

We can reduce solids to the liquid state, and from that again to the gaseous ; but there we stand still ; apply what further force we may, the gas will remain gas. We can subdivide matter almost indefinitely, into molecules, monads, atoms,—call them what you will ; but we never reach the ultimate indivisible atom, if such there be ; microscope and spectroscope are equally of no avail.

It is so also with regard to chemical analysis. The number of simple elements set down in modern treatises, is sixty-five or sixty-six. We know, however, that this is but a formula ; we count them so many because we cannot further simplify these substances with the power at our disposal. We have a shrewd suspicion, however, that greater power would reduce many of our so-called simple elements to others more simple still. It is not long since some were so resolved, which up to that were considered elemental ; and what happened in some cases would in all likelihood occur again. This point should be carefully impressed in the mind,—that experiment stops short of revealing the inmost chambers of material natures.

It will be found, I think, to be the most commonly received opinion among materialists, that what we call “matter” is only a form of force. But how many *kinds* of force are there ? Is there one to correspond with each of the elements, and if so how many are the elements ? Or is matter altogether made up of one, or two, or at most a few kinds of force, the particles of which are bound up together in ever varying forms ? Who knows ?

If there is any one thing certain about matter it is this,—that it cannot create a new force; neither can it annihilate. It can produce *accidents*: it can vary the *direction* of forces already existing; but it is quite unable to reduce to nothing, or to produce from nothing either a new kind of force or an increase in quantity of a kind already in existence. This principle is essential to the argument which is about to be advanced.

Dr. Mivart explains with his usual fairness the materialistic view of the genesis of the universe; whoever has read Mr. Spencer's "First Principles" will admit that the following extracts are not a bad summary of his views:

"When the first womb of things was pregnant with all the future, there existed probably but one of the formulæ we call 'natural laws'—namely, the law of gravitation. Here we may take our stand. It does not signify whether there ever was a time when gravitation was not (*i.e.* when matter, as we know it, did not exist): for if there ever was such a time, there is no reason to doubt, but every reason to conclude, that the evolution of matter, as we know it, was accomplished in accordance with law. Similarly, it is overwhelmingly probable, from analogy, that if our knowledge of molecular physics were sufficiently great, the existence of gravitation would be found to follow as a necessary deduction from the primary qualities of matter and force. Starting, then, with matter, force, and gravitation, what must happen? Diffused nebular matter must begin to concentrate, and, being opposed by atomic repulsions, must evolve heat,—*i.e.* a new form of matter and force. Then radiation and further approximation and new combinations will ever result in new effects; and with heat and pressure chemical combinations will suddenly arise, and so on and on. Thus new natural laws will be self-generated, till we get to the present marvellous complexity with life and mind; and thus science—by establishing the doctrine of the persistence of force and the indestructibility of matter—has effectually disproved the hypothesis that the presence of law and order in nature implies an intelligent law-giver."¹

Dr. Mivart then asks his materialistic opponent whether he can "point to any natural indications of the physical

¹ "Lessons from Nature," p. 177.

causation which has produced the cosmic harmony we see." The answer is :

"Yes; the universal tendency of motion to become rhythmical—itself a necessary consequence of the persistence of force—is a sort of conservative action. Moreover, as every newly evolved law came into existence, it must have been, as it were, grafted on the stock of all pre-existing laws, and so would not enter into the cosmic system as an element of confusion, but rather as an element of further progress. Natural laws then arising by way of necessary consequence from the persistence of a single self-existing substance, it becomes a matter of scientific demonstration that the fair and orderly universe which now exists, is the one and only universe that, in the nature of things, could exist. The persistence of force and the principle of natural selection together explain everything. The various solar systems which rotate in stability are the rare chance survivors of the many worlds which happened to be cast off in less propitious orbs and surroundings. As the general laws of the universe may separately be shown to be the necessary outcome of the primary data of science, it follows that the whole collection must be for a certainty similarly explicable. Your assumption, then, of an absolute cause for the universe is a wholly gratuitous one. We cannot of course, prove a negative, and if you choose to imagine a demon, a dragon, or an angel, I cannot disprove its existence. But reasonable men will, in all cases, be guided as to their beliefs by such positive evidence as they can get."¹

The foregoing exposition will be more intelligible if I quote another paragraph from Dr. Mivart's supposed materialist :

"Why may not the whole myriad suns and systems have pulsed rhythmically through an eternal past, to and fro from a state of nebula to a state such as that in which they now exist; or (as is perhaps more probable) why may they not so alternate bit by bit, first one and then another system of worlds collapsing into nebula, to be again slowly reformed into suns and planets? I see no reason why such a process should ever cease or ever not have been, or why life may not be ever reappearing and creeping, as it were, over the face of the cosmos, as one cosmical body after another happens, here and there, to get into a state fit to give origin to and sustain it, a state in which it may continue for a passing moment of a few billion years."²

"Lessons from Nature," p. 178.

² *Ibid.*, p. 164.

I think it will be found that the explanation just given is a very fair statement of the materialistic view. We join issue: we contend that there are many things in the universe which could never spring from matter, however long or in whatever manner it might pulsate.

Let me be allowed to make three remarks by way of preface. (1) It will be noticed that the foregoing exposition supposes "a starting point," "when the first womb of things was pregnant with all the future." It "starts with matter, force, and gravitation;" it begs certain "primary data of science," certain "primary qualities of matter." But how could *eternal* matter "start"? If it always existed, it must have always had each one of the forces which it now has; for remember it may change the direction of a force, but it cannot create. How could it *begin* to evolve forces?

(2) Materialists invariably suppose that natural laws were "self-generated" by the process known as "natural selection," or as it has also been well-termed, "the survival of the fittest." Now though, no doubt, Mr. Darwin proved that "natural selection" is one of the many causes that contribute to the evolution of things; yet it is to my mind equally beyond doubt that selection is not the only nor even the principal cause. But granting, for the present, that natural selection is the one cause of the development of species, we may nevertheless ask: How could an eternal universe have been "selected"?

For if selected at all, it must have been selected *as a whole*. Natural laws, of which alone there is question, could not spring up in pieces, as it were; one part here and now, another part there and afterwards. If they are at all what they are named, they must come from the *nature* of matter or force; so that wherever and whenever there are matter and force, there and then must the natural law flow from them. We cannot suppose a stone to be subject to gravitation here but not in Saturn; now but not millions of years since. The law of gravitation, if natural, must have been always and everywhere, whenever and wherever matter existed.

If therefore natural laws have been self-generated by natural selection, they must have been selected throughout

the universe as a whole. But selection supposes competition and survival of the fittest: How could the universe as a whole ever have been submitted to any such struggle for existence?

(3) The explanation just given "takes its stand" on "the law of gravitation." "It does not signify whether there ever was a time when . . . matter, as we know it, did not exist; for if there was, . . . there is . . . every reason to conclude that the evolution of matter, as we know it, was accomplished in accordance with law."

Remark the words, "matter, as we know it"; they are intended as a loophole of escape in time of extremity. Now "matter, as we know it," could never have existed except there was always in existence a *force* sufficient to call it into being. Hence even materialists *must* suppose "primary qualities of matter and force," as well as "primary data of science."

This much being premised we continue our argument. Matter is either inorganic or organic; and living organisms are again subdivided into vegetables, irrational animals and men. Accordingly there are four classes of beings in the world. Our argument, however, shall be more brief and equally strong, if we discuss two of these classes—vegetables and irrational animals—under the one head of irrational organisms: thus we shall have three classes instead of four. We contend that matter of itself is unable to account for what we know of any one of the three;—that the foregoing and every other system of materialism is quite unsatisfactory. We will take up these classes in order; and we will begin with that which materialists should find easiest to explain,—inorganic matter.

SECTION I.—INORGANIC MATTER.

Materialists ask us to allow them to "start with matter, force, and gravitation." Not bad for a "start"; it is one of the ways our opponents have,—to assume their whole case and then show how everything runs smooth. They would easily uplift the earth, if only they were allowed sufficient leverage; and then,—they start with the lever.

I. We cannot be content to start with matter, force, and gravitation, without a distinct admission that *there must be something behind force*. Force alone could never form the world. I ask you to attend carefully to this point; it is the first link in the chain of argument which follows. It is proved mainly by two reasons.

1°. In the first place it is impossible that force could subsist without a subject of inhesion. "What is a force? If we consult our dictionaries we shall find a force described as being 'an active power, power that may be exerted.' It is, therefore, an active potentiality. But a potentiality must belong to *something*. It is a property, that is to say, a species of accident, and accordingly requires a subject of inhesion."¹ Hence the tendency implanted in our intellectual nature to look for the *thing* which energizes, whenever we feel that force is being exerted.

2°. Besides, the ultimate constituents of matter must be physically indivisible; if they were divisible, they could not be *ultimate*, since their component parts should be more elemental still. But indivisible units of force, without any subject of inhesion, could never form matter such as it is.

For such indivisible units must be either altogether attractive or altogether repulsive; if they were both attractive and repulsive, they should be not *one* indivisible force but *two*. They must be, then, either purely attractive or purely repulsive. Hence, to form the world one of three things should occur: either (1) purely repulsive forces should unite; or (2) purely attractive forces; or (3) attractions and repulsions should combine. Now each of these suppositions is either impossible or useless.

(1) Purely repulsive forces could not unite; if they did, they could not be purely repulsive.

(2) A combination of pure attractions would be useless for the formation of matter; since it could never cause impenetrability, extension, and other properties which can only spring from repulsion.

(3) The third hypothesis remains—that attractions and repulsions should combine. But let me ask: Are the units of equal or of unequal force?

¹ Harper, vol. ii, p. 238.

(a) If equal, they must hold each other in check, and result in pure inaction. And as there is no subject of inhesion behind the forces, this result would be a *nothing*; for where there is no activity, there is no force, and consequently nothing.

(b) Let the units, therefore, be supposed to be unequal. A question immediately arises: If they are unequal how can they both be indivisible units? For when they unite, the greater is in excess of the less. The greater, therefore, is not only divisible but divided, for the result of the union is the greater force minus the less.

Besides, such a result would not give the least help out of the difficulty; since the forces, in so far as they balance each other, are inactive and therefore nothing, having no subject of inhesion. The result, then, of the union of two unequal forces, in so far as it could be anything, must be one smaller force of the same kind as the greater of the two,—something less than was before the union.

Accordingly, since force cannot exist without a subject of inhesion, and since, even if it could, its indivisible units could never combine to form matter such as we see it,—for these two reasons we contend that force must come from a root, a something behind it in which it inheres.

But then this “force-root” must be suspiciously like the *forma substantialis*, which Schoolmen used to define as a *radix ex qua pullulat vis*. Has it, therefore, come to this, for all our phenomenism and negation of substance, that before we can understand how even one molecule is formed, we must give up Locke and turn for light to the Schools? And is it these very followers of Locke, who are wont so to ridicule the old philosophy, who, when it comes to first principles, must fall back on the very system they profess to despise? Let them, however, take care: St. Thomas is not wont to allow strangers to borrow any of his garments, without compelling them to don the whole suit. Meanwhile a principle has been established of the greatest importance,—that *behind force* there must be *something*; this something the Scholastics and the whole world call *substance*.

II. I grant now that you may form a molecule, if you renounce the phenomenism of Locke, and admit a root which becomes manifest only by its forces. Next question: How will you join molecules to form inorganic matter such as we see it? And this suggests ever so many other questions.

Shall the constituent molecules be all of the same or of different *kinds*? Shall there be but one primary element, or shall there be more than one? It will be found necessary to adopt the system of plurality.

For if the molecules were all of the same kind, it would be quite impossible for them to result in the various chemical compounds which we find in nature. Treat gold as you will, short of chemical combination with another substance, and it will remain gold. It cannot be made copper, or oak, or oxygen, or wine. Nor will it suffice to say that, if we had sufficient chemical power, we might resolve gold into simpler elements, which we might again so compound as to form one of the substances just mentioned. For that may or may not be true of gold; but it *could not* be true of *the one* primary element. Treat *it* as you will, short of chemical combination, and you can never form compounds such as we see.

This is the common teaching not of the Schoolmen only but of most modern scientists, even materialists. Mr. Spencer,¹ however, is of a different opinion,—that all substances may be homogeneous; that there may be only one element. The following facts are the only proof he gives:

“The semi-transparent, colourless, extremely active substance commonly called phosphorus, may be so changed as to become opaque, dark-red, and inert. Like changes are known to occur in some gaseous and metallic elements, as antimony. These total changes of properties, brought about without any changes to be called chemical, are interpretable only as ‘due to molecular re-arrangements; and by showing that difference of property is producible by difference of arrangement, they support the inference otherwise to be drawn, that the properties of different elements result from difference of arrangement, arising by the compounding and recompounding of ultimate homogeneous units.”

¹ *Contemporary Review*, 1872, p. 143.

It is easy to see where the fallacy lies in Mr. Spencer's argument. We are first told of a *certain number* of changes in the phenomena of phosphorus; it may become "opaque, dark-red, inert"; and then we are asked to conclude to a "*total* change of properties." Why total? Colour and inertia are not the only "properties" of bodies. If the activities be changed totally, we contend that it can result naturally only from a corresponding change in "force-root," call the change chemical combination, analysis, or what you will.

Let us, therefore, take two or more different elements. And permit me to ask a question: *Why* do they differ? Let us say the primary elements are iron and gold; why is one iron and the other gold? Materialistic phenomenists consider it a sufficient explanation to suppose that both metals are made up of precisely the same constituent forces arranged in different orders. But this explanation is quite unsatisfactory.

For in all the various forms through which either gold or iron may be made to pass, the constituent forces must be differently arranged; else there could be no difference of form. Heat them to the liquid or even to the gaseous state, colour them, mould them into innumerable shapes; yet through all changes one is gold, the other is iron. If difference of arrangement of forces must result in different substances, why does it not always so result? No explanation is or can be sufficient which does not suppose a different constitution in what I have called the "force-root." We must only don another of the garments of St. Thomas.

Here, again, I contend, that a principle of the greatest importance has been established,—that there is not only a *something* underlying phenomena, but a *something different* in different objects. Let us proceed.

III. In place of gold and iron we will substitute water, which may easily be made to pass through two very different series of changes. It may, on the one hand, be heated, coloured, mixed with other substances, formed into innumerable shapes of all possible sizes; *but through all changes it remains water*;

the common sense of the world witnesses that. We will call this series of changes, series number one.

On the other hand, if water be subjected to chemical analysis, it will resolve itself into two distinct elements, oxygen and hydrogen. *It is no longer water*; the common sense of the world equally testifies to that. Let this be series number two. Now for a question: Why this identity and diversity? Why does it remain water after one series of changes and not after the other?

Materialists answer by supposing that chemical action changes the constituent forces. But then a further question arises: Is it merely that the *direction* is *changed*, or has a *new force* been *produced*? We have seen that no new force can be produced by electricity of itself, since electricity of itself cannot *create*. Hence it must be only a change of direction, it must be that the resultant of the united force has changed its line of action.

This is undoubtedly what happens in the case of mechanical mixtures; but the explanation is quite unsatisfactory when applied to chemical compounds; it leaves a further question quite unanswered.

For, throughout the first series mentioned above,—series number one, of accidental changes,—there must be a similar variation of the *direction* of the force-constituents; and yet the *substance* remains the same. *It is water*, whether hot or cold, clear or muddy, in this vessel or in that, most unquestionably *it is not water* in oxygen or hydrogen. We see this as clearly and as surely as we see that underneath all force and phenomena there must be *something*, and *something different* for the different elements. If you have already appropriated two of the ideas of St. Thomas, you must now in very consistency take a third.

It is water, then, through series number one; it is not water, but oxygen and hydrogen, after series number two. Why? There must be some change of “force-root” or of substantial form,—of the *something* which lies behind.

Here our other principle comes in; electricity of itself cannot create or annihilate, neither can all the force of the material universe. What produces the new “force-root”?

What destroys the old? And remember always, it is not a mere *change of direction* or causing an *accident*; it is producing from nothing something which underlies accidents and remains permanent through them—*substance*. What produces and annihilates it? Not matter; therefore something stronger and better, outside matter and distinct from it.

IV. There are two other points which will not escape the attention of a philosophical observer, and which strongly confirm the scholastic doctrine of substantial forms: the first is the phenomena of crystallization.

When liquid is solidified it usually takes certain regular geometrical forms; it is said to crystallize.

“The crystalline forms of solids are most numerous. There are above two hundred to be found in carbonate of lime alone. Quartz has hexagonal prisms terminated with hexagonal pyramids. The crystals of alum are octohedral; those of Iceland-spar, rhombohedral; those of sulphur, partly long prismatic needles, partly oblique octohedra; those of common salt and sugar, cubical. How are we to account for these varieties of form in simple as in compound bodies? An answer has been attempted to this question, by attributing these various forms to the supposed diversity of form in the atom. But this only throws the question further back, for it occurs at once to ask: Whence arises this diversity of form in the constituent atoms? [And why must there be a *similarity* of diversity?] Moreover, the answer seems very difficult of application to the case of compound substances. For if the atoms of the different elements that constitute compound substance remain, each in its state of isolation; whence comes it that the composite has a new crystalline form of its own? How is it, too, that the atoms, in complex structures more particularly, appear to lose altogether the crystalline form they at first possessed? [And why do they *all* assume *similar* shapes in the new forms?]”¹

The Schoolmen would explain this diversity of unity by supposing a kind of initial substance to pervade the whole mass whether of fluid or of solid. This all-pervading initial substance is called the *forma substantialis*; it is different for

¹ Harper, p. 247.

each different mass ; it is indivisible in itself like the human soul ; it is the root from which spring all the forces by which the body energizes in any direction ; it is to the whole mass what our "force-root" is to the molecule.

What is the materialist theory ? "An answer has been attempted by attributing these various forms to the supposed diversity of form in the atom." True, no doubt, as far as it goes ; but it does not go nearly far enough, like all the answers of materialists. It "starts" with "supposing" that the atoms have different forms. But what gave these different forms to atoms ? Why is the form of the element changed in the compound ? And why is the change so uniform through all the atoms ? You see there is *something* under the phenomena.

The second point which demands attention is the unity of substance which is discernible in bodies. A metal plate, an iron rivet, a block of stone, a beam of wood,—each is *one*. An ironclad, St. Peter's at Rome, the Menai Bridge,—each also is *one*. But how different the unity ! The iron plate is *one substance* ; the Menai Bridge is *one bridge*, formed of ever so many substances. A block of stone is *one substance* ; St. Peter's is *one Church*, made up of ever so many blocks of stone and other things.

The common sense of mankind proclaims that the unity of the Church or of the bridge is very different from that of the plate or of the block. We see this as clearly and as surely as we see that there is *something* behind phenomena and force ; *something different* for the different elements ; *something different* underneath the phenomena of water from that which underlies those of oxygen and hydrogen. We shall have to appropriate another of the doctrines of St. Thomas.

Well, the bridge is one and the plate is one ; but the unity is plainly different. Whence comes the difference ? The Schoolmen rely on the substantial form ; indivisible in itself it pervades the whole plate, and is the one root of all the energies which the plate displays.

Materialists contend that the substantial unity of the iron plate or block of stone arises from the fact that all the

atoms or molecules of the mass are bound by cohesion; whereas in the bridge or church the atoms are bound together by adhesion, gravity, and other forces. But surely this explanation, though quite true, is far from complete or satisfactory. It starts with the lever; it supposes the very question at issue. It is the fashion to ridicule the Schoolmen for playing with words and reasoning from mere names; surely, when it comes to first principles, they may retort on their traducers.

What is cohesion more than adhesion that it should cause substantial unity? If being bound together into a mass is the one fundamental reason of unity, one would think that the stronger the bond, the greater should the unity be. And yet we are told that the Menai bridge is much stronger in its present form than if it were all one substantially united mass of iron; and we know that the dome of St. Peter's is more strongly bound together than a lump of butter. The weaker bond, however, forms *one substance*, though the stronger does not: yet we should be content it seems, because, forsooth, the weaker bond is called cohesion.

Cohesion, therefore, no matter how true, affords no complete and satisfactory explanation. I see no explanation except to admit that behind cohesion there is *something* from which it springs, something which pervades the whole mass of iron or stone and binds it into one:—this *something*, call it what you will, is the substantial form.

Here again our other principle comes in: whence comes this *something*? Take two plates of iron and fuse them into one: the mass which results is no longer two but one; common sense tells us that quite plainly. There were two *somethings* before, there is now but one: What became of the two, and whence came the one? They cannot have fused together; for forms are indivisible, else they would be incapable of causing *unity*; and as they are indivisible, so they cannot result from fusion. Whence do they come? Whither do they go? From nothing to nothing. And as matter cannot create, it follows again that there must be something nobler and better, outside matter and distinct from it.

V. It remains only to answer certain obvious difficulties. I do not profess to answer all, for that would be an almost interminable task; whoever wishes to see the question fully discussed may consult Fr. Harper. It will be seen from the foregoing argument, that a modern disciple of the Scholastics is not obliged to denounce the study of chemistry as a fraud. He need not suppose matter to be indivisible, and its very divisibility must always raise the question of atoms and their nature. He will not object to most that is said about atoms, but he will deny that atoms explain everything. He will taunt materialists with shirking the very question at issue; and he will assert that, when the physicists have said their last word, further questions suggest themselves clamouring for an answer. To reply to these further questions is the business of the *metaphysician*,—that is the meaning of his very name.

Now it may not unreasonably be said (1) that the Schoolmen start with their *forma*. What is it? Why should it explain everything? Does it leave behind no further question clamouring for solution?

Certainly it does, plenty of questions; and it would be most desirable if we could find time and ability to discuss them adequately. But it is not necessary for our purpose. It has been shown that atoms and force are not sufficient of themselves to make the world; that underneath them, behind them, and distinct from them, there must be *something*, whatever it is. What care we what it is, if it is? I have shown that it is and must be; that it begins and ceases; that it is not an accident or new direction of force, but something more. We argue that it must have a cause; and we contend that matter of itself could not produce it.

(2) It may be urged that creation or annihilation is not required; even the Schoolmen suppose merely that *formae educantur e potentia materiae*, and in like manner that *relabantur in potentiam materiae*. They distinctly deny the creation and annihilation of substantial forms.

We answer, it is true that the Scholastics denied the creation of forms; but consider the reason they give. They

denied it, not because forms are not substantial realities which begin *de novo*, or because they are mere accidents or variations of forces already in being; but because they are not independent, self-existing entities,—because they *co-exist* with *materia prima*. Now if there be substantial forms at all, that is, not mere accidents or directions of forces already in being, but substantial realities, “force-root,”—few will deny that matter of itself *cannot cause them* to begin to be; call the causing of them creation, production, “eduction” from primordial matter, or what you please. Certainly any such denial would not be in conformity with scholastic teaching.

It will be remarked that I say “matter, *of itself*, cannot cause them.” For there can be no doubt that secondary causes contribute positively to their “eduction.” Hence there is a great difference between the generation of water and the generation of man; for the substantial form of water is “*educed*” from primordial matter by physical agencies acting under established laws; whereas the soul of man, being a substance capable of independent existence, is created immediately by God himself. But as natural agencies could not *create* a human soul even by divinely given power, as is commonly held; neither can they “*educate*” substantial forms of lower beings, except in virtue of divinely established laws.

(3) One might object further that the foregoing line of argument is based on the common sense of mankind; but common sense is poor philosophy. Who would depend on common sense for the compounding of a prescription? And is the further and more abstruse question to be decided by counting the heads of the uneducated?

We deny that common sense is in every case bad philosophy. There is, of course, a great difference between immediate perceptions and conclusions drawn from elaborate chains of reasoning or practical knowledge which depends on experience. Every one will admit that, in these latter cases, common sense would be a very bad guide. Not so, however, with regard to immediate perceptions, such is the trustworthiness of consciousness, of memory, of reason, of the senses. Here common sense is the one and only test of truth; and the

same reason for which we trust our consciousness, our memory, our reason, our senses, forces us to believe that there is something behind force,—that water is a distinct substance from either oxygen or hydrogen, that a block of stone has a unity which is absent from St. Peter's. The reason is, because our intellect as clearly, as surely, as immediately, perceives these things.

One should not allow one's self to be influenced in these matters by considering that numerous and learned treatises have been written to prove the contrary of what has been here asserted; or by any reminder that what we teach to be the immediate testimony of common sense or reason, is emphatically denied by many of our foremost experimental scientists,—men who surely have not lost their common sense. One should remember that they are for the most part the same men who dispute the existence of bodies, of free-will, of necessary truths. Prejudice obscures their reason in treating these questions; and what they deny in theory, they uniformly assert in practice; for it is only in their speculations that they give their prejudice control. In their ordinary life they show that they believe certain things to be always and necessarily true; they show also a decided opinion that things are often what they seem, and that they themselves are quite free to act or not to act, to make this or that use of the world around them.

W. McDONALD.

(To be continued.)

VACATION IN 1886.

MAN proposes but the doctor disposes, if not always at least but too frequently; and as this seems to be a kind of law we yield to it, though perhaps ungraciously, and accept it as one among the many inevitables which fall to the lot of man, especially when formulating plans for vacation.

We are full of Norway; Sweden is in the near future, and Russia itself looms in the dim distance. We read up

Murray and Baedeker, study maps, and revive old memories, and to make assurance doubly sure, we call upon our doctor to get our exeat or, perhaps we should say, his permit. We, in short, propose, and he disposes—alike of ourself and our plans, dismissing one into light air and the other into an English Spa. Christiania, no; Stockholm, no, no; Moscow, no, no, no; but Harrogate. Oh! what a fall is there. But our M.D. as musical as medical, and so doubly M.D. soothes our perturbed spirit with sweet sounds, drags us up from the depths of despair into which he has just thrown us, and whispers that the Yorkshire Spa is but for a time, and that its invigorating *elements* of bracing air and mineral waters will make earth more charming than ever and the very fire of health the outcome of the other three. So our Almaviva warbles a bright and brilliant strain, welcomes us with *Ecco ridente il cielo*, we reply with Rosina *Io sono docile*, and he dismisses us with *retirati*. So to Harrogate we go, and find it all that we were led to expect and profit by the elemental war within us.

But what can we say of Harrogate? Which of our reverend and revered readers does not know it by personal experience, or by the report of venerable pastors who have been made young again by its healing influences? What new thing can be said about its hotels—grand, comfortable or homely, for there is every grade: its baths and pump room where even its unsavoury waters are made almost tolerable by the resources of civilization, or what in our eyes is the greatest and most inexplicable wonder of all, its Bog-field where upwards of twenty wells bubble up, each with its own peculiar perfume; realizing all that Coleridge once said of Cologne and its natural waters, which his critical nose could detect and distinguish by their—smell let us say. There is High Harrogate, some four hundred feet above sea level, but here, inland where it stands, that height involves no toiling; for those who live on the heights find themselves almost on a dead level, so that indeed it necessitates a descent into Low Harrogate to have an opportunity of climbing at all. Thus the dwellers down below are the real mountaineers and we above are the dwellers in the plain.

But what a plain it is! with its wide stretches of inalienable commons, commanding broad views on all sides; its broad well-kept roads with their wooded hedges and grassy margins; its footpaths of cleanly asphalt, its cross paths with gates that proclaim their publicity and invite to country rambles, with comfortable seats that suggest repose, at spots where special shade or prospect makes them more than ever welcome. Commons we call them to translate into our language their local name Strays, with all the beauty and suggestive wanderings which that name suggests; yet are they fringed with civilization in the form of fine mansions encompassed with beautiful flower-full gardens, and that not churlishly shut in by grim walls, but open, at least to the eye, that they may be in one sense ours while we linger near them. Certainly Harrogate is a pleasant place in which to play the invalid on a moderate scale. But man, even when under the doctor's regimen, is a restless animal. Whether the early rising which the custom of the place supposes, seeing how much drinking and perhaps bathing precede breakfast, or whether it is that the elements, which here are so potent, war in the inner man and stir him up to action in their work of restoration, or whether it is that the wide view that stretches around on every side calls imperatively for investigation—some, or all of these combined, turn the visitors into perambulating groups, and carry them off in the aristocratic four-in-hand, or in the less assuming wagonettes to what they call “places of interest” in the neighbourhood. So to Ripon they go and to Fountains Abbey; to Knaresborough with its charms and curiosities of which we shall have to say a word; to Bolton Abbey and its magnificent woods, which indeed form but a feature in the glories of the river Wharfe; or to those varied groups of intermingled wood and rocks which at Brimham and Plumpton stand in all their natural grandeur and owe little or nothing to man, who, either by a wise discretion, or an overruling necessity, has let them alone as beyond and above his power, and devoted himself and his skill to raising mansions like Harewood. To one or another of these famous spots the real or so-called invalids betake themselves day after day and never seem to weary of this

mild round of dissipation, which indeed seems pleasantly to harmonize with the medical treatment of the place, and no doubt has its full share by fresh air and the natural restorative power of pleasant society amid the beauties of nature, in sending home to their parishes or secular occupations, the delapidated humanity that was trained off to these wells of health.

Society is doubtless pleasant, especially when of our own choosing, and often amusing when we are thrown into a promiscuous gathering: but many of us at times prefer a solitary ramble, or a walk with a congenial friend. In both these ways we visited Knaresborough, and found the second visit a pleasant supplement to the first solitary one. Knaresborough is an ancient market town; so ancient indeed that we cannot imagine the time when it was anything else. It climbs up the bold cliff with a boldness equal to its own, and from its height looks down complacently upon the really beautiful Nidd that flows beneath it. But market town as it is, in right of its market place and town hall its toll bridges and the life that lives within its long business streets, it is something more, for was it not dominated over and doubtless in rough old times protected by a Saxon fortress, which in the Conqueror's reign gave place to a more noble building, which the Norman Baron of Tonsburg erected upon this his share of the invader's spoil. From father to son has it passed, at least from the time of Henry the Third, and is now held by the Clánricarde De Burghs their lineal descendants.

Of course the old story occurs once more here. It stood for King and Crown, until Fairfax battered it down for Cromwell, and then commenced the decay which leaves it but a ruin now.

Perhaps it is this grand old ruin that domineers over the town, as that in its turn does over the beautiful river below, which gives a feudal character to the narrow and tortuous streets, which climb in steep sweeps from the bridges below, and work their way, when up, in such irregular curves. The military aspect is the characteristic of the place even in what is now, but seems incapable of showing itself to be, a simple market town. The railway of course has thrust itself into

the heights, but spans the river with a grand mediæval bridge which harmonizes well with its surroundings.

The old castle has of course its tale to tell. Many a queer scene passed within its walls, in its grim chambers and still more grim cells. But we must not now dwell upon these. Hither it was that Hugh De Morville came with his three companions in guilt after their murder of St. Thomas of Canterbury. As Butler says they "retired to Knaresborough where, shunned by all men and distracted with the remorse of their own conscience, they lived alone without so much as a servant that would attend them. Some time after they travelled into Italy to receive absolution from the Pope. His Holiness enjoined them a pilgrimage to Jerusalem, when three of them shut themselves up in a place called Montenegro as a prison of penance, as the Pope had ordered them, and lived and died true penitents. They were buried before the gate of the Church (of the Templars) of Jerusalem, with this inscription (*Hic jacent miseri qui martyremaverunt beatum Archiepiscopum Cantuariensem*) 'Here lie the wretches who martyred blessed Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury.'" "The other murderer Tracy, who gave the first wound, deferred his penance, and died of a terrible disease at Cosenza at Calabria. Two hundred years later, in 1370, the castle belonged to "great John of Gaunt, time-honoured Lancaster," as Shakespeare calls him, and here doubtless he entertained the greatest poet of his age, his kinsman Geoffrey Chaucer, for they had married two sisters; and so the old castle may have echoed to the Canterbury tales, which record the sayings and doings of those pious pilgrims who visited St. Thomas's Shrine, as it had once done to the remorseful cries of those who were the foul instruments of that martyrdom.

Another two hundred years pass, and Leland in the time of Henry VIII. stands as we are doing before the Castle, and thus he records what he saw.

"The castle stoudeth magnificently and strongly on a roc, and hath a very depe dicke hewen out of the roc, wher it is not defended by the ryver of Nidde, that there renneth in a deade stony bottom. I nombered a 11 or 12 Towres in the wall of the castelle, and one very faire beside in the second area."

There is a pleasant walk along the river side shut in by well-wooded cliffs; indeed the trees fill nearly the whole of the valley and cast pleasant fleckered shade, which the murmuring waters make still more pleasant. A cave we pass has a rude figure sculptured at its entrance, within are the evident remains of a small chapel dedicated to St. Robert. Can this be the St. Robert, who lived in these parts and was one of the founders of Fountains Abbey? Then further on we are brought to a standstill, by a notice that close beside and down some rude steps we shall find St. Robert's Cave: as of course we do, and a guide to tell us all about the spot which we find has a modern as well as a mediæval legend, that brings Saint and Sinner together in somewhat jarring concord. For not only did St. Robert dwell in this dismal and gloomy recess, but Eugene Aram here perpetrated the murder which Hood and Bulwer have recorded in their own individual styles. It was worth enduring the shock which such varying scenes suggested to listen to the guide's narrations. St. Robert with his devotion and austerities, and Eugene Aram with his villainies "flowed from her tongue," if not as "eloquence" at least with certain declamatory effort, and she closed her lengthened legends with the advice that we should confirm the mental pictures she had painted by a visit to St. Robert's Chapel, and a look from the cliffs above in a certain direction to the spot where Eugene Aram was hanged. Perhaps we ought to record another distinguished personage for whom we are told Knaresborough is "celebrated," and that is the witch, Mother Shipton. Another person of great local renown is Blind Jack who, in spite of his affliction, erected bridges and made roads in various parts of the country, and whom we desire to connect in our record with St. Robert as a real benefactor, and not with the murderer or the witch.

We did not fail to return by the heights to Knaresborough which open up fresh scenery by extending the view far beyond the valley of the Nidd.

Ripon and Fountains Abbey combine to make of all the most interesting excursion. Ripon of course stands *ad Ripam* on the Ure, which river claims special notice in virtue of its noble bridge of seventeen arches, and raises its

bank lordly above two smaller streams that flow into it at the meeting of the waters; Ripon, that first, a thousand years ago, gained its royal charter of incorporation for its gallant fight against and victory over the ubiquitous and unquiet Danes, a victory whose tenth centenary it duly commemorated a few weeks past. Ripon, which fought its way in many a ready encounter with harrying Robert Bruce and his hungry countrymen, and which even now keeps up old customs of guard and good fellowship, sounding, as in good old Saxon times, its three notes of the horn at nine every evening at the mayor's door, to put his worship in mind of his responsibility for good watch and ward: for, as the old law says "if any house on the gate syd within the towne be robbed after that hour, the mayor or 'wakeman' of the towne is bound to make up the loss, if it be proved that he and his servants had not done their duties at the time." Not of course that the mayor had to defray the expenses of such watch out of his own magisterial pocket, seeing that every citizen with a one-door house paid two pence annually, while the wealthier, and therefore more inviting to plunderers, who lived in the splendour of a house with two doors, 'a gate dore and a back dore' paid fourpence by the year of duties. In proof of the "survival," among old customs of what perhaps many considered to be "the fittest," so late as 1828, we are told, "on St. John's Eve, every householder who had changed his residence, and every new comer, spread a table with bread, and cheese and ale before his door, or gave a supper as a sign of giving and desiring welcome."

So Ripon necessarily invites and repays a visit: for it looks a place for such customs to localize themselves in, and has it not, besides, its old Minster which of late has become a Cathedral; and a beautiful Catholic Church which is one of those glorious houses for God which the revival of religion has in these last few years sown broadcast through the land, to supply the places of the old Minster and other sacred edifices which have been taken away, or, it may be, to minister to the wants for which they were originally raised, until the happy day when they will be once more applied to their proper use.

From Ripon one goes to Studley Royal, as Lord Ripon's

place is called. But nobody cares about the mansion, which, indeed, modestly conceals itself, and thus preserves the family from the intrusion of tourists and the latter from the unpleasant feeling of being intruders. The grounds are magnificent and are kept in a wonderfully perfect and almost painful order. It seems as though each group of trees, each wall of foliage, every undulation of the land worked into irreproachable lawn, was made to order, yet nature is too grand to be completely tyrannized over. So what we get is a compromise which throws its trammels where it can and admits under protest a power which it cannot gainsay. It seems hard to complain of what is really a labour of love; but the love must be very sincere and earnest which can excuse such manifestation of labour.

The little river Skell that flows through the park is in places converted into ponds, on whose margin arise sundry classic temples and occasional groups of statues equally classic, and these are not out of place in the midst of the scenery which surrounds them. They are the decorations of noble grounds and were the mansion here it would not be out of place either. Thus far all is Studley Royal neither more nor less. But beyond and quite apart from this rises up the crowning glory which brings wanderers hither: for here is Fountains Abbey in its own grounds, where there is nothing to tell of Studley but the reverential care which keeps the sacred ruins and their glorious surroundings in exquisite preservation.

For a time we linger around the glorious ruins of Fountains. Yet it is no unmixed pleasure to wander amid broken columns and dismantled shrines. Fortunately there are no longer guides to weary the visitor with foolish explanations of what they do not understand; he is left to his own reflections, which to a Catholic cannot but be sad. Perhaps he recognizes the reverent hand which preserves every relic of the good old times so lovingly; or perhaps he is perverse enough to fret under this primness of walks, this order among ruins, and almost to wish that the destruction had been complete, and that this token of the shame which falls on England for the destruction she wrought so sacrilegiously in Henry's day, had been buried with that terrible past and

swept away from the eyes of men, rather than, as here, framed and glazed as a picture and kept as a show for holiday folks to take their pleasure in. Such are our thoughts at the time of the visit, but memory looks back on Fountains in a different way. Some places have their passing interest, and leave no lasting impression on the mind: while others somehow seem to fix themselves more deeply and grow upon us afterwards. So it has been with Fountains Abbey. The ruins in their magnificence have a tale to tell which surely, we think, will well repay inquiry: the outcome of this has been the unearthing of a contemporary account of its foundation by one who was a sharer in the work, and whose narrative is confirmed, in its chief feature, by no less a person than St. Bernard himself.

HENRY BEDFORD.

(To be continued.)

THE LIFE OF JEAN JACQUES OLIER, FOUNDER OF THE SULPICIAN¹.

THE twenty-third session of the Council of Trent was held in July, 1563, during the pontificate of Pius IV. In this session the doctrine of the Catholic Church on the Sacrament of Holy Orders, in all its grades, was discussed at great length and finally formulated. After defining the true doctrine on the relation between priest and Sacrifice and the different grades by which the priesthood is reached, the Council tells us that it is clear from Sacred Scripture, from tradition, and from the uniform teaching of the Fathers, that this Sacrament of Orders is of divine institution and is to be numbered among the Seven Sacraments of the Church. Having briefly laid down for the instruction of the faithful what they are to believe about the Sacrament of Holy

¹ The Life of Jean Jacques Olier, Founder of the Sulpicians. By Edward Healy Thompson, M.A.

Orders, the Fathers of the Council formulated eight canons condemning, with the usual forms, the erroneous tenets of the innovators, which were contrary to the teaching of the Church. And then, following up the work of reformation as at previous sessions, they passed what we may regard as one of the most remarkable of the decrees *de Reformatione*.

This decree treats of "residence," of the obligation of the clergy to personally look after their flock, of the obligation of bishops regarding the conferring of orders, the qualifications required in those who present themselves for ordination, the intervals that should elapse between the reception of the different orders, the necessity of episcopal approbation for hearing confessions, and the necessity of a priest showing his *Litterae commendatoriae sui ordinarii* before being allowed to celebrate Mass or administer the Sacraments. Finally in chapter eighteenth of this most important work the Fathers resolved to adopt the best, and in fact the only means to give practical effect to the wishes of the Council, for the reformation of the clergy and the re-establishment of ecclesiastical discipline. They then enacted a law for the opening of diocesan seminaries, for the education of the clergy throughout the Church in accordance with the wants and means of the various dioceses. The Council wished that those who were to join the ecclesiastical state should be trained and jealously watched from a very early age, because youth is inclined to follow worldly pleasure, and unless vicious habits are shunned and habits of virtue and religion are formed, it is vain to expect perseverance in the true ecclesiastical spirit without singular and special help from the Almighty. The seminary was to be founded in connection with the cathedral as far as possible, and all cathedral and metropolitan churches were bound to establish seminaries for supporting, educating, and training for the ecclesiastical state such a number of youths as would suffice for the supply of priests to the diocese. Into these seminaries were to be received youths, born in lawful wedlock, not less than twelve years of age, able to read and write, whose dispositions, as far as could be ascertained at that early age, gave solid grounds to hope that they would become efficient husbandmen

in the Lord's vineyard. On entering the seminary they were to receive tonsure and put on the clerical dress, study grammar, sacred music, the Scripture, homilies of the Saints and Fathers, ceremonies and rubrics. The Ordinary should provide for their going to confession at least once a month and to holy communion according to the advice of their confessors. They were to hear Mass daily and assist at the Sacred Functions on Sundays and Festivals in the cathedral and local churches.

At previous Councils recommendations had been made to provide for the better training and education of ecclesiastics, and schools for young clerics were founded in connection with metropolitan and cathedral churches. Many clerics also got part of their education in the universities, which were very numerous on the continent then as now, but, however excellent for a literary education these universities may have been, they certainly did not give to clerics that training which would enable them to cope successfully with the abuses and disorders that were so prevalent throughout Europe in the period between the Councils of Lateran and Trent. And hence it was that the Tridentine Fathers at the close of their great labours resolved to take efficacious means of providing for the Church a race of priests trained from early youth in sacred studies, formed to habits of self-control and possessing the ecclesiastical spirit that would urge them to master the *corpus doctrinae* of the Council, to suitably teach its truths to the faithful and to reduce to practice both in themselves and their flock the decrees *de Reformatione*. As the Bishop of Nazcanzum said in his address at the close of the Council when speaking "de labenti ac prope cadenti disciplina," "eligentur in posterum ad ecclesiastica munera obeunda qui virtute non ambitione praestent, qui populi commodis non suis inserviant, et prosint potius quam praesint. Enuntiabitur et explanabitur frequentius et studiosius verbum Domini omni gladio ancipiti penetrantius. Aderunt suis gregibus, et invigilabunt episcopi ceterique quibus animarum cura commissa est, neque extra creditam sibi custodiam vagabuntur."

Pallavicini in his History of the Council assures us that

nothing was done by the Fathers which gave more satisfaction than this decree regarding the establishment of diocesan seminaries, and many learned and zealous ecclesiastics at the Council affirmed that if it had done nothing else than provide for the establishing of clerical seminaries, this would in itself be ample compensation for all the labours and hardships the members had to endure, “quippe (ut aiebant) unicum adjumentum quod efficax esset ad reparandam collapsam disciplinam cum certa sit regula in omni republica tales haberi cives quales educantur.”

This 18th chapter of decree *de Reformatione*, Sess. xxiii., contains very interesting reading for all who are engaged in establishing and governing ecclesiastical seminaries. It is, indeed, interesting for all clerics as it treats of a subject that so directly and immediately concerns them personally, containing, as it does, full and detailed instructions for providing for the maintenance, literary education, and religious training of young Levites. This decree regarding the opening of diocesan seminaries was passed in Session xxiii., held July, 1563, but unhappily nearly four score years elapsed before it produced any fruit. Indeed for nearly a century very little had been done to give effect to this decree, except what had been done by St. Charles Borromeo, and long after him by St. Vincent de Paul. St. Charles had taken an active part in bringing the Council to a happy termination, and as might be expected from his burning zeal, he laboured to give effect to its enactments in his own diocese and wherever else his influence extended. He established a seminary for his own diocese, and laboured by word and example to provide for the service of the altar, a race of clerics such as he knew the Fathers of the Council yearned to see within the sanctuary. His example, however, did not produce such results as might be expected from one of such high ecclesiastical rank and personal sanctity, and in the first half of the eighteenth century the Supreme Pontiffs, Benedict XIII. and Benedict XIV. had to remonstrate with the Bishops of Italy about their non-observance of this decree of the Council, and ordered them to take the necessary steps to comply with the wishes of the Fathers as expressed in it.

Looking at the history of the French Church in the times of St. Vincent de Paul and M. Olier, we are compelled to regard them as the instruments destined by God, to give effect to this grave and prudent decree of Trent. These two great servants of God were contemporaries, but M. Olier was much the younger, and always regarded St. Vincent de Paul as his spiritual father and director. St. Vincent founded the Congregation of the Priests of the Mission, whose principal end is to secure, first, their own personal sanctification; secondly, the sanctification of the faithful among whom they labour; and thirdly, to train in priestly virtue and knowledge young Levites for the service of the Altar.

M. Olier founded "*La Compagnie des Prêtres de Saint Sulpice*," the members of which have for nearly two centuries and a half devoted their energies almost exclusively to the work of the schools and colleges of clerics. Their success during that period shows that the blessing of Heaven was on M. Olier's undertaking, and that he was chosen in the decrees of God, to provide permanent means for educating and sanctifying the secular clergy of his native country, and indirectly of many other countries also.

M. Olier was born in Paris in 1608. His father was a wealthy and influential gentleman, holding high office under the government, and he used his influence to obtain for his son even in his infancy, various valuable benefices in different parts of France. When young Olier was about seven years old, he went one day to the Church to hear Mass, and on seeing the priest come out to celebrate, the thought arose in his mind that is so well expressed by Thomas à Kempis:

"*Oh quam mundae debent esse manus illae, quam purum os, quam sanctum corpus, sacerdotis ad quem toties ingreditur Auctor puritatis.*"

This thought, we are told by his biographers, made such a deep impression on his mind that it never left him, but always had a powerful influence over him, and urged him, sometimes consciously, often unconsciously, to keep before his eyes the great idea of providing for the Church of France, a clergy learned and zealous, thoroughly imbued with the spirit of the sacred calling and thoroughly detached from the spirit of the

world and its false maxims. M. Olier spent part of his early days at Lyons, there receiving the best education the city could then afford to a youth of his high social rank. Afterwards at the age of seventeen, he returned to Paris and entered the famous university of that city. Here he displayed most brilliant abilities, and went through a course of Philosophy with great success, winning the admiration and applause of his fellow students and masters. After quitting the university he went to study Theology in the Sorbonne, and had for his masters some of the most gifted men that ever gained renown for its halls. His father now obtained for him still further and richer ecclesiastical preferment, and being made an Abbé he commenced to preach, and preached with great applause, but with very little fruit. As he says himself, "he was all the fashion, preaching beautiful sermons abounding in rhetorical tropes and vain conceits, but in which not a word was uttered against the manners of the world, its pride and covetousness." For a short time he associated very much with a number of gay young semi-clerical friends, leading a life free from care and labour, spending their ill-got ecclesiastical revenues in providing for themselves idle and dangerous amusements. But he was destined not to continue long in this course. Midst all the gaiety and amusements of Parisian life, he never entirely slackened in his devotion to the Blessed Mother of God, and she secured his conversion in a most miraculous manner. He went to Rome about the twentieth year of his age, to perfect his knowledge of the Hebrew language, with the view of attaining to some high place in the Sorbonne, but in Rome his eyes became so weak that he was threatened with a total loss of sight, and the most skilful oculists in the city could afford him no relief. In this affliction he thought of his holy patroness, and set out from Rome to the Shrine of Loreto, a journey of one hundred miles. This long and painful journey he performed on foot, and near its end he was seized with a dangerous fever. He managed however to drag himself to the holy house, and no sooner did he throw himself on his knees before the image of her who is the "*Auxilium Infirmorum*" than two great miracles were wrought by her intercession

He was completely cured of the fever, and recovered the use of his eyes so fully, that he was never again troubled with the disease. At the same time his conversion to God naturally followed these two great miracles, and there and then he received the gift of prayer, which the Lord poured out most abundantly on his soul. At first he intended to become a Carthusian monk, but after much prayer and fasting and many visits to various shrines of our Lady to ascertain God's will in his regard, it was clearly manifested to him that it was his vocation to become a secular priest. Most happily for himself and the Church, he now took St. Vincent de Paul for his confessor and spiritual guide. The Saint sent him to accompany the Vincentian Fathers on many missions, which they were giving in various dioceses of France, and he laboured as zealously as any of the missionary fathers then in their first fervour. As he possessed ample means of his own, he contributed largely towards defraying the expense of the missions, and took care to secure for those districts that had claims on him all the spiritual benefits those missions could confer. With the advice of St. Vincent de Paul he was raised to the priesthood in May 1633, when he was just twenty-five years old. The better to prepare his soul for worthily celebrating his first Mass, he made a retreat of one whole month after his ordination, interrupting during that time all his studies and works of charity.

And it was only after this month's retreat following his ordination that he ventured to offer the great Sacrifice of the Mass for the first time. From that day his devotion to our Lord in the Holy Sacrament of the Altar, and to His Blessed Mother, seems to have possession of his whole soul. St. Alphonsus Liguori may be regarded as a new Apostle of devotion to the Blessed Eucharist and to Our Lady. By his sermons and writings he laboured indefatigably to kindle these devotions in the hearts of his countrymen and indeed of all the faithful. What St. Liguori did in Italy M. Olier laboured, and with great success, to effect in France nearly a century earlier. In many respects these two great servants of God strongly resembled each other, but in devotion to the Holy Sacrament and the Virgin Mother, the resemblance is

most striking. In this respect, and indeed in all others, the life of M. Olier is a most edifying and instructive lesson to secular priests to whom, secular priest as he was, he affords in all his works the best model for imitation. Had he lived after the days of St. Liguori we would say that he took that great Saint for his model especially in regard to devotion to the hidden God and the Blessed Virgin ; we could say too that he imitated very closely his spirit of unceasing toil, his humility, and zeal for souls.

These virtues he laboured with great success to inspire into the Seminarists whose happy lot it was to be trained by him specially called as he was by God to lay the first foundation of ecclesiastical Seminaries in France. There is no reason to doubt that M. Olier had a miraculous vision from which he was given to understand that he was destined by God to begin successfully the founding of these Seminaries in France. This we know on the authority of a statement made about this vision at a meeting of the Sacred Congregation of Rites by the Sub-promoter of the Faith. His words are “*Dubitari nequaquam poterit quin vera fuerit apparitio.*”

Père de Condren and St. Vincent de Paul were his faithful friends and advisers in every step he took towards accomplishing the work to which he was divinely called. They were both animated with the Spirit of God and both sighed after the time when the Church should possess a priesthood worthy of their sacred calling. They both believed that in M. Olier they could see the graces and gifts necessary to make a successful effort towards attaining so desirable a consummation. He had been on missions in various dioceses of France, he saw the deplorable condition of the people, the inefficiency and want of zeal of the clergy and they knew he longed to remedy these very widespread evils. They all knew that these evils could be remedied only by carrying out the wishes of the council of Trent and training for the Service of the Church from their earliest years an entirely new generation of priests. Besides Père de Condren and St. Vincent de Paul, M. Olier had a few other select friends among the priests of Paris, who were equally anxious to bring about the reform so sorely needed. They willingly lent him their aid for his

great work. "At this time," says M. Olier's biographer, "so secularised both in spirit and manner had the clergy become that they were not distinguishable in dress or demeanour from ordinary laymen, going about in moustaches and boots like mere men of the world, indeed it would seem that on occasions they did not take the trouble to put on the ecclesiastical attire when performing the sacred duty of their calling." The Bishop of Chalons-sur-Marne wished to have M. Olier appointed as his coadjutor, "being appalled at the total loss of discipline in his diocese and at seeing so many souls perishing through the neglect of their pastors who were ignorant, and more than ignorant, but whom it was impossible to remove from their benefices." In one diocese we are told, and this is a sample, that the gentry who had the right to present to parishes, gave them by a fictitious presentation to vicars removable at their pleasure and gave the revenues to their own children. In this, such was the ignorance of the clergy and their utter disregard of the essential duties of their office that one of them writing to a clerical friend of M. Olier's said that all that was required to be a good ecclesiastic was "to be able to read and not be guilty of any heinous crime." In the large diocese of — there were from 6,000 to 7,000 ecclesiastics who had no competent knowledge of their state. But all this was now to be changed in good time. Père de Condren and St. Vincent de Paul impressed on M. Olier the important truth that the missions given by himself and his confreres did not produce lasting effects as they were not continued after them by the local clergy. They showed that no mission could produce lasting results until the Church of France was provided with a new race of priests full of the spirit that the missionaries themselves had. M. Olier realises this fully from the exhortations of his holy friends, and his own personal observation and experience. Accordingly, in 1642 with two confreres only, M. de Foix and M. du Ferrier, he opened a Seminary at Vaugirard, then a small village near Paris. Soon the numbers increased to twenty, and in a very brief period the new institution produced glorious results. After some time spent at Vaugirard, M. Olier was appointed curé of the parish of St. Sulpice, and he there renewed the

resolution to devote all the energies of his life to instruct and reform, and to use his influential position as curé of this most important parish for the establishment of Seminaries throughout France. Many of his friends ridiculed him for what they were pleased to call his folly in regard to the Seminaries, seeing that so many previous similar projects had come to nought. "At this time," as we are reminded by his biographer, "no one was obliged to reside in an ecclesiastical Seminary for however limited a period, in order to obtain a benefice, or receive Holy Orders." How strange and almost incredible this appears to us now, but it is nevertheless too true. On M. Olier's appointment to the parish of St. Sulpice the Seminary was transferred from Vaugirard to that parish, and took its name therefrom. And very soon from all parts of the kingdom, ecclesiastics of all grades, including abbots, priors, canons, doctors, and bachelors in theology, came to prepare themselves by a life of prayer and study for worthily receiving Holy Orders, or to imbue themselves with the spirit of their vocation, and within ten years from this time M. Olier was able to inform the Sovereign Pontiff that the Seminary had given many bishops and dignitaries to the Church of France, a thing which it continues to do up to the present day. The accommodation hastily provided for the ever increasing numbers that flocked to the new institute proved inadequate, and after a few years, a new and splendid building was begun, and completed about 1650. M. Olier's twofold object in building this Seminary was, first to send on the French Mission with all possible speed, a race of priests thoroughly trained in piety and learning, and secondly to institute a company of learned and holy priests who would continue and extend this work of training the younger clergy. His biographer tells us that he frequently impressed on his students that a priest without knowledge can never do much good in the Church. Hence, he took particular pains that the students trained under his care should be thoroughly grounded in philosophy and theology. He used frequently tell them when urging them to close study, "that the Church is a body in which priests are the eyes, a ship in which they are pilots, a school where they are masters. In the confessional they sit

to render judgment, prompt and decisive, with none to aid, on matters of the greatest moment, in the pulpit they have to speak to both learned and ignorant to maintain the truths of the Gospel, all which supposes a knowledge higher, deeper, and more extensive, than could be acquired by private study, but the great object must always be to make priests interior men, which alone was the life-spring of virtue, and the uniform means of attaining Sacerdotal perfection." In season and out of season he was constantly placing before their eyes his own lofty ideal of perfection, and urging them to use all the means in their power to realise it. We can readily understand how he strove to kindle in their souls his own great and rare devotion to the Most Holy Sacrament and the Blessed Virgin Mother.

It is also useful to know that he laboured to inspire his Seminarists with a special love for the Holy Bible. "The study of Scripture," he declared "to be one of God's express commands to the house," and it was well known that he always read the Scriptures himself on his knees, with his head uncovered, and also, that he kept his Bible on a sort of throne, and when leaving or entering his rooms, cast his eyes towards it, to venerate the Spirit of God residing therein.

To the colleagues who shared his arduous labours and who numbered between thirty and forty, remarkable for rare intellectual gifts no less than genuine piety, he was wont to say that "to honour God, to love Jesus and Mary, to bear with patience and love the share He gives them in His own crosses, to lay himself at the feet of all, and especially of the ecclesiastics for whose sanctification he labours, to live for the sanctification of priests and the salvation of souls, to live without vows, but to be more pliant and submissive than those who are bound by vows, this is something of what is required to be a priest of the Seminary of St. Sulpice." Such was the spirit M. Olier strove to make predominant among the masters and students of the newly-founded seminary, and we can easily realise how "the seminary thus guided, resembled a religious community in the glow of its first fervour." As his work was manifestly blessed by

Heaven he was asked by several bishops in France to extend to their dioceses the benefits of his institution. At the General Assembly of the bishops and clergy of France, held in Paris in 1651, a memorial was presented by one of M. Olier's priests explaining the object of the institution, its rules and constitution. This memorial was entitled "*Projet de l'Etablissement d'un Séminaire dans un diocèse.*" It was carefully examined by the bishops, got their blessing and approval, and at their next general meeting, effectual steps were taken for availing of it by founding diocesan seminaries throughout France. M. Olier's biographer gives a most interesting history of the part taken by the college of St. Sulpice in furthering this object. His colleagues and himself took the work in hand with a right good will, and devoted themselves to it with such untiring zeal, so much patience and disinterestedness, that the French clergy rejoiced to help and imitate them. The applications made to M. Olier by bishops anxious to establish diocesan seminaries were so numerous, that he could entertain but a small proportion of them. The bishops who were unable to secure the services of himself or of some of his colleagues, got from him a model of what these institutions should be, and they were not slow to make use of it.

The work thus inaugurated nearly 250 years ago continues to produce most happy results up to the present day. In our own time the Sulpicians retain their hold on the respect and love of the French Church, and have their colleges established in Paris, Lyons, Toulouse, Bordeaux, Autun, Avignon, Orleans, Limoges, Dijon, Clermont, Aix, and numerous other cities. It is well also to bear in mind what M. Olier and the Sulpicians did for religion and civilisation in Canada by establishing the College at Montreal. A goodly and most interesting volume might be written about the services rendered to Catholicism during the past two hundred years by the Sulpicians of Montreal alone. This work is sure to be extended and continued in the United States by their two colleges, one at Baltimore and one newly-founded at Boston by Archbishop Williams, himself a distinguished student of St. Sulpice. This latter college is governed by Father Hogan an eminent theologian who was brought to Boston from Paris

where he filled the chair of moral theology in succession to the well-known Carrière.

The Venerable Joseph Liberman, Père Lacordaire, and the eloquent and fearless Dupanloup owed much of their greatness to St. Sulpice. France at present owes to it some of its most distinguished ecclesiastics, witness the Cardinal Archbishop of Lyons, Cardinal Archbishop of Tunis, Cardinal Archbishop of Rheims, Cardinal Archbishop of Sens, the Archbishops of Paris and Rouen. It has also provided the present occupants for the Sees of Annecy, Bayeux, Blois, Toulon, Meaux, Montpellier, Metz, Poitiers, and others too numerous to mention. Bishops educated in St. Sulpice occupy sees in Ireland, Canada, the United States, South America and Australia. The priests of St. Sulpice have won eminence in every branch of Ecclesiastical Science. They have produced great works in Dogmatic and Moral Theology, Canon Law, Ascetic Theology, Biblical and Oriental Literature, Ecclesiastical History, Sacred Biography and Philosophy. We may name Carrière, Icard, Bruyere, Vallet, Mamier, Gosselin, Le Hir, Vigouroux, Bacuez, Tronson and others equally distinguished. This is a goodly array of great names to reflect glory on M. Olier's work. He sketched out vast and far reaching plans for his Society but it may be doubted whether he ever anticipated such great results as it has produced. We have not spoken of him as curé of the parish of St. Sulpice, or of the great reforms he effected in that large and disorderly quarter of the city. We earnestly recommend this portion of his biography to all those who desire to know what was the condition of religion in Paris in his day and what he did to make men respect and practise it.

Mr. Healy Thompson with all the love and enthusiasm of a biographer gives us a vivid picture of M. Olier's labours as curé of this parish. The entire work is written in the biographer's best style, but we think this part of it is particularly well done. The author of M. Olier's life requires no praise from us, or indeed from any one else. He is now too well known as a writer of religious biography and editor of works of that class. However, we may say that he was very happy in this selection of a subject for

a biography and he set about his labour of love with all the energy of M. Olier himself. It is not too much to say that he has succeeded in giving us a work edifying and instructive in the highest degree. He shows us what was the religious, political and social condition of France, and of Paris especially, in M. Olier's life-time. We catch glimpses of Louis XIII. and Louis XIV., Anne of Austria, Richelieu, Mazarin and De Retz; we do not find these exalted characters to improve on a close inspection. We also get a glimpse at M. Olier in what perhaps we may fairly call misguided zeal trying to impress some religious views on the mind of that worthless and faithless Stuart, Charles II.; we also get a good succinct account of the war of Paris in 1649 when the Parliament and citizens made a miserable attempt to wring from the crown some of those constitutional rights which the English Parliament and people won at the same time in so emphatic and characteristic a fashion.

The history of Jansenism necessarily comes into this work and we see what efforts its abettors made to introduce its poisonous doctrines among M. Olier's Seminarists. How completely they failed we may judge from language used by Fénelon to Clement XI. in the year 1705. "*Soli sunt Sulpitiani Seminaristae quibus cordi sit hanc labem a se depellere. Unde a Cardinale Archiepiscopo viles et invisibiles habentur.*" These words were written fifty years after M. Olier had breathed his last in the arms of St. Vincent de Paul. He died at the early age of forty-eight, but being made perfect in a short space, he fulfilled a long time, once having pleased God, he was beloved, and speedily translated to receive the great rewards of his zeal and labour for God and his holy Church.

For proof of the high esteem in which the Sulpicians are held at present by the Holy See, we refer to the letter of His Holiness Leo XIII., sent to their present rector M. Icard, and published in the October number of the RECORD, (Vol. vii., p. 947).

This paper was suggested to us by Mr. H. Thompson's new and enlarged edition of M. Olier's life, and we wish to conclude it by quoting a paragraph from Dr. Vaughan's

letter to the learned author. "M. Olier's life is a perfect mine of ecclesiastical thought and suggestions. I wish all our ecclesiastical colleges possessed many copies of it, so that it might be a kind of text-book both for superiors and students."

ANDREW BOYLAN.

THE GERMAN AND GALLIC MUSES.

A FEW months ago we had to listen with all patience and seeming unconcern to the apotheosis from press and platform of one, who had passed more than the years usually allotted to the span of human life; and who, after various vicissitudes of pain and strife, terror and triumph, had come to be regarded as the great national poet of France, and the prophet of that recent development of man's eccentricity—the religion of humanity. Poet and essayist, novelist and historian, he left no department of letters untried; and the praises of him were so persistent, and his personality of such influence in these latter days, that even those who were not of his household or country came to join in the universal chorus of unstinted worship, and unconditional admiration. "Foremost man of this our century," "Apostle of Freedom and Humanity," the "latest seer vouchsafed to us," and in lower tones, "the greatest lyric poet of France and the world," "the best dramatic novelist of our century"—this is the chime that has been swinging its adulations in our ears, and whose music is rather marred by its monotony.

But even when the glory of the man had reached its height, when his mortal elements were carried in funeral procession, and the steps of the sacred temple which was to be his mausoleum, were piled with floral tributes from France and the world, a question would force itself upon us. Outside the ranks of newspaper critics, a few dreamy enthusiasts in his own country, and an exceedingly limited number of poetasters and *littérateurs* in these islands, how many are

there who have read Victor Hugo's poems? to how many are his verses familiar? who can quote one single line from them? who can even tell the titles of his works? In the whole wide realm of English literature, he appears to have had but one admirer and advocate, an eccentric but strong genius whose rapturous enthusiasm, however, would scarcely have compensated the vain dead poet for the studied indifference of the English literary world. Master of the English language as he undoubtedly is, Swinburne can scarcely find words to express his admiration of Victor Hugo. He calls him—

“The mightiest soul
That came forth singing ever in men's ears,
Of all souls with us, and thro' all these years,
Rings yet the lordliest, waxen yet more strong.”

And again,

“That one, whose name gives glory
One man, whose life makes light.

* * * *

Our lord, our light, our master,
Whose word sums up all song.”

And so on through the whole litany of adulation. But what do the masses of the people think? Is Hugo even in his own France as familiar to educated people, as Tennyson is in these islands? Will literary men in his own country form learned societies to explain and apply the meaning of his verses, like the Shakspearean societies that are numberless amongst ourselves? Will there be a club in Paris, half a century after his death, to meet every year in worship of him, as the admirers of Wordsworth do in London? Will his sentences be quoted in books and speeches, to strengthen them by apposite illustration, or adorn them, so that they shall not easily slip from the memories of men?

But the question takes a wider range. It must have occurred to many readers that French poetry is absolutely unknown beyond the geographical boundaries of the Republic. Since the time of Frederick the Great who patronised Voltaire, and made French literature, manners, language, fashionable amongst the Teutons, there has been a steady decline in the popularity of French poetry amongst educated foreigners; and on the other hand, there has been a steady

increase of admiration for that wonderful galaxy of thinkers and singers which the Fatherland, to make up for past apathy, has produced. In England, every educated person has acquired, or thinks it necessary to affect, a taste for foreign literature. The wild poet, who saw the fiery snow fall upon the backs of the tormented, who felt the breath of the hurricane that swept round in fierce gusts the sad souls of Paolo and Francesca, who lingered amongst the sealed tombs that held lost souls, and tore bleeding limbs when he touched the branches of the gloomy trees, must be as familiar as Shakspeare or Byron to the cultured English intellect. Calderon, too, and Lope de Vega, must be recognised; and even the far off poets of the East, with their strange mythical philosophies, have found honourable places in our magazines, and more than one learned commentator; and above all, German philosophy, German romance, and German poetry must be known, if one desires not to be classed amongst those, who sit in exterior darkness, and have no place in the circles, where familiarity with the works of genius is the only passport of admission. But it is no literary crime to be quite ignorant of French poetry. You may know that Racine and Molière existed, and wrote certain tragedies and comedies, but no one is expected to spend much time on these poets of the past, or to waste midnight oil in seeking to discover or remember their beauties. And so, for one who has heard the names of Alain Chartier or Villon, a hundred have by heart the songs of Schiller and Herder; for one who cares about the Napoleonic songs of Béranger, a hundred admire the glaive-song of Körner.

The study of the causes which have made French poetry a drug in the market, whilst French literature in every other department holds a foremost place amongst its contemporaries in every country in Europe, is a very curious, and perhaps, instructive one. It has been said that the French language is not well adapted to the higher forms of poetry. With its fondness for light dental syllables,¹ the almost total absence of strong guttural sounds, and its numberless particles, whose

¹ With what delight did I hear the woman who conducted us to see the triumphal arch of Augustus at Susa, speak the clear and complete language of Italy, though half unintelligible to me, after that nasal and abbreviated cacophony of the French. *Shelley's Letters from Italy.*

tenuity is not relieved as in Greek and German, with deep sonorous syllables, it remains for ever the language of the drawing-room or cabinet, of pastoral loves and sweet simplicities, but can never be made the vehicle of the stormy outpourings of love or terror, of the stern passion and solemn feeling which the tragic muse demands; nor in lyric poetry can it ever convey the pathos and the tenderness and the sublimity, that belong to the subjects, which in our times poetic geniuses have almost universally adopted. French writers admit this inferiority of their language to those of the ancient classics, and seek every pretext for maintaining that, notwithstanding this weakness French dramatic poetry deserves to take a place on the high level of the immortal works which Greek genius has left to humanity. They hold that the rhythm of their language can never be understood by foreigners; and that, owing to the peculiar possession by French artists of an organic power over the sounds and syllables in poetry, which they call the tonic accent, the full meaning of their great dramatists can be interpreted to an audience in strong, but harmonious rhetoric—melodious, yet as passionate and striking as the harshest threnodies of Æschylus; and that the weakness of the perpetual rhyming, which is so painful to readers of French tragedy, is altogether removed, when by attention to meaning and by gesture, every passionate speech is uttered, accentuated by oratorical inflexion. This, they say, was the secret of the power of Talma, the greatest of French tragedians.

However correct this strong defence may be, the fact remains that for the majority of readers, who are entertained by their poets, not in the auditorium of a theatre, but in the silence of their studies, the French language is absolutely effeminate—we might almost say exasperating, in its inadequacy to express what are often great and splendid ideas. And, unfortunately, the three great tragic poets of France, Corneille, Voltaire, and Racine, have challenged comparison with the masterpieces of antiquity by selecting for treatment, characters, scenes and episodes, that belong to the mythology of Greece and Rome. To any one familiar with Greek tragedy, whose ears have been accustomed to the long rich roll of the Epic hexameter, to the iambics of the Attic stage, and

to the high heroic style of the chief actors in the immortal dramas of Greece, nothing can appear more paltry and weak than the mock heroics of their modern French imitators. Here for example, is a part of a dialogue between Agamemnon and Achilles, on an occasion of unusual solemnity, when the former had determined to sacrifice his daughter Iphigenia, and Achilles, her betrothed, has just heard the terrible report.

ACHILLE.

Un bruit assez étrange est venu jusqu'à moi
Seigneur ; je l'ai jugé trop peu digne de foi.
On dit, et sans horreur, je ne puis le redire,
Qu'aujourd'hui, par votre ordre Iphigénie expire.

AGAMEMNON.

Seigneur, je ne rends point compte de mes desseins,
Ma fille ignore encore mes ordres souverains,
Et, quand il sera temps quelle en soit informée,
Vous apprendrez son sort, j'en instruirai l'armée.

ACHILLE.

Ah ! je sais trop le sort, que vous lui réservez.

AGAMEMNON.

Pourquoi le demander, puisque vous le savez.¹

Instead of an excited prologue to a tragedy, this reads like a cautious and diplomatic exchange of question and retort between the clever plenipotentiaries of two rival States. But turn to the *Iphigenias* of Euripides, or the *Iphigenia in Tauris* of Goethe, and the vast inferiority of the Gallic to the Greek and German dialects will be apparent. Or take any part of the *Iliad*, or a single page of *Paradise Lost* and then hear Voltaire in the only epic poem which France has produced—the *Henriade*. Here is the opening description of the massacre of St. Bartholomew :—

Cependant tout s'apprête, et l'heure est arrivée
Qu'au fatal dénoûment la reine a réservée.
Le signal est donné sans tumulte et sans bruit ;
C'était à la faveur des ombres de la nuit.
De ce mois malheureux l'inégale courrière
Semblait cacher d'effroi sa tremblante lumière.
Coligny languissait dans les bras du repos,
Et le sommeil trompeur lui versait ses pavots.
Soudain de mille cris le bruit épouvantable
Vient arracher ses sens à ce calme agréable.

¹ Iphigénie—Racine.

It is as "moonlight unto sunlight, and as water unto wine." But the German language, so broad, and deep, and resonant lends itself easily to metrical romance, historical epic, or the stately drama. Very strong, rough elements went to compose it — the dialects of the East Goths who occupied the low alluvial lands of the Danube and the Elbe—and whilst still crude and unformed, Ovid, the earliest poet who wrote in German, discovered its adaptability to Greek and Roman rhythm, and invented the German hexameter, the same metre, in which Wieland and Klopstock wrote their immortal epics. And there cannot be a doubt but that this language is peculiarly fitted for heroic and dramatic poetry. The long compound words, each of which is a metaphor, like the compound Greek adjectives, the preponderance of consonants, sometimes linked and riveted together as if to reduplicate their strength, and the distinct pronunciation of every letter, gives a tone of masculine vigour to the language, which makes it peculiarly the language of the tragedian. But even in softer lyric verses, the words fit in, when used with skill as easily as the liquid Italian. We quote two stanzas from Uhland's *Das Schloss am Meer*:—

“Sahest du oben gehen
Den König und sein Gemahl?
Der rothen Mäntel wehen?
Der goldnen Kronen Strahl?
Führten sie nicht mit Wonne
Eine schöne Jungfrau dar
Herrlich wie eine sonne
Strahlend in goldnen Haar?

and these few lines of Mignon's song, which are familiar.

Kennst du das Land? wo die Citronen blühn
Im dunkeln Laub die Gold-Orangen glühn
Ein sanfter Wind vom blauen Himmel weht
Die Myrte still und hoch der Lorbeer steht
Kennst du es wohl?

Dahin! Dahin!

Möcht' ich mit dir, o mein Geliebter, ziehn,

But the distinct inferiority of French to German poetry is rather to be sought in two yet more powerful causes—the configuration of the countries, and their histories, legendary

or otherwise. It may seem a bold assertion that the poetry of a country takes its tone from its scenery, and that the divine dreams of bards and singers are coloured by associations of mountains and rivers, the level beauties or rich undulations of a landscape, or the many wonders of the sea. Yet, if a poet is above all things a child of nature—if she is his mother, his mistress, his teacher, who keeps her secrets for him alone, and shows him pictures, to which other men are blind, and whispers music which the unfavoured shall not hear, assuredly his writings must bear some strong impress of his fancies, and, according to Nature's teachings, be rich or poor, tame or spirited, the rapt utterance of an oracle that is inspired, or the stammering of a voice, which has never been lifted above the low levels of human knowledge and utterance. Hence, Mount Parnassus was the home of the Muses in the Greek mythology, and from the mystic fountain their clients drew their inspiration; and every poet that has sung since these distant times has walked with Nature first and then with man, to learn the myriad moods in which she strives to captivate and educate her wayward child. True to her teachings was the Irish bard, who returned from the ends of the earth to see once more the "purple mountains of Imlisfail," and if there be any special charm in the works of an artist who is always delightful, it is the sombre tone in which he envelops the mournful chant of "In Memoriam," or the twilight atmosphere in which he exhibits the spectral forms of Arthur and his knights.

Now, Nature has been particularly unkind to France. She has given her splendid facilities for commerce and agriculture; but her dowry of broad, tame, fertile plains, unbroken by the barrenness of shaggy mountains, and unrelieved by the desolation of moorland or mere, has never qualified her to be "meet nurse for a poetic child." Smooth, bare levels, dotted with poplars, arranged with the mathematical precision which Nature detests, and shallow rivers flowing by dull towns, yield not a spot which Melpomene could haunt, and lift the soul of native child or gifted stranger to that mood of inspiration when the spirit of man breaks forth in song. But in Germany everything favours

the poetic and philosophic spirit. Its broad majestic rivers, castlecrowned, and jewelled with green islets, its giant forests, dark and gloomy, as if still haunted by the spirit of Druidical worship, its mountains, with their brockens and witches, its historic cities, that were swept by the storms of political strife, and rent with the rage of battles, all combine to give a tinge of the weird and supernatural to German poetry, and to eliminate whatever is merely formal, prosaic, or utilitarian. Every mountain has its legend, every forest its grim history, every river its associations; and brooding over all, and colouring legend, history, and association is the dark spirit of Scandinavian mythology. Across the dawn of French poetry we see a gay procession of jongleurs and troubadours daintily dressed, swinging their guitars, and singing of love and flowers and perfumes, “*Vous estes belle en bonne foye,*” and “*Si jamais fust un Paradis en terre.*” Across the dawn of German poetry are the dark figures of the scalds, who sang of Thor and Odin, and the mad Beresarks, and the Valkyres, who, forgetting their sex, went out on the battle-field by night, and slew the wounded. The former sang in quaint old Breton, or the half-Spanish French of the south, and the eternal subject in lay, virelay, and rondelay, is the silly nonsense that for ever attaches to purely erotic poetry. The latter sang in rough gutturals¹ of war, and the gods, and the fountains of being, and the origin of men, and the three sisters Urda, Verandi and Skulda, of the twilight, and the windswells, and the old man of the mountain and the old man of the sea. The earliest monuments of Gothic intellect are these rough old rhymes on subjects, which though clothed in uncouth language and darkened in the twilight of mythology must still be considered the beginnings of those modern schools of poetry which have produced masterpieces which will bear to be read or represented by the side of the masterpieces which Greece produced in the zenith of its

¹Sunt illis haec quoque carmina, quorum relatu, quem Barditum vocant, accendunt animos, futuraeque pugnae fortunam ipso cantu augurantur: terrent enim trepidantve prout sonuit acies. Nec tam voces illae quam virtutis concentus videntur: adfectatur praecipue asperitas soni, et fractum murmur, objectis ad os scutis quo plenior ac gravior vox percussu intumescat.—*Tacitus*.

intellectual power. But the love songs of the *trouveres* and *troubadours* are the beginnings of an effeminate school which never in its earlier days thought of the philosophy of nature as a subject for poetry, and never in its later days touched that great subject without reducing it to ridicule. And so even to this day we have *rondeaux*, *triolet*s and *huitains* with “*les parfums*,” “*les fleurs*,” “*les oiseaux*,” and “*le printemps*” well sprinkled through them; but not a word that is worth remembering of a past, that may be lingered over with regret, of a present rich in fruitful philosophy, or a future that is fraught with buoyant hopes and cheerful presages for humanity.

But did not the Germans actually adopt not only the versification, but even the subjects of French poetry? True; after the conquests of Charlemagne, a strong imitative spirit grew up in Germany for everything French; and the romances of chivalry which took their rise in Brittany, which celebrated the glories of the Round Table, and the bravery of Charlemagne, and the exploits of Amadis of Gaul, became the ruling subjects of literature not only in Germany, but all over Europe. The Italians had no vernacular poetry prior to the fourteenth century. The earliest of their poems which have come down to us are simply imitations, both in dialect and subject, of the ancient Provençal poets. The Spaniards invited their singers from beyond the Pyrenees. All the early English romances are avowedly taken from Norman sources, and the German romances are simply translations of the fame of Sir Percivale, or the loves of Lancelot of the Lake, or the fate of Sir Tristram. But we cannot say that any works of native Germans, written in this humble, imitative style, deserve to be remembered now. Just as the Italian copyists have passed away, and are forgotten, whilst the figure of Dante, huge, colossal, original, stands enshrined in the Temple of Immortality; and as the Spanish copyists have passed away, and leave Calderon and Lope de Vega, the sole representatives of Spanish and Portuguese art, so the servile imitators of Breton or Provençal romance in Germany have barely recorded of them in musty indices of the Vatican or elsewhere, that they wrote such and such a work in “*merrie*

rime," but that is all the hold they have on the attention of our age to be rescued from absolute oblivion. Even during this dull period, the only works of any importance that have challenged the notice of posterity are the original metrical romances, that have for subject some national or mythological legend derived from purely Gothic sources—such as the expedition of the Ecken, or the Lay of the Nibelungs. In truth, Frankish influence appears to have paralysed every effort of native Germans to establish and consecrate to national purposes a truly original school of poetry. The traditionary ballads of the *trouvères* had a host of servile imitators, who, when tired of extravaganzas in amatory verse introduced the same silly sentimentality—the same profane and farfetched imagery—the same indelicacy and coarseness into the miracle plays, which during this period, were tolerated over the whole continent of Europe. In fact, Germany had ceased to be a nation, and had become merely a collection of principalities, and German poetry had come to be represented by a few ballad writers, who were welcome in the halls of the feudal barons, but who neither caught inspiration from the people, their history and their traditions, nor, in turn, communicated those passionate feelings to the masses, which in later times stirred them to the deepest depths of their being, and created the high ambition, which has placed Germany foremost amongst the nations in all kinds of intellectual culture. In fact, in Germany as in all other nations, nationality and literature acted and reacted on each other. So long as Germany remained under Frankish influence, political or literary, so long it remained in a condition of intellectual debility. When emancipated from foreign influence, it at once produced masters in every branch of intellectual enterprise. When again it passed under the dominance of Frankish customs, it relapsed into sluggish barrenness. It has been said that it was the Reformation which quickened the intellectual pulse of Germany, and by introducing freedom of opinion, philanthropic liberality, &c., stimulated the minds of men to those contests on religion, science, and the humanities, by which the intellect is always invigorated, and the

imagination has scope for broad and liberal speculations in every department of human knowledge. But that this is not so, is evidenced by the facts that for 150 years after the Reformation, the countries of Europe, which embraced Protestantism sank back into a condition of almost primitive barbarism ; and that long before the Reformation, and in the very centre of Catholicism, a revival of taste for all the arts that can elevate and refine humanity, for the sciences which contribute to man's comfort, and for the literature which broadens and beautifies his mind, had already taken place. "If the three hundred years," says an English writer¹—"which elapsed between 1500 and 1800, be divided into equal parts, the spirit of the Reformation will be allowed to have been most operative during the first hundred and fifty years. But the diffusion of general welfare and illumination will be found most conspicuous during the last hundred and fifty years. This progress, both of populousness and refinement, resulted chiefly from the increase of wealth ; and the increase of wealth resulted chiefly from the extension of commerce, which grew out of the conquest of Hindostan, and the Colonization of America ; events independent of the Reformation. If the European territories shaken by this revolution be distinguished into Protestant and Catholic countries, and the respective masses be compared with each other, the Protestant will uniformly be found the more barbarous during the three first half-centuries of the Reformation ; as if the victory of the new opinions had occasioned a retrogression of civility. The Catholic provinces seem barely to have retained their anterior refinement ; but the Protestant provinces to have receded towards rudeness ; and these only began to recover their natural rank, in the competition of national culture, when the religious zeal of their ruling classes began to abate. Valuing thus in gross the effects of the Reformation, it is surely not easy to perceive its merits." We quote another sentence from the same Protestant author, just to show that the opinion of Carlyle and others, that modern civilisation is directly traceable to the Reformation is not shared by all thinkers. "When it is considered that,

¹ W. Taylor. *Survey of German Poetry.*

of the evil, which for one hundred and fifty years accompanied the Reformation along its progress, much inheres in the very nature and essence of the change ; that, of the good, which for one hundred and fifty years has been enjoyed in the seats of the Reformation, much might equally have been expected without any alteration at all ; and that a purer reformation from the bosom of Italy itself, was probably intercepted by the premature violence of Luther and his followers—surely they may not hastily, or decidedly, be classed among the benefactors of the human race. The northern Reformers made tempests and bloody showers ; and now that the sunshine is restored to their fields, they boast of the storm as the cause of the fertility.”

We see therefore that the change in the religious opinions of Germany was not the prelude to the golden epoch of its poetry and literature. That the spirit of independence of foreign influences, and the popularisation of German manners, language, &c., had an immediate and vivifying effect on German genius is evidenced by the fact that it was in the year 1748, the first German grammar was published by Gottsched,¹ and writing in German became popular, and from that year for a long century, Germany produced with a rapidity which astonished herself and the world, a galaxy of poetic and other geniuses, more numerous, and of more transcendent ability than all the modern nations of Europe have together produced. We do not say that she therefore bears the palm of intellectual superiority, or that she is the cradle of the world's greatest men. We do not say that Goethe is a greater poet than Shakspeare or Dante, or that Klopstock is equal to Milton. But we do say that in the short space of a single century, and that century bounding the 'only national life which Germany has enjoyed, it has given to the world a school of poets and philosophers of more unique, original, and varied talent, of higher and more transcendent aims and ideas, and of greater perfection of artistic workmanship, than can be found on the rolls of honour of any other nation. Here are names, every one of which is mentioned with enthusiasm, not only at home, but in every academy and university in

¹ Up to that date, the learned wrote in Latin.

Europe, Goethe, Schiller, Herder, Werner, Heine, Novalis Bürger, Freiligrath, Klopstock, Körner, Lessing, Tieck, Uhland, Wieland, Hoffmann, &c., &c., of whom Carlyle says: "We have no hesitation in stating, that we see in certain of the best German poets, and those, too, of our own time, something which associates them, remotely or nearly we say not, but which does associate them with the Masters of Art, the Saints of Poetry, long since departed, and as we thought, without successors, from the earth, but canonised in the hearts of all generations, and yet living to all by the memory of what they did and were. Glances we do seem to find of that ethereal glory which looks upon us in its full brightness from the *Transfiguration* of Raffaele, from the *Tempest* of Shakspeare: and, in broken, but still purest, and heart-piercing beams, struggling through the gloom of long ages, from the tragedies of Sophocles, and the weather-worn sculpture of the Parthenon. This is that heavenly spirit which, best seen in the aerial embodiment of poetry, but spreading likewise over all the thoughts and actions of an age, has given us Surreys, Sidneys, Raleighs in court and camp, Cecils in policy, Hookers in divinity, Bacons in philosophy, and Shakspeares and Spensers in song. In affirming that any vestige, however feeble, of this divine spirit is discernible in German poetry, we are aware that we place it above the existing poetry of any other nation."

We might say in conclusion, that the whole spirit of Germany is in alliance with the lofty ideas and emotions which find their embodiment in poetry: the whole spirit of France is in direct opposition and antipathy. There are two very exquisite passages from two of our most eminent English poets, which clearly exemplify this statement. Robert Browning speaking of subjective poets and taking Shelley as a type, says: "Not what man sees, but what God sees—the *ideas* of Plato—seeds of creation lying burningly on the Divine Hand—it is towards these that he struggles. Not with the combination of humanity in action, but with the primal elements of humanity he has to do; and he digs where he stands,—preferring to seek them in his own soul as the nearest reflex of that absolute Mind, according to the inten-

tions of which he desires to perceive and speak." To the spiritual, introspective character of German genius, these remarks would admirably apply; and although there appears to have been no correspondence either of imitation or praise between Shelley and his German contemporaries, he derived his undoubted inspirations from sources to which they had access and recourse, and his poetry, which has long since passed into the region of the deathless classics, has an indisputable affinity with the legendary and lyrical poetry of the Fatherland. For if the German poets were metaphysicians before they broke through forms and sang in clear resonant rhythm emotions and ideas that were unintelligible in mere prose, Shelley, too, had his mind formed on the teachings of Plato,¹ and his immortal verse is but the disburthening of a great philosophical mind, which laboured under the doubts and difficulties of existence to the end. And his vain ineffectual straining after an excellence and beauty, which he ended by declaring it to be visionary and ideal, what is it but that perpetual balancing of reason and fancy, which is so remarkable amongst the German poets, and which is unknown to French versifiers? For these latter, unable to maintain an equipoise between the two great powers of the intellect, decided to dethrone imagination, and deify reason. Whence it is easy to understand that saying of Shelley's: "Rousseau was essentially a poet—the others (meaning Voltaire and his school of sceptics), were mere reasoners."

The other sentence we take from Shelley himself: "Poetry is indeed something divine, it is at once the centre and circumference of all knowledge; it is that which comprehends all science, and that to which all science must be referred. It is the perfect and consummate surface and bloom of all things; it is as the odour and colour of the rose to the texture of the elements which compose it, as the form and splendour of unfaded beauty to the secrets of anatomy and corruption." It is the brilliant surface then of men and things, and not the hidden mechanism of nature that comes under the domain of poetry; or if the divine art will penetrate beneath the surface and seek to understand secret operations that issue in such

¹Introductory note to "Essays" and "Letters" by Ernest Rhys.

splendours of form and colour, it is with a view to understand their mystery and meaning, and not to reduce them to the commonplaces of science. Here the analyst and theorist have no place. The subtle essence of poetic thought can no more be sifted and solved than the scent of a rose in summer, or the odours that are wafted from the sea. Its secret charm, which appeals to our highest senses, and gives us some idea of pre-existence as it certainly gives a hope of immortality, is undefinable; and human speech, that is wrought into such mysterious and beautiful texture under its influence, has no power to declare the nature of the spell that enfolds it. And as in the sister art of music, the ethereal harmonies which sway human emotions are altogether beyond the grasp of the geometer, who can tell the exact value of notes and intervals, or the surgeon who knows exactly the physiology of the vocal chords, so poetry in its highest forms is far beyond the reach of critical or analytical intellects, who understand the science of the skeleton, but are blind to the beauty and perfection of the living form. Yet, France has always had a dread of the ideal; and her painters and novelists, her sculptors and poets, have driven realism to extremes. Battle-scenes and historical episodes cover their canvasses; the *Morgue* and the *Salpêtrière* furnish the heroes and heroines of romance, and their poets have either taken the classic legends, and deprived them of the life and charm they possessed for the ancients, or affected those historical subjects, which even in the hands of Shakspeare are only redeemed from dulness by the highest efforts of genius and art. The result is this. The spirit of our age is totally opposed to dry verse, which the soul of poetry never animated. A solitary poet, like Austin Dobson, may try to revive in our magazines some taste for French forms of versification, with comparatively little success, but the unerring instincts of great geniuses like Coleridge and Carlyle force them to direct the full searching light of intellect and taste on German poems and German mysticism, with the result that a radiance is reflected upon themselves which will keep bright their names and memories so long as the world retains its appreciation for thoughts that are imperishable and art that is immortal.

P. A. SHEEHAN.

FREQUENT COMMUNION.

I HAVE not read any book on the subject of Frequent Communion that was of greater assistance to me, in the guidance of souls, than that of Monseigneur de Ségur. My first acquaintance with it was formed in consequence of the high encomiums bestowed upon it by the late Right Reverend Dr. Furlong, Bishop of Ferns, at a Conference of his Clergy. My practice, before I read it, was much more strict; but from the force of its arguments, and more especially from the positive approval of His Holiness Pius IX., I hold the book in the highest esteem.¹

From my experience of very many years, I can say that we do not require to use arguments with people to restrain them from frequent Communion; on the other hand it is often difficult to induce them by any amount of reasoning to practise frequent Communion. And all the reasons which are brought forward to decline frequent Communion, such as not being sufficiently worthy, or sufficiently holy, or not having time to go to Confession, or make sufficient preparation or thanksgiving, are answered most satisfactorily in Monseigneur de Ségur's book on Holy Communion. It is not that I merely admire the theory of Monseigneur de Ségur, but I found that the application of it, in the case of persons who could not be induced to give up venial sin (when the excluding system was adopted), gradually led them to break off the habit of venial sin, and to acquire such an amount of perfection as could reasonably be expected from people engaged in worldly pursuits.

The principle on which Monseigneur de Ségur particularly dwells is, that we are not to regard the Holy Communion

¹ Extract from Monseigneur de Ségur's preface to his work:—"Our Holy Father, Pope Pius IX., to whom I took the liberty of presenting this little work, has honoured it with his gracious sanction. The following is an extract of the Apostolic Brief, by which His Holiness has deigned to confirm the doctrine:

"Beloved son, we have received with happiness the homage of your book, and we congratulate you greatly on the laudable and religious zeal with which you have endeavoured to excite the faithful to approach more frequently the Holy Communion. . . .

"Given at St. Peter's, Rome, the 29th September, 1860."

only as a recompense of acquired sanctity, so much as a means of obtaining it.

What does the Council of Trent teach on the matter, when it wishes that the faithful would communicate, not only spiritually, but also sacramentally, every day at Mass, in order to reap more abundant fruit from the Holy Sacrifice? (*Con. Trid. Sessione 22, ch. 6.*) People may be easily induced to stay away who, when left without strength, will fall into more frequent and greater venial sins, and thus be easily led on to commit mortal sins, and lose their souls; but these same persons, had they been encouraged to go to Communion frequently, might have held on, diminished the number of venial sins, and ultimately saved their souls.

The devil, as Luther himself says, induced him to abolish private Masses; and what may we conceive to be the reason? Not only to deprive God of the honour of the repetition in substance of the Sacrifice of Calvary, but also to hinder the possibility of daily Communion. The devil, because he hates us, would keep us away with Jansenistic fear from the true source of life and strength. But Our Blessed Lord tells us: "Unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man, and drink His blood, you cannot have life in you."

No one doubts the teaching of Innocent XI., that all suspicion of irreverence or scandal should be removed in the reception of this Sacrament. When we have to deal with persons who deliberately fall into venial sins, particularly where scandal may be given, as in cases of intemperance, detraction, &c., and make no effort to amend, reason itself dictates that we should defer Communion. But if they are struggling against the habit, especially where there is mere frailty—and even when in certain cases mortal sin is committed—no more powerful remedy than frequent and even daily Communion can be adopted. Witness St. Philip Neri, who found a young man committing a solitary sin, and yet brought him for eleven continuous days, though there were relapses each day, to Confession and Communion, and thus ultimately cured him.

My own experience on the matter is, that for a length of time I had a great deal of trouble and labour in striving to make penitents give up, by many means, the commission

of venial sins; and I have found no remedy better than frequent, and ultimately daily, Communion. In the course of time, habits that at first appeared incorrigible were totally removed, and a great love of virtue and of Jesus, the Source of virtue, implanted.

I sin daily. I daily stand in need of the remedy (St. Augustine). St. Thomas teaches that the augmentation of grace produced by this Sacrament is not impeded by venial sins, unless they are actually committed in receiving Communion, and that, though these latter are an obstacle to a part of the fruit of the Sacrament, they do not hinder its entire effect.

In the Catechism of the Council of Trent (Euch. n. 52,) we read that the Eucharist certainly remits venial sin. And, in washing away these lesser faults, it helps to restore whatever the soul has lost by the ardour of passion.

In the decree of Innocent XI., bishops were commanded to encourage among the faithful the practice of daily communion. Some rigorists admit that for those who have the necessary dispositions daily communion is lawful. But what do they understand by the necessary dispositions? If they mean that the soul should be *worthy* of receiving the Holy Eucharist, then who should ever communicate? Christ alone communicates *worthily*. For a God alone is worthy of receiving a God. St. Alphonsus might have added the Virgin Mother as in some degree worthy, since the Church prays thus:—"O God, who by the immaculate conception of the Blessed Virgin didst prepare a worthy dwelling for thy Son." But our worthiness is not deserving in this sense of the name.

If they mean the *proper dispositions*, then it has been already said, that they whose conscience is burdened with actual venial sins, and who have an affection for them, should not be allowed to communicate every day. But St. Francis de Sales says in his "Devout Life," ch. 20, that they who have no affection for venial sins, who have conquered the greater part of their corrupt inclinations, and have a great desire of Communion, may receive the Holy Communion every day. St. Thomas teaches, that when any person knows from experience, that by daily Communion his love of

God is increased, and his reverence not diminished, he ought to communicate every day. And here it may be said, that it is not for the penitent alone to judge, but rather for the confessor. Sometimes the penitent does not feel that love, though the confessor may see that it exists; when, for instance, he finds from experience that daily faults are being diminished, when his penitent communicates in order to strengthen his soul against temptation, when he becomes more fervent in prayer, more courageous in the combats of every-day life. And, as Monseigneur de Ségur says, we are not to attach too great a value to a devotion more or less sensible, but to consider piety from a more elevated point of view. The sensible devotion he describes as a spiritual sweetmeat, but by Communion we are to labour to acquire the knowledge and practice of the Christian virtues and not to be anxious for sensible consolations.

St. Alphonsus, a most powerful advocate for frequent Communion, who, when in Rome, on the occasion of his being raised to the dignity of Bishop, wrote his treatise on this subject by command of the Pope,¹ teaches that even persons who have an affection for venial sin ought to be made to communicate every week. Therefore, I say, if they have no affection for it, though through frailty they fall into venial sin, as the just do daily (I sin daily, I daily require the remedy, says a Holy Father), they ought to communicate frequently.

St. Alphonsus, it is true, teaches that those who have contracted habits of venial sin, and make no effort to amend ought to have absolution, and consequently Communion deferred; but when persons make an effort, they ought to get every possible help; and what help can be greater than frequent Communion? "Come to me all you that labour and are heavily burdened and I will refresh you." The Holy Communion preserves from mortal and effaces venial sin. (*Council of Trent*, Sess. 13, ch. 2.)

¹ Having learned from St. Alphonsus that there were men endeavouring to prevent frequent communion, the Holy Father asked him who those innovators were; he then commanded him to write his treatise on Holy Communion.—See *St. Alphonsus' Life*, edited by the Oratorians,

After condemning those who are too indulgent and those who are too rigid in this matter, St. Alphonsus, in the treatise just mentioned, says that they act in opposition to the spirit of the Church by refusing without any regard to the necessity or profit of their penitents frequent Communion, for no other reason than because it is frequent. In explaining the desire of the Holy Council of Trent that all who assist at Mass should communicate, the Roman Catechism says it is the duty of the pastor to exhort the faithful not only to frequent, but even to daily, Communion, and to teach them that the soul as well as the body stands in need of daily food. After excusing himself from producing quotations from the Holy Fathers and other authors, he says, it is enough to know that the Roman Catechism, No. 60, and the decree of Innocent XI. teach that frequent and even daily Communion has been always approved by the Church and by the Holy Fathers, who, as a learned author has shown, when they saw the practice of daily Communion given up, adopted every means in their power to re-establish it.

In the Third Council of Milan, at which St. Charles Borromeo presided, parish priests were commanded to exhort the people to daily Communion; and it was ordained that they who dared to teach the contrary in any diocese in the Province should be forbidden to preach, and should be severely chastised by the Bishop as disseminators of scandal, and declared enemies of the spirit of the Church.

A categorical list of answers to the objections even of good Christians against frequent and daily Communion may be found in the work of Monseigneur de Ségur. Against the one most commonly urged, namely the impossibility of going to confession every time one communicates, it may be enough to consider that the Church ought to be the best judge; and she has clearly expressed her decision by allowing one confession every seven days to suffice for gaining the many indulgences occurring within the week for which Confession and Communion are laid down as conditions. In some dioceses which are specially privileged, even fortnightly confession is sufficient. The Holy Communion itself is an antidote whereby we are delivered

from venial and preserved from mortal sin. (*Con. Trid. Sess. 13, ch. 2.*)

“It is Jansenism that has given rise to another anti-catholic fear, which under the pretext of greater sanctity praises confession, and alienates from communion. It staggers us with scruples, throws the conscience into a false faith, and is infinitely agreeable to the devil, in keeping us respectfully away from the adorable Eucharist, the true centre of all sanctity. Communicate boldly and joyfully. In going often to your confessor you might fear to tire him, but in communicating often, and even every day, you will never tire God Almighty.”—SÉGUR.

In giving expression to the desire that this little golden treatise of Monseigneur de Ségur were in the hands of every preacher and confessor, I may safely appeal to the experience of those who are engaged in the arduous duties of the confessional—that the mere science of scholastic and moral theology is not altogether sufficient for leading souls to spend good lives, and aim at perfection. The ascetic authors must be studied, and especially those who dwell most on mercy and confidence in God. St. Alphonsus justly remarks that people will not abstain long from mortal sin through the mere fear of God, but will do it through love, and therefore every possible means towards this end should be adopted, and especially frequent communion. His own invaluable treatises “on directions for spiritual souls,” and especially “on Holy Communion and frequent Communion,” leave nothing more to be said on the subject.

I will now conclude by a quotation from the Doctor of Asceticism, St. Francis de Sales:

“Two classes of persons ought to communicate frequently—the imperfect, that they may become perfect; the perfect that they may remain and become more so.”

With regard to the frequency of administering Holy Viaticum to the dying, I think any priest who will read attentively the controversy about the administration of the Holy Viaticum in O’Kane’s work on the Roman Ritual, will not, *generatim loquendo*, have much scruple in concluding that in many circumstances of time and place, the Holy Viaticum may be administered to persons who are not fasting several times in the week, and even in some instances daily.

JOHN J. ROCHE.

THEOLOGICAL QUESTIONS.

MIXED MARRIAGES AND THEIR CONSEQUENCES—IMPORTANT CASES.

“X.Y.Z. is a priest in one of the largest towns in the North of England. It has a Catholic population of 100,000. He finds after several years’ experience that mixed marriages are causing great havoc in his flock. In the whole town, he knows from an official report, that 2,130 children are lost to the faith through mixed marriages. In the face of this appalling figure, he determines to refuse absolution in future to all Catholics, who are, what is euphemistically termed, keeping company with Protestants, and accordingly refuses it in the two following cases :

I. Paul, a Catholic young man, is very much attached to a Protestant woman, and this attachment has lasted for several years. There is no other reason whatsoever for granting a dispensation except that the parties are strongly attached to each other. He can easily get a good Catholic wife of his own rank in the town. Paul in a happy moment goes to confession to X.Y.Z., who attempts in vain to dissuade him from the marriage. Paul at last holds out a threat, that if the dispensation be refused, he will get married in the Protestant Church. X.Y.Z. nothing daunted, still persists in refusing absolution as there seems to him no earthly reason for granting the dispensation ; and for this he is censured by some of his brother priests. Who is right ?

II. Bridget, a Catholic servant, is acquainted with a Protestant man for four years. He would make her a good husband from a worldly point of view. He is very bigoted, but at the same time willing that all the children of the marriage should be brought up in the Catholic Faith, that his wife shall have full liberty of conscience, and that the marriage ceremony shall take place in the Catholic Church. There is no reason whatsoever for granting a dispensation in the case, beyond the fact that the acquaintanceship has lasted a long time, and that she is very much attached to the man. She can get a good Catholic husband, of her own rank, in the town. Our friend X.Y.Z. fears in his own mind that if the dispensation be refused, Bridget will get married in the Protestant Church, and that thereby all the children of the marriage will be lost to the Faith. She holds out no threat however. What is X.Y.Z. to do ?

Absolution is refused for the following reasons. I.—There is no cause for granting a dispensation, as a Catholic wife or husband may easily be had. If there was present any of the causes ordinarily assigned such as *angustia loci, atas superadulta*, &c., a dispensation would be asked for, and absolution given. II.—Experience has shown X.Y.Z., that in the vast majority of mixed marriage cases, the results are the total loss of the family to the Faith, and that, too, in very many cases, where a dispensation has been granted and the usual triple promise given. The loss of the children is one *ex ordinariis contingentibus* of a mixed marriage. How can it be lawful therefore for Bridget to expose herself to a danger that ordinarily occurs. She, herself, may be in good faith in the matter and think she will be an exception to a very general rule, but Catholics in very many cases, as the loss of 2,130 children show, allow their children to be brought up in heresy. III.—Refusing absolution will raise the tone of Catholic opinion on the matter.”

Our respected Correspondent's opening statement will be a surprise to some. That mixed marriages are fraught with the worst results no priest on the mission in these countries need be told. But that out of the children of a town so many as 2,130 should be lost to Catholicity, from this cause alone, is truly appalling. Yet, judging by what is heard from all sides, the return marks a proportion not much above the average for places similarly situated.

For this sad state of things there are causes with which it is difficult to cope. In large cities the evil is not measurable by the danger that is intrinsic to such unions even after due attention has been paid to canonical safeguards. Neither will the hostility of English law to the conditions, on which Catholics insist, account for its extent; although nowhere have we a more striking illustration of the inevitable conflict of indifferentism with the doctrine of one saving church. What is specially dangerous, we are informed, in large centres of population beyond the Channel, is that the dominant moral tone is un-Catholic, if not pagan among certain classes, and that as a consequence Catholic parents are at once less able and less willing to insist on and carry out the antenuptial conditions than elsewhere happens.

Our Correspondent gives as the outcome of experience,

“that in the vast majority of mixed marriages the result is the total loss of the family to the Faith.” This he goes on to say occurs “in many cases where dispensations have been granted.” Nay, he adds “the loss of the children is one *ex ordinariis contingentibus* of mixed marriages.” In such circumstances then, would it not be right to refuse absolution to all who do not abstain from “company-keeping” with non-Catholics?

To answer this question and discuss the other points proposed for comment, it becomes necessary to view separately the prerequisites for absolution on the one hand, and for a dispensation to marry on the other. Even for the class of persons under consideration the two sacraments need not go together in a priest's decision. He will attach due weight to prospect of a mixed marriage; but its futurity does not fix for him a standard or rule of judgment in the tribunal of penance.

At all times it has been a solemn duty incumbent on bishops, pastors, preachers and confessors to earnestly warn the faithful against contracting mixed marriages. The evils inherent in such unions should be pointed out so often as to keep a lively sense of them ever present to the community at large. Every clergyman whose ministry brings him in contact with the people, can help in this good work, and surely no effort which wisdom will sanction, should be spared to stop the havoc described by our correspondent. What means are best? The recent Synod of Baltimore lays down four excellent rules.

“Ad hunc finem assequendum maxime conducit; 1° frequens parochorum instructio qua fideles edoceantur de Ecclesiae prohibitione mixtorum matrimoniorum. 2° Praxis uniformis eorundem parochorum in casibus occurrentibus impediendi totis viribus, hortationibus, suasionibus necnon increpationibus ne hujusmodi conjugia incantur. 3° Examen accuratum de canonicis et gravibus causis quae requiruntur pro dispensatione super hoc mixtae communionis impedimento concedendae. 4° Post celebratas autem mixtas nuptias, parochi, gravi conscientiae onere se gravari sciant invigilandi ut promissae a conjugibus conditiones observentur et effectum sortiantur.”

Thus pastors should labour to communicate to their people that feeling of detestation in regard to mixed marriages

which animates the Church herself. They are to use every lawful remonstrance to keep the faithful from contracting such alliances ; and in this vigorous stand there should be *uniformity* of action. They are bound to sift the causes for dispensations carefully, and see that those alleged are grave and canonical. And lastly, whilst an individual marriage for which a dispensation has been duly procured, is not to be condemned as unlawful, they are under a weighty obligation in every case to guard by special vigilance the observance of the canonical conditions in a home where either parent is a non-Catholic.

In the Confessional, too, there is room for much zeal in this matter. But it is a work which makes large demands on prudence as well as on charity, patience and sympathy. In our effort against a mixed marriage we must be careful to neither prejudice the spiritual interests of the penitent, nor make the sacred tribunal repulsive to sinners.

One of the reasons suggested for refusing absolution in certain cases is that this course "would raise the tone of Catholic public opinion on the matter." The end is good. We cannot commend the means. Public opinion should be formed according to the congenial methods pointed out in the Synod of Baltimore. These, reinforced by prudent effort in the tribunal of penance, comprise the whole remedy. But the work of the Confessional should be directly for the individual sinner. A Confessor's great concern is for his penitent's spiritual welfare : and this thought rather than a wider anxiety for his whole flock should influence his judgment of the particular case. In short public opinion on this point is not to be improved through the confessional, except by doing what is best for each person who seeks absolution at our hands. His interest is the hinge on which our decision must turn, provided he be sufficiently disposed.

It would be a different matter if grave public scandal or injustice were sure to spring from certain conduct as from a *cause*. When a sinful project of this nature comes before a Confessor, he will consider it his duty to admonish an ignorant penitent at the risk of the latter's dispositions, if there be any fair hope of success, unless the person be dying. But in the case before us the penitent purposes nothing with this kind

of *tractus successivus*. Why then should he be deprived of absolution for the public benefit, whether fancied or real?

But we have yet to discuss X.Y.Z.'s main reasons for refusing absolution. Who would absolve one rushing headlong to spiritual destruction? See the danger! Before and after a mixed marriage, is not a Catholic in the proximate occasion of grave sin, if the facts alleged be true?

We have now at length got to the difficulty as it comes before the confessor. It is a question of dispositions in the penitent, and of occasions of sin. X.Y.Z. does not dwell on the occasion before marriage. Indeed, it is in no way peculiar except in its great danger. If certain company be a proximate occasion of grave sin, it must be given up at least by serious promise, or turned into a remote occasion, before one can be said to have the proper dispositions. Hence in some cases absolution must be refused even when the non-Catholic party promises to join the Catholic Church. But even where no such intention exists, each case must be considered on its individual merits, notwithstanding that the existence of a proximate occasion is so often verified. A penitent may be sufficiently disposed although unwilling to abandon certain companionship. Accordingly, a confessor before sending him away unabsolved should be certain that he is acting for the person's spiritual advantage; and unless the latter be a *recidivus* he will generally decide in these circumstances that the better course is to strengthen him with the graces of absolution, after giving suitable monitions. This weak soul once sent away may never return.

But X.Y.Z. grounds his uniform practice chiefly on the dangers that follow mixed marriages. If those who "keep company" with non-Catholics are not all to be denied the Sacrament of Penance before ceasing to belong to that class, by reason of antenuptial dangers to faith or morals, does not the fact of a penitent intending a union, the ordinary consequences of which are truly disastrous, imply want of the proper dispositions for absolution? We must distinguish between three classes of persons in this connection.

In the first place, a penitent who fails to give fair indication of a sincere resolve to insist on observance of the

conditions accepted by the other party, and required by the law of God and His Church, is not a fit subject for absolution. Hence if, disregarding every entreaty, such a one rushes into a mixed marriage, reckless of consequences, the priest can only pray ; he may not absolve.

Secondly, if the person be thoroughly in earnest with regard to the conditions, and the confessor have no ground for fear beyond the general danger in his locality, we do not think it would be right to deny absolution. To do so would be to act contrary to what has always been done in these cases. Such a course would result in depriving of the Sacraments a class of people who stand in bitter need of their help. If generally adopted, instead of promoting the ultimate spiritual good of souls, it could scarcely fail to turn not a few penitents into worse Christians than they otherwise might be.

By all means let everything lawful be done to avert the evil of a mixed marriage. But when it is inevitable let not the farther danger, involved in sending such a penitent away without absolution, be added, without necessity or the prospect of some compensating good result. As a preliminary condition the Holy See insists on certain agreements. These do not eliminate all danger ; but they remove it sufficiently far away to enable the Church to withdraw her prohibition in the presence of grave reasons. Now when this is done we are not to look upon the Catholic party as about to do something illicit in contracting the union. However dangerous the system in general we must not condemn the individual. Is it not then going too far to refuse absolution generally, by arguing to the probable result in a particular case from what we see around us in our own district ? The special danger for the individual is not certain nor very near, and is scarcely apprehended by him as serious at all. Hence, after dissuading as far as possible, we do not think it would be wise to go further and refuse absolution on the ground that the average result of mixed marriages in a particular town is deplorably bad.

Thirdly, let us suppose that, notwithstanding a penitent's *bona fides* at the present time, a confessor has reasonable grounds for doubting fidelity to antenuptial engagements in his particular case. The person, it is assumed, is

determined to seek a dispensation, or has already secured one. After every effort to dissuade has been exhausted, is such a one to be necessarily deemed unworthy of absolution? We do not think so. With his good intentions he has the requisite disposition for absolution; and as he purposes living a good life, it is better to absolve him and try afterwards to help him as best we can in his difficulties.

But in all these cases may not the cause a penitent relies on for a dispensation be plainly insufficient? If so, there is an additional reason for urging him to abandon the proposed marriage. However, in the tribunal of penance, insufficiency of cause to dispense need not always stay the power of loosing sins. It is chiefly of importance in this place so far as it influences the dispositions for absolution. If a penitent is resolved to abide by the Church's decision, want of cause does not of itself unfit him for penance. But if on the other hand, he has made up his mind to go through the ceremony in some form, come what may, and knows the malice of such intention, he cannot be deemed a fit subject for the sacrament.

The granting of a dispensation is an independent question. Altogether apart from any consideration of the person's spiritual state a true canonical cause should be present and the required conditions duly stipulated. It is not every acceptance of the Church's conditions that will suffice. As was declared in 1842, there must be—"talis promissio quae, in pactum deducta praebeat morale fundamentum de veritate executionis ita ut prudenter ejusmodi executio expectari possit." Thus it does not follow by any means that a dispensation should be granted whenever absolution is given. It is obviously the duty of a priest who applies for a dispensation, or who is asked about *causes* and *guarantees*, to examine the state of things most carefully and describe accurately the result of his investigation.

We come at length to our correspondent's special questions. The fact that Paul threatens to get married in a Protestant Church is of itself a cause for dispensing, provided it be considered that he is likely to give effect to the threat. In some countries, to avoid greater evils, Catholic priests are allowed to assist *passively* at mixed marriages, where either

dispensations have not been procured or the cautions not sufficiently guaranteed, lest the parties should contract before a Protestant minister. To act in this way a special declaration is needed from the Holy See. But the fact that it is sometimes given, even for countries where the laws are fearfully hostile to Catholic practices, is enough to show how important the Church considers the avoidance of marriage according to a non-Catholic rite.

Hence it is better, *propter duritiam cordis Pauli*, to procure the *toleration* of the Church for his marriage before a Catholic priest. We think the same with reference to Bridget's case if every effort to dissuade her from the union has been fruitless. It is in her favour that she does not use a *threat*. But if there were no danger of either going to the Protestant Church for marriage, and if no other grave cause for dispensing existed, the application should be refused.

With regard to absolution, we do not think it should be denied to Bridget. The same holds for Paul, unless his conditional intention of going before a Protestant Minister be apprehended by him as something gravely sinful. Of this the Confessor must judge. Possibly the threat only expressed his opinion of what he might be strongly tempted to do in such circumstances.

In conclusion, we think the best means for counteracting the evils mentioned by our correspondent are those pointed out in the Synod of Baltimore coupled with earnest advice in the Confessional.

THE USE OF BUTTER ON CERTAIN VIGILS.

“Would you kindly say in next issue of ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD, if according to the Rescript of January 31st, 1883, the use of Butter is allowed on the Vigils of the Nativity, the Assumption of the Blessed Virgin, the Feasts of Saints Peter and Paul, and of All Saints? Some say that it is only when the Vigil happens to fall on a Friday that its use is prohibited; others assert that it is always prohibited on the Vigils of these days. What say you?”

When any of these Vigils happens on a Friday the use of eggs is prohibited. The circumstance makes no change in the use of butter.

P. O'D.

LITURGICAL QUESTIONS.

THE CALENDAR OF SAINTS FOR THE IRISH CHURCH AS IT IS
NOW ARRANGED, AND THE *ORDO DIVINI OFFICII*.

WHAT office is to be recited, or what Saint's feast is kept, are some of the practical questions which many will propose, and wish to have solved? The answer can in every case be:—the feast or Saint whose office is to be celebrated, is that given in the Calendar, unless in the few cases in which a change is caused owing to the occurrence of some movable feasts, or when a transferred feast is celebrated on a vacant day. Thus for the month of January, if we except the insertion of the four Sundays, the offices are all as they are given down in the Calendar. The same holds true for each of the months.

There may be some little trouble caused by the lessons of the scripture occurring. Even this is very simple. All feasts of double major and higher rite have the lessons of the 1st Nocturn either proper or from the "Common." The "Incipits" are to be said on the feast day during the week. Thus on the 9th January, the Dom. 1^{ma} post Epiphaniam, Incipit 1 Cor. ; on the 17th Jan. fer. 2^{da}, Incipit 2 Cor. ; on the 24th January, fer. 2^{da}, Incipit 2 Cor. ; on the 31st Jan. fer. 2^{da}, Incipit ad Galatas; on the 26th fer. 4^{ta}, Incipit ad Ephesios; and on the 30th Dom. IV. Epiph., Incipit ad Philippenses. In those dioceses in which the Dom. V. Epiph. is anticipated and placed on the 3rd Feb. there are four Incipits of the Dom. V. to be recited during the week.

In the Dioceses of Kildare and Ferns, the three Incipits of the hebdomada quarta post Epiphaniam can be very easily arranged. The Incipits do not trouble us once Septuagesima comes until the fer. 2^{da} after Dom. in Albis.

In the following few pages the Calendar for the months of May and June with the occurring movable feasts is given. During the period covered by these months, including as it does the whole of Paschal time, and containing the Octaves of Ascension, Pentecost and Corpus Christi, the changes are necessarily numerous, but still not very perplexing.

For the remaining months the arrangements could not be simpler:—

Litt. Dom.	Dies mensis	M A I I
b	1	PHILIPPI ET JACOBI, Apost., d. 2 cl. In D. Elphin. Nil de Oct.
c	2	Athanasii, Ep. et Doct., duplex In D. Elphin. Com. Oct.
d	3	INVENTIO SANCTÆ CRUCIS, d. 2 cl., Com. Alexandri, etc., MM. In D. Elphin. Nil de Oct. In D. Kildar., CONLETHI, E. C., Patroni, d. 1 cl., cum. Oct.
e	4	Monicæ, Vid., duplex In D. Elphin. de die Octava, S. Patroni, duplex In D. Kildar. Com. Oct. (et fit de oct. com. usque ad 9 inclusive)
f	5	Pii V., Papæ et Conf., duplex
g	6	Joannis ante Portam Latinam, dupl. maj.
A	7	Stanislai, Ep. et Mart., duplex
b	8	Apparatio S. Michaelis, Archangeli, duplex maj.
c	9	Gregorii Nazianzeni, Ep. et Doct., duplex
d	10	Congalli, Abb., duplex, Com. SS. Gordiani, etc., MM. In D. Kildar. Octava dies S. Patroni, duplex, Com. SS. MM.
e	11	Antonini, Ep. et Conf., duplex (10 Maii) In D. Kildar. INVENTIO SANCTÆ CRUCIS, d. 2 cl. (3 Maii) In D. Elphin. Monicæ, Vid., duplex (4 Maii)
f	12	Nerei Achillei, etc., Virg. et Pancratii. M., semid.
g	13	Conlethi, E. C., duplex maj. (3 Maii) In DD. Kildar. et Elphin., Antonini, E. C., duplex (10 Maii)
A	14	Carthagi, E. C.; duplex maj., Com. Bonifacii, Mart. In D. Lismor. CARTHAGI, E. C., Patroni, dupl. 1 cl., cum. Oct.
b	15	Dympnæ, Virg. et Mart., dupl. maj. In D. Lismor. Com. Oct. (et fit Com. Oct. usque ad 21 inclusive)
c	16	Brendani, Abb., duplex maj. In DD. Clonfert. et Kerrien., BRENDANI, Patroni, d. 1 cl., cum Oct.
d	17	Paschalis Baylon, Conf., duplex In DD. Clonfert. et Kerr., Com. Oct. (et fit Com. Oct. usque ad 22 inclusive)
e	18	Venantii, Mart., duplex
f	19	Petri Celestini, Papæ et Conf., dupl., Com. S. Pudentianæ, V.
g	20	Bernardini, Senensis, Conf. semid.
A	21	Ubaldi, Ep. et Conf., semid. (16 Maii) In D. Lismor., de die Octava, S. Patroni, duplex
b	22	Joannis Nepomuceni, Mart. dupl. (16 Maii) In D. Elphin., Conlethi, E. C., duplex maj. (3 Maii) In D. Kildar., Congall. E. C., duplex maj. (10 Maii) In D. Lismor., Ubaldi, E. C., semid. (16 Maii)
c	23	Joannis Baptistæ de Rossi, Conf., duplex In DD. Clonfert. et Kerrien., de die Octava, S. Patroni, duplex
d	24	B.V.M., Auxil. Christianorum, duplex maj.
e	25	Gregorii VII., Papæ et Conf., duplex, Com. Urbani, M.
f	26	Philippi Nerei, Conf., duplex, Com. Eleutherii, P.M.
g	27	Mariæ Magdalænæ de Pazzi, V., semid., Com. Joannis, P.M.
A	28	Augustini, Ep. Cantuar. et Conf., duplex
b	29	Cleti et Marcellini, MM. (26 April), semid In DD. Lismor., Kildar. et Elphin., Joannis Nepomuceni, M., duplex (16 Maii) In DD. Clonfert. et Kerrien., Joannis Baptistæ de Rossi, Conf., duplex (23 Maii)
c	30	Felcis, P.M. In DD. Clonfert., Elphin., Kerrien., Kildar. et Lismor., Cleti et Marcellini, MM., semid. (26 April)
d	31	Angelæ Mericiæ, Virg., dupl., Com. Petronillæ, Virg. Dom. III. post Pascha FESTUM PATROCINII S. JOSEPH, duplex, 2 cl. Dom Ima. post Calendas Maii (non impedita festo duplici) Puritatis B.V.M. duplex maj,

Litt. Dom.	Dies mensis	J U N I I
e	1	De ea
f	2	Marcellini, etc., MM.
g	3	Coemgeni, Abb., dupl. maj. In D. Dublin. COEMGENI, Abb., Patroni, d. 1 cl., cum Oct..
A	4	Francisci Carracciolo, Conf., duplex In D. Dublin, Com. Oct. (et fit com. usque ad 9 inclusive)
b	5	Bonifacii, Ep. et Mart., duplex
c	6	Jarlathii, Ep. et Conf., duplex maj. In D. Tuam., JARLATHII, Ep., Conf. et Patroni, d. 1 cl., cum Oct.
d	7	Colmani, E. C., duplex maj. In D. Dromor. COLMANI, E. C., Patroni, d. 1 cl., cum Oct. In D. Tuam. Com. Oct. (et fit com. usque ad 12 inclusive)
e	8	Norberti, E. C., duplex (6 Jun.) In D. Dromor. Com. Oct. (et fit com. usque ad 15 inclusive)
f	9	Columbæ, Abb., duplex maj., Com. Primi, etc., MM. In D. Derrien. COLUMBÆ, Abb., et Patroni, d. 1 cl., cum Oct
g	10	Margaritæ Reginæ Scotiæ, semid. In D. Dublin. de die Octava, S. Patroni, duplex In D. Derr. Com. Oct. (et fit de ea com. usque ad 16 inclusive)
A	11	Barnabæ, Apost., duplex maj.
b	12	Joannis a S. Facundo, Conf., duplex
c	13	Antonii de Padua, Conf., duplex In D. Tuam. de Octava die S. Patroni, duplex
d	14	Basilii, Ep. et Doct., duplex In D. Dromor. de die Octava S. Patroni, duplex
e	15	Viti, etc., MM. In D. Dublin. Margaritæ, Vid., semid. (10 Jun.) Com. SS. MM. In D. Tuam. Antonii de Padua, C. dupl. (13 Jun.) Com. SS. MM. In D. Dromor. S. Basilii. E.D. dupl. (14 Jun.) Com. SS. MM. In D. Derr. de Oct., Patroni, Com. SS. MM.
f	16	Joannis Francisci Regis, C. duplex In D. Derrien. de die octava, S. Patroni, duplex
g	17	De ea In D. Derrien. Joannis Francisci Regis, C. duplex (16 Jun.)
A	18	Marci et Marcelliani, MM.
b	19	Julianæ de Falconer., V., duplex, Com. Gervasii, etc., MM.
c	20	Silverii, M.
d	21	Aloysii Gonzagæ, Conf., duplex
e	22	Paulini, E. C.
f	23	Vigilia
g	24	NATIVITAS JOANNIS BAPTISTÆ, d. 1 cl., cum Oct.
A	25	Gulielmi, Abb., duplex, Com. Oct.
b	26	Joannis et Pauli, Mart., duplex, Com. Oct.
c	27	De Oct. Nativ. Joannis Bapt.
d	28	Leonis, Papæ et Conf., semid., Com. Oct. et Vig.
e	29	PETRI ET PAULI, Apostoli, d. 1 cl., cum Oct.
f	30	Commem. S. Pauli, Apostoli, d. maj., Com. Oct. S. Joannis Fer. VI, post Oct. Corp. Christi, Festum SS. Cordis, D.N.J.C. dupl. maj. Dom. Ima post. Fest. SS. Cordis, D.N.J.C. (non impedita festo duplici) Festum SS. Cordis, B.V.M., dupl. maj. In DD. Ardac. et Cluacen. FESTUM SS. CORDIS, D.N.J.C., d. 2 cl.

The following is the list of movable feasts which will occur in the months of May and June, 1887.

1 Maii, Dom. 1^a post Calendas Maii (non impedita festo duplici)
Festum Puritatis B.V.M. duplex maj.

Dom. III^{ia} Paschæ Festum Patrocinii St. Joseph, d. 2 cl.

8 Maii, Dom. IV. Paschæ semid.

15 Maii, Dom. V. Paschæ semid.

16, 17, 18 Maii, Rogationes et Vigilia Ascensionis.

19 Maii, Ascensio Domini, d. cl., cum Oct.

22 Maii, Dom. infra Oct. Ascens. semid.

26 Maii, Octava dies Ascensionis duplex.

27 Maii, fer. 6^{ta} post Oct. Ascens.

28 Maii, Vigilia Pentecostes.

“Ab hac die usque ad Festum SS. Trinitatis inclusive si occurrat Festum duplex ex majoribus vel alicujus Doct. Eccl. transfertur post prædictum Festum SS. Trinitatis. De aliis vero duplicibus et de semiduplicibus fit tantum commemor. excepto triduo Pentecostes.” *Rubr.*

29 Maii, Dominica Pentecostes, dupl. 1 cl.

Tota hac hebdomada fit de Pentecostes.

Fer. Quatuor Temporum.

5 Junii, Dom. SS^{mæ}. Trinitatis, dupl. 2 cl.

9 Junii, Festum Corp. Christi, d. 1 cl. cum Oct.

“Infra hanc Octav. non fit de Festo (occurrenti) nisi fuerit duplex; Semiduplicia tantum commemorantur in utrisque Vesp. et Laud sine 9 lect: nec fit de Festo duplici majori vel alicujus Doct. Eccles. translato, nisi sit 1 vel 2 classis.”—*Rubr. Brev. ante Festum*

12 Junii, Dom. infra, Oct. Corp. Christi semid.

16 „ Dies Octava Corp. Christi, semid.

17 „ Festum SS. Cordis, D.N.J.C. duplex maj.

In DD. Ardac. et Cluacen. Festum SS. Cordis, D.N.J.C. d. 2 cl.

19 Junii, Dom. III., post Pent. semid.

Dom. 1^{ma} post Festum SS. Cordis, D.N.J.C. (duplici festo non impedita) Festum SS. Cordis, B.V.M. duplex maj.

26 „ Dom. IV. post Pentecost semid.

These occurring feasts cause the following changes:—

1 May. The 3rd Sunday after Easter. The Feast of SS. Philip and James, Apostles, is celebrated, and a com. is made of the 3rd Sunday after Easter.

The Feast of the Patronage of St. Joseph, and that of the Purity of the B.V.M. are transferred further on.

8 May. The office is of the occurring Feast, The Apparition of the Archangel Michael, with a com. of the Sunday.

“In aliis Dominicis per annum fit de Dominica, quando in eis non occurret Festum duplex; quia tunc fit de duplici cum commemoratione Dom. in utrisque Vesp. et Laud et ad Matutinum legitur 9 lect. de homelia Dominica.” *Rubr. Gen Brev. tit IV.*

15 May. The V. Sunday after Easter. The office is of the occurring Saint Dymphna, with a commemor. of the Sunday. On the 16, 17 and 18 May, the office is of the occurring Saints. The Litanies are recited. A commemoration of the feria of Rogation is made on the 16th, also a commemoration of the Vigil of the Ascension on the 18th.

19 May. The Feast of the Ascension. There is no commemoration of the occurring Saints.

“*Infra Octavam Ascensionis fit de festis semiduplicibus, et de festis duplicibus sive occurrentibus sive translatis.*”

22 May. The Sunday within the Octave of the Ascension. The office is thus arranged. The Feast of St. John Nepomucene is celebrated in nearly all the dioceses, and a commemoration is made of the Sunday and Octave.

In the Diocese of Elphin, the office is of St. Conleth.

In the Diocese of Kildare, the office is of St. Congall.

In the Diocese of Lismore, the office is of the Purity of the B.V.M., with a commemoration of the Sunday, the occurring semidouble St. Ubaldus (16th) and the octave.

In the Dioceses of Clonfert and Kerry, a commemoration is made of the Octave of their patron, St. Brendan.

26 May. The octave day of Ascension, a commemoration is made of the occurring double and simple feasts.

27 May. In the office of Mary Magdalen of Pazzi, a commemoration is made of the *Feria Sexta post Octavam Ascensionis*.

28 May. The Vigil of Pentecost. The office is of the Vigil, and a commemoration is made in the office of the occurring saint.

In the coming week until 5th June, the office is of the Feast of Pentecost. Of the occurring double, semi-double or simple feasts, a commemoration can be made from the *fer. 4ta*.

The Feast of St. Kevin is transferred. This feast in the Diocese of Dublin will be celebrated on its octave day, the 10th of June.

29 May. Pentecost Sunday.

5 June. Feast of the Most Holy Trinity.

9 June. The Feast of Corpus Christi, double 1st class with an Octave.

The Feast of St. Columba is transferred. In the Diocese of Derry it is transferred to the 10th the following day, and its octave is celebrated as usual.

10 June. The office for this day is thus arranged. The Feast of the Patronage of St. Joseph is celebrated in all the dioceses except in Dublin and Derry. In these the Feasts of their holy patrons are celebrated as doubles of the 1st class.

12 June. The Sunday within the Octave of Corpus Christi. The office is of the occurring Saint John a Facundo, with a commemoration of the Sunday and of the Octave.

In the Diocese of Derry a commemoration is made of the Octave of St. Columba.

15 June. The office is generally of the Octave of Corpus Christi.

In the Diocese of Derry the Feast of the Patronage of St. Joseph is celebrated.

In the Diocese of Dublin, the Feast of the Patronage of St.

Joseph and a commemoration of the occurring Saint Margaret, semi-double (10th).

In the Diocese of Tuam the Feast of St. Anthony is celebrated. In the Diocese of Dromore the Feast of St. Basil, Doctor—with a commemoration of Octave and of Holy Martyrs.

16 June. The Octave Day of Corpus Christi, a commemoration is made of the occurring double, St. John Francis Regis.

In the Diocese of Derry a commemoration is made of the Octave day of St. Columba.

17 June. The Feast of the Most Sacred Heart of Jesus; this Feast is celebrated under D. 2 Cl. rite in the Diocese of Ardagh and Clonmacnoise.

In the Diocese of Derry a commemoration is made of the occurring St. John Francis Regis.

18 June. The Feast of St. Kevin (3rd June), a commemoration of Holy Martyrs.

In the Diocese of Dublin, the Office is of St. Columba (9th).

19 June. The III. Pent. St. Julianæ Virg. double; commemoration of the Sunday and of Holy Martyrs

The Feast of the Sacred Heart of Mary is transferred.

20 June. The Feast of St. Columba (9 June), commemoration of Holy Martyr.

In the DD. of Dublin and Derry, St. Leo., Doct., dupl. (11th April).

22 June. St. Leo., Doct., dupl. (11th April) commemoration of St. Paulinus. In the Dioceses of Dublin and Derry, the office is of the simple feast, or of the Votive Office of St. Joseph.

23 June. Of the Vigil or Votive Office. This Votive Office de Sacramento is ad libitum Cleri.

26 June. IV. Sunday after Pentecost, the Office is of the occurring Feast SS. John and Paul, with a commemoration of the Sunday and Octave.

The Feast of the Purity of the Blessed Virgin, except for the Diocese of Lismore, and the Feast of the Sacred Heart of Mary have yet to be celebrated on some Sunday not occupied by a double Feast.

PETER J. M'PHILPIN.

LAST WEDNESDAY IN ADVENT, 1886.

"Was Wednesday, the 22nd of December, a fasting day?"

Yes. See I. E. RECORD (New Series), vol. i., page 748, December, 1880.

THE CHURCH ABROAD,

POPE LEO XIII. will celebrate the Golden Jubilee or fiftieth anniversary of his priesthood towards the end of the present year, and already preparations are being made for such a demonstration of love and devotion to the head of the Church as has seldom been witnessed in the Christian world. A committee has been formed at Rome under the presidency of Cardinal Schiaffino, to receive offerings for the great jubilee. The Professor of Paleography at the Propaganda has asked his students to write verses in every known language. They will be collected in a magnificent album and presented as one of the tributes of the great centre of learning. Naples, which in 1877 sent the beautiful "Sedia Gestatoria," and the fan of ostrich and peacock's feathers, studded with jewels to Pius IX. intends to send a golden throne to Pope Leo. The old officers of the Papal Army have ordered an elaborate inkstand from the firm of the goldsmiths Pierret, in the Piazza di Spagna. It will be in gold and silver, in the renaissance style, surmounted by a statue of St. Michael the Archangel. In front will be chiselled medallions representing St. Joachim and St. Leo, the Holy Father's patrons, and St. Francis of Assisi, and St. Thomas of Aquin, both of whom he has specially glorified in his encyclicals. In France the movement is making rapid progress. The Bishop of Orleans has issued a pastoral directing the formation of two committees, one of men, the other of women, in his Cathedral city, and authorizing them to receive donations for the same object. In Austria, Belgium, Holland, and Canada similar committees are being formed, and are preparing to celebrate the event with due pomp, and to offer to the Holy Father what no power in the world can take from him, the homage of loyal hearts and of devoted spiritual subjects, which will be a consolation to him in his captivity, and a crown of recompense for what he has had to suffer at the hands of his enemies. Few of the countries in his vast spiritual domain have so much reason to be grateful to Pope Leo as Ireland, and there can be no doubt but that in this joyful demonstration of his children all the world over, the Irish people will take their accustomed place, ever cleaving to the Rock and that in these comparatively bright days of hope and faith in the liberty that is near at hand, the "Gens Hibernica" will be as conspicuous as ever for its filial devotion to St. Peter's successor. Any share in this great manifestation will be at once a token of loyalty and a protest against the persecution to which

the Pope personally and the Church of Italy are subjected. Italian Catholic journals are, with reason, protesting more loudly every day against the intolerable situation of the Pope. His enemies have the audacity to assert that he is a voluntary prisoner, and that there is nothing to prevent him from coming forth into the broad light of day, that he will be guarded from outrage and insult by the soldiers of United Italy ; but besides the arguments of right and principle, which weigh as strongly with Leo as they did with Pius, he reminds them that when the remains of his illustrious predecessor were being transferred to their last resting place at the dead of night, through the streets of the Eternal City, they were made the subject of ribald impiety and of outrageous insult, and the power that speaks of the Pope's voluntary exile and promises illusory guarantees, rather encouraged than checked that blasphemous demonstration. The populace is urged on in its wicked path by responsible Ministers of the Crown. Signor Depretis is ready to accept any law that is proposed against the Church. The Minister Tajani, haranguing an excited mob, tells them that the Pope is the greatest enemy of the country ; two other Ministers Grimaldi and Bonghi proclaim that the Papacy is the canker of the nation, and at the meetings which they attend the Pope is burned in effigy amid the riotous mirth of the assemblies. The heart of the hardest would be moved at the bare recital of the sufferings of the poor nuns who are everywhere being expelled from the convents confiscated by the self-styled *Liberal* Government. And what is most astonishing the once chivalrous and polished Count di Robilant acquiesces in this wretched persecution of helpless women. It is to such authorities and to their deluded followers that the Pope is asked to come forth and confide himself. The Head of the Christian World, the Vicar of Christ, the Ruler revered above all others, and to protect whom thousands and millions of Catholics in these countries alone would be ready to shed their blood, who, even in this Nineteenth Century, has been recognized as the fittest Arbiter between the nations of Europe, is asked to come forth and submit to the insults of a section of Italians, led on to fury by such wicked men. Surely this is the time for his faithful children in other countries to make loud protests against such a state of things, and to proclaim more unmistakably than ever their sympathy with the Pope, and their anxiety to see him surrounded once more with that temporal dignity of which he has been plundered and which he cannot renounce. It must not be understood that Italian Catholics are not alive to the situation, nor allowing things to go by default. The

demonstration held not long ago in the Church of St. Paul, at Milan, is only one of a series that have stirred up the Catholic spirit through the country. This great meeting was addressed by Count Moiana and by Sig. David Albertario, Director of the *Osservatore Cattolico* of Milan, and a number of resolutions were passed amid great enthusiasm. We give the last one which is a summary of the whole.

"That Italian Catholics, in the name of God, of Christ, of the Catholic Religion, of science, of civilization and conscience will defend, according to the glorious traditions of Italy, their inviolable rights by books, newspapers, associations, conferences, public demonstrations and by irreproachable conduct and the constant practice of religion in the church, at home, in the schools, the military camps, in the streets, in the shops, in the fields, at study and at labour, in both public and private life."

Notwithstanding the rumours of impiety we hear from France, and the many things occurring on the old Gallic soil, calculated to damp the spirits of Catholics, two such demonstrations have occurred within the past month, as remind the world from time to time, that, withal, the country is not so far gone as people imagine. One of these took place at Nantes, in Brittany, the other at Lille, in the north. Both were Catholic Congresses assembled for the discussion of social and religious questions. Great enthusiasm prevailed at their meetings. The Congress of Bretons, was addressed by Count de Mun, by M. de Cazenove de Pradines, M. Chesnelong (senator), and by M. Hervé Bazin, the distinguished professor of political economy at the Catholic University of Angers. The northern assembly heard eloquent addresses from the Count de Caulaincourt, Baron D'Avril, Count de Nicolai, Mgr. d'Hulst and Mgr. Baunard. The wants of the Holy Father, the carrying on of the works of the Church of the Sacred Heart on Mont Martre which the nation vowed after the war with Prussia, the manner in which the new law on education is to be met by the people, the duties of landed proprietors in country places, the progress of the Catholic circles of workmen, the canonization of Joan of Arc, resistance to the infidel press; such were the leading questions discussed. Mgr. d'Hulst, announced the formation of a committee to prepare for a Catholic scientific international congress soon to be held in Paris, to discuss difficult questions of Biblical exegesis and Biological objections to the teachings of Holy Scripture. The sittings of the Congress in each case concluded with Benediction of the Blessed Sacrament, given by the Bishop of the

diocese. Indeed anyone who witnesses the unbounded confidence of French Catholics in the Blessed Eucharist, and the Mother of God, can never despair of their final triumph over infidelity. Of course there is a wrong side to the picture. The deputy Michelin was recently defeated in the Chamber only by the small majority of forty-nine in his proposal to abolish altogether the embassy to the Vatican and M. de Freycinet is replaced in the high office of Premier by the rabid anti-clerical Goblet. Nothing but mischief can be expected by Catholics, from the arrival to power of the man, who, as Minister of Worship and Instruction, has led the campaign against the Church for the last couple of years.

There can be no better proof of the happy condition of the Church under the Austrian Crown, than the enthusiasm with which all parties recently celebrated the golden jubilees of Cardinals Furstenberg and Simor. These eminent prelates were the happy recipients of complimentary letters from the Pope, of personal visits of congratulation from the Emperor Francis Joseph, and of the most spontaneous expressions of devotion from their own flocks.

Bishops Ireland, of St. Paul's, and Keane, of Richmond, U.S.A., are at present in Rome, having been commissioned by their colleagues in the American episcopate, to submit for the approval of the Propaganda and of the Holy Father, the plan of the buildings, and the plan of studies of the new university, to be erected at Washington. One million dollars will be required for the whole installation. Of this sum 600,000 have already been subscribed, and the material work will be commenced as soon as the plans are approved in Rome.

On the 5th of December, M. Léon de Lantsheere, eldest son of the President of the Belgian Chambers of Deputies, received the cap and ring of doctor in philosophy, in the university of Louvain. The young graduate was obliged to sustain twenty theses in general Metaphysics, in Psychology, in Ontology and Ethics, and to defend his published dissertation "De Bono" against all attacks. The scholastic exercises took place in presence of the Papal Nuncio, the Rector Magnificus, and all the professors of the various faculties besides many distinguished strangers, and the objections were put by Fathers Deran, a Jesuit, Rolin, Dominican, Van Ingelghen, curate of

St. Gudule, at Brussels, and Canon Bossu, Professor of Metaphysics. For upwards of two hours the candidate held his own against all disputants, and after having taken the oath of submission and fealty to the Councils of Trent and of the Vatican, was duly invested with the Doctor's cap and ring.

A book has recently been published on "Old Catholicism," by an old Catholic Professor at the University of Bonn. It contains many curious details of the intrigues that were at work during the Vatican Council, and amongst other documents a letter addressed to Dr. Döllinger, by the unfortunate King of Bavaria, who lately drowned himself in the Lake of Starnberg.

"It is unnecessary for me to tell you," writes the King, "what pleasure your firm and decided attitude on the Question of the Infallibility gives me. On the other hand, I was greatly pained to hear of the blind submission of Father Hahnberg (afterwards Bishop of Spiers). I have reason to believe that this submission is the result of his humility. In my opinion this humility is badly understood, and is at bottom only base hypocrisy, as he affects to hold a conviction which certainly is not in his heart. I am glad at least not to be deceived in yourself, for you are my Bossuet, and he is only my Fénelon. The attitude of the Archbishop of Munich is pitiable and miserable in the extreme. He has bowed down at the first notice, but in you I am proud to possess a true rock of the church."

The Sacred Congregation of Rites, has consented to the introduction of the cases of beatification of Cardinal Fisher, Bishop of Rochester, Sir Thomas More, Margaret, Countess of Salisbury, mother of Cardinal Pole, and several other martyrs put to death for the Faith in the reign of Henry VIII. Amongst them are the following:—Forost, a Carthusian, Powell, Gardiner, Stone, Cuthbert, Woodhouse, Nelson, Plumtree, Moyne, Campion, Johnson, &c., &c.

A letter has been addressed by Cardinal Jacobini, at the Pope's direction, to M. Henri Lasserre to congratulate him on his new translation of the gospels into French. In his young days M. Lasserre was the intimate friend of M. de Freycinet, the late Prime Minister. Lasserre, as a young man, was not very remarkable for his piety, but at the age of twenty-five he had almost completely lost his sight. He was practically stone-blind when his friend

de Freycinet, though a Protestant, advised him to go to Lourdes. He was cured at the Great Shrine of Our Lady, and has since devoted his life to religious works and literature. It was hoped that this untested miracle would make some impression on his comrade, but though de Freycinet always refrained from using the violent language of his colleagues, and was sometimes moved by generous impulses towards the Church and the religious orders, his desire of rule was too great to do anything distasteful to his anti-clerical followers.

The following books have recently appeared :—

Les Saints Livres et la Critique Rationaliste. Histoire et Réfutation des Objections des Incrédules contre les Saintes Ecritures, par F. Vigouroux, Prêtre de Saint Sulpice. Paris: Roger et Chernovitz, 7 Rue des Grands Augustins.

This is, undoubtedly, the most important book that has been published in the Ecclesiastical literature of France for the past couple of years. It is the outcome of the industry of the Abbé Vigouroux, who with frail and delicate health, with only one lung and barely able to speak above his breath, has yet energy enough to work for seven hours a day continuously in the National Library of Paris. The author is recognised as one of the first Hebrew scholars in France at the present time, and his well versed knowledge of the natural sciences, as well as of the English, German and Italian languages, specially qualified him for the work he has so successfully completed. Those who followed M. Vigouroux's course of Scripture at St. Sulpice will find much in the new work which they carried away in their notebooks, but a great deal more besides. The author commences with the early rationalists—the Gnostics, Celsus, Porphyry, Lucian of Samosata, Hierocles and Philostratus, Julian the Apostate, the Manicheans, the Averroists, Luther, the Socinians, the Anabaptists, the Italian Infidels of the Middle Ages, Spinoza and the Arminians; this exhausts the first volume. The second volume commences with the rationalist movement in England. Most interesting and vivid sketches are given of Hobbes, Herbert of Cherbury, and Charles Blount. Their influence on the minds of Englishmen is traced, and the more important passages of their works bearing on the subject quoted in full. Still more complete and interesting sketches are given of Toland, Shaftesbury, Collins, Woolston, Tindal, Thomas Morgan, Lord Bolingbroke, and Chubb. The author also discusses the defence made against these writers by Ray, Boyle, Barrow, Berkeley, Warburton, Bentley, Locke, Addison, Swift, and Richardson.

"The professors of irreligion," he says, "Toland, Tindal, Man-

deville and Bolingbroke are met by adversaries much stronger than themselves. The chiefs of the experimental philosophy, the more learned and trusted among the erudite of the century, writers full of wit, the most beloved, and the ablest of the time, carrying with them all the weight of science and genius, take the field in defence of the Bible. Refutations abound on all sides. Every year, according to the foundation of Robert Boyle, men celebrated for their talent and learning came to London to preach eight sermons to establish the Christian religion against Atheists, Theists, Pagans, Mohammedans and Jews, and these apologies are solid, capable of convincing a liberal mind, infallible to convince a moral mind. The ecclesiastics who write them, Clarke, Bentley, Law, Watt, Warburton, Butler are well up to the level of the lay mind. Moreover, they are aided by laymen. Addison composes a "Defence of Christianity," Locke, the "Conformity of Christianity and Reason," Ray, the "Wisdom of God manifested in the works of Creation." Above this grave concert of defence pierces the strident voice of Swift. In his terrible irony he compliments "the elegant ruffians who have the salutary idea of abolishing Christianity. If they were ten times more numerous they will not succeed for they have no doctrine to lay down in its place." The defence all round was solid and brilliant. "We must confess," says the Abbé Guenée, "that if it is beyond question that religion was never more vehemently attacked, never at the same time was it more learnedly and ably defended." To be sure the apologists of Great Britain did not all sustain the cause of revelation with the same success. "Most of them," says Tholuck, "are like the mad father of a family who cries out at the highest pitch of his voice, 'Death to the robber,' and at the same time throws the most precious things he possesses out through the window; to save the shell they abandoned its contents." A great number of them made deplorable concessions to rationalism, and these concessions became in the long run more dangerous than the attacks themselves. However, several defended Christianity with so much force and success that for the time being error was struck to the ground beyond the Channel."

From England, M. Vigouroux traces his enemy on to France, through Voltaire, Rousseau, Diderot, the Abbé Reynal, the Encyclopedists down to Taine, Comte and Renan, and passes again to Germany, where he meets Hermann von der Hardt, and the formidable Wolf, of whom Goethe, wrote :

Gott sprach ; die Sonne sei, die Welt fiel in's Gesicht
Gott sprach ; Wolf sei, as ward in allen Seelen Licht.

He sketches the errors of Semler and Baumgarten and their influence on German thought. He devotes a chapter to Lessing and Reinarus, and dwells at length on the influence of the "Fragments of Wolfenbittel." Eichorn and Paulus come next, and several chapters treating of the mythical interpretation of the Bible. In these chapters we find a review more or less extended, of the works of Strauss, Bauer, Gottfried, de Wette, Schliermacher, Grierbach, Ewald, Shrader, Dillmann, Wallhausen, Volkmar and Hupfeld. The work concludes with a very able and learned refutation of the errors of Darwin and Haeckel.

L'Idée Chrétienne dans l'Education, par l'Abbé G. Roger.
Orleans: H. Herhison.

THIS book which was highly praised by the "Académie des Jeux Floraux," of Toulouse, and which is written by the brother of the author of "Nos Eglises," enumerates in forcible language, the dangers of a godless education, and points out all the advantages to society, and to the individual, of a good Christian training.

La Sovranità temporale del Papa e l'Unità Nazionale d'Italia, per Giambattista Casoni. Bologna; Società Tipografica.

THIS work goes through all the arguments which prove that the temporal sovereignty of the Pope, far from being an obstacle to the just and patriotic aspirations of the Italian people, is on the contrary the natural and historical basis of real Italian unity.

Alcune Osservazioni sul testo e sulla interpretazione della Divina Commedia di Dante Alighieri. Parma: Ferra and Pellegrini.

THE students of the great Italian poet will find this a useful commentary and interpreter of difficult passages in the "Divina Commedia."

Trionfo della Chiesa Cattolica sul Liberalismo moderno, per Girolamo di Biagio, Parroco di Villaricca. Napoli: Ferrante, Vico Tiratoio.

THIS sixth volume of the great work of Father di Biagio treats of the practical questions relating to the Sacraments of Baptism and of Confirmation, and refutes all the objections that have been raised against them by so-called liberals.

J. F. HOGAN.

CORRESPONDENCE.

THE ROSMINIAN PHILOSOPHY.

A Cistercian Father, in the last number of the RECORD, denies the facts and inferences of my article in the October number. I reaffirm them. I think I have fully answered all the questions raised by my critic (for I have read them often before in the *Civiltà Cattolica*) in my *Life of Rosmini* just published. I hope those who wish to hear more on the subject will buy my book and read it.

Meantime I will ask to be allowed to say, very briefly :

1. It is not true that it "was an open secret in Rome, that the Consultors, who examined Rosmini's Works, were unanimous in condemning them." The precise contrary is true, as I stated in my last article. I have read the written opinions of many of the Consultors, which have been published of late years, and they are all most favourable. The text of the Decree pronounced in 1854 was not published until 1876. Before all these facts became known, it was very natural that those who did not know but only conjectured (for beyond this fact of the acquittal of the works, all else was a secret of the Congregation), "should make open secrets" according to their inclination. Of late years I have never heard any opinion contrary to the one I stated, viz., that "the Consultors (one only excepted), were unanimous in their several opinions, that there was nothing deserving ecclesiastical censure in any of the inculpatated works."

2. My critic says "the errors of Rosmini are justly called Pantheism." If works that are *manifestly* impious and pantheistic (as the works of Rosmini would be, if they were at all like what this writer describes), can be taught freely, and read largely in the vernacular with the *tolerance* of the Holy See, and this for the space of half-a-century, without a single proposition being condemned by authority, what becomes of the well-known theological *adage*, "Contra fidem et bonos mores nec facit nec tacet Ecclesia"? I do not think our Cistercian's Roman instructors will thank him for his advocacy on this point.

3. What a palpable absurdity it is to talk of "Rosmini's meriting well of the Church," and "having led a spotless, not to say saintly life" and of his Order, as being "an excellent and deserving Society" if the system followed by Rosmini and his disciples is "justly called Pantheism," that is to say, is not Christianity nor

even Deism ; not even “ the worshipping of stocks and stones.” For if we hold, as our Cistercian says we do, that “ all being is one, infinite, eternal, unchangeable, and uncreated ;” therefore “ stocks and stones,” man’s soul and body are all one and the same thing with God ; in other words, there is no God, and no morality. But as he tells us that in the Rosminian system “ the spirituality of the human soul is lost as well as its immortality,” if there is no God and no morality, this last is comparatively a small matter !

If our Cistercian Doctor in Philosophy had not written all these surprising things in black and white, one would have thought it incredible, that a priest who says Mass every day should have accused a set of priests, well known as the Fathers of Charity are in England, Ireland and Scotland, of “ worshipping they know not what,” when they profess every day in the Mass to worship the Incarnate Lamb of God, and the Three Persons of “ the Adorable Divinity, our God and Creator.”

4. It will not avail to say that we are *pious fools*. The Catholic public know that we are *no fools* ; the other alternative is that we are *hypocrites*. I venture to say that bishops, priests and people who have known us for the half century that we have been before the public, preaching missions to the people, retreats to clergy and religious, and in our various other works, will not endorse this charge on the authority of our Cistercian Doctor in Philosophy. I doubt much if his philosophical studies led him to read any thing of Rosmini, except through text books of opponents ; certainly his account of our doctrines is about as accurate, as the statements of Anti-Popery writers and lecturers as to doctrines of the Catholic Church : the result of the same kind of one-sided process of study.

5. It will not do to distinguish between Rosminians as religious, and Rosminians as disciples of Rosmini’s Philosophy. Although we of the Order are perfectly free to follow Rosmini’s Philosophy or not, as a fact, we are all Rosminians in the latter sense by conviction ; and such we shall remain, unless the Holy See shall ever declare that Rosmini’s philosophical system, or theological opinions clash with any principles of Catholic Doctrine.

6. With regard to the force and value of the sentence *Dimittantur opera*, I have said in my last article, and more fully in the *Life of Rosmini*, that none of us claims that the above sentence means in itself more than *non prohibentur*, which is an express statement that *after examination*, nothing has been found meriting theological censure. I have also said that it was expressly stated by the Congregation of

the Index that "it was lawful to impugn in the schools and in books, doctrines taught on the works that had been acquitted," but that it was also expressly "*forbidden to affix on them by private authority any theological censure.*" How the charge of *Pantheism*, which denies *all theology*, is not a theological censure, I must leave casuists to explain.

7. The history of controversies within the Church shows that the Holy See has sometimes seen fit to tolerate, even for centuries, opposite schools of opinion on matters which in its judgment do not touch the faith; witness the controversies on Grace between Augustinians, Dominicans and Jesuits. For the last fifty years there has been a Rosminian and Anti-Rosminian School. The latter has doubtless far greater prestige as regards learning and extension, arising in great part from the fact that it has had the chairs in the Roman College in its possession, has thus been the educator of a large number of cardinals, bishops and clergy of Italy, and also of other countries, and has had the power at its disposal of the *Civiltà Cattolica* and its echoes in the Clerical Press, by which it has been able to make known its arguments against us, while we have had no such advantages, so that for the most part one side only of the question has been heard, and no doubt a public opinion, so created, condemns us. Still I need not remind my critic, that this prestige and influence is only at most that of a dominant School in the Church, and does not in itself express the mind of the Church. This is expressed only by the infallible magisterium of the Vicar of Jesus Christ in all things that belong to doctrine, and to science in so far as it may come into collision with doctrine.

8. On the question of censures by theologians on schools of opinion within the Church different from their own, Pope Benedict XIV. thus wrote, on the occasion of the controversy about the doctrines taught by the great Augustinian, Cardinal Noris, whom the Jesuits accused of Jansenism. His works had been examined and acquitted, like those of Rosmini, by the Roman authorities, yet still the Jesuits continued to urge their own opinions, and the Spanish Inquisition was induced to condemn his writings. Benedict XIV. declares in a most important letter, that it is not lawful, after the charges against Cardinal Noris had been dismissed by the authority of the Roman tribunal, for the Spanish Inquisition to re-open the question, still less to proscribe his works. He says that until the Holy See pronounces, no private doctors have a right to pronounce judgment, and that there is no need to attend to the censures of private doctors, but

only to what has been decided, or shall be decided by the Holy See. He concludes—"We ourselves, as private doctor, may incline to one opinion or another on Theological questions, but as Supreme Pontiff we do not reprobate the opposite opinion, neither will we suffer another to do so."

In my *Life of Rosmini* I have said "What therefore is the present position of the Rosminian question at the latter end of the year 1886? It is like that of an armour-clad vessel that has passed and repassed the Dardanelles, under the heaviest fire that the Turks could bring to bear upon her, without damage to her armour-plating. This does not prove that the vessel is absolutely invulnerable, but it need cause no wonder if the crew feel great confidence that no projectile that can be forged is likely to do the good ship serious damage."

WILLIAM LOCKHART, O.C.

Rome, Dec. 10, 1886.

[ERRATUM.—In Dr. Campbell's letter on the Rosminian Philosophy, (I. E. RECORD, Third Series, Vol. vii., No. 12, December, 1886, page 1124, line 17) for *entering*, read *intuing*.]

We beg to acknowledge our obligations to the learned contributors who have written on this subject of the Rosminian Philosophy in the I. E. RECORD, but we believe that no useful purpose would be served by prolonging the discussion.—ED. I. E. R.

DOCUMENTS.

INTERESTING CORRESPONDENCE BETWEEN THE MOST REV. DR. WOODLOCK, BISHOP OF ARDAGH, AND THE MOST REV. THE BISHOP OF RATISBON, REGARDING SAINT ERHARD, BISHOP OF ARDAGH AND SECONDARY PATRON OF THE DIOCESE OF RATISBON.

Illūne et Rñe Domine, uti Frater,

Paucis abhinc diebus mihi in notitiam venit, cuidam, uti dicunt, in hac sede Episcopali Ardacadensi in Hibernia antecessori meo, nomine Erardo, in inclyta tua civitate Ratisbonensi inter coelites

¹ Opus miscell. Bened. XIV. Bassani 1767.—Apud Hist. Pelagian. Card. Noris. Ed. 1766, page vii. This Epistola Apolog. Bened. XIV. was reprinted in Rome by order of Pius IX. during the examination of Rosmini's works, 1851, typis *Camere Apostolicæ*.

cultum exhiberi, eumque, uti Sanctum, clerum et fidelem populum maxima devotione prosequi. Sanctum Leonem Papam IX. eum inter Sanctos dinumerasse fertur. Venerabilis tamen Ipsius memoria, eheu! minime in ista dioecesi perseverat; maximopere autem mihi in votis esset tanti viri honorem instaurare, ipsumque dignis laudibus debitoque cultu in patria cumulare. Igitur Amplitudinem Tuam, Illme. et Rme. Domine, humillime rogo, quatenus mihi indicare digneris modum, quo aliqua saltem ex parte veniam in cognitionem vitae et meritorum hujus Sancti viri, ut, si ita Sanctae sedi Apostolicae expedire videatur, Erardi nostri cultum inter Sanctos nostros Hibernicos renovare ad majorem Dei gloriam Sanctorumque honorem liceat.

Si historicae Lectiones 2^{di} Nocturni extent, vel si alio quocumque modo ipsius vita typis demandata sit, dignetur Amplitudo Tua, oro, exemplar per Secretarium Tuum mihi mittere, vel alio, quo credas, meliori modo facere ut vita et actus hujus Sancti viri mihi innotescant.

Interea me gregemque mihi commissum enixe precibus et SS. Sacrificiis Amplitudinis Tuae commendo, rogans ut me ob incommodum per istas litteras Tibi illatum excusatum habeas.

Amplitudinis Tuae

humillimus et devotiss. Frater

et Servus in J. C.,

✠ BARTHOLOMAEUS WOODLOCK,

Epis. Ardacadensis et Cluanensis.

Datum Longfordi in Hibernia,

hac die 21^{ma} Octobris 1886.

Illmo et Rmo Domino,

Domino Episcopo Ratisbonensi
in Germania.

Illme et Rme Domine, uti Frater,

Hodie tandem mihi licet respondere litteris quas Amplitudo Tua Illma. et Rma. die 21 mensis proxime elapsi de Sancto Erhardo seu Erardo Episcopo Confessore amice ad me dedit.

1. Votis tuis, Illme et Rme Domine ut pro posse satisfaciam, imprimis proponere velim unum exemplar impressum tum Officii Sacri in hac dioecesi usitati, tum Missae quae de eodem Sancto per universam dioecesim Ratisbonen. juxta Kalendarium a Summo Pontifice adprobatum die 19 mensis Januarii celebratur, et quidem sub ritu dupl. maj. quia tanquam Patronus Secundarius ejusdem dioecesis honoratur.

2. Die vero octavo mensis Januarii, natali suo, in Ecclesia quondam monialium "Niedermünster," sive "Monasterii inferioris," hujus civitatis in qua Ecclesia Sacrum ipsius corpus habetur, ab Ordinario Ratisbonen. una Missa Solemnis de eodem Sancto quotannis celebratur; Sacrae Reliquiae, quae anno 1862 recognitae, novo splendore vestitae et in aeneo sarcophago deaurato reconditae fuere, in proprio Altari exponuntur, per Octiduum sequens supplicatio quotidiana fit, sub cujus finem Caput Sancti Separatum fidelium capiti devotionis causa superimponitur eorumque dein labiis pie osculandum traditur.

3. Extant in dioecesi Altaria fixa, imo et Ecclesiae ipsius St. Erhardi titulo Deo dedicata.

4. Etiam aliae dioeceses regni Bavarici St. Erhardi cultum tum in Missa tum in Officio exercent, e.g., Augustana et Eystetten, illa quidem plurimo tempore, haec ex nova concessione ab Apostolica Sede Anno 1845 facta.

5. Anno 1873 (die 2 Octobr.) cum nova Editio Martyrologii Romani esset curanda, apud S. Rit. Congregationem illud egi et obtinui, ut nomen et elogium S. Erhardi, licet breve, ad diem Octavum mensis Januarii inter elogium S. Patientis Ep., et S. Severini Abb. in Martyrologio Romano hunc in modum insereretur:

Ratisbonae Sancti Erhardi Episcopi.

6. Quod Sanctus Leo PP. IX. Anno 1052, dum in hac civitate morabatur, Venerabilem Wolfgangum, ejusdem urbis Episcopum, de tumulo levavit, et corpus transtulit Venerabilis *Erhardi*, quodque idem Summus Pontifex extra Concilium *sanctificavit* Sanctos Wolfgangum et *Erhardum*, sa. mem. Benedictus PP. XIV. in opere suo celeberrimo de servorum Dei Beatificatione et Canonizatione Liber I., Cap. vii., n. 9, et Cap. x., n. 1, testatur.

7. Qua in re consentit constans et certissima Ecclesiae Ratisbonen. traditio et *Acta Bollandiana*, quae ad diem 8 mensis Januarii plura afferunt solerter atque prudenter.

Certum esse videtur S. Erhardum vertente saeculo septimo, et octavo incunte floruisse, et Ratisbonae circa Annum 720 vixisse.

Bollandistae l. c. in prooemio suo n. 6 asserunt, probabilius videri, ipsum Erhardum et fratrem ejus Albertum *ex Hibernia* (sive Scotia veteri) oriundos: ib. No. 7 refertur, juxta Hundium, Raderum, &c., *Ardakadensem* Episcopum fuisse *Erhardum*—Albertum Casselensem in Hibernia); additur: "An vero earum Sedium hi Sancti viri fuerint Antistites, an solum consecrati, ut exteris populis, ad quos convertendos profecturi erant, praesentius auxilium afferrent, haud

habemus pronuntiare. Si antequam S. Bonifacius in Bajoariam veniret, c. a. 739, hi vixere, non esset abs re suspicari, Erardum munia episcopalia Reginoburgi (Ratisbonae) exercuisse veluti *adventitium*, non proprium ejus Sedis Episcopum.”

Haec sunt, quae Amplitudini Tuae Rmae. libenti animo de Sancto nostro Patrono scribenda duxi.

Faxit Deus O. M. intercedente S. Erhardo Episcopo,⁷ ut duae dioeceses quibus ipsum aliquo modo praefuisse documenta historica narrant insinuunt, in fide Catholica stabiles permaneant, et mutuo precum caritatisque vinculo etiam in posterum conjungantur.

Quod ut fiat ex S. reliquiis ejusdem Sancti dentem unum additis litteris authenticationis, Amplitudini Tuae Rmae. pro dioecesi Ardac. offerre et huic apponere animum induxi.

Omni qua par est observantia et verae aestimationis signis interim persisto.

Amplitudinis Tuae Illmae. et Rmae.

Devotissimus Confrater,

✠ IGNATIUS, *Epus. Ratisbonen.*

Ratisbonae (in Bavaria) die 4 Novembris 1886.

Illmo et Rmo Domino,

Domino BARTHOLOMAEO WOODLOCK,

Episcopo Ardacadensi et Cluanensi,

Longford in Hibernia.

THE FOLLOWING ARE THE PROPER LESSONS OF THE OFFICE OF ST. ERHARD, AS CELEBRATED IN THE DIOCESE OF RATISBON.

In secundo Nocturno. Lectio IV.

Erhardus gente Scotus, nobili familia natus, a puero pietatem cum literis conjunxit : lubricae aetatis lasciviam bonorum operum exercitiis, coelestisque gratiae armis subegit, indiesque salutaris vitae cursu progrediens plurimum, susceptis sacrorum ordinum gradibus Episcopi dignitate honoratur. Qui in munere, tanquam lucerna candelabro imposita, ita fulsit et eluxit, ut splendore sanctitatis, virtutumque claritudine caeca multorum pectora irradiarit. Quin et noctu contemplationi coelestium, interdiu sacris concionibus vacabat : tum spiritualis perfectionis studio unice intentus, virginitatem ad extremum usque spiritum retinuit illibatam.

R. Inveni David.

Lectio V.

Caeterum Hiddulpho Trevirorum Episcopo prae monasticae vitae desiderio se magistratu abdicante, Erhardus, ne fratri sufficeretur, relictis antea cum natali solo perampli patrimonii censibus, Ratisbonam aufugit. Hic et alibi per Germaniam cum Alberto item fratre paris sanctimoniae et status adjutus piorum beneficentia, quam insignis vitae morumque probitas conciliabat. quatuordecim monasteria excitavit. Devios a Catholicae religionis tramite tam miraculis quam salutaribus monitis et exemplis ad viam salutis reduxit. De quo illud memorabile, quod Ratisbona, praenobili Bavariae civitate, divino instinctu in Alsatiam digressus, Aetichonis ducis gentis ejus filiam a nativitate captam oculis post catechesin unda salutari (Othiliae nomine indito) perfusam simul fidei et corporis lumine collustravit. Quam et postmodum velo sanctimonialium ornatum Christo dicavit.

R. Posui adjutorium.

Lectio VI.

Regressus Ratisbonam, Bavaros et Noricos praeceptis christiana fidei imbutos, paternae hortationis stimulis confirmare non cessavit: tum utrinque divini cultus et humanae salutis promovendae zelo accensus, uberem Ecclesiae horreo messem intulit. Ubi demum, cum pro Ecclesiae ac religionis dignitate molestias et acerbitates plurimas sustinisset, cursu vitae laudabiliter consummato, ad coeli praemia evolavit sexto Idus Januarii. Quem dono prophetiae ac miraculis clarum Leo nonus Pontifex cebriter Sanctorum numero adscripsit anno salutis millesimo quinquagesimo secundo. Ejus corpus in celebri ejusdem urbis monasterio (inferius appellant), quod vivo tanquam advenae latibulum praebuit, humatum est.

R. Iste est.

The Mass of St. Erhard is de Communi Conf. Pont. Statuit with the Gospel de Communi non Pontificis.

II.

DECISIONS OF THE S. PENITENTIARY REGARDING THE INTERROGATIONS TO BE MADE IN CERTAIN CASES IN FORO POENITENTIAE.

I. Quando adest fundata suspicio poenitentem, qui de onanismo omnino silet, huic crimini esse addictum, num confessario liceat a prudenti et discreta interrogatione abstinere, eo quod praevideat plures a bona fide exturbandos multosque sacramenta deserturos? An non potius teneatur confessarius prudenter ac discrete interrogare?

Respond.: Regulariter negative ad primam partem; affirmative ad secundam.

II. An confessarius, qui sive ex spontanea confessione, sive ex prudenti interrogatione cognoscit poenitentem esse onanistam, teneatur illum de hujus peccati gravitate, aequae ac de aliorum peccatorum, monere eumque (uti ait Rit. Romanum) paterna charitate reprehendere, eique absolutionem tunc solum impertiri, cum sufficientibus signis constet, eundem dolere de praeterito, et habere propositum non amplius onanistice agendi?

Resp. : Affirmative, juxta doctrinas probatorum auctorum.

S. Poenitent. Die 10^a Martii 1886.

NOTICES OF BOOKS.

CIVILIZATION OF THE EASTERN IRANIANS IN ANCIENT TIMES.

By Dr. Wilhelm Geiger. Translated by Dārāb Dastūr Peshotan Sanjānā, B.A. London: Henry Frowde.

THE modern Persia is called by the natives Iran; but the Ancient Iranians dwelt farther eastward, in the territory now known as Turkestan, on both sides of the river Amoo Daria (Oxus). The great antiquity of their sacred books, Avesta, or Zendavesta, as they are perhaps more commonly designated, cannot be questioned, but the date of their compilation it is quite impossible to determine even approximately. Critics, ancient and modern, assign the life of the great prophet of the Avesta, and founder of the religion set forth therein, to widely different periods of the world's history. Aristotle and Niebuhr hold extreme views on this subject, the former contending that Zarathustra (Zoroaster) flourished about 6,000 years before the death of Plato (347, B.C.), while the latter maintains that the whole story about Zarathustra is an undiluted myth, and that no such individual ever existed. Plato himself is the first classical writer, who mentions the name and theology of Zoroaster, where he says: *μαγεία ἡ Ζωροάστρου τοῦ Ὀρμαζου ἐστὶ θεῶν θεραπεία τῶν Περσῶν.* "The Magian religion of Zoroaster, son of Hormazus, is the mode of worship of the Gods among the Persians." The name given by Plato to the theological code of the Iranians, brings at once and vividly before our memory the statement of the evangelist "Ecce Magi ab oriente venerunt Jerosolymam." The Magi were most probably Iranian priests; and this is an additional reason why we ought to take an interest in the religious history of that people.

In the Avesta system of religion, Ahura Mazda is the creator and

ruler of everything, material, spiritual, or abstract, in which goodness, truth, and beauty, predominate; Angra Manyu is the author of all moral and physical evil. Accordingly we see it commonly laid down in books dealing with this subject, that Zoroaster was the first who invented and inculcated the doctrine of the dualistic principle. This statement the author of the above work shows very plainly not to be quite accurate, for though the evil spirit exists from the beginning like the good one, and is equally powerful in his own sphere, yet he will succumb to him, and be annihilated in the great final engagement between them at the end of the world. Angra Manyu is therefore not eternal, for though he had no beginning of existence, he will have an end; and, rigorously speaking, we may regard Ahura Mazda as superior to him, and in fact as the one supreme being. But it requires no great keenness of intellect, to detect the silliness of the following observation of West, quoted and apparently approved by the translator: "The reader will search in vain for any confirmation of the foreign notion, that Mazda-worship is decidedly more dualistic than Christianity is usually shown to be by orthodox writers." In page 70 of the Introduction, a passage of the Avesta is thus rendered into English: "The two spirits who first of all existed, the twins proclaimed to me of themselves
The good and the bad in thoughts, words, and works.

When the two spirits came first together in order to create
Life and death, and (to order) how the world should be at the end."

Mr. West is not overburdened with either knowledge or love of Christianity, if he fancies that the merest child or neophyte, who has got the most elementary instruction in the Christian religion, would not repudiate with horror this doctrine as destructive of the very first idea we form of *one* Creator and *one* Lord.

It is difficult to divine the motive, that influenced the translator in introducing this Mr. West into his book, in places where his ravings are perfectly irrelevant. One sample of his antiquated rubbish will suffice:—"What life is we do not know, but even in its common acceptation, it seems to be some spiritual property that becomes manifest in the body; whether it begins and ends with the body we do not yet know, as hitherto we have found no means of maintaining the sensible existence of the one without the other, but we can conceive that such is possible. These, however, are matters of speculation in which I do not often indulge; but I am fully persuaded, that if mankind ever discover anything certain about the spiritual world by means of their own researches, they will have to change all their past notions regarding psychology and philosophy."

The author is totally ignorant of Catholic practices and belief, but that does not prevent him from instituting comparisons between our religion and that of the Zoroastrians. "Even a kind of indulgence" he says "is not unheard of. To certain meritorious works is attributed the effect of removing all guilt and sin from him who performs them." He could hardly have made such a statement, had he known that indulgences, in the Catholic belief, have not for their object the remission of guilt, but the remission, partial or total, of the temporal punishment due to sin after the guilt has been already wiped out by the sacrament of penance. Nor had he known that "unity of doctrine" is the first and most essential characteristic of our church, would he, in all probability, speak of a certain doctrine of the Iranians as being "remarkably analogous to the Catholic belief in saints, in many countries."

The book contains an immense deal of minute and interesting information on agricultural, domestic, and social, as well as on religious matters, and presents it in a very readable form. However, we would recommend our readers to seek such information from a safer and a purer source. There are two insuperable barriers to its circulation, in its present form, among our Catholic youth either in these countries, or in India where it is chiefly intended to be read—the infidel ideas that are here and there reflected in its pages, as shown by the extracts given above, and the indelicate expressions that occur in it, few no doubt, but shockingly gross.—E. M.

GOLDEN SANDS. Translated by Miss E. McMahon.

TO-DAY'S GEM FOR THE CASKET OF MARY. Compiled by a
Member of the Ursuline Convent, Thurles.

MAXIMS AND COUNSELS OF ST. IGNATIUS LOYOLA. Translated
by A. W. Chetwode. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

It is only recently that little pocket-books containing the maxims and counsels of the saints have become so common. These little books supply a want that has been felt by many good people who either have not much time for formal meditation, or who find it in practice extremely difficult to preserve fresh during the day the spiritual bouquet gathered in the early morning prayer. To such people it is compensation to have always with them ever so small a book in which the sayings and maxims of the saints are recorded. And which of us is not struck by the wisdom of those sayings and does not feel himself the better for every peep into his little *Vade-mecum*?

The little books mentioned above are admirable specimens of such compilations.

THE SCHOOL OF DIVINE LOVE, OR ELEVATIONS OF THE SOUL TO GOD. By Fr. Vincent Caraffa, Seventh General of the Society of Jesus. Translated from the French of Marcel Bouix, S.J. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

THE love which men should entertain for God is presented under every one of its aspects in "The School of Divine Love." The treatment of the subject is not, however, disconnected and vague, as one might at first sight imagine. The author seems to have had constantly before his mind the theological definition of sanctity; and this it is which gives unity to the whole work. It is well suited for Meditations, Visits to the Blessed Sacrament, and for Confessors on whom devolves the direction of souls that aim at a high degree of perfection.

The nuns of the Perpetual Adoration in Wexford are deserving of the warmest praise for having presented English readers with a version of "The School of Divine Love," worthy of the original.—

T. E. J.

THE CASTLE OF COËTQUEN OR PATIRA. Translated from the French of Raoul de Navery. By A. W. Chetwode. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

THIS is an interesting work by Raoul de Navery, and its translation will be a welcome addition to the department of fiction in our Catholic libraries, for the English-speaking public.

The chief interest of the work centres round the imprisonment of the wife of Tanguy, the Lord of Coëtquen, by her two brothers-in-law, and her release, brought about principally by Patira, a blacksmith's apprentice.

The style is vivid and picturesque, and the characters are delineated with much skill. John Anvil, the blacksmith, and his wife, Claudia, are examples of the power of the author in character-painting. The descriptions give a good idea of the manners of the French before the Revolution, and of their reverence for the Madonna.

It would add to the perfection of the plot, and to the satisfaction of the reader, if it were told what became of Tanguy, what of Patira, and what of the child. There is an improbability about Patira's delaying to file down the bars of the window, in order to provide a means of escape for the prisoner and her child. Would not Tanguy have released his wife and child, had he been informed even privately of their imprisonment?

The work is brought out with great taste and style by the publishers, and is very suitable for presents.—J. C.

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

FEBRUARY, 1887.

DR. MIVART'S DEFENCE OF THEISM.—II.

THESIS II.—(CONTINUED).

“There is and always must have been underneath, behind, and distinct from matter, an agent which is ever working in and through matter, and which created it, if it ever was created.”

PROPOSITION I.—(CONTINUED).

“Matter of itself is unable to produce all the substantial changes which are continually taking place around us.”

SECTION II.—IRRATIONAL LIVING ORGANISMS.

EVERY one has some vague notion of what is meant by life and death. We ask about a man, is he dead? about a plant, is it living? We know that after death organisms become dissolved into dust and gases, to be assumed again, perhaps, into other organisms. But when we look closer, when we probe the question to the innermost, we find that notions are not always so correct or clear.

I. The Schoolmen defined living things to be those which are capable of motion from within themselves. A man understands, feels, and grows by his own activity; brutes feel and grow by virtue of their own powers; plants increase in size and sustain their bulk by means of some internal force whereby they assimilate food.

This, however, needs further elucidation. Magnets act from within, draw to themselves iron filings, and thereby grow larger in bulk. The earth attracts to itself meteors, and grows larger by their mass. Chemicals have often an almost fierce attraction for one another. Are these things alive? And if not, why not?

There is a conceivable distinction between the vital action of a plant or of the stomach of an animal, and the non-vital activity of magnets and chemicals. A magnet draws iron filings, but as surely do the filings proportionately attract the magnet. An object which is being electroplated attracts the particles of gold or silver, but these in turn as surely draw the object to them in proportion to their mass. The earth is increased in bulk by every meteor that falls; but as surely as the meteor was drawn out of its orbit, so surely did it attract the earth some little way out of its course.

On the other hand, vital acts may be conceived to be one-sided in their inception. Moisture is necessary for the life of plants; yet it is more true to say that the plant of its own activity draws its food from the moisture, than that the moisture stimulates the plant to action. Similarly an animal puts food into its stomach; the food acts mechanically on the stomach in a variety of ways. Every such mechanical activity on the part of the food calls forth a response from the stomach, but these mechanical responses are not vital acts. Similar activities would call forth like responses from the stomach of a dead animal. The living organ energizes in a totally different way; it not only responds mechanically to mechanical impressions, but it puts forth an *additional* activity to which no mechanical impression corresponds.

These examples serve to explain higher energies. A man may *walk*, or he may *fall* from a height. In either case he puts forth mechanical force to correspond with the force that draws him to the earth. But when he walks he is putting forth *additional energy*.

For he is attracted to the earth, and attracts it in turn, as well when he rests as when he walks. He cannot, therefore, by the *same* energy rise and walk; hence a *new* force is required. This additional force is not *dragged* from him, else he should be *pushed* or *pulled*; it must arise spontaneously from himself.

So, too, in sensation, we distinguish between the *mechanical impression* made on the organ and the *perception*. When an object is seen, it acts on the optic nerves by means, it is supposed, of ether waves. This action is purely mechanical,

and calls forth from the nerve a purely mechanical response. But this purely mechanical response is not vision, which consists rather in the putting forth afterwards of *another* energy,—an energy which, after the mechanical response, arises spontaneously from the organ itself. This is true not only of sight but of the other senses.

To test the validity of this second spontaneous activity you may make the very same impression on dead organs, on a dead eye, or ear, or nerve; but no active sensation follows. The dead eye sees not; the dead ear hears not. Now if seeing and hearing were but mechanical responses to external impressions, dead eyes and dead ears should see and hear. For a dead eye must give such a mechanical response; it must be provoked into resistance by a force acting from without; just as a magnet, or a piece of iron which is struck with a hammer. Action of matter on matter must cause reaction. Hence the dead eye must mechanically respond. But it cannot *see*. Why? Because it has no longer its former power of initiative.

It is said in reply that the reason why a dead eye cannot see is because, owing to some rupture, communication is cut off with the brain, as in the case of a blind eye in a living animal. And it is true, no doubt, that such a rupture will cause blindness; but the suggestion does not get rid of the difficulty; it only removes the difficulty further back. For we may then ask: How is it that a dead *brain* cannot act vitally?

One might answer, of course, by supposing the vital force to exist in one brain-cell only, which becomes ruptured at death. Even this supposition but pushes the difficulty back further still. For again we ask: What is the nature of the rupture? What bond is broken? It cannot be cohesion, or adhesion, or any other of the mechanical forces of matter; for we find innumerable cells in which these forces have full play, which cells, however, are not endowed with vitality. If the presence of these forces does not confer vital energy, how can their absence or rupture destroy it? Hence, even in the one living brain-cell there must be a different source of energy.

Besides, it does not seem to be at all true that vitality is confined to the brain, not to say to one cell of the brain.

Every man's experience tells him that he is alive all over and can act vitally in every organ; nay, we are told that Dr. Vulpian has shown by experiment at the Academy of Medicine in Paris, that the brain may be quite extracted from the bodies of certain fishes without causing any change in their habits or appearance.

Moreover, if the foregoing reasons be not sufficient to convince any one that absence of vital energy or death does not come finally from any rupture of communication with the brain, he may convince himself by making an experiment on a living subject in whom the communication with the brain is in perfect order. Move your own muscles, whether by mechanical pressure or by an electric current, and you will perceive at once that the motion is not vital: if any one else moves them, the motion is not even, properly speaking, yours. And yet the motion is exactly the same in itself as when produced by vital energy; it differs not except in cause. Hence the cause must be different: or vital energy is a very different thing from mere dead mechanical force.

We have heard the scholastic view; let us now call the other side. According to materialists, plants are acted on by water, and do nothing more than react.—they have no power of initiative. So, too, the stomach of an animal: the eye, ear, and brain of a man. The external object gives out certain forces: these forces act on the organs either immediately, as when food is placed in the stomach, or through ether and air waves, as in the case of seeing and hearing. Action causes corresponding reaction, and this reaction is sensation.

Now this system is intelligible, and better still, it is capable of experimental proof,—down to the last proposition. Reaction is not sensation or life, it makes animals mere dead machines. You can make a bell respond to your stroke, but its voice is not a living voice. You can make a marionette dance to your music, but it is still a marionette. You may pass an electric current through the muscles of a dead body: it will move and quiver and writhe; but all the same we know that the motion is non-vital, that the body is dead. Nay, you may apply the electric battery to your own muscles;

when the current passes, your flesh will move, but not vitally. It will *be moved* from without, it will not *move itself*. The current to which it responds is very different from that "electric force which keeps our thousand pulses dancing." Living things are no mere "magnetic mockeries," not "only cunning casts in clay."

We freely confess that one is bound in very consistency to adopt the latter of these explanations, if one adheres to the philosophy of Locke. If we know nothing beyond what sense tells us, we know nothing of vital action. For our senses tell us only of rest, motion, and kinds of motion;—that filings are drawn to a magnet and adhere, that stones fall to the earth and remain, that a muscle is moved in such or such a manner. No sense ever yet saw or felt a cause as such; we see and feel motion, and we intue the cause. It is by such intuition that we come to a knowledge of our "force-root." Hence Hume was consistent in his phenomenism when he denied causality, and so too are Hume's modern disciples.

Here, then, we take our stand. We contend that reason can see through phenomena, that behind force we can discern its root, a cause behind motion. Our reason tells us that there is an immense difference between living and dead things, between vital and non-vital action; that "cunning casts," no matter how perfect or active, are not alive; that however you may galvanize dead muscles into motion, they are dead all the while; that when an external force compels our own members to move in a certain direction, we do not *go*, we are *pushed* and *made to go*. Whence comes the difference?

The Schoolmen saw the origin of difference in the activity of the substantial form; let me endeavour to harmonize this with what has been said about the activity of inorganic matter.

It has been proved (1) that behind force there must be a subject of inhesion, a "force-root"; (2) that this root must be different in kind for different substances; (3) that it is the only thing capable of binding different molecules into one substance; (4) that so to bind, it must be in itself one indivisible unity, else it should require a further principle of union, and so on *ad infinitum*.

Accordingly, (5) this indivisible unity is the one agent which energizes through the whole substance.

Now remark ; this root of activity is different in different bodies—in gold, iron, hydrogen, oxygen, water. Gold is not iron ; neither is water oxygen and hydrogen ; we see that quite clearly. These roots are not only different in themselves, but they energize differently ; and that is how we come to know that in their natures they are different. Gold does what iron cannot do ; and what is done by water cannot be done by either oxygen or hydrogen or by both combined, except they adopt the peculiar form of water. Why may they not only be *different*, but be one *superior* to another ? Why may not one be able not only to do what another cannot do, but also to act where another cannot act at all ?

This is precisely the scholastic position. Living bodies are one in substance. An animal is as much one as an iron plate ; a tree is as much one substance as the beam into which it may be fashioned. Hence living bodies must have one “force-root,” one substantial form. The forms of living things are not only *different* from those of dead brute matter, but *superior* to them. Forms of dead matter energize, but only in response to external activity ; living forms *begin* to act of themselves.

Here then is our argument. We see quite plainly that living things are not like iron, wood, or stone ; that they have a peculiar power of initiative. This can be explained only by supposing that underneath the phenomena of force there is a “force-root” capable of such initiative energy. When life begins, whence does this “force-root” come ? What becomes of it when life ceases ? It comes from nothing to pass again in most cases into nothing. But mere matter cannot either create or annihilate a force, not to say a “force-root.” Hence there must be something behind matter, working in it and through it, distinct from it and of a higher order.

II. When discussing the constitution of inorganic bodies I drew attention to the phenomena of crystallization. When liquids settle into the solid state, their particles usually take peculiar similar geometrical forms, called crystals. These

crystals not only are of different shapes in different simple elements, and in various compounds, but they are shaped differently in the compound from what they were in the constituents. And yet through all this diversity there is a steady uniformity; the same substance always crystallizes in the same way, so much so that substances may be known by the mere shape of their crystals.

Now what crystals are to inorganic bodies *cells* are to organisms. In these, accordingly, may be traced a somewhat similar diversity of uniformity.

Living beings are divided into kingdoms; these kingdoms are very much sub-divided, ever narrowing down to the individual. Thus we have the vegetable and the animal kingdoms. Plants are either phanerogamic or cryptogamic, and each sub-kingdom is reduced to various classes, divisions, orders, genera, species, and varieties. Similarly we have five great sub-kingdoms of animals:—(1) *back-boned*, such as horses, birds, most fishes; (2) *soft-bodied*, such as snails and oysters; (3) *ringed*, such as worms, spiders, crabs; (4) *rayed*, such as starfish; (5) and *plant-like*, such as sponges. Some of these sub-kingdoms are in their turn very much sub-divided into classes, orders, sections, groups, &c. But every individual of both kingdoms is made up of cells arranged differently.

It is important to remark that these various subdivisions are not made at random; they are due to a uniform diversity of arrangement by which the cells are so linked together as to give rise to a uniform diversity of vital power. How very uniformly oaks are made, and rose-trees, and grasses! How like each other cows are, and sparrows, and salmon! Yet how wonderfully different they are. Who would take an oak for a cow, or a sparrow for a salmon?

There are two things to be specially noted about this uniformity of diversity. (1) The germ-cells are exceedingly like. If you were to mix a number of the germ-cells of different species and give them so mixed to the ablest of our naturalists, and if you were to furnish him with all the testing apparatus that human ingenuity can invent, you might feel quite confident that, by merely examining the cells, he could

never tell which is which;—which will grow into a horse, which into a cow; which will become an oak, which a beech.

And yet (2) one cell will surely develop into a horse, the other into a cow; one will become a beech, the other an oak; and this though the nourishment be the same. Plant fertilized oak-germs and beech-germs side by side, and if you can preserve them and supply them with the same food, they will develop differently; every oak-germ will become an oak, every beech-germ a beech. Treat salmon and trout spawn in exactly the same way: every egg of the one will become a salmon, of the other, a trout. The same grass that feeds horses feeds sheep; they breathe the same air and drink the same water; yet they crystallize into different forms. On the other hand you may vary the food or conditions; plant your oak-germs one here another there, one in this soil another in that, one in a hot-house another on a stormy mountain-top; if they grow at all, they will all grow into the same form. The same is true of the germ-cells of horses, salmon, sparrows. Why is this? What causes this uniformity of diversity?

Mr. Darwin felt the urgency of these questions and endeavoured to answer them by his theory of *Pangeneses*. According to this hypothesis "each living organism is ultimately made up of an almost infinite number of minute particles or organic atoms, termed 'gemmules,' each of which has the power of producing its kind. Moreover, these particles are supposed to circulate freely about the organism (which is made up of them) and to be derived from all parts of all the organs of the less remote ancestors of each such organism during all the stages and stages of such several ancestors' existence, and therefore of the several states of each of the ancestors' organs. It is further supposed that such a complete collection of gemmules is aggregated in each ovum and spermatozoon in most animals, and in each part capable of producing by gemmation (budding) in the lowest animals and plants."¹

It would be most interesting to examine this theory and show its various anomalies; it would be particularly interesting to show how utterly it sets at defiance the philosophy of

¹ "Mivart: Genesis of Species," chap. x.

Locke, which is the basis of materialism. But we must confine ourselves to the question now at issue. If the gemmules be what materialists say they are, mere collections of forces, how could they ever build up organisms such as we see them?

For the whole argument which was advanced to prove the necessity of "force-root" in inorganic matter, is of even greater strength when applied to the constitution of organisms. (1) The unit of force must have a subject of inhesion or root. (2) There must be different *kinds* of gemmules or of elements, and this difference can only come from difference of "force-root."¹ (3) Not only must the gemmules be different in kind, but there must be a something pervading the whole organism, energizing throughout the whole on the same yet different lines, building this into an oak, that into a beech, this into a horse, that into a sparrow or a salmon. Naturalists tell us that every cell of an oak may by gemmation become a distinct tree. According to Pangenesis every such cell must contain within itself all the gemmules of the almost infinite oaks which may be produced from it. Who can believe it? Is it not much simpler and less mysterious to admit a "force-root" for the tree as for the gemmule,—a permeating under principle which is uniform in each species though different in any two; and which, accordingly, will develop both uniformly and differently, no matter in what conditions, provided only they are sufficient?

But if you admit this, the question arises: Whence does the permeating principle come? Whither does it go at death? From nothing, to nothing. Hence matter is not of itself sufficient to produce it or to cause it to cease.

III. It will be remembered that when treating inorganic matter we relied for proof of substantial forms on unity of substance. A plate of iron, a block of stone, are each one substance; the Menai Bridge, St. Peter's at Rome, are not one substance; but the former is one bridge, the latter one church. Let us see can we trace a parallelism in organisms.

And to begin with our own bodies,—for what is true of them is true of other animals,—we know we are each *one*;

¹ See RECORD, January, 1887, pp. 10-13.

not merely a welded mass of atoms, but each *peculiarly* one, with a union which we call *substantial*. Now organised bodies are not bound up together like iron plates, so that it is not so easy to illustrate the different kind of unity in the present case as it was in the case of inorganic matter ; but still we will try.

If a tyrant were to bind two persons together with strong chains passing tight round their bodies in many parts, they should be in a certain sense *one mass*, but should remain *two distinct persons*. If you touch one of them on the foot, he will feel the touch ; the other will not feel except you push. And yet that foot is less firmly bound to its own body than the two bodies are bound together. The limbs may be torn asunder, but the bodies are inseparable ; yet each person's limbs are parts of *one* body, though each body is not part of one substantial whole. Our reason tells us this quite clearly and forcibly.

Moreover, we are aware that these are *the very same* bodies we had twenty years ago. We distinguish between moral and substantial permanence. A fountain is the same as it was last year, but the substance of the water is not the same. Our bodies, on the contrary, are in substance what they always were. When we clasp the hand of a friend, we know that it is the same hand that we clasped in youth. A soldier cares for an old charger, because he feels that it is the same in substance as the noble animal that bore him through many a dangerous field. And yet we are told on authority which we can trust, that the molecules of which those bodies are composed are continually passing away.

What is the cause of this substantial unity ? Why is the foot one with its body, though two bodies bound together much more firmly are not one substance ? Why is a man the same and the fountain not the same, though the atoms of each are constantly passing away ? It can be only because there is a binding principle underneath phenomena, which is the same in the whole body but not the same in two, which abides in the man but not in the fountain.¹

Further, consider what happens at death. You look on

¹ See "Nature and Thought," p. 166.

the corpse of a deceased friend; everything is the same to all appearance as it was a few minutes ago; yet it is not your friend, it is "the ruined chrysalis." The same is true of horses, plants, birds, &c.;—after death the matter seems the same, but it energizes in a different fashion. Why is this?

Materialists will tell you it is all because the heart-action has ceased, or because a cell has been ruptured in the brain. True; but how unsatisfactory. Limbs may be cut from animals, the brain may be extracted from fishes, plants may be cut into ever so many slips, worms may be divided,—yet they live. In a swoon a man's heart may cease to beat, he lives however; we know that he is dead not by its ceasing to beat, but by its remaining inactive *long*. How then can change of heart-action be the sole cause of this great change of death? Or how can death be entirely due to the rupture of a cell, when we know that the whole brain may be extracted and cast to the winds, nay plants and even worms may be cut in two, and yet death will not follow?

Let me sum up this portion of my argument. When a friend dies, we notice a diversity. He was the same from infancy till old age, though the atoms of his body had often changed; but now what remains of him is a different substance. All this is true of animals and plants. Whence came the identity? From cohesion or other union of atoms or gemmules? But the atoms do not cohere; they pass away. Besides you can bind atoms with a stronger bond, and yet they will not form one body. Whence came the diversity? From a rupture of the cells of the brain or a stoppage of the heart? But you may cut a plant or worm in two, or you may extract the brain, and the organisms will not die; the heart may stop and the man may live. Whence do they come, this identity and diversity? Only from the presence or absence of something behind,—of a "force-root" or substantial form, which comes when life begins, remains while the vital conditions last, and departs when they cease.¹

But further: Whence comes the form? From nothing; and it goes to nothing, except in the case of man. Hence matter of itself is unable to account for life.

¹ Compare Dr. Mivart's argument which I have modified: *Ibid.* pp.169-174.

Here again we freely confess that our argument is of no value when addressed to one who admits no power of intuition,—to a thorough phenomenist. But there is no such; they say they are, but they are not. The most pronounced materialist admits in his heart and in his ordinary actions that he sees *something* underneath phenomena. To Mr. Tyndall it is “the mysterious thing,” to Mr. Spencer “the Unknowable,” to Mr. Bain “a double-faced somewhat,” to Mr. Huxley “the abyss of the Eternal and Unknowable.” And so too Mr. Darwin was forced to have recourse to his gemmules and Pangenesis.

IV. I now come to solve a difficulty which must often have struck the reader,—about the unity of substantial forms. One of the main arguments advanced in this and the preceding paper has been that organisms are one; that they cannot be unified by mere force; that, accordingly, their unity must come from a “force-root.” Hence it follows, of course, that this root must itself be one and indivisible; else it should require another binding principle, and so on *ad infinitum*. Now experience seems to tell against this. For we can divide one stone, one plant, one worm, into two or more. The substance does not cease, else the parts should be different in substance, as parts, from what they were in the whole. Who believes that they are? Cut an apple in two; it is the very same substance in two distinct parts, the very same force and “force-root;” and so with regard to plants and worms. If, therefore, the form makes the body, the form must itself be capable of division; and the whole scholastic position is turned.

The objection says fairly, “if the form makes the body.” We admit that if there was nothing underneath force but “force-root,” “force-root” should be in itself divisible. Our way out of the difficulty lies in denying that forms are the only underlying entities. This needs explanation.

When oxygen and hydrogen are changed into water, and the water then converted back again into oxygen and

hydrogen, a question arises: Are these gases the very same individual substances that were transformed into water? Everyone says so. Hence the original process was not *annihilation* of gas and *creation* of water, but *change* of gas into water. So too in the second transformation the water is not *annihilated* nor is the gas *created*, but the former is *changed* in the latter. Now *change*, as distinguished from *annihilation* and *creation*, supposes the *permanence* of something which is common to both terms. Water changes from hot to cold; the substance remains the same. A friend changes into an enemy; the person continues unchanged. What is permanent and common to oxygen and hydrogen on the one hand, and to water on the other? Not the form; for I have proved ever so often that "force-roots" begin and end; it is not any longer force of water, but of oxygen and of hydrogen. What is permanent? Clearly *something*; therefore there must be something besides forms behind phenomena.

Now it is curious that the *quantity* of water produced depends on the *quantity* of the constituent gases: a larger or smaller supply of gas will yield a proportionately large or small amount of water. Here then are two facts: (1) *something* of the constituent elements remains after the change; (2) the *quantity* of the new substance depends on the *quantity* of the elements. Is it not natural to conclude that quantity springs from the permanent something,—in other words, that *materia prima* is the root of extension as forms are the roots of force?

Quality is the category which is, perhaps, oftenest associated in our minds with *quantity*; the former tells *what kind*, the latter *how much*, the substance is. A little reflection will convince any one that diversity of *kind* springs from diversity of *activity*. Take from your purse two kinds of coin, one gold, the other silver: why do they differ in kind? Because the substance energizes differently: so that the coins are not of the same colour, weight, &c. *Quality*, therefore, depends on force; force comes from the substantial form; hence quality is due to the form, as quantity springs from the primordial matter.

Further, when we speak of divisibility or indivisibility we

refer immediately to *quantity*. Given a certain *amount* of anything, one can separate it into parts; but who can divide a *quality*, a *kind*? Gold is as much that kind of metal in one sovereign as in a thousand; water is as much itself in a wine-glass as in the Pacific. Hence quality is indivisible in itself, whereas quantity is divisible; that which springs from the *materia prima* may be parcelled out, but what results from the *substantialis forma* is in itself incapable of partition. Is it not natural to refer these diverse characteristics to similar diversity of characteristic in the roots from which they spring? Accordingly, this is another reason for holding that substantial forms are in themselves indivisible.

Remark the words "in themselves;" for the Schoolmen further teach that, though "in themselves" indivisible, forms become divisible in the matter.

It has been shown that bodies must be composed of two elements,—a transitory root of force and a permanent root of extension. These two elements, though in themselves most real, are incapable of independent existence; they must co-exist. The permanent something should be nothing if it were not united to force; and on the other hand, force, at least in bodies, must naturally be extended. They perfect each other, one element contributing what the other lacks. The matter gives rise to divisibility, the form to unity. But this supposes that the compound is not so divisible as not to be one substance, nor so much one substance as not to be divisible. There must be give and take; the divisible matter must become unified by the indivisible form; and the indivisible form must in turn become divisible in the divisible matter. The various atoms of which an iron plate or a human body is composed, become one substance by means of the indivisible "force-root;" and similarly the force which the plate or body exercises, becomes capable of division because exercised throughout a something which is in itself divisible.

Accordingly, the following is the scholastic principle: substantial forces are indivisible *per se*, but divisible *per accidens*, i.e. in *matter*. Hence when you break a stone or a bar of iron, the block or bar is no longer one but two or

more. It is not two, however, in the same sense as if the stone were resolved into its chemical components. In this latter case, as has been so often shown, the "force-root" ceases and other "force-roots" begin to be,—the *substance* is changed. But when you break a block in two, the *same substance* remains; it is only *divided*. The "force-root," though in itself indivisible, is no longer one but two, because the extended something in which it energized is divided.

Something similar happens in the case of the lower organisms, such as plants and worms. These organisms are like inorganic matter in this, that the one indivisible form is able to exercise its various energies throughout the whole body; its activities are not restricted to special parts. Hence the great difference which everyone must have noticed between the higher and the lower organisms,—that in the higher kinds the activities of the form are limited to special places, heart, brains, eyes, ears, &c.; whereas the lower we descend in the scale of life, the fewer of these specially adapted organs do we discern. Worms are very like all through; and buds and seeds of plants are now known to be only different forms of the leaf. As, therefore, the forms of inorganic bodies, though in themselves indivisible, may be divided in matter, so may we divide the forms of these lower organisms, which like the forms of inorganic substances, energize equally throughout the whole mass.

The explanation given is that of St. Thomas, whose view is commonly accepted in the Schools. Any reader, who may wish to examine more minutely how wonderfully the details of this teaching harmonize with modern science, may consult Fr. Harper.¹

Materialism, in so far as it ventures to touch these questions at all, falls back on Pangenesis. A bud or cutting will develop to the same form as its parent plant, because every cell is made up of an almost infinite number of gemmules corresponding to every organ in the parent, and to every peculiar organ in the less remote ancestors. In other words,

¹ "Metaphysics of the School," vols. ii. and iii. passim.

every cell has a substantial form which is not indeed like that of the Schoolmen indivisible, but almost infinitely divisible.

I have already pointed out some of the many difficulties of this theory; here I may call attention to two others. (1) What binds the gemmules into *one cell*? For the cells not only are each one in substance, but also have uniform tendencies to diversity of growth. (2) How can gemmules of dead matter make the cell capable of vital acts?¹

Now it may strike the reader that if the scholastic view be correct, there is little more in the genesis of plants and the lower animals than in the breaking of a stone into parts. This would seem to enervate the argument which has been urged in this paper from the generation of living organisms: For why should not matter be able to break stones?

We answer that the reasoning in the foregoing paper is drawn *immediately* from the *generation*, not from the *division* of organisms. That there are organisms which do not owe their origin to division, is indubitable. Take the well-known case of the generation of most fishes. Both the egg of the female and the milt of the male are quite separated from the bodies of the parents before generation has begun. For the egg is not the salmon; neither is the milt: they could never of themselves grow into a fish. Hence the life of the new organism commences at the time of union. And as the egg and milt are then separated from the parents, the new form cannot result from a division of the old.

This is equally true of those generations in which the germ-cell remains enclosed in the body of the mother. That the sperm-cell must then be separated from the substantial form of the male parent, is plain. But, except in the case of mammals, we are told by the highest modern authorities on embryology, that the germ-cell is not *substantially united* with the mother's body, but only *enclosed*. Nay, Professor Haeckel supplies data which prove that even in the case of mammals, about which there was more reason to doubt, there is no *substantial union* between the mother and the *foetus* even in

¹ See Mivart, "Genesis of Species," chap. x.: "Nature and Thought," p. 173.

conception.¹ Hence in cases of real generation the new organism begins to live—to be *informed*—only after the germ-cell and the sperm-cell have been separated from the substantial form of the parents. Accordingly the new form cannot result from mere division, as in the case of stones, but must begin *de novo*. How could matter of itself produce it?

I have said at the commencement of the answer to this objection, that the “reasoning in the foregoing paper is drawn *immediately* from the *generation*, not from the division of organisms,” such as occurs in the case of some worms which are propagated by budding. Even from these, however, we may draw an argument. For just as mere matter can *divide* a chemical compound, if it once existed, though of itself it could never produce such a compound; so the form of a living organism might be divided, if it were once in being. But how does it get into being? No materialist of the present day ever thinks of maintaining that there was an infinite series of worms. It is held rather that the first worm was evolved by natural selection. On the contrary, we contend that the substantial form of the first real worm must have been distinct in its nature from the forms of all preceding organisms, just as the substantial form of the first real water must have been distinct in its nature from those of oxygen and hydrogen. The *first* form could never arise by division; hence either *it* must have been *generated*, or the *whole organism* must have been *created*. Previously existing matter was of itself incapable of doing either. Hence even in these cases our argument applies.

V. The explanation just given throws light on the two very vexed questions of spontaneous generation and the origin of species.

1° The schoolmen applied the term “generation” to denote the production or “eduction” of all kinds of forms whether of inorganic bodies or of organisms. By “spontaneous generation” we understand the eduction of forms of *living* things from *inorganic* matter.

¹ See the extracts quoted from Professors Sachs and Haeckel by Fr. Harper, vol. iii., pp. 145, &c.

It has been my argument all through, that, though brute matter can educe forms, it cannot do so *of itself*. Reason tells us not only that oxygen and hydrogen are got from water, but also that electricity *finds* them. Hence matter *causes* the generation of the substantial form of inorganic bodies; it is, however, unable to do this of itself, but only by virtue of the concurrent activity of a Higher Power which energizes according to established general laws.

Now, if brute matter can be enabled to be the immediate cause of the generation of a lower kind of form, why should it be impossible to enable it to produce forms of a higher kind? It does bring into being the "force-root" of crystals; why should it not be likewise possible to make it capable of generating the source of activity in a lichen or in a sponge?

The Schoolmen discussed these questions both as to possibility and as to fact. With regard to possibility they held different opinions. The explanation of this difference must be sought still further back. (1) They held commonly that a creature cannot be endowed with power to *create* a being capable of existing of itself, such as the human soul; for such an act was thought to require infinite power, and no creature is capable of receiving the infinite. Hence no finite being can be enabled to do more than "educe" from matter forms which may "co-exist" with matter. (2) The Scholastics discussed whether the forms of plants and of irrational animals are capable of independent existence, or whether they are "immersed in matter," and must co-exist with it. The common opinion was that they are so immersed, that they are capable, not of *existence*, but only of *co-existence*. Hence (3) the common opinion also was that inorganic bodies could be enabled to "educe" them;—that, if God saw fit, He could so arrange that they might be spontaneously generated.

With regard to the fact, of course, the Schoolmen argued mostly from experiences which modern scientific instruments have shown to be capable of an explanation then unthought of. Hence many modern scientists, particularly owing to the researches of Pasteur and Tyndall, believe that there is now

innature no such thing as a power of spontaneous generation, but that all life comes from germs. This is the opinion of many unbelievers, such as Mr. Huxley; it is denied, however, by others, as well as by many eminent scientists who believe in Revelation. I think that Dr. Mivart¹ and others, among Catholics, incline to the latter opinion. Moreover, Mr. Huxley contends that, though matter in its present state is unable to produce germs, yet we have reason to think it was not always so, but that all the germs in existence came from matter alone originally,—that is millions of years ago, “beyond the abyss of geologically recorded time.”²

This seems to me the least consistent of all opinions on this matter. If there is any one thing which materialists and all men of science insist on more than another, it is the persistence of force. Hence if matter ever produced life, the same energy must be in it still. Why does it not produce life now? For remember Mr. Huxley holds it does not. Why? For want of favourable conditions? But surely with all our scientific appliances we are able to reduce masses of matter to the chaos which the earth was when life began. Is it not even likely that present conditions, which are so favourable for the growth of organisms from germs, could easily be made more favourable than the primal-chaos for the work of spontaneous generation? But in particular I would ask Mr. Huxley how he, a phenomenist, can consistently believe in an energy which no one ever experienced or can experience; how he, an associationist, can expect that matter *must* have produced life billions of years ago.

I shall, perhaps, at another time have occasion to discuss the question whether the substantial forms of plants and of irrational animals can exist independently or must co-exist with matter. It depends on the nature of their powers, which are so different from those of man. Meanwhile enough has been said to show that our argument is independent of this as well as of the further question,—whether life may be spontaneously generated. Whether spontaneous generation be possible or impossible, whether it be a fact or otherwise,

¹ *Cont. Rev.*, July, 1879.

² *Critiques and Addresses*, p. 239.

our position is safe. Life can never be generated,—no substantial form can ever be generated by matter of itself, without the assistance of a Higher Power.

2° The same is true of that other vexed question,—the origin of species. Were the various kinds of living beings produced from the beginning by a special act of creation? Or rather, were there some few kinds originally created, from which the others were developed according to law? I do not undertake to answer. But if it has been or ever will be proved that species may be so developed, I should consider the conclusion to be in perfect harmony with the scholastic philosophy and with the argument which has been advanced in this paper.

For it is all a question of the generation of substantial forms. Now there can be no doubt that in case of inorganic bodies distinct species of forms may be and are developed day by day. Every new chemical compound is proof of this. Why should we restrict God's power to inorganic matter? He is able to confer on creatures the capacity to develop distinct species of substantial forms of a lower order: Why should He not be able to do the same when the forms are of a barely superior grade?

If, indeed, one were to admit that the substantial forms of all living things were, like the human soul, not "immersed in matter," but capable of independent existence, then it might be necessary to deny the possibility of a creature being endowed with power to *create* such. For to produce them would then be an act of *creation*, nothing less; and creation may suppose infinite power, of which creatures are incapable. But there is no evidence that the souls of irrational organisms are capable of any such independent existence; on the contrary all the evidence points the other way. Hence I do not see why God could not confer on creatures the power to develop ever new forms of irrational organisms.

Supposing He can do so, the further question remains: Has He done it? This is a question of fact, to be determined altogether by evidence. I see nothing in Revelation decisive

one way or the other. St. Thomas follows St. Augustine in teaching that He did. If experimentalists supply proof that species were so developed, we will gladly accept both the proof and the conclusion.

Remember this applies only to *irrational* organisms, not to the human soul. Reason and Revelation combine to teach that it is immediately created by God. It is capable of independent existence; hence it is not merely "educated," but created; and creation is thought by many to require infinite power. Accordingly we are taught in the Book of Genesis that, when man first appeared on the earth, the living soul was breathed into him by God Himself.

Let me remind the reader once again that the questions we have been discussing lie altogether behind the domain of experimental science. Physicists tell us of different forms of activity; the more they tell the better pleased we are. The boldest of them, however, will not venture to assert that he can explain everything. They see something more behind, "a mysterious thing," "a double-faced somewhat," "an inexplicable first principle," "the Unknowable," "the Infinite," "the abyss of the Eternal."

Now it is into this depth the Angel of the Schools wings his flight. He and his disciples have nothing to fear from physical research fairly conducted; in truth we stand in need of facts, more facts. When science has exhausted the powers of experimental research, then the time is ripe for intellect to penetrate within the veil; when physics ceases, metaphysics begins. It is only intellect that can resolve this "double-faced somewhat," and it has resolved it, as we have seen, into its two elements,—one something the permanent root of extension, another the transient root of force.

W. McDONALD.

(*To be continued.*)

ARRAN OF THE SAINTS.

DURING the fifth century, when the barbarian hordes of Northern Europe came forth like a torrent from their frozen homes and forest fastnesses, inundating the fair plains of Italy, Gaul and Spain, and sweeping away in their desolating course every vestige of ancient culture, history tells us that the highest forms of learning and Christian perfection found a refuge in an obscure island of the Mediterranean. This was Lerins. From a haunt of serpents it became a nursery of saints, and a centre of civilization, purer and more powerful than the famous "Isles of Greece" immortalized in song.

Even distant Erin, then the "Ultima Thule" of the earth, felt its influence. Saint Patrick spent nine years within its sacred shores, and was there trained in those habits of sanctity which made him in the hands of Divine Providence a fit instrument to be the apostle of the Irish nation.

When afterwards, during his forty days' retreat on Croagh Patrick, as he looked from his lofty eminence over the islands of Clew Bay, which lay like a picture before him, we can fancy to ourselves the vision of another island further south rising up before his prophetic mind—a vision which was calculated to fill the heart of the grand old saint with joy and forcibly remind him of the loved paradise of his earlier days.

At the mouth of Lough Lurgan—now Galway Bay—he sees three foam-washed islands. The largest is known as Arran. Bleak and inexpressibly wild, they are inhabited only by the sea-fowl and the pagan priests and warriors, who, driven from the mainland, there, as on a congenial soil, enjoy the undisturbed exercise of their idolatrous rites.

Crowning the cliffs which stand like bulwarks to repel the invasions of the ocean, are huge fortresses from which savage war songs and druidical incantations are heard mingling with the roar of the ocean. It is a land of darkness. Man and nature seem to have combined to invest it with every feature of repulsiveness. But lo, there is a transformation!

The gloom vanishes and the place is robed in a vesture of golden light.

As the prophet of old beheld in wonder the arid plain suddenly swarm with living beings, so the aged Apostle is lost in astonishment as he sees this home of desolation and idolatry changed into an abode of light and sanctity. The prophecy is verified, and the ocean leading to its shores literally becomes "a path and a way." Its rocky heights teem with men whose virtues make them more like angels in human form. Churches, schools and monasteries rise up on every side as if by a touch of magic. Pilgrims flock from distant lands. The tongues of the Gael, the Pict, the Cumbri, the Saxon, the Frank, and the Roman, mingle with the mysterious murmurs of the waves. And from this island sanctuary he sees go forth like a swarm of bees, legions of holy missionaries, trained in virtue and learning, to diffuse the "good odour of Christ," and to carry the blessed tidings of the Gospel to lands still sitting in the "shadow of death."

Arran has been well styled the Lerins of the Northern Seas. What one was to France in the fifth, the other was to all Western Europe from the fifth to the eighth century. Two great centres of monastic and intellectual life, they exercised a more refining and a more lasting influence on the progress of humanity than the codes of all the law-givers, and the systems of all the philosophers.

But if both were great sanctuaries of learning and virtue this was almost the only point of resemblance between them. In every other respect they were totally dissimilar. One was a land of sunshine; the other of clouds and tempests. One was washed by a halcyon sea, and planted with groves of myrtle, palm and orange trees; the other, swept by a tempestuous ocean, was almost destitute of vegetation. One, in fine, seemed destined by nature to be an earthly paradise, the other an earthly purgatory.

Saint Eucherius, in his famous work in praise of the eremetical life, has described Lerins as a country bordered with deep woods, watered by beneficent streams rich with verdure, enamelled with flowers, embalmed with their perfumes. What a contrast between this picture and the grey

rocks, scanty soil, and cold Atlantic blasts of the sister island.

Reader, have you ever seen Arran? If not, you can scarcely form an idea of a landscape which is unique in its kind. Nowhere in the world, perhaps, can there be found a more varied combination of fertility and barrenness, of bleakness and picturesqueness, of tameness and sublimity. Placed at the entrance to Galway Bay, like a natural breakwater sprung from the deep, the Islands seem to enjoy a sort of amphibious existence. Land and water commingle and unite in the most fantastic shapes it is possible to image. Here are flat headlands running far into the sea; there echoing caverns through which the waves rush with a roar like distant thunder. Here is a beach covered with sand of pearly whiteness; there a tremendous precipice rising up in a vertical line 300 feet from the water's edge.

Stand on the ruins of Dun Aengus and look around. The fortress itself is in keeping with the surroundings. Its black and weather-worn walls tell the story of a persecuted race, who, first conquered by the wonder-working Tuatha de Dananns, were driven westward inch by inch, until at length, after the battle of Moytura a remnant of the brave but unfortunate warriors, completely broken and dispirited, took refuge in Arran. Here on the verge of the inaccessible ocean they made their final stand, and built those massive barriers which even at the present day excite our wonder and curiosity.

Looking inland, a picture of strange fascination is presented to the view. Off in the distance the "Twelve Pins of Benbola" rise up like clustered pyramids in bold relief against the sky. Winding in and out by a thousand creeks, bays and inlets, is Galway Bay, like a huge river, widening as it advances, and at length emptying itself by three capacious mouths into the ocean. In the immediate foreground the eye wanders over a scene which is the weirdest it is possible to conceive. It is a little world of stone. Of the nearly twelve thousand acres which constitute the area of the Islands only eight hundred are fit for cultivation. The remainder is stone, pure and simple. It seems to revel in its supremacy. There are hills and valleys of stone; plains and

castles of stone, and even whole cities of that element fantastically piled together as if formed by human hands. Lying by the northern sea-coast, and in the valleys around the monasteries are rich lands and verdant meadows, but these being concealed from view, the only impression left upon the mind of the spectator is that everywhere are

“Rocks at random thrown
Bleak waves, bare crags, and banks of stone.”

The bleakness of the inland landscape is relieved by the grandeur of the ocean view. It is simply sublime. Tourists who have visited all lands and seen nature in its varied aspects, have pronounced this the most magnificent scene in the world. To the east are seen the Cliffs of Moher and the headlands of Clare and Kerry; while, lying to the north and west, in a boundless plain, is a watery waste whose vastness fills the mind with awe. There it lies—“the deep and dark blue ocean, unchangeable save to its wild waves’ play, dark heaving, boundless, endless, dread, fathomless and alone; the Mirror of the Omnipotent; the Image of Eternity; the Throne of the Invisible.”

Such is Arran at the present day, and such it was, at least in all its main features, fourteen hundred years ago, when a young man of princely bearing, dressed in the garb of a monk, landed from his *curroch* and knelt in prayer on the beach near where stands the present village of Eochill. This was Enda, the founder of the school of “Arran of the Saints.” Although still in the bloom of early manhood his life was full of exciting incidents. Descended on the paternal side from Colla-da-Croich, seventh in a direct line from the famous Conn of the Hundred Battles, and claiming the royal Dalaradian race as his maternal relations, the blood which flowed in his veins from this two-fold fountain was the oldest and noblest in Ireland. Conal Dearg, King of Oriel, was his father, and his mother, Briga, surnamed Aibfinnia, or the Fair, was the daughter of Ainmaire, son of the prince of Ferrard. The ancestral territory of Oriel comprised the present counties of Monaghan, Armagh, Fermanagh and Louth. Enda was born in the latter county about the middle

of the fifth century. Remarkable for his manly beauty, and bravery in battle, he won the hearts of his fierce clansmen, and on the death of his father succeeded to the chieftaincy amidst the universal acclamations of his people.

St. Patrick was about this time at the zenith of his career. He had scattered the gospel seed far and near, and a golden harvest was springing up. Among the first fruits of his labours were the family of Conal Dearg. The sisters of St. Enda, named respectively Fanchea, Lochinia, Carecha and Darenia, had early embraced Christianity, and three of them are said to have received the veil from the hands of St. Patrick. The fourth became the wife of Aengus, King of Munster.

If Enda received baptism with his sisters, it is evident that the teachings of the Gospel made little or no impression on his heart. Although his naturally chivalrous disposition preserved him from the grosser vices of paganism, still the constantly recurring rivalries and barbarous warfare of the age found in him an ardent participator. On one occasion while returning from a victorious battle-field at the head of his clan, his sister Fanchea went forth to meet him, and addressed him as follows:—

“O wretched man, why do you provoke the Lord to anger? And why do you plunge your soul into the depths of sin by your various crimes?”

Her exhortations were however unavailing. The time of grace had not yet arrived. In the meantime the prayers of the holy sisters on behalf of their erring brother were unceasing. They besieged heaven with their sighs and tears. So efficacious were their petitions in the sight of God, that He interposed a miracle to effect their brother's conversion.

Fanchea had founded a nunnery at Ross-Oerther, a charming spot on the banks of Lough Erne. Among the members of her community was a young maiden, the daughter of one of the reigning chieftains of Ulster, receiving her education. She was a princess of extraordinary beauty. Enda became enamoured of her, and demanded the lady in

marriage. Fanchea communicated his designs to her royal pupil, adding :—

“Make now thy choice. Whether wilt thou have Him whom I love or an earthly bridegroom?”

The reply was :—

“I, also, love Him whom thou lovest.”

The death of this princess was miraculous and the occasion of Enda's conversion.

Fanchea, having conducted her into a chamber, placed her on a bed, where, without any previous illness, she calmly expired. She went to the nuptials of the Heavenly Spouse whom her young heart loved.

After her death Fanchea covered the face of the deceased princess with a veil, and then going to Enda, she asked him to come and see her whom he loved. When they entered the chamber of death, Fanchea removed the veil and begged him to gaze upon the face of his beloved. Struck with horror he exclaimed :—

“Alas ! she is no longer beautiful but ghastly pale.”

“And so shalt thou be,” was the sister's prompt reply. Seeing her opportunity she spoke to him so feelingly of the shortness of life and the length of eternity, of the joys of heaven and the pains of hell, that his heart was touched, and he shed tears. He wept and believed. His conversion was as complete as it was instantaneous. Like Paul of Tarsus, he was in a moment changed into a fervent disciple of Him who was “meek and humble of heart.” His Celtic nature knew no half measures. He hastened to put his life in harmony with his convictions. He resolved to repair the past by devoting himself altogether to God. Despite the threats of his friends, he resigned his chieftaincy and assumed the habit of a monk, “and what the tonsure signified he fulfilled by his actions.” From a monk to a priest was a natural transition. We, therefore, find Enda preparing to perfect his sacrifice by a most rigorous preparation for the reception of Holy Orders. Having built a monastery in his native territory of Oriel, he directed his steps to Rossina in Wales, where he placed himself under the tutelage of St. Manchan, one of those heroic Irish Missionaries who went

forth from their native land to carry the blessings of religion and civilisation to the Britons, then little better than painted savages. How long he remained under the direction of his sainted fellow-countryman is not known, but we find him in the course of time, accompanied, it is said, by two compatriots and disciples named Pupeus and Heleus, setting out for Rome, then as now the centre of Christianity. After a long and rigorous preparation he was promoted to Holy Orders. Such good use had he made of his time and opportunities in the "Holy City," that he became a model of every virtue. Filled with zeal, he gathered round him a number of disciples whom he placed in the Monastery of Latinum, a place whose etymology is doubtful, and whose history has unfortunately perished with its ruins.

So great was the reputation for sanctity and learning acquired by Enda and his two fellow-countrymen, that on the death of the reigning Pope, it is said, the Roman clergy and people offered the tiara to one of the holy exiles. Their humility could only see danger in so great a dignity, and the proffered honour was persistently declined. St. Hilarius was accordingly selected to fill the vacant throne.

The fame of her brother's holy life reached St. Fanchea in distant Erin, and it filled her heart with joy. She resolved to travel to Rome to visit Enda, and exhort him to return to his native land. Guided, we are told, by angels, she performed the difficult voyage in safety. The interview between the brother and sister was characteristic of the extraordinary spirit of mortification which was a distinguishing virtue of St. Enda. Having caused a tent to be erected in the grounds of the monastery, there concealed from her view, he allowed Fanchea to explain the object of her visit. There was no unnecessary waste of time or sentiment between them.

Fanchea spoke first, and said :—

"Since God has gifted you with talents, you ought to exercise them for the benefit of the people of your native land."

Enda's reply was equally prompt and definite :

"When a year shall have elapsed after your return to Ireland," he said, "I hope God will permit me to follow you."

Fanchea added :—

“When you come to Ireland seek out a certain island called Arran, which is situated off the western coast.”

The interview ended, she received her brother's benediction, and set out for Ireland, where she arrived in safety.

Enda was not unmindful of his promise. In due time we find him landing at Drogheda, accompanied by a numerous retinue of disciples. Having indulged his passion for building to the extent of erecting several churches on both banks of the Boyne, he travelled southwards to visit his brother-in-law, Aengus, King of Munster. It may be easily conjectured that the object of his visit was not a mere ceremonial one. Insignificant in itself its issue was fraught with one of the most glorious chapters in the history of Ireland.

He came to demand the Island of Arran, then included in the province of Munster, as a place of residence for himself and his monks. Aengus at first refused the request of his saintly relative, but the grounds of his refusal while being altogether different from what might be at first anticipated, give us a glimpse of the character of a prince who is one of the noblest figures in early Irish history.

The Tripartite Life tells us that when St. Patrick visited Munster, Aengus, son of Nadfraech, and his people, went out to meet and welcome him. He was conducted with every mark of respect to the Rock of Cashel, where the king, his children, and many of the men of Munster received Baptism. The same authority relates an incident which is worthy of record, as characteristic of the Prince's chivalrous and self-sacrificing disposition. While St. Patrick was administering the sacrament of Baptism to the royal neophyte, he unconsciously transfixing his foot with the point of the episcopal crozier, which ended in a sharp spike. Considering it part of the ceremony, the brave king bore the pain without a murmur, until the saint seeing the streams of blood which flowed from the wound, asked in astonishment :—

“Why was it that you did not tell me?” “Because,” was the simple reply, “I thought it was the rule of faith.”

According to the best authorities, Aengus commenced to

reign about the year 453. After ruling his province with wisdom and ability for the space of thirty-six years, he was killed in the battle of Cill Omadh, A.D. 489. Naturally of a generous and virtuous disposition, after his conversion to Christianity, these qualities were elevated by the most child-like faith, and a practical zeal for the interests of religion. He was espoused to St. Enda's youngest sister. In early life, we are told, that, attracted by the great beauty of Fanchea, he sought her in marriage. The latter, however, having resolved to consecrate her virginity to God, with great tact directed her suitor's attention to her younger sister, Darenia, who afterwards became his wife, and the mother of a numerous and saintly family.

To the end of his life Aengus continued to be the devoted friend of St. Patrick and the generous benefactor of the Christian religion. Among other things, he settled a fixed revenue on the clergy, founded numerous churches and monasteries, and encouraged his own children, male and female, to embrace the religious life.

Such being his character, it is not surprising that he refused to grant Enda's request. St. Patrick had counselled him not to offer any lands to God except such as were fertile and easy of access. Arran was almost unknown to him, and such accounts of it as he had received represented the island as little better than a barren rock, surrounded by a tempestuous ocean. The importunities of St. Enda, seconded by the entreaties of St. Albeus, Bishop of Cashel, however, prevailed. Arran was granted "to God and St. Enda," and the latter having imparted his blessing to his royal relative, set out for his destination.

Having arrived at Medraighe, now Marree, a peninsula near Ardfry, he met some fishermen plying their avocation. He asked a few fishes for himself and his companions. They churlishly replied:—

"The fish have come to us from the sea around Arran. We give thee leave to catch and keep those you may find there. We shall keep our own."

One boy, however, said:—

"I have but one fish and I will give it to thee."

This boy, we are told, was born near the mouth of the river, where the waters of the Orbsen, now the Corrib, flow into the sea. He was a Claddagh fisherman. When the saint arrived at that portion of the harbour, he blessed it, and while declaring that the waters of the opposite coast would be cursed with perpetual barrenness, he prayed that this side as a reward for the young Claddagh man's hospitality might ever abound in fish. The prediction was verified.

On a beautiful summer's morning, in the year 480, St. Enda and his little colony set sail for Arranmore. As the flotilla of *currochs*, rounded *Cean Borna*, and the glorious panorama of mountains, cliffs and ocean, which meets the traveller's gaze, burst upon their view, great must have been their joy. But we can fancy their ecstasies of delight when as they approached nearer, the object of their destination covered with masses of clouds rose up before them as if just emerging from the ocean. This was their land of promise. As Moses gazed from the Mount of Nebo, so these holymen looked long and wistfully on the spot which they had chosen for their home and the place of their resurrection.

Nearer and nearer the little fleet approaches, and now, instead of the fairyland conjured up by their imagination, they gaze upon three islands so bleak and desolate that they present the appearance of extinct volcanoes. Are the pilgrims dismayed? On the contrary the very bleakness of the place is to them its highest recommendation. They had found what they sought for, a veritable *eremum in oceano*. They sought not earthly comfort or earthly pleasure. All their hopes of peace and happiness lay beyond the grave. They sought to find a refuge from the turmoil of the world, and here they found that refuge. The very sea served as a veil to hide from mortal eyes their angelical virtues. No sound would mar the harmony of their songs of praise, but the waves gently murmuring along the pebbly strand, or the roar of the billows proclaiming the majesty of the Creator.

It is no wonder, then, that the pilgrims rejoiced, and gave voice to their gladness in a loud "Te Deum," which echoed through the resounding cliffs, and proclaimed that the

chain of idolatry which had hitherto bound that barren land was now forever broken, and that "the verdure of the reed and the bulrush should flourish in the dens where dragons dwelt before."

Arran was at the time of St. Enda's arrival inhabited by pagans, descendants of the Firbolgs, or *refugees*, from the neighbouring territory of Corcomroe. We can fancy these looking out with wondering eyes from their huge embattlements on this strange invasion of their island home. What were the intruders who came clad in the garb of peace, and with a mysterious battle cry to usurp their territory? Were they the magic working Tuatha de Dananns still upon their track, or were they inhabitants of the spirit world robed in mortal apparel? Filled with dread and superstitious forebodings they fled to their *currochs*, and never rested upon their oars until they arrived, panic-stricken, on the adjoining coasts of Clare and Connemara.

Left in the undisputed possession of this coveted land, St. Enda and his companions commenced those marvels of penance, prayer, and contemplation which made the world wonder, and, by the universal voice of history, gained for the place of their abode the immortal title of "Arran of the Saints."

WILLIAM GANLY.

THE CONTROVERSY ON UNIVERSALS.

THE Schoolmen of the Middle Ages have been frequently assailed for wasting time in the discussion of frivolous questions. The prejudice of some and the malice of others have joined in misrepresenting both them and their teaching. "Ignorance," we are told, "was the smallest defect of the writers of these dark ages;"¹ while the system of philosophy taught by them is represented as nothing better than a tissue

¹ Hallam; "Middle Ages," vol. iii., p. 291.

of "repulsive technical barbarisms."¹ Men like Hallam, who ingenuously confesses that the works of the Schoolmen are known to him only by repute,² nevertheless sit in judgment on them and on their authors, and, as was to be expected, "give us," to use Hallam's own words when speaking of the *best guide* to a knowledge of Scholastic Philosophy whom he could find, "rather a verbose declamation against their philosophy than a clear view of its character."³ But that neither the Schoolmen nor their philosophical teachings deserve the censure so freely bestowed on them by such writers, has been frequently and satisfactorily shown by those, who, having laid aside prejudice, and having brought the requisite abilities to the task, have examined for themselves the works so much abused, and so little known. The words of the profound Leibnitz, though well known, will still bear to be quoted. "Nec vereor dicere," he says,⁴ "Scholasticos vetustiores nonnullis hodiernis et acumine, et soliditate et ab inutilibus quaestionibus circumspectiore abstinencia longe praestare."

The controversy mentioned at the head of this paper has been constantly urged by writers entirely ignorant of its real issues as a clear proof of the folly and unprofitableness of mediaeval speculation. It is represented as a mere war of words, having its origin with the disputatious monks of the Middle Ages, fiercely fought by them in their barbarous jargon, but long since brought to a close by the enlightened philosophy to which the so-called Reformation gave the first great impetus.

Nothing could be more false than this view of the Controversy on Universals. It cannot, indeed, be denied that very extreme, and as we now view them, very absurd opinions were held by some of the disputants. Neither can it be denied that these opinions were sometimes defended with greater warmth, and with perhaps less regard for philosophical

¹ Hallam, "Middle Ages," p. 428.

² p. 427.

³ Ibid, p. 427, note g. Here Hallam makes this astonishing admission; "I have found no better guide than Brucker. But he confesses himself not to have read the original writings of the Scholastics." *Caecus autem si caeco ducatum praestet ambo in foveam cadunt!*

⁴ De Stylo Phil. Nizolii, n. 27.

gravity than we could wish. But it is only sheer unacquaintance with the subject that induces anyone to say that the Controversy on Universals is a useless logomachy, or that it has never been waged outside the period, which modern writers love to call the Dark Ages. Of this controversy a learned historian thus writes:—"The principles in question in this controversy, instead of involving, as has been asserted, no more than a mere quibble about words, lie at the very foundation of human science, inasmuch as on its issue depends the possibility or impossibility of any demonstration whatever within the scope of knowledge accessible to man."¹ Another equally eminent writer, whose testimony cannot be open to a suspicion of partiality towards the Scholastics, says:—"The controversy between the Nominalists and Realists, treated by some modern writers as an example of barbarous wrangling, was in truth an anticipation of that modern dispute, which still divides metaphysicians."²

The question at issue in this memorable controversy—"more memorable," says Sir William Hamilton "perhaps than any other in the history of philosophy"—is this:—Are Universals or general terms mere names without any corresponding objects whether ideal or real, or do they denote not only subjective concepts, but also objective realities outside and independent of the human mind?

What is meant by general terms? "A general name," writes Mill, "is familiarly defined, a name which is capable of being truly affirmed, in the same sense, of an indefinite number of things."⁴ Thus the term *animal* can be truly affirmed of man, horse, ox, elephant, lion, &c.; the term *man* of individuals, black and white, tall and short, male and female, of Irishmen, Dutchmen, and Africans. The term colour is equally applicable to white, red, yellow, brown, blue, and scarlet. Now when we use a general term, do we (a) designate something which has a real existence outside of our own mind, or (b) a mere creation of the mind, or (c) only a sound,

¹ Alzog, "Church History," sect. 253.

² Sir J. Mackintosh, "Miscell. Works," vol. i., p. 47.

³ "Lectures on Metaphysics," lect. 35.

⁴ "System of Logic," Book i., chap. 2, sect. 3.

a *flatus vocis*, which neither in the mind, nor outside it, has any corresponding object? When we speak of *man* without referring to any particular individual, do we speak of a being really existing, yet neither white nor black, neither tall nor short, neither an Irishman nor an Englishman, but nevertheless representing men of all possible sizes, shapes, colours and nationalities? Can we even form a notion of such a being, or is the word *man*, when uttered by a rational creature, as soulless as when uttered by a parrot?

On these and similar questions the Controversy on Universals hinges. Neither are these frivolous and unmeaning questions as might at first seem. They are "so far from frivolous," says a writer already quoted, "that they deeply concern both the nature of reasoning and the structure of language."¹ For in the first place nearly all the names or *nouns* of language, except the proper names of individuals, are general terms;² and in the next place the general or universal constitutes the object of all science.³ If, then, general terms are mere names, our knowledge is concerned not about things but about words, about mere sounds of the voice, and our speech is a mere agglomeration of such sounds incapable alike of expressing any idea of our own, or of exciting any idea in the minds of those to whom we speak. A similar difficulty arises if it be contended that general terms represent merely mental concepts; while if it be admitted that they represent real entities existing outside the mind, we are told that it must be further admitted either that a thing can be, at the same time, individual and universal, one and many, or that it can exist apart without individuality, that it can have subsistence and be communicable to many, in a word that two contraries can at the same time exist.

It cannot be matter of surprise, then, that widely different views were held regarding the manner in which Universals exist. Some philosophers held—and their opinion at first seems the simplest and most natural—that Universals are mere words, neither more nor less. They were called

¹ Sir J. Mackintosh, *loc. cit.*

² Hill, "Logic," p. 116.

³ Tongiorgi, vol. i., n. 318. *Scientia omnis de universalibus tantum est, non de singularibus.*

Nominalists, and their teaching Nominalism, or *sententia vocum*. Others took the directly opposite view, and contended that Universals have a real existence outside the mind. These were the Realists. The Conceptualists held a modified form of Nominalism, admitting that Universals exhibit mental concepts, and are therefore something higher than they were regarded by the extreme Nominalists, but denying, on the other hand, that these concepts were referable to any extra-mental object. The Realists were also split into two parties. One party taught that Universals exist apart from and entirely independent of individuals. This opinion was in the Middle Ages expressed by the formula *Universalia ante rem*. The other party contented itself with holding that Universals exist in individuals. Their opinion was embodied in the phrase *Universalia in re*. The formula by which the Nominalistic theory was expressed was *Universalia post rem*.

These different opinions can be traced back to the philosophical schools of Greece, and to the renowned philosophers who have rendered these schools so illustrious. Plato is credited with the doctrine of extreme Realism, Aristotle with that of moderate Realism; while to Zeno and the Stoic School is attributed the introduction into philosophy of the doctrine of Nominalism.

Plato's connection with Realism, however, has never been clearly and satisfactorily established. If we accept the explanation of his theory of *ideas* given by Aristotle, we must at once admit that he was an extreme Realist. According to Aristotle, Plato taught that there exist and from all eternity have existed *ideas* which are the archetypal essences of all created things. These *ideas* or essences are at once the object of the concept, and the elements of scientific research. They are not essences conceived as immanent or existing in the individual, but rather essences conceived to be immutable, perfect, eternal and subsisting independent of the inferior realities, which latter exist only inasmuch as they partake of the existence of the corresponding Universals.¹ Thus is Plato's system of universal ideas explained by Aristotle, and

¹ Ueberweg, "Hist of Phil.," Engl. Trans., vol. i., sect. 41.

from this explanation of it, was derived the extreme Realism of the Middle Ages, which, as taught by Scotus Erigena led straight to Pantheism, and which, in more recent times formed the foundation of the Pantheism of Spinoza.¹

But this explanation of the teaching of Plato is not accepted by all. By many, indeed, it is rejected as being wholly unworthy of Plato, and one admirer of the great philosopher declares, that he would find it easier to believe that Plato never existed, than that he could have propounded a theory so manifestly absurd.² By some of these writers Aristotle is blamed with wilfully misrepresenting³ the opinions of his master, while others say⁴ that the explanation he gives was not intended by him to represent the actual teaching of Plato, but only the interpretation of this teaching given by some of Plato's disciples.

These writers, following St. Augustine, declare that Plato meant nothing more by *ideas* than the resemblances pre-existing in the mind of God of the things He was about to call into existence. These ideas were, it is true, eternal and immutable, but no more formed the essence of created things, no more entered into their constitution than the plan of a building in the mind of the architect forms the essence, or enters into the material structure of the building when completed.

Aristotle is, as has been said, regarded as a moderate Realist. But he has not always, nor by all writers been so regarded. "Different philosophers," says Sir Wm. Hamilton, "have maintained that Aristotle was a Realist, a Conceptualist, and a Nominalist, in the strictest sense."⁵ According to the interpretation of his teaching, which prevailed in the Middle Ages, and which is now generally accepted, he taught that the universal is immanent in the individual, and exists

¹ Migne, "Encyclo. Théolog.," vol. xlix., art. *Réalisme*.

² Hujus igitur opinionis absurditas est adeo manifesta ut facilius crediderim nunquam extitisse Platonem, quam ejusmodi somniis fuisse deceptum. Tongiorgi, vol. i., n. 533.

³ Zaghara, "Summa Phil.," vol. i., p. 321.

⁴ Tongiorgi, *loc. cit.*

⁵ Edition of Reid's works, p. 405.

only by reason of this immanence. He is a Realist, therefore, inasmuch as he admits the existence of Universals outside and independent of the mind, but he rejects that extreme form of Realism which would give Universals subsistence distinct from individuals. In the philosophy of Aristotle everything is composed of matter and form. The matter is the same in all, the form alone is different, nor are there as many forms as individuals, but only as many as there are species. All men, for example, have the same form—namely, humanity. These forms are the Universals; they exist in individuals, and cannot have a real existence outside individuals.¹

Zeno rejected both the transcendental ideas of Plato and the immanent forms of Aristotle, and contended that Universals are mere mental creations. The individual alone exists according to Zeno. It alone forms the object of cognition, and our senses are the only mediums to a knowledge of it. If, then, we use universal terms, we do so only because custom has sanctioned them, not because they represent anything existing objectively, or of which even a distinct subjective concept can be formed. Humanity, for instance, is neither a real objective entity, nor has it even a corresponding mental representation, but is simply and solely a word, by which we express the relation of resemblance, which we find to exist among individual men.

The coming of Christianity found philosophers still divided on this question. Their opinions were as far apart as ever, and it seemed impossible to find any means of uniting them, or of coming at the true solution. The knowledge of Revelation compelled those philosophers who accepted it to reject the theory of *ideas* ascribed to Plato. Still Plato's teaching had a great charm even for Christian philosophers. Indeed it is sometimes, though as a rule falsely, asserted that their regard for it carried them too far in their endeavours to harmonise it with the teachings of Christianity.² At any rate they accepted as the true interpretation of Plato's doctrine of *ideas*, that most in agreement with Revelation.

¹ Laromiguière. "Leçons de Philos." Leçon xii.

² Alzog. "Church Hist.," sect. 81.

But manifestly no advance was made by this step towards a solution of the vexed question how Universals exist. For Plato's teaching, so interpreted, regards not things as they exist, but only as they are in the mind of God. The question among philosophers, however, regarded actually existing things, and how, and where the *genera* and *species* to which existing things belong, are placed in the universe of created beings.¹

The history of the controversy on Universals—or, rather, of the opinions of philosophers on that question, for controversy it could hardly then be called—during the first ten centuries of the Christian era can be very briefly told. Yet this period is interesting to us for two reasons. First, because during it Scotus Erigena gave to Realism its most extreme development, resulting, as has been said, in pure Pantheism. And, secondly, because it was during this period also that the foundations of the controversy which so disturbed the mediaeval schools, and which is still keenly waged, were laid.

Porphyry, a Neo-Platonist, who flourished during the latter half of the third century, wrote an *Isagoge*, or introduction to the work of Aristotle on Categories. In it he remarks, that in order to understand the doctrine of Aristotle it is necessary to know something about genus, species, differences, etc. These subjects, he says, he will lightly touch upon, but will abstain from all difficult questions concerning them. Among the questions thus declined, he places that about the existence of Universals.² This passage is regarded as the historical occasion of the mediaeval controversy.³ Boëthius, in his commentary on this work of Porphyry, if he does not satisfactorily solve the questions mentioned by the latter, at least gives us a concise summary of the teaching of

¹ Il s'agissait de rendre raison de l'intelligence de l'homme et Platon nous parle de l'intelligence divine. (Laromiguière, *loc. cit.*)

² Mox de generibus et speciebus illud quidem sive subsistant sive in solis nudis intellectibus posita sint sive subsistentia corporalia sint an incorporalia et utrum separata a sensibilibus an in sensibilibus posita et circa haec consistentia dicere recusabo, altissimum enim negotium est et majoris egens inquisitionis.—Porphyry's *Isagoge*, apud Ueberweg, *loc. cit.*

³ Ueberweg, *loc. cit.*

Plato and Aristotle regarding them. "Plato," he says, "genera et species cæteraque non modo intelligi universalia verum etiam esse atque *praeter corpora* subsistere putat. Aristoteles vero intelligi quidem incorporalia atque universalia sed subsistere *in sensibilibus* putat."¹ Boëthius himself inclines to Aristotle's opinion, and it may be said with substantial accuracy that this opinion prevailed until towards the end of the eleventh century.²

Scotus Erigena, however, must be excepted. The Platonic doctrine of *ideas*, as explained by Aristotle, was the foundation of his speculations. This doctrine he followed to its ultimate conclusions, teaching that God alone is the one being possessing real existence in whom—not in the sense of St. Paul's words—(*Acts*, 17, 28)—but in a strictly material sense—all things exist, from whom all things proceed by emanation, and into whose immensity all things shall return, when, in his own words, "*omnia quieta erunt et unum individuum atque immutabile manebunt.*"³ The Divine Substance according to Erigena, is the one true and perfect Universal, the first emanation from which is the *summun genus* of creatures. From this first emanation a second proceeds which constitutes the next genus or subaltern species in a descending scale, and so on to individuals. Individuals, therefore, are immanent in the Universal, and the Universal exists in the individual, as in its natural parts.

We have now arrived at that period in the history of the question concerning Universals, when the controversy really broke out. Another paper will be necessary to give even an outline of that controversy and its issues.

D. O'LOAN.

¹ Apud Ueberweg, *loc. cit.*

² Brucker, "Hist. Phil.," vol. iii., p. 906. Laromiguière, *loc. cit.* Ueberweg, *loc. cit.*

³ De Divisione Naturæ, apud Ueberweg.

VACATION IN 1886.—II.

WE can but briefly glance at what has been to us a pleasant study, and must refer those of our readers who wish to carry out for themselves a complete investigation of the interesting narrative of the foundation and early history of Fountains Abbey, to our two sources of information, which are the fifth volume of Dugdale's *Monasticon Anglicanum*, and the volume (*S. Bernardi Epistolæ*) which is to be found in the complete works of S. Bernard. As for the letters, every scholar knows how interesting they are, in that they bring before us the great Saint, the last of the Fathers of the Church, as no other pen could delineate him. His profound knowledge of the Holy Scriptures, which came of prayerful meditation, his courteous style, his consummate prudence and his fervent zeal, give life to these letters and excite an interest even in matters long past and gone, which becomes so much greater when they bear upon a matter in which we take a present interest; and tell us how he brought about the foundation of the Cistercian house of Fountains. And then the old chronicle, taken down from the aged lips of one who played his part in that great work, and had his share in the anxieties and bodily sufferings which were to eventuate in so noble a result, this quaint old record has a character of its own and a power of narration which attract us, even without St. Bernard's warranty.

St. Bernard founded his first Cistercian house in England at Waverley in Surrey in 1128 by transplanting thither twelve monks from the Abbey of Aumone in Normandy; and about the same time Furness in Lancashire was established. It was in 1131 that the first house in Yorkshire was constituted and under these peculiar circumstances.

A great warrior, great in heart as in stature, Sir Walter D'Espee lost his only son by an accident. The distressed parents being left childless chose God as heir to their estates: and while the localities and rules of the three Abbeys they determined to found were yet under consideration, it

happened, by God's good providence, that some Cistercians arrived at York with a letter from St. Bernard, begging the King's protection and aid that they may settle in Yorkshire. So Sir Walter assigned to them what grew into the famous Abbey of Rievaulx, and there they made for themselves a home and a religious reputation which spread far and wide.

Now the monks of St. Mary's, York, were moved by what they heard of the lives of the new Order at Rievaulx, and some were stirred up to desire this more spiritual life. The Old Chronicler speaks gently of the rule at St. Mary's but still looks at it from a Cistercian point of view. They lived, he says "*pro more et consuetudine traditionum paternarum, honestè quidem, sub regula et Abbate, sed longè tamen citra præceptum regulæ, citra votum professionis suæ, longè citra perfectionem Cisterciensis disciplinæ. Horum, autem nonnulli cœpit eos teporis suæ tædere, erubescere, imperfectionem dammare, delicias et consuetas fastidire. Pudet consedissee tandiu in finibus Moab et trans Jordanem accepisse hæreditatem.*"

So those who yearned after the higher life and the discipline which nourished it, laid their heads together and looked around for a leader who could take the bold route across the spiritual Jordan. Of course they had no hope of their Abbot Gaufridus, his age was against it for he was "*vir grandævus et senio pæne confectus,*" and indeed the news overwhelmed him when it afterwards came to his ears: but Richard the Prior proved to be on their side, and with the sub-prior joined the courageous band. But steps like these cannot be taken without authority, and so they apply to Turstin the Archbishop of York who comes to sanction the change, and to lead off the aspirants after a higher rule. Then the rough manners of the times show themselves. The Abbot closes his gates, refuses to recognize the higher authority, and so the Archbishop exercises his spiritual power and puts him and his church under an interdict saying, "*Vos debitam nobis hodie subtrahitis, nos vere authore Deo quo a nobis habetis subtrahentes, ecclesiam hanc interdicimus, et monachos in ea commorantes auctoritate qua fungimus a sacris suspendimus:*" and with this sentence the

Archbishop departs. He takes with him the twelve monks, and maintains them until he can find a fitting place where they can carry out their holy resolution. This he does when in 1131 he comes to his manor at Ripon and gives them the little valley of the Skell, which is now Studley, out of which Fountains Abbey is to grow. But how different was the spot in those days from what generations of Cistercians have made it, and what modern refinement has crowned with such grace and beauty. The old chronicler seems to shudder at what it was originally when he tells us of the Archbishop's gift. "*Assignat locum a cunctis retro seculis non habitatum, spinis consitum, et inter convexa montium et scopulos hinc inde prominentes, ferarum latebris quam humanis usibus magis accommodatum.*" There was no food for them but the leaves of the trees which they seasoned with salt. They elect Richard the Prior of St. Mary's as first Abbot of their houseless band; "*monachos habet sed mansionem non habet.*" They sleep under the elms and yews—some of which remain to this day—and cut down wood to build an oratory, to be dedicated of course like all Cistercian churches to Our Lady, the winter comes and "*hieme acta sub pellibus;*" and while they are struggling for bare life they relieve a poor wanderer, whereupon a cartload of food providentially arrives from the Lord of Knaresborough, and their sore-tried charity is rewarded. But as yet they have not the Cistercian rule, so they write to St. Bernard to be admitted into the order, and their good friend Archbishop Turstin seconds their appeal with a full statement of their case. However, St. Bernard had another correspondent with whom it was more difficult to deal and one who tried severely his patience and diplomatic skill. The Abbot of St. Mary's at York had his complaints to make, and seems to have charged St. Bernard with encouraging, if not with originating the movement which had robbed his abbey of its best members.

To the former the Saint's letters breathe the spirit of love and admiration. That (*Epistola*, xciv.) to Archbishop Turstin is exquisite in its refined laudation. He had heard before of his works of corporal mercy towards the poor, and he had rejoiced, but now the good deeds are of a higher order

for the souls of the spiritually oppressed. In similar tone is the other (Epist. xvi.)¹ to the Abbot and his monks, who name their convent Fountains, doubtless in honor of St. Bernard's birthplace, the castle of Fontaines near Dijon in Burgundy.

His two letters to the Abbot of St. Mary's are necessarily of a different character. He has to soothe his wounded feelings, and at the same time to show he believes the work was right, being of God rather than of man. (Epist. xciv.)

He has been asked for advice; what advice can he give without displeasing the Abbot, or without withholding from him what he really believes?

"Let us consult a more worthy authority the great St. Gregory himself, and accept his judgment:" which of course condemns the Abbot and justifies the Monks. Subsequently another letter comes from the Abbot, for one at least of the seceders returned, and now St. Bernard is asked if such a course is not justifiable, seeing that the life at St. Mary's is at least religious: this (Epist. ccxiii.) is very striking, and like all the rest well worth studying. He points out fully and clearly how the going back even to what is good in itself is a falling off; he will not judge another, but he knows how herein he would judge himself, and says grandly "*De se*

¹ Ad Ricardum Fontanensem abbatem et socios ejus. Quanta audivimus et cognovimus ea, et fratres nostri uterque Gaufridus amuntiaverunt nobis, quemadmodum noviter recaluistis igne Dei; convaluistis de infirmitate, refluistis in novitate sancta. Digitus Dei est iste, subtiliter operans, suaviter renovans, salubriter mutans, non quidem de malis bonos, sed de bonis faciens meliores. Quis dabit mihi ut transeam, et videam visionem hanc magnam! Nec enim minus mira minusve jucunda ista promotio est, quam illa mutatio: nisi quod *MULTO FACILIUS* reperias multos seculares converti ad bonum, quam unum quempiam de religiosis transire ad melius. *RARISSIMA* avis in terris est, qui de gradu, quem forte in religione semel attigerit, vel parum ascendat. Vestrum proinde, dilectissimi, tam insigne, quam salubre factum non solum nos, qui servi vestre sanctitatis esse precupimus, sed et universam merito lætificat civitatem Dei: quippe quo rarius, eo et clarius. Erat autem et necessarium ad cautelam, proximam defectui mediocritatem transcendere, et declinare teporem, qui Deo vomitum provocat; sed et sic oportebat propter conscientiam. *PROFESSIS* siquidem *SANCTAM REGULAM*, an citra ejus puritatem sistere gradum tutum sit, ipsi sensistis. Dolens doleo, quod urgente diei malitia, et nuntio festinante, plenum affectum exili cogor designare stylo, et brevi chartula latam comprehendere caritatem. Si quid deest, frater Gaufridus viva voce supplebit.

quippe quod sibi bonum est, quisquis sentiat; ego de me dicam, quod sentio. *Ego Bernardus*, si de bonis ad meliora, vel de periculosis ad securiora voto et opere libere pertransissem, et illicita voluntate ad ea quae mutavi, denuo recurrere præsumpsissem; non solum Apostata, verum etiam regno Dei non idoneus fieri pertimescerem."

So the poor Abbot of St. Mary's got no consolation nor encouragement from the Saint of Clairvaux; and in less than five years had temporal losses to add to these spiritual ones, for the terrible fire which played such havoc with the city and Cathedral, laid the Church of St. Mary's in ruins, out of which it did not rise for very many years after poor old Abbot Gaufridus had gone to his rest.

But we must return to the poor half-starved monks at Fountains. Their condition continues so bad that their Abbot goes to St. Bernard, and tells him the state of their affairs. St. Bernard at once offers to receive them until better times. But God so moves the hearts of men, that these better times come quickly. First we hear of Hugh the Dean of the Cathedral of York, who dying leaves the poor Cistercians his books and possessions, and these are both great for the times. We may be sure that the heart of the Abbot is cheered, when such good news greets him on his return from Clairvaux. Next comes Serlo, a rich Canon of York, weak and dying, but rich in gold and silver; and with him comes a brother Canon, Tosti "*cum omni substantia.*" They come full-handed, and, let us hope, with hearts as rich in holy resolutions. Tosti is a gain in more senses than one, for the Chronicler tells us he is "*homo jucundus et sociabilis in conversatione,*" a kind of holy Canon Sydney Smith we may suppose, but with the Cistercian character upon him. So now prosperity attends the new home, but it is long ere the wealth which in coming ages excites the cupidity of king and nobles is to be found in Fountains. Yet so great is the change from this recent condition of absolute want, that the chronicler rejoices in that "*Deus benedixit, multiplicans fratres, adjiciens possessiones, dilatans vineam, et dans ei pluvias benedictionis.*" And then he introduces himself, for now he comes among them, among the good things given them. "*Per idem tempus*

Ego, Serlo, valedicens sæculo, Fontes me contuli sanctæ religionis habiturum suscepturus."

And now the house is strong enough to send out branches. With Richard's death Serlo's narration comes to an end.

But troubles were in store for this young foundation from an unexpected quarter: and thus it came about.

St. Bernard had moved the heart of a certain Henry of Murdach (Epist. cvi.) "a man of great learning and a zealous preacher," (as Alban Butler says), to embrace the religious life. Then he made him Abbot of Vaublery, and subsequently sent him to England to be the third Abbot of Fountains. Soon afterwards Archbishop Turstin resigned his See, and retired to Pontefract to end his days in the Cluniac house there. The Chapter of York met and by a majority of votes elected St. William, nephew of King Stephen; another uncle the Bishop of Winchester consecrated him. Objections were raised as to the canonicity of the election by the Archdeacon of York which St. Bernard seconded, the Abbot of Fountains was put forward, and the case sent to Rome. St. Bernard writes a very important letter to the Abbot (Epist. cccxxi.)¹ urging him to hasten to King Stephen, to tell him how they have been deceived, to obtain from him most efficacious letters to the Pope, that he may confirm what his faithful children have done, "*quia et sibi gratissimum et Ecclesie necessarium est.*" The Pope is the second Bernard of Clairvaux, Eugenius III. and when the King urges and St. Bernard, his old superior, advises we need not wonder that St. William is deprived and Henry Murdach reigns at York in his stead. St. William

¹ Oportet ut ex instanti festinetis ad dominum Regem, et totam confusionem nostram, et quomodo proditi sumus, ei tanquam benigno domino nostro plenissime indicetis. Et quia gaudemus ex parte, quod negotium ejus in causa nobis fuit hujus anxietatis, pro eo siquidem quod Domino Senonensi consulimus; de die statuenda, quod nobis bene ante promiserat, ita confudit, sic in nos vindicans Regis amorem. Petite et ab eo litteras efficacissimas super hoc negotio, ut dominus Papa omnimodis confirmet, quod fecerunt filii obedientes, duo scilicet Episcopi: quia et sibi gratissimum, et Ecclesie necessarium est. Nec noceat quod ita tertius se subtraxit, inobediens mandato apostolico, et regaliū contemptor monitorum: qui si ad eum venerit, sentiat nostram injuriam et singularem injuriam, Regi non placere. Salutate carissimum nostrum Cancellarium, et rogate, ut tales super hoc litteras scribat, quæ et suum probent et regium erga nos redolere inveniantur affectum, sicut præsumimus de utroque.

retires readily enough, we may be sure, to the solitude and silence that he loves; and so the Abbey loses its Abbot, and not only so but suffers material loss; for some fiery soldiers, calling themselves partizans of St. William and, as such, enemies of Henry, search the Abbey and not finding him there burn down the house and half the Chapel. Time works its revenge in the Diocese of York; for when Henry dies, by which time Pope and King and St. Bernard himself have also passed away, St. William is not allowed to rest in the quiet retirement of his choice, but is urged to go to Rome where Anastatius IV. is now Pope: and the outcome of it all is that he returns wearing the Pallium. His old enemies, the Dean and the Archdeacon of York, meet him on the road and forbid him to enter the city or diocese, but the Norman Prince calmly pursued his journey and was received in York with such demonstrations of affection, that the vast multitude broke down the bridge over the Ouse in their tumultuous gathering, and the Saint had to work a miracle to save the numbers who fell into the river. However his reign was short, for within a few weeks he sickened and died of a fever. His friends said he had been poisoned at Mass, but there seems to be no foundation for this horrible suggestion. These were troublous days when Saxons and Normans were as yet unreconciled. The time came when they wisely laid aside their jealousies and became one English nation. The poor monks who suffered were left to rebuild their ruined home, and this time in grander architecture, and indeed after half a century's delay, completed it in forty years. The subsequent history need not detain us. Times prospered, estate after estate was bequeathed by pious souls, but in the end the usual record comes, and we read that the Abbey "was surrendered by deed enrolled 26 November, 1539 by Marmaduke Bradley the thirty third Abbot." Then the grand old Abbey was left to decay; for it does not appear that any violent hands were laid upon it: no possessor built a mansion upon the site, so the trees, the original inhabitants, grew up again and took the little valley of the Skell as their own once more; until in 1767 William Aislaby purchased the estate for eighteen thousand pounds, carted away the accumulated rubbish down

to the floor and laid out the present lawns; and of him it is honorably recorded that nothing was pulled down and nothing added.

So after this long digression let us return once more to Harrogate though it is only to bid it farewell. But before we leave this pleasant place we must say just one word in admiration of its beautiful Catholic church, and of the noteworthy picture with which Lord Bute has adorned it, for it is the portrait of its patron saint, who is none other than that St. Robert of Knaresborough, whom we had almost confounded with another St. Robert who went forth from Fountains to establish its first offshoot at Newminster. If we had not saved ourselves by a query we should have erred in good company, for so general has been this confusion that a learned Cistercian when writing the life of the one saint added a memoir of the other to distinguish between them. Well; after all we should not have gone far astray; for the Hermit Saint was for a short time an inmate of the Cistercian house at Newminster, and so ardently did the monks of Fountains yearn after him and regard him as a revival of their own St. Robert that when he drew near his end they came and tried to prevail upon him to be invested with the habit of their order, and though he humbly refused this token of their veneration, when he died they came and vested him, and made a claim for his relics, and would have carried them off to treasure them with those at home, had not "a band of men from the castle resisted them, and they were compelled to retire in sorrow at losing so great a treasure."¹

Somehow Norway dies out of our plans for vacation wanderings, and we leave Harrogate for London with no very definite conception of what will come next.

¹ Our paper was in type before we saw Father Collins' charming little book, which, as its title shows, traverses the same ground we have hurried over. "The Spirit and Mission of the Cistercian Order; comprising the Life of St. Robert of Newminster, and the Life of St. Robert of Knaresborough; with an account of the foundation of Fountains Abbey," (London: Simpkin, Marshall & Co., 1886.) We recommend his book to all who wish to carry their inquiries further than our rapid sketch can lead them, and who would understand the spirit of the great Order as unfolded by one who lives its inner life.

We have inflicted year after year upon our courteous readers some notice of the doings at South Kensington, but we mercifully spare them on this occasion when India and the Colonies combine in forming a new name, the Colinderies and an exhibition which far surpasses all its predecessors. Formerly it was a musical promenade with an exhibition of some kind; now it is an exhibition with a musical promenade, and this of course makes all the difference and keeps us silent about its many attractions. Formerly everybody (including ourselves) hurried into the gardens through the courts and galleries, and saw but little of what was stored therein, now it is no longer so. Why? because one cannot shut one's eyes to the wonders that the East has poured out with true Oriental munificence: because the young and vigorous life of our Colonies refuses to be slighted, and forces its claims upon our attention: and so it is that music is now only for an occasional interval of repose, and that a visit to the Colinderies is anything but a lounge and an idleness. A visit! do we say; how many visits would be needed, we wonder, to form anything like an idea of what is here to be seen.

Our planless plans of wandering brought us several times to London, and every opportunity we used to repeat our visits, and yet each time it seemed like a new exhibition, and proved to us how little we had hitherto seen, and how much we must have missed after all.

This is why we say nothing, simply because we have too much to say. We have heard often enough of the embarrassment of riches, but here we realize it, if not for the first time, at least more fully than we have ever done before. India alone is quite an Arabian Nights' Entertainment, and would need at least a thousand and one tales to recount what has to be told; while as for the Colonies, each one puts in a claim, which cannot be denied, for a whole history of its dream-like growth, its natural productions and its physical development. We can but shake our head as significantly as my Lord Burleigh in Sheridan's Critic, and hope that there is something in it which is too deep for words.

This contrast and combination of East and West is very

significant and full of suggestive thought. The old world with its long stored treasures, the outcome of ages of self-indulgent luxury, which time alone could bring to such maturity of form and colour; its bold use of richest materials and most brilliant tints which perfected education of hand and eye could alone save from barbaric tawdriness; its powers of imagination which can devise so grandly and yet control itself on this side of extravagance; its playful fancy which yet stops short of burlesque; all show to what the grand East has grown and what it can do in its maturity if not in its old age. Then close upon this, as though treading upon its heels and struggling to take a place beside it, comes the New World, with powers that have achieved wonders in so short a time and with energy which speaks volumes for its future; claiming our admiration in quite another way and warming our hearts with honest pride at the doings of those who also are our own. Here is youth beside age; both bringing of their best to their common Throne and laying so appropriately at the feet of the Empress of them all, in this the fiftieth year of her reign, their tokens of affection alike in this though so different in the forms in which they are displayed.

A week in London somehow suffices, for there is no Opera worthy of the name, and German music is as though it had never been.

And now we are recommended to try seabathing, and the bracing air of the Eastern Coast, and so we once more turn our faces—for we are now two—northwards and make for Cromer in Norfolk.

HENRY BEDFORD.

(To be continued.)

THE ALPHABET.

AS plain as A.B.C. is a common saying, and like many other similar expressions it assumes a good deal that could not be very easily proved. For, what is there plain about it? If we except the shape of the letters, both large and small, now in use in all our printed books, which is so perfect in its clearness and legibility, far beyond that of other letters of any age or country whatsoever, there is nothing plain in it.

By means of some twenty-six signs of about as many sounds, an average boy learns in a couple of years or less to read with ease and certainty, any English book, and nothing seems more natural. Yes, but were that boy a Chinese he would need to master some five thousand different signs to accomplish the same thing; and there is little room to doubt that the Chinese system represents a mode of expressing words by signs or a method of writing, not more cumbersome or difficult than that from which our own few and simple, yet perfectly adequate, signs are derived.

The progress from early writing, when each object had its own sign, usually a rough image of itself, to our modern letters is surely a wonderful thing in itself; and viewed in connection with the results obtained by the rapid and easy communication of knowledge, it may be regarded as one of the greatest achievements of man's intellect; for what discovery can compare with the Alphabet in influence on the progress of our race, of which it is both the instrument and the register?

It can scarcely fail to interest our readers to watch the growth of this wonderful invention as it travels down to us, gaining in perfection from the remotest past, forming in each stage of its development a focus for the intelligence of the most highly gifted races of antiquity to labour round, each in its turn; for Egypt and Babylon, the Semite, the Phœnician, and the Greek, have contributed to give us the A.B.C. The purpose of the article is to show this, leaving out unnecessary details, and dwelling on those points only the interest of which may be assumed to be general if not universal.

To treat fully the subject of the Alphabet would lead to two kinds of inquiry quite distinct from each other, for the Alphabet is a series of sounds as well as a collection of signs denoting these sounds. But a full treatment is not intended here. The study of the letters as sounds belongs to the science of language, and touches on Physiology and Anatomy, departments of knowledge, the writer's acquaintance with which is very slight indeed. And even were it otherwise the subject is far too vast to be compressed within the limits allowed by the Record. We shall then confine ourselves to the external form of the Alphabet, the signs used to preserve the record of memorable events and personages, which, sufficiently clumsy in the beginning, and for many centuries, became in course of time more simple and expeditious, until at length they attain such perfection, that some twenty-six easily recognised characters suffice to convey with accuracy all the words of nearly all the languages spoken over the globe. For although it is quite true that the number of letters varies in the different Alphabets—some admitting forty-eight letters, others as few as eleven—the various sounds of the longer Alphabets are almost invariably reducible to our own, which, we may remark, is shortened by giving two sounds to some of the letters, as, for instance, to C and G in the words “cat” and “city” “gin” and “gimlet.”

What then is the history of our present Alphabet?

It is now pretty generally admitted that all systems of writing began with rude pictures of objects, grouped so as to tell their own story. Afterwards pictures of single objects became the representatives of words, and then symbols of parts of words or more or less elementary sounds. They began with ideograms or sign pictures, and grew into phonograms or sound-pictures, as they are technically called. These again are of three kinds, verbal signs which stand for entire words, as £ s. d. in our ledgers, syllabic signs standing for parts of words, to which class belong most of the signs in shorthand; and Alphabetic signs or letters representing the elementary sounds into which the word or syllable may be resolved. It is a curious instance of survival that we have still in use representatives of the earliest and rudest form of

writing. Ideograms or picture writings still find a place in Heraldry, in a good many trade marks, and a few shop signs still found in some places. We don't often see more than one now, the three golden balls, emblematic of the triple bolus, which denoted the ancestral calling of the Florentine Medici, and became the sign of traffic in money at one time so successfully carried on by their fellow-countrymen the Lombard Merchants, who gave the name to Lombard-street, in London; but many of our readers will remember when the barber's pole, streaked in red and white, was a common object. Long after the higher branch of the tonsorial art had separated itself from the original trunk and was absorbed into surgery, the red streak winding round the pole was still there to tell us of a time when bleeding was joined to shaving in more enduring fashion than operator or subject would be willing now, the one to admit, the other to tolerate.

The letters of the Alphabet, however, are not ideograms but phonograms, which, by long continued wearing away, have reached an extreme degree of simplicity, both as regards form and value. If the history of any one of our letters be traced back, it will be found to resolve itself ultimately into the conventionalized picture of some object, and in spite of long continued usage during so many centuries, it retains in nearly every instance some features of the primitive picture from which it has descended. The letter "m" is a case in point. It is the figure of an owl conventionalised. In the old Egyptian language the name of the owl was "Mulak." The picture was first used to represent the word itself; it then became a syllabic sign, having the value of "mu" and finally it stood for the initial sound of the word. So long as the representation was monumental or carved on stone, the figure of the bird remained unchanged; but when the hieroglyphs were written on papyrus with ink and pen or reed, the old picture assumed a cursive form as favouring a more rapid production, and we have therefore an outline instead of a complete picture. In the Hieratic writing the outline is still found, but so conventionalised that there seems to be little or no consciousness of the original. The back and legs are omitted, and we obtain a character not unlike our small "m"

reversed, with the final stroke drawn down to form an irregular curve to the left. We shall see later on that the Semitic letters must have been taken from the Hieratic forms of the Egyptian characters. The earliest known specimen of Semitic writing is that found on the Moabite stone (about B.C. 900). On it the letter "m" appears very much in the form we have just described as Hieratic, the chief difference being a certain uprightness and a tendency to straighten out the curve which brings it very close indeed to the most ancient Greek " μ " in which the prolonged stroke was originally the last to the right exactly as in the old Semitic. The only difficulty in identifying the Greek " μ " with the conventionalized owl is the position of the long stroke corresponding to the curve in the Hieratic; but that obstacle disappears when we reflect that Greek was at first written from right to left as the Semitic languages, and of course with the change in the manner of writing came the change in the position of the long stroke. The passage from early to later Greek can be followed clearly, as inscriptions abound, and so we reach the large or uncial and then the Roman capital "M" from which we get ours, which has preserved during its long history of four thousand years certain features by which it may be recognised as the conventionalized picture of an owl. In our capital "M" the two peaks which are the lineal descendants of the ears of the owl, still retain between them an indication of the beak!

This we give as an instance of development that is at least possible, without for the present going farther. The history of our own Alphabet naturally begins nearer to us, and we must trace it out a certain distance, to clear the ground for the problem, a much more troublesome one, of the origin of its ancestors. Its immediate parentage is easily determined. The letters you see before you run back twenty-five centuries without any considerable variation. Their forms are slight improvements on the types used at Rome and Venice by the Italian printers of the fifteenth century, which types were taken from the "Minuscule" or small lettered MS. of the tenth and eleventh. These latter again are cursive forms of the earlier uncial or large lettered MS., some few of which

belong to the fourth and fifth century of our era ; the letters found in them are those of the Augustan age, and are identical almost with the characters found in ancient Roman inscriptions, and in the earliest specimens of Latin writing, which may probably be referred to the fifth century B.C.

Twenty-five centuries is a good distance to have travelled back, and this we have done with our Alphabet, finding a home for it in Central Italy, in the heart of the great Republic, the source of Western civilization. But when Rome was yet in her childhood, Greece possessed a large measure of culture with a spirit of enterprise in proportion. She was sending out colonies along the whole coast of the Mediterranean, and some of these we know were planted in Italy eight or even nine centuries B.C. They brought with them a form of Greek Alphabet with which the earliest Latin or Italian can be identified.

If, going a step farther, we inquire into the source from which the primitive Greek Alphabet was derived, we find that classical writers agree in attributing the invention of letters to the Phœnicians, from whose trading ports in the *Ægean* they were obtained by the Greeks. This is the statement of Herodotus, followed by other ancient writers, both Greek and Latin, a statement which is corroborated by the internal evidence of the Alphabets themselves. In the absence of other proof, the word Alphabet would suffice to disclose the secret of its origin. It is made up of the names of the two letters Alpha and Beta, which stand at the head of the Greek Alphabet, and are clearly the same as Aleph and Beth, the corresponding Semitic characters. These names, which have no meaning in Greek, are significant Semitic words, Aleph denoting an ox, and Beth, a house. Not only the names, but the order, number, and form of the letters attest the Semitic origin of the Alphabet as a whole, and prove that it was handed on in a complete form from the Semitic to the Greeks.

We must not, however, pass over a very obvious difficulty suggested by the dissimilarity in shape of many of the letters. Thus the first letter (Ⲁ) scarcely exhibits any resemblance to the Greek *α*, with which it is identified. Nor do we find in

the forms of the second and third (ב, ג) any closer approximation to their Greek equivalents (β, γ). The difficulty admits of a satisfactory explanation. The cursive Greek and the square Hebrew characters are both of comparatively recent origin, and they can be connected with their archaic prototypes by a complete series of intermediate forms. Hence for the present purpose the modern characters must be set aside, and the Old Greek and Semitic compared in the forms which are given in very early inscriptions.

So far progress has been comparatively rapid. We have traced the origin of our Alphabet and connected it with its remote ancestor, the Phœnician, or early Semitic, as it is found in an inscription engraved probably nine centuries B.C. and taking into account the long period of twenty-seven centuries, the vast changes that have passed over the world, we may wonder surely not so much at the difference that may be found, as at the striking similarity there is in Alphabets removed from each other by such an enormous interval of time.

And now we have to take another step backwards and follow our Alphabet to its cradle, the cradle of the earliest civilization of which we have any knowledge, to the land of the Sphinx and the Pyramids, the mysteries of which, after having excited the imagination of inquiring minds for nearly two thousand years, are being at last slowly revealed in our own days.

But before entering upon the last and most difficult stage of the present inquiry, it may be well to say something of the data on which we have to go, the more so as some of these have an interest of their own of a very high order for all who care for such matters. The process we are engaged in is one of identification. We go back from well-known to less familiar forms of letters, following them from country to country, reversing the march of progress as it is shown in History. Naturally, materials for comparison, abundant enough at first, grow scarce as we move farther back, owing, no doubt, to the ravages of time, but owing also to the imperfection of the primitive methods of recording events. At the point we have reached, we should be compelled to remain

for ever, but for some very recent discoveries in the East, chief of which are the Moabite Stone, and the Prisse Papyrus, so called from the discoverer, M. Prisse d'Avennes.

In the summer of 1869 a German Savant, Dr. Klein, travelling in what was once the land of Moab, came upon a curious relic of antiquity among the ruins of Dhiban. This was a stone of black basalt, two feet broad by nearly four feet high, and rounded at the top. There was an inscription on it of thirty-four lines in the letters of the Phœnician Alphabet. Dr. Klein did not realise the importance of his discovery ; he contented himself with copying part of the inscription, and endeavoured to secure the monument for the British Museum. Things move slowly in the East, so that it was fully a year afterwards that a bargain was made for £80. At this moment, unfortunately, a member of the French Consulate at Jerusalem sent to have casts taken of the writing, and worse still, offered over £300 for the stone itself. At once the cupidity of both Pasha and Arabs was aroused ; the Governor of the place demanded the treasure for himself, and the Arabs fearing to lose it, put fire under it, poured water over it, broke it to pieces, and distributed the fragments as charms among the different families. But the energy and determination of Archaeologists are proverbial ; no difficulty daunts them, and so M. Clermont Ganneau, the French Explorer, set to work, and did not rest until he had recovered nearly all the fragments, pieced them together, and placed the precious relic where it now is, in the Museum of the Louvre at Paris. The inscription when deciphered proved to be a record of Mesha, King of Moab, the same who is mentioned in the Fourth Book of Kings. The interest for us lies in this, that the Moabite Stone gives us a very early form of Phœnician or Old Semitic character and we may see in those venerable letters the precise form employed by the earlier Prophets of the Old Testament.

In a line with the Moabite Stone as regards the present investigation, but far surpassing it in antiquity, are three very old Egyptian MS. or "Papyri," as they are called, the most perfect of which is that found in the ruins of Thebes by M. Prisse d'Avennes. It is a copy of an original

work by an Egyptian prince, Ptah Hoteph, who lived during the 5th dynasty or age of the Pyramids. The date of the copy cannot be fixed positively; but as it was found enclosed in a tomb of the eleventh dynasty, it must be anterior to the invasion of the Hyksos or Shepherd Kings, and therefore older by some centuries than the time of Moses, older probably than the date usually assigned to Abraham; while the work itself must be regarded as the oldest of existing books. It is curious that this stray waif floating down to us on the ocean of time from the period of the world's childhood, should have for its subject, the moralising of an aged sage, who deplores modern degeneracy, and mourns over the loss of the good old times when youth was brave and maiden virtuous, and all things better and more wisely ordered than in the present time of decay! The theme has been treated pretty frequently since, and probably will be to the end. As each generation descends the hill of life, it utters the same complaint, and no doubt, with just the same amount of reason for it.

However, not the contents but the writing concerns our purpose. That belongs to the Hieratic form of Egyptian character which exhibits a wide divergence from the more elaborate monumental or pure Hieroglyphic type. These characters and those of the earliest Phœnician inscriptions enable us to bridge over a chasm in the history of the Alphabet which a few years ago seemed to destroy all hope of further progress. Without their aid it would be scarcely possible to connect the Phœnician Alphabet with Egypt.

The verdict of antiquity, which gave in no doubtful terms to the Phœnicians the glory of the invention of letters, declared also with less confidence, however, that it was from Egypt the Phœnicians derived the knowledge of the art of writing, which they afterwards carried into Greece. Tacitus says in the eleventh book of his *Annals*—"First of all the Egyptians expressed their thoughts by figures of animals; and exhibit themselves as the inventors of letters. Then the Phœnicians, as a maritime people, brought them to Greece, gaining renown as discoverers of what they really had received." But when the value of the ancient belief came to be tested by the aid of the resources of modern scientific

investigation, it became evident that the transition from the Phoenicians to the Egyptians was by no means so clear or so easy as from the Alphabet of Greece to the primitive Alphabet of the Semitic nations. In truth the difficulties in the way of accepting the opinion given by Tacitus are formidable and numerous. In the first place it is easily seen that the Egyptian hieroglyphic writing was alphabetic only in a restricted sense. The signs on Egyptian monuments are very numerous; most of them ideographic or picture signs, others syllabic only; and putting these aside and taking into account symbols purely alphabetic, we do not find, as in the parallel case of Greek and Semitic Alphabets, any notable correspondence in the number, order, names, and forms of those characters which possess like values in the two systems of writing. Comparison shows that the general appearance is wholly dissimilar—one (the Semitic) being geometrical, the other (Egyptian) pictorial; and it shows also that it is difficult, even on close scrutiny, to discern among the Semitic letters a single one that has a strong resemblance to an Egyptian symbol of corresponding value. The difficulty would not be fatal perhaps, did the other tests hold good. But it is not so. We have seen already how the names of the Greek letters furnish a proof of their Semitic birth. With the Egyptian this test fails. The names of the letters, so far as they are known, do not agree with those of the corresponding Semitic characters, save in one or two instances; and it is beyond question that the Semitic names originated among a Semitic people, for they have a meaning in their language. The order, too, of the letters identical or nearly so, in the Greek or Phoenician, is different in the Egyptian Alphabet, so that every proof of relationship between the former, fails us, when we come to the last.

As a consequence the old tradition was, up to a few years ago, discarded completely by writers of the highest authority in these subjects, like Gesenius for instance, who, in his work on Semitic Palæography, published in 1837, concludes, that the Phoenician letters originated in an independent system of Semitic picture writings. The state of opinion not so long ago may be gathered from the eighth edition of the

Encyclopædia Britannica. The passage will be interesting even if it only serve to show how quickly views and opinions become antiquated when discovery is progressive, as it is in all matters touching the ancient History of the East. "The Egyptian hieroglyphs, the Chinese characters, and the supposed Syllabic Alphabets have been examined, and they do not afford, as is commonly asserted, any clue to lead us to the invention of the Alphabet. Since we are unable either in history or imagination to trace its origin, we must ascribe it with the Rabbins to the first man; or we must say, with Pliny, 'ex quo apparet æternus literarum usus'!" And so in very recent times the old classical theory was abandoned, and the problem regarded as insoluble by writers most conversant with these subjects. But here, too, as in many other instances, subsequent investigation has tended to restore to the place of honour the old opinion too hastily given up; and we find scholars at present pretty generally agreed, not only as to the source from which the Semitic Alphabet was obtained, but also as to the special place, manner, and period in which it must have originated.

It is creditable in the highest degree to Celtic genius, that the most remarkable discoveries in Eastern Archaeology should be due to it. To France the chief honour belongs. We owe our understanding of the Egyptian hieroglyphs to a young Frenchman of the beginning of this century; and the merit of finding out, and placing on record the last stage in the history of the Alphabet, belongs to another, M. de Rougé, who put forth the results of his researches in a paper read before the Académie des Inscriptions, in the year 1859; and this essay, enlarged and completed, was given to the world fifteen years later by his son.

Rigorous demonstration is scarcely to be expected in a question of this nature, when the materials are so scanty, but it may be said without fear of rashness that M. de Rougé's theory offers not only a possible, but a highly probable, solution of the problem; and it holds the field, for no other hypothesis has as yet been put forward which demands even serious discussion. That theory, however, and the proofs advanced in its favour, we must reserve for another paper.

L. J. HICKEY.

LITURGICAL QUESTIONS.

WEEKLY CONFESSION FOR CURRENT INDULGENCES.

What is the correct meaning of the words, "semel saltem in hebdomada," or "infra unam hebdomadam," with reference to Frequent Confession as a condition for gaining all the current Indulgences?

"Confessors are often called upon to answer a question like the following, from pious people who go to Confession, as a rule, every week: 'Can I gain all the occurring Indulgences, provided I go every week to Confession, even though *more than seven days* intervene between two Confessions—for instance, during one week I may go to Confession on Monday, the next week not before Friday or Saturday (hence, twelve or thirteen days intervening)—or am I obliged to go always *within the seven days* to enjoy this privilege?' As this is a very practical question, and one to which there should be no hesitancy in replying, I beg to ask, in next month's RECORD, whether I correctly interpret the Decrees of the Sacred Congregation on this important subject?

"I. Amongst the authentic Decrees of the Sacred Congregation (*Ratisbon Edition*, approved by the Holy See), I read that, on December 9th, 1763, the Sacred Congregation granted to all the faithful the *privilege* of gaining all occurring Indulgences, provided they are in the habit of going to Confession weekly:—'Sanctitas Sua (Papa) benigne annuit omnibus Christifidelibus, qui frequenti peccatorum confessione *semel saltem in hebdomada* ad Sacramentum Poenitentiae accedunt, ut omnes et quascumque Indulgentias consequi possint, etc.'—(*Dec. authen.*, No. 231.)

"II. This concession meets with confirmation in another Decree, nearly a century later (March 12th, 1855), when the Sacred Congregation answered in the *affirmative* to the following question asked by the Bishop of Verona:—'Utrum privilegium Clementis XIII., quod qui assolent confiteri *semel saltem in hebdomada*, possint lucrari Indulgentias plenarias infra hebdomadam occurrentes, cum sola Comunione, quamvis in Brevi Apostolico Confessio praescripta sit, valeat et extendatur etiam pro lucranda Indulgentia vulgo de Portiuncula die 2 Augusti?'—(*Dec. authen.*, 364.)

"III. Nevertheless, confusion or doubt was apparently sprung upon

us by a much more recent Decree, namely, of November 23rd, 1878, in the following question and reply to the Bishop of Fribourg:—
 ‘Utrum Confessio præscripta per singulas hebdomadas peragi debeat *infra septem vel potius infra octo dies?*’ Resp. ‘Affirmative ad primam partem, id est, præscriptam Confessionem peragi debere *quolibet decurrente septem dierum spatio*; Negative ad secundam partem.’
 —(Dec. authen., No. 439.)

“Considering this answer strictly as it stands, one would think that the Holy See now required (whatever she permitted before) that not more than *seven days* should intervene between the Confessions, in order to denominate them as ‘weekly,’ and consequently to carry with them the privilege.

“Let us now see what the authors say, and try to explain away the seeming incongruity.

“IV. Father Comerford, in his admirable little treatise on Holy Indulgences, says:—“They who are accustomed to confess, at least, *once a week* can gain all the Indulgences occurring between their Confessions, and for which actual Confession would be otherwise required. . . . Authors, whose works have received the formal approval of the Sacred Congregation of Indulgences, call attention to the expression, ‘*semel in hebdomada*,’ as distinct from *once in the eight days*, and hold that the condition requiring Weekly Confession is sufficiently complied with by a person who confesses, for instance, on the Monday of one week, *and not again until the end of the week following*.—(Holy Indulgences, Part i., 1, Confession.)

“V. Maurel, in his standard work on Indulgences, is even more explicit. After making a similar statement, he writes in a note:—‘Observe the expression *once a week*; it is not said once in every eight days. In February, 1868, I again submitted this note to the Sacred Congregation of Indulgences. The reply was, that it gives the true sense of the clause, ‘*saltem semel in hebdomada*,’ and that those who interpret it otherwise, *confining it solely to an interval of eight days are quite mistaken*.’—Maurel, vii., 3rd English Edition, page 69.

“VI. Again, in one of the most recently published prayer-books, with the Imprimatur of the Archbishop of Dublin, and of the late Bishop of Cork, a book which seems to have been most carefully compiled, we read much the same. ‘Those who are accustomed to confess weekly can gain all the indulgences occurring during the week, and the Communion, as a rule, need not be necessarily made in the Church to which an indulgence is attached. . . . In the case

of a person going to Confession on the Monday of one week, and not until the Saturday of the following week, *he could still gain all the indulgences occurring within those twelve days.*—*Augustinian Manual*, pages 341 and 30, note.

“VII. Hence we seem to have quite a consensus of opinion, that provided Confession is made, as a rule, every week (*semel in hebdomada*), it matters not on what day of each week it is made; and, consequently, even should twelve or thirteen days intervene.

“What, then, about the late Decree of Nov., 1878? (See iii. *supra*.) It seems to refuse to extend the intervening time *even to eight days*. By an *a fortiori* argument, it would not permit the extension to twelve or thirteen days, or, indeed, to any number above seven. Are then the above authors all wrong? And must penitents actually go to Confession within every seven days (*quolibet decurrente septem dierum spatio*, as the Decree has it), in order to gain all current indulgences?

“I may remark here, *en passant*, that a priest lately told me he had seen some still later Decree, even of only last year, which as far as he remembered, directly confirmed the opinion of the above authors. If so, it has not appeared in the RECORD, and, sureiy, of all places (since it is for this the RECORD was especially intended for the clergy), *there* we should expect to find it.

“VIII. I can now only offer my solution of the seeming incongruity, and then respectfully ask our esteemed Editor of the I. E. RECORD, to tell us in the next issue whether it be correct.

“I interpret the reply of the Sacred Congregation on November 23rd, 1878, when it says that the Confession must be ‘*per singulas hebdomadas vel infra septem et non octo dies*,’ to mean that, reckoning a week to be from Sunday to Saturday (inclusive), the ‘weekly’ Confession must be made with only one Sunday intervening; for instance, a penitent, in the first week of a month, might go to Confession on Monday; in the second week, on Wednesday; in the third week, on Friday or Saturday. Now, though we have actually ten or more days intervening, still the Confession is always made every week (*per singulas hebdomadas*); because only one Sunday intervenes, or, in other words, the penitent always confesses within a Sunday and the Saturday following, inclusive. And the reason why the Sacred Congregation declared it did not mean ‘*infra octo dies*,’ was, because it did not want to restrict the Confession to *every eight days*.

“IX. But I can well imagine some one insisting: ‘The language

of the reply seems to preclude this explanation: for, why did the Sacred Congregation, which is generally so exact in the selection of its phraseology, say, ‘*praescriptam Confessionem peragi debere quolibet decurrente septem dierum spatio?*’ ”

“A very reasonable objection, surely. Were it not so, I would not be now troubling you, Very Rev. Mr. Editor. U. E. U.”

We are obliged to our respected correspondent for his lucid statement of the practical question he raises. But we beg to correct a mistake into which he has fallen in supposing that the RECORD has not published the recent Decree of the 25th of February, 1886, to which he has heard reference made. It is most likely his friend read it in the July number of the RECORD, 1886, in which it was published. (See I. E. RECORD, vol. vii., No. 7, p. 655, July, 1886).

The question proposed to the Congregation and answered on the 25th of February, 1886, was intended to explain the meaning of the Decree of the 23rd November, 1878. From this latest answer it is plain that the weekly Confession need not be made within seven days from the date of the last Confession: for it decides that one who goes to Confession, for instance, every eight days is a hebdomadarius or weekly penitent.

We have no doubt that our correspondent's interpretation is a safe one to act on.

It is our own opinion that the object of the Decree of the 23rd November, 1878, was not to alter in any restrictive sense the common opinion and teaching regarding what constituted a weekly penitent, but rather to declare that a week for the purposes of Confession was a space of seven, and not of eight days, so that the eighth day from the Confession counts as first day of the next week.

As the late Decree of the 25th of February contains also the Decree of November 23rd, 1878, and as it is so important, we print it again for convenience of reference:—

URBIS ET ORBIS.

QUOAD CONFENSIONEM FACIENDAM PER SINGULAS HEBDOMADAS ET
ACQUIRENDAS INDULGENTIAS PLENARIAS.

Ad dubia quae proposuit R. D. D. Episcopus Leucensis et
Vicarius Capitularis Friburgensis, quod attinet ad sacramentalem

Confessionem quae necessaria est ad acquirendas Indulgentias plenarias intra hebdomadam, aut binas continuas hebdomadas occurrentes, nimirum: I. Utrum Confessio praescripta *per singulas hebdomadas* peragi debeat infra septem, vel potius infra octo dies? II. An verba *infra duas hebdomadas* stricte interpretanda sint, ita ut Confessio peragi debeat infra quatuordecim dies, vel potius sufficiat bina confessio in mense? Sacra Congregatio Indulgentiis Sacrisque Reliquiis praeposita respondit die 23 Novembris 1878: Ad I. Affirmative ad primam partem id est praescriptam Confessionem peragi debere quolibet decurrente septem dierum spatio; Negative ad secundam partem. Ad II. Affirmative ad primam partem, id est praescriptam Confessionem peragi debere quolibet decurrente quatuordecim dierum spatio; Negative ad secundam partem.

Ad majorem hujus rei declarationem quaeritur modo:

I. Utrum Christifidelis, qui singulis hebdomadis et stato die, ex. gr. Sabbato confessionem peragere solet, satisfaciat oneri praescriptae Confessionis?

II. Utrum oneri praescriptae confessionis satisfaciat Christifidelis, qui iis in locis pro quibus viget Indultum, alternis hebdomadis et stato die, ex. gr. Sabbato, Confessionem peragere solet?

Sacra Congregatio Indulgentiis Sacrisque Reliquiis praeposita die 25 Februarii, 1886, ad supra relata dubia respondit:

Ad I^m. *Affirmative.*

Ad II^m. *Affirmative.*

Datum Romae ex secretaria ejusdem S. Congregationis die 25 Februarii, 1886.

I. B. Card. FRANZELIN, *Praefectus.*

F. DELLA VOLPE, *Secretarius.*

THE MARRIAGE CEREMONY.

“You will kindly oblige many priests by giving the common practice of Rubricists in the following:—

“At a Nuptial Mass where should the *contrahentes* kneel? Inside or outside of the sanctuary? When they approach the Altar to receive the blessing, where should they kneel? De Herdt and O’Kane do not seem to be sufficiently explicit in regard to the matter.—“J. B.”

Martinucci (Lib. iv., pp. 64-6) gives the following minute directions:—

At the marriage ceremony which precedes the Mass, the Sponsi kneel inside the balustrade, at the steps in front of the altar, or on the predella.

This ceremony over, they retire to the balustrade or rails

where they kneel during Mass up to the blessing which is given after the *Pater Noster*.

The Sponsi come again to the steps of the altar to receive the blessing after the *Pater Noster*. Then the Sponsi again retire to the balustrade.

A third time the Sponsi come to the steps, when the celebrant, having said the *Ite Missa est*, prays over them "*Deus Abraham &c.*," and sprinkles them with Holy Water.

The Sponsi then withdraw finally to the balustrade to assist at the *Placeat* and the rest of the Mass.

THE CHURCH ABROAD.

ADDRESS OF THE HOLY FATHER TO THE SACRED COLLEGE ON THE PERSECUTION TO WHICH THE CHURCH IN ITALY AND THE HOLY SEE ARE SUBJECTED—PROTEST OF THE HIERARCHY OF SPAIN—SIMILAR PROTESTS FROM THE EPISCOPATE OF BELGIUM—PROJECT OF A CATHOLIC INTERNATIONAL SCIENTIFIC CONGRESS IN PARIS IN APRIL, 1888—THE ENGLISH MARTYRS.

No words can better explain the intolerable position of the Pope in his own capital than the indignant protest to which his Holiness gave utterance on a recent occasion in reply to an address of the Sacred College. After speaking of the attacks made upon the Church in other parts of the world the Holy Father continues:

"But we are more deeply concerned and afflicted at what happens in Italy and in Rome, the centre of Catholicity, and the privileged seat of the Vicar of Christ. Here the assaults of our enemies are all the more injurious as they are directed against that supreme power in which are so intimately bound up the good, the life, and the social action of the Church in the world. Now the designs of which we frequently had to complain bitterly have increased for some time past beyond all measure: for it is easy to discover what are the real designs entertained against the Church under cover of vain prettexts and invented distinctions. Her most beneficent institutions, her dogmas, her ministers, her rights, nothing is spared. We are threatened with new laws which, according to public rumour, would lay violent hands on the last resources of property left to the Church, and which would bring about the interference of laymen in ecclesiastical affairs with all the disastrous effects that follow from such intrusions. Her enemies

are sharpening every weapon against the Christian education of our youth. Other effects of their increased hostility are the odious measures recently taken against the poor and inoffensive nuns who are worthy of all compassion. But the most furious attacks and the most implacable hatred of the sects are directed against the Supreme Pontiff, the corner-stone on which the sublime edifice of the Church is built. It is enough to say that they have dared to denounce him publicly as the enemy of Italy at all times, and to mark him with such names of opprobrium and contempt as the tongue refuses to repeat.

“How can we be astonished if after this in popular reunions, at public meetings and in the press they have hurled against the Pope the most vile and the most unbecoming insults, and that in the principal cities of Italy the most horrible affronts should be offered to the Pontifical Office and Dignity? And coming still to more ferocious designs they have threatened to resort to the last limits of violence against ourselves and against our peaceful residence. The worst is that these manifestations of hatred and of violence are allowed to be freely indulged in and no efficacious means employed to hinder them.

“In such a condition of things everyone knows in what manner the dignity is respected and the honour of our person guarded in Rome. All must understand what security we enjoy and what sort of liberty is left to us in the exercise of our Apostolic Ministry.

“It is therefore impossible for us to be satisfied with the present state of things, and as our enemies, strengthened by the aid of human power, are leaving nothing undone to perpetuate the present situation of the Pope, we feel it on our side a pressing duty to renew against these usurpations, be they old or new, the most formal protests and to claim for the safe-guard of our independence, the sacred rights of the Church and of the Apostolic See. Our confidence is placed in God who holds in His divine hands the course of human events. May He bountifully hear our humble prayers and those of the whole Church, particularly during these days of grace and mercy.”

Against these horrible outrages on the dignity and person of the Pope we may also cite a few extracts of the protest recently made by the Hierarchy of Spain.

“In the varied course of centuries we never witnessed the spectacle of a Pope ruling the world according to the salutary principles of wisdom and of policy, having apostolic representatives in every country in the world, and who was at the same time insulted and maltreated by the multitudes that dwelt around him. It has been reserved for this nineteenth century to despise those sentiments of justice and of chivalry and to lose even the most commonplace notions of public dignity.

"They are only too well known, those unheard-of outrages of which Leo XIII. has recently been made the object and which are being aggravated in an unspeakable manner in the sad epoch in which we live. It was not sufficient to have dispossessed him unjustly of his temporal sovereignty and of the independence and liberty which follows from it; they have gone to the length of censuring the very acts of his ministry; they have distorted his intentions; they have insulted his sacred person and have trampled under foot his high and incomparable dignity, and this has been done with the complicity and connivance of the authorities that are pledged in the face of the world to protect him from injury or insult.

"At the sight of such a dark and horrible picture the Spanish Bishops have felt moved in the very depth of their heart and conscience, and believe that they would not be faithful to the glorious traditions of their Catholic forefathers if they did not protest in the most formal and solemn manner against these attacks on the person of the Head of that Church to which their nation has and ever will remain unswervingly attached.

"They firmly hope that the peoples and governments of the world will work unanimously in the name of their common interests and of the institutions which uphold society itself, in order to obtain with the peace of Italy, that the Head of the Church should be restored to that position of independence and liberty which he requires for the perfect accomplishment of his sublime mission, thus putting an end to the situation which is founded on brute force and the most wicked instincts of fallen nature."

Then follow the signatures of the Cardinal Archbishop of Toledo with the seven suffragans of his province, of the Cardinal Archbishop of Saragossa with six suffragans, of the Cardinal Archbishop of Valencia with five suffragans, of the Cardinal Archbishop of Seville with five suffragans, of the Archbishop of Burgos with six suffragans, of the Archbishop of Compostella with five suffragans, of the Archbishop of Granada with five suffragans, of the Archbishop of Tarragona with seven suffragans, and of the Archbishop of Valladolid with six suffragans.

Similar protests have been made by the episcopate of Belgium who are specially astir in the preparations to celebrate in a manner worthy of the occasion, and of the circumstances, the jubilee year of the present Pontiff.

The Catholic men of letters of Belgium have the happy idea of collecting all the Catholic works that have been published in their country within the last hundred years, and presenting them to the Pope on this joyous occasion.

The project of Mgr. d'Hulst and his learned associates in France of holding a Catholic international scientific congress in Paris in the month of April, 1888, has now assumed definite shape, and is sure to become of world-wide interest and importance. A central commission has been formed in Paris with assistant members in the French provinces and in foreign countries to initiate the work.

"The object of this commission," says Mgr. d'Hulst, "is to obtain from Catholic scientists the composition of memoirs or reports destined to be presented to the congress, and the special object of which will be to determine the actual state of science regarding different questions which are closely connected with Christian faith, and are on that account of particular interest to Catholics. The memoirs which shall be accepted by the commission will form the matter of the work of the congress, and will furnish the theme of verbal discussions which may take place at the sittings of the sections.

"The congress will also discuss the 'impulse' or direction which it is expedient to give to scientific researches among Catholics at the present day, the method to be followed in order that these researches may turn out profitable to the Christian cause, without sacrificing anything of the purest and safest orthodoxy.

"It is agreed that the congress will be only the medium for an exchange of ideas, and that no vote will be taken in the sense of consecrating the conclusions, or formulating the doctrine of the assembly."

The Congress will comprise three classes, divided each into several sections. The following is the Table of Subjects:—

1ST CLASS.

- 1st Section—Theodicaea.
- 2nd Section—General Metaphysics and Cosmology.
- 3rd Section—Psychology and Psycho-physiology.
- 4th Section—Natural Right.
- 5th Section—Political and Social Economy.

2ND CLASS.

- 1st Section—Mathematics, Mechanics, and Astronomy
- 2nd Section—Physics and Chemistry.
- 3rd Section—Zoology, Biology, and Physiology.
- 4th Section—Geology and Paleontology.
- 5th Section—Anthropology, Ethnography and Philology.

3RD CLASS.

- 1st Section—Biblical History.
- 2nd Section—Origin of Christianity.
- 3rd Section—History of the Church: Her Social Duties.
- 4th Section—Comparative History of Religions.
- 5th Section—Christian Archeology.

Such is the programme to which the men of Science and Letters in the Catholic world are asked to contribute. The Commission has already secured the adhesion of several Cardinals and Bishops, and has been promised the most hearty co-operation of some of the ablest men outside of France. But, even if the Congress were confined to France alone it could not fail to be of great interest: for amongst its leading organisers we notice the names of the Abbé de Broglie, M. de Lapparent, (who is one of the ablest geologists in France), the Abbé Martin, M. Claudio Jannet, (author of several works on social economy), the Abbé Vigouroux of St. Sulpice, M. Paul Allard of Rouen. (well known for his works on Archeology, and the early history of the Church), Admiral de Jonquieres, member of the Institute of France, the Abbé Fouard of Rouen, principally known in these countries for his "Life of Christ," M. Paul Fournier, who visited us in Ireland a few years ago, and wrote an interesting book on the land question, the Abbé Guieu, Editor of "*Les Annales de Philosophie Chrétienne*," the Abbé Duchesne of the Catholic University of Paris, Comte de l'Épinois, M. de Vorges, vice-president of the Society of St. Thomas of Aquin, Père de Smedt, S.J., etc., etc.

We are glad to notice that the cause of beatification of the English martyrs has fully succeeded, and that at the end of last month, His Eminence Cardinal Manning, was able to announce the joyful news to his priests and faithful. The following is a full and accurate list of the blessed martyrs. The list which we gave in our last "chronique," and which we took from the *Moniteur de Rome*, and the *Osservatore Romano*, was incomplete.

Those who suffered death under King Henry VIII.—John Fisher, Bishop of Rochester, Cardinal of the Holy Roman Church; Thomas More, Chancellor of England; Margaret Pole, Countess of Salisbury, mother of Cardinal Pole; Richard Reynolds of the order of Saint Bridget; John Haile, priest; Eighteen Carthusians, viz.—John Houghton, Augustine Webster, Robert Laurence, William Exmew, Humphrey Middlemore, Sebastian Newdigate, John Rochester, James Walworth, William Greenwood, John Davy, Robert Salt, Walter Pierson, Thomas Green, Thomas Scryven, Thomas Redyng, Thomas Johnson, Richard Bere, and William Horne: John Forest, priest of the Order of Saint Francis; John Stone, of the Order of Saint Augustine; four secular priests:—Thomas Abel, Edward Powel, Richard Fetherston, John Larke, and German Gardiner, a layman.

Those who suffered under Elizabeth: Priests—Cuthbert Mayne, John Nelson, Everard Hanse, Rodolf Sherwin, John Payne, Thomas Ford, John Skert, Robert Johnson, William Fylby, Luke Kirby, Laurence Richardson, William Lacy, Richard Kirkman, James Hudson or Tomson, William Hart, Richard Thirkeld, Thomas Woodhouse, and — Plumtree. Three priests of the Society of Jesus, Edmund Campion, Alexander Briant and Thomas Cottam. Lastly, John Storey, Doctor of Laws, John Felton, and Thomas Sherwood, laymen.

J. F. HOGAN.

CORRESPONDENCE.

SOME OBSERVATIONS ON THE ORAL SYSTEM OF TEACHING THE DEAF AND DUMB.

Would you obligingly find place in the pages of the RECORD for some observations I desire to convey to your numerous readers on a system of teaching the Deaf and Dumb, which, of late years, has become very popular under the title of the ORAL SYSTEM. It proposes to teach these poor children of affliction to speak by the use of the natural organs of speech, as also to understand others, as they speak, by observing the motion of their lips, which is called lip-reading. The observations I wish to make have been suggested by the perusal of a periodical, edited and published in Paris, bearing the title of the *International Review on the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb*. It is entirely devoted to the ORAL SYSTEM, and seeks to promote it under very distinguished patronage by collecting and disseminating the opinions and views of its advocates, as also the reports of its working in the various institutions, that have adopted it in different countries throughout the world. No doubt such a system should be hailed as a blessing beyond all appreciation, if it attain the end at which it aims, but, at the same time, establishments, that yet retain the original and time-honoured system of teaching by methodic signs have reason to examine and see how far the modern system has realised, or is realising, the results it proposes to itself before they be called upon to adopt it. It was with this idea I carefully perused the *International Review* for the past year with the result of taking from it the following observations.

I can claim for them, therefore, no authority on the ground of originality, but I venture to think they are entitled to much consideration as being the testimony the system bears to its own work, as well as to the views and opinions of its advocates in several countries. The subject interests the Catholic public here in Ireland exceedingly, as it concerns the operation of our great National Institution for the Deaf and Dumb, the largest single Institution in the world affording an education, as it does, to the school-age children of a deaf-mute population exceeding 4,000 souls within our shores. Without further preface may I venture to offer you Very Rev. and dear Mr. Editor, my observations in the hope you will deem them worthy of publicity as affecting so large a number of our fellow-mortals, whose sad privations claim our deepest sympathy. They are as follows:—

All the authorities agree in considering that the course of instruction should commence at from 7 to 9 years of age, and be continued for 8 years.

During the early stages, that is for two years more, or less, until the pupil will have acquired in some degree the use of language by lip-reading and speaking, all intercommunication by signs, either amongst the pupils themselves, or with their teachers, is rigidly prohibited, even in time of recreation. The pupils are thereby deprived, at that early age, of all the advantages they would have by interchanging their thoughts and feelings, such as they are, and thus cultivating each other's intelligence and affections at a period when the mind is so tender and susceptible.

Several writers in the *Review*, however, consider this suspension of intellectual work, as well on the part of the master in respect of his pupils, as also of the pupils among themselves as impossible, especially at recreation, and they freely acknowledge the endeavours resorted to in order to enforce it to be harassing and vexatious in the extreme.

The advocates of this course would seem to overlook the fact that sign-language was the first language of the child whether deaf and dumb, or as yet only dumb, the language he interchanged with his mother, as she caressed him in her arms, or held him at her knee: and when the child, who is to speak, began to give articulate forms to mere vocal sounds, it was still by signs that he learned from her to attach meaning to his words, she pointing out to him by signs what she expressed with her lips, enlarging by degrees, according to the development of his mind, the range of this mixed mode of teaching until the use of signs became unnecessary. But where now do we

find the poor deaf and dumb child? The sign-teaching must still go on for him, and it does go on in family life within the limited extent of objects and acts that come within the range of his sight-seeing, and are pointed out to him for his observation. Must it not, therefore, be unnatural to interdict, all at once, this cultivation of mind, and consign the poor creature to absolute isolation as to the interchange of mind with mind, in order to subject him to the mere mechanical labour of acquiring the art of lip-reading, and attaining in some degree the use of the organs of speech? As to recreation, what can it be for a poor child, standing face to face with another poor child, and both looking at each other with intense gaze, and trying to catch some meaning from each other's lips? Recreation of this kind is a cruel mockery, which, carried out with any degree of strictness, must be ruinous to the health of children at an age when recreation is as necessary for them as their daily food. Nevertheless, it is insisted that the use of signs is incompatible with the oral system, and the advocates of it would silence all opposition by the divine maxim which they are not afraid to apply: "No man can serve two masters."—*Matt. vi. 24.*

The number of pupils for each teacher should not exceed 8, or, at most 10, and, in the first stage of instruction, there should be a second or an assistant teacher for even that number. This limitation of pupils taken together with 8 years, as constituting the full course, would have a serious effect on the total work of a public school, which, on that account, would require a proportionate increase of funds, or a proportionate diminution of pupils as compared with the sign-system school, which allows a much larger number of pupils to each master, and works out its results within the compass of 6 years.

The advocates of the system regret the diversity of views and practice not only in different countries, but in different schools of the same country, which shows that the system leaves yet much to be desired both in principle and method, and it was to bring about some uniformity in the system, so far as such a result can be attained by such an agency, that the *International Review* has been projected. It is, however, felt that a normal school or normal schools, working in harmony with each other, are indispensable to realise any approach to a uniform system. Just here the *Review* comes to the root of the system, but just here also it has an enormous difficulty to encounter. There are afloat widely different principles, and methods equally divergent in operation. What set of principles will be adopted for a uniform basis? What methods will prevail, omitting altogether

the question of expense for the establishment of such schools in different countries, or, as might be, of several of them in larger countries, such as those on the continent?

In a normal school having uniformity of system for object, it is laid down by the most accredited authorities that the aspirant teacher should be taught the physiological structure and respective functions of the several organs of speech, beginning with the lungs, and comprising in succession the bronchial and tracheal arteries, the larynx, the pharynx, the buccal and nasal cavities, together with the action of the tongue, teeth, and lips, and tracing the voice from being a mere sound to its becoming articulate for syllabic pronunciation, whence it is formed into words, and from words into sentences, and thence into continuous language.

The future teacher has to make himself acquainted with the etymology and application of a large and varied vocabulary of technical terms not to be found in any existing dictionary or lexicon, being specially invented from Greek roots, and so applied to what is sought to be the profession of deaf-mute education, in order to invest it, as it would appear, with technical importance.

Practice must go on concurrently with the learning of principles, and the future teacher has the double task on hands of teaching the pupils, who are confided to him, the practice of lip-reading, from his own lips, and tracing the emission of voice, as it proceeds through its various organs in his own person. For this latter task he has to expose his entire chest and neck to the view of his pupils, so that the latter, partly by sight-seeing, and partly by manual feeling, may observe how the various vocal organs of their teacher are exerted from the lungs upwards for the ultimate production of articulate sounds: and when groping along they have found their way up to his mouth, he has to open it wide, so that they may see, as best they can, the process of modification gone through in the buccal and nasal cavities, as also by the action of the tongue, after all which they are to hang on his teeth and lips to take from them the articulate sounds and words he desires to address to them.

In this feeling of the chest and neck of their teacher the pupils, each in turn, employ both hands first, in order to notice the function of the bronchial arteries, as they emanate respectively from the lungs and unite in the trachea. Thenceforward one hand is sufficient to pursue the action of the trachea, larynx and pharynx, whilst, at the same time, the pupil employs the other on corresponding organs in himself, in order that imitating, what he feels in his master, he may succeed in the effects both are endeavouring to accomplish.

What place are female teachers to have in this elaborate practice? It is enough to ask the question. It carries with it its own answer, and in point of fact they are not spoken of at all except in so far as they may be employed in teaching the female pupils various kinds of manual work; and the poor female mutes are doomed, it would seem, to undergo the same process as males, whether in separate schools by themselves or in mixed schools with the other sex, since no distinction of treatment is pointed out.

It is not expressly said that the oral system is unsuited to the general run of deaf-mutes, but this may be well inferred from all that is said about *backward pupils*, whose numbers are spoken of as being so considerable as to require separate establishments, or separate treatment, if received into the same establishment with the others.

And after this labour continued for eight entire years with so numerous a staff of teachers and superintendents to preside over the recreations in order to restrain the poor children from the use of signs and gestures, what is the result in the end? The object in view throughout is to impart speech to these speechless creatures, opening to them thereby the door to human society, so that hearing in a manner with their eyes by means of lip-reading, and speaking with their tongues like the rest of mankind, the system may accomplish in them the miracle of making the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak. This is the result so much spoken of, so much boasted of, and which has attracted so much of popular sympathy. But expectation and hope must ask the question, has this result been realized, and, if not fully, how far has the system succeeded? Here we are all on the same footing, and have access to the same test, the test of experience. "By their fruits you shall know them." This maxim of Divine Wisdom applies universally, and as we apply it to the oral system of teaching the deaf and dumb, its verdict is unfavourable as to that system being suited as a general system of education to be adopted in schools for the deaf and dumb in preference to the system of sign-teaching.

When we venture thus to speak of it as a *general system*, we are by all means ready to admit that it may succeed in particular cases, where special aptitude on the part of the pupils, long and earnest labour on the part of a teacher of exceptional ability and zeal, with the earnest co-operation of the family, may realise the wished-for success. But it is with a system, as being suitable, or unsuitable, for general adoption in schools we are concerned, and in this view of the oral system it must be said that experience so far affords it but scant advocacy.

Some few years ago, at a congress in London of directors and head-masters of various countries, the two systems were brought face to face, and, applying the test of experience, the supporters of the sign-system asked for the fruits of the opposite system. There were no fruits to exhibit. There were indeed various excuses advanced, all of which looked to the future, and explanations submitted, which insisted on the success of the system as indubitable and unquestionable; but as to actual results—there were none worth producing.

And now that the future has come, are we assured that the result test has proved satisfactory? The *Review*, which has been undertaken on behalf of the system, speaks here and there of its working.

It quotes, page 18, a passage from the *Rappel* of the previous 14th March to the following effect: “The deaf mute, who, during six years’ education, has learned to speak with his fellow pupils, or with his masters, and to read words on the methodic movement of their lips, will find himself on leaving the institution in a situation similar to that of a man, who, by great grammatical labour, having learned the mechanism of a language, goes into the city where it is spoken, and understands not a word of it. At this moment a project is under consideration in the Ministry of the Interior to remedy this inconvenience, and it is proposed to place the *new speaker*, on leaving the institution, in a trade, or agricultural school. A disciplined association of this sort, in which special superintendence can be afforded to the deaf and dumb, will enable them by degrees to understand the public.”

The *Review*, page 198, gives a report of a conference delivered to a numerous assembly at Limoges, by a M. Goguillot, Professor in the National Institution of Paris, at the close of which the Professor produced successively four pupils brought up for the occasion, and made them speak, with the applause of the entire assembly. It may well be supposed that these four pupils were specially selected, and made up by an elaborate preparation to display the fruits of the great National Institution. Nevertheless, the report, after mentioning the applause of the meeting, adds immediately that this display of feeling was accompanied by a marked sentiment of distress and pain on account of the difficulty the pupils showed in expressing themselves.

At page 27, the *Review* presents an article headed “Accent of the Deaf and Dumb,” which had been communicated to the Academy of Moral and Political Sciences, in Paris; and amongst the authorities quoted, Emile Blanchard, of the Academy, is

mentioned as having made a particular study of the human voice; and, speaking of the deaf and dumb, he remarked that their voice, so husky, so metallic, so guttural, without inflexion or modulation, has no place in the classification of accents that distinguish the human voice.

In another article, page 51, entitled *Review of Journals*, the paper called *l'Eclair*, a Belgian production of the city of Liege, which furnishes an article every week in its columns under the heading *Deaf Mutes*, gives an account, in its issue of the 12th April, 1885, of a pilgrimage to the Institution of St. Lambert for the Deaf and Dumb, near Brussels, and, after having spoken of the pilgrimage, the Editor observes with regard to the education of the deaf and dumb: "There is one thing that occasions reflection whenever we find ourselves amongst the deaf and dumb. We will permit ourselves to communicate it to the *International Review on the Teaching of the Deaf and Dumb*, requesting the Editor to be good enough to answer the following question:—How is it, that the instructed (*sic*) deaf-mutes, according to the method of articulation exclusively practised in our schools of Belgium since about 1865, DO NOT SPEAK amongst themselves, and are not even IN ANY DEGREE in a state to express themselves so as to be understood by speaking people? These PRACTICAL results are attested by all our boarding and day schools alike."

Having observed these very remarkable testimonies in the *Review*, I may be permitted to say something from myself of a visit I made some years ago to a private school for the deaf and dumb in the city of Lyons. The establishment had acquired a great reputation, being conducted on the oral system; and having but a few, some eight or ten, pupils, the master lavished all his energies upon them. Amongst the other lessons they were taught to repeat on the occasion of visits, they were specially trained, as the visitor entered, to rise and salute him with the words, "Bon jour, Monsieur." I can never forget the impression the salutation made upon me, as the poor creatures arose, and stretching their necks forward, laboured to force the words from, shall I say their lips, or mouth? Their lips and mouth had of course some share in the sounds emitted by simply allowing them free and open passage; but the sounds came from the throat with scarcely any modification by the organs immediately within the mouth. Strange sights give a strange impulse at times to the imagination, and I hope to be pardoned if I acknowledge, that hearing the poor creatures, and looking at them as they reached

forward their necks, and observing, moreover, their distressing effort to bring forth their voices, such as they were, the comparison came vividly before my mind of young cocks making their first essays to crow in imitation of the clear, loud-sounding notes of their parents of the poultry yard.

As for lip-reading, its use is circumscribed within very narrow limits indeed. It is confined, whilst the pupil is at school, to his teachers, and those he is in immediate communication with ; and when leaving school, the lip-language, as understood in the system, is of as little use to him almost as Greek, or any foreign language would be for social intercourse to a student, who had learned these languages by mere grammatical study. This results necessarily from the different conformation of men's lips, which in no two individuals is precisely alike. Various expedients are under consideration to meet this most serious defect, which otherwise must prove fatal to the entire system, and it is confessed in the *Review*, that so far no effective remedy has been discovered.

I recollect I had to render some service several years ago to a man who, after having arrived at mature life, had completely lost his hearing, but yet retained the free use of speech. He was brought to me by his wife. He understood her perfectly, as she moved her lips in a mere whisper, and at any distance that allowed him a view of her face, and they conversed with each other in that manner with the utmost freedom. I sought to imitate her, but in vain. He did not understand a word from me, and she explained it was the same case with every one else outside the family. I transacted my business with him in his several visits by writing, he reading, and answering distinctly without the least impediment in the use of his tongue. I have often thought what a phenomenon a deaf and dumb pupil would appear in a public school who could read his master's lips in the same way as this good man understood his wife ; but, at the same time, what a deceptive specimen it would be, should a general inference in favour of the system be taken from such a particular instance as between master and pupil only.

It is to be regretted that this oral system was not put forward in competition merely with the time-honoured system of signs. It aims at its complete suppression. Very many schools on the Continent have absolutely discontinued the one, and substituted the other, and when new schools are undertaken, the oral system is universally adopted. Popular sentiment is easily captivated in the cause of benevolence, and sympathy is only too prone to overlook the means,

in its desire to realise its purpose. Hence outside influence has put pressure on institutions, and enthusiastic essayists have not been wanting to experimentalize courageously under popular favour in what appeared to them a hopeful region for the discovery of important results. These results, however, it must be confessed, are as yet far away, and the system is already losing much of the hopefulness, with which it was commenced.

Just lately a friend has sent me a copy of the October number of a periodical entitled, *Quarterly Review of the Deaf-Mute Education* edited and issued in London under the auspices of a distinguished committee in the interests of the oral system; and in turning over its pages I find a very remarkable passage from a correspondent, in introducing which the *Review* observes under the heading:—

A WEIGHTY AUTHORITY.

The following passage will strike every one who reads it as being far too valuable to be kept within the confined limits of a private letter. As it occurs in the course of friendly correspondence, we are precluded from mentioning names, but not, we hope, from stating that the writer is a teacher of large experience, whose work has been done in different places, under diverse circumstances, at home and abroad, within her Majesty's dominions and out of them, that he has been brought face to face with both systems, having knowledge of both and working on both; seeing clearly, comprehending fully, and describing forcibly. The passage in his letter is as follows:—

“The oral system is capable of doing much more for the deaf, and much less for the deaf, than the sign system. It demands severe conditions for success—care, zeal, and EFFICIENCY on the part of the teacher, and if these be wanting the results will be simply disastrous—the pupils shall have neither speech nor language. I should not be at all surprised that in some years there will be a reaction, for I do not think that, in many of the French, Italian, or even English schools, the conditions for success exist. I have seen schools in France and *elsewhere*, and it was sad to see how very backward were the poor children in every branch of instruction. There must be superior teaching power, else there can be little or no progress; it was difficult enough to secure results under the former method—it is infinitely more so under the present.”

This testimony from one so competent is very discouraging as regards the oral system in public schools, and he has no hesitation in predicting that in some years there will be a reaction against it. This reaction may be slow in coming, for the enthusiasm enlisted, and honestly enlisted, in the cause will hope against hope to the last. Besides, it is more than humiliating to acknowledge failure, when the avowal would involve the reproach of having disappointed a benevolent public, who, relying on the pretensions so confidently put forth on behalf of the system, were induced to hope for successful results.

Let us turn now to say something of the sign-system, on which the new system has been set up to cast so much discredit, and what I purpose saying will not be according to theoretic views or pretensions,

for in dealing with popular matters it is always more satisfactory to have the actual fruits to look at than to gaze on mere prospects, however dazzling they may appear. I happen to be intimately acquainted with two schools, one for males, and the other for females, counting between them somewhere about 500 pupils, and, with that number, the largest deaf-mute institution in the world. It was founded some forty years ago, and in its foundation it adopted the sign-system, which it has all along steadfastly adhered to. They teach a course of primary education as extensive and as varied as is pursued under the National Board of Education in ordinary schools of children possessing all their faculties; and to test the working of these schools the public are freely admitted, not to admire *show-pupils* specially put forward for such occasions, but to visit the several classes at lesson hours, and witness the actual teaching and answering at leisure in each class, to be convinced of the fact that age for age, class for class, department for department, the schools can bear favourable comparison with the best conducted schools of speaking children in the country. There is no suspension of the intellectual faculties, as in the oral-system schools. The teacher takes hold of the child, mind and body, from the beginning, and teaching it very soon to write, he is in a position to employ the two agencies of methodic manual signs, and written language, for the advancement of the pupil. Likewise the pupils amongst themselves, having been regularly taught the language of methodic signs, converse freely with each other in recreation, and whenever the order and discipline of the school permit, and by so doing cultivate each other's minds, a most important advantage, of which the oral system robs its pupils in its earlier stages.

These two schools, situated at a short distance from each other at Cabra, in the neighbourhood of Dublin, are respectively under male and female communities, the Christian Brothers for the boys, and the Sisters of St. Dominic for the girls, both communities possessing within themselves an ample range of choice for teachers in sufficient numbers, and of special aptitudes for their work. And here is a notable advantage which the oral system deprives itself of in the contemplation of normal schools, which, of course, religious communities could not avail themselves of, the consequence of which must be especially disastrous as regards female deaf mutes. We have already pointed out that females, neither teachers nor pupils, could have any part in the physiological training proposed to be adopted in these establishments, and actually in operation in some particular schools.

As regards the teaching and practice of religion, it is found in both the schools under consideration that the pupils can be prepared for Confirmation, Confession, and Holy Communion, at the same ages as in ordinary schools of speaking children.

The oral system does not pretend to concern itself much about the religion of its pupils. The *Review*, feeling, as it would appear, this sad void, gladly parades in its pages an allocution addressed to the Bishop of Vannes upon the occasion of the first Communion and Confirmation of a female deaf-mute Institution by the chaplain, the Institution being under the direction of a female community, and conducted professedly according to the oral system.

With regard to the religious welfare of their pupils, the Cabra communities keep them in view after they have passed from under their care, and afford them the inestimable advantage of a spiritual retreat every year, and it is more than interesting to observe with what religious avidity they flock from every part of the country to avail themselves of these pious exercises. About 120 of each sex come together at a time, in their respective Institutions, and go through, in the most orderly and edifying manner, the course of observances traced out for the order of the retreat; and besides the consolation which their religious deportment affords to their former teachers, it is gratifying in the highest degree to notice by their dress and personal appearance that they generally occupy respectable positions in life, in the various careers Providence has opened to them. They come in succession as they are invited, and by that means all the former pupils are afforded in rotation the benefit of these annual retreats. But it may be said that this advantage is quite special, and presents no argument for or against either system. This may, indeed, be; but it must, at all events, be observed, that lip-reading affords no advantage to female deaf-mutes for the tribunal of penance. The very idea of such a licence is too revolting to dwell on it for a single moment.

It is alleged by the oralists that the other system is elliptical in expression, vague in signification, and irregular in collocation. These charges are most unfounded. Of course, education must ever be progressive, and in every department of life we learn by being corrected, and by correcting ourselves. But the schools at Cabra come every year before the public, not with a few select individuals specially prepared for exhibition, but in their full numbers. And, class after class, from the lowest to the highest, they are put through a course of exercises affording the most distinct evidence of knowledge as

extensive and varied as would do credit to any school of speaking children, and expressed, at least in the higher classes, with all grammatical correctness, whilst their sign-language amongst themselves, and with their teachers, is even more rapid than the language of speech as ordinarily spoken. These displays bring the public together in thousands, and all go away admiring what they could not believe, if they had not actually witnessed it. The *Review* gives us no account of the oral system being subjected to such a test of an entire school before the public, nor have we heard of it otherwise.

It is now time to consider the oral system in its final result. The Prince of Philosophers has laid down the maxim, and it is universally accepted that in every undertaking we are to keep the end in view, and that the end must be the rule of everything else. (*Respice finem. Finis regula ceterorum.*) In applying this test we are to bear in mind that the oral system proposes to itself as its end to deliver the deaf-mute from the misery of his condition by giving him speech to speak like the rest of mankind, and substituting sight-seeing for hearing by means of lip-reading. Let us see how this two-fold end is attained, and what advantage it presents in comparison with the system of methodic manual signs. For this purpose we will place in juxtaposition the pupils of both systems, as they have left their respective Institutions; and we are to suppose that, for the most part, trades or labour is their allotment in after-life. In the comparison, we are to recollect that the oralist has had a longer, a more expensive, and more laborious course of training, and that he must have had special aptitudes, leaving behind him so many others, who were considered as belonging to a backward class, for whom the system is not suitable.

We will first take account of lip-reading. It can be available, at best, only to a very limited extent. Let us suppose two of these oralists going along a street together. As walking together they can hold no conversation with each other upon anything that comes under their notice, or any other subject, for the obvious reason that they cannot see each other's lips. In so far the sign-taught pupil has a great advantage when walking with a fellow pupil. They converse freely, and understand each other perfectly.

If we suppose the oralist has for companion, not a fellow pupil, but an ordinary speaking person, his case is somewhat, but very little, better. He can speak to the latter, but the latter cannot reply to him, for the same reason as before, that neither can see the lips of the other, since both are walking along together.

Let us make another supposition, and imagine the oralist in

company with a number of ordinary people holding conversation with each other. What share can he have by his lip-reading in their conversation? In the first place he may not be accustomed to them, and, therefore, he cannot, as we have already seen, understand them in the current of their conversation. In the next place, not hearing them, how is he to know by looking with rapid glances on the right and left, who is speaking in the constant interchanges of one with another in the company? And in the third place, since the lips of the speakers are to him as a reading-book, how is it to be expected that on his account the company will hold themselves in a state of immobility, in order that he may read their lips as they speak, for this condition is insisted upon by the advocates of the system, and is obviously necessary from the nature of the case.

Let us shift the scene, and view him in the workshop, or at some employment, in company with others. His lip-reading can be of very little use to him. How can it be supposed that his companions will, at every moment, interrupt their work in order to afford him the advantage of looking into their faces and seeing too the motion of their lips? And to engage his attention, as their joint work may require, must they not have recourse in the first instance to signs of some sort for the purpose before attempting to speak to him? His lip-reading gives him in such circumstances very little advantage over the sign-taught deaf-mute, inasmuch as people at trade or labour employments have very little time or occasion to speak to each other, and for the limited range of their work they all understand the signs of their silent companion, and he theirs, in a few days. In fact, it may be said that their joint work is a medium of interpretation between them; and if it happen that there is any number of so taught deaf mutes together at the same employment, they understand each other as well by their signs as speaking people by their speech, an advantage they have over a number of oralists, who have no methodic signs for intercommunication. In family life, too, the sign-taught deaf mute has a similar advantage over the other, in case, as it so often unhappily occurs, there be several members of the family similarly affected.

We come now to speak of the oralist as having been taught to speak. This is the boasted triumph of the system, that it gives speech to the dumb, and therefore is to be hailed as infinitely transcending the old sign-system. But we must not allow ourselves to be unfairly hurried to a conclusion. Here we stand on level ground with the advocates and promoters of this system, and understanding the full meaning of our question, we venture to inquire what sort of

speech, and what sort of voice do they impart to the deaf and dumb ? Is it not a husky, metallic, guttural voice, a voice without inflexion or modulation, a voice destitute of the accents distinguishing the voice of mankind ? In so describing the sort of voice the oralist pupil acquires after eight years of incessant labour on his own part, and equally incessant labour on the part of his master, we only use the words elsewhere quoted of a distinguished member of the French Academy, who has made the human voice a special study. And have we not seen at Limoges, how an assembly, whilst applauding the exhibition of four pupils taught the oral system in the National Institution of Paris, and particularly selected for the occasion, were painfully impressed at witnessing the distressing efforts of the pupils to fetch up their poor voices from the depths of their throat ? But what becomes of this voice, this husky, this guttural, this metallic voice—what becomes of it ? The poor objects themselves are distressed in using it, and they see others distressed in listening to them. As a consequence both speakers and listeners become tired and dissatisfied with each other, and the speaking soon comes to an end, whereas the sign-taught deaf mute retains his signs, and uses them as a complete language with his deaf mute companions, at the same time that he finds them sufficient to indicate his wants and wishes in family life, as also in the limited circle of his workmates in the same trade and employment in which he earns his daily bread.

To sum up, therefore, what we have learned from the *International Review*, we think ourselves warranted in setting down the following conclusions respecting the oral system :—

1st. That it is not suitable to a general school, requiring, as it does, special aptitudes in its pupils, and rejecting large numbers who are capable of being taught the sign-system.

2ndly. That it requires a longer time, eight years instead of six, and, therefore, is so much more expensive.

3rdly. That to be uniform, which is an object universally called for, training schools are necessary for the teachers.

4thly. Religious communities are thereby excluded, and it is not seen how female teachers can avail themselves at all of such training.

5thly. If female teachers are excluded, how can female deaf mutes be taught, considering the process of teaching laid down.

6thly. The system requires a much larger number of teachers, not only on account of the longer course of training, but because of the small number of pupils each teacher can have charge of, and on this account, too, it is so much more expensive.

7thly. Intellectual work is for a considerable time interdicted, in order to make the child speak, as far as the effort is possible, and for the same reason the use of signs is prohibited during recreation to the great detriment of health at that tender age, whilst, at the same time, the pupils are deprived of the advantage of cultivating each other's minds by interchange of ideas and sentiments, at a time when the young mind is susceptible of most valuable culture by association with children of the same ages.

8thly. And as the pupils after eight years in the institution pass into the world at large, they cannot understand the lip-movements of others, their case being pretty much like that of those who have learned a foreign language theoretically, but cannot understand it, as they hear it spoken.

9thly. And whilst they do not understand others in looking at their lips, so others have great difficulty, and feel great pain, in endeavouring to understand them.

10thly. As a consequence both lip-reading and speaking come soon to an end, and, as a final result, the pupils have neither signs nor speech, and are, therefore, more destitute than the pupils of the methodic sign-system.

11thly. To prevent such a result the friends of the oral system are endeavouring to find out some plan, according to which the pupils, in their transition from school to the world at large, may be accustomed by degrees under special superintendence to associate with others, and maintain, at the same time, their lip-reading and speech. But it may be said, "*hoc opus, hic labor est*," and, so far, no such expedient has been discovered.

12thly.—On the whole, applying the philosopher's text, "*Respice finem—finis regula ceterorum*," the oral system is by no means a success, nor does it appear likely to succeed for the end to which it aspires, and apart from every other reason, the wide divergences and opposite views and methods of its advocates and promoters should appear to force upon us this conclusion as irresistible.

THE AUTHOR OF "CLAIMS OF THE UNINSTRUCTED DEAF-MUTE TO BE ADMITTED TO THE SACRAMENTS," AND OF "THE VINDICATION OF THE SAID CLAIMS."

POSTSCRIPT.—Since the preceding pages have been written, I have had a communication from the respected Chaplain of Cabra Institution, who, speaking of the oral system, says:—"Two children, with much more than ordinary intelligence, came to us after having spent seven years in an oral system school in Belgium, not only

unable to speak, or read the lips of anyone, but quite unable to write or understand the simplest words, knowing nothing of their prayers or catechism. Why were these children sent to Belgium? Their father, who is still living, told me it was a Priest that recommended him to send them to a school, where they would be taught to speak."

My reverend correspondent further speaks of another case, respecting which he says:—"It is only three weeks ago since I got the address of a Catholic boy, who had been recently sent to the Belfast Presbyterian School, solely because the father, having heard of the oral system, wished to have his boy learn to speak."

Such, naturally, is the great desire of parents to have these poor objects taught to speak, and in a manner to hear by lip-reading; but how sad to consider their delusion and the disappointment of their fond wishes, as their poor children return almost as destitute of instruction as when leaving them for the Institution!

** We have received from Rev. Dr. Campbell, O. Cist., a reply to Fr. Lockhart's letter on the Rosminian Philosophy, but as we announced the closing of the discussion, we would ask Dr. Campbell not to urge us to re-open it at present.—ED. I. E. R.

DOCUMENTS.

BEATIFICATION OF THE FIFTY-FOUR ENGLISH MARTYRS.¹

DECREE OF THE CONGREGATION OF SACRED RITES, CONFIRMING THE HONOUR GIVEN TO THE BLESSED MARTYRS JOHN CARDINAL FISHER, THOMAS MORE, AND OTHERS, PUT TO DEATH IN ENGLAND FOR THE FAITH, FROM THE YEAR 1535 TO 1583.

Anglia, Sanctorum insula ac Deiparae Virginis dos olim appellata, quemadmodum a primis usque Ecclesiae saeculis plurimorum Martyrum Passionibus illustrata fuerat, ita etiam cum diro schismate a Romanae Sedis obedientia et communione saeculo XVI. avulsa est, eorum testimonio non caruit, qui *pro hujus Sedis dignitate et orthodoxae Fidei veritate vitas suas cum sanguine ponere non dubitarunt* (Gregorius XIII., Constit. *Quoniam divinae bonitati*. Kalendis Maii, 1579). Huic praeclarissimae catervae nihil penitus deest quod eam tum compleat, tum ornet: non purpurae romanae majestas, non venerabilis Episcoporum honor, non Cleri utriusque fortitudo, non

¹ We are indebted to the kindness of the Very Rev. Canon Johnson, Secretary to His Eminence Cardinal Manning, for an authenticated copy of this important document.

sexus infirmioris inexpugnabilis firmitas. Hos inter eminet JOANNES FISHER Episcopus Roffensis, et S. R. E. Cardinalis, quem in suis Litteris Paulus III. appellat *sanctitate conspicuum, doctrina celebrem, aetate venerabilem, illius regni ac totius ubique Cleri decus et ornamētum*. A quo sejungi nequit vir saecularis THOMAS MORE Angliae Cancellarius, quem idem Pontifex meritis extollit laudibus, utpote *doctrina litterarum sacrarum excellentem, et veritatem adserere ausum*. Idcirco praeclarissimi quique rerum ecclesiasticarum scriptores unanimi censent calculo eos omnes pro tuenda, restituenda, et conservanda Catholica Fide sanguinem fudisse. Quin etiam Gregorius XIII. plura in eorum honorem indulsit, quae ad publicum ecclesiasticumque cultum pertinent; atque illud praecipuum, ut potestatem fecerit horum lipsana in consecrandis altaribus adhibendi, quando illa veterum Sanctorum Martyrum non suppeterent. Praeterea postquam in Templo S. Stephani ad Coelium montem Christi Martyrum Passiones per Nicolaum Circinianum udo tectorio pingi fecisset; permisit etiam, ut in Templo Sanctissimae Trinitatis Anglorum de Urbe, ab eodem auctore, eademque ratione Anglicanae Ecclesiae Martyres antiqui recentiorisque aevi pariter exhiberentur, quos inter illi etiam qui ab anno 1535 ad 1583 sub Henrico Rege et Elisabetha pro Catholica Fide ac Romani Pontificis Primatu mortem obierant. Quae martyriorum repraesentationes eo in Templo depictae, videntibus ac probantibus Romanis Pontificibus Gregorii Successoribus, ad duo saecula permanserunt, donec nefariorum hominum injuria sub finem elapsi saeculi perierunt. Mansere tamen illarum ectypa: quippe anno 1584 Romae cum privilegio ejusdem Gregorii XIII. aere cusa fuerant, hoc appposito titulo: *Sanctorum Martyrum, qui pro Christo, Catholicaeque Fidei veritate asserenda antiquo recentiorique persecutionum tempore mortem in Anglia subierunt, Passiones*. Ex quo monumento, sive ob subjectum elogium, sive ob alia indubia indicia, plures ejusmodi Martyres suo nomine comperti sunt, nempe quinquaginta quatuor. Sunt autem,—

Passi sub Henrico Rege; *Joannes Fisher*, Episcopus Roffensis, S. R. E. Cardinalis; *Thomas More*, Angliae Cancellarius; *Margarita Pole*, Comitissa Salisburiensis, Cardinalis Poli mater; *Ricardus Reynolds*, Ordinis S. Birgittae; *Joannes Haile*, Sacerdos; octodecim Carthusiani,—nimirum, *Joannes Houghton*, *Augustinus Webster*, *Robertus Laurence*, *Gulielmus Exmew*, *Humphredus Middlemore*, *Sebastianus Newdigate*, *Joannes Rochester*, *Jacobus Walworth*, *Gulielmus Greenwood*, *Joannes Davy*, *Robertus Salt*, *Gualterus Pierson*, *Thomas Green*, *Thomas Scryven*, *Thomas Redyng*, *Thomas Johnson*,

Ricardus Bere, et Gulielmus Horne; Joannes Forest, Sacerdos Ordinis S. Francisci; Joannes Stone, Ordinis S. Augustini; quatuor Sacerdotes Saeculares,—Thomas Abel, Eduardus Powel, Ricardus Fetherston, Joannes Larke; Germanus Gardiner, laicus.

Sub Elisabetha vero: Sacerdotes,—*Cuthbertus Mayne, Joannes Nelson, Everardus Halse, Rodolphus Sherwin, Joannes Payne, Thomas Ford, Joannes Skert, Robertus Johnson, Gulielmus Fylby, Lucas Kirby, Laurentius Richardson, Gulielmus Lacy, Ricardus Kirkman, Jacobus Hudson, seu Tompson, Gulielmus Hart, Ricardus Thirkeld, Thomas Woodhouse, et — Plumtree.* Item tres Sacerdotes e Societate Jesu. *Edmundus Campion, Alexander Briant, et Thomas Cottam.* Denique, *Joannes Storey, Juris utriusque Doctor; Joannes Felton, et Thomas Sherwood, laici.*

Horum tamen Martyrum causa ad haec usque tempora nunquam agitari coeperat. Olim quidem, 1860, el. me. Cardinalis Nicolaus Wiseman Archiepiscopus Westmonasteriensis, aliique Angliae Episcopi, sa. me. Pio IX. Pontifici Maximo preces obtulerant, ut per totam Angliam Festum institueretur in honorem omnium Sanctorum Martyrum, nempe illorum etiam, *qui licet nondum vindicati, recentioribus temporibus pro Catholica Religione tuenda, et praesertim pro auctoritate Sedis Apostolicae asserenda, per nefariorum hominum manus occubuerunt, et ad sanguinem usque restiterunt.* Verumtamen cum, juxta vigentem Sacrorum Rituum Congregationis praxim, Festum nonnisi de illis Dei Famulis institui possit, quibus ecclesiasticus cultus a Sede Apostolica jam delatus, et rite recognitus fuerit, preces illae nullum effectum sortitae sunt. Quapropter postremis haece annis novae preces per Emum. ac Rnum. Dnum. Cardinalem Henricum Manning, hodiernum Archiepiscopum Westmonasteriensem, et alios Angliae Episcopos, ad Sanctissimum Dominum Nostrum LEONEM XIII. Pontificem Maximum delatae sunt, una cum Ordinario Processu in Anglia confecto, aliisque authenticis documentis, in quibus tum probationes Martyrii pro iis qui ab anno 1535 ad 1583 passi sunt, tum etiam praedicta indulta Romanorum Pontificum pro prioribus illis nuper memoratis continentur.

Placuit Sanctissimo Domino Nostro totius negotii cognitionem Peculiari Coetui aliquot S. R. E. Cardinalium, et Officialium Sacrorum Rituum Congregationis committere; praevia Exegesi per R. P. D. Augustinum Caprara S. Fidei Promotorem conficienda. Qua in Particulari Congregatione die 4 Decembris labentis anni ad Vaticanum coadunata, infrascriptus Cardinalis Dominicus Bartolini eidem S. Congregationi Praefectus, et Causae Relator, sequens proposuit Dubium:

“*An propter peculiaria Romanorum Pontificum indulta, relate ad antiquiores Angliae Martyres, qui ab anno 1535 ad 1583, pro Fide Catholica, et pro Romani Pontificis in Ecclesia Primatu mortem obierunt, et quorum Passiones, auctoritate Gregorii XIII. Pont. Max., in Templo SSmae. Trinitatis Anglorum de Urbe olim depictae, et Romae anno 1584, cum privilegio ejusdem Pontificis, aere cusae sunt, constet de indulto publico ecclesiastico cultu, sive de casu excepto a Decretis sa. me. Urbani Papae VIII., in casu et ad effectum de quo agitur.*”
 Emi. porro ac Rmi. Patres, et Praelati Officiales, audito scripto et voce praefato S. Fidei Promotore, reque mature discussa quoad recensitos quinquaginta quatuor Martyres, respondendum consuerunt :
 “*Affirmative, seu Constare de casu excepto.*”

Super quibus omnibus facta Sanctissimo Domino Nostro LEONI PAPAE XIII. per me subscriptum Secretarium fideli relatione, idem Sanctissimus Dominus Noster sententiam Sacrae Congregationis Particularis approbare dignatus est. Die 9 Decembris 1886.

Praesens autem Decretum expeditum fuit hac die 29 Decembris sacra Thomae Episcopo Cantuariensi Martyri, cujus fidem et constantiam hi Beati Martyres tam strenue imitati sunt.

D. CARDINALIS BARTOLINIUS,
S. R. C. Praefectus.

L. ✠ S.

LAURENTIUS SALVATI,
S. R. C. Secretarius.

DECREES OF THE S. CONGREGATION OF INDULGENCES.

SUMMARY.

An Indulgence of 300 days, which may be gained *semel tantum in die*, has been granted to the recitation of the Litany of the Sacred Name of Jesus.

Heretofore it was necessary for each Bishop to apply for this Indulgence for the people of his diocese ; now the grant is made absolute and general. The Litany indulgenced, is that which was approved by Pius IX. in June, 1862, and is printed in our ordinary prayer books.

EX S. CONGREGATIONE INDULGENTIARUM.

DECRETUM

URBIS ET ORBIS.

Sanctissimum Jesu Nomen semper et ubique terrarum praecipua veneratione et singulari prorsus honore Christifideles prosequuti sunt ;
non enim aliud nomen est sub coelo datum hominibus, in quo oporteat

nos salvos fieri (Actor. IV., 12). Ad hanc venerationis et honoris significationem, plurima religionis obsequia plurimasque laudes pietas christiana excogitavit, quibus Nomen augustissimum digne et sancte celebraretur.

Hisce profecto accensendae sunt plures Litaniae in honorem SSmi. Nominis Jesu compositae, quae, licet non omnes probabiles, late tamen per orbem diffusae sunt. In quorum praeconiorum genere ne varietas haberetur haud undequaque laudabilis, sa. mem. Summus Pontifex Pius IX. *Litaniae Sanctissimi Nominis Jesu*, quae unice in posterum retinerentur ab omnibus Christifidelibus, per Sacrum Consilium legitimis ritibus tuendis, die 8 Junii 1862, approbavit, fecitque eidem Sacro Consilio facultatem declarandi, Christifidelibus, qui eas devote recitaverint, Indulgentiam trecentorum dierum in forma Ecclesiae consueta concessum iri, quando SS. Antistites pro sua quisque dioecesi hanc gratiam speciatim petiissent.

Quum autem nuperrime a pluribus Episcopis SSmo. D. N. Leoni divina providentia Papae XIII. preces exhibitae fuerint, ut suarum dioecesium Christifidelibus praefatas *Litaniae* recitantibus ipsam hanc Indulgentiam elargiri dignaretur, Sanctitas Sua desiderans, ut christiani populi pietas erga laudabile Jesu Nomen magis magisque foveatur et augeatur devotio, hisce potissimum temporibus, quibus Nomen illud augustissimum tam audacter tamque frequenter impiorum injuriis impetitur, in Audientia habita die 16 Januarii 1886 ab infra-scripto Secretario Sac. Congregationis Indulgentiis Sacrisque Reliquiis praepositae, ad omnes utriusque sexus Christifideles, qui corde saltem contrito ac devote recitaverint *Litaniae Sanctissimi Nominis Jesu*, prouti praesenti Decreto subnectuntur et non aliter, praefatam Indulgentiam *tercentum dierum*, animabus quoque Purgatorii applicabilem et semel tantum in die lucrandam, benigne extendit. Quam gratiam Sanctitas Sua *in perpetuum* suffragari voluit et absque ulla Brevis expeditione. Contrariis quibuscumque non obstantibus.

Datum Romae ex Secretaria S. Congregationis Indulgentiarum et SS. Reliquiarum die 16 mensis Januarii anni 1886.

I. B. CARD. FRANZELIN, *Praefectus*.

FRANCISCUS DELLA VOLPE, *Secretarius*.

INDULGENCED FORM OF DAILY OFFERING.

SUMMARY.

Indulgence of 100 days, *semel in die*, granted to the recital of the following form of daily offering in honour of the Sacred Heart of Jesus, and the Holy Heart of Mary.

FORMULA RECTAE INTENTIONIS.

“Domine Jesu Christe, in unione illius divinae intentionis, qua Ipse in terris per sacratissimum Cor tuum laudes Deo persolvisti, et nunc continenter in Sanctissimo Eucharistiae Sacramento ubique terrarum persolvis usque ad consummationem saeculi, ego per hanc diem integram, nulla minima parte excepta, ad imitationem Sacratissimi Cordis B. Mariae semper Virginis Immaculatae, tibi offero omnes meas intentiones et cogitationes, omnes meos affectus et desideria, omnia mea opera et verba.”

SSmus. Dnus. Noster Leo Papa XIII. in audientia habita die 19 Decembris 1885 ab infrascripto Secretario S. Congregationis Indulgentiis Sacrisque Reliquiis praepositae, benigne concessit Indulgentiam *centum* dierum, semel in die lucranda ab omnibus utriusque sexus Christifidelibus, qui, corde saltem contrito, exhibitam precem devote recitaverint. Praesenti in perpetuum valituro absque ulla Brevis expeditione. Contrariis non obstantibus quibuscumque.

Datum ex Secretaria ejusdem S. Congregationis die 19 Decembris 1885.

I. B. CARD. FRANZELIN, *Praefectus*.

FRANCISCUS DELLA VOLPE, *Secretarius*.

NOTICES OF BOOKS.

THE BATTLE OF THE FAITH IN IRELAND. By Canon O'Rourke, P.P., M.R.I.A. Dublin: Duffy & Sons. 1887.

IF it be true that false history, no less than false swearing should be stigmatized as a conspiracy against truth, it must also be acknowledged that, for detecting and exposing so base a purpose, no means is more effective than the sacred character of an oath, invested with the required conditions of truth, justice, and judgment, or the evidence of trustworthy history, as the faithful guardian of the records of the past. To discriminate between the truth and falsehood of historical statements, and ascertain what is certain, or doubtful, or groundless in a narrative that passes for history, especially when statements are conflicting, and great issues are involved, is the grave and solemn duty of a writer whose characteristic qualifications should be candour, honesty, and fidelity. Not unmoved by these, or somewhat similar reflections, and knowing the value of a Nation's history, without which as Mr. Sexton lately observed, there could be no National aspirations,

the author of "The Battle of the Faith in Ireland," on finding in the records of the political and religious relations of Ireland with England, from the reign of Henry VIII. to the present day, much that is not sufficiently known, and much that is not truly stated, carefully reviewed the story of that long and eventful period.

In the performance of this arduous task he has corrected many errors, exhibited important events in a clearer light, and presented in an attractive form the results of wide and careful research. Nor can the reader fail to be convinced that the learned Canon's investigations have been conducted with evident impartiality, judicial calmness, and critical acumen.

"The Battle of the Faith in Ireland" is not designed as a complete history of Ireland for the period of which it treats. "His object," writes the author in the preface, "was to cull from the materials before him, such historical facts as, on the one hand, would serve to show the wily astuteness and unflagging energy with which the enemies of the Catholic Faith carried on their work, and on the other, the continuous battle that was waged against them—a battle sometimes well planned and successful—often desultory, ill-directed, and ending in disaster, but never abandoned." Though the scope of the author does not embrace the history of the period in its completeness, he has contrived to introduce, in subordination to his plan, most of the instructive and interesting materials which make up the staple of such a history. The great events of the period, such as the Plantation of Munster and Ulster, the War of 1641, Cromwell's career in Ireland, the two sieges of Limerick—and battles, whether in a military sense, such as Benburb and Rathmines, or of a different kind—the battles of Legislation, Education, and Proselytism—are treated with great fulness, and a thoroughness which bespeaks the most searching inquiry.

In a brief notice of a work of 600 pages, dealing with the more important events, and numerous minor incidents of the history of Ireland during four hundred years, all that can be aimed at is to invite attention to the character of the work, and to the claims of the writer to be heard in the cause he so ably pleads, with some analysis of the various and complex subjects it comprises. The character of the work has been defined in the text of the preface already cited. Of the claims of the author we must not presume to speak, leaving to the reader to form the only judgment at which he can arrive by resting on the evidence which the work itself so abundantly affords. We pass, then, to a brief analysis of some of the contents.

The work is divided into twenty-five chapters, with valuable foot-notes, and three appendices. In the earlier chapters is contained an account of the measures taken by Henry VIII. and Elizabeth to uproot

Catholicity in Ireland, of the failure of George Browne's episcopate, of the persecuting laws of Elizabeth of the terrible enactments of the Irish Parliament of 1559-60, and of the "Plantation of Munster." The sketch of the career of Miler Magrath and the description of the reception of the young Earl of Desmond in Munster, are sure to be read with a lively interest. The third chapter in which the savage cruelty of the persecutors, and the appalling sufferings of the Martyrs who cheerfully died for the Faith, are vividly depicted, whilst inspiring us with horror of the guilt and brutality of the subtle and bloodthirsty enemies of the true Church, must awaken in us a feeling of love and veneration for the heroic fortitude of the victims, and of deep thankfulness to God in having supported with his grace, for their benefit and ours, those noble sons of St. Patrick in the fearful ordeal to which they were subjected.

The author proceeds to describe the condition of Catholics under James I., the Confiscation and Plantation of Ulster, and the Irish Court of Wards. The episode relating to the Geraldines is full of interest, and is, indeed, a good specimen of the care and skill of the writer in investigating facts, and weighing the evidence bearing upon them. The condition of the Catholics under Charles I., and an account of the "Graces" and of the Galway Grand Jury are given in chapter vii.

We regret that our limits do not admit of more than a mere reference to the greatest events with which the author had to deal: the War of 1641, the Confederation of Kilkenny, Cromwell's Campaign in Ireland, and the Cromwellian Settlement. Our regret is the greater by reason of the importance of these subjects, and on account of the impress of the master-hand with which the labour, the learning, and the ability of the author have enabled him to set them forth. New light shed on several obscure points, important links supplied, misstatements corrected and exposed, and a just interpretation of significant facts are some of the features which we cannot fail to observe in the vivid picture he has given us of a period when the Faith of Ireland was cruelly persecuted and all hopes of National life well nigh extinguished.

For the important events relating to the Catholics of Ireland during the Restoration, and in the reigns of the Sovereigns of England since the death of Charles II., we must refer the reader to the work under notice.

Before bringing our remarks to a close we desire to direct attention to the exposure, coming so opportunely, of "Souperism," and of sham discussions and other honourable courses of proselytism, derived by the author from sources which are beyond suspicion.

Were we to refer to the style of the writer and find a place for a

specimen of his powers in word-painting, we should not hesitate about culling extracts from chapter xvii., where the character of Cromwell is drawn with touches that bring us into the living presence of the man—hero, or hypocrite, as he is variously estimated by friend and foe.

From one purport of the author we withhold assent—that of his leaving to others the “interesting field of Irish History and Catholic effort which surrounds Emancipation.” For may it not be permitted to us to hope that the good Providence that has restored the health of the gifted author of “*The Battle of the Faith in Ireland*” will preserve him for the accomplishment of the task he has assigned to others?

The Battle of the Faith in Ireland still continues. The weapons are altered in some respects, but the warfare is still carried on and will continue to the end. In the conflict between truth and error we are furnished with a new equipment for the combat in the records of the heroic defence of Catholic Faith in Ireland, and of the baffled attempts to crush it. For this acquisition we owe a deep debt of gratitude to the accomplished author, and we feel assured that “*The Battle of the Faith in Ireland*” will be welcomed as a great boon, not only by every one who loves Ireland and the Faith of St. Patrick, but also by every scholar who is anxious to know the true story of Ireland in some of its gravest aspects, or may care to interpret the present condition of the country by the indispensable aid of a retrospect of its condition in the past.

D. G.

THE LIFE OF ANTONIO ROSMINI SERBATI, FOUNDER OF THE INSTITUTE OF CHARITY. Edited by William Lockhart, Graduate of Oxford, Exeter College. Second Edition, in two volumes. London: Kegan Paul, Trench & Co. 1886. 8vo.

THIS Life of the celebrated and holy Founder of the Order of Charity had been originally undertaken by another compiler, who lived only to complete and publish a first volume. It soon got into circulation, and a new edition was required by the reading public. It then devolved on the distinguished Procurator of the Order in Rome and Rector of St. Etheldreda's, London, to supply the want; accordingly the Life, as already issued, has been recast, while the first volume was reprinted and republished together with the second volume, in a type elegant and clear, as also in a smaller and less expensive form.

The subject of this biography was truly a great and a good man, born towards the close of the last century, and the scion of a noble family that lived at Rovereto, among the Tyrolese Alps. The period of his birth was marked by the first invasion of the French under

Napoleon Bonaparte. Already has appeared in the Italian language the work of Don Paoli, "*Della Vita di Antonio Rosmini Serbati*," published at Rome in 1830, while Tomaseo and various other writers have issued different memoirs treating about his career, writings and acts. From these and from independent sources of information, Father Lockhart has been enabled to prepare a more exhaustive biography in the English language, cast in a methodical shape, and graced with a style of composition to be expected from his literary training and cultivated mind. He labours, indeed, under the disadvantage of not having known the subject of his memoir personally, although living contemporaneously with him; however, the biographer has had not only the trustworthy testimonies and traditions of those intimately acquainted with the Founder of his Order, but even he has gleaned those anecdotal reminiscences of Rosmini, which were communicated by familiars and confidants. The hidden life and the life of action are both clearly portrayed, and the result furnishes a finished portrait of a noble and most interesting character.

From early youth to the close of his eventful days, Rosmini loved to labour with thorough self-devotedness for his own sanctification and for the welfare of his fellow-man. Ardent and persevering, he was always engaged on some project to promote God's greater glory, the extension of His kingdom on earth, and the triumph of religion over the insidious and unscrupulous efforts of the enemies of Holy Church. Truth he honestly and fearlessly loved for her own sake, while his philosophical and theological studies were directed to render her form more attractive and useful in an age when scepticism and cynicism so generally abound, and when pedantic opinion or conceited dogmatisms seems to suffice for the acceptance even of educated men.

Rosmini has written many learned works which have given rise to criticisms and controversies in the schools and in public journals, but we do not think that this is the place for the discussion of so profound and large a subject. If discussed at all it should be treated with a completeness, which must be impossible in the short space ordinarily allowed for a notice of a book. It may be well to state, moreover, that Our Holy Father, Pope Leo XIII., in a Letter addressed to the Archbishops of Lombardy and Piedmont, dated January, 1882, and referring to Rosmini, urges them to influence Catholic journals "from discussing questions which endanger peace among Catholics concerning the doctrines of an illustrious philosopher, one of the most renowned among modern writers." This is indeed a glowing tribute of admiration from the Sovereign Pontiff.

Not the least important section of the biography refers to the conception and establishment of that Religious Order in the Church, with which the name of Rosmini is inseparably connected. Trials and persecutions were borne with patience and fortitude, until the Rules and Constitutions framed with judgment and prudence were accepted and approved by the Holy See. Again, the course of public affairs during the exciting Revolutions of 1848 and 1849 in Italy, obliged him to occupy a prominent position; and the details contained in Father Lockhart's work have added a chapter to the history of the Papal States and of the Church hitherto, we believe, unwritten. Antonio Rosmini departed this life on the 1st of July, 1855. Having lived in a singularly holy manner, his charity and humility were most conspicuous during his last illness, and at his dying moments. His remains now repose at Stessa, in the College Chapel, where at present may be seen that beautiful marble statue, depicted in a frontispiece to the second volume, a fine steel engraved portrait and an autograph of Rosmini adorning the first volume. The history of his foundations, and especially that recording the English Mission of the Fathers of Charity, abounds in matters of incident and edification. We in Ireland have profited by the labours of the Fathers of Charity, and the saintly Gentili gave his life for us in the cause of charity. His remains repose in Glasnevin Cemetery, where, after a lapse of forty years, the Catholic people of Dublin look with deep veneration on his tomb.

Nor must we omit to mention, what his own humility would feign conceal, that Father Lockhart himself conducted most successful missions in Ireland, after Father Gentili had passed to his eternal reward. A truer friend to the Irish poor and to the cause of Ireland in London does not exist, while his large-hearted sympathies and efforts are ever exercised most actively in every good work, tending to promote education, morality, and religion. His eloquence and his writings need no encomium. And while we close with these words, we can heartily congratulate him on this latest literary labour of love. It is a valuable addition to the very best works of Catholic biography, well designed and well ordered, clear in statement as in style, accurate in dates and historical incidents, intuitive of motives and appreciative of intellectual development. The author presents the results of his research and discrimination, with the generous sensibility and veneration for his eminent and saintly founder, so becoming and expected from him, while justly due to his illustrious subject.

J. O'HANLON.

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

MARCH, 1887.

SKETCH OF THE HISTORY OF THE COUNCIL OF TRENT.—II.

DIFFICULTIES, as we have seen, which seemed to render the assembling of a General Council impossible, rapidly sprang up. To all appearances the Church in one of the greatest conflicts of her eventful history, was to be deprived through the temper and condition of the age, of the assistance and guidance of the assemblage of her pastors. Nor was the Council of Trent singular in this respect, it only exhibited a striking similarity with the other great œcumenical gatherings of the Church of Christ. Difficulties in every century stood in the way of councils. The persecutions of the first three centuries rendered it impossible for the collective body of bishops to meet, and their assemblages in after ages were possible only when the obstacles that thronged their path had been surmounted. One may wonder at this, yet when he considers the immense advantages that accrue to the Church from her Councils, when he looks back on the peace and tranquility which they have produced, his wonder must cease ; he cannot be surprised that the Church has experienced bitter opposition in combating and defeating the defiant enemies to whom age after age has given birth.

When, however, the peculiar state of the Christian world in the middle of the sixteenth century is taken into account, we must expect to see obstacles of a peculiar nature, to be surmounted only by untiring and well-directed zeal. We

must expect to find protracted negotiations, often interrupted, often failing. We cannot trace in detail the varying phases of these endeavours to assemble the Council; nor can we attempt to touch upon, except lightly, the rivalries of princes, the wars, public calamities, and other events which had a more or less intimate relation with the convocation of the Council. For the fuller treatment of these, and other matters to be noticed hereafter, we can only refer the reader to the standard accounts of Pallavicino, or to the excellent Work of the Rev. J. Waterworth. Indeed we almost feel that some apology is due for having introduced in our former paper so many details of negotiations connected with the first preparatory stages of the Council. To omit such details altogether might lead the uninitiated to suppose that the work of assembling the body of bishops was one of no great difficulty. Yet, having given a specimen of the protracted and multiplied forms which the preliminaries of the Council inevitably assumed, we must in future pass lightly over many particulars which could be introduced with advantage only in a formal history of the Council, and would assuredly be out of place in such a sketch as we have undertaken.

The new Pontiff, Paul III., was long favourably disposed towards the convocation of a General Council, and this disposition had no small influence in his election. Now that he had ascended the Papal throne, he was in a position to further a project upon which he had for many years looked with favour. In promoting the convocation of the Council, he had to meet with difficulties which proved that Clement had not exaggerated the obstacles to such an assembly. Paul treated these obstacles with such caution, that some writers charge him, without reason, with having created the difficulties which arose. His wishes for the Council are unwarrantably stigmatised as simulated; he consented, hostile writers tell us, to the convocation of a Council which he hoped would never be held. Yet from the beginning of his Pontificate his efforts for the convocation of the Council were unwearied. Though fresh obstacles sprung up year after year he was not discouraged. He persevered in his efforts, and after many years of anxious labour he had the

happiness of seeing these efforts crowned with the success they deserved.

Elected on the 13th of October, 1534, he held his first Consistory the 13th of November following. Here he declared his intention of convoking a Council, and of reforming discipline. Sure of the co-operation of the cardinals, he exhorted them to prepare by a reformation of themselves and of the entire Roman Court. He appointed a commission to draw up a scheme of reformation, and to the prelates composing this commission he gave power over every tribunal in Rome.

Anxious to secure the concurrence of the Princes of Europe, he sent nuncios to them. He summoned Vergerius¹ to Rome, and sent him on a special mission to Germany. His instructions were, to deliver the briefs to all the princes of the country, Protestant as well as Catholic, to invite them to the Council, yet not to mention those conditions of its convocation, which might be a source of unpleasantness. He was to treat only of the place where the Council was to be held.

The proposal of Mantua as the most convenient place for the Assembly of the Council was accepted by the Catholics, but rejected by the Protestants. The Protestant princes were upheld in their opposition to the Council by the kings of England and France. Henry refused to acknowledge any Council summoned by the Pope. Francis contended that, if Mantua were selected, Papal and Imperial interests would unduly prevail in a town situated in that part of Italy.

Paul was not discouraged in his enterprise, either by the ill success of the mission of Vergerius, or by the hostile disposition of the Protestants. Vergerius returns to Rome. About this time (April, 1536) the emperor arrived in Rome from Tunis. Vergerius made a verbal report of the state of Germany to the Emperor and to the Pope. Charles had many interviews with Paul, and the result of these meetings was soon made known. At a consistory, Paul proposed the convocation of the Council for Mantua, a fief of the empire.

¹ Peter Paul Vergerius, Bishop of Capo d'Istria. He and his brother, J. B. Vergerius, Bishop of Pola, in Istria, fell away from the Faith. Peter Paul died at Tübingen, 1565. *Vide Feller.*

a city against which no reasonable objections could be made by the German princes. The cardinals assented to the proposal. The Bull of convocation was prepared and approved, and published in the beginning of June, 1536, summoning the Council to meet on the 23rd of May, 1537, at Mantua, for the extirpation of heresy, for the establishment of peace in the Church, and for devising means to resist the encroachments of the infidels.

The Pope sent Nuncios to the various countries of Europe, to make known the glad tidings of the convocation of the Council. Everywhere the news of the coming Council was received with manifestations of unbounded joy, but nowhere was the convocation of the long-wished-for Council received with sentiments of deeper gratitude than in Germany. Long a prey to religious troubles, the Catholics of Germany saw at length a prospect of peace for their Church. But the Protestants were far from joining in the manifestations of gratitude of their Catholic fellow-countrymen. Assembling at Smalkald, in February, 1537, they drew up the pretexts upon which they rejected the proposed Council. The Papal Nuncio and the Envoy of the Emperor endeavoured to persuade them to accept the Council. Yet, though the weakness of their pretexts was clearly demonstrated, they persevered in their opposition. With these princes the King of England made common cause. Having broken away from the centre of unity, he soon persuaded himself that to princes alone pertained the right of summoning Councils and that the claims of the Holy See to that power were completely groundless.

These difficulties, long foreseen by Paul, had no effect on the preparations for the Council. The obstinacy of the Protestants surprised no one. Not so, however, the action of the Duke of Mantua. He demanded that the Pope should maintain in Mantua, at the expense of the Holy See, a guard of one hundred and fifty infantry and one hundred cavalry to prevent any disorder arising from the gathering of strangers to the Council. The Pontiff, for many reasons, rejected this unexpected demand, and broke off the arrangement for Mantua. New difficulties arose in the choice of another city, and Paul

compelled by the force of circumstances, prorogued the Council until November, 1537. To select a suitable city had become a matter of the greatest difficulty. Whilst Ferdinand wished that a city within the limits of the empire should be selected, Francis declared, that neither he nor his representatives would attend a Council held in a feudatory city of the Empire. The Christian Princes of Europe, though recognizing the power of the Pope to convoke a Council, rendered that power of little avail by their objections to proposals of the Holy See. The difficulties thrown by them in the choice of a place would have rendered the Council impossible, had not Paul laboured to overcome all obstacles, with a perseverance that deserved to triumph.

Passing over the bloody war into which the rivalry of Charles and Francis plunged the half of Europe; the efforts, crowned with partial success, of the Queens of Hungary and France, to procure a peace; the negotiations which resulted in the choice of Vicenza, a city in Venetian territory; the preparations for the holding of the Council there; we come to the efforts which the aged Pontiff made to procure the blessing of a permanent peace, so necessary for the proposed Council. When his Nuncios failed, he determined to take upon himself the entire burden of negotiating a treaty. He had hopes that he would be more successful than his representatives had been. It was arranged that Charles should come to Savona, and that Francis should remain in the neighbourhood of Nice. Paul set out from Rome on his pacific mission. When he arrived at Piacenza, he was informed that, as yet, not a single bishop had come to Vicenza, and, as only a few days remained before the time appointed for the opening of the Council, a new prorogation was necessary. Paul continued on his mission, opened negotiations between the rival monarchs, but was unable to remove the obstacles that stood in the way of a permanent peace. After a month of unwearyed efforts he prevailed on the two sovereigns to sign a truce for ten years, and, desiring to reap the fruit of this temporary peace, he summoned the Council for the Feast of Easter, 1539.

Fresh obstacles soon arose. Charles, lately so anxious for

the Council, saw that there was no hope that the Protestants would recognize it. The Council by condemning them, might embroil his empire in civil war. The Protestant Princes were united and determined. The foreign enemies of the empire were anxiously watching the course of events in Germany. Charles now wished to postpone the holding of the Council, and to make another effort to reconcile the Lutherans. At his request Paul sent a Legate to Germany. The mission, as the Pontiff had foreseen, proved a failure. All hopes of a conciliation were groundless; truth could not, without at once ceasing to be truth, concede anything to error. Negotiations, however, follow; but they did not bring the assembling of the long-wished-for Council nearer. Again and again is the opening postponed. At length, Paul, wearied with the opposition, resolved to make known to the Christian world the obstacles that lay in his way. He published a Bull declaring that the difficulties of the times, compelled him to prorogue the Council indefinitely, yet adding that he was most anxious to convoke it at the earliest possible opportunity.

Charles, having put down the rising in Ghent, again turned his attention to the reconciliation of the Lutherans. He summoned a diet to assemble at Spires in the month of May, 1540. As an epidemic broke out at Spires, he transferred the Diet to Haguenau, fifteen miles north of Strasburg. A colloquy began here, was continued at Worms and Ratisbon, during 1541 and 1542, and ended, as might be expected, in disappointment. The Diet opened at Spires, in February, 1542. In the next month the Nuncio of the Holy See arrived at Spires, and was introduced to the Diet. He laid before the assembly the offer of aid from Paul against the Turks, and the proposal of Ferrara, Mantua, Bologna, Cambrai and Trent, as places suitable for the Council. The Diet gratefully accepted the offer of aid against the Turks, and with regard to the Council, Ferdinand and the Catholic members of the Diet accepted Trent. The Lutherans at once protested against the selection of Trent, and against a Council presided over by the Pope.

Meanwhile active preparations were going on at Rome,

and, after long and mature deliberation, the Bull of Indiction for Trent was finally agreed upon. It was published on the feast of SS. Peter and Paul, convoking the Council for the 1st of November, 1542. It was now twenty-five years since Luther raised the standard of revolt, by affixing his famous ninety-five propositions to the door of the church attached to the Castle of Wittenberg.

The Sovereign Pontiff nominated three Legates to represent him at the Council and preside in his name. These were Cardinals Morone, Parisi and Pole. They received their commissions in October, and were instructed to make known to the Christian Princes their arrival in Trent; to affix to the doors of the cathedral the usual intimation of the convocation of the Council; but not to proceed with the Council until bishops had arrived from Spain, Italy, Germany and France.

The Legates received the Cross at Rome, the 20th of October, departed for Trent, and arrived there towards the close of November. Few bishops arrived before the Legates. Even after the Legates had arrived, only the bishops from Italy and some from Germany came up. The Nuncios in the various countries were repeatedly urged to send on the bishops; and a special Nuncio was sent to Germany for the same purpose. But neither the commands of the Pope, nor the exertions of the Nuncios could assemble the bishops of the Christian world. War had again broken out and the bishops could not travel.

The Emperor sent representatives to Trent; but soon recalled two of them, whom he sent to the Diet of Nuremberg. At this assembly the Catholic members entreated the Nuncio to beg of the Pope, in their name, to persevere in his purpose of assembling the Council. But the Protestants, faithful to their traditions, protested; blinded by prejudice, they would not listen to the convincing reasons of their Catholic colleagues.

For seven months the Legates waited in vain at Trent, expecting the return of the Emperor's representatives and the arrival of the bishops. None, however, came; even the bishops who had already arrived, not wishing further to

prolong a stay which appeared to them at least useless, returned to their dioceses. This state of things at Trent, the war bitterly raging between Charles and Francis, and the invasion of the Italian coasts by the Turkish fleet, made the further postponement of the Council inevitable. Paul brings to the memory of the Christian world the many efforts he had made to assemble the Council and suspends the convocation until happier times would permit the bishops to assemble.

Europe is plunged in deadly strife. The German Protestant Princes, bound together by a common purpose, compel Charles to suspend the Edicts of Worms and Augsburg. The Pontiff protests against this action; but to no avail. Political exigencies wrung from Charles concessions to these princes, which in times of peace he would never grant. War continues with ever varying fortune. All thoughts of a Council are now banished from Charles' mind in the prosecution of the war. But away in Rome, the Pontiff, ever anxious to guide safely the destinies committed to his care, is silently, yet energetically, working to procure a permanent peace—a peace which he rightly considers indispensable for the assembly of the Council. Yet his endeavours are long without fruit. Ill success does not daunt him: he perseveres, and soon found unexpected aid in his negotiations: Eleanor, sister of Charles and wife of Francis, trusting to the affectionate esteem in which she was held by the rival monarchs, interposed. Her efforts are successful. She succeeds in inducing the monarchs to consent to a peace, when all believed peace to be impossible. The conditions are soon arranged; and the peace for which Europe, whether Catholic or heretic, had so long prayed, was finally concluded at Crespy, September 18th, 1544.

The news of an event so unexpected and so anxiously desired, filled the aged Pontiff with joy. He ordered a solemn thanksgiving for so auspicious a peace, and sent messengers to congratulate the reconciled sovereigns. At length the Council was possible; peace would permit the bishops to travel, and Europe, secure in its long-awaited peace, could turn its attention to the evils that were

harassing the Church. The Council is summoned anew, with every prospect of a successful issue, to meet at Trent on the 25th of March, 1545.

Paul was now sensible that the real work of the coming Council was to begin. He confided to three of the most distinguished members of the Sacred College the duty of presiding. They were men in every way well fitted for an office so important: Giovanni Maria dal Monte, Bishop of Palestrina, devoted without reserve to the interests of his master, whom later on he succeeded on the Papal throne; Marcello Cervini, a learned theologian, who afterwards wore the tiara as Marcellus II.; and Reginald Pole, who in the last Conclave had been well-nigh elected Pope. The two former left in February for Trent, where they arrived on the 13th of the following month; Cardinal Pole, delayed through fear of meeting with violence from the emissaries of Henry VIII., did not reach Trent till the close of the month of May. Few bishops, besides the assessors to the Legates, arrived; and the Legates deemed it wise to wait for the arrival of the Spanish and Italian bishops. Further delays were soon rendered necessary. The action of the Viceroy of Naples, and the opposition of the Emperor to the assembling of a Council at the present time, delayed the opening. The Feast of the Exaltation of the Cross, the 3rd of May, was designated; but the Legates were unable to open on that day. The smallness of the number of bishops at Trent made a further delay necessary.

Negotiations ensue between Charles and Paul. Paul not yielding to the desire of Charles for further delay, remained steadfast in his purpose that the Council should open as soon as possible. Lest the bishops who were in Trent might be tempted to depart, he had them employed in preparing the business for the Council. Whilst they were thus engaged, the number of bishops, and theologians, and canonists, increased day by day; and soon the Legates report that a speedy opening of the Council is at length possible. Paul received this glad announcement with unbounded joy, assembled his cardinals in Consistory, the 18th of November, and there arranged that the Council should open on the 13th of December, the third Sunday of Advent. Paul, at this

time, granted to the German bishops power of being represented by proxy at the Council, lest in their absence their flocks should fall a prey to the disseminators of error.

Various instructions regarding the course of business were forwarded to the Legates in reply to their inquiries. They were directed to treat of matters of faith first; then to proceed to matters of discipline; and, in reference to suggested reforms of the Roman Court, all the proposed changes were to be reported to the Supreme Pontiff, who alone had the power to apply a suitable remedy. All documents issued in the name of the Council were to bear the signatures of the Legates, as Presidents, and that of the Pope, whom they represented, and to have the seal of at least the first Legate. To bring down the blessings of Heaven on an undertaking of such moment in the history of the Church, the Legates were empowered to grant indulgences; but these indulgences were not to be given in the name of the Council.

The King of France by his action in reference to the French bishops present in Trent caused some embarrassment. After some time the difficulty was arranged, and the French bishops came to Trent. Difficulty after difficulty had given way. Everything was ready to open a Council whose work and whose name will ever live. Final instructions have come from Rome; the 12th of December, the eve of the opening, is spent in public prayers and processions to implore the protection of God's guiding spirit on the labours of the assembled Fathers, and on the 13th of December, "Gaudete" Sunday, the Council, for which the Church through years of trouble, of anxiety, and of bitter strife, had prayed, and often seemingly in vain, was opened, and Cardinal Pole was able in terms of exulting joy to write to Paul: "The doors of the Council are flung open, the reproach of barrenness is removed from the Church as of old from Rachel."

Before we proceed with the description of the sessions, we must take a glance at the scene of the labours of the Council. Trent, chief city of a Principality of the same name, and one of the most considerable towns in the Lower Tyrol, is situated on the confines of Germany and Italy in a small delightful valley surrounded by lofty mountains. This

valley is entered by a gorge that serves as a bed for the river Adige, which, flowing past Trent, waters the valley and pursues its course towards the States of Venice.

Approaching the city by the left bank, one must be struck by the scene that meets the eye. The dark, square towers, bringing the mind back to the feudal times, the numerous spires that shoot upwards to the skies, the marble palaces and ruined castles, the old embattled walls, the old wooden bridge, the stately marble cathedral, lofty snow-capped mountains whose feet are clothed with verdure, here and there relieved by the Tyrolese peasants' homes in the background, and the river bank with the waters rushing past, in the foreground, form a scene of wild and imposing grandeur; and when the sun is sinking behind the western ridges, flooding before he sets the beautiful valley with the glory of the Italian sunset, and the waters of the deep rapid river are reflecting all the splendours of the scene, the view is one not to be forgotten.

The city is of great antiquity, and rose to high importance and prosperity under the rule of its prince-bishops, from the time that Conrad the Salic bestowed on them and their successors the sovereignty over the valley of the Adige. The city contains at present about 17,000 inhabitants. The chief industries are the manufacture of silks, wines, and sugar. The vine is cultivated in the valley of the Adige. The Church of Santa Maria Maggiore, built entirely of red marble, possesses for us a peculiar interest, from its connexion with the sittings of the Fathers assembled at Trent. A curious painting of the assembly, containing portraits of seven cardinals, three patriarchs, thirty-three archbishops, two hundred and thirty-five bishops, seven abbots, seven generals of Religious Orders, and one hundred and forty-six professors of theology, is shown within its walls.

Such was the city happily chosen after long discussion as the meeting place of the prelates convoked to assemble in General Council. It was central; not in Italy—which would offend the Germans; not in Germany—where the safety of the prelates might be endangered. It was a free city, with its prince-bishop, a feudatory of Charles V. The climate was

genial, for though from the walls might be seen the dark slopes and snow-capped summits of the surrounding Alps, the mulberry tree, and silk worm, and the rich vineyards of the valley were sure indications of comforts and resources hardly to be expected in a country not less rugged and mountainous than Switzerland itself.

It will, perhaps, be convenient in treating of the celebration of that Council, which has ever been deservedly regarded as the greatest crisis in the anxious contest between the old Church of Rome and the recent sectaries who spurned her authority, to divide the history of the sessions into three sections. The first will contain the history of ten sessions of the Council, under Paul III. eight at Trent and two at Bologna, from December the 13th, 1545, to June the 2nd, 1547. The second will treat of the six sessions at Trent held during the reign of Julius III., and will comprise the course of events from the 1st of May, 1561, to 28th of April, 1562. The third section will deal with the Council under Pius IV., and its nine sessions at Trent, from the 18th of January, 1562, to the 4th of December, 1563. Thus, only three Pontiffs were practically connected with the actual celebration of the Council. Its twenty-five sessions were spread over eighteen years, though the time occupied by the Council during the eighteen years was somewhat less than four years and a half, viz. :—one year and six months under Paul III. ; one year under Julius III. ; and a year and eleven months under Pius IV. Attention may be drawn here to a useful distinction between *working* and *formal* sessions. By *working* sessions are meant those sessions in which Decrees on Faith and Discipline were adopted and announced. By *formal* sessions are to be understood those sessions in which the work was preparatory for the sessions in which Dogmatic and Disciplinary Decrees were adopted. In the *formal* sessions matters of grave importance occupied the time and thoughts of the assembled Fathers, but were not embodied and announced as decisions of a dogmatic or reformatory kind. On this account the distinction may be made. It has this advantage to recommend it, by reducing the twenty-five sessions to eleven *working* sessions, viz. :—four, from the

fourth to the seventh, in the first section; two, the thirteenth and fourteenth, in the second section, and five, from the twenty-first to the twenty-fifth, in the third section, it becomes much less difficult to fix in the memory the Decrees of each *working* session, and to recur with readiness to the authority of a Council so constantly cited.

C. DAILEY.

SOME REASONS WHY CATHOLICS LOSE THE FAITH IN NEW ZEALAND.

THE object of the present paper is, to give a simple statement of facts as they have come under the writer's observations during a brief Missionary career in a part of New Zealand. I claim no originality and assume no critical airs. My labours, confined as they have been, to two localities, may strip my opinions of that weight, to which experience in a more extensive area can usually lay claim. But this much without arrogance, I think I may allege in my favour. First, it is not always admissible that all knowledge is the result of experience, nor do they who travel farthest, and bustle most through the busy scenes of varying life, always glean the vastest and most accurate information. They may saunter carelessly and think superficially. But in addition to this, I am not singular or alone in the statements and conclusions that will be found through this paper. They are shared to a considerable extent by those, whose venerable forms bend under the weight of years, and the pressure of Missionary labours undertaken in many districts of the country far apart from each other, and whose capacity for judgment is enlarged, by their practical, religious, and pensive lives. I am then but penning down a few coincident reflections, stamped with the approbation of those who are competent to judge of how much truth or error they may contain.

What shall be said of the religious education of our people

before leaving Ireland, will be written in no hostile spirit to my brethren of the clergy in the old land. No one can appreciate more, the zeal and fidelity of the Irish priests in Ireland, than I do. I know their worth and their learning, but I know too that they can gather, by reading or otherwise, only very scant and imperfect knowledge of the religious situation, and the dreadful assaults that are made upon the Faith of the simple Irish people in distant lands, like New Zealand. One must be here and see for himself, to understand the trials, temptations, heartburnings, and struggles, that are daily endured by thousands of Catholics to keep from being extinguished amidst the mists and clouds of heterodoxy and infidelity, that torch of holy Faith which they brought burning brightly from Ireland.

As in America and Australia, so also in New Zealand the mass of our Catholic people are "exiles of Erin." The vast majority of them are the sons and daughters of the small farmer and the labourer. They left their homes without wealth and with only the rudiments of knowledge. They are merged in the different nationalities scattered through this vast country, where Catholics are in a miserable minority. We are here not a nation but isolated individuals. In country parts the young men are labourers and shepherds. In the towns the girls are the slaves of English, Scotch, and Colonial mistresses. The greater number of these young men and women have come from the country districts of Ireland. Educated in National schools, many of them received only that minimum of religious instruction sufficient for admission to the sacraments. Beyond this they have little knowledge of the groundwork of their faith. In Ireland the priests as a rule preach every Sunday, but their discourses, beautiful no doubt as they are, nevertheless, are, I venture to say, more exhortatory and paraphrastical, than didactic and catechetical. This is glorious for the old land, while the people remain at home, but it does not do for here. Landing on these shores, our young men and women have a simple, lively faith, but a faith founded on a weak substratum of knowledge. It is practical but not theoretical. The belief is there, but the why and the wherefore are not. Here, working amongst Protestants,

stifled with vice and inhaling an atmosphere tainted with unbelief, they are asked a reason for this article of their faith, and for that, and most of them are unable to give any, or at best, but a feeble reply. Nay, very often they have only a vague, sometimes, an incorrect knowledge of what they precisely do believe; but this faith they were prepared, when entering the emigrant ships, to resign only with their lives. The grace of God was still abiding in their young hearts when they left their homes of innocence with a father's blessing and a mother's tearful entreaties. They had little suspicion of the character of the enemies or the nature of the dangers that awaited them. They came armed with the sword of faith but had not on the breastplate of knowledge, and soon the poisoned arrows of unbelief find entrance to their innocent hearts. The grace of God, it is true, cherished and increased in the beginning by frequent recourse to the sacraments, shields them for a time, but when the intellect at first embarrassed, then discomfited, is led astray, the demon of perversity, indifference, and finally unbelief, takes possession of the heart. They are confronted on these shores by two classes of people—one who feel no sympathy with their national feeling and religious instincts,—the other, the avowed enemies of all Christianity. The staunch Presbyterian, the gloomy Wesleyan, and the loyal, honest Church of England Protestant, meet them with objections against “popish superstition;” the professed Atheist and the disciples of the free-thought lecturer challenge them with proofs against every dogma of Christian belief. To face such an array of enemies there is need of great moral courage, much prudence, and deep-rooted convictions.

Moral courage the Irish race at home and abroad may fairly boast of, prudence we have not in very great measure, and religious convictions with a large proportion of our unfortunate emigrants are more the result, I think, of what I will call *training* than of religious education. They have imbibed their beliefs with their mother's milk. Born in the bosom of a Catholic land, associated in early life with Catholic companions, taught in Catholic schools, they had little to tax their faith or call into requisition that necessity for a knowledge

of the groundwork of their beliefs so necessary in a foreign land. When such emigrants, young men and young women in their daily toil, and toil they must, come in contact with those whose morals are corrupt, whose hearts are poisoned with a hatred of Catholicity, and whose minds are stored with a specious reasoning against it, the religious antagonism is very unequal indeed. On the one side you have an unsophisticated, innocent, guileless heart, and an untutored intellect; on the other an astute selfish unbeliever, or, what in the case is sometimes worse, a vain, tenacious Bible-reader armed with weapons against Catholic doctrine, forged by the perverse ingenuity of minds more logical and deeply read even than the assailant's own. Human nature is human nature, and in a conflict like this the consequences as known to Missionary priests are much to be dreaded. Our people are thus questioned and embarrassed oftentimes for an answer. If they decline to give any, they will be told they believe without, or against reason, that their Faith is a pile of superstition founded on ignorance and sustained by the influence of priestcraft. Should they be imperfectly instructed in the groundwork of their Faith while attempting to give a rational account for their beliefs and practices, the probability is, they will expose themselves to ridicule and their Church to greater contempt. Not unfrequently indeed does it happen that, in circumstances like these, a mind hitherto artless, full of simplicity and trust, will be led to think more seriously, and through thinking to doubt, or question the wisdom of believing what, till lately it had not thought of examining, and which when put before it, dressed in a false costume by an unbelieving caviller, seems to it, in the light of its rustic logic and scant instruction, absolutely inexplicable or altogether untrue. Here lies the danger to many an Irish emigrant having no scientific knowledge of the groundwork of his holy Faith when leaving the old land. Here is the rock upon which many a soul is shipwrecked and lost. I would respectfully suggest to the priests in Ireland to forewarn the people against these dangers and to equip them to meet their opponents by regular serial courses of catechetical instructions. While they live at home breathing

an atmosphere of purity and innocence, surrounded by their priests, having every opportunity of approaching the sacraments as often as they wish, a homely exhortation, a pathetic effusion, which may touch the heart while it leaves the intellect barren, will pilot them smoothly along over a peaceful life to a happy death. But when they have left far behind the calm skies of holy Ireland, and have "to rough" against the billows of unbelief that are fast flooding this country, when they have to meet the sneer of the bitter sectarian with his inherited prejudices, when they have to work with corrupted and captious men in stations and sheep-runs twenty and thirty miles away from the nearest church or priest, when they can hear mass only once in two or three months, and can approach the sacraments not so often, when unfortunately they find their temporal interests to clash too frequently with their spiritual, then those discourses of other days which moved the heart and generated short-lived sympathies, vanish into oblivion or are remembered only as hollow-sounding and unsubstantial vanities. No longer will an implicit uninformed Faith be found sufficient amid the practical indifferentism which now surrounds them. Absence from Sunday's mass, neglect of approaching the sacraments of confession and communion, want of due reverence for the priestly authority, all which in other days would suffuse the countenance with shame, or merit the disapprobation of others, will here be a temptation to gain popular applause or a coin to purchase the patronage of those whose will it is their temporal welfare to serve. But the evil does not stop here; it is not linked merely with the individual himself. His firm adherence to the Faith or his practical renunciation of it becomes an inheritance which is sure to descend to his offspring. If virtues flow from parent to child, much more do vicious inclinations. We have in this country two classes of Catholic parents, the agriculturists and farm-labourers, and those who reside in the towns. In nearly all the districts the country families live far apart, being outnumbered by those of other denominations to a great proportion. The priests are few and far between. They reside only in the principal or central towns. Struggling against immense odds they find it impossible from the

revenues of their parishes to maintain more than one, at most two, Catholic schools in every mission.

Let the indulgent reader remember that some of these missions are four, some five, thousand square miles in area, that the Catholic families are scattered throughout them, and he will at once conclude that the children of such parents must attend the godless State-schools, where religion is entirely ignored, where numbers of teachers are practical unbelievers, where the associates of our Catholic youths are the sons and daughters of those, whose religion is filthy lucre, and whose strongest article of belief is, that "popery" is a lie and a fraud. To be more clearly understood let me enter a little into details. I have before me as I write, a letter from a priest in charge of one of these parishes. He tells me that on an average it is one hundred miles long, fifty at the narrowest point, and in one direction, runs two hundred miles in extent. There are in it four churches distant apart from fifty miles to twelve. In this immense district there is only one Catholic school, and that in the town where the priest usually resides. The number of children attending it is sixty. There are about one hundred others in that district, attending the various State-institutions, and not more than eight or nine attending any one same school. Again, in the parish where I minister, there are about one hundred and eighty Catholic children attending thirteen different State-schools, that is to say, on an average about thirteen children to each school. There is not one Catholic teacher in the whole district. The reader will easily perceive it is impracticable there could be, since owing to the great distances apart you cannot gather together a sufficient number of children to form a school, and give anything like due support to a master or mistress. Then let us remember, it can be fairly said, that, all the Government teachers are Protestants, freemasons many of them, and Atheists many more. Nor let it be said that districts so circumstanced are few; few they are not, but many. It is to be hoped indeed that, as time goes on the evils will diminish, but what a havoc may not be made among souls before then. What will meantime become of our poor children if parents are incapacitated, by

their own ignorance, of well grounding them in the faith? Let us remember what a power of assimilation there is in the associations of early life, how mind draws to mind, and heart to heart. If this influence of early life be good, great will be the blessings garnered in riper years, if it be bad no one can divine the chain of disastrous consequences which may follow. "Youth is the spring time of life," and "evil communications corrupt good morals." And can the children of indifferentism, of Atheists, and Freethinkers, be faithful to God, or to the laws of morality? Will they be so quickened with an impulse of good breeding, as to be unwilling to tamper with the feelings, or to contaminate the virtues of others? And the State-school children of Protestant parents are not taught to love their Catholic companions. Moreover they are armed to the teeth with insinuating, though fallacious arguments against Catholic doctrines and practices. These are derived either directly from the parents, or from bad books and lectures scattered abundantly in every home. But how, it may be asked, are those books found in every country family? The rising generation of this colony is a reading people. There is hardly a district here corresponding in extent to an ordinary parish at home, that has not its two or three public libraries supplied with a variety of the current literature of the day. On every shelf stand prominent lectures and works, not only against "Romanism," but, in many instances, even against Christianity itself. These are the sources whence Protestant fathers and mothers derive that knowledge of Catholicity which they faithfully impart to their own offspring, and which these in turn communicate to their Catholic companions. Let us suppose for instance, two boys, one Catholic, and the other Protestant, waxing into years, attending the same school, living in the same locality, and firmly rooted in each other's friendship. The Catholic boy, as a rule, will be found little acquainted with the texts of Protestantism; he will have few objections to make against it. On the other hand, his Protestant friend will inform him, that he and his parents, and all Protestants, have faith, read the Bible, believe in the sacrifice of Calvary, are taught to keep the commandments, and to

love and serve God, as well as Catholics. But in addition to this, he will have many knotty difficulties to propose about Catholicity. To whom will the Catholic boy have recourse for the solution of his doubts and the clearing of his fears? Will he seek a priest and thus extricate himself from the net woven around him by a friendly but a subtle companion. It is not usual for boys in such circumstances to go to a priest, and moreover a priest there is not in the district. In many localities the pastor is seen, and a sermon heard only once a month, and there is not much likelihood that the perplexing difficulty will meet with a solution in the current discourse. Must not a boy in such straits if he have recourse to any one at all, seek from his parents that truth which shall free his mind from embarrassment and place at his command a weapon to suit his assailant? But what if the parents are unable to give a satisfactory answer? An impression is made but not effaced. It lingers in his memory from year to year, increased most probably by many others. School-days are over; he merges into manhood, leaves his parents' home, goes forth to earn a livelihood working amongst all classes and creeds. After a time he marries a Protestant wife, fixes his abode in a Protestant locality. Parental restraint there is now none, sufficient religious instruction he did not acquire, the blandishments of a bigoted woman are powerful. What will become of such a man and what of his children? Will it be said the priest must look to them. The priest will and does exercise all his influence, but it is impossible for him to gain any satisfactory results in cases like this. When the father himself has already fallen away or grown indifferent and the mother is a Protestant, experience teaches that the children as a rule are entirely lost. And all this is largely traceable not so much to wayward circumstances, as to want of a fairly accurate knowledge of their religion on the part of our Irish emigrants, young men and young women who are becoming the fathers and mothers of the rising Church, the sowers of Catholicity in the growing colony. If they are well ground in an intelligent knowledge of their creed, their children will have able and willing instructors, and thus the absence of the priest and the want of Catholic

schools will in a great measure be counteracted. It is sad but not less a truth that, in many isolated districts in this country where Irish parents are settled on the land and living in comfortable affluence, the visiting pastor in some instances can hardly find one father or one mother with sufficiently accurate knowledge of his religion to take charge of explaining the Sunday's catechism to the children. A simple practical faith those Irish parents have, but this in its purity and integrity cannot, in the circumstances be so transmitted to their colonial-born children. These will not believe simply because they are told to do so. They require something more substantial. They must know accurately what is demanded from them and must understand that between Faith and reason there is no contradiction. They have to answer the objections of others and must smooth the way by solving difficulties for themselves. Passive credulity is not a gift of colonial youth; prying inquisitiveness is a marked characteristic.

Impart to them sound religious knowledge, and you make them staunch sons of Mother Church, let them be deprived of it for one cause or another, and you open a way to any conventicle where fortune will soonest fall to their lot. And how could it be otherwise? They look around them in the localities where they live, and see Catholic congregations composed for the most part of the poor and the feeble and the illiterate. They have no wider range for their ideas than that afforded by colonial observation, and no more extensive knowledge of their Church than what is gathered from the narrow social spheres within which they move. They see Catholicity here making rapid strides, it is true, but still deficient in numbers, in wealth, in influence. Their temporal interests are not promoted by being practical Catholics, yea, rather are often contravened, and their spiritual welfare weighs not so much with colonial minds as with the home people. In such circumstances they must imbibe a love of their religion and Church from their parents, and this love, infused in early life must in later years, be cherished and shielded from the absorbing dangers which surround it, by an accurate and thorough knowledge of their faith. Without encouraging any polemical spirit, I think, they will find it practically

useful to have a knowledge sufficient for private controversy, but above all they must be Catechists for the sake of the souls of their children. This is the main idea intended to be conveyed through this paper.

Another danger to the faith of the Irish in these colonies is that unhappily many of them seem to forget their native land and to harbour no love for the memories of other days. It is a hard thing for an Irish priest to write of his Irish people, but there are instances not a few, where it is perfectly true. I have never here yet met a bad Irishman who was not a bad Catholic too, and on the other hand I do not know a single practical Irish Catholic whose love for his country is not intensified by time and distance. When they forget the land of their fathers, the faith of their fathers vanishes too. When they cease to remember that they are the descendants of heroes they begin to forget that they are the children of martyrs also. And as it is with the fathers and mothers, so is it with the children. Go into the house of a faithful Irish couple and you at once see love for a land which they never saw, burning in the hearts of their colonial offspring, and with it devotion to their Church and creed. But find a father or mother whose heart is chilled towards the home where he first saw the light, his faith is dying as an expiring spark and his children despise the isle which St. Patrick loved and the creed which St. Patrick worshipped. Let the Irish emigrant be warned of this, and let him be exhorted never to forget in a foreign land the home where his youth was nursed.

P. E. HURLEY.

THE ROSMINIAN PHILOSOPHY.

FATHER Lockhart is very indignant because I have said that the philosophical system of Rosmini is justly called Pantheism. If I have erred in this, I have at least erred in good company. His Eminence Cardinal Zigliara in his *Propaedeutica ad sacram Theologiam*, published in 1884, writes, lib. 2, cap. xii, p. 58.—

“The *ens Rosminianum* is, in the proper sense of the word, an intrinsic element of contingent beings, and is predicated of them

when we say *the creature is ens*; is predicated, I say, not extrinsically and as an exemplar (*exemplariter*), as when we say of a statue that it is Peter, because made after the exemplar Peter (*exemplata a Petro*), but formally and intrinsically, as when it is said of Peter that he is a man. Therefore God, though under the formal concept of being, is in very truth the *esse intrinsecum*, the *esse formale* of all things. This conclusion is Pantheism and consequently the denial of the supernatural order I know indeed that many things (I wish they were true) are adduced by Rosminians in order to free the doctrine of their master from the note of Pantheism, but since they admit with Rosmini the principle of the divine nature of being, I in no way see how they can logically escape the Pantheistic conclusion.”¹

Here His Eminence states that the Rosminian *ens* is God under the formal concept of being, a thing no true Rosminian denies. 2°. That this *ens* is the intrinsic and formal *esse* of contingent things as all true Rosminians hold with Rosmini. 3°. That this is Pantheism. The position Cardinal Zigliara holds among orthodox philosophers is well known to every one who is at all conversant with the philosophical literature of the day. It is sufficiently proved by the fact that he has been appointed by His Holiness one of the three Commissioners to bring out a perfect edition of all the works of St. Thomas. The other two are Cardinal Pecci (in succession to Cardinal De Luca) and Cardinal Simeoni.

The next authority is the veteran philosopher Liberatore whose name is known and revered wherever Catholic philosophy is studied. In the Second Volume of his *Institutiones philosophicæ*, p. 420, of the edition of 1883, after having described the system of Rosmini, he thus concludes:—

“Wherefore the Rosminian system, whatever way it be considered, is nothing but the transcendentalism of Germany clothed in an Italian

¹ *Ens Rosminianum est elementum propriè intrinsecum entium contingentium et de ipsis prædicatur cum dicitur creatura est ens; prædicatur, inquam, non ab extrinseco et exemplariter, sicut cum dicitur de statua quod sit Petrus quia exemplata a Petro extrinseco, sed formaliter et intrinsece, sicut cum de Petro dicitur quod sit homo. Ergo Deus, esto sub conceptu formali entis, est revera esse intrinsecum, hoc est esse formale omnium. Quæ illatio est Pantheismus, et consequenter negatio ordinis supernaturalis Scio a Rosminianis plura (quæ cuperem esse vera) adduci ad absolvendam a Pantheismi nota doctrinam magistri; sed cum doctrinam de natura divina entis cum Rosminio amplectuntur, plane non video, quæ ratione possint logice effugere conclusionem Pantheisticam.*

dress. In this however its Pantheism seems to differ from the German, that the latter places the *ens primum* in a something impersonal and undetermined which certainly cannot be God. Rosmini on the contrary places the *ens primum* in the true God, whose *esse* afterwards determines itself, after a finite manner in creatures, and is not distinguished from them as to what is positive in them but only as to what is negative. For in his doctrine there is one *esse*, uncreated and eternal, whose three essential terms are constituted by the three Divine Persons, and its accidental terms or as he calls them *formae improprie*, or *limits*, are constituted by creatures. Wherefore the German pantheism is rather *atheism*, the Rosminian on the contrary is true *pantheism*, *in rigore sermonis*."

Liberatore then as well as Cardinal Zigliara has understood Rosmini's system as I have, and called it by the same name.

Let us quote another authority. His Excellency, the Bishop of Concordia, the Most Rev. Dominick Pius Rossi, O.P., last year published a Pastoral letter in condemnation of a small work published and disseminated without his authority in his diocese in defence of the Rosminian system; in it he says:—

"Venerable brethren! it cannot be told what a grief this pamphlet is to me, who am, thanks be to God, so attached to the true teaching of the Church, *so respectfully obedient to the word and the authority of the Supreme Pontiff, the Vicar of Jesus Christ*, and so devoted to the true doctrine of the Angelic Doctor, St. Thomas."

The italics here are my own; I wish by them to call attention to the fact, that Monsignor Rossi considers that obedience to the Holy See is involved in the matter. After having described the teaching of St. Thomas he goes on:—

"I proceed to explain the system of Rosmini; he excludes the Intellectus agens, but admits the universal idea of being communicated immediately by God to our soul. And see in what manner. He considers the universal being in itself, and in relation to our minds. Considered in itself, it contains virtually all entities existent and possible, to which it is common; moreover, the *ens in universali* is a something of the necessary being, that is, of God; nay, more, it has the same essence as the Divine being. Wherefore, the Rosminian *esse* is not something created, as it has the Divine nature, although it is not looked at by us under the formal concept of God. Nevertheless Rosmini's *ens* if not formally, is yet really God. Besides, this universal being is, according to Rosmini, in the proper sense of the word, an intrinsic element of contingent beings, and is predicated univocally of God, and of creatures. This little is enough to make

us see that Rosmini, without perceiving it, has fallen into most grievous error. In spite of his good intentions which were to combat German sensism, he has fallen into the opposite extreme, I mean into pantheism."

These words are express. The eminent prelate goes on:—

"The thing is very clear: to Rosmini the ens is really God, and it is an element of the creature, therefore the creature has the same being as God, which would mean that the possible esse is the same as the esse which is most pure act; contingent being the same as necessary being; created being the same as uncreated being, which proposition is plainly pantheistic."

These words, as the others I have quoted, are very clear. I hope then Fr. Lockhart will have some compassion on the Cistercian Doctor in Philosophy who has fallen into error, if he have fallen into it, in such good company. But has he fallen into it?

It might possibly be excepted against the evidence I have hitherto brought forward that it is the evidence of enemies, or at least, of opponents. Let us see, then, what the defenders of the system have to say. I am sure Fr. Lockhart will himself admit that Monsignor Ferré, whose work in ten books, *Degli Universalì*, he himself quoted in his former letter, is a fair exponent of his master's doctrine. As a matter of fact he was by far the ablest and most respectable defender of the system. What does he say? Here are his words in the Seventh Volume, *Degli Universalì*, p. 245: "L'essere comunissimo, l'essere formale di tutte quante le cose finite e di tutte quante le forme non é stato né poteva essere creato," i.e., "The esse communissimum, the FORMAL esse of all finite things, and of all forms, has not been, and could not be created."

Yet this *esse* common to all things without exception, this formal *esse* of all finite things is, as Rosmini himself tells us, all that there is of positive in creatures. Rosmini's *esse* then, according to Monsignor Ferré, is a real positive thing, and neither was, nor could be created. Therefore it is "one, infinite, eternal, and unchangeable." Monsignor Ferré a little further on continues: "The consequence of this theory (Rosmini's) is clear, 1° that creatures are composed of two elements, of which one is identical in all, and it is the most

universal esse, the initial esse, the formal esse and the other is proper to each, and it is the real; 2° that in finite things that which is properly created, or drawn out of nothingness, is not the most universal esse, but is the real, which is different according as it differently participates of the most universal esse." "La conseguenza di questa teoria rimane chiara, 1° che le creature sono composte di due elementi dei quali uno è identico in tutte, ed è l'essere universalissimo, l'essere iniziale, l'essere formale, e l'altro è proprio di ciascuna ed è il reale; 2° che nelle cose finite ciò che è propriamente creato, ossia cavato dal nulla, non è l'essere universalissimo, ma è il reale, il quale è diverso secondo che diversamente partecipa dell'essere universalissimo." These words too are clear. We might cite others, *ad infinitum*, from the defenders of the system, but it is unnecessary as, except Fr. Lockhart, no Rosminian has had the hardihood to deny what is the basis of the whole system; on the contrary, they (the Rosminians) reproach and endeavour to cast ridicule upon their opponents for *carrying up* (sbocconcellando) *the esse, splitting it into fragments, and wishing to give to each entity a piece of its own to carry on its back.*

But let us see what Rosmini himself says. In the *Theosophy*, vol. i., p. 188, he writes:—"There exists in the human intelligence the need of reducing everything to unity. If one considers whence this necessity arises, one will easily see, that its origin comes from this, that the human mind understands all that it understands *with* being (*esse*), and that that which is not being, it cannot understand: this was called the principle of cognition. Now the *esse* is a nature simple and one, and in consequence human nature cannot persuade itself that there is anything outside of *esse*; for this would be an open contradiction; it incessantly tends therefore, and aspires to reduce all things to *esse* as to a simple and unique nature. It does not tend to obtain this unity merely in the order of cognition, BUT ALSO IN THAT OF REAL THINGS because in these it does not see in the end anything but being." It is in these terms that Rosmini proposes what he calls *the problem of the unity of being, and of the plurality of entities.* The words I have put in small capitals show that there is question

of the real order, and not merely that of thought, and this becomes more evident from what follows.

After telling us that this question was first among western philosophers proposed by Parmenides, and having given a glance at Plato, who also (he says) attempted the solution of the problem, and at Aristotle who spoiled it, he passes at a bound to the German Transcendentalists, Fichte and "*his two illustrious successors*" Schelling and Hegel. To Rosmini, the Pantheists Schelling and Hegel were *illustrious* philosophers. At page 209 he gives us his own solution of the problem.

"It is clear," he says, "that the unity we seek cannot be found in the terms [terminations] of being, because its first terms are the categorical forms; and these are three and not one, and they are irreducible; the terms posterior to the Categories are much more numerous. The unity therefore is to be sought in the being itself. But the *esse* (being) is conceived in several manners which are reduced to three. Since 1°. Either, being is conceived united to its terms, and in that case it is no longer one, but we have only a plurality of *entia*, or of entities; 2°. Or, we conceive the abstract *esse* with precision from all relation to its terms, and this abstract being is not the principle of anything whatever, by the very hypothesis of the abstraction, and the multiplicity of things cannot be reduced to it as to unity; 3°. Or finally, we conceive the *esse* unseparated indeed from its terms, but in relation to them, and in this aspect it can be considered by the mind in two different relations, either as what contains virtually its terms, and thus we call it *virtual esse*; or as beginning and first actuality of the terms, antecedent to them, and thus we call it *initial esse*. With the first of these two concepts we think the virtue or possibility that the nature of being has, to terminate itself [or to be terminated] in all the modes that do not involve contradiction; we think being without other consideration than the susceptibility it has of ultimating itself [or being ultimated] in any way soever. In this being, therefore, we think all the terms, but in potentiality and not distinct. And this is a first unification of the entity in the essences, an unification of all the entities, but in their first and sole potentiality, not of the entities in act. With the second of these two concepts of being, that is, with initial being, we think being as the beginning of all its terms in act. The beginning is divided by abstraction from its terms; but we do not prescind from its relation with them, nay, it is precisely this relation that is considered in that concept. This relation is precisely that of *beginning* and of *ultimation*. The terms being innumerable, the being (*esse*) can ultimate itself in all of them, but it is always ONE, SIMPLE, and THE SAME: it is not its terms but it is their common principle. This is therefore a second unification or, to speak more correctly, a second reduction to unity of all the terms in act."

Here then, Rosmini says that being, not merely in the order of cognition, but in that of reality, is *one, simple, and the same*, in all things, in all its terms in act; and he tells us that its first terms are the three categorical forms. Now what are these three categorical forms? He himself tells us vol. i., p. 112:—

“The esse itself although whole and entire is [exists] in several modes essential to it. Are there therefore these forms? The esse by the proper nature of esse is it in one mode alone, or in more than one? And if in more modes, is it in each mode all the esse? . . . There *are* these forms and they are three; that is, the esse, as such, is indetical in three different modes essential to it. We call these forms subjective, objective and moral.”

He tells us moreover, that, “the absolute esse in its subjective form is called the Father, in its objective form is called the Son,” and consequently that the absolute esse in its moral form is called the Holy Ghost. And p. 114: “the unlimited ens dwells essentially in the three forms.”

The one *being*, then, according to Rosmini, exists *essentially* in the three categorical or necessary forms, subjective, objective and moral, or Father, Son and Holy Ghost, and *non essentially*, but freely, in the innumerable post-categorical forms that he elsewhere calls *improper forms* of being. If this be not Pantheism I would like to know what is.

Again vol. i, p. 450, he writes:—

“God is pure esse, the absolute esse itself; this is his nature. The finite being is not the esse, although the esse is necessary to it, since otherwise it would be nothing; it participates of it, the esse is present to it. If the finite being is not *esse*, but depends continually on *esse*, which is called also participating of *esse*, what is it then? We have distinguished the esse from its forms, and we have said that the real of the universe is a form, or a term of esse, the form of reality. This is the subjective form, and the universe in itself is nothing but this subjective form. The esse is joined to it in order that it may subsist, but is not it, nor is it confounded with it, it, *the form*, being individual, and the esse being universal and equal for all the finite individuals.”

Although Rosmini here says that the finite is not the esse, at page 221, he says:—“Why, therefore, is it said absolutely,

the stone is esse, the man is esse, &c. Because I cannot in any way find in the stone or the man anything that is not esse, howmuch soever and in whatsoever way I decompose it in thought: even all the differences of things are esse: therefore it is said things are esse." On the one hand, then, Rosmini says that things are not esse, but that esse is necessary to them, is joined to them in order that they may exist; on the other he says that all that exists is esse. The apparent contradiction is removed by his explanation of what the finite real is. "The finite ens" he says, "is the esse terminated," (*Theosophy* v. i., p. 109.) Therefore every entity is composed of two elements, the one positive—the esse, the other negative—the limitation, and p. 396 he says:—"The quiddity of the infinite ens is constituted by reality, and is positive. The quiddity of the finite ens is constituted by the limits of entity, and is negative."

For this reason, considering the real finite in its quiddity as the limits of entity, he can say that it is not being, but being is *joined to it to make it subsist*, that it is *appended to being*, or as it were *suspended in being*, (they are all expressions of Rosmini). While on the other hand, looking to what is positive in the finite real, he can say:—"The stone is being," "all things are being." At p. 398, he says:—"The finite entia that compose the world result from two elements, that is from the finite real (*the limit*) and from the *initial* esse that gives to this term the form of entity." And that we may have no doubt about what the *initial esse* is he goes on:—"But the initial esse is a something of the absolute esse, and the absolute esse alone can dispose of that which appertains to it, therefore only the absolute Being, God, can be the Creator of the World." Rosmini here uses the word Creator, but his creation is very different from the Christian and scholastic, which is the drawing of the whole ens from nothing *sui et subjecti*. It is very evident that God does not and cannot create anything that is a part (so to speak) of Himself, something that belongs to Him and cannot belong to the creature. Now the initial esse, which according to Rosmini is one of the two elements of which the finite contingent being is composed, belongs, as Rosmini expressly says,

to God and cannot belong to the creature. In the same vol. i, p. 239, he tells us yet more explicitly:—

“The virtual and initial esse is absolutely *necessary* in such way that one cannot think that it is not, since to think that it is not is already to admit it. If therefore the initial and virtual esse is necessary, it cannot be any part of the contingent, but must be an appurtenance [something appertaining to, *un' appartenenza*] of the necessary being. It belongs to theology to demonstrate that there can be only one necessary being as also to explain how the virtual and initial esse is something of the one only necessary being, that is, of God.”

Consequently he makes the limits the effect of creation: at p. 305 he says:—“These real limits, or forms, are the effect of the creative act;” and p. 350, “the finite reality *is* not, but he makes it *be* by joining to THE INFINITE REALITY the limitation.”

I think I have quoted enough to prove beyond the possibility of doubt that for Rosmini there was only one being, and that this being, considered as initial, was an element of every thing that is. To guard against possible cavil I must remark that Rosmini calls the initial being a dialectical esse. But by this he only means that it does not exist outside the mind *in the way* in which it is considered by the mind. By the mind it is considered with abstraction from its forms, though in relation to them, while outside the mind it exists with its forms, necessarily with the Categorical absolute forms—the essential forms of being, which are the real, the ideal and the holy, or as he also calls them, the subjective, objective and moral—Father, Son and Holy Ghost; not necessarily, except in the supposition of their existence, with the post-categorical forms—finite realities. That this is the doctrine of Rosmini is evident, not only because he speaks of the real elements of real things, and a mere abstraction of the mind cannot be such an element, unless we are prepared to admit that according to Rosmini the real things that compose the world are made up of two elements, the one a mental abstraction, the other a pure negative, and that all that there is of positive in them is this mental abstraction; not only I say for this reason, but also because he himself tells us so expressly. “The finite reality is not,” he says in the passage already quoted, “but he makes it *be* by joining to the

infinite reality the limitation." The infinite reality is certainly no mere abstraction of the mind.

Rosmini says also that finite things are outside of God, which at first sight seems to remove the charge of pantheism; but he himself tells us what he means by outside of God, (*fuori di Dio*.)—“By the expression it is outside of God” he says, vol. i., p. 430, “nothing else is meant but that the real finite, so far forth as its subjective existence is concerned, does not constitute the divine essence or any part of this essence.” In the same way a man’s thoughts or affections, or any other modification of his soul, might be said to be outside of his soul, because they do not constitute the essence of the soul, or any part of its essence, but pre-suppose it, as finite things—the improper forms of being according to Rosmini, pre-suppose God. This is sufficient regarding my first assertion, that for Rosmini all being is one.

We pass to the second point. In his *Psychology*, book v., c. 4, he says:—

“But what is the condition on which the subject besides being animal becomes intelligent? For this we have said it is necessary that the animal sentiment acquire its greatest specific perfection, the greatest unity and harmony by means of most opportune organization.”

And developing this principle he goes on—

“That an animal principle cannot intue the idea, unless when it has attained the greatest power of animality, may be conjectured by supposing, that all the capacity of the sensitive principle, until it has attained its greatest specific perfection, is spent and absorbed in the tendency to acquire the state of organic perfection that is wanting to it, and consequently cannot rise to look at the ideal being of itself essentially intelligible and everywhere present—since if it is not seen, it is through defect of the subject to which there does not remain capacity to turn to it. In fact, if we suppose that the capacity (*virtù*) of a sensitive principle is all exhausted in organizing the matter, nothing remains to it by which it could actuate itself towards the *ens*. But after the specific perfection of the organism and of the sentiment has been fully attained, the principle no longer uses that capacity and force which it employed in the work of organization, and then it meets the *esse* present everywhere as I said, and taking it for the term of its act, renders itself intelligent.”

Here we see it expressly stated that the human animal principle, which in the Third Book, c. 23, he says is derived from

the parents by generation, renders itself intelligent by taking the *esse* as the term of its act, and this it can do in man, because the organization being complete the sensitive principle can now use the power it previously employed in developing the organism to pay attention to the *esse* everywhere present. A few lines lower down he goes on:—

“To understand this fact it is sufficient to suppose that the *virtù* or sensitive principle which we call subject, can take anything present to it as the term of its act, but that this virtue (sensitive principle) being limited, it is sometimes arrested in its act by exhaustion of force, and sometimes there remains to it vigour to *feel the intelligible being*.”

The only difference then between the brute soul of animals and the soul of man is that in the former all the power of the sensitive principle is exhausted in the development of the organism, while in man the organism having arrived at perfection, the sensitive principle can employ the same force in looking at the *esse* equally present to both.

Nor does Rosmini shrink from the consequences of this doctrine, for book v., c. 8, he says:—

“The condition on which the soul passes from the act by which it feels the body as sensible, to the act by which it feels the body as *ens*, and hence first intues being is that the corporeal sentiment have attained its *specific* perfection. Now with the breaking up of the organization, the perfect and human sentiment is broken up into a plurality of imperfect sentiments, none of which can have a principle fit to intue the *ens*. There ceases, therefore, in these new sensitive principles, born of the destruction of the human body, the aptitude to see the *ens*; and consequently none of them is the human soul; they have lost identity with this soul. On the other hand the act which intues being, when it has been once placed, has no longer need of the animal sentiment to subsist, because it is altogether independent of it; and this is the human soul which first was *identical* with the sensitive principle.”

The consequences of this doctrine are 1° the human soul that *posited* the act of intelligence ceases to exist on the death of the body. 2° The act it *posited* continues to exist, and having been before the dissolution of the body only an act of the human soul it becomes by that dissolution the human soul itself. 3° Either then (*a*) a vital act subsists without the living principle or (*b*) the animal soul has, by its act, called

into being a subsistent intellectual soul. Which of the two consequences is the less absurd I do not pretend to determine.

I think I have proved my assertions concerning the doctrine contained in Rosmini's works. I may be allowed to add that the conclusion I have drawn from Monsignor Ferré's statement, that "the formal *esse* of all things was not, and could not have been created," viz., that therefore it is one, infinite, eternal and unchangeable, is in no way affected by what the Rev. W. McDonald says in his interesting and suggestive article on Dr. Mivart's Defence of Theism. He there states that St. Thomas and a great body of the Schoolmen held that it could not be known from reason alone that the world had been created. But here the reverend writer, if there be no misprint, must be speaking of the creation *in time*, in other words, of the temporality of the world, not of its creation absolutely, for all the Schoolmen held that we could know with certainty, from reason alone, that it had been drawn out of nothing *sui et subjecti*, that is, created. But St. Thomas and many scholastics held that it could not be proved, by reason alone, that it had a temporal beginning. I said if there be no misprint, because it seems to me that *world* may have been printed in mistake for *matter*. For the thesis speaks of *matter*, and in it by *matter* is evidently meant the *materia prima* of the Schoolmen which St. Thomas held could not be created *as such*, because it could not exist *as such*, though of course St. Thomas and all the Schoolmen held that *matter was* created, but as *materia secunda*, not as *materia prima*. The Schoolmen based the metaphysical proof of the existence of God precisely on the absolute necessity of creation to explain the origin of finite things, as on the other hand they deduced the infinite perfections of God from the fact that He is the *ens a se*, i.e. uncreated.

Now a few words on the other portions of Fr. Lockhart's letter. He says I accused Rosmini and his followers of "worshipping they know not what." In this Fr. Lockhart is, to use the mildest term, inaccurate. I never said so, never for a moment thought so. Even if I had said that they were Pantheists, this would not follow. For in the Rosminian

system the being that is common to all finite things is the Christian God, not as God, but as the being underlying the Divine Personality. But moreover I never said that they were Pantheists. I said that the *doctrine* was Pantheism. But to guard against the possibility of any one drawing the illogical conclusion, that therefore *they* were Pantheists, I said that they "preserve their faith at the expense of their logical consistency." Rosmini held, expressly, doctrines, which involve and include Pantheism, but he never professed it. He said *two and two*, but he steadily refused to say *four*; nay, he employed all the resources of his great mind, to persuade us that in the particular instance, two and two did not mean four, but something very different, three, or five, or what you please, but not four. Those who are true Rosminians do precisely say the same. I must admit that in as far as Fr. Lockhart might be included in those who "preserve their faith at the expense of their logical consistency" there was an error; in his case, there is no logical inconsistency inasmuch as he does not admit the unity of being. I made the mistake, a very natural, and not unpardonable one I hope, of supposing that he was a true disciple of the master he professed to follow.

Fr. Lockhart argues that if Rosminians hold their master's doctrine, and yet profess Catholic doctrine, they must be either "pious fools" or "hypocrites." I hope he will excuse me if I venture to remind him that from a disjunctive no conclusion can be drawn unless the division is complete. Here the division is incomplete. A man may be neither fool nor hypocrite and yet hold doctrines that are mutually destructive: a man through honest prejudice may fail to see that the one doctrine or set of doctrines is destructive of the other, or by mere verbal distinctions he may succeed in persuading himself that all opposition between them has been removed. Does Fr. Lockhart hold that all the great men who maintained the Gallican doctrines were hypocrites or fools?

But in reality this reasoning of Fr. Lockhart is an indirect appeal to our old friend the *ipse dixit* argument. It amounts to this:—

Rosmini was an able, learned, and pious man, his followers

too are able, learned, and pious. Therefore the one cannot have propounded and the other cannot maintain philosophical doctrines that clash with the teachings of Faith; any philosophical doctrines they teach or hold must be orthodox. I most willingly grant the antecedent of this argument. Rosmini was unquestionably a very able, very learned, and most pious man, the ability, learning and piety of the members of his Institute are also unquestioned. But to the conclusion I must say *non sequitur*. Does Fr. Lockhart not know the character of Nestorius for ability, learning, and piety at the time he broached his heresy? Or does he forget all the instances, church history supplies us with, of able, learned, and pious men, who maintained doctrines subversive of the faith, until such doctrines were expressly condemned? Really he shows but scant respect for the intelligence of the readers of the I. E. RECORD when he brings forward such an argument. Yet even if respect for his readers had no weight with him respect at least for himself, should have saved him from putting his name to such sophistry. When he says that I have charged him and his brethren with being fools or hypocrites he is again inaccurate. I have too much respect for his ability to attribute these inaccuracies to slovenly thought, or confusion of ideas, yet I know not to what else they can be attributed.

Fr. Lockhart reiterates that the sentence *Dimittantur* "is an express statement, that *after examination* nothing has been found *meriting* theological censure." I do not dispute that Fr. Lockhart is qualified to give a *doctrinal* interpretation of the decree; but every theologian and canonist knows that all doctrinal interpretations of a law or decree are of no value in face of an *authoritative* interpretation. Now in this case we have the authoritative interpretation. After the decree of June 1880, which declared that the *Dimittantur* meant merely *non prohibentur*, there was issued another decree in form of an answer to doubts proposed. Here it is:—
 "1° Utrum libri ad Sac. Congregationem Indicis delati et ab eadem dimissi seu non prohibiti censeri debeant immunes ab omni errore contra fidem et mores? 2° Et quatenus negative, utrum libri dimissi, seu non prohibiti a Sacra Indicis Congregatione, possint tum philosophice tum theologice citra temeritatis

notam impugnari? Eadem Sacra Congregatio respondit ad primum : negative. Ad secundum : affirmative." This decree approved by the Sovereign Pontiff was issued on the 5th of December, 1881. This is the authoritative interpretation, and it is the negation of that of Fr. Lockhart. For clearly a sentence, that does not declare works free from all error against faith and morals, does not declare that there is nothing in them meriting theological censure.

When I claim to be an ecclesiastical tribunal, and as such sit in judgment on the works of Rosmini, and put on the Index those that have been dismissed by the Sacred Congregation (the *Theosophia* was never either examined or dismissed) Fr. Lockhart may urge against me Benedict XIV. in condemnation of the Spanish Inquisition; but not till then. When he tells me what doctrine of Rosmini has been declared by the Holy See to be an open question among Catholics I will recognise it as such.

I might complain of the tone of Fr. Lockhart's letter; but much allowance must be made for a man bravely struggling in a hopeless cause—fighting a battle already lost, and I do not complain; yet I beg him in any future controversies he may be engaged in, to endeavour to persuade himself that his opponent, even if he be only a Cistercian, may possibly know something of the subject he writes on. Fr. Lockhart repeats the words—Cistercian Doctor in Philosophy, in such a way as to lead one to think that he regards them as a term of derision. I do not know why. The Order of Cîteaux is no more closed, now than in past ages, against Doctors in Philosophy, or Theology, or any other branch of science. I trust the sons of St. Bernard, after the example of their father, will ever be found ready to do battle, to the best of whatever little ability God has given them, against the disseminators of unsound doctrine, no matter how much they may personally esteem their opponents, and no matter how firmly they may be convinced, as I am in the present case, of their good faith.

In conclusion I thank the Very Rev. Editor of the RECORD most sincerely for yielding to my request. I have urged with him my claim to a reply. I wished to put an end to the discussion, once for all. As far as I am concerned, it is ended now.

ANDREW CAMPBELL, D.Ph., D.D.

PATRICIAN DOCUMENTS.

1. *Adfet.*

SIR SAMUEL FERGUSON, in his *Patrician Documents*, p. 104, thus translates the first line of St. Fiacc's Hymn:

"Born in Nemthur was Patrick, *as histories tell us.*"

He remarks, that "as histories tell us" is not a mere *cheville* or metrical make-weight—it indicates that written material then existed, and that the writer did not, as Colgan was inclined to believe, "relate contemporaneous events." This is also the opinion of the Bollandists, who say: "*Hymnum libenter nos quoque hic daremur; sed fatemur ingenue, vereri nos ne non ipsius Fiacci sit . . . nam quomodo talis hoc modo ordiretur 'Natus est Patricius Nemthuri, ut refertur in Historiis.'*"¹ Hence Lanigan writes²: "The Bollandists and some other judicious critics doubt of his having been the author of it; but it does not follow that it is not very ancient." Dr. Benjamin Robert,³ a Protestant clergyman of Paris, is of the same opinion and for the same reason.

Now, all this is based on Colgan's translation, "*ut fertur in Historiis,*" which I believe to be wrong, and for which I substitute: "*ut (ipse) dixit in exgalliis,*"⁴ i.e., "in 'Confessione sua,' in 'Scriptura' sua," or, as the *Book of Armagh*⁵ puts it: "in commemoratione laborum."

St. Fiacc's words are:—

"Genair Patraice innemthur ised adfet hiscelaib."

"Genair Patraice innemthur issed adfet hiscelaib."

The first line is in the Trinity College copy, from which Dr. Windisch⁶ prints "in Nemthur" and "Genair"; the

¹ "In Vita S. Patricii," p. 515.

² Vol. i. p. 58.

³ "Etude Historique sur la vie de S. Patrick, présentée à la Faculté de Théologie Protestante de Paris, 19 Nov., 1883." This admirable *étude*, and the last work of Sir S. Ferguson, appear to have been prompted by the *Documenta* published by Fathers de Smedt, de Backer, and myself.

⁴ St. Patrick calls his writing, *Scriptura*, *confessio*, *exgallias* or *exagallias*, i.e. his "Account of Himself."

⁵ Fol. 9ab. Docum. p. 58.

⁶ "Irische Texte," p. 11.

second is in the Franciscan MS., from which Dr. Zimmer¹ gives "ised."

I consider my transcripts more correct.

The translations of this passage have been many—"bátar ile"; but few, if any of them, are faithful to the text. They are: "ut refertur in historiis" (Colgan); "hoc relatum est in historiis" (Zeuss-Ebel);² "it is this that has been declared in histories" (Stokes);³ "as is told (erzählt wird) in histories" (Zimmer);⁴ "as is ascertained in stories" (P. Lynch);⁵ "is the meaning of what is recorded in stories" (O'Brennan);⁶ "this is what is disclosed in histories" (Gilbert's National MSS.);⁷ "this it is that history relates to us" (I. E. RECORD, 1868);⁸ "quod narrant (?) in historiis" (Windisch);⁹ "as histories tell us" (Ferguson).

Colgan's "ut fertur in historiis" would be a correct translation of "Feib adfiadar i scélaib" (*L. na hUidre*, fo. 37), of "Is amlaid sin atfiadar i senchasaib" (*Ir. Nennius*, p. 32); and Windisch's "ut narrant in historiis" would fairly render "Is amlaid seo atfiadait na heolaid" of *Ir. Nennius*, p. 52, and "atfidat in eolaig" of the *Vita S. Patricii Oxon.*¹⁰

But adfet = dixit, narravit, as I thus prove: "Luid Patrice ocus adfet do uictor omnia verba domini sui";¹¹ "Eoin roscrib . . . is é adfét in gnim-nuasal";¹² "Tig Loeg ocus atfet a scéla";¹³ "Petair adfet cenai .l. dorigne a chét procept";¹⁴ "amail ro ordaig Bénen amail arfed Lebor Glinne da Locha";¹⁵ "nech adfet a scéla dé";¹⁶ "O Christ, adfet orrdan mo Maedoc";¹⁷ "adfet doib uile amail atehonnaire, atfet

¹ "Celtische Studien," ii., p. 165, circiter.

² "Gramm. Celt.," pp. 478; 1000.

³ Goidelica.

⁴ "Celtische Studien," ii., p. 165, circiter.

⁵ "Edition and Translation of the Hymn," in Life of St. Patrick.

⁶ Antiquities I. 485.

⁷ Part I., No. xxxii.

⁸ "Edition and Translation of the Hymn."

⁹ "Irish Texts," p. 347.

¹⁰ O'Donovan, in "Suppl.," quotes this *Vita*, but does not give the page. The translations of the RECORD and of Ferguson = "Mar do silad in seancasa" of *Hy-Fiachrach*, p. 425.

¹¹ Gloss on the *Hymn of Fiacc*, Franciscan copy.

¹² *L. Brecc*, fo. 84 or, p. 194.

¹³ "L. na hUidre," fo. 45.

¹⁴ Féilire, Feb. 22.

¹⁵ "L. na gCeart," p. 28.

¹⁶ *L. Brecc*, fo. 111.

¹⁷ Féilire, March 23, Stokes renders "received" in the Translation, but "narrabat" in Glossarial Index; perhaps it means retulit, i.e. obtinuit.

scela do Coinchulainn, adfet amail boi Cuchulainn;"¹ "*ut dixit Lucas, amail atfét Lucas in Actaib Aspal;*"² "Amail (adfed, adféd, adfeat, rôché, rochead, rochan, rochachain, dochachain, adbert, atbert, asbert, rosfíg) Bénen."³ These words in No. 10 are used to introduce extracts from Bénen; and adfed is no doubt of the same voice and tense as the words with which it is bracketed. "Amail adfed in file . . . conad rochan in senchaid . . . amail adbert int eolach."⁴

Zeuss gives "Is airi adfet dé hic = ideo relatum est; is do béstaid infét, ad moralitatem prolatus est;"⁵ but I think dixit, protulit would suit the sense as well, the latter sentence being a gloss on 'est moralis sensus.'

O'Donovan translates adfet scéla, "news were heard," in the verses:

"Am Buach
Ferus an tonn fri buach,
Atfet scéla, cia fa scith,
Aodh Mac Aimmireach fo bith."⁶

"At Buach the wave buffets the brink, news were heard, who, in weariness, slew Aedh, son of Aimmire." But I would suggest "the wave broke (ferais) against the brink, brought the tidings, etc." O'Beirne Crowe makes adfet = it is related, in "Bui cuithe isin dún lasin rí, adfet,"⁷ but, "narravit," would suit the sense here, and at l. 30 of Fiacc's Hymn.

From this evidence I conclude that "adfét" means "dixit, narravit." I will now consider the meaning of "hi scélaib."

2.—*Hi scélaib* and *Eagallias*.

Scél means sometimes an oral statement or account—"d'fácbus sgéala aig an gcaillin" = I left word with the maid-servant; "adfiadat scéla," they tell their tidings (Togáil Troi, l. or p. 22). It also means a written account, as "Scéla na

¹ "Sick-bed of Cuchulainn," pp. 379, 385, 390, where O'Curry translates "told," "narrated."

² *L. Brecc*, fo. 85, p. 195.

³ "L. na gCeart," pp. 42, 70, 32; 88, 112, 70, 136; 62, 92, 144.

⁴ "Book of Lecan," fo. 286bb.

⁵ Pp. 478; 1,000.

⁶ "Four Masters." An. 594.

⁷ "Siabar Charpat Conchulainn," p. 385; at pp. 381 and 383 he treats adfet as a future, but the praes. secundarium, *diceret*, would suit in those places.

hEiséirgi," Tidings of the Resurrection, edited by O'B. Crowe : and this I take to be its meaning in our hymn, where scéla = "exgallia" of the *Confessio*. If I were asked to give the descent or pedigree of *Exgallia*,¹ I should say it is "out of 'Εξαγγελία" by "Scéla, or Sgéala, as we write it at present, and as perhaps it was pronounced in the olden time. I will add that it derives its meaning from these words. It denotes here St. Patrick's account of himself, his "confessio," of which word ἑξαγγελία is a Greek equivalent in the works of St. Chrysostome.² My view is this—St. Patrick, being at loss for a Latin word to express the full meaning of *scéla*, was forced or betrayed into using that word with a classic dress. I believe, moreover, that he was led to the use of it by a passage of St. Peter, with which his whole "Scriptura" seems saturated and coloured. Let us compare their words :—

ST. PETER.

Vos autem genus electum, regale sacerdotium, gens sancta, populus acquisitionis; ut virtutes annuntietis (ἑξαγγείλητε) ejus qui de tenebris vos vocavit in admirabile lumen suum, qui *aliquando* non *populus*, nunc autem misericordiam consecuti (1 *Peter*, ii., 9, 10).

ST. PATRICK.

Oportet . . . notum facere donum Dei, et consolationem aeternam. . . Dei *nomen* ubique *expandere*, et, etiam post obitum meum *exagallias* relinquere fratribus meis, quos ego in Domino baptizavi tot millia hominum; et non eram dignus, neque talis ut hoc Dominus servo suo concederet, et in *gentem* illam tantam gratiam donaret, quod *aliquando* in juventute mea nunquam speravi, neque cogitavi.

From the collation of these words, and much more from the tone and tenor of the whole context, I gather that the passage of St. Peter was floating in the memory of our Apostle, that he got his inspiration and that particular expression there; and that of the various readings of a word, which has puzzled so many learned men, the best is *exagallias* of the *B. of Armagh*, which comes nearest to ἑξαγγελίας a

¹ *Exgallias* in the *St. Waast MS*, but the Bollandists unfortunately omitted it; *ex gallias* in *Fél.* fo. 8a, *exagallias* in the *Book of Armagh*, fo. 23aa. The first approaches *iscelaib*, the second more resembles the Greek.

² See ἑξαγγελία in Stephanus' *Thesaurus Ling. Grace*.

Greek noun suggested by the verb of St. Peter, and found in the genitive plural in the *Cyropaedia*. I propose as an emendation *exaggelias* or *exangelias*.¹

The scribe of Armagh did not understand the word, and wrote in the margin, "incertus liber"; the Bollandists, though it was in their St. Waast MS.,² omit it; Mr. Gilbert prints *ev* [*tra*] *gallias*; Canon MacIlwaine suggests *euangelia*; Sir Samuel Ferguson equates it with *exagallias*, bequests, which he says is in Ducange; but *exagella* is the word in Ducange, as well as I can judge from D'Arnis' *Lexicon Med. Latinitatis*.

Leaving the reader to judge of Ferguson's view and my own, I pass to another obscure word of the hymn.

3. *aeua*.

Ised tuargaib aeua suas de sechtreba dóine.

This verse has been variously rendered, as follows:—

- "Et hinc ejus merita exaltata sunt supra nationes hominum,"³
- "This is what extended his fame up to each tribe of people,"⁴
- "This is what spread his praise (worth) up to every nation of mankind."⁵
- "It is this that raised his goodness upwards . . . (?) beyond men's tribes,"⁶
- "He raised his hands in blessing upon the tribes of men,"⁷
- "That exalted his name high over it (the evil) over the generations of men."⁸

For "eua" O'Brennan suggests "lua," worth; but he must have meant "luach," as "lua," in O'Reilly, is a foot, kick, heap, water, oath, while in the St. Gall MS. "lua liaith gl. lien," and in the *Book of Armagh* "inna lua gl. juncturas gubernaculorum." In the RECORD of 1868, it seems to be taken for "lama," hands. It is glossed *amathe*, his goodness, in the *Book of Hymns*; it is set down as a scribal error for *ainm* by Dr. Zimmer, whose view I find borne out by these words of Fiacc's master, Dubthach, "Dorochair and Eithne

¹ It may be objected that St. Patrick was not familiar with the Greek Testament. Was he not? The early Irish Church certainly was so. I think Mr. Steele Nicholson has given some proofs that our Apostle read the Greek Testament, but I have not his book within reach.

² I know this from a collation lately made for me by the Bollandists.

³ Colgan. ⁴ Patrick Lynch. ⁵ O'Brennan. ⁶ Whitley Stokes.

⁷ I. E. RECORD, 1868. ⁸ Dr. Zimmer's "Celtische Studien," 2nd Heft.

U'athach, ainm dar treba," which reminds us of "sechtreba dóine." Dr. Zimmer sets forth his view as follows:—¹

" 'X' writes *a eua* without asterisks, as if all were quite clear. In his dictionary, which we consult with great expectations, we find *a eua* gl. *amathe*; that is, the middle Irish glossarist is simply transcribed. What, then, is this nowhere-else-occurring, very-slightly-trust-awaking word, *eua*? 'Y' translates, according to the gloss. 'It is that raised his goodness.' Now I cannot see any meaning whatever here to suit the context, 'pious was Patrick till he died, he was a strong expeller of evil.' The context rather suggests this interpretation, 'That (viz. that he was a strong expeller of evil), exalted his name high over it (the evil), over the generations of men.

"The word *aeua* is then a scribal error for *ainm* with the sign for *m* over *n*, which may have easily occurred, as in old MSS., *a* looks like *u*, *eu* like *ai*. However, I do not assert this as fully established.

"It is strange that neither 'Y' nor 'X' has taken the trouble to enquire how the glossarist was led to write the gloss, *amathe*, *cjus bonitas*. Well, *amathe*, as early as the eleventh century, was pronounced as at present *avahe*, which is in Manx *a vie*, and the glossarist, not understanding '*aeua*,' took it for the phonetic form of *amathe*. So, this gloss has the same value, as for example, when in our day 'Z' translates *jithisi*, weavings, he pronounces *jithis*, is thus reminded of *fighim*, 'I weave,' and translates accordingly.²

"'Y' abuses the modern Irish writers with the full measure of his ready vocabulary, but to the middle Irish he offers the willing homage of his intellect, yet I have hitherto been unable to discover, that nonsense possesses the property which we usually attribute to cigars."

I cannot pretend to be a judge between Dr. Zimmer and the great scholars whom he criticises, but I think he wrongs the middle Irish glossarist, and the middle Irish vocable *eua*, which I beg to introduce to him as a genuine Irish word. No wonder, indeed, he regards it with suspicion; it is not easily recognizable, since it has undergone "initial decapitation" or *dichned tosaig*, and is suffering from internal "infection" and "mortification"³ *immedonchaib*, after this fashion:—*a feba* = *a feba* = *a eua* = his good qualities, or, as the glossarist puts it, *a mathe*. *A*, "his" aspirates, and according to Zeuss,

¹ 'Celtische Studien,' Heft 2. For obvious reasons I put X, Y, Z, in place of the real names given by Dr. Zimmer.

² I have heard a boy translate "sur sa tête un morceau de chair" (LaFontaine), by "on his head a morsel of hair."—E. Hogan.

³ Cf. O'Donovan's Gram., p. 50.

“si *f* inchoans accipit infectionem, signatur puncto delente vel omittitur.” Thus we get *a eba*. Again O'Donovan¹ says. “In the beginning of words *b* between two short broad vowels sounds softly like *u* and becomes a vowel, as $\rho\epsilon\alpha\beta\alpha\varsigma$. Hence *a eua* is phonetically for *a feba*, the accusative plural of *feb* or *feib*. We find *at mathi ém na feba sin, rom altsa ém la feba féne* (L. na hUidre);² *ar febas do crotha, ar ebas a erlabra* (Book of Hymns, folio 3), *a feib .l. a huaislin; feibh .l. febhus; a feib .l. abfeabhus crotha ocus ceneoil; bes cutruma feibh ocus tochtus*—O'Don. Suppl. In Z². 801, *ind febtad*=qualitatis. In the “L. na gCeart” we read *ar shinseri ocus comairle, fonn ocus feib-sa; iar sochar a forba ocus a ceneoil, a feib dligid ocus duchusa; is amlaid sin midighear feb-sa ocus tuarist la ríq.* In the Bible,⁴ *an uile dríne dh'a eabhas da mbi a staid*=every man at his best estate, *ni bhfuil a shamhail agam feabhas intinne*=I have a man like-minded $\iota\sigma\phi\upsilon\chi\omicron\nu$. The dialogues of Connellan and of Neilson give:—“*Bhuil leabthachaidhe maíthe ann? Tá siad air fheabhas., Nach glan geal an coirce sin? Tá sé air fheabas stól.*” If you ask an Irish groom or farmer “An coirce maith é sin?” he will say “Tá sé air fheabhas” and may add, as happened in an answer to me, “Ní thig leis a bheith níos féarr.”

Hence I gather that *eua* means wealth of money or merit, *eximia virtus, præstabilis dignitas, excellentia, præstantia* qua “*sublimis supra genus eminet ipsum*”—*suas de sech treba dóine*. I feel confident that the old glossarist understood the word, but understated its meaning by giving *a mathe* for its synonym—it could have no difficulty for him, as it was written phonetically. No doubt O'Donovan³ says it is “a great puzzle among grammarians, whether *b* was anciently pronounced as aspirated,” that is as *u*, but he does not attempt to solve that puzzle.

Windisch finds the first traces of this aspiration in the old Irish loanwords, *improm* from “*improbis*,” *mebair* from “*memoria*,” then in Middle Irish he finds *mebair* and *mebdatar* for O. Irish *memair*, *memdatar*. He refers to pp. 84, 109, 304 of his “*Irische Texte*,” and adds, that it is only in later MSS. we find this infection indicated in writing. So

¹ Gram., p. 47. ² In Windisch's “*Woerterbuch*.” ³ Gram., p. 47.

⁴ Psal. 38; Philip ii., 20.

far Dr. Windisch:¹ I will go a step further. In the *Book of Armagh* (A.D. 807), *Uertrige* = *Bertrige*; *campus euoi* = *c. eboi*² = Machaire ebha, now Magherow, near Binbulbin, which is called *Eba* in "Chronicon Scotorum," p. 47. In the *Book of Armagh* copy of the "Confessio" *imuerbis* = *imberbis*; in the "Codex Bernensis" of the ninth century, *uair* = *ubair*; in a Cornish MS. of the twelfth century *treuedic* = *trebedic*, "colonus."³ In the *L. Brecc* (circ. 1400) *treue* = *trebe*, *Berua* = *Berba*, *Baluina* = *Balbina*;⁴ *noemi* and *noimi* of *L. Brecc* and *Laud* = *noebi* of *Rawlinson*, *noemi L. B.* = *noebi R.*; *noebi L. B.* = *noemiu L.*; *noemdai L. B.* and *L.* = *noebdai R.*; *noemat L.* = *noebat L. B.*; *Dauith L.* = *Dabid R.* and *L. B.* *Claidem* and *claidim* of *L. B.* and *R.* = *claidib L.*—*Fel.* (Prolog. 5; Epil. 59, 484; Sept. 13, Aug. 5, March 1). *Forruib* of *Fiacce* = *forruim* (*Book of Armagh*).

In the *Yellow Book of Lecan* (A.D. 1390), *ni uil* = *ni fil*;⁵ *nir uo deas*, *ciar uo bióth* = *nir bo deas*, *ciar bo bióth*;⁶ *De ui* = *De bi*;⁷ in the MS. Egerton of the fifteenth century, *do ueth* = *do beth*; *uhen* = *ben* (three times), and *laurad*, *jaoura* = *labrad*, *jaobra*;⁸ in the Harleian MS. of 1560 *circa*, *nir uo* = *nir bo*. Halliday says that in old MSS. *uoi* = *ba*, and O'Donovan asserts that ancient writers often use *uoi* for *bhi*, but they do not give any instances.

I trust that I have here established that *u* was written phonetically for *b* from the early times, and that consequently no objection can be maintained against *a eua* as a phonetic form of *a eba* or *a feba*.

I venture to submit my views on another obscure word of *Fiacce's Hymn*, viz.:—

4.—*Nibronna*.

The T.C.D. copy of *Fiacce's Hymn* has *Maraith aes ni bronna*, and the copy O.S.F., *Maraid diaes inbronna*. The translations are—"Ibique, exinde manent impressa vestigia ejus."—(Colgan). "His marks after him remained."—(P. Lynch).

¹ Gram., M'Swney's Translation, p. 21.

³ "Zeuss," p. 1071.

⁵ "Battle of Magh Rath," p. 118.

⁷ "Yellow Book of Lecan," col. 224.

⁸ "Windisch's Texte," p. 145, *et alibi*.

⁹ And that *b* = *m* = *v* or *u* phonetically.

² "Documenta," p. 85.

⁴ See Féilire, p. 177; 149.

⁶ "Circuit of Ireland," p. 32.

"There remains after him the impression."—(O'Brennan). "Its trace abides, it wears not away."—(Stokes,¹ and, after him, the *National MSS.*, and the IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD). "Manet vestigium ejus, non est deletum."—(Fr. McSwiney, S.J.). Bishop O'Brien and O'Reilly in their Dictionaries print *na bronna*, and translate "the marks." Windisch follows Stokes, yet indicates his doubts by a note of interrogation—"Ni bronna, intrans. schwindet nicht?"

I think the word is a preterite passive, and a phonetic form of *ní bronnad*, as *soscélad* (T.C.D.) is of *soscéla* (O.S.F.) in verse 33 of this very Hymn; and as *senna*, *labra* are of *sennad*, *sennath*, *labrad*, in *Fél*, Prol. 46 .l. We find the perf. pass. *ro bronnad* in "Fled Bricrend," *bronnad* and *brondad*, in "O'Donovan's Suppl.," and there also, *brondaid*, he uses, "wears," and "*brontar*," "is injured, worn." In Dr. Sullivan's² edition of the "Crith Gablach," we have "*Dia ma brondad*," "should it (the mill) be damaged," *cia brontar*, "though it (the bed) should be damaged," *ro "brontar"* "(the kiln) is damaged," *ní ro bronntair inni*, "whatever is damaged in it," *conneoch ro bronntair ann*, "for every damage done to it."

Therefore *bronnain* is a transitive; and as there is no evidence, so far, that it was used intransitively, I suggest the emendation *ni bronnad*, and adopt Fr. McSwiney's translation:³ "Non est deletum," or, non est detritum.

No doubt, O'Donovan writes that *do* or *ro* is prefixed to the perfect passive; but then 1°, Windisch only says it is usually prefixed; 2°, it is not prefixed to *frith*, *fofrith*, *adchuas*, *dochuas*, *focress*, *adchess*, etc.

5.—*Sléchtid*.

I should like to ascertain from Celtic savans the meaning of *sléchtid* in the *Book of Armagh*, fo. 18ab., "*Sléchtid*

¹ "O'Beirne-Crowe, in *Tain Bo Fraich*, p. 168, translates "Its trace remains, it wears not." As he was a very independent interpreter, his adhesion to Stokes' version is significant.

² "Manners and Customs," iii., 500.

³ In his MS. Dictionary and Translations, which he kindly lent me while I was working at the *Documenta Patriciana*.

Isserninus du Patráiice for a manchi ocus a andôoit; ocus dubbeir Patrice du Epscop Fith; ocus dabeir side du maccaib Cathbath, ocus congaib lethu Ath Fithot."¹

This matter may be fully discussed without stirring a question already set to rest in the RECORD, as the persons, places, times and circumstances are different.

Does it mean, that Bishop Isserninus, *alias* Fith, prostrated himself before St. Patrick, or bent the knee, or bowed to his authority? I cannot tell, and in the words of a puzzled old glossarist, I say—"Is dorchá dom." O'Reilly, apud Betham, translates, "Isserninus and his monks *submitted* to Patrick and craved forgiveness;" Stokes, in *Goidelica*: "Isserninus *knelt* to Patrick for his *manche* and his *andait*;" some Celtic scholar, in Gilbert's National MSS. has, "I. *knelt* to Patrick for his monks and his parent church."

The *Book of Armagh* seems to authorise this translation of *sléchtid* by the words, fol. 11*ba*, "Cum centenis oraculis, *flectenisque assiduís* Deum rogabat," where it may be said, kneeling is meant. Parallel passages have been thus rendered: Sléchtsais Loegaire do Patríce L.U. 118 (*Revue Celt.* 1884, pp. 164-6); Is he ro slecht do Patraice (*Book of Fenagh*, p. 385, Ed. Hennessy and Kelly); ceta roslecht, i. is é cét duine rot-slechtastair (*Senchus M.* iii. 29, 30); slechtsais Oingus do, slechtsais, slecht do (*Stokes, Féire*, pp. 7: 129; Three M.I. Hom. pp. 18, 22).

By all these the verb is translated *knelt*.

In the *Book of Ballymote*, "inclinavit se" of Nennius = roslecht, which Dr. Todd, with the sanction of O'Curry and O'Donovan, renders by "knelt," as he does in *Irish Nennius*, p. 80, where we read ro slecht a fiadnaisi Gearmain. Again, *slécht*, *sléchtain*, *sléchtanaib*, are rendered "kneeling" or "genuflection," by O'Curry, O'Donovan, Reeves and Stokes.³

¹ "Documenta Patriciana," p. 104.

² A misprint for *knels*, as *sléchtid* is present, *slechtsais* or *ro slécht*, preterite.

³ "MS. Mater," p. 101, and "Colton's Visitation," p. 112; "Four Masters," AN. 3656; "Mart. of Donegal," p. 94; "Féire," p. 105, and "Irish Homilies," p. 11.

On the other hand, *sléchtsais* = prostrates himself (Todd),¹ “Fleasga na mac uile do sléachtain do fleasg Joseph,” the sheaves of all the sons *bent themselves* before the sheaf of Joseph.”—(Bishop O’Brien).² Here kneeling is out of the question. Robadar na draoithe ocus anaighthe fo lar ag proistreat ocus ag sleachtain do Mac Dé. “The Druids lay flat on their faces, prostrate and bowing themselves down to the Son of God.”—(O’Brien). O nár sleachd do Bháil, that bowed not to Baal; do sleachd fa na chosaibh, he fell at his feet, má shleachdann tu dhamh, if thou wilt fall down.—(O’Brien, s.v. sléacdam).³

I pass now to the translations into Irish. In the *Book of Common Prayer* (pp. 40, 65, 284, 314, 324, 408, Ed. 1861), the Minister shall kneel = sleuchfaidh, sleachtfaidh; the Priest kneeling down, ar sleuchdadh don tsagart; all kneeling down, ar sleachdadh don iomlán; all the congregation shall kneel, sleachdfaigh an pobul uile; she shall kneel down sleachfaidh sí.

In the Bible κάμψει πᾶν γόνυ, οὐκ κάμψαν γόνυ, κάμπτω τὰ γόνατα, γονυπετῶν αὐτῷ γονυπετήσας, sléchtfaidh gach uile ghlún, nár fhill an glúine, fillim mo glúine, ag sleachtain ar a ghlúinib dhó, do léig sé ar a nglúinib é (Rom. xiv., 11: *ibid.* xi., 4; Eph. iii., 14; Matt. xvii., 14; Mark x., 17).

If we look for light from the dictionaries we find sléachdam = kneel down, bow down, fall down or worship (O’Brien); kneel, stoop, adore (O’Reilly); worship, kneel, bow down, adore (Coneys); genuflectere, se prosternere (Dict. Scoto-Celticum).

From this evidence I conclude that *sléchtain* signifies, according to circumstances, all that is expressed in the Ninety-fourth Psalm “O thigidh, is sleuchdamaid, is déanam cromadh leinn, is air ar nglúinibh tuiteamaid.” another version of which is “O tagaidh déanam adhra, agus claonam, filliom ar nglúine.” And I am inclined to say of *sléchtid* what Schleusner writes of προσκυνεῖ: “Generatim significat se incurvare et inclinare, ita ut subaudiatur vel ἐπὶ γόνατα, quod addit Theophr., aut εἰς τὴν γῆν, ut habet Niphilinus.” Hence

¹ *L. Hymnor*, p. 30; recte, he prostrated, τὰ γόνατα.

² O’Brien, s.v. “fleasg,” and “proistreat,” from the *L. Brecc.* ³ *Id.*

I would translate *sléchtid do Pátrice* by προσκυνεῖ Πατρίκιον or Πατρικίω. I hope some of the learned contributors to the RECORD will be able to determine the precise meaning of the passage.

6.—*Druimm hurchaille.*

In the Four Masters an. 837 is recorded the death of the Abbat *Droma Urchaille*, and O'Donovan says it may be Cnoc Urchoille or Spaniel Hill, Co. Clare. This is a mistake, and Spaniel is a misprint, I think, for Spancel. Dr. Matthew Kelly¹ quotes the Synod of Rath-Bressail, which says: "Cluanardensis Episcopatus inter Clochanum et Sinneam annem, Ulchultum et Cluanconiriam situs est;" and he remarks that Cluanconiria is Cloncurry on the boundary between Meath and Leinster; but "Urchoillte is now unknown." However, the place is not far from Maynooth and Cloncurry, as we shall see. I find the spot next mentioned in the RECORD of 1866, p. 468, in which the Litany of Aengus has "secht noem epscoip Dromma Archaille, hos omnes inuoco." Next in MacFirbis "De Quibusdam Episcopis"² I read "Druim Urchaille—ui nepscop Droma Urchaille," "the Seven Bishops of Druim-Urchaille. Thus it is in the History of the Saints of Erin, which begins with this number of Seven Bishops, viz., 'Seven Bishops of Druim-Urchaille, Seven Bishops of Cell-Deredain.'" The Editor, Mr. Hennessy, adds a query "Drumurgill, Co. Kildare?"

In the *Book of Armagh*³ it is stated that St. Patrick "perrexit ad fines Lageniensium ad *Druimm hUrchaille*, et posuit ibi domum martirum quae sic vocatur, quae sita est super riam magnam in valle, et est ibi *Petra Patricii* in via. Exiit ad campum Lifi, etc." From my knowledge of the northern fines Lageniensium I conjectured that this place was Dunmurril Hill, near Donadea, and I communicated my view three years ago to the Very Rev. Dr. Geoghegan of Kilcock, and to Father Shearman. Dr. Geoghegan coincided with me and drew up a map of the place, and sent me the traditions

¹ Cambrensis Ever, vol. ii., p. 787.

² Proceedings of the Royal Irish Academy, vol. i., part i., p. 108.

³ See *Documenta*, p. 88.

of the people. Father Shearman referred me to his *Loca Patriciana*, where he says: "Druimm Urchaille=Dunmurrhill, the remains of the cemetery crowns its *summit*. On the *northern* side is a *small* dun or rath, from which the present denomination of the place is derived." To Father Shearman belongs, I believe, the credit of having first identified the place. I made it out independently, and from Dr. Geoghegan's map and my own examination of the spot, to which I have made many a pilgrimage, I am able to correct and supplement Father Shearman's account.

The cemetery is not on the summit, but low on the slope "super viam magnam," the dún is not on the north but nearly west, and it is not small, but a very large frontier hill fort, which commanded a fine view of the hostile borders of Meath. *But it will be very small before long*, unless some one says: "Road-maker, spare that rath." The "Green Hill," as it is called, is fast disappearing, and part of the vast rath which crowns its summit has already been cut away.

The "Domus Martyrum," called elsewhere in the *Book of Armagh* a *Martar-tech*, or Relic-house, is still called the *Relicín*. The "Via magna" is either Balloch (Bealach), close by, or ran inside the wall of Donadea, along the boundary of Dunmurril, where the people say there is or was a rock blessed by St. Patrick; others think it is the large stone on Mrs. Brierton's land. The "old people" have also told me that "Dunmurrill had *seven Bishops* buried in its sacred ground, and has seven hills *like Rome*." Interments took place there up to about the year 1832. Between that place and Naas in the Campus Lifi there are many *souvenirs* of our Saint's passage, such as *Sceach Phádruig* at Donore, which an old man pointed out to me, though he could not tell what the name meant.

Druimm Urchaille means the Ridge of the Green Wood (Colgan, A.S.S., p. 59, and O'Donovan in *Four Masters*, an 837). The nominative is *Druimm Urchaille* (McFirbis, *Episcopi*) *Domnach Urchaille* (Colgan A.S.S. p. 59); genitive *Dromma Urchaille* (Aengus' Litany), *Droma Urchaille* (*Four Masters* and *McFirbis*); dative or accusative *Druimm hurchaille* (*Book of Armagh*).

The proper Irish name for the ridge is *Druimm hUrchaille* and for the *Relicín, Domnach Urchaille*, while the dún or hill fort, at which St. Patrick stopped one night, is still called by the people *Dún mBrochaill*. The English name is correctly Drummerhill in the Eccles. Taxatio of 1302-6; Drummurghill in Seward's Topographical Dictionary, and in Sleator, p. 270, Ed. 1806. It is corruptly called Donmorkill in the "Taxatio," temp. Henry VIII., Dummurghil or Dummuraghil, in "Lewis' Topographical Dictionary," in "The Parliamentary Gazetteer of Ireland," in Thom's Directory, in the Ordnance Survey Map, and, I am sorry to say, in Father Comerford's "Collections," i., p. 98. Would it not be well to resume the correct spelling of the beginning of this century?

EDMUND HOGAN, S.J.

VACATION IN 1886.—III.

EVERYBODY knows that Norfolk, as a county, is one of the flattest; it might have been a piece of Holland washed over, or more properly phrased, plucked up from the depths of ocean by some Great Eastern of prehistoric times, and towed into this north-easternmost extremity of England. But Norfolk has an exception to its general rule of flatness, and Cromer is that exception. Indeed it may be called the Norfolk Switzerland; following herein a prevalent practice of calling every group of hills abroad a local Switzerland, and frequently with no greater claims than our own Cromer.

Cromer stands on cliffs "not less than sixty feet high," says the local guide, who, being of course a Norfolk man, swells with importance as a Dutchman might do, at such towering heights. Yes, there it stands boldly commanding the German Ocean. Boldly we say advisedly, for it requires no little courage in a pretty watering place, to perch itself on the verge of such treacherous cliffs as these, which have over and over again proved false, and toppled its outworks down into the stormy ocean. So "commanding"

the German Ocean is not exactly correct, seeing that the waters have proved too much in their fury for the little town, which confided in their summer smiles. But in truth Cromer can hardly be said to have planted itself on the cliff, it is the ocean which is the intruder : which marching for centuries in its destructive way, at the rate of a yard a year, has swept off the Lordship and Parish of Shipden with its St. Peter's, which in Domesday Book was a place of importance, and swallowed all up as far as Cromer about the time of Henry IV. But passing over the rough ocean-doing of these earlier days, it is enough to reach the Cromer of the present day, to record that from time to time great landslips have taken place, until the very lighthouse itself was swept away in 1866: and a new one was erected on the heights some two-hundred and eighty yards further inland, which, if the old rate of sea encroachments continue, will have to be shifted onward again about the year A.D. 2146. So Cromer is not a place to invest money in, at least in the purchase of coastland.

Needless to say that Cromer has a somewhat battered look amid all its modern smartness, somewhat like an old warrior who crowns his scars and wrinkles with a young wig. Its cliffs are wall-faced, as they have been often before : and the houses, which almost close its narrow streets, seem to stretch their necks seawards, as though, naturally enough, wondering when their day of sea bathing will come. Indeed, as we should expect, there is a look of temporary arrangement about the sloping paths and wooden staircases that do duty for permanent roads, which tells of anything but fixity of tenure, and the completion which that term implies.

So it is when we come to take up our residence at the charming little Bath Hotel, built boldly against the present cliff and almost level with the sea, the fly that has brought us from the adjacent high hills on the top of which the railway abruptly terminates, stops when it can go no lower, and we and our luggage descend by fragile steps, which are almost ladders, and find ourselves in a pleasant house which seems all the pleasanter for the strangeness of the approach.

Ordinary arrangements of course are altogether out of place in an hotel so situated. Upstairs means any storey, and

every storey is at a different stage, according as you make your ground floor section on one side of the house or another. The street door is on the first floor above the sands, the garden door is on the second, and past the windows of the third rises a path which climbs by two flights of steps to the public road high above. When these local difficulties are mastered, it is pleasant to go in and out where you please, and escape all internal staircases, and be, as it were upon the ground floor however high up in the house your room may be.

Capital bathing is there at Cromer; you seem to be at the end of the world, and indeed may see the sun both rise and set over its coastline. Then the walks over the breezy cliffs, which rise and fall so abruptly that people think twice before they make an abrupt descent scanning doubtfully the as rapid rise on the other side. Who can calculate what quantity of ozone gets into one's system in roaming over these heights and plunging into these ravines? The bright sunshine but adds to the pleasure of the ramble as it does to the beauty of the scenery, without making its presence unpleasantly felt: for there can be no depression of spirits where there is no oppression of heat, and here the sea-breezes mingle with its beams, and temper them till it becomes a part of themselves. A guide book is hardly needful, for go which way you will there are pleasant walks and drives with some grand old church, or noble mansion or wild demesne with pines and gigantic beeches not in solitary groups but in stretches of real forest in which it is a pleasure, not often denied, to be lost for an hour or more. For people who are methodical in their pleasures, and who wish to visit the chief points in the neighbourhood a guide is of course necessary, for where there are so many places inviting and well repaying a pilgrimage, some selection must be made unless time is unlimited.

We tried the plan but it utterly broke down with us. People following impulse and the leading whim of the moment will never be Methodists, and yet we, going anywhere and anyhow perhaps enjoy our vagabondry, and, it may be see as much of the things best worth seeing, as the most orderly of our brother visitors. There is a fine old church which towers above the little town, as much as the town itself towers above

the sea. Matter-of-fact people say, doubtless, that it is far too big for the place, but in the time of Henry IV. people judged otherwise. Like all churches in these parts it is built of flint and freestone, and consisted of a chancel with a nave and two aisles, and a grand square embattled tower upwards of one hundred and fifty feet high. The chancel was destroyed two hundred years ago, and of that only some lofty fragments remain, then the rest fell into decay and the population contented themselves and their devotional requirements with the accomodation which the tower afforded. But in the last few years all has been carefully restored at considerable cost; all except the chancel, which still raises its gaunt fragments as if in protest against this neglect of what was once the most sacred part of the church, and threatens its restored brother with its overhanging walls. This mixture of restoration, preservation and neglect is almost a characteristic of this part of the country. Very fine are most of the churches, and yet almost everywhere there are ruined arches and dismantled towers as though the people felt that they had more than they required; as indeed they have, seeing how different are the rites now in fashion from those for which their grand old churches were built. Some such feeling must unconsciously have influenced their minds for there is no mark of poverty or parsimony in their care of what they use.

The Catholic draw-back to a stay at Cromer is the want of a Catholic church. However a railway journey of twenty miles carries us to Norwich where there are two churches, and much to interest and fill up vacant intervals.

So after a fortnight at Harrogate and a week at Cromer, what with the water-drinking and bathing, combined with the fresh sea and land breezes, pleasant society and intercourse with nature at its brightest, we feel that we may venture upon a ramble abroad for a few weeks to test the strength we have so diligently acquired. But so planless are our wanderings, so undetermined our route, that on our way to London we absolutely pass Harwich which is the port we return to the very next day on our way to Antwerp.

And now once more we are on a Foreign Tour: but with

no ambitious designs or extensive range of mental vision. Indeed so little do we yearn after exciting novelties that we find ourselves at Brussels as a matter of course; as we had found ourselves at London when we were pondering over a new departure. And Brussels is in truth as charming as ever; as wonderful and ambitious in its growth as any of its neighbouring cities, as even the one which had milliards to play with, after its little game with France. There stands, now completed, a Palais de Justice, as high almost as St. Paul's and occupying an area larger than that of St. Peter's; there it stands at the end of a grand vista from the Place Royale, on a wide open space which has been cleared for it by the sweeping away of numberless houses; and towering high above the old city, to which it graciously condescends to make itself accessible by what the Belgians call *Le Fantastique Escalier*, perhaps the grandest staircase in Europe. Fifty millions of francs have been spent upon it, and so we need not wonder that not only the site itself was cleared out but a whole sweep was made of all that could be said to be near it, and encroaching upon its dignity. Fortunately it is not Gothic in its architecture, and so is fitted for the purpose for which it is built. Brussels has no need of modern Gothic, seeing how much it possesses of real mediæval work in its Hotel de Ville, and other ancient buildings. One cannot help comparing it with the heavy and gloomy new Law Courts in London, which are thrust into the Strand, and take their station, grudgingly and absurdly out of place, amid the shops and houses of that narrow thoroughfare.

We wander around the Grande Place, of which one can never tire, even when the Hotel de Ville has been exhausted; for are there not on all its sides those quaint and yet grand houses which were built after the bombardment in 1698? houses which Brussels has ruled are never to be pulled down to make room for modern constructions. A noble determination this of the city, which it has made still more effective by a resolution of its Municipal Council, as follows, which we chronicle for the edification and encouragement of similar bodies nearer home: "Whereas the Grande Place contains the most unique collection of"—no; let it stand in its own language,

which translation can hardly do justice to : “*Considérant que la Grande Place offre le plus admirable ensemble de constructions de tout le Pays, il a décidé de faire restaurer, aux frais de la Ville, toutes les maisons, sans destruction, dans leur style primitif.*” All honour to the city that could so resolve, and carry out, as it has done, this patriotic work.

As we wander on, round the Place for a fresh point of view, and so obtain a fresh grouping of the quaint and fantastic houses, we stumble unwittingly upon a grand Boulevard which we do not remember to have seen before. On it stretches in noble dimensions and with accordant houses, on, on, we wonder where it will cease. Shall we say it is equal to any boulevard in Paris? No: for it has something which Paris wants. It has a character of its own, and scorns to borrow, even from a bigger neighbour.

We must leave Brussels, and, as usual, unwillingly: so on we go by Luxembourg to Strassburg, as we went last summer, and there we branch off and cross the Rhine into the Black Forest for a week of wandering. The bold engineering of its railway is familiar enough, being now the usual way to Shaffhausen or to Lake Constance (*Boden See*), but when we last hurried over it, we registered a vow in Murray that we would treat it with more respect and attention when next we came. And now here we are at its little capital, Triberg, in the very heart of the Black Forest, and perched up upon its toes, as it were, some 2,000 feet above sea level, that it may survey the Canton over which it bears rule, and keep an eye upon its mountains and valleys. But high as it stands, and even higher as we dwell, on a steep hill, and up in the very roof of the *Schwarz-Wald Hof* (Hotel of the Black Forest), hanging out in a veritable Swiss cottage, with street door and windows commanding our own lofty balcony, even here our view is closed by adjacent heights which hedge us in on every side; so that while we lie a-bed calmly contemplating at our ease the scenery immediately before us, we bridge over the heights beneath, and have the climbing forest on a level with our aerie, and lose it as it sweeps in noble undulations above our windows, to regain it only when outside on our own little balcony. For a time Triberg is our own also.

Its valleys grow familiar; its wandering paths, now up steeply into the all-encircling forest, now wending their way through cultivated meadows to picturesque farmhouses; ever onward but not necessarily carrying us very far from home; seeming themselves to grow tired of wandering, and so bringing us back again to the place they and we love so well. Often is it purposeless strolling, the very perfection of vacation, when nothing has to be done but to enjoy nature in its bountifulness.

Sometimes, however, what seems a sense of duty comes over us, and we feel that we ought to see something, to visit some place, and so to prepare ourselves to answer to those questionings which seem to have grown up for the most careless traveller in these days of incessant examination. But we sturdily resist, refuse to go in, and follow, not so much our own fancies as nature's leading. But, one day, as a kind of compromise, we walk along the high road from Triberg to Hornberg. How ordinary language misleads in such a walk as this! A high road from town to town suggests dust and heat, and all their attendant discomforts; whereas here it means a winding way between two lofty ranges of hills, now closing in upon us and darkening the road by the overhanging trees high above, which form a greensky through which the bright sun sends its tremulous rays and paints our path with dancing light. Now again one range draws back, and close beside us appear the bright, sparkling, and singing waters of the beautiful little river, Fallbach. It is our companion from Triberg to Hornberg, but like a faithful dog is now beside us, "fetching mad bounds," and then away off into the mountain, only to return once more, as full of sport as ever, and resting for a while in a broader expanse, to be up and off again as we draw near. Hornberg is a pretty village, and is dominated, or once was so, by a feudal castle which is now a ruin, or perhaps worse, at least from a picturesque point of view, for it is a *Pension* as a black inscription on a whitewashed wall, a very loud advertisement tells us. However it must be a home for the hardy mountaineer, for no ordinary pensionnaire would care to mount it often in the course of the day. The valley, however, has its hotel and there we find ourselves just in time for a table d'hôte.

We vary our return by means of the railway; and this is as much out of the common way as the Black Forest itself.

In our walk from Triberg, the railway, as well as the river, had been our companion, but here again ordinary language must not mislead us.

The railway, like the river, was here, there, and everywhere; and if it did not go bounding on its way, it seemed to play almost as mad tricks considering the decorum such a construction generally observes. But surely the spirit of the mountain is upon it, and like ourselves when out wandering, at one time it is climbing up a steep ascent, then suddenly turning on its path, it drops down again that it may take a flying leap across the road and retrace the very way it came, on the opposite range of hills, and work backwards and forwards in steep curves up again until it has climbed a certain height, and then, as though tired of this toil, it plunges into a tunnel which brings us out in a dazzling blaze of light, and pulls up—at least the train does, with a yell at a pretty station. Did we say a yell? no; it is with a lively whistle which awakens all the adjacent echoes, and so the grim mountain range bursts out into laughter and welcomes home its child. We had noticed all this eccentric action while on our pleasant walk, and indeed had a train as a companion more or less near for some time; not of course that it moved at our deliberate pace, but having so to double upon itself and to travel both sides of the way in both directions, it passed and repassed us without stopping, and at last only won by a neck.

The engineering on this line is excellent, and like most things of excellence it was costly. It is a Government work and so does not ruin shareholders. But it is a public necessity and opens up the trade of the Black Foresters, so it is worth its cost. The trade here is, strange to say, in Dutch toys and American clocks, Dutch of course meaning German (*Deutsch*), but why the well known cuckoo-clocks should be called American we do not pretend to know.

It is curious to note that the Germans call their toys from the place where they are made, *Nürnberger Spielwaaren*, so Triberg had to use a word for itself which Germany never thus employs.

We need not dwell upon other expeditions, always made on foot, as to St. Georgen and Sommerau, but a word must be said about its celebrated waterfall before we pass on into Switzerland.

A guide book now before us—one of a series called "*Guides Conty*,"—seems to think indeed that the waterfall is almost the *raison d'être* of Triberg, and sends the guided to an hotel for immediate dinner, that he or she may devote what time remains to "sa ravissante cascade," and continue the journey onward in the afternoon. But the guide book perhaps is not to blame, seeing that French tourists soon weary of scenery, and are better pleased with a waterfall which can call forth the usual exclamations, let them pose for a few minutes, and off again. So we need not be hard upon an excellent guide-book which is compact, cheap, and abounding in clever, merry wood-cuts, illustrating incidents of travel.

Anyhow the waterfall is an attraction which stays even impatient travellers, and for their sake we suppose, is treated as quite a distinguished personage. The hotels flaunt its name on their advertisements, and even our magnificent Schwarz-Wald Hof calls itself, at one end of the omnibus, the Waterfall Hotel. For it, the waterfall as well as the omnibus, belongs to us, standing in our ground, or at any rate in the ravine adjoining. The river (Fallbach), our old friend who accompanied us from Triberg to Hornberg, winds somewhat lazily through a broad plain on the heights above, but wakes up to tumble over and amid the grand rocks that lead into the ravine, and to make amid sundry stumbles, three grand leaps into the depth below; then it hurries on down a rapid descent into the town, and, after doing a scientific work there, flows on, as we have said, through the Gutach valley to and beyond Hornberg.

The fall is of upwards of one hundred and fifty feet; and being hemmed in by pines that clothe the granite rocks, and spanned by two bridges, and commanded by paths which wind round every good point of view, it is a striking object from a distance and not less pleasing when examined close at hand. Murray says it is the finest in Germany, which after all is not saying much. Anyhow it is worth a visit even by a hurrying tourist, and forms an ever new object of pleasure

to the more sedate traveller. It is a kind of afternoon lounge and an evening stroll at least when the display is over, and the moon is left alone to illuminate it. For it is turned at a fixed hour into a show place to which the thoughtless swarm, and, like too many other falls, is made a victim to the electric light which degrades the beautiful work of nature down to the level of a scene in a play; as indeed many unconscious satirists pronounced it to be, when they mean only to express their admiration. And, as though to make the degradation lower and more keenly to wound its feelings, for waterfalls surely have not only a life, but a consciousness of beauty in the poetry of motion,—it is made to work this exhibition of itself and to provide by its own action the electricity that flaunts gaudy colours over its virgin waters. So the flash of light is turned on, the coloured glasses are shifted, and now red, and now green discolours the water, until the Black Forest seems to pass away and the Colinderies rises and usurps its place. However the electric light does more serviceable work, and so Triberg is made bright and gay, with a brilliancy few capitals can boast.

The mountain railway has opened up the Black Forest for tourists as well as for trade, and year by year are its quiet beauties more recognised.

So Triberg has grown into a place of much resort, and not only has good hotels, but has them crowded. Here in our Schwarz-Wald Hof the passages and public rooms do duty for dormitories; nay the very balconies themselves, which open on to the broad staircases, become sleeping places, at least in fine weather, while those who get rooms, and still more, we who get a real aerial cottage to ourselves, rank among the blessed. With fashion of course comes music in its train, and if, as must be confessed, the performances are rare and the times uncertain, there is at least the foundation upon which all may hereafter be built, in the shape of a tax upon visitors, the collection of which is at present the only portion of the scheme which is carried out with regularity.

So we bid farewell to dear little Triberg, and pray, with our courteous host, that our return may be speedy.

HENRY BEDFORD.

(To be continued.)

THEOLOGICAL QUESTIONS.

I. "Would you kindly give your decision on the following? A penitent who has made a general confession six years ago, comes now to confession, having made bad confessions during the six years. He does not know whether certain sins he has actually committed were before his general confession. He quite forgets. Here there would appear to be a "*dubium negativum de peccatis confessis*," and according to theological principles he would be bound to confess. So says a friend whom I consulted. But I think the case resolves itself into a '*dubium de commissis*.' For he cannot say whether he committed these sins after the general confession, so as to be bound to confess them. The *lex confessionis* is not certain, and must prove itself. Therefore he is not bound to confess them.

II. "The same solution would be given, where a baptised adult comes six years after his baptism to confess his sins for the first time. He is uncertain whether he committed certain sins before or after his baptism. He has only a negative doubt. But I hold that the *lex confessionis* must prove itself. For though he has certainly committed certain sins, he does not know whether he has committed sins that *must* be confessed. The '*dubium*' in this and the former case may be expressed—a '*dubium negativum de peccatis ita commissis ut necessario confiteri debeant*.' There is then a *dubium negativum* about the obligation of confession; and therefore one is not bound to confess.

III. "Another case is this—A penitent does not know whether he confessed certain circumstances that change the nature of the sin. He has nothing to rely upon but mere oblivion. His confessor who may supply the defect had been a mere listener and by no means a doctor. Here although there is a negative doubt about sins committed, viz.—circumstances that should be confessed, I think the axiom—'*Standum est pro valore actus*' will apply to this case in the sense—'*Quod factum est, presumitur rite factum*.' There is no doubt about the substantial confession of the sins, or what may be termed the '*corpus*.' Therefore the circumstances may be presumed as confessed. Hence no obligation to confess.

"By giving your decision, you will greatly oblige.

"A SUBSCRIBER."

I. By a process like that indicated in this question doubts with regard to confession of sins may be *indirectly* turned into

doubts with respect to *commission* itself. For in such cases the sinner "cannot say whether he committed these sins . . . so as to be bound to confess them." But theologians, when distinguishing different classes of doubtful offences in relation to the integrity of confession, have in view what is *directly* doubtful. This latter may be *commission*, *time* of commission with respect to *baptism*, *gravity*, or *past confession*. In all these hypotheses the particular law is uncertain and cannot impose an obligation. In how many of them then does a reflex law enforcing the particular obligation, notwithstanding the direct doubt, *certainly* exist? Or rather, as we can scarcely hope to add, in a short space, anything to what is contained in such books as Lehmkuhl, Gury and Marc, how are our correspondent's difficulties to be classified with reference to the above division, and is the reflex law certain in these special cases?

Keeping to his first question for the present, as bad confessions count for nothing, the case seems to be one of doubtful confession. Now when a grave sin has certainly been committed, and a doubt arises with regard to its confession, it is not too much to say that the *sententia communis* requires at least a sound, probable and positive reason arising from the balance of presumptions if not directly adducible, for believing that the offence was confessed, before exonerating a penitent from the duty of declaring it in the tribunal of penance. Is there any ground to support such a belief in regard to this particular case? No doubt for conscientious penitents who examine their consciences with diligence before confession, and are always careful about its integrity, a favourable presumption exists, relying on which they are justified in holding themselves practically free from declaring this or that mortal sin, the confession of which they cannot now recall to mind. Such penitents have firm ground to go upon. We think it is otherwise in the case before us. The person has no direct reason for holding he confessed those sins in a good confession and his method of life does not seem to found a safe presumption on his behalf. Furthermore, if we turn from the thought of strict obligation to consider what is right and salutary for

such a penitent, assuredly, as he does not appear on this statement to be one harassed by scruples, it would be well for him to quiet his conscience by a full disclosure of the past, even if, without certainty, he should have solid reasons for thinking he had confessed his faults.

II. This last remark applies likewise to our correspondent's next question. For the penitent's sake a full confession should be asked. But is it of strict obligation? The offences are certain in themselves; yet it is doubtful whether they come within the sphere of absolution. The uncertainty about their place with regard to Baptism would seem equivalently an uncertainty with respect to their commission. Considered as sins which the Sacrament of Penance can wipe out their existence at any time is doubtful. It is doubtful whether the acts in question ever were *materia circa quam* of this sacrament. Hence they almost come under the class of doubtfully committed sins, and, as there is no strong positive ground for holding that they have been committed in the sense explained, it would appear that there is no certain obligation of confessing them. But, on the other hand, a like question has arisen in connection with conditional Baptism, and, as is well known, was decided in favour of the obligation to confess mortal sins occurring between the two ceremonies. Yet the above-mentioned reasons for exemption were pertinent to the latter case. Apart, however, from extrinsic differences, it may be replied that Baptism, when in possession, brings with it all the obligations of Christian life, until the baptismal rite is proved invalid, and that it would ill assort with the end of Penance, at the time of conversion and afterwards, if it were lawful to omit confessing the sins of youth and manhood whenever Baptism is sufficiently doubtful to require conditional repetition. These points are of considerable importance. Besides the precise reasons for the decision given to the English Bishops by the Holy Office in 1868, as well as its full significance, are subject to some controversy among theologians. Hence, pending a further decision from the Holy See on the issue here raised, we think our correspondent's conclusion as to the *strict obligation* is fairly

warranted by the difference which certainly exists between his case and that decided by the Sacred Congregation.

III. His reasoning on this third question also seems sound as far as it goes. But in practice the lax should be made repeat these circumstances, the scrupulous should not be allowed to do so, and penitents who observe the golden mean, are to be encouraged to state such doubts in their completeness.

P. O'D.

THE CHURCH ABROAD.

THE war that was to crush Catholicism in the German Empire was opened by Herr Falk in 1873, under a double pretext. The first was the definition of Papal Infallibility on the 18th of June, 1870, and the second was the subsequently hostile attitude taken up even in matters of pure politics by the Centrum or Catholic party against the Government of Prince Bismarck. The latter fact was, of itself, sufficient to draw out the anger of the Chancellor, and a widespread effort was made besides to lead the public to believe that it was the direct outcome of the Infallibility. It was, therefore, not to be tolerated that in a great and free country, a foreign sovereign, whoever he might be, should be allowed so to interfere as to rule the consciences and direct the political action of German citizens. According to the leading lights of this successful and victorious empire, Goethe and Schiller, as well as Hegel and Strauss, the State was the first object worthy of human worship. It could not allow the loyalty that it claimed to be shared by any individual or institution in the world. Hence an end was to be put once and for all to Papal interference, and the dupes who submitted to it were to be taught that such an outrage on the dignity of the German Empire would be borne no longer.

These were the ostensible grounds for the *Culturkampf*, or so-called battle of progress and culture against the blighting influence of Rome; but under the veil of such pretences, false and foolish in themselves, the real cause of alarm can be traced to Protestant bigotry and hatred of Catholicism.

The Church had long been persecuted in Germany, and it was

only in 1850 that after many years of struggle for existence it was allowed free and unfettered action in the State. The Council of Würzburg, held before 1848, had warned the Government of the coming dangers, and the Bishops proclaimed that they were powerless to stem the tide of anarchy and revolution as long as they were denied the common rights of citizenship, and particularly the free exercise of their ecclesiastical duties. Fortunately their voice was listened to, and for the first time in a long period the Church was set free, at least from the trammels of positive State oppression. It is not to be wondered at, therefore, that her influence increased enormously. The conversions at an earlier period of Frederick Schlegel, of Görres, and of Clement Brentano, had given an activity to Catholic study almost as great as that which followed the conversion of John Henry Newman in England. This intellectual movement was taken up afresh, and made rapid pace. Scientific associations were formed. Newspapers and reviews were founded, in which Catholic interests were ably defended. The influence of the priests with their people grew every day greater. Convents of men and women were established all over the country. Free communication was held with the Holy See. Papal Bulls and Briefs were published without any Royal Placet, and all the latent forces of the Church were drawn out and guided by a zealous and most enlightened episcopate.

This was the state of things which alarmed Protestantism and atheism alike and which gave a back in the country to the heroes of the *Culturkampf*. It is only necessary to summarize what followed. Professors in the Catholic and "half-Catholic" Universities of the empire who had broken off from the Church and joined the Old Catholic movement, were maintained and confirmed in their positions by the Government despite the withdrawal and suspension of their Bishops; the Jesuits were driven out of their country and scattered over the world; those of them who presumed to remain in their native land were cast into prison; the Redemptorists and Lazarists were dissolved; the students of ecclesiastical seminaries were dispersed, and the missions that were being quietly conducted by members of religious orders in retired country places were broken up by the police. The existence of convents throughout the empire was decreed to be abolished, and this decree was unmercifully carried out with regard to the convents of the Sacred Heart, of the Sisters of Charity, of the Sisters of Notre Dame, and of the Sisters of St. Charles. Crushing fines were inflicted on bishops and priests for the

exercise of the most ordinary acts of administration, and when their stock of property was exhausted by fines they were arrested like malefactors and thrown into prison. Archbishops Ledochowski of Posen, and Melchers of Cologne, were among the first arrested and imprisoned. The dungeons of Coblenz and Manheim were crammed with priests. The Dominicans were expelled from Trèves, and their convent converted into a prison where Bishop Eberhard of that diocese, with sixty of his priests were confined and fed on "*schlicht*." The Sees of these Bishops were declared vacant by the Government, and the chapters were called upon to elect successors to them. On their refusal they were overwhelmed with fines, and many of them imprisoned. The Catholic laity were then invited to elect their own pastors, and the most dazzling bribes were held out if they would break off from their allegiance to Rome; but they indignantly repudiated any such conduct, adopting as their motto the words of St. Laurence the Martyr to Pope Sixtus: "*Quo sine filio, pater.*" Every possible device that could mislead or frighten the Catholics, every petty interference that could irritate or vex them was resorted to by their persecutors; but it was all in vain. There are few instances in history of a nobler stand against bigotry.

Providence raised up two leaders worthy of the occasion: Mallinckrodt and Windthorst. They organised the Catholic voters so well that at the elections of 1874 the number of Catholic representatives in the Prussian Landtag was increased from 52 to 89, and in the Reichstag the numbers grew from 63 to 105. Herr Windthorst was elected at Meppen in Hanover by a majority of nearly 15,000 over Falk the author of the May Laws. The firmness and spirit of utter self-sacrifice thus displayed by the Catholic population startled the Government, yet the struggle had grown too warm to allow them to withdraw. They had recourse for a time to still harsher measures, but at every step they met with irresistible courage, and soon began to perceive that they had undertaken an impossible task. Slowly and gradually they came to recognise the error of their ways and their last hope was to turn to that Papacy whose influence they had learned to treat with more respect. Encouraged by the conciliating spirit of Pope Leo, negotiations were opened. Mgr. Melchers of Cologne and Mgr. Ledochowski of Posen were invited to reside at Rome and were created Cardinals. Successors acceptable to the Government were then appointed to administer their former Sees. The Seminaries were opened up again. Free communications were allowed with Rome. A good way has

been travelled backwards on the road to the point from which Herr Falk set out.

Prince Bismarck makes his retreats by slow stages. For almost every piecemeal concession he expects a vote from the Centre in favor of some Government project. Holding out hopes of future favors to the Church in Germany and to the Papacy, he recently called upon them to support the proposal of Count Von Moltke to establish what is known as the military Septennate. When this proposal was first made and it became clear that the Catholic party would oppose it, the Papal Nuncio in Munich received a letter from Cardinal Jacobini of which we shall give the most important passages.

"You have learned from my telegram of the 1st inst. that the communication of the project of final revision of the ecclesiastical laws of Prussia is expected here from day to day. We have recently had a formal assurance of that important fact.

"You can therefore set Herr Windthorst at rest on that point and dissipate all the doubts he expressed in his last most esteemed communication. In view of this near, and as we have reason to believe, satisfactory revision of the ecclesiastical laws, the Holy Father desires that the Centre should favour the project of a military Septennate in every possible way.

"If in virtue of such action proximate danger of war can be averted, the Centre will have deserved well of the Empire, of humanity and of Europe. In the opposite hypothesis the hostile attitude of the Centre cannot fail to be looked on as unpatriotic, and the dissolution of the Reichstag may cause no small embarrassment and uncertainty to the same Centre.

"Besides, adhesion to the proposed Septennate would place the Government under obligations to the Catholics and to the Holy See, and the latter would attach great importance in future to a friendly and confidential understanding with the Government of Berlin

"You will therefore explain to the leaders of the Centre that they would act in a manner most pleasing to the Holy See, and in a way that would turn to the advantage of the Catholic cause by voting for the project of the Government."

There is no doubt but that it was in deference to this wish expressed by the Pope that the Catholic party offered to vote the military subsidy for three years, and if necessary to renew it at the expiration of that term. Prince Bismarck would make no compromise and dissolved the Reichstag. The Holy Father's desire was

then conveyed to the Catholic electors that they should support the Septennate, but the peasants feel the military tax already a crushing burden and the Catholic leaders could not be certain of their support if the new bill formed part of the programme. One of the most eminent Catholics, Baron de Frankenstein, wrote to the Bavarian Nuncio desiring to know if it were required in Rome that the Catholic party should no longer exist in the Reichstag. In reply to this Cardinal Jacobini despatched a second note, from which we take the following:—

“Without entering into the motives by which the noble Baron de Frankenstein endeavours to justify the conduct of the Centre in voting against the Septennate, I consider it most urgent to attend to the second part of his letter.

“He asks to know if the Holy See believes the existence of the Centre any longer necessary in the Reichstag, as, if not, he would no longer accept any mandate from the electors, and that the same attitude would be assumed by the majority of his colleagues.

“He adds, besides, that which he had already declared in 1880, that the Centre could not obey any laws from Rome that were not ecclesiastical, and that did not concern the rights of the Church.

“You, Monsignore, will take care to inform the noble Baron that the Holy See constantly acknowledges all the titles of well deserved merit which the Centre and its chiefs have acquired in defence of Catholicism, but *that considered as a political party it enjoys full liberty of action, nor as such can it directly represent the interests of the Church.*

“If in the affair of the Septennate the Holy Father thought well to manifest his desire to the Centre, that step was to be attributed to reasons of a religious and moral order which were associated with the proposal in question. Above all, there were strong reasons to believe that the final revision of the May laws would be hastened by a Government satisfied with the conduct of the Centre on the question of the Septennate. In the second place, to have co-operated from the Vatican through the Centre in the maintaining of peace could not but have placed the Government of Berlin, under obligations to the Holy See, and as a result better disposed towards the Centre and the Catholics.

“Finally, the Holy See by the advice it has given, has taken advantage of the occasion to make itself more agreeable to the Emperor of Germany and to Prince Bismarck; for besides her own interests which are identical with those of the Catholics, the Holy

See cannot allow any opportunity to pass which might incline in favour of a better future for her, the powerful Empire of Germany."

We shall now give a last quotation from the speech delivered at Cologne, on the 7th February, by Herr Windthorst.

"The note of the Secretary of State contains the expression of the desire of the Holy Father, and for the Centre it is consoling at all times, but never more than to-day to hear the voice of the Father, particularly when he has for his children words of praise and encouragement, and that it is his desire that the Centre should continue at all hazards to defend the interests of the Church in the Reichstag of Germany, leaving them at the same time *full liberty of action in matters purely political*.

"If the Holy Father desired that the Septennate should be passed, his wish was based not on the material tenor of the project, but on motives of expediency from the point of view of diplomatic relations. There is no doubt but that his Holiness had good reasons for expressing that wish, and I believe that if *it were possible*, and without being constrained in any way, we would have freely adhered to the project; *but only if it were possible*. Now we could only have voted for the project at the extreme cost of our own existence. The Centre had at all times and in every possible manner held to the programme which would diminish the military burden. It was on that understanding it was elected to the Reichstag, and if for other motives we had not kept our promises, we would have broken faith with our electors. The Centre party derives all its power from the confidence of the people, and I believe that if the Holy Father could realise all the reasons which surround us on the ground of the struggle here, he would not be angry with his faithful children, who are ready to stand to the death in defence of all that is necessary. As for the war, one man alone can say whether there shall be war or no war, and that is, Prince Bismarck."

J. F. HOGAN.

CORRESPONDENCE.

SOME OBSERVATIONS ON THE ORAL SYSTEM OF TEACHING THE DEAF AND DUMB.

VERY REV. AND DEAR MR. EDITOR:—You were good enough to afford me a considerable amount of space in the last number of the RECORD for some observations I ventured to present to you on the Oral System of teaching the Deaf and Dumb. Allow me to thank you, and as past favours are usually an encouragement for future hopes, may I trust you will kindly allow me a few pages in the March number for some additional observations I desire to place before your readers on this most important subject? I say most important, because when we speak of the Deaf and Dumb, we speak of a population of upwards of four thousand souls within our own shores, who till lately lay unheeded in darkness and the shadow of death, and whom we are endeavouring to rescue from that miserable state by means of our noble Institutions, which we have had the happiness in our day of seeing spring up amongst us through God's blessing and the generous bounty of a noble-hearted people.

To be consecutive; and maintain connection in what I am going to say with what I have already said, I desire to repeat the conclusions, with which I wound up my previous observations. They are:—

1st, That the Oral System of teaching the Deaf and Dumb is not suitable to a general school, requiring, as it does, special aptitudes in its pupils, and rejecting large numbers, who are capable of being taught by the sign-system.

2ndly, It requires a longer time, eight years, instead of six, and is therefore so much more expensive.

3rdly, To be uniform, an object universally called for, training schools are necessary for the teachers.

4thly, Religious communities are thereby excluded, and it is not seen how female teachers can avail themselves at all of such training.

5thly, If female teachers are excluded, how can female Deaf-mutes be taught considering the process of teaching laid down.

6thly, The System requires a much larger number of teachers not only on account of the longer course of training, but because of the small number of pupils each teacher can have charge of, and on this account too it is so much more expensive than the Sign System.

7thly, Intellectual work is interdicted for a considerable time in order to make the child speak, as far as the effort is possible, and for the same reason the use of signs is prohibited during recreation to the great detriment of health at that tender age, whilst, at the same time, the pupils are deprived of the advantage of cultivating each others' minds by interchange of ideas and sentiments, at a time when the young mind is susceptible of most valuable culture by association with children of the same age.

8thly, And as the pupils after eight years in the Institution pass into the world at large, they cannot understand the lip movements of others, their case being pretty much like that of persons, who have learned theoretically a foreign language but cannot understand it as they hear it spoken.

9thly, And whilst they do not understand others in looking at their lips, so others have great difficulty, and feel great pain, in endeavouring to understand them.

10thly, As a consequence both lip-reading and speaking soon come to an end, and as a final result the pupils have neither signs nor speech, and are, therefore, more destitute than the pupils of the methodic sign-system.

11thly, To prevent such a result the friends of the Oral System are endeavouring to find out some plan, according to which the pupils in their transition from school to the world at large may be accustomed by degrees under special superintendence to associate with others, and maintain, at the same time, their lip reading and speech, but it may be said "*Hoc opus, hic labor est*," and so far no such expedient has been discovered.

12thly, On the whole, applying the philosopher's test, "*respice finem—finis regula ceterorum*," the Oral System is by no means so far a success, nor does it at all appear likely to succeed for the end to which it aspires, and apart from every other reason, the wide divergences, and opposite views and methods of its advocates and promoters should appear to force this conclusion as irresistible.

From these conclusions will be seen the limit, to which I go in repudiating the Oral System. I reject it as a system for a general school, especially if the pupils be numerous. But, at the same time, I am ready to admit, as I intimated in my former paper, it has its advantages, even I would say superior advantages, as compared with the other system in its application to individual pupils under certain conditions. These conditions are: 1st, aptitude on the part of the pupil; 2nd, great zeal on the part of the teacher; 3rd, unremitting

labour on the part of both, not only at school work for a long series of years, but afterwards in conducting the pupil onward into common life with the speaking world, and finally, what would be essential above everything else, great encouragement with assiduous attention and painstaking efforts in family life to inspire him with confidence, and put him forward on all occasions with the other members of the family. The distinction to my mind lies here between the two Systems in their adaptability—one to the school, and the other to private tuition.

I do not by any means pretend to a technical or professorial experience with regard to either System. But without this advantage it is open to any observer in matters of education to form a judgment of a system by results, and applying this, the best of all criterions, to compare System with System as to their relative merits. It is on this ground I can claim a hearing. My sympathy for the Deaf and Dumb has led me for a long series of years to be an earnest observer of the working of the two Systems under consideration, and besides availing myself of what opportunities came in my way for personal observation, I sought information from those whose position in connection with Institutions for these poor objects entitled them to speak with authority. Amongst others I consulted the distinguished Abbé Lambert, who was Chaplain for thirty years to the great Institution in Paris of the Abbé de l'Epée himself, the founder of the System that prevailed till quite lately in that establishment, and from it spread all over the world. When I say the Abbé Lambert was Chaplain to that Institution, let it not be thought, that he was a mere office-bearer in that capacity. What manner of man he is the following letter will show, with which he favoured me in reply to my inquiries. He enlisted abilities of the first order in the cultivation of his pupils whilst under his charge, and when they had passed out of his hands, he yet kept them in view. spending his vacations in visiting them, and collecting them together in different parts of the country to afford them the benefits of spiritual retreats, as our Irish Institution is in the habit of doing, year after year, for its former pupils, who are happy to come up from all parts of Ireland for the purpose. He established moreover, a periodical for circulation amongst his ex-pupils, and by that means continued to be their guide, let us say their Apostle, in their various positions through life. His zeal and services on behalf of the poor objects of his sympathy, together with his many eminent qualities in other respects, engaged the admiration of the late most venerable Cardinal Archbishop of Paris, who,

in recognition of his distinguished merits, raised him to the dignity of Canon of the diocese. The testimony of such an authority is undoubtedly of the highest importance, and it is therefore with much pleasure that I insert his letter, addressed to me under date so far back as the year 1883, more especially as he speaks with so much consideration of the Oral System.

TRANSLATION.

Paris, 10th March, 1883.

“MY VERY REV. FATHER—You do me an honour to ask my opinion on the subject of the System of articulation for the instruction of Deaf-mutes, a System, which some people are pleased to call new, although it is very old, since it was employed, as we are told by Venerable Bede, by St. John of Beverly, Archbishop of York in the seventh century, and although the Abbé de l’Epée himself made use of it with some of his pupils, and had by this System a success which they are far from obtaining now. They are pleased also to call the System German, though it has been used a little everywhere before our time. In fine they call it also “Periere” though Isaac Rodriguez Periere, who lived in the time of the Abbé de l’Epée, and made use of it also, had nothing to do with its invention.

The Abbé de l’Epée says “the Deaf-mute will be fully restored to society when he can speak distinctly, and read correctly from the lips of those, with whom he is in conversation,” which proves that, *a priori*, he has not condemned the System of articulation, and the Abbé Sicard, his disciple, said on this subject. “Give me a sufficient number of workers, and I will make all the Deaf-mutes speak.” This shows the essential condition for obtaining this difficult result—a sufficient number of masters or workers to teach articulation to all Deaf-mutes, not in groups of ten, fifteen or twenty pupils, as can be done by the language of signs, but, so to say, individually to each pupil in particular, according to the avowal of all sincere Professors of this articulating System.

When a single master has to himself three or four pupils at most, of ordinary intelligence and good will, or perhaps five or six of extraordinary intelligence and earnestness, it is all he can teach. Consequently, to speak only of the Institution of Paris, which has about 300 pupils, it would be necessary for good and genuine work to have at least 80 or 100 professors without counting superintendents, professors of Drawing, etc., etc., overwhelming conditions evidently for any Institution. And observe, to give thus to the pupils these lessons in articulation is, for the first years particularly, a work

much more laborious than teaching by signs, so that many of the professors cannot continue at the work, and, if I am to believe what I am told comes from the Paris Institution, the masters are already weary of it, and fear they cannot remain longer at it. They regret they are bound to the new mode, and give their preference to the language of signs.

Must this System then be rejected because it is full of difficulty? No, without doubt this System properly applied has its own advantages, which ought to encourage one to follow it, and these advantages I shall be glad to enumerate. 1st, The advantage of being able to communicate thought by the more generally understood channel of articulation, which without being perfect (a thing very rare) is, nevertheless sufficiently intelligible, and to be able also to read the lips of others. When the latter wish to make themselves understood, they must articulate distinctly, particularly when they are strangers, with whom the Deaf-mute has not been accustomed to read their articulated words. 2ndly, the advantage, of being able to take in, and develop his ideas in the construction of sentences in the phraseology of spoken or written language better than he can do in signs; for in these the construction is not always that of spoken or written language. This second advantage I appreciate more than the first.

I know that other advantages are spoken of, the preservation of health for instance, inasmuch as articulation is necessary for the functions of the lungs, &c. ; but I attach no general importance to this, for I know myself many Deaf-mutes, who do not articulate, and yet enjoy good health, and if there be amongst them some consumptive individuals, it is rather the result of a scrofulous, defective, lymphatic, &c. constitution, than the want of articulation. Besides, Deaf-mutes give forth some sounds, which supply all that is necessary in the respect.

But this is not all. As I have often said, articulation is not natural in the first instance, for besides "*Nihil est in mente quod prius non fuerit in sensu*," we were all instructed by signs before having been so by word. We all know that it is by our mother tongue, our first language, that we learn other languages, and as signs are the mother tongue of the Deaf-mute it is by that first language he must learn others. This is what appears to me unreasonable in the general and exclusive use of the system of articulation; for let us take a little savage, whose language is most imperfect and rude, and let us teach him French or English. What does common sense

suggest? It tells us to make use of the child's mother tongue to instruct him in these languages. But no; you are told first to teach him Chinese, then Arabic, in order that by Chinese and Arabic he may learn French. You answer that this System is a real folly, and, nevertheless, such exactly is the folly, which those are guilty of, who wish to apply the System of articulation to all Deaf-mutes. For learning articulation is as difficult as learning Chinese, and learning to read the lips is as difficult as Arabic. These reasons seem to me to justify perfectly that wish so just and sensible which the Abbé de l'Epée expressed:—"Let us then make use of natural signs to instruct Deaf-mutes, and develop their understanding, since they are his mother-tongue. All Deaf-mutes sent to school have before they come to it a language which is familiar to them, &c., &c."

Hence it necessarily follows that the language of signs is the most natural, the surest, the shortest, and the most indispensable means, by which ideas may be communicated to Deaf-mutes.

The most natural—this I have already proved.

The shortest—because it corresponds directly with the channel which the Deaf-mute uses to express his own ideas, and by which he learns those of others. Experience shows that the Deaf-mute, instructed by articulation pronounces or reads the words long before he knows their meaning, except when he uses such ordinary words as bread, wine, food, etc.

I asked M. Magnat, the director of the Periere school in Paris at what period he taught Catechism to his pupils. This gentleman is the most sincere, the most conscientious, and the most able Professor of articulation that I know. He told me 'towards the fourth or fifth year.' 'And,' replied I 'in my Institution I teach it in signs in the first year. In five years they make their First Communion.'

The surest and the most indispensable—because even in articulating classes it is by signs the Professor explains the word, and assures himself that the Deaf-mute understands it.

I believe myself sincere in what I advance, not from party-spirit or prejudice, but solely from love of truth, and from what I have learned from my experience of over thirty years. I ought to add that during these thirty years I have met with Deaf-mutes instructed by articulation in France and in foreign countries, and I have found few, very few, able to articulate in a manner sufficiently distinct to be understood, and above all, none are able to speak except in those guttural sounds, which resemble the cry of an animal rather than a human voice; a cry painful always to those who hear it, and

distressing even to a mother's heart. I speak here only of the real Deaf-mutes from birth.

These preliminaries laid down in principle, what ought I to conclude for practice from my point of view, which I sincerely believe to be true? It would be as follows:—

I distinguish three classes of Deaf-mutes.

1. Deaf-mutes from birth, who are rich.

2. Deaf-mutes from birth, who are poor.

3. Deaf-mutes, who have become such after having heard and spoken up to the age of four, five, or six years, and even some are found who became deaf at the age of seven or eight, having lost their hearing from typhus, or brain fever, a fall, excessive fright, or any other accident, and their speech not having been sufficiently cultivated, from simply deaf they have become also dumb.

For this last class the best advice is, that from the time deafness shows itself instead of placing them in an Institution for Deaf-mutes, they should be placed amongst ordinary speaking persons, in order that conversation, reading, and all other means may preserve their speech. Even the hearing itself would be improved by the efforts to hear. If these precautions have not been taken through culpable ignorance or negligence, then it is necessary to instruct these persons by articulation. *To make them recall what they have known is very easy.* And it is as well here to say, that we have frequently seen, that the pupils brought forward for exhibition in schools advertised as schools for congenital Deaf-mutes are those, who have not been taught to speak at school, but have merely recalled what they already knew.

With regard to rich Deaf-mutes, whose parents can keep them ten, fifteen or even twenty years at school, they might be instructed by articulation, especially if private tuition or special and personal teachers can be afforded them; but, if they be not very intelligent, they must content themselves with the language of signs.

Poor Deaf-mutes with rare exceptions, as where there is great intelligence with a great desire for articulation in the pupil, should be instructed by the language of signs, the shortest possible way to supply their real wants, that is to say to instil into their minds those principles of religion and morality, which they require to direct them through life, and a little literary knowledge sufficient to enable them to communicate with the small circle of their family, their acquaintances, employers, companions, &c. in fine to afford them means of earning their bread, that they may not be a burden on their friends, who but too often

seek to get rid of them. This want of affection together with the Deaf-mutes' independent temper makes them beggars, vagabonds, sellers of alphabets, &c. &c.

It would be desirable that in all Institutions there should be two divisions, one for the rich and the other for the poor, not through any contempt for the latter but for their good. I have seen in Paris, for instance, rich and poor on the same footing with regard to food, clothing, &c. The poor accustom themselves to this comfort, which is far above their position, and which they will not find when they return to their friends. Later on this privation will make them unhappy, and will lead to theft. Such are, Very Rev Father, my convictions hastily penned. Your wisdom will extract from them what you deem most suitable.

Yours very respectfully and devotedly in Jesus Christ,

L'Abbé Lambert, Chan. de N. Dame

Ancien Aumonier De l'Ins. de S. M. de Paris."

Such a treatment of the subject, so simple, so detailed, and at the same time so calm and dispassionate, and from one so competent by his long experience and matured convictions to handle it, may be well accepted as definitively fixing the boundary line between the two Systems, reserving for the methodic Sign System the Public Institution with its school and simultaneous teaching, whilst allowing to the Oral System its special merit for exceptional instances with the various conditions laid down by the venerable ex-chaplain of the Paris National establishment, and so difficult to be realised, that we may hold ourselves prepared to hail the individual, in whom its advantages are fully illustrated according to its pretensions, very much as a "*rara avis in terris, nigroque simillima cygno.*"

I desire to remain, Very Rev. and Dear Mr. Editor,

Yours very faithfully and respectfully,

THE AUTHOR OF "CLAIMS OF THE UNINSTRUCTED DEAF-MUTE TO BE ADMITTED TO THE SACRAMENTS."

THE EXAMINATION PAPERS UNDER THE INTERMEDIATE SYSTEM AND PUBLIC OPINION.

VERY REV. DEAR SIR—It is not perhaps easy to excuse one who is an absolute outsider, and who has no personal concern with the failure or success of the Intermediate System of Education in Ireland, when he ventures so far *ultra crepidam* as to criticise an

Educational System under which he never competed, and of many of the mysteries of which he has no personal knowledge. Nevertheless, since the working of this System is laid "open for the inspection of the public," in the carefully-compiled reports with which we are annually favoured; since the public largely avail themselves of the invitation to criticise, and their criticism is decidedly general and out-spoken—no apology is needed for one who fills the *role* of a mere *raconteur* of what men are commonly saying. At any rate, those charged with the management of the Intermediate cannot reasonably complain, since it is in compliance with their own implied challenge that the following observations are submitted.

The first charge which everybody makes is, that the method of compiling the Examination Papers, more particularly in the Greek and Algebra of the Middle and Senior Grades, disheartens and drives out of the competition a considerable number of very competent students. It is not alleged precisely that the Papers are too difficult in all their parts; but that they contain so preposterously large a proportion of puzzles *pur sang*, that no ordinary student can hope, in dealing with them, to acquit himself with satisfaction or apparent credit. The inevitable result is that, whereas in the first year of the Intermediate nearly 1,200 students presented themselves for examination in Greek of all grades, the number dwindled down last year to 777. Judged by the ratio of increase in other subjects, the number should be now something like twice that figure.

If you ask masters or pupils how this falling off is to be accounted for, they will tell you, without hesitation or dissent, that the Examination Papers are invariably replete with a large number of questions that are (to borrow the words of a distinguished statesman) so many "*ugly tricks*," or that cannot be solved by even an intimately familiar and expedite acquaintance with such works as college libraries or city booksellers ordinarily supply. In illustration of this "*ugly trick*" scheme, they refer us to one of the Papers for 1886, which gravely bade the pupil to "write down the second aorist passive of $\beta\lambda\acute{\epsilon}\pi\omega$ "—the verb having no such form, according to Goodwin's Grammar and Liddell and Scott. It is not unreasonable to fear that many students, relying on the *bona fides* and proverbial seriousness of the Paper compilers—as well as on the silence of the ordinary authorities and the company in the midst of which that verb was placed—succeeded in discrediting their written pieces by improvising such a word as would have been in use had the ancient Greeks chosen to employ one. This is pronounced a genuine specimen of the "*ugly trick*" species, and it does not stand alone.

If we can rely on what experienced men generally say, and on the "bill of particulars" which they are at all times ready to produce in evidence, it would seem as if those who are charged with the setting of the questions devoted a considerable portion of the preparation to industriously selecting such words as are sure to bewilder the pupil—that their ambition is to evoke the largest possible number of errors and failures, instead of endeavouring to ascertain the amount of solid, substantial, and useful knowledge each pupil has succeeded in acquiring. Such a course naturally tells upon the preparation the student will make. He is conscious that the only method of study that "leads on to fortune," under the Intermediate, is grounded on an analysis of the Papers given in previous years; and, hence, if he take courage to compete at all, he engages almost all his time—not in an honest study of the ordinary and fundamental principles of even "higher grammar," nor in an honest effort so to master the language that he may unimpeachably read, construe, and expound such common works as Demosthenes, Longinus, or Sophocles—but in a forecasting of difficulties which he has not encountered in such works as these, but which may, nevertheless, be discovered in some single passage of some singularly rare work, or which the erudite ingenuity of his examiners may possibly invent. To establish this charge, they point to a passage from Thucydides—given to be "translated at sight," and, of course without the aid of a dictionary—in which pupils are required to give the full meaning of a word that is found in this passage alone of all the Greek classics. Everybody rightly or wrongly believes that it was the presence of this word that recommended the paragraph for selection: however that may be, its selection was manifestly a trap. The words in the following sentence are perhaps as truly English as the curiosities in such high favour with the Examiners are Greek, and yet no sane man would dream of making it the test of a student's fitness for scholastic honours:—

Being hypnotized, he poured the contents of the anheidrohepseterion upon the kamptulicon, and also upon his neighbour's antegropelos, leaving upon all a rypophaginous stain.—("Specimens of Fine English:" *Cornhill Magazine*, vol. iii.)

It is commonly affirmed that the Examination Papers are not a standard by which to measure the pupil's proficiency in the Greek language *qua talis*: they are rather a standard by which his knowledge of its exceptional anomalies and idiosyncrasies is put to the test.

Perhaps the most damaging commentary yet written on the

eccentric character of the Examination Papers in Greek is found in the Report for 1885, as drawn up by R. Y. Tyrrell, Esq., one of the Examiners :—

“I found that in Greek, as a rule, the *more elementary* the question the *worse* was the answering. In the Senior Grade, the questions dealing with *rather higher grammar* and with *metre*, were *better* answered than the questions on *accidence* and *easy syntax*. . . . In the Middle Grade, in like manner, question six, *which I look on as not easy*, was answered *best*. . . . Again, in the Junior Grade, I was surprised to find a question turning on a somewhat *minute appreciation* of the difference between the usage of *οὐ* and of *μή* answered intelligently by a *large percentage*, while *very few* . . . *hardly any*, did questions ‘that were easy and rudimentary.’”

The unavoidable impression made by an authoritative analysis such as this, is that the machinery which produces results so deformed and preposterous, must be lamentably out of gear; that examinations so prepared for, and so conducted, do not tend to promote a true knowledge of *the language*; and that the necessity of competing under such tests generates the necessity of practically abandoning such commonplace and vulgar trifles as “accidence” and “syntax,” and of devoting all one’s care and anxiety to questions of “higher grammar” and the differentiation of “particles.” Plainly this is the conviction unhappily created on the minds of both masters and pupils: and in what way soever we may view it, the result, as revealed on Table X. of Report for 1885, does not discredit the complaint so generally made—that this system of examination is killing out of our schools the study of the Greek language. From that table we learn that only 128 students of the entire Senior Grade (boys) presented themselves for examination in Greek; that out of this small number, 53 failed completely; that 35 “passed without Honours;” while 40, or under one-third of the original “forlorn hope,” attained success.

If you express concurrence in the views of the masters and pupils who object in this fashion, they will tell you that a lower depth of grievance has yet to be fathomed. It is bad enough that the united “Intermediate” intelligence of our schools cannot show more than 40 Prizemen in Senior Greek; but a deeper dishonour lies (somewhere) in the matter of “Algebra and Arithmetic.” The same Table X. of Report for 1885, gives us the following startling figures:—Of 235 pupils who competed in the Senior Grade, 209 presented themselves for examination in Algebra, with the dispiriting result that 153 were placed *hors de combat*, 44 “passed” somehow, and a round dozen, or one out of every 17, emerged from the conflict with

Honours, having scored an average of 408 marks, out of the 700 covenanted to symbolize true success! It is commonly believed that many truly "honourable" men came to grief even among the 153; and this belief is seemingly shared in by Francis A. Tarleton, Esq., (one of the Examiners) who, in his Report, pronounces over their remains the following touching tribute:—

"To my mind, amongst the candidates examined by me, many who did not pass in Algebra, showed more of true mathematical knowledge and ability, than several who obtained high honours in Euclid."

It is not denied that there was an approach to better judgment in the setting of the Examination Papers (Senior Grade) for 1886, when, out of a total of 235 presenting themselves in Algebra, 67 obtained Honours. It is, however, a significant commentary on the Papers of preceding years, that masters and pupils unanimously ascribe this larger measure of success solely to the more reasonable character of the questions; and, after the manner of politicians, give the credit of this partial improvement to the persistent protest and agitation of the head masters. But what guarantee has been given that there shall be no return to the (very) original system of 1885?

As this paper is, however incomplete and unauthorised, a *procès verbal* of complaints—it is right to add that words of strong disapproval are also frequently heard when reference is made to the Examination Papers for Latin and French, as well indeed as for "Deductions" from Euclid. But this is specially true of pieces selected for "translation at sight," in which, we are told, a strange contrast manifestly exists between the selections made in Hume-street and those which satisfy Examiners for Oxford and Cambridge. For the pointing of this contrast we are referred with confidence to the passages submitted for "translation at sight" in the "Local Examinations" and "Little Go" of those and other Universities. We are assured that, whilst these latter are fairly easy, the Latin Poetry set for "translation at sight" in our Senior Grade is sometimes so difficult, that an expert seeing it for the first time, could not hope to treat it satisfactorily within double the time accorded to his pupil. *Non meus hic sermo*: but it was stated freely by one of our most distinguished and successful masters. As a legitimate inference, the masters of many schools will tell, without surprising you, that in this, as in other sections, the Intermediate is made to overlap the University curriculum; and that the public money, voted for the attainment of necessarily distinct educational purposes, is diverted into one channel, contrary to the intentions of the Legislature. This

deordination might perhaps be regarded as a harmless error of detail; but the error assumes grave proportions, and involves material for serious consideration, when we find masters unreservedly protesting that they usually reserve their *clever* boys for competition in the Intermediate, while sending on the average and under-average ones in quest of University honours. Complainants aver that, in instances not a few, marvellous success has attended the experiment.

Before dismissing the objections against Papers for "translation at sight," it would be a pity not to notice the selections in French. They are sometimes an amusing curiosity, especially in view of the purpose for which they are ostensibly intended. One of them—that given to last year's Junior Grade—was little better than a patch-work of tailoring technicalities, such as would probably be regarded as a stiff test in the engagement of a foreman in the *Belle Jardinière*. It recalled to many the story of the indignant father who "condemned his son to the plough" because, after six months at a classical school, he failed to give—right off—the Latin and Greek names of the various articles that make up a donkey's full-dress costume.

Over and above complaints like the foregoing, which may be regarded as affecting the Examination Papers only, we frequently hear others, of a more general character, discussed with equal warmth. Most people concur in saying that the "Pass" and "Honour" standards are *too high*, when we consider the end for which the Intermediate was presumably established. They seem to think that the questions for Examination should be so graduated as to afford inducements to moderate but capable pupils to compete for such distinctions as would be proportioned to their abilities and acquirements. It cannot be doubted that a large section of our students possess intelligence and attainments that raise them very considerably above the Primary stratum, who are nevertheless debarred from asserting and establishing their marked superiority by the difficulties that, under so many forms, exclude from the field of Intermediate competition all who are not adjudged unmistakably superior men. In other words, the gulf that hopelessly separates the Primary from the Intermediate is too broad. Subjects are sometimes grouped together, a necessary connection between which it is not always easy to see—as, for example, when the Rule prescribes that "to pass in the subject 'Mathematics,' *Junior Grade*, it will be necessary for boys to pass in the Section Arithmetic, *together with* the Section Euclid or Section Algebra." Why, it is asked, should not the Commissioners provide that all the Papers on every specific subject should contain a

reasonable number of moderately easy—yet practical—questions, with a value attached to each?

In the minds of many, a much more grave and urgent objection than any hitherto noticed, lies against the Intermediate system in the matter of what it euphemistically calls “the History of Great Britain and Ireland.” Granted that none of the questions it proposes in Examination are offensive or sectarian—and granting too that it disclaims all intention of “prescribing, or even recommending the text-books mentioned within brackets”—it is generally and justly felt as a galling grievance that the methods which the Commissioners suggest (with such marked success) for the study of English history, and still more of Irish, unmistakably betray that anti-Irish and anti-Catholic spirit which has, from the very beginning, signalised the progress of the “National” system in all its stages. The *very naming* of those text-books not unnaturally conveys a belief, which no exuberance of protestation can remove, that the Pupil or Master who assimilates the teaching of those text-books is far more likely to become familiar with the substance and form of the questions for future Examination, than the Pupil or Master who makes a different selection. Experience has abundantly proved that this belief is well-founded; and, considering the tone and character of the books so insinuatingly “mentioned within brackets,” we are not unjust in charging the Intermediate with insulting and aggressive intolerance in its dealings with English and with Irish history. The alternative is pitilessly cruel and despotic—than an Irish Catholic must elect between the risk of probable and irreparable failure, and the study of such works as the “Student’s Hume” and “Collier’s History of Ireland.” In many of their parts both one and the other are conceived in the same spirit and couched in the same language as the Tracts for Achill Island, and the Leaflets of the I. L. P. U. “Honours” in history are dearly paid for when secured by the study of a work which teaches a Catholic Irishman to regard it as a fairly “disputed point, whether St. Patrick came with a commission from the Pope or not;” and which represents St. Brigid—the “Mary of Erin”—as a “female disciple of St. Patrick,” who spent her life in endeavouring to perpetuate the fire-worship of the Druids! We should indeed have no reason for regret if the “failures” in history were as frequent as those in Greek or in Algebra; for, even where sectarian feeling does not interpose to suppress or distort, the author’s treatment of purely secular events is sometimes most insidiously misleading. One specimen, out of the many to hand, will be sufficient to establish this charge. The

history of the Great Famine is curtly given as follows: "Immense quantities of the potatoes, on which the Irish peasant mainly depended for food, rotted. This caused famine, and a pestilence of fever followed. Large quantities of corn and Indian meal were provided; but the poorhouses were overcrowded, and, *in spite of all that could be done*, great numbers of the people perished. Between famine and emigration, the population was reduced by 2,000,000." However students in their written pieces may affect to believe this, they must know in their hearts that the insinuation is glaringly false. We should not, however, censure this "writer of history" too unreservedly, for he wrought a decided improvement on the story of the Irish Famine, as recorded in the "Student's Hume"—a work, by the way, of which he seems rapturously enamoured. In that twin "text-book" we are told: "The potato-crop again failed; there was a famine in Ireland; and, *though the British Parliament voted several millions to buy food for the starving Irish*, they nevertheless rose in rebellion!" If this perversion of fact takes place in the green wood of modern history, what may we not expect in the dry wood of more remote times? Accordingly the "Student's Hume," describing the Battle of the Boyne, duly chronicles that "the Irish horse alone made *some* resistance; the foot fled without striking a blow . . . The Irish dispersed themselves in the night." The same truthful annalist, speaking of the attitude of the Irish Catholics in 1800, says: "During the debates on the Union they remained almost entirely neutral, and what little feeling they displayed was in its favour. This is attributable to their hatred of the Orangemen, the warmest opponents of Union." And so on through its exasperating pages. Nothing that Irish Catholics hold in reverence and love, regarding the history of their Faith or Country, escapes the sarcasm and vituperation of the text-books which candidates for Intermediate distinction must not refuse to digest, under the penalty of not improbable failure. It is no vindication to assert, that no stronger recommendation has been given to the "Student's Hume" than to "Burke's Lingard;" for all the world and Hume-street know that that the latter work, though admirable in many respects, is altogether unsuitable as a class-book. Nor will it be any apology to say that Collier's History is not mentioned in the Programme for 1887: it may, for all we know, be admitted to the Programme for 1888; and its having been placed "within brackets" in former years, justifies the fear that it will be regarded even now as *the* text-book for the Intermediate. One fact speaks more emphatically than a thousand

conjectures: and in all, or almost all our Catholic Schools, we find Masters and Pupils submitting to the shame and humiliation of employing those books, under the dissembled but effective pressure of the Intermediate.

Finally, there is a universal consensus of opinion that the Result Fees assigned for success under the Intermediate, are utterly out of proportion with the increased expenditure forced upon Irish Schools, in their effort to attain that success. This disproportionate recompense is especially a grievance to our Catholic Schools; it multiplies their difficulties, and renders more galling still the disadvantages under which Catholics are placed, in the matter of Education in all its branches. It is nothing short of heartless and unblushing mockery to challenge Catholic Schools, which possess no State endowment, to enter into competition for Intermediate, and indeed all other prizes, with non-Catholic Institutions, upon which the State has lavished, and to which she has hitherto secured a monopoly of all those monetary and other material resources by which success is rendered a comparatively easy task.

C. J. M.

DOCUMENTS.

I.

THE NUMBER OF FEAST DAYS OF OBLIGATION IN THE UNITED STATES REDUCED TO SIX.

SUMMARY.

The number of Feast Days varied in different provinces and dioceses of the United States. This was confusing, and caused a feeling of surprise and annoyance in the people that it should be so. The Catholic masses largely depended on non-Catholic masters for employment, and such masters would, for the most part, recognise only such Holidays as happened to fall on Sundays. Hence arose great difficulty on the part of the Catholic people in attending Mass, and abstaining from servile work on several Holidays.

In these circumstances the Fathers of the Third Council of Baltimore ask that the Holidays of Obligation be the same for all the United States of America, and reduced to the following six: Christmas Day, New Year's Day, Ascension Thursday, Immaculate

Conception, Assumption, All Saints' Day. They ask that the Solemnity of Corpus Christi be transferred to the following Sunday, as has been done already with the Solemnity of the Feast of SS. Peter and Paul.

The Holy Father grants the favour.

RESPONSUM DE FESTIS.

Romæ, die 31 Decembris 1885.

Illme. ac Rme. Domine.¹

Ab Amplitudine Tua nomine Patrum Concilii Tertii Plenarii Baltimorensis sequens supplicatio Summo Pontifici exhibita fuit, ut dies festi de præcepto ad quosdam determinato, in omnibus Dioccesibus Statuum Fœderatorum Americæ Septentrionalis servandos, reducerentur.

Beatissime Pater,

Intra fines Statuum Fœderatorum Americæ, Septentrionalis magna obtinet diversitas in observandis diebus festis de præcepto. In aliis enim locis quinque, in aliis vero novem, in aliis etiam plures servantur, adeo ut non tantum acatholici, sed et fideles hac de re jam commoveantur, non parum mirantes qua ratione id fiat, ut certis diebus obligatio audiendi missam et abstinendi ab operibus servilibus urgeat in una diœcesi vel provincia, in altera vero non. Præterea in hisce regionibus et fideles gravissimis premuntur difficultatibus quoad observantiam dierum festorum. Quum enim in parandis vitæ necessariis magna ex parte ab acatholicis pendeant, qui labores diebus festis, nisi in Dominicis incidant, intermittere non patiuntur, maxima fidelium pars nonnisi cum gravissimis incommodis iisdem diebus ab operibus abstinere et SS. Missæ Sacrificio interesse possunt. Hinc Patres in Concilio Plenario Baltimorensi Tertio congregati, summopere in votis habentes ut uniformitas in servandis Festis inducatur, matureque perpendentes difficultates quibus fideles intra Fœderatas has Provincias laborant, Beatitudini Tuae supplicandum duxerunt :

1^o Ut, attentis peculiaribus circumstantiis Catholicorum in hisce regionibus morantium, Apostolica Auctoritate dignetur declarare, per omnes diœceses Americæ Septentrionalis Fœderatæ, de præcepto audiendi Missam et abstinendi a servilibus, servandos esse dies festos omnes et solos qui sequuntur; Immaculata Conceptio B. M. V.—

¹ This document was addressed to the Most Rev. (now His Eminence, Cardinal) James Gibbons, Archbishop of Baltimore, who had been delegated by the Holy See to preside at the Council, and by whom the Petition of the Council was presented in the name of all the Fathers.

Nativitas D. N. J. C.—Circumcisio D. N. J. C.—Ascensio D. N. J. C.—Assumptio B. M. V.—Festum Omnium Sanctorum.—Per rerum enim temporumque rationes istorum sex dierum festorum observatio feliciter speratur.

2° Quoad ceteros dies festos, qui præter sex supradictos quibusdam in locis adhuc de præcepto sunt, ut ex Apostolica benignitate eorundem locorum fideles solvantur quidem ab obligatione Missarum audiendi et ab operibus abstinendi : quin tamen iidem dies festi quoad devotionem et solemnitatem externam supprimantur.

3° Ad festum SS. Corpus Christi quod spectat, ut benigne indulgere velit, quod ejusdem Festi solemnitas in diem Dominicam proximam sequentem transferatur, ad normam indulti diocesis Statuum Fœderatorum America Septentrionalis concessi quoad festum SS. Apostolorum Petri et Pauli, ut habetur in litteris S. Congr. de Prop. Fide ad Archiepiscopum Baltimorem diei 19 Decembris, 1840.

Quibus humilibus precibus ut Beatitudo Tua velit annuere, obsequenti animo supplicant Patres Concilii Plenarii Baltimorensis Tertii.

Baltimore, die 23 Decembris 1884.

Beatitudinis Tuæ

Servus humillimus,

JACOBUS GIBBONS, *Archiep. Balt., Deleg. Apost.*

II.

THE DECREE OF BENEDICT XIV. PUBLISHED FOR HOLLAND IN 1741, IS EXTENDED TO ALL THE DIOCESES OF THE UNITED STATES IN WHICH THE DECREE *TAMETSI* HAS BEEN PUBLISHED.

SUMMARY.

Enumeration of the dioceses of the United States (1), in which the Decree *Tametsi* has not been published ; (2), of the dioceses in which it has been published ; (3), of the dioceses to which the Declaration of Benedict XIV., published for the Church of Holland, has not been extended. Request that this Declaration be extended to all the dioceses in which the Decree *Tametsi* has been published.

The petition granted.

RESPONSUM DE DECLARATIONE BENEDICTINA.

Pariter exposulavit Amplitudo Tua, ut Declaratio Benedicti XIV. pro Hollandia edita a. 1741. ad ea loca Statuum Fœderatorum, ubi decretum *Tametsi* Concilii Tridentini viget, et de quibus non constat eandem fuisse extensam, extenderetur :

Supplicatio A. T. hoc modo se habet :

Beatissime Pater,

Archiepiscopi et Episcopi totius Americæ Septentrionalis Fœderatæ, in Concilio Plenario Baltimorensi Tertio congregati, inter alias res, collatis consiliis, id etiam diligenter egerunt, ut ad liquidum deducerent, quibus in locis Statuum Foederatorum Americæ Septentrionalis decretum Tridentinum *Tametsi* de matrimoniis clandestinis (Sess. xxiv, c. 1, de Ref.) vigeat, et in quibus non vigeat. Re studiose indagata ad hanc deveniunt sententiam :

Decretum *Tametsi* non vigeat in sequentibus Provinciis ecclesiasticis scilicet : 1. Baltimorensi ; 2. Philadelphiensi ; 3. Neo-Eboracensi ; 4. Bostoniensi ; 5. Oregonopolitana ; 6. Milwaukiensi ; 7. Cincinnatiensi, excepta diœcesi Vincennopolitana ; 8. S. Ludovici, exceptis ipsa civitate S. Ludovici et quibusdam aliis locis ejusdem Archidioecesis mox nominandis ; 9. Chicaginensi, exceptis aliquibus locis diœcesis Altonensis proxime citandis.

In caeteris vero locis eorundem Statuum Foederatorum decretum *Tametsi* vigere censetur, scilicet : 1. In tota Provincia Neo-Aurelianiensi ; 2. in Provincia S. Francisci cum territorio Utah, excepta ea parte ejusdem territorii quae jacet ad orientem fluminis Colorado ; 3. in Provincia S. Fidei, excepta parte septentrionali territorii Colorado ; 4. in diœcesi Vincennopolitana ; 5. in civitate S. Ludovici, necnon in locis dictis S. Genovefae, S. Ferdinandi et S. Caroli, Archidioecesis S. Ludovici ; 6. in locis dictis Kaskaskia, Cahokia, French Village et Prairie du Rocher, diœcesis Altonensis.

Ejusdem Concilii Plenarii Baltimorensis Tertii Patres item consilia contulerunt ad determinandum, quasnam ad partes Americæ Septentrionalis Fœderatae, in quibus decretum *Tametsi* vigeat, extensa fuerit declaratio Benedicti XIV. a. 1741 pro Hollandia edita.

Ea de re Patres in hanc convenerunt sententiam :

Declaratio Benedictina extensa fuit 1. ad Provinciae Neo-Aurelianiensis sequentes diœceses, scilicet, Archidioecesim Neo-Aurelianensem ; diœceses Natchitochensem, Natchetensem, Petri-culanam, Mobiliensem ; 2. ad Provinciam S. Francisci cum territorio Utah ; 3. ad diœcesim Vincennopolitanam Provinciae Cincinnatiensis ; 4. ad Archidioecesim S. Ludovici quoad partes in quibus vigeat decretum *Tametsi* ; 5. ad loca diœcesis Altonensis in quibus idem decretum obtinet.

Declaratio Benedictina non extensa fuit ad Provinciam S. Fidei. Quoad diœceses vero S. Antonii, Galvestonensem, Brownsvillensem, quae pertinent ad Provinciam Neo-Aurelianensem, res est dubia, utrum necne declaratio Benedictina extensa fuerit.

Quae cum ita sint, quo uniformitas hac in re, omnibus in locis in quibus viget decretum *Tametsi* inducatur, nullusque reliquatur ambigendi locus, visum est Patribus Concilii Plenarii Baltimorensis Tertii, Beatitudini Tuae supplicare, ut suprema sua auctoritate benigne dignetur Declarationem a Benedicto XIV pro Hollandia editam ad eas extendere partes Americae Septentrionalis Foederatae, in quibus viget decretum *Tametsi*, de quibusque constat eandem declarationem haecenus non fuisse extensam : uti et ad omnia alia loca, de quibus dubium movetur, aut in posterum moveri possit, utrum necne eadem Declaratio jam extensa fuerit.

Beatitudinis Tuae,

Servus humillimus,

JACOBUS GIBBONS, *Archiep. Balt. Deleg. Apost.*

THE PETITIONS GRANTED BY THE HOLY FATHER.

Porro hae petitiones ad Congregationem S. O. pro examine remissae sunt. Emi vero Universales Inquisitores re mature perpensa, die 25 Novembris 1885, reposuerunt :

Ad I. Supplicandum SSmo pro gratia juxta preces.

Ad II. Supplicandum SSmo pro extensione ad dioeceses S. Antonii, Galvestonensem, et ad Vicariatum Apostolicum Brownsvillensem tantum.

Sanctitas vero sua, cui haec omnia eadem die relata sunt, Patrum Concilii Plenarii Baltimorensis Tertii precibus juxta S. Congregationis sententiam benigne annuere dignata est.

III.

REQUEST THAT A MERE RESIDENCE FOR A MONTH WOULD SUFFICE FOR A QUASI-DOMICILE FOR MATRIMONIAL PURPOSES IN THAT PLACE—REQUEST DEFERRED.

SUMMARY.

Petition that a mere residence for a month would suffice to establish a quasi-domicile for matrimonial purposes. This request deferred for more mature consideration.

PETITIO DE QUASI-DOMICILIO UNIUS MENSIS.

Cum in Concilio ageretur de nupturientibus qui, etsi per aliquot tempus in aliena dioecesi commorati sint, ibi tamen juxta leges modo vigentes ne quasi domicilium quidem acquisierunt, Patres hac de re

decretum tulerunt, Apostolica Auctoritate firmandum, cujus tenor in sequenti petitione ad S. Sedem exponitur.

Beatissime Pater,

In deliberationibus quas de quaestionibus matrimonialibus habuerunt Patres Concilii Plenarii Baltimorensis Tertii, Beatitudinem Tuam censuerunt orandam, ut Apostolica Auctoritate pro Foederatis Americae Septentrionalis Provinciis dignetur decernere, eos qui e sua dioecesi ad aliam transeunt, modo in hac per spatium unius saltem mensis commorati sint, eo ipso, nulla facta inquisitione de animo manendi per maiorem anni partem, censendos esse acquisiisse quasi domicilium quod sufficiat ad matrimonium contrahendum, eosque subditos constituendos Episcopi ejusdem dioecesis in ordine ad dispensationes ab impedimentis, si quae obstant, obtinendas.

Rationes hujus petitionis sunt : 1. Gravia incommoda et anxietates ac molestiae quae frequenter sacerdotibus oriuntur, si canonicae praescriptiones de quasi domicilio sint servandae. 2. Periculum ne secus nupturientes, scandalo fidelium, magistratum civilem aut praeconem sectae acatholicae adeant ad matrimonium contrahendum,

Beatitudinis Tuae,

Filius obedientissimus,

JACOBUS GIBBONS, *Archiep. Balt. Deleg. Apost.*

RESPONSUM DE QUASI-DOMICILIO UNIUS MENSIS.

Relate autem ad aliam petitionem, qua poscebatur ut simplex factum commorationis unius mensis in aliquo loco sufficeret ad ibi acquirendum domicilium, et ad valide matrimonium contrahendum, Emi Patres, rem perpendere cupientes, responsionem differendam esse censuerunt.

.....
Amplitudinis Tuae,

Uti Frater addictissimus,

JOANNES CARD. SIMIEONI, *Praefectus.*

D. ARCHIEP. TYR., *Secret.*

IV.

THE OFFICES OF THE PASSION OF OUR LORD TAKE PRECEDENCE OF THE OFFICES, EVEN PRIMARY, OF FEASTS OF EQUAL RITE IN OCCURRENCE AND CONCURRENCE.

NAMURCEN.

Rmus. Dnus. Eduardus Josephus Belin, hodiernus Episcopus Namurensis, a Sacra Rituum Congregatione, sequentium Dubiorum declarationem humiliter postulavit, videlicet :

Quum Sacra Rituum Congregatio, die 1 septembris 1865, decreverit: "In concurrentia, Festum Lanceæ et Clavorum aut Alterius cujuscunque Instrumenti Passionis Domini Nostri Jesu Christi præcedere debet Festum Cathedræ Antiochenæ sancti Petri, illi scilicet festo integras Vesperas tribuendo." Quæritur:

1^o Utrum hæc resolutio vim obtineat tantum pro dicto Cathedræ sancti Petri Festo, vel applicari etiam debeat omni festo principali ejusdem ritus. Ex. gr., Sancti Benedicti Abbatis, Beati Caroli Boni?

2^o Utrum in occurso Festi cathedræ sancti Petri aut festorum ejusdem ritus, cum dictis officiis Passionis Domini Nostri Jesu Christi, hæc locum primis cedere debeant?

Sacra porro eadem Congregatio, ad relationem infrascripti Secretarii, auditaque alterius ex Apostolicarum Cæremoniarum Magistris sententia, hisce Dubiis sic rescribere rata est:

Officia Dominicæ Passionis, tam in concurrentia quam in occurrentia cum quovis festo principali sive primario ejusdem ritus, præcedentiam obtinere.

Atquo ita declaravit ac servari mandavit die 11 Augusti 1886.

Pro Emo. ac Rmo. Dno. Card. D. BARTOLINI, S. R. C. Praef.

A. CARD. SERAFINI.

NOTICES OF BOOKS.

THE LIFE OF FREDERICK LUCAS, M.P. By his brother, Edward Lucás. London: Burns & Oates.

NEVER has a biography of a great public man been written, we believe, which contains so little matter of a purely private and personal character, as the Life of Frederick Lucas. Here the author had more than ordinary temptations to descant on the eminent virtues and noble qualities of mind, that adorned the subject of his interesting work. The bitterest adversary, political or religious, never denied to his illustrious brother those lovable traits of character, which made him the admiration of his literary associates, and the perfection of an upright, honest man; yet the writer despatches in a few brief pages the whole history of his private life. This omission, so far from being a matter for regret, is at once judicious and creditable. The honesty of purpose that characterised every act, and utterance

of Frederick Lucas, and the immense sacrifices he made for conscience sake, leave no room for doubting that he was a man of unswerving moral rectitude. This side of his life is transparently untarnished and needs no defender. Besides, if any mist of obloquy clouded his revered memory—which is very far from being the case—a brother's pen would not be the weapon to dispel it most effectually. Mr. Riethmüller, a Protestant, and Fr. Amherst, S.J., both of whom enjoyed the intimate and prolonged acquaintance of Lucas, have written very full, impartial, and interesting memoirs, in which we have presented to us a faithful picture of his life in early boyhood, at the University College, in the *Tablet* office, in his devotional exercises at church, &c.

But though the deep interest the reader must feel in the eventful career of a gifted scholar and great politician, whose life was a veritable warfare, is not marred by stale anecdotes and interminable gossip, the portraiture of Lucas is for this very reason the more life-like and faithful. He was essentially and pre-eminently an open, frank, practical man; a man of business and a man of sense. The depth and fervour of his religious feelings, and his horror of slavish obsequiousness, gave an incisiveness and an energy to his pen, which caused it to be as much dreaded by his less spirited co-religionists in England, as by those who were swayed by the bitterest feelings of sectarian bigotry. "We know," he says, "that a great deal of our language has given offence to what is called 'good society.' We heartily rejoice at it. 'Good society' owes us no gratitude and we owe it no allegiance. On the contrary, we regard it as a corrupt heap of religious indifference, of half faith, of cowardice, of selfishness, of unmanly impotence. If the *Tablet* were to sink to-morrow, our only regret would be that we have not found words adequate to express the indignation with which the conduct of 'good society' in these matters inflames and overwhelms us." Similarly, on the great political problems of his day, he thought fervidly and spoke strongly. He was a powerful and indefatigable advocate of the Catholic cause in the *Tablet*, on the public platform, and in the House of Commons. His unfaltering attitude of friendship towards the persecuted Irish, in times when it was neither fashionable nor remunerative to raise one's voice even feebly in their cause, is emphatically implied in the following interesting narrative (page 75):—"In the Summer of 1841, the *Tablet* took a line distasteful alike to his partner, who was a Protestant Tory, to the Catholic Tories in general, and especially to certain Catholic Tory landlords At length the *mala fides*

of the conspirators became so unbearable, that Lucas's patience was exhausted, and on the 26th February, 1842, he brought out his paper under the name of the *True Tablet* leaving the old name to the printer. Early on the day before the publication, the enemy effected a violent entry into the premises, but by a neat stratagem the man in possession was ejected by the publisher, and an *Irish* garrison drafted in to stand a threatened siege. An attack was made in force, the shutters were torn down, and a re-entry was about to be effected when one of the defenders appeared on the roof with a loose coping-stone in his hands and shouted 'heads below.' The assailants fled and no further attempt was made to capture the stronghold."

Lucas was earnest in his aspirations, thoroughly unselfish in motives, indomitable in energy, and cared not who smiled or frowned upon him, once he had embarked on what he believed to be a just and honorable project. His life was cast amid scenes which frequently called forth these sterling qualities into energetic exercise. In 1837, when he was twenty-five years of age, and two years after he had been called to the English Bar, he read an article in the *Quarterly Review*, which to his acute intelligence suggested doubts as to the truth of Quakerism, the religion in which he had been born. He rested not in his search after the true and solid faith, that bore internal and external evidence that it rested on God's word, till he had succeeded in dissipating the clouds of uncertainty from his mind, and was received into the Catholic Church in the beginning of 1839. "As a child who has lost himself, he knows not where, far from home, returns weeping and weary to his mother's breast, so after long wandering in darkness, seeking after truth but finding no rest because I could find no certainty, I have at length come tired out with profitless labour, to find repose and consolation within that temple, whose eternal gates are ever open to invite the weary and erring pilgrim to enter in. I have accepted the invitation; I have entered in, and within I have found, not the mutilated limbs of truth, but the glorious Virgin herself in all her celestial radiance."¹

From this day forward, Lucas was, above and before everything else, a devoted child of the Catholic Church; inalienable in his attachment to all her teachings, prompt in his obedience to her voice, and unrivalled in his sincere reverence and veneration for her supreme head. He occasionally animadverted, no doubt, in strong language, on the political sympathies and antipathies of ecclesiastics; but he conscientiously believed that in so doing he was discharging a painful

¹ "Reasons for becoming a Roman Catholic."

but sacred duty, which he owed to God, to justice, and to religion. Countless other ecclesiastics of undoubted principle and great religious zeal, continued to regard him with approving admiration up to the moment of his early and lamented death, as the fearless but ill-treated champion of the poor and the oppressed, and the unpurchasable enemy of corruption and duplicity.

It was to his suggestions and efforts that the establishment of the Society of St. Vincent de Paul in England was mainly due; and his scathing exposure of the anti-religious principles and workings of Freemasonry opened the eyes of the English Catholics, even more widely than they wished, to the mischievous character of that most dangerous and most corrupting of all secret societies.

The *Tablet* had been founded by Lucas, in 1839, and conducted by him in London with varying degrees of success, under the most discouraging circumstances, for ten years. He then removed it to Dublin, where he knew he would find the tone of society more congenial, and where his paper would be made more directly and effectively the organ of those whose hearts beat in unison with the high-born principles it maintained. "English Catholicity formed too narrow a basis for the support of such a paper as the *Tablet* was or ought to be. The Irish who were the strength of the Catholic body in the empire were not content to be represented by a journal in London" (page 363). Henceforth his entire time and attention, and the greater part of the *Tablet's* space, were ungrudgingly devoted to well-meaning and unselfish efforts to assist the Irish in ameliorating their political and religious condition. It is only stating the truth in a very feeble way, to say that he became—indeed he had been for years before—more Irish than the Irish themselves. The names of his contemporary Irish patriots, around which the true history of the past generation of politicians sheds a lustre as bright as that which envelops the memory of Frederick Lucas, are lamentably few; while hardly any other age produced such a luxuriant crop of the vilest renegades and traitors—Keogh, Sadlier, &c. In number, as well as under less harmless aspects, did these latter resemble the unclean spirits that were driven into the swine—their name was legion.

In 1855 he went to Rome and was very cordially received by the Pope. Soon after returning, however, he was prostrated by a severe illness, which terminated his brilliant and useful but brief existence in the following year. "His was a Christian death," says his confessor, "cheerfully accepted from the hands of God at the early age of forty-four, and well prepared for. His career, short as it was, is one for which English and Irish Catholics may well feel grateful to God."

If we might be permitted to offer a suggestion to the gifted and distinguished author, it would be that Father Amherst's interesting article in the *Dublin Review* be embodied in the next edition.

The two handsome, medium-sized volumes before us are in every way worthy of him whose exemplary life of self-sacrifice and upright zeal, in promoting the cause of faith and justice, they pourtray in modest, unvarnished colours.

We cordially congratulate Mr. Edward Lucas on having performed his delicate task with great ability and rare taste.—E. M.

(1) GLIMPSES OF A HIDDEN LIFE. Memories of Attie O'Brien. gathered by Mrs. Morgan John O'Connell. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

(2) THE LIFE OF BROTHER PAUL J. O'CONNOR. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

It is a difficult thing to write a good biography; and yet there is no life, which, if well written, may not be interesting, for it is true, and now more than ever, that the, "proper study of mankind is man."

The two books before us fall short of our ideal of what a fairly good biography ought to be. But they possess an interest, and will be productive of some good.

The first is dedicated to the Children of Mary—to the gladsome young maidens leaving the quiet shelter of their convent school, and by the reproduction of a journal, originally destined for, *The Irish Monthly Magazine*, gives us glimpses into the inner life of Attie O'Brien, her struggles with adverse fortune, her up-hill work in gaining admittance, and afterwards distinction, as a contributor of Poems and Stories to the *Irish Monthly*, and *Weekly Freeman*. The vigorous and original thought of the compiler of the "Glimpses," is an interesting feature of the book.

The second book purports to give the life of a very worthy man; a member of the order of St. Patrick, founded in 1807 by Dr. Delaney, Bishop of Kildare and Leighlin. Brother Paul opened a house in Galway in 1826 and did good work there for many years. The great Dominican, Father Burke, attributed much of his success to the early teaching of Brother Paul: "He taught me," he says, "that next to the God that made me, I should love the old land of my birth, that dear old land, the mother home of the noblest race that ever dwelt on this earth." The Marquis D. J. Oliver, likewise a pupil of Brother Paul, bore like testimony, of whom in turn the Archbishop of Cashel said: "The truth is, that, in Church or State, I have never seen, or known a better man,"—J. C.

A COMPANION TO THE CATECHISM : Designed chiefly for the use of Young Catechists and of Heads of Families.
Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

THIS is a book which will prove to be very useful for those who are charged with the all-important work of forming the minds of the young in the solid principles of Christian Doctrine. It will be specially useful in this country, for it is a Companion to the Catechism which has been ordered by the National Synod of Maynooth, and approved by the Hierarchy of Ireland. That Catechism was formerly known as "Butler's," because it was composed by Dr. Butler, one of the Archbishops of Cashel. It is now known as the "Maynooth Catechism," because it was revised and improved by order of the Synod of Maynooth.

There are thirty chapters in the Catechism; there are fifty-two Instructions in the *Companion*. At the end of each instruction there is an Indulged Prayer taken from the English translation of the *Raccolta*, which has been authorised and approved by the Sacred Congregation of Holy Indulgences. The *Companion* also contains five "Addenda," comprising a short course of Instructions for young Children and Uninstructed Adults; the Christian's Daily Exercises, Things to be Remembered and Practised, Virtues and Vices, Practices of Piety, Order of the Books of the Old and New Testaments, and some other useful matters.

The Instructions are remarkably accurate and concise in the statement and exposition of Catholic Doctrine. There is an absence of that useless verbiage which disfigures so many books, even of instruction, whilst brevity and accuracy ought be their characteristics. All available information is not, indeed, crammed into the pages of the *Companion*, yet quite enough to the purpose. Theologians are not largely quoted, nor is it necessary; yet occasionally we find references. For instance, speaking of the Sacrifice of the Mass, and following the opinion, which it is lawful to follow, that destruction of some kind is necessary to have a Sacrifice we have in a foot-note:—

"The destruction or change takes place in the Mass 'principally in the Consecration, and perhaps, also, in the Consumption, or its Completion' (C. Doctrine Manual). 'The essence of the Sacrifice is in the Consecration, or, according to another opinion, it consists in the Consecration, and the priest's Communion.'" (Schoupe.)

As we might expect, frequent use is made of texts of Scripture; sometimes they are quoted, sometimes merely reference is given; in all cases they are the texts that are usually adduced.

We should prefer in the composition of a book of this description that where texts are brought forward to prove anything some one conclusive text should be developed a little so that its application may be made plain; for to our mind at least the mere stringing together of texts is not satisfactory, and few texts are so clear as not to need a little explanation.

The form in which the book is written is a decided improvement, and will spare much time in mastering it. We cannot do better than give an extract. We shall take it from the Thirteenth Lesson :—

What is Purgatory ?

“Purgatory is a place or state of punishment in the next life where some souls suffer for a time before they go to heaven” (*Matt.* xii. 32).

Why is it called Purgatory ?

It is called “Purgatory” because souls are there purged or cleansed by a temporary punishment.

What does “Punishment” mean ?

“Punishment” means pain inflicted for an offence.

What does “Suffer for a time” signify ?

“Suffer for a time” here signifies to undergo pain until the justice of God is satisfied.

Is it an Article of Faith that there is a Middle State called Purgatory ?

That there is a Middle State called Purgatory is an Article of our Holy Faith, defined as such by the Council of Trent, the truth of which is founded on Scripture, which declares that “God will render to every man according to his works” (*Matt.* xvi. 27).

How do you prove the doctrine of Purgatory from the Scriptures ?

That nothing defiled shall enter heaven. (*Apoc.* xxi. 27); and that “some shall be saved, yet so as by fire.” (*1 Cor.* iii. 15.)

What does our Lord say concerning this subject ?

Our Lord says, “He that shall speak against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world nor in the world to come.” (*Matt.* xii. 32.)

What do St. Augustin and St. Gregory gather from these words of our Lord ?

From these words St. Augustin and St. Gregory gathered, that some sins may be remitted in the world to come, and consequently that there is a Purgatory, or middle state, in which the punishment due to some sins may be suffered.

J. C.

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

APRIL, 1887.

THE IRISH BISHOPS OF LINDISFARNE.

ABOUT eight miles to the south of Berwick, opposite the Fenham Flats on the coast of Northumberland, is Lindisfarne or Holy Island. It was called Ynys Medcant by the native British tribes, and by our Irish Annalists the name was slightly varied to Inis-Medcoit, in which form we find it in Tighernach, and the Annals of Ulster. The island is about four miles long by two broad, and is separated from the mainland by a channel about two miles wide, which is dry at low water, and affords a passage over the sands for foot passengers and even vehicles. The soil is fertile, supporting not only sheep and cattle, but especially in the north western corner of the island, great quantities of rabbits. No trace of the primitive buildings raised by the Irish monks now remains; but the stately arches and beautiful columns of the later Benedictine monastery still form a most interesting and picturesque group of ruins.

The island furnished an admirable site for a religious house. It was secluded, yet not inconveniently situated for holding the necessary intercourse with the mainland. Then as now, the soil and the fisheries were capable of maintaining a considerable population, if willing to labour with their own hands. The old monks, too, loved to contemplate the beauty of God in his works, and Lindisfarne can still show scenes both by land and sea of various and striking beauty. From the towers of Berwick to the cliffs of Bamborough the

coast-line is crowned with fertile fields and smiling woodlands revealing many a spire and town, while seaward the eye stretches over the far-reaching ocean brightened with ships, and steamers, and fishing craft.

The monastery of Lindisfarne was an off-shoot of the great Columbian establishment of Iona, and in many respects these two institutions were strikingly alike. They were both island monasteries, both were founded by Irishmen, and mostly recruited from Ireland; the work accomplished by both was very similar, and both were tenacious even to a fault of the discipline and traditions of their founders. As Iona was the nursery of the saints and scholars who evangelized the wild Pictish tribes of the Highlands of Scotland, so Lindisfarne was the home of those holy men who converted to Christianity the fierce Anglo-Saxon warriors of the vast kingdom of Northumbria. It is fortunate for us that Venerable Bede has left us a most interesting and authentic account of the labours of the four great Irishmen who were in succession Abbots and Bishops of Lindisfarne and Apostles of Northumbria. Mr. Skene too, in his excellent work on "*Celtic Scotland*," has done much to exhibit in a clear light the career of these holy and learned men, a short sketch of whose labours will, we hope, be acceptable to our readers.

The Anglo-Saxon kingdom of Northumbria extended from the Forth to the Humber, thus including the Lothians in Scotland as well as the north-east of England. It consisted of two great provinces—Deira, whose capital was York, and Bernicia, whose chief stronghold was the Royal Castle of Bamborough, built on a cliff overhanging the German Ocean, a few miles to the south of Lindisfarne, and directly opposite the small group known as the Farne Islands. The river Tees, rather than the Tyne, seems to have been the boundary line between these two provinces. The British kingdom of Cumbria or Strathclyde lay along the western border of Northumbria from the Clyde to the Derwent, but the boundary line varied with the valour and fortune of the rival princes on either side.

We hear of Angles first landing on the Northumbrian

shores so early as the year A.D. 364,¹ when they joined the Picts and Scots in their incursions on the Roman Province. After the final withdrawal of the Roman troops in 409 they appear to have made permanent settlements in those territories, and were of course in constant conflict with the native British tribes of the western shores and mountains. It was against these pagans of the north, rather than in Cornwall and Wales, that King Arthur fought those great battles that have been so celebrated in song and story. Ida, one of their chieftains, ruled over Bernicia in 547, and built his castle of Bamborough like an eyry over the ocean waves. His successor, Ella, added Deira to his dominions, but leaving, it seems, no children to succeed him, the kingdom passed in succession to six sons of the warlike Ida. The last of these brothers died in 594, and was succeeded by his son, the brave and ambitious Aedilfrid, or Ethelfred, as he is frequently called. He, as well as all his subjects, were still pagans, and during the twenty-four years of his reign, he was in constant warfare with the Christian Britons of Cumbria. In 603 he completely defeated Aidan, King of Dalriada, who had been crowned by St. Columba himself, and thereby extended his dominions across the country from sea to sea. He had already expelled Aeduin, or Edwin, the prince of Deira, from his dominions, thus adding that province also to his already wide domain. But the exiled Edwin was not idle during the years of Aedilfrid's victorious career. He was silently employed in gathering troops and seeking allies. When a suitable opportunity offered, in conjunction with Redwald, King of the East Angles, he attacked Aedilfrid, and completely defeated him in a pitched battle on the borders of Mercia in the year 617, depriving him at once both of his crown and his life.

This battle had other very important consequences. The sons of Aedilfrid who, like his subjects, were still pagans, fled for refuge to Scotland. The eldest, Eanfrid sought the protection of the Christian king of the Picts, and in course of time became himself a Christian. His two younger brothers

¹ Ammianus xxvi. 4; Claudian vii. 26.

Oswald and Osuin, more commonly known as Oswald and Oswy took refuge with the Scots of the kingdom of Dalriada, by whom the young princes were sent, both for security and instruction, to the great monastery of Iona. So these two boys, who were afterwards destined to become, in succession, kings of Northumbria, had the good fortune to be trained up in the Christian faith by the holy "Seniors of the Scots," as Bede says, that is by the Irish monks of Iona.

Meanwhile King Edwin having taken a Christian wife from Kent became himself a Christian, and was solemnly baptised with many of his subjects by Paulinus at York, on Easter Sunday in the year 627. This important step seems to have offended his pagan neighbours. Penda, the fierce pagan king of the Mercians, entered into an alliance with the half Christian king of North Wales commonly known as Ceadwalla, and with their united armies they advanced against King Edwin. A great and bloody battle was fought on the 12th of October in the year 633, at Hatfield in Yorkshire, in which Edwin was slain and his army utterly routed. Nor were the savage victors content with this victory, they ravaged all Northumbria, slaughtering the Christians, burning their few churches to the ground, and wasting all the land with fire and sword. When this storm blew over, Osric, a cousin of the late king, took possession of Deira, and Eanfrid, the eldest son of King Aedilfrid, who had fled from the conqueror of his father, returned from his exile amongst the Picts and assumed the Government of Bernicia. Then followed what Bede calls "a hateful year before God and men." These two princes, Osric and Eanfrid, were nominal Christians, but now openly renounced the faith and once more adopted the paganism of their ancestors. Like all apostates they were the bitterest enemies of the Christian name, and strove to root it out from amongst their subjects. They had almost succeeded, when fortunately a swift vengeance overtook them. The same Ceadwalla of North Wales again appeared upon the scene and made short work of the apostate princes of Northumbria. He first captured York and slew Osric, and then advancing towards Bamborough met the terrified Eanfrid with a few soldiers and disposed of him in like manner.

When this news reached young Oswald in Dahiada he collected a small army of Picts, Scots, and Angles, and advanced to meet the foe. St. Columba appeared to him in a vision the night before the battle and told him to be of good courage, for that God would give him the victory. Thus confident in God's protection the young prince marched through the Lothians to meet the enemies of his family.

The battle was fought at a place called Heavenfield, near Hexham, in the valley of the Tyne. Oswald completely defeated his enemies and thus mounted the throne of Northumbria in the year 634, which is an era in the history of that kingdom, for it marks the foundation of Lindisfarne and the real conversion of the pagan Angles of Northumbria.

Oswald's first care after ascending the throne was the conversion of his pagan subjects. He had himself been baptized and educated by the "Seniors of the Scots" at Iona. Accordingly instead of seeking Christian teachers from the newly formed churches of the south of England, he very naturally turned to these holy "Seniors of the Scots" in Iona, by whom he himself had been so carefully trained in the Christian faith, and requested that they would send him a bishop to preach to his people and administer the sacraments of the Christian faith. His pious request was readily granted by the community of Iona. At first it seems that a certain Corbanus was sent to preach to the Northumbrians. But his mission, like that of Palladius in Ireland before St. Patrick, was a failure. He found the people rude and untractable, and thereupon returned home in disgust to report his failure to the elders of the community of Iona. He told them that the Angles were untameable men of a stubborn and barbarous disposition, unwilling to profit by his words. The elders thereupon were grieved, but one of them, Aidan by name, addressing the unsuccessful missionary said, "I am of opinion, brother, that you were more severe towards your unlearned hearers than you ought to have been, and did not at first, in accordance with the apostolic discipline, give them the milk of more gentle doctrine, until being by degrees nourished with the Word of God, they

might become capable of greater perfection and able to practise God's higher precepts." The elders knowing Corban to be a man of austere disposition, felt the justice of these words, and came to the conclusion that Aidan himself was more fitting for the task, and that he ought to be made a bishop at once and sent to preach to the Northumbrians. Accordingly, as Bede informs us, Aidan was consecrated a bishop and sent from the aforesaid island, and from this college of monks to instruct the province of the Angles in Christ. It was in the end of 634 or the beginning of 635, and at that time Segine, abbot and priest, presided over the monastery of Iona, as the same authority expressly informs us. It is very likely King Oswald himself went on that occasion to Iona to urge his request.

Aidan was certainly an Irishman, for almost all the monks of Iona came from Ireland. It is very probable, too, that he came of the royal race of Conal Gulban, to which St. Columba himself and so many of the succeeding abbots belonged. Bede¹ gives us a most interesting account of his life and character. He neither sought nor loved any worldly goods, but gave to the poor all that he received from kings and other wealthy men. He nearly always travelled on foot, both through town and country, preaching to the infidels, whenever he met them, the mysteries of the faith. He and his companions, when not actually preaching, were always engaged either in holy meditation or reading the Scriptures, or learning the psalms by heart. Even when he dined with the king he made haste after leaving the table either to read or write. He and his disciples fasted on Wednesdays and Fridays during the year, except during Paschal time, until the ninth hour, and whatever money he received he either gave to the poor or spent in ransoming the wretched slaves whom he saw groaning in oppression. The king was not unworthy of the bishop; once on Easter Sunday when Oswald and Aidan were dining together the king ordered the meat set before them on a silver dish to be given to the poor at the gate, and the dish itself to be cut up and divided

¹ Liber iii. c. v.

amongst them. Thereupon the bishop took the king by the right hand and exclaimed, "May this hand never perish." And though the king was afterwards slain in battle, "that hand remains," says Bede, "to this day uncorrupted within a silver case in St. Peter's church in the royal city of Bamborough."

But though Aidan had a large diocese and led a very active life, he wished to have some place where he might retire for the practice of prayer and meditation, far from the world's disturbing influence. So he asked the king to give him the little island of Lindisfarne that he might establish there a monastery and make it his Episcopal See. The king readily granted his request, and so in 635 Lindisfarne was founded by St. Aidan. It was in many respects like his own beloved Iona—about the same size, and almost the same distance from the shore, but more fertile and more easy of access than the rocky islet of Columba. Here he built his little church and oratory in the simplest and most primitive style, probably of wattles, and roofed it with shingles or thatch.

It is not to be wondered at that such a man succeeded where his predecessor had failed. The people joyfully flocked to hear the Word of God from his lips; churches were built in many places; money and lands were given by the king and his nobles to build monasteries; and the "nations" over which Oswald reigned were all converted to the faith by Aidan and by the "Scottish" monks who daily came to help him in preaching the Word of God. "So the English, great and small, were by their Scottish masters instructed in the rules and observance of regular discipline." At first, ignorance of the Anglic tongue was an obstacle to Aidan's preaching, but Oswald himself during the long years of his exile in Iona had become familiar with the Irish language, and was thus enabled to become an interpreter of the sermons of the holy bishop for his people. A school too, was established at Lindisfarne, and Aidan selected twelve youths of the Anglic nation that they might be trained up, under his own guidance, to become worthy ministers of the Gospel for their countrymen. Amongst these was Wilfrid, afterwards Archbishop of York, the controversialist who

thirty years later was the means of driving Bishop Colman and the Irish monks from Lindisfarne.

Aidan's prelacy lasted sixteen years and some months, during which he laboured incessantly for the kingdom of God. He died in his oratory at one of the king's country houses, not far from Bamborough in 651. The holy remains were carried to his own island of Lindisfarne, and buried in the churchyard of the brethren. Afterwards when the large Church of St. Peter was built there, his sacred relics were transferred to the right side of the high altar and there interred with becoming honour, that is, the portion of the relics which Colman left when departing from Lindisfarne.

Bede narrates many miracles wrought by the holy prelate both during his life and after his death. He then adds that in what he wrote about Aidan he does not mean to approve of his method of calculating the Easter festival, but he wished to preserve for the benefit of the reader the memory of his virtues; "of his love of peace and charity, his continence and humility, his mind superior to anger and avarice, despising pride and vain glory; his industry in keeping and teaching God's commandments; his diligence in reading and watching; his authority becoming a priest in reproving the haughty and powerful; and at the same time his tenderness in comforting the afflicted and in relieving and defending the poor." Surely a noble testimony from such a pen to the Apostolic virtues of the Irish monk.

Bishop Aidan being dead, Finan was ordained and sent by the monks of Iona to succeed him in the Bishopric of Lindisfarne. It was in the beginning of 652. Like his predecessor he was an Irishman. It seems that the conversion of the Angles had left St. Aidan little time for church building on the island, for Bede expressly tells us that Finan's first work was "to build a church, not of stone but of hewn oak after the manner of the Scots, and he covered it with reeds." The reeds were afterwards taken off and replaced by plates of lead in the time of Bishop Eadbert, when the church was dedicated to St. Peter by Theodore, Archbishop of Canterbury. It was there that the bones of Aidan were placed at the right hand side of the high altar,

as stated before. The Easter controversy seems to have embittered the brief episcopacy of Finan. Like all the monks of Iona at this time, he could not be convinced that the manner of celebrating Easter practised by their sainted founder and his successors, could by any possibility be wrong. He was, too, as Bede says, a man of a rather quick temper, whom argument or reproof only made still more inveterate in his prejudices. Perhaps he thought that Ronan, the Irishman, fresh from the schools of Italy, and the Kentish priests who came with Queen Eanfleda to the North, might have abstained from troubling his diocese with their new-fangled notions. They argued and remonstrated with him, but in vain; he only became more obstinate in adhering to his own ideas. The consequences of this diversity in the celebration of Easter soon became very inconvenient. The good king Oswald was slain in battle in 642, and Oswy, his brother and successor on the throne having been educated at Iona, adhered to the usages of the Bishop Finan. But the Queen Eanfled, and her chaplain Romanus were from Kent, and followed the Roman usage. The result was that on one occasion the king was celebrating Easter Sunday, and of course had given up fasting, whilst the Queen and her chaplain were keeping Palm Sunday preparatory to the rigorous fast of Holy Week. Nothing, however, was done during the ten years of Finan's episcopacy to effect a settlement of the question.

After his death, however, another Irishman coming, as Bede says, direct from Ireland (Scotia), one Colman by name, persisted in the same practice. It was now felt that something should be done to stop the scandal and secure uniformity. The king was, indeed, in favour of the Columban usage, but his son and heir, Prince Alfrid, had been a pupil of the celebrated Wilfrid, and adhered to the views of his own teacher. It was agreed, however, between the two kings, as Bede calls them, and all other parties concerned, to hold a synod or conference for the purpose of obtaining a final decision on the question. This famous assembly was held in the monastery of Streaneshalch, since called Whitby. The venerable abbess Hilda presided over

this great establishment, which was built on a cliff 300 feet above the sea and commanding a fine view of the "Bay of the Lighthouse," from which the place obtained its Saxon name. The rival parties at the conference were evenly matched. King Oswy favoured the Scots, but Alfrid was for the Southernns. Bishop Colman was the great champion of his own party, while on the other side was Agilbert, a Frenchman, who had studied the scriptures in Ireland, and afterwards became Bishop of the West Saxons. The learned and eloquent Wilfrid was at that time only an abbot, but he had much influence for he was known to have studied both at Rome and in Lyons under Archbishop Dalfin. The no less influential abbess Hilda was however on the side of Colman, for that royal maid received the veil from the saintly Bishop Aidan, and was trained in religious observance by him and his Irish successors. Bishop Cedd too, who had been long ago ordained by the Scots, although now a Southern prelate was inclined to their views. However he abstained from taking any decided part on either side, acting merely as an interpreter, for he was equally well acquainted with the Gaelic and the Saxon tongue.

Colman was called upon by the king to begin the discussion to which we can refer only very briefly. He justified his own usage by three arguments,—first, that he received that practice from the holy elders of the Scottish Church who had sent him there: secondly, that it was the practice of the holy Apostle Saint John; and thirdly, that this was the usage sanctioned by Anatolius, a holy and learned man of great authority in the Church.

Bishop Agilbert was then called on to reply to Colman, but not being a fluent speaker of the Anglo-Saxon tongue, he deputed Wilfrid to speak in his name. Wilfrid was an able and learned man who had travelled much abroad. His first argument against Colman was of itself quite conclusive. "The Easter which we observe we saw celebrated everywhere, in Africa, Asia, Egypt, and Greece—we saw it celebrated by all men at Rome, where the blessed Apostles Peter and Paul lived, taught, suffered and were buried." Apostolic authority and universal usage were against the few

Picts and Britons who adhered to the old Easter and the frontal tonsure. As to the authority of St. John, appealed to by Colman, it was not to the purpose. For St. John, according to Wilfrid, kept Easter on the 14th day of the first moon in the evening, no matter what day of the week it happened to be, in this respect following the Jewish Law, whilst it was yet lawful to judaize. "But you admit it may be not celebrated on a week day, and hence you do not follow the practice of St John, nor of St. Peter either," he added, "for he kept Easter on the first Lord's day after the 14th of the moon in the evening, and therefore from the 15th to the 21st while you keep it from the 14th to the 20th moon, so that you often begin Easter on the 13th of the moon in the evening," and hence "sometimes keep it before the full of the moon."

As to Anatolius, whom Colman quoted in his favour, Wilfrid admitted that he was "a holy, learned, and commendable man;" "but you," he said, "do not observe his decrees, for he had a cycle of nineteen years which you know nothing of, or if you do, you despise it, though it is now kept by the whole Church." Besides, the 14th of the moon on which our Lord celebrated the Pasch, Anatolius, "according to the custom of the Egyptians, explained to be the 15th moon in the evening," so that like St. Peter he held that Easter was to be kept on the Sunday between the 15th and 21st day of the moon. How far Wilfrid was accurate in this exposition of the teaching of Anatolius we cannot undertake to say, because most of the writings of that learned prelate are lost, and we only know his teaching from some very obscure references in Eusebius.

As to Colman's appeal to the tradition of the Columban Church, Wilfrid admitted somewhat dubiously the sanctity and miracles of its founder, which, however, were quite consistent with his adopting an erroneous Easter from rustic simplicity, "but you," he says, "have no such excuse, the more perfect rule of the entire Church is brought home to your minds." Once more he appeals to the authority of the Apostolic See as conclusive, for it was to St. Peter our Lord said, "Thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will

build my Church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it."

"Colman," said the king, "is it true that these words were spoken to Peter by our Lord?" "It is true, O king," said Colman. "Then," said the king, "as Peter is the door-keeper, I will not contradict him in any thing lest there should be none to open to me if I made him my adversary." So the conference concluded, and Colman and his clerics were defeated. The Roman Easter was adopted in Northumbria, and the usage of the Columban Church formally repudiated.

This was a severe blow to the venerable old man, and he felt it keenly. "His doctrine," says Bede, "was rejected and his sect despised," and that, too, by men whom he must necessarily consider interlopers. Why should they put their sickles into his harvest? Why could not they leave him and his clergy and his people in peace? They were not there when the Northumbrians were to be converted, but they came now to regulate the date of their Easter, and to change the tonsure that he and his monks had worn from their boyhood. It was intolerable, and as King Oswy and his son, the young prince, had now joined Wilfrid and his party, Colman resolved to leave Northumbria to themselves. He would return whence he came, to some of the islands in the wild ocean on the far west of his native Connaught. There at least he could keep his Easter and his tonsure and serve the Lord in peace. But his beloved children in Lindisfarne would not stay behind. All the Irish and at least thirty of the English monks resolved to follow their master. And they would bring with them, too, at least a part of the relics of their sainted father Aidan that were buried outside in their little green churchyard. The grave was reverently opened, part of the sacred remains they carried with them, the only treasure they bore from the borders of Northumbria, and part they buried again in the sacristy for those who were to come after them.

So the exiled band set out on their journey. They stopped no doubt at old Mailros on the Tweed, where an Irish house was founded some time before, and where they

were sure to be hospitably received. Then they made their way to Iona, the mother house, to take counsel of the abbot and the community. They remained there for a considerable period preparing their currachs and provisions for the voyage, until after about three years delay they finally set out for Ireland in the summer of 667, according to our most accurate annalists.

It was a long and dangerous voyage from Iona to Inisboffin, but the Irish monk lived always under the protection of God his father, and had no fear of winds or waves, when doing what he thought was the will of God.

Still the king did not wish to break completely with his Irish teachers to whom he owed so much. Another Irishman named Tuda, from the South of Ireland, where the correct method of fixing Easter Day had been adopted thirty years before, was chosen to succeed Colman as Bishop of Lindisfarne. He was a good and religious man, but unfortunately governed his church only a very short time, for the same year he fell a victim to the great plague that carried off so many of the Saints and Scholars both of England and Ireland. Colman had, it seems, not finally departed when Tuda died, for it was at his special request that the king nominated Eata to succeed to the abbacy and afterwards to the Bishopric of Lindisfarne. Eata was of English race, being one of the twelve boys whom Saint Aidan had selected to be trained up for the sacred ministry in the monastery of Lindisfarne. And so after thirty years' duration the rule of the Irish prelates of Lindisfarne came to a close, when they had just converted the Anglo-Saxon race of Northumbria to the true faith of Christ.

Then Bede adds this beautiful paragraph which is a noble testimony to the worth and holiness of these Irish missionaries. "The place (Lindisfarne) which they governed shows how frugal he and his predecessors were, for there were very few houses besides the church left at their departure; indeed, only what was barely sufficient for their daily abode; neither had they any money but cattle; for if they received money

from the rich they immediately gave it to the poor. There was no need to gather money there, or provide houses of entertainment for the great ones of the world, for such persons never resorted there except to pray in the church and hear the word of God. The king himself when opportunity offered came with only five or six servants, and having performed his devotions in the church departed. But if any took a repast there they were content with the plain daily fare of the brotherhood, and required no more. The whole care of these teachers was to serve God not the world—to feed the soul and not the belly. For which reason the religious habit was at that time in great veneration so that wheresoever any priest or monk happened to come he was joyfully received by all persons as the servant of God, and if they chanced to meet him on the road they ran towards him, and bowing were glad to be signed with his hand or blessed with his mouth. Great attention was also paid to their exhortations, and on Sundays the people flocked eagerly to the church or to the monasteries, not to feed their bodies, but to hear the word of God, and if any priest happened to come into a village the inhabitants flocked together to hear from him the word of life, for the clergy went into the villages for no other purpose but to preach, baptize, visit the sick, in a word, to take care of souls ; and they were so free from worldly avarice that none of them received lands or possessions for building monasteries unless they were compelled to do so by the temporal authorities, which custom was for some time after observed in all the churches of the Northumbrians.”

✠ JOHN HEALY.

DR. MIVART'S DEFENCE OF THEISM.

THESIS II.—(CONTINUED).

“There is and must always have been underneath, behind, and distinct from matter, an agent which is ever working in and through matter, and which created it, if it ever was created.”

PROPOSITION I.—(CONTINUED).

“Matter of itself is unable to produce all the substantial changes which are continually taking place around us.”

SECTION III.—MAN.

MY purpose all through the two preceding papers has been to show that underneath phenomena there are realities which come and go, and which owe their inception and cessation to an energy higher and better than any mere material force. The existence of these realities was first proved from the constitution of inorganic bodies; and the argument on which we relied was seen to grow in force when applied to organisms.

We might apply the same reasoning to the case of rational animals. In the wonderful uniformity of variety by which the human species is characterised; in the solid substantial unity that knits the individual together, not only binding his molecules into one substance at present, but conserving his substantial unity through four-score years of constant change in his constituent elements;—in these things we should find cogent evidence of the existence of an underlying principle of development, of an all-pervading and permanent bond of union,—of a substantial form.

But as this point has been touched upon already, and as the thoughtful reader will have no difficulty in applying the argument drawn from irrational organisms to the case of man, I will pass now to a consideration of what are called man's higher powers, and a review of some of the evidence which they supply in proof of the existence of the human soul. This consideration will be found to supply further testimony in favour of the existence of an all-pervading energy other than mere material force.

Men are said to be distinguished from lower animals by the possession of reason and of will. This is one of the fundamental doctrines of Christianity, as indeed of every other system worthy of the name of religion. It is as fundamentally opposed to materialism.

We have seen that materialists are bound in sheer consistency to deny any *substantial* difference between inorganic matter and living organisms. Consistency to the same principles must force them to deny also any difference of substance between living organisms and man. So that man can never be to the materialistic mind anything more than "the cunningest of all nature's clocks."

I must beg to be allowed to insist on this point,—that the philosophy of Locke, faithfully adhered to, first results in scepticism, then develops into materialism, and finally ends in idealistic agnosticism and mental paralysis.

Hume was consistent in denying substance and external cause; and if there be no substance why should there be spirit? Nay, why should there be even matter? For we are supposed to know nothing except what sense tells us; and sense tells us only of present sensations. Accordingly, Berkeley was consistent in admitting present sensations only, and so he has never been refuted by any follower of Locke.

Thus at one stroke we should rid the world of science; geology, astronomy, and evolution, are mere dreams. Talk of "systems pulsating rhythmically to and fro from chaos to cosmos,"—before sensation began there could not have been even chaos. Shall we continue to extol Leverrier for predicting the existence of Neptune, whereas no such planet could have existed until it was first seen or at least imagined? We have been told that there are fossil treasures buried in the chalk-hills and coal-fields of England: how can there be when no one *feels* them? It has been dinned into our ears that all kinds of life must have come originally from all-potent matter: but how could there have been any matter before life and sensation began?

Thus in the light of Locke's philosophy the whole fabric

of physical science disappears ; and we ourselves are left, as so many bundles of sensations, face to face with Nothing.¹ Thus too our great physicists, who know everything and outside whose ranks no one else knows anything,—those very sapient guides cry out at last that all are equally ignorant, for as much as there is nothing to be known by any one ; and that the most perfect dreamer is the most learned man. What a sublime philosophy !

I. But to come to the questions at issue. The first is : Are men endowed with powers of knowing other than those of sense ? We answer, yes ; materialists, no. As these papers do not pretend to be a treatise on philosophy, we can give little more than a general outline of a portion of the reasoning by which the Schoolmen prove their teaching.

According to the Scholastics, men are endowed with a cognitive faculty of a higher order than sense,—intelligence. This higher faculty operates in different ways. (1) As *consciousness*, it reflects on what *sensus intimus* tells us ; (2) as *memory*, it recalls past ideas ; (3) as *reason*, it (*a*) abstracts new ideas from sensations ; (*b*) it judges,—that is, compares ideas so formed and pronounces them to agree or disagree ; (*c*) it infers,—that is, when it cannot pronounce immediately on the agreement or disagreement of two ideas compared with each other, it compares both with a third, and thus tests whether they really agree or disagree.

I will take the third of these operations,—reason. I undertake to show that we have knowledge of things without us, which knowledge is not mere sensation, and which accordingly can be acquired only by virtue of a faculty altogether different from that of sense. This will be seen best by examples.

1° We will take for our first example, *causality*. You see a man put out his hand and move a book from one part of the room to another. Ask yourself two questions:—(1) What do my senses tell me ? (2) Do I know anything more about what happens ?

¹ See "Nature and Thought," pp. 74-6.

(1) What do my senses tell me? (a) That the man's relations to surrounding objects are changed; (b) that the relations of the book are similarly changed. That is all.

(2) Do I know anything more about what happens? Yes, certainly; I know that force goes out from the man to change the relations both of himself and of the book. I could as easily persuade myself that the man is not there at all, nor the book, nor myself, as I could believe that the book was not moved by the man's force. Putting forth such a force we term causality.

Here then are two points: (a) we have knowledge of causality; (b) that knowledge is not mere sensation. Hence a third point follows: (c) there must be within us a cognitive power different from sense.

The materialistic view of the foregoing example may be stated as follows:—When we ourselves deliberately move ourselves or other things from place to place, we *feel* a force going out from us to effect the removal. This feeling is sensation. It recurs constantly and often. The effect of its frequent and constant recurrence is, that whenever we see any object being removed in a similar manner, we *associate* this constant oft-recurring feeling of our own with the remover. Owing to this association we cannot help imagining what may not be at all true, that force is exerted by one object to cause the removal of another.

This statement of the materialistic view, if it errs at all, errs on the side of liberality. For materialists write as if we knew nothing at all of *any* causality; whereas it might, perhaps, be maintained that, when we freely energize, we *feel* that we put forth force. So too we feel the influence of motives on the will. But to feel force or influence is to perceive causality.¹

Now it cannot be denied that constant and oft-recurring occasions for associating any two things beget a habit by virtue of which we are liable on other occasions, when we feel the presence of one of these things, to expect or imagine the presence of the other. This is the half-truth that underlies the Association Philosophy.

¹ See, however, "Nature and Thought," p. 132.

We contend, however, (1) that no amount of association will beget an *insuperable* propensity on *every* occasion to *believe most firmly* that where one of the two associates is, there also must the other be: and (2) that such irresistible tendencies do arise without *any* previous habit of association.

For the purpose of testing the truth of these two propositions, let us take the following examples:—

(1) We have had almost every day many occasions of feeling that fire causes heat; we have never yet met with fire that did not do so; nevertheless one finds it quite easy to believe that there may be somewhere, as there was once at Babylon, a fire that produces no heat. We have never known the relative positions of earth and sun to remain the same for any lengthened period; on the contrary we have had constant and oft-repeated occasions of seeing that their relations are changing continually; yet we have no difficulty in assenting to the proposition that the sun might be made to stand still to-morrow, as it was once before in the days of Josue.

Similarly the great mass of men have never seen any one raised from the dead; but they do not nevertheless think it impossible; they would not refuse to believe their eye-sight, if they saw it done for the first time. Most people have never seen a rod changed into a serpent, nor water into wine; but we cannot convince ourselves that it is as impossible that such changes should occur, as that something should begin to exist without cause.

Examples like these might be indefinitely multiplied. They prove our first proposition:—that no amount of associations, no matter how frequent and constant, can beget an insuperable tendency on every occasion to believe most firmly that where one of the associates is, there also must the other be.

(2) On the other hand it is equally certain that there are many truths which we never experienced, with regard to which we have had no associations, and which, notwithstanding, we could not bring ourselves to deny were we to consider them sufficiently. Such is for example, the *possibility* of being raised from the dead, of the sun standing

still, of a person emerging from a furnace uninjured. Such also are the truths of mathematics.

Let us take a proposition from the first book of Euclid: "If any side of a triangle be produced, the exterior angle is equal to the sum of the interior and remote angles." There was a time when you had no idea that this was true; you had never associated the terms of the proposition even once. At first the saying came upon you as a sort of revelation, the truth of which you were free and perhaps inclined to doubt or deny. But when you had examined the proof and appreciated its full force even for the first time, you could not withhold your assent.

In like manner there are certain formulæ in advanced Mathematics, with reference to which it is no offence to say that few educated people know them. If they were barely stated by some one of little authority, many would be inclined to doubt and could even deny them. But Professor Casey knows them and could not doubt them; nor could we either, if we were to examine fully the grounds on which they rest.

Now suppose that some one does examine the proofs: When will he become so convinced of the truth that he cannot refuse his assent? That he *will* become so convinced is as certain as that Professor Casey is convinced already; it is as certain as that we ourselves cannot refuse assent to the ordinary truths of geometry.

But when will our supposed inquirer first acquire this irresistible conviction with regard to the higher formulæ? Is it only when he has become so accustomed to associate the terms, that he cannot break off the old habit? So say the Associationists. We contend, on the contrary, that he will be convinced without any habit, the first moment he appreciates the force of the proof. Nay, we contend that no matter how long he had been accustomed to think the formula untrue, the very first moment he clearly sees proof of its truth, he will break through the tendency to dissent begotten by his previous habit of association.

This proves our second proposition:—that irresistible tendencies to assent do arise without, nay in spite of, any previous habit of association.

Now we have an irresistible tendency to believe in external causes ; and if such a tendency can never arise from mere habit, but may spring up at first sight, as it were, it follows that the Association system cannot be admitted. It follows further that, as these irresistible tendencies do not result from mere habit, they must come from a cognitive faculty within us that *makes* us assent ; just as there is a force within us that makes us see the objects around us, if we open our eyes at mid-day.

Further, it has been already proved that our knowledge of external causes is not sensation. Sense tells us of antecedent and consequent, but not of cause. Hence it follows that there is within us a cognitive faculty altogether different from that of sense.

2° So much for causality ; let us take the idea of *substance*. In the first of these papers it was proved (1) that behind force there is a subject of inhesion ; (2) that there is a different subject for the different simple elements ; (3) that the subject of inhesion is different in chemical compounds from what it was in the constituent. How do we come to a knowledge of all this ?

Not from sense ; for sense tells of phenomena, and this subject of inhesion is something underneath and behind phenomena, abiding through all phenomenal changes. It must accordingly be revealed by means of another faculty distinct from sense, a faculty which begins to operate when sense ceases, which sees clearly what to sense is hidden and invisible.

3° The same is true of *vitality*. In the second paper it was shown that there is a very marked difference between live and dead things. How is this difference known to us ? Not from sense ; for sense tells merely of motion, and we know that the very same movements might be produced in dead as in living organisms. Vitality is behind motion. By what is it revealed ? Not by sense ; therefore by another cognitive faculty.

4° We find another example in our knowledge of *morality*. There are certain actions which we know to be good, others

which we know to be bad. We are as convinced that they are so, as we can be of anything,—of our own existence, or that two and two are four. How do we get this knowledge?

Not from sense alone. Sense tells whether an act is *pleasant* or *unpleasant*; it says nothing of goodness or badness. We are convinced that some acts are bad, which, however, we know to be most pleasant and agreeable to sense. Many men are so convinced of the wickedness of these pleasant actions, that they are prepared to die rather than do them. We cannot but believe that it would be evil to offend a good God, no matter how such an offence might be rewarded by some powerful principle of wickedness.

So also we are convinced that other acts are good, though most disagreeable to flesh and blood; nay, the more disagreeable they are, the better we think them; whereas to do good for pleasure lessens somewhat the moral value of the act. Thus we admire self-denial in any one,—the asceticism of the saints, the fortitude of the martyrs. So, too, we cannot but admit that Mill enunciates a lofty principle of morality, when he says that rather than call a bad God good, it would be better to burn in hell for all eternity.

Good and evil, therefore, are very different from pleasure and pain. Sense tells us of the latter, but certainly not of the former. How then do we come to a knowledge of good and evil? It must be by a faculty other than that of sense.¹

5° Many other examples might be given; we must content ourselves with one,—our knowledge of *universals*. We are not confined to the individual for the exercise of our cognitive powers. We know not only John Smith, Thomas Brown, James Thomson; but merchant in general, student, soldier, man. We can tell what *merchant* means, what *man* means. When we read or hear these words, we are aware of a something—an image—within us corresponding to the word without. The word *man* does not call up to the mind the image of a horse, a fish, or a tree; nor even the image of *this* man or of *that*; but another image which is always the

¹ See "Nature and Thought," pp. 135, &c.

same whenever the word is perceived by any of the senses. And this is true of all universals.

How did we get this internal image? Not by sense; for sense never perceived any but the individual. Who ever saw or heard *man* or *student*? Who ever traded with *merchant*, or fought with *soldier*? We see and feel this man and that,—individuals, John, Thomas, James; but not *merchant*, *student*, *man*. Yet we know *merchant*, *student*, *man*. How? Not by sense; therefore by some other faculty.

This argument from universals may be confirmed by a further consideration. Man is distinguished from lower animals not only by his reason but by a consequent power of speech. Of course animals, too, have cries by which they express their *sensations*. The knowledge which is within is thus externated, but in language which corresponds to what is within;—else the expression should not be true. We ourselves, as animals, have sensations of pain, of pleasure, of other kinds; and we express these feelings by corresponding cries and gestures. A boy starts and cries out when he gets a sharp cut on the back; children shout and scream at play; mothers sing low and sweet to their slumbering infants; we laugh with joy and cry of sorrow. All this is the expression of sense.

But we have language of a higher kind, which conveys not sense but intelligence,—not the individual, concrete, present emotion; but universal, abstract concepts. A parrot may be trained to a habit of uttering similar sounds, but it does not *convey* from itself to us the corresponding concepts. It speaks, but *knows* not what it says; it does not *express ideas*. The reason is because it has no ideas and cannot form any. How very different the nature of its expression when it cries out for food, or from pleasure or pain. Then it *gives out* what is within. On the contrary when it utters universal terms we see that there is a void within,—that it has no corresponding idea. Man alone of all the animals makes use of language in this sense.

The illustrations just given prove conclusively what I undertook to show:—That we have a knowledge of things

which is not mere sensation, and which accordingly can be acquired only by virtue of a faculty altogether different from that of sense.¹

Here let me put a question. It is admitted by all that the human intellect had a beginning: How did it arise? Not certainly by evolution of mere material forces; for matter may produce a new arrangement, but not a new force. It has been proved that intellect is not sense, but *altogether* different. Accordingly, when this higher faculty first came into being, it must have been produced by something higher and stronger than material force.

II.—Let us proceed to examine *the difference* between these two cognitive faculties. A very little reflection will show that, whereas sense tells of what is extended and divisible, intellect reveals the indivisible.

Thus with regard to *causality*, sense tells of this man, of that book, of these changes in the relations of both to surrounding objects,—all extended and divisible, and as such capable of affecting the material organ of sight. Intelligence, however, penetrates behind matter and its phenomena, and reveals the *cause as such*. Now an external cause as such cannot affect material organs. Who ever saw or heard or touched an external cause as such? We see, hear, and touch, individual things, but not as causes.

So too with regard to *substance and vitality*. The sense perceives individual phenomena, ever-varying accidents and movements,—that figure, this weight, that sound, these motions. Underneath phenomena intelligence discovers substances and principles of vitality. What affects the eye, the ear, the touch, is extended. Eye or ear knows nothing of the substance or of the principle of vitality that lies underneath.

The same is true of *morality*. Sense perceives this pleasant, or that unpleasant sensation, but knows nothing of *duty* or of *wickedness*. Moral good and moral evil affect no organ; one cannot know a good from a bad action by sight, or

¹ See "Nature and Thought," ch. iv., also "Lessons from Nature," ch. iv.-vii.

by touch, or by taste, or by all senses combined. One discriminates between good and evil only by the other faculty, intelligence.

Why is this? Why can sense reveal antecedents but not causes, phenomena but not substance, the pleasant and the painful but not the good or the bad? Two answers are conceivable:—

1° We might suppose that the realities which correspond to our notion of cause, substance, morality, are unable to impress the organs of sense for want of extension; that they are insensible because, apart from their present phenomena, they are immaterial. I say, “apart from their present phenomena;” for substances and external causes, as such, are not seen by us in themselves, as it were; we know of them rather under general concepts as things underlying present phenomena.

All real knowledge is objectively true; its object is not created by the mind, but rather the mind is modified by objective realities. Such modification is manifestly impossible, unless the object be in some way united to the mind; hence the famous problem of the bridge.

Now sensation is the lowest kind of knowledge with which we are acquainted. It is the perception by a material organ of an object by which that organ has been impressed. This perception cannot, of course, be objectively truthful, unless the external object corresponds to the impression perceived. We have seen that sense tells nothing of substance, cause, morality; they are beyond its ken. Perhaps it is because, being immaterial, they are unable to impress themselves, so to speak, on material organs. This is the scholastic view.

2° Another explanation is conceivable. Why should not this inability result from grossness on the part not of the object but of the sense? Perhaps the truth is that our senses are not able to take impressions from the finer forms of matter? We cannot see sounds or hear colours; we require delicate instruments to detect the presence of

electricity; and this arises not from any want of extension in air, ether, or electric waves, but rather from want of capacity in eye and ear and every other sense.

This reasoning is fallacious. The most delicate instrument does not render electricity sensible. We can produce motion or heat, or light; and all these are sensible, of course; not so the electricity itself. It is true, indeed, that inability to perceive might arise from grossness in the part of the organ as well as of the object. But we have *some* sense capable of being impressed by air and other waves. Have we any *organ* wherewith to *feel* substance or cause, or whereby we may estimate the moral worth of an act? If so, where or what is it?

This line of argument begets at least, strong probability; but there are further considerations. Take the commonly received notion of spirit. Materialists do not admit objective reality to correspond; but the fact of the subjective concept cannot be denied. How could material organs form such? They form material images; and hence we *imagine* spirits under corporal forms. But we know, or what is the same for our purpose, we think we know, that the object is not corporal but utterly unimaginable, though most real and true. How could material organs form such a thought.

Or take some universal idea. Sense tells of this or that piece of matter,—this man, that house, tree, stone, &c. Intelligence reveals the universal,—man, house, tree, stone. Now individuals are divisible; this man, house, tree, stone, are all so much matter, and as such can impress themselves on material organs. But universals cannot impress themselves similarly. Who ever saw or heard or felt man, horse, tree, stone? We see, hear, and feel *this* man, *that* tree; but not the universal man, tree. Why is this? Why cannot *man* impress the organ as well as *this man*? The only conceivable answer is that *this man* is extended and divisible, and so can be, as it were, stamped on the organ; whereas the universal, *man*, cannot be similarly stamped on material organs, inasmuch as it is indivisible.

Here then are two sets of objects which we may know: (1) individual present phenomena, the objects of sense;

(2) realities underlying phenomena, the object of intellect. These underlying realities are not seen by sense, but only the phenomena by which they are manifested. The phenomena are divisible, the underlying realities indivisible. The two however, are never separated but exist in the concrete; hence the concrete is both divisible and indivisible, indivisible in one respect, divisible in another.

Is the concrete object—this book—really indivisible? This opens up the great controversy as to the nature of universals, which must ever be fundamental in philosophy. Nominalists and Conceptualists, or, as we call them, Materialists and Idealists, answer, no; Realists of all shades answer, yes. If there be any truth in knowledge, if common sense be not a lie, realism in some form must be adopted; there must be something indivisible in the object to correspond to the indivisible concept of the mind.

III. We have but little space to devote to the second endowment by which men are distinguished from brutes,—the will. In a subsequent paper, however, we shall have occasion to consider this faculty more fully. Our present contention is, that as we have knowledge other than what sense supplies, so we have appetites other than sensuous.

It has just been proved that truth and goodness are not material, that they affect no organ. Individualised matter alone can impress the senses; it alone can tickle the eye, the palate, or the ear.

But there are truths which are neither material nor individual; which existed before matter was, and would continue to exist even though the whole material universe were to cease; which rule not this case only or that, but all cases, or at least all of a certain class.

So too, though there are duties which are pleasant or painful enough, it is not because they are pleasant or painful that they are duties. So much is this true, that even Mill contends that it might be the duty of a man to bury himself in the fire of hell for ever, rather than deny the truth and soil his soul with guilt.¹ Actions are good or bad, not

¹ "On Hamilton," p. 129; see "Nature and Thought," pp. 144-146.

because they affect the senses in any way, but because they are or are not conformable to right order. And as this order is discerned by intellect and not by sense, so goodness and duty cannot affect the senses.

Now it cannot be doubted that the more man rises above the level of the brute, the more is he attracted by this super-sensible goodness and truth. The good are those who deny their senses for the sake of gratifying higher appetites; the best are they who deny themselves in the most heroic degree, who give up their very lives, and become martyrs to science and to duty. That there are such no one can deny. If, moreover, it be admitted, as it must be admitted, that truth and goodness are not able to impress the senses, it follows that we must have within us strong appetites which are quite different from those of sense.

IV. This brings us a step further. If it be true that the object of sense, owing to its extension, can impress itself on material organs, whereas the object of intellect and will, for the opposite reason, can make no such impression,—if this be true, it follows that intelligence and will cannot be acts of any material organ. The eye can see colours, the ear hear sounds, the touch feel resistance; but the substance underneath colour and behind sound and resistance, can be perceived by neither eye nor ear nor any sense, but only by an immaterial faculty behind sense.

Hence the distinction between man and brute. Brutes are endowed with sense but not with intellect or will. Moreover, sensitive power resides in an organ; whereas intelligence and will have their seat in an indivisible, immaterial subject.

Accordingly, as brutes have no powers higher than sense, there is no reason for admitting in their constitution any "force-root" other than such as, together with *materia prima*, is capable of forming a living material organism. But a living material organism would result from the union with *materia prima* of a form which is not in itself capable of independent existence; just as the form of a crystal is not capable of existing by itself. Hence the Schoolmen believed that,

though brutes have souls, just as plants, and as stones have substantial forms, yet these souls of brutes, just like the forms of inorganic matter and of plants, are incapable of existing separated from the *materia prima* to which they are joined. If this be true, it follows that the souls of brutes cannot survive after death, but are absorbed into the *materia prima*; just as the form of water does not survive the dissolution of that substance into oxygen and hydrogen.

It is quite different, however, with regard to the substantial form of man. We have seen that his energies are not tied down to any material organ, that he is capable of activities which are independent of matter. Now all the force which any being exerts comes from the "force-root" or form. Consequently there must be a form in man which energizes independently of *materia prima*, and of extension which arises from *materia prima*. Thought, as we have seen, is not an impression made on eye or brain or any other organ; it is an image formed in the soul itself independently of matter in any shape.

Whilst, therefore, the forms of the lower animals are immersed in matter, and cannot energize or even exist separated from matter, the human form energizes of itself. It depends on matter for the *conditions* of its energy; but these conditions being present the form acts of itself. As it can act without the co-operation of any material organ, it must be capable of existence when separated from matter. For the human substantial form, like all others, exists only to energize. As, therefore, its energies are not indissolubly linked with matter, so neither is its existence.

Hence whilst the union lasts the human soul co-exists with *materia prima*. During this time it is able to put forth two kinds of energy;—one, which comes from the compound, the living organism, and this energy is sensation, as well as vegetative and mechanical force; the other, to which matter does not contribute, and this is thought and will. When the bond is broken, the soul becomes unable to receive sensations for want of the essential material organ. It does not, however, merge in matter, but exists separately; because it was always capable of another kind of energy, of which it alone and not

any material organ was the source. And as the material organs did not immediately contribute to this second activity during life, so after death the soul remains capable of the same energy which it used to put forth from itself alone in its former state. In other words the human soul is capable of independent activity, and therefore of a separate existence.

V.—We come now to the last link in the proof from the constitution of man. When the first human soul began to exist, whence did it come? By evolution from matter? But matter cannot create spirit; it must have had a nobler cause.

What even of individuals? How did our own souls come into being?

Not by division from the souls of the parents; and this for two reasons.

In the first place, though certain substantial forms, as we saw, are divisible in matter, this is not true of such as are indivisible substances capable of separate existence.

For the parent form, when separated from its matter, must be in substance exactly what it was before the union took place; else it should be divided not only in matter but in itself. But how could it be in substance exactly what it was, if, during the time of union, slices had been taken off to form the souls of offspring?

Besides, it was shown in the last paper that generation of organisms, even of mammals and amongst them of man, takes place when the germ-cell and the sperm-cell are no longer substantially united to the bodies of the parents. Accordingly, the soul of the offspring cannot be cut off, as it were, from the soul of either parent; because when the soul of the offspring begins, the *foetus* is not substantially united to either parent.

Hence the human soul cannot arise by division from the souls of the parents. Few will now be got to maintain the theory that all souls were created from the beginning. And even though one were to maintain that view, without any reason, and contrary to the analogy of all that we know of other substantial forms, yet it would not materially weaken our

argument. For human souls are in existence; they cannot come from matter; therefore they must come from a higher and better principle, whether created all at once or at the moment of union of each with its own *materia prima*.

Our whole argument may be stated briefly as follows:—We have faculties distinct from those of sense. Those distinct faculties are independent of material organs for their activity. Hence the form from which they spring is not immersed in matter, but capable of independent self-existence. This form comes from somewhere; it cannot result from any special arrangement of the molecules of matter; hence there must be a higher power ever energizing to produce these spiritual substances.

VI.—We are now in a fair way to estimate the value of the Darwinian theory of development as applied to man.

It was stated in the second of these papers that a disciple of the Schoolmen would not be at all surprised to hear that spontaneous generation had been proved to be a fact. Nor would he be at all unprepared to believe that all species of living organisms, except man, were developed from a few elemental kinds. There are two reasons which contribute to make the case of man peculiar.

1° In the first place the substantial form of man is different from all other forms, in that it is a substance capable of independent self-existence, whereas other forms are immersed in matter. Hence the human soul can be produced only by an act strictly *creative*; other souls are not *created*, but only "*educer*" *e potentia materiae*.

Now there is a scholastic controversy touched on before in these papers, whether God can communicate to creatures His *creative* energy. The common opinion was and is that He cannot. Because, it is argued, infinite power is needed to bridge over the gulf from nothing to something, or to create; and no creature is capable of becoming the medium of an infinite energy. Various other reasons are assigned.

On the other hand there were men of eminence who maintained that creation of finite being does not suppose the exercise of infinite power. It is true, indeed, that no creature

can of itself call anything into being from nothingness ; but it is not so clear that power might not be communicated to creatures, whereby they might become, if not the agents, at least the instruments of creation. Forms of inorganic bodies and of the irrational organisms are produced by creatures beyond doubt ; why might not God communicate to His angels or to men, if He so willed, a somewhat similar though greater power, of creating substances capable of separate existence, such as the human soul ?

I have but touched the fringe of this controversy. As it is not the purpose of these papers to discuss points which Catholics are free to dispute, we will not pursue the question further. What has been said will serve to explain the first reason why most of the Scholastics denied that man was produced by evolution,—because the human soul is a substance capable of separate existence, and because the production from nothing of such a substance is an act of *creation* strictly so called,—that is, an act such as can only be performed by God Himself.

So much for the question of *possibility*. However one may be inclined to the common view, it must be admitted that Catholics are not bound in any way to accept that teaching.

2^o We come now to the second reason for denying the evolution of man. This reason is based on the *facts* of revelation.

Evolution of man supposes two things : (1) That the *soul* of the first man was *created* by an energy residing in pre-existing creatures of a lower species ; (2) that the first human *body* owed its special perfection to a similar energy.

(1) With regard to the first of these points,—the creation of the first human *soul*,—whatever may be thought of the question of *possibility*, Catholics have no doubt as to the question of *fact* :

“Secundum fidem Catholicam ponimus quod omnes substantias spirituales et materiam corporalium Deus immediate creavit ; haereticum reputantes si dicatur per angelum vel aliquam creaturam aliquid esse creatum.”¹

¹ S. Thom. De Pot. q. 2 de creat. a. 4 ; cf. Suarez, de Metaph. D. 20, s. 2, 1.

(2) The second point, however remains: Was the first human *body* produced immediately by the divine action alone; or was it rather gradually perfected by natural agencies under divine guidance, so as to be fitted at length to receive a rational form?

It is stated in the Book of Genesis, (1) that "God formed man of the slime of the earth, and breathed into his face the breath of life, and man became a living soul;" (2) that "God cast a deep sleep upon Adam, and when he was fast asleep, He took one of his ribs and filled up flesh for it: and the Lord God built the rib which He took from Adam into a woman."¹

Independently of tradition the former of these texts and all similar passages might be interpreted so as to harmonize with the doctrine of evolution. But what about the formation of the woman? If the human species arose by evolution, the woman's body as well as that of the man must have been gradually perfected by natural causes. And if so, what is the meaning of Adam's sleep, of the abstraction of a rib, filling it up with flesh, and building it into a woman?

Cajetan long ago suggested that these words are not to be interpreted literally but allegorically. They denote, according to his view, the inception of the law of marriage, consequent upon the origin of reason and of morality. To impress this law more fixedly on carnal-minded and lascivious man, the allegorical form was used. We all know that there are certain truths which closest words fail to impress on our mortal powers; whereas the same truths being embodied in a tale will have force to engage the undivided attention of our minds. This is why our Divine Lord so often chose the parable as a means of communicating knowledge. According to Cajetan the story of the formation of Eve is a parable.

Against this view there is one great difficulty,—the authority of the Church. Not that there has been any individual dogmatic pronouncement; but there is the common, almost unanimous teaching of Theologians and of

¹ii. 7, 21.

Bishops. And though I would not at all convey that this teaching is of such a kind as to make it heresy to deny the immediate formation by God of Eve's body; yet it appears to me beyond doubt that (1) there has been for many centuries an almost unanimous *consensus* of Catholic opinion on this question; and (2) such a *consensus* is entitled to the respect not only of silence but of assent; unless, indeed, (3) there should be discovered proof that the bodies of our first parents were gradually perfected by the action of natural causes.

Now it does not appear that any such proof has been or ever can be submitted to the public. It has been shown that natural selection *alone* is not sufficient to account for the origin of even the lower organisms. Not only is selection *of itself* unable to account for the existence even of individual substantial forms, but it has been shown also that there are certain dead-points which selection could not get over without a *special* intervention of the divine activity. This is the irresistible conclusion from Dr. Mivart's argument in the "Genesis of Species." Variations of form may occur within certain limits but not beyond; to pass the line a new and very *special* energy is requisite.

If, therefore, we suppose organisms to have been perfected by evolution, with its ordinary and special forces, up to the point where the ape-form becomes proximately fit to receive a rational soul; and if we suppose further that God wished to pass the boundary line, and to produce the *animal rationale*; it is plain that two courses were open to Him.

(1) He might take a germ from an almost human ape-body; and then by two acts of special energy, (*a*) give it an additional degree of perfection, and (*b*) inform it with a spiritual substance capable of thought. Or (2) He might take another course. (*a*) He might form from the earth a body like the almost human ape-body, but with higher capacities as being destined to higher ends. (*b*) Then He might infuse into this body so formed, a specially created spiritual substance, which would serve as the form whereby for the future it should live and energize.

There is nothing impossible in this latter hypothesis, even on the principles of evolution. Nay more, if we take into account what we know from faith regarding the supernatural destiny of man, one might not unnaturally be inclined to expect some such immediate interference of the divine activity. There remains, of course, to be explained why God developed organisms up to the ape stage and then stopped. But who are we to ask God why? Why should He not do so, if He so willed? Why did he make man, or any other creature at all? And who was God's counsellor that he should be able to explain the motives of His will?

I do not advocate the foregoing or any other hypothesis of evolution; neither do I condemn. It is not my purpose to express opinions on questions with regard to which Catholics hold different views. For my own part I bow to the authority of Theologians, awaiting further proof of the evolution theory, and believing that such proof can never be forthcoming.

My purpose is to show how the doctrine of evolution bears on the existence of a First Cause, with regard to Whom we must all agree. I do not assert that irrational organisms have been developed through the agency of natural causes; much less that the human body has been so developed. I believe that both *might have been* so formed, if God had so willed. I do not think that the same can be said with regard to the soul of man. It *was* created immediately by God; and it is far from clear that He was free to create by intermediate agencies, and not by His own immediate act. But even though He could *create* as well as *evolve* through the intervention of natural causes, our argument retains all its force.

The only question for us is this: Could substantial forms, especially spiritual forms, be evolved by matter *alone*? We answer unhesitatingly, no. Matter cannot produce any force from nothing; it can but change the direction of force already in existence. Of itself it cannot bring into existence the "force-root" of inorganic bodies or of living organisms. It could not, therefore, of itself, develop the body of man. Above

all it could not, of itself, call into being from nothing his spiritual soul. Yet man's body must have been either developed or created; and a soul is created for every man that comes into the world. Therefore there must be in existence something superior to matter, always energizing underneath and behind material substances, and distinct from them.

W. McDONALD.

CLERICAL MINISTRY AND CIVIL LAW IN IRELAND.

THERE are few subjects of equal interest and importance in reference to which misconception so generally prevails in every section of the Catholic community in Ireland, as the one indicated at the head of this short paper. Owing probably to the long ages of oppression or legal ostracism to which the Church and its members were so cruelly subjected; it is perhaps not a matter of surprise that they should be slow in realizing, not merely that the laws which so long held their Church in bondage, have passed for ever away, but what is possibly of equal importance, that the ministers of that Church are, in the discharge of their sacred offices, guaranteed by the Civil Law many invaluable rights, exemptions, and privileges, to which, as ordinary citizens, they could have no claim. And yet it is so.

To indicate as briefly and concisely as may be what these guaranteed privileges are, is the purpose of this paper. But needless to say, in attempting so difficult a task I can only treat it in an elementary or superficial manner: merely laying down the principles which regulate the status of the Catholic Church in Ireland before the Law; while I take leave to supplement a few instances of their practical application, selecting those cases which I consider best suited to elucidate my meaning, and probably of more general interest to the clerical body.

What then is the legal status of the Catholic Church in Ireland? It is simply in the eyes of the Civil Law, a volun-

tary association of individuals, who freely and willingly unite together, for a purpose recognized as legitimate before the law; and who, in furtherance of that purpose, freely bind themselves, or consent to be bound by a code of laws, usages, and discipline, received and observed in the Catholic Church in Ireland; provided always that such laws or discipline be not opposed to natural justice, public policy, or special statute.

The members of this association, by voluntarily joining it or willingly remaining within its fold, are presumed by the Civil Law, by the fact of so joining, to enter into an implied compact with the executive authority of such association, faithfully to observe and fulfil two conditions; first, to obey all its laws and usages as received and observed in Ireland; and secondly, to consent to such an abatement and modification of their rights and privileges as ordinary citizens, as may be needed for the full compliance with such laws, usages, and discipline.

Now this voluntary surrender or curtailment of their civil rights is, in the eye of the law, the basis and foundation of all the civil privileges which the executive authority of the Catholic Church claims, and certainly possesses, in its relations with its members, whether lay or clerical. For, it is sufficiently manifest that the members of the Catholic Church, no more than those of any other voluntary association, cannot claim a right which they freely and willingly surrendered, nor refuse obedience or compliance with laws and usages which were, as it were, the terms of partnership willingly entered into, without accepting such consequences or penalties, as the association prescribed, and they willingly, by joining or remaining, consented to submit to.

It is further obvious, as an evident consequence of this partial abatement of their natural and civil rights, that no layman or cleric in the Catholic Church can allege as a grievance or cause of civil action that the authorities of the Catholic Church had, by enforcing against him its penal enactments, violated his rights as a man or a citizen, provided always, that such procedure was, in all particulars, in accordance with the terms of his implied contract, viz., the

laws and discipline of said Church, as received and prevailing in Ireland. And if under such supposed grievance, redress were sought before the civil tribunals, the question, and the only question such tribunal would enquire into or take cognisance of would be, not what were the rights of such layman or cleric, as man or as citizen; but what were his rights, as modified by the laws and usages of the Catholic Church of which he was a member, and were such rights, so modified, violated. Needless to add that it is simply untrue for priest or layman to say, that in becoming a priest, or a Catholic, he did not in any sense surrender his rights as a man and a citizen. For in undertaking to observe the Church's laws, both one and the other consented to such curtailment of their ordinary civil rights as such observance required and entailed. The sole remedy one, who is unwilling to observe the terms of his contract known to the Civil Law, has, is his severance from the association, whose rules he is no longer willing to observe. As long as he remains a member, he must either observe the prescribed rules, or submit to the penalties prescribed for their violation.

I will now proceed to apply those principles to a few cases of those more likely to occur in the exercise of the Sacred Ministry.

First—Altar Denunciations.—According to the ordinary Civil Law prevailing in these countries, any person who publishes of another defamatory matter calculated to bring such other into ridicule, contempt, or disrepute, exposes himself to a legal action for damages, either for oral slander or for libel: the one if the injurious matter were spoken only, the other if published by writing. By this law all, whether laymen or ecclesiastics, are strictly bound whenever they either speak or write merely in the capacity of ordinary citizens neither possessing nor claiming any special privilege or exemptions. But if an ecclesiastic, acting as an ecclesiastic and in the necessary discharge of his duties as such, utter language such as I have just described, then he can claim exemption from the application and enforcement of the ordinary Civil Law, only provided he has strictly observed two conditions in accordance with the terms of the

implied contract already referred to, viz.: first, that his language and action was not in any sense opposed to natural justice, and secondly, that he acted in strict accordance with the laws and discipline of his Church as in force in Ireland. And, therefore, if in any case such denunciation were not in itself justifiable, or even though justifiable had not previously been sanctioned or authorised by the Ordinary, as at present required by Ecclesiastical Law in Ireland, such denunciation would be a violation of the implied contract, involving a certain forfeiture of all privilege and exemption, and entailing a liability to an action for damages before the civil tribunals.

Secondly—Ecclesiastical Censures.—The very interesting judicial procedure in the remarkable case of *O’Keeffe v. Cullen*, has established beyond doubt or question, the fact, that the Civil Law recognises as vested in the Bishops and other competent authority of the Catholic Church, in accordance with and because of the implied stipulation or contract which all clergymen are supposed to enter into, when accepting their sacred office, not merely to inflict such censure as the justice of the case may demand and the law of the Church may sanction, but also, if needs be, to publish and proclaim said censure, regardless of the consequences to the individual; provided it can be shown to the satisfaction of the Civil tribunal, that the action and procedure of the ecclesiastical authority was, in all its stages, in complete accordance with the laws, usages, and discipline of the Catholic Church as received and in force in Ireland. For to that alone is the clergyman supposed by the Civil Law to have impliedly bound himself.

Thirdly—Ecclesiastical Property.—On no other branch of this important subject does so much misconception seem to prevail than as to the rights, before the Civil Law, of those who possess or retain ecclesiastical property such as churches, presbyteries, schools, &c. And yet the legal principles regulating such cases, are now established and determined beyond doubt or question. The principle is, that all ecclesiastical property is given or entrusted to clergymen, solely in their capacity of clergymen; that it is entrusted on the implied

condition, to which all clergymen by accepting it are supposed to assent, viz., the faithful discharge and fulfilment of the duties of the office to which such property is attached; and that failing such discharge of duty, or on being pronounced unfit for such discharge by competent ecclesiastical authority, they forfeit the sole title on which they possessed it; and consequently, may be ousted by an action for non-title before the Civil tribunal, exactly by the same process as any other person overholding property to which they had lost the title. The writer was present in the Irish Court of Queen's Bench when this was enunciated as the unquestioned law of the land, with the unanimous assent of the members of that court. The sole question of difficulty in the case is at whose suit the process should be initiated. If there are trustees to the disputed property, it is plain the proceedings should be taken by them. If there are no trustees it seems to me the suit should be instituted by the clergyman appointed to replace the one who is overholding; inasmuch as he is the one directly and immediately aggrieved, and also the one who claims what precisely is in dispute, viz., the possession of the property.

Fourthly—Mixed Marriages.—As the writer in his painful and protracted experience of Mixed Marriages has never been able to find any expedient so effective in preventing them as the public denunciation of such marriages before they are contracted, he feels that perhaps a few words on the civil right so to denounce them, may be of interest to others in a position similar to his own. They shall be but few. As an essential preliminary to its legality, every marriage before the Civil Registrar, and every Mixed Marriage in a Protestant church, must be preceded by an official notice of such intended marriage to the clergyman of the church the Catholic party usually frequented. Now this official notice to the clergyman was only recently substituted, by Act of Parliament, for a notice to the local Board of Guardians previously obligatory in all such cases. The sole and only object the Legislature had in view in prescribing one notice or the other was the same, and that was to secure before the Marriage such publicity as would be secured by

the usual publication of Banns, for which in fact this mode of publication is but a substitute. It will be, therefore, obvious that a clergyman is not merely within his legal rights, but is acting in full accordance with the object and intention of the Civil Law, by giving complete publicity in the most effectual form he can, to all and each of the particulars specified in the official notification, including the names and addresses of both contracting parties. I have no hesitation in adding that a clergyman is acting fully within his legal rights by supplementing this publication by a declaration of the law and discipline of the Church inflicting the penalty of excommunication on Catholics who thus offend against her laws. I am confirmed in this conviction by the fact, of which I was personally cognizant, that by the direction and authority of the late Cardinal Cullen, this was uniformly done in his Cathedral in Dublin. It must always however be borne in mind that the law recognises no claim, privilege, or authority, in reference to those who do not belong to the clergyman's fold. The priest would act more securely in announcing the excommunication, if he abstained, as he ought to do, from referring it to either of those whose names he has just announced from the official notice.

Fifthly—Sick Calls.—Fortunately for the great majority of the missionary clergy in Ireland the question of their legal right to free and unimpeded access to the members of their flocks, whenever their ministry is needed by them, is one of little practical importance. To those, however, who have largely to deal with families of mixed religions, as has been the lot of the writer, a few observations on the subject may perhaps be of some interest.

It is an undoubted principle of the Civil Law, that every citizen who professes a religion which the law tolerates, has not merely a civil right to practise his religion and comply with its observances at all reasonable times, but also has the further right that no one shall unreasonably impede or obstruct him in the exercise of his right. Any one who so impedes or obstructs will be held responsible before the civil tribunal, for acting in contravention to the law; and on appeal to its authority may, and will be, compelled to desist. Hence,

to take the example most likely in practise to arise, if, through ignorance or prejudice on the part of some member of a family of mixed religions, an effort is made to prevent the free access of a Pastor, to a member of his flock who is seriously ill and needs his ministry, then such Pastor is entirely within his legal right, in having recourse to every means in itself lawful, to force an entrance with or without the consent of the non-Catholic members of the household. The ordinary and more discreet course would be to make application to the nearest magistrate, on whose written order the police would be bound to assist him in effecting an entrance to his parishioner.

This principle of law has undoubted application to all who are, beyond doubt or question, of his flock and religion, and in need of his ministration, quite irrespective of the age of the invalid or of their relations with or to the party who attempts to obstruct. The only exception to this rule would be boys under fourteen and girls under sixteen, in cases where the non-Catholic parents or responsible guardians have not forfeited the right which they certainly possess, to guide and control their religious opinions and practices, up to the specified ages respectively. It is well to remember that, as already explained in a former communication, this forfeiture may be either by "Waiver" or by the fact that the children had already acquired such fixed religious conviction and principles as may not be disturbed without danger to their spiritual interests. But as the parents' right is always presumed, the onus of proving the forfeiture will always rest with the pastor who seeks access to the children.

Sixthly—Wills.—In connection with the matter we have been discussing it may be useful to recall one or two well established principles of Civil Law bearing on the subject of Wills.

The first is, that a Will, whether of a father or of a mother, which deals exclusively with the appointment of testamentary guardians, and which in no way disposes of property, real or personal, does not require to be "proved" unless disputed by one having an interest in the case; and is operative immediately on the death of the Testator.

Secondly, in consequence of a recent change of the law, if the property disposed of by a Will is within a value or amount limited and specified in the act, then probate of such Will may now be obtained without any recourse to a civil tribunal, and without the employment of any officer or functionary of law by the simple and inexpensive expedient of writing to the officer of Excise, by whom, on payment of a merely nominal charge, probate or administration will be issued.

Such are the few and somewhat crude thoughts that have presented themselves to the writer on a subject of much importance, great complexity, and of some novelty. Needless to say that no authority is either claimed or desired for them, save in so far as they may approve themselves to the more matured judgment of those who may possibly have had wider experience and larger opportunities of becoming conversant with a very intricate subject.

P. CANON O'NEILL.

THE ROSMINIAN PHILOSOPHY.

DR. CAMPBELL has thought fit to make a statement of the grounds on which he had based his grave charge of Pantheism against the doctrines of Rosmini. Those who have followed the controversy in Italy will, I think, readily allow that he has made a fair exposé of the case for the plaintiff. But the lovers of fair play in this country, who now for the first time have heard the serious accusations, have a right to learn also how the charge has hitherto been successfully repelled, and why the defendant gained his case after four years' examination before the authoritative tribunal of Rome, where his works were formally acquitted of all the charges made against them, including that of Pantheism. It must be said in justice to Dr. Campbell, that his second paper in the ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD for March, 1887, re-affirming the assertions of the first has at least this merit, that it gives the defenders of Rosmini's doctrine a chance of making a specific

reply to a specific charge. Now, at least, we know what are the foundations on which his accusations are built up, and how the charge is made out. As we expected, the arguments are a reproduction of those, adduced and repeated, over and over again by Rosmini's opponents in Italy, and as often triumphantly refuted by a host of eminent Rosminian writers, among the foremost of whom we find Monsignor Ferré, Bishop of Casale, who defended Rosmini in eleven octavo volumes. As far as I myself am concerned it gives me no little satisfaction as a humble follower of Rosmini, to expose the too common method of attack in use among his opponents, who, in their strange anxiety to convict him of Pantheism, attribute to Rosmini doctrines, for which there is not a tittle of evidence in his writings. This may be inferred at least from their acquittal by the Holy See, as well as from the official report concerning them made in 1854 to the Sacred Congregation in which it is declared that the charges hitherto brought against this illustrious author are calumnious. But the readers of the ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD shall have evidence of another kind. For my part I gladly hail the occasion now offered to meet the specific charges brought forward by Dr. Campbell. For I think it just that those who have read the accusation should see how the accused is defended. I wish however to state, that my scope in replying to Dr. Campbell is not to open a controversy upon the *merits* of Rosmini's philosophy, for I see no advantage to science from disputing about a question which during the past fifty years has been thoroughly thrashed out. But my sole purpose is to make it clear from original sources what Rosmini actually teaches, and what he does not. For on no account can we accept as his the principles which Dr. Campbell so confidently tells the world "all true Rosminians hold with Rosmini." *We hold just the contrary of those principles*, as I am about to show. So that if I can establish that the two fundamental propositions upon which the charge brought against Rosmini is based, are not his, then the charge of itself falls to the ground. This, then, is what I propose to do.

The two propositions on which the principal opponents of Rosmini, under the shadow of whose authority Dr. Campbell

thinks he may safely cover himself, base their charge of Pantheism, are these:—

1st Proposition. “The Rosminian *ens* is God under the formal concept of *being*, a thing no true Rosminian denies.”

2nd Proposition. “This *ens* is the *intrinsic* and formal *esse* of contingent things, as all true Rosminians hold with Rosmini.” “This,” concludes Dr. Campbell, “is Pantheism.” Can it be possible? A thing no true Rosminian denies! Pray let me ask on what Rosminian authority, chapter and verse please, does Dr. Campbell make this truly astounding assertion? As a Rosminian myself, let me assure him, that no true Rosminian would ever dream of entertaining for one moment two such absurd propositions as the above, which are the exact *contrary* of the doctrine we hold. And I challenge Dr. Campbell to quote me any single Rosminian writer (and their works already fill a small sized library), who has ever taken either of those propositions into consideration, except to combat the same. Has the philosopher of Mount St. Bernard’s been napping all these years not to know, that true Rosminians have been multiplying pamphlets and books for years to demonstrate two distinctly contrary propositions, which might be formulated thus—1st, “The Rosminian *esse* or the concept of *being* is *not* God”—2nd, “This *esse* though formal is *not* an *intrinsic* element of contingent things,”—and yet Dr. Campbell coolly tells the Catholic public that “all true Rosminians hold with Rosmini”—the very contrary of what they here teach. But let us go to the fountain-head and see what Rosmini *does* teach, for I do not ask Dr. Campbell to take my authority for what I have stated.

To deal then with the first proposition attributed to Rosmini and his followers:—“The Rosminian *ens* is God under the formal concept of *being*.” Now the philosopher of Rovereto considers *esse* or *being* under a two-fold relation, viz., in relation to the human mind which it illumines, whence it is called *ideal being*, and in relation to finite things which it sustains,—whence it is called *initial being*; but for Rosmini it is the same *esse* considered from two different points of view.

Now as regards *ideal being*, the essential object of the human mind, Rosmini shows, that since it exists *not* under the

real and *subsistent*, but solely under the *ideal* or *objective* form of being, which is quite different from the *real*, it cannot possibly be God, who is essentially *real* and *subsistent*. These are his own words. "It cannot be said without inaccuracy, that we see God in the present life (natural order), because God is not merely ideal (objective), but inseparably Real-ideal (Real-objective)," (*Rinor.* c. 42). To explain this he devotes an entire chapter under the following title, "Being *per se* manifest, such as it is communicated to man, is *not* God" (*Theosoph.*, vol. iv., c. 6). And to prove that it is *not* God, he wrote his book entitled *Gioberti e il Panteismo*. Again he repeats the same doctrine: "If we take the same concept of *being* apart from creatures and from God, viz., *indeterminate being* such as, according to us, is the object of natural intuition, this is *not* God . . . but if to this *being* be added its own determinations belonging to it, then it has all that is required to be God . . . Wherefore we call *indeterminate being* divine, although we cannot call it God except when it is determined" (*Theosoph.*, *Essere* Trino n. 848). One more quotation on this point. "The idea, he says, is not the *Word*, for the latter only is *Subsistence*, while the former is *being*, with the Personality hidden, nothing being manifest but the *indeterminate* and *impersonal objectivity*. When the mind intues the *idea* neither the personality nor the subsistence of being is perceived, and so it does *not* see God, but whosoever sees the *Word*, although but as through a glass and indistinctly, sees God" (*Introd.* n. 8. See also *The Origin of Ideas*, n. 1033.)

Of *being* considered as *initial* in so far as from it the creature depends for its *esse* or *existence*, Rosmini again declares that it is not God, and he gives the reason which further explains what has been said above. "This *initial being*," says he, "seen by the *Absolute Subjective Being* (God) in *Absolute Objective Being* (the Divine Word), could not be this same *Absolute Object*, since it is an *abstraction*. The abstraction is a mental concept, a term which the mind has given to itself by the *limitation* it puts to its own glance, but it has no existence of itself, but only *in* the mind and *by* the mind . . . *Absolute Objective Being* (the Word) on the contrary,

is Being of itself" (*Theosoph.*, vol. i., n. 461). Thus Rosmini like St. Augustine and St. Thomas, while fully admitting the divine character of *esse communissimum* or *being*, teaches that it is a *divine abstraction*, in which abstract and purely objective form, considered by God apart from His reality or subsistence, it constitutes the *esse communissimum* or being which is united to the creature and sustains it. This, however, is clearly *not* God, although, since it is manifestly divine, it is called a divine appurtenance, as God's *abstraction* certainly is.

Lest, however, Dr. Campbell should fancy he can convict Rosmini of Pantheism on the admission that the *esse* of which we are here speaking is *necessary, divine and infinite* (for Rosmini admits all this), I would have him bear in mind, that this same *esse*, as the object of the mind, is called by St. Bonaventure "*lumen veritatis aeternae*" (*Itiner. ment. in Deum*, cap. v.), for St. Augustine had already written, "*Mens ipsa, nulla interposita substantia, ab ipsa veritate formatur*" (In lib. 83. q. 4.) And St. Thomas, who teaches that the object of the mind is *being*, calls this object "*lux increata*" (*De Verit.* q. 18), and speaking of *ideas* says that they are *eternal*—"Ipsae formatae non sunt ac per hoc aeternae (I. P., q. 15, a. 2)." He also writes: "*Lumen naturale rationis participatio quaedam est divini luminis*" (I. q. 12, n. 2, ad 3^m). But for Rosmini as for St. Thomas, all these terms, viz., the *light of reason*, the *object* and *form* of the mind, the *idea*, *truth*, and *esse communissimum* are one and the same thing. Whence it is seen that the divine character of *being* is no new notion of Rosmini's. From all this we gather that it is *not true* that Rosmini with his followers is ready to admit that the *esse* or formal concept of *being* is God. As we have seen he teaches just the contrary. It remains to be shown that the second proposition brought forward by Dr. Campbell is as opposed to Rosmini's express teaching as the first.

The second proposition attributed by Dr. Campbell to Rosmini runs thus: "This *ens* is the *intrinsic* and formal *esse* of contingent things, as all true Rosminians hold with Rosmini." Now this proposition is a monstrous absurdity, and, as Rosmini himself shows, is the very incarnation of Pantheism. For, holding as we do the Divine nature of *esse*

or being, it requires no great intelligence to see, that the identity between *being*, and the contingent creature would involve pantheism. Hence, combating this doctrine, he writes: "That the opinion of Suarez cannot be upheld, which teaches that *esse* is not distinct by nature from the inferior entities in which it is" (*Gioberti e il Panteismo*). Rosmini then insists with St. Thomas that *esse* is not *intrinsic* to the creature, that is to say it is not *identical* with it. He holds in fact that in the creature are to be found united two distinct elements, the one *intrinsic*, the other *extrinsic*, namely, *finite reality* or the creature, and *being* from which the reality depends for its existence, whence it is said to *have* being. The *finite reality* is indeed created out of nothing, and creation consists precisely in giving this reality *being*, which, however, remains essentially distinct from it. And the reason is, because *being* or *esse* is not only purely objective or mental, while the creature is a *reality*, but it is essentially divine and *infinite*, and the *infinite* cannot be identified with the *finite*. The finite reality in fact is essentially *contingent*, and carries with it no necessity, whereas *being* itself cannot be conceived as non-existing, since its very nature and essence is *to be*. Besides, *being* is common to all finite creatures, whence it is called *esse communissimum*; but precisely because it is *common* to all it cannot be identified with any one creature, although no individual creature can possibly exist without it.

The union therefore between these two elements is not one of *identity*, but of *relation*. Such is the doctrine to be found in a hundred places in Rosmini's *Theosophy*, as also in St. Thomas, who teaches that "no form or created nature is its own *esse* or *being*," "Nulla forma vel natura creata est suum esse" (*De Pot.*, ii., i.).

It remains for me to identify this doctrine with that of the Roveretan philosopher. "In the *finite being*," says Rosmini, "*esse* is not identified with the single forms as is the case with the Infinite Being (God); hence as regards *finite being*, the subject is *never* being, but only a form of it, so that while we predicate of *being* that it *is*, we predicate of the *finite being* (the subject), that it *has*." (*Theosoph.*, vol. i., n. 732.) Let me make another quotation. "*Being*," says he, "does not constitute

the nature of the *finite reality*; this nature consists in the *reality* alone, which is *not* being, but a form of being, yet a form which would not be but for *esse*. And this distinction is not merely the work of the human mind, it is founded in the nature of the things of which we are speaking; for *being* and *finite realities*, as we have seen, have contradictory characters, so that they *cannot be identified*, although the *finite realities* are so dependent from *being*, that without it they would not exist." (*Theosoph.* vol. 1, n. 837.)

But I am aware that Dr. Campbell, and the School to which he belongs is persuaded that being *is* intrinsic to the creature, so as to be identical with it, and no doubt he thinks that Rosmini and his school ought to be of one mind with himself on this matter. Indeed he is willing, as we have seen, to *suppose* that we actually *are* at one with him on this point. Without this supposition in fact it is impossible for him to draw his fatal conclusion. What a pity to undeceive him, and thus to deprive him of his *minor* as well as of his *major*! And yet we really cannot oblige Dr. Campbell in this matter. He is welcome to hold that *being is intrinsic* to the creature, and identical with it, but, as regards ourselves, with St. Thomas we utterly repudiate the proposition. We repeat with the Angelic Doctor: "*nulla forma vel natura creata est suum esse*" *loc. cit.* and again *c. Gentes* l. ii., c. 52 where he speaks of the "*Compositio ex substantia et esse, ex quod est et quo est.*"

And, indeed, from the doctrine of the school to which Dr. Campbell belongs, with reference to this most important point, it is not difficult to understand the origin of their charge against Rosmini. For taking it for *granted*, as they do, that *esse is* intrinsic to the creature, and one thing with it, it goes without saying, that Rosminianism is infected with Pantheism. We should be the first to admit it. But as we have seen from Rosmini's own showing, the *finite reality* of the creature, for reasons given above, cannot possibly be identified with *esse*, which is *not a reality* or *substance* but is purely *objective being*, whence it is called *ideal*. In any case the Rosminian school holds that *esse is not* intrinsic to the creature. This is not fair on the part of our opponents. If

they are willing to judge from a part of Rosmini's doctrines, his admission that *esse* is *divine*, they must also take with this the rest, namely, his teaching that *esse* is *extrinsic* to the creature, and distinct from it. But this they will not do, hence their unfair conclusions. But if the followers of Rosmini were to argue in the same way they would have to accuse Dr. Campbell and his friends of the very Pantheism which he thinks he is attacking. For starting from Rosminian principles, that *esse* or *being* is *divine* and *infinite*, inasmuch as it is an appurtenance of God, it follows that those who *identify* this *esse* with the creature, as Dr. Campbell's school certainly does, are themselves holding Pantheistic doctrines. This goes to show that it will not do to judge of another's doctrine by one's own principles when these have not been demonstrated with certainty to be true.

What, then, are the conclusions to be gathered from the facts I have established? 1st—That it is *not true* that “the Rosminian *ens* is God under the formal concept of being,” and it is *not true* “that no Rosminian denies this.” 2nd—That it is *not true* that “this *ens* is the *intrinsic* and formal *esse* of contingent things,” and it is *not true* that “all Rosminians hold this with Rosmini.” 3rd—That the premises not being Rosmini's, the consequence drawn therefrom does not affect his doctrines. As regards the authors from whom Dr. Campbell has gathered, as he admits, his two fundamental principles attributed to Rosmini and his disciples, I leave it to the lovers of fair play to judge whether they have not misrepresented in their compendiums the genuine teaching of the illustrious Italian philosopher. I am willing to believe that Dr. Campbell has been misled. Certainly he must be congratulated on not having quoted those now famous words of Card. Zigliara, where in his *Propedeutica*, his Eminence refers his readers to places of the *Theosophy*, where he says, that Rosmini “*apertis verbis*, teaches, that *esse* is properly an *intrinsic* element of contingent things.” For on turning to the places referred to, what is the student's utter amazement to find Rosmini on the contrary saying that it *cannot be said*, that *esse* is properly an *intrinsic* element of contingent

things. The little word *not* has been dropped from the quotation, that is all. And so Rosmini is made to say, *apertis verbis*, precisely the contrary to what he has written. This, it will be said, must be attributed to an oversight. But it is an oversight upon which unfortunately the eminent author bases his charge against Rosmini. It is an oversight which students of the *Propedeutica* never thought of verifying for themselves, and which is recognised only after incalculable injury has been done to Rosmini by the false quotation.

With regard to the passages quoted from Rosmini by Dr. Campbell, and the objections raised by him, these latter are for the most part a reproduction of old objections already answered a hundred times over. In most of these Dr. Campbell takes for granted one or other of the two principles he has sought to father upon Rosmini, while he constantly confounds the *purely ideal* with the *real* form of being. So long as our opponents refuse to recognise this most important distinction between these two *forms* of *being* they will never understand Rosmini; while the taking these as equivalent involves consequences the most serious, for which neither Rosmini nor his school can be answerable. This is precisely the error Dr. Campbell falls into in criticising Bishop Ferré's words. There is, however, one quotation which he makes from Rosmini, which, taken apart from the context, is most misleading, and as Dr. Campbell has interpreted the words in question in his own way without telling his readers how Rosmini a few lines above utterly cuts away the possibility of the inferences which he seeks to draw from the quotation, I must supply what Dr. Campbell has omitted. The quotation is the following:—"The finite reality is not, but He (God) makes it *be* by joining to THE INFINITE REALITY the limitation."—*Theos.*, vol. i. p. 658. Now these words as can be verified from the text, for which I see Dr. Campbell has given a wrong quotation, are indeed Rosmini's, and Dr. Campbell's interpretation of them is undeniably Pantheistic. But this interpretation is altogether contrary to the sense in which Rosmini uses them. This may be clearly seen by perusing pp. 656-712 of the first volume

of the *Theosophy*, where an entire chapter is devoted to the doctrine of Limits; as also pp. 399-456, containing a description of the Creation. From these pages it plainly appears that the infinite reality of which Rosmini here speaks is the infinite reality *not* in its own *absolute subsistence*, but in so far as it is a *mental concept* or *cognition* of the Divine mind; that is to say, in so far as it is known, and not as it is in itself. Speaking of THE INFINITE REALITY in itself, Rosmini himself says:—"The absolute reality in itself existent—*refuses every limitation.*"—*Theos.*, vol. i. p. 157. And again: "The absolute being known to man by means of reflection—*admits of no limit whatever.*"—*Ib.* p. 665. And once more:—"Every finite being differs infinitely from the infinite. Wherefore the finite cannot be found by *diminishing the infinite.*"—*Ib.* p. 693. From these passages it is quite plain that Rosmini does not teach that the infinite reality of God becomes the finite reality of creatures by the addition of limits. I think on this point also I have a right to complain of carelessness on the part of Dr. Campbell in verifying Rosmini's meaning, especially as he is bringing forward such serious charges against a Christian philosopher. Rosmini himself had to complain of the like injustice, when in 1845 he published the *Theodicea*, in the preface to which he declares solemnly that up till that time in no book of his adversaries was there to be found an exposition of his own doctrine. And what Rosmini said then of his opponents is too generally true even now.

Dr. Campbell tries to make out that Rosmini does not mean what he says, when he teaches that finite things are outside God; and he attempts to shew this by an example which has no analogy whatever with the case. I am satisfied that he will persuade no unprejudiced reader to believe what he has been endeavouring to prove on this point. He who would prove too much proves nothing. For the rest, what has already been said in this paper is more than is required to shew that Rosmini *does* mean what he says, when he teaches that the finite reality is essentially outside God. I suppose however, Dr. Campbell will be prepared to admit that the *exemplar* in which God knows the creature, is in the mind of

God. Concluding what he has to say about Pantheism, Dr. Campbell writes "This is sufficient regarding my first *assertion* that for Rosmini all being is one." The italics are mine. Considering how unwarranted his *many assertions* have proved to be, I certainly agree with him, that he has said sufficient.

With regard to the objections against Rosmini's doctrines on the human soul, for the sake of brevity I will only remark that Dr. Campbell draws three conclusions from premises not Rosmini's. The presumption contained in his premises is, that the animal soul posits the human soul; this is not Rosmini's doctrine, and there is no warrant for it in the quotation given.

According to Rosmini the human soul is one, simple, identical living principle, which substantially feels and understands. If Dr. Campbell studies the *Psychology* he will see what Rosmini actually teaches, and he will there find all his objections amply examined and disposed of. He will find also that he has not been fair in judging the Psychological doctrines of Rosmini.

With reference to the decree of the Sacred Congregation of the Index, to which Dr. Campbell triumphantly appeals as the very opposite of a former decree, I fail to see why the latter is to be regarded as an *authoritative* decree, and not the former. His distinction is simply gratuitous and "*quod gratis asseritur gratis negatur.*" Still if such distinctions *are* to be made, Rosminians have a much better claim to assert that the former decree, which has reference to a *particular case* and which declares that it is not lawful after so "extraordinary an examination," for private doctors to censure theologically *Rosmini's doctrines*, is indeed an *authoritative* decree, while the latter decree is *general*, and does not touch this particular and special case. Thus the tables are turned on Dr. Campbell's argument!

As regards the first part of the Decree it does not touch the case, and no inference can be drawn from it contrary to our contention. The Sacred Congregation is not dogmatically *infallible*, and so in declaring that works examined and acquitted by it may still contain errors contrary to Faith and Morals, it simply asserts its own incompetence to pronounce an

infallible judgment, which belongs only to the prerogative of the supreme Pontiff. But while the Congregation rightly declares that such works may possibly contain errors of this kind, theoretically speaking, this by no means implies that they actually do. On the contrary, their solemn acquittal by this tribunal is an *authoritative* judgment, as far as its own competence goes, that, after a full and thorough examination, it has found no theological error against Faith and Morals, and that therefore the faithful are free to hold the doctrines they contain. Hence the temerity of unauthorised private doctors in presuming to stultify its solemn judgment. This is our contention, nothing more, and I am sure it is one most respectful to the Sacred Congregation of the Index. As regards the assertion that the volumes now attacked have never been thus examined, and that therefore we have no guarantee that these at least would not be found to contain Pantheism, anyone who has read Rosmini's *New Essay on the Origin of Ideas*, as well as those other works that were examined and acquitted knows that they contain all the principles of the *Theosophy*. And in fact among the original accusations brought against Rosmini's doctrines and pronounced by Rome to be groundless, was that of Pantheism. This may be seen from Fr. Trullet's official report to the Sacred Congregation of the Index in which he distinctly states that this charge is calumnious.

And now I have done; my object is accomplished. As I stated in the beginning, my purpose is not to open a controversy as to the *merits* of Rosmini's doctrines, but I have come forward to refute unfair accusations brought against them, by stating clearly what Rosmini teaches and what he does not. Having vindicated the truth, I have nothing more to say on the subject. Dr. Campbell tells us he has said his last word. He has now my last word which closes this discussion in the ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

STEPHEN EYRE JARVIS.

[This subject has been treated with great fulness in the I. E. RECORD. The distinguished writers for and against the Rosminian Philosophy have declared that they have said their last word on the controversy. We thank them cordially for their learned papers, and now close our pages to any further discussion on this topic.—ED. I. E. R.]

THE "LEAKAGE" IN THE CHURCH IN GREAT BRITAIN.

"Olim unus suffecit perducendis ad frugem pluribus oppidis et urbibus; nunc plures nec reducendo uni pago sufficiunt. In promptu causa est; multum declamant sed parum et tepide orant; hinc mores non emendant." "Hostis, dum oras, premitur; dum cessas, erigitur."—*St. J. Chrysost.*

ONE of the most appalling facts that the public have been invited to contemplate during the past few months is the prodigious loss sustained by the Church in her children. In England and Scotland, at all events, it has been shown beyond a doubt that the loss to the faith by neglect, indifference, and general apathy, is simply immense. It often even outnumbers the gain. So that, in many parts of Great Britain it becomes exceedingly difficult to say whether religion is really advancing or not.

Much has been said and written on the subject.¹ Great earnestness and considerable ability have been displayed in the attempts to get to the root of the evil. A multitude of causes, all of which bear more or less directly upon it have been pointed out and considered. Yet none seem sufficient to account for the magnitude of the evil, or to suggest any adequate remedy. Indeed all seem ready to admit that an adequate remedy has not yet been discovered.

The question may be stated thus:—How are we priests, living among a vast and most heterogeneous population, to regain such an influence over the poor Catholics constantly breathing the atmosphere of sin, as to secure their perseverance in the faith? How can we hinder the rising generation from being drawn off into some one or other of the thousand bye-ways of error that lie open before them? Various, not to say ingenious, have been the suggestions made. Some advocate an increase in the number of innocent amusements; others, a stricter supervision; others, again, a healthier neighbourhood and environment. One declares that the people should be visited more frequently; another that good books and tracts should be showered more liberally upon

¹ See the recent issues of *Dublin Review*, *The Month*, *The Tablet*, &c.

them; and that they should be more cared for and watched over. All these and many other means which have been suggested by zealous and most worthy men, will doubtlessly contribute something towards the solution of the difficulty: yet all these appear to us to be but mere trifles, incapable of effecting any serious or radical change in the state of affairs. They leave the essence and root of the difficulty untouched.

To our mind it is like proposing to spread out more sails on a sea-becalmed ship. Idly the vessel rises and falls with the regular swell of the ocean; but she does not progress. No advance is made. Days pass away, and she remains in the same spot. Then the officers meet. They consider the difficulty. They lament and complain, and begin to discuss various resolutions. One officer suggests yet more canvass. "Set sky-sails above the top-sails, and moon-sails above sky-sails," he says. Another proposes cleaning the keel and scraping the sides of the vessel below the water line, for he urges, "it will diminish friction." Then the third mate stands up and proposes to lighten the ship a little by throwing out superfluous ballast, "since it must be the water-displacement that is too great." And so they continue to hint at various courses and plans to be followed. All their suggestions are good in themselves. All tend in the right direction, but none of them are really adequate or efficacious, so that while they have spoken much they have moved little. What they really want, of course, is the co-operation of that great force which would at once make all their measures effective, but without which their best efforts will remain unavailing. What they want is—THE WIND. The steady pressure of a strong breeze would stretch every sheet, and turn to account every additional yard of canvass: the bright burnished sides of the vessel, now free from rust and clinging sea-weed would dart like a copper gurnet through the water; the ejection of the superfluous ballast would cause the bows to rise easily in the water and the ship to skim like a duck over each succeeding wave. Under the influence of the breath of heaven decided and marked progress would at once be made.

Now, may not we well compare with the anxious sailors

on their motionless sea-begirt ship? Our failure, we suspect, in dealing with the very serious question before us, is due to the want of the breath of heaven—the co-operation of God's inspiriting grace. We are far too much given to trust to human methods and contrivances, and plans of all kinds; and to our personal efforts, whether alone or in combination; and to money collected and spent, to outlays made, and trouble taken, and seem (to some extent at least) to forget in practice that "*nisi Dominus ædificaverit domum . . . et nisi Dominus custodierit civitatem,*" and the rest. At all events this is so true in the writer's case that it is not wholly impossible that it may be true in the case even of others. We do not mean to imply that God's co-operation is ignored, much less that it is disdained, but merely that it is not perhaps always made enough of. It is only a question of degree. Is it not possible that some of us do not sufficiently recognise that in it alone we must seek the real "*causa efficiens*" of any and every spiritual good that has to be accomplished? The result is that like St. Peter, though we fish all the night we catch nothing. It is not that we do not exert ourselves; it is not that we fail to throw our net with precision and dexterity, but simply because we do not make enough of the presence of the Great Master standing on the shore.

Let us try to trace the genesis of the appalling evil which confronts us and seems to demand the serious study of every man who has a soul to save and an eternity to win. Speaking generally—because we cannot now take into consideration exceptions and special cases—the irreligion, immorality, insubordination, general lawlessness, and low spiritual condition of the children is owing to the indifference, carelessness and want of practical faith among the parents. If the parents were what they ought to be, the children would also be in a better state and more amenable to discipline. But let us follow up the concatenation of causes and effects a step further. Why are the parents not more interested in the spiritual welfare of their children, and more careful in bringing them up in the ways of virtue? Well; if an opinion may be hazarded without giving offence, I would be inclined to attribute the fault chiefly to ourselves, to us priests. It

is not precisely because we do not exert ourselves enough, but because we do not sufficiently call into play the more directly supernatural means at our disposal. We may offer prizes and multiply awards for good conduct; we may invent new forms of amusement and recreation; we may establish boy clubs and girl guilds: and tea-parties and variety entertainments may be given in abundance. Or we may exhort and entreat, or scold and threaten, or visit and invite, but all this is but spreading out fresh canvas on the yard-arms of the becalmed ship—merely burnishing its copper sides and lightening its cargo. It is the powerful wind of heaven that we lack and which can alone give success to our efforts, and set the various engines we have devised in motion.

The conversion, christianizing and saving of the hosts of irreligious children in our dismal towns is not only a stupendous work but it is such an essentially supernatural work, that it does seem marvellous that we do not have a more direct and systematic recourse to supernatural aids to secure success. Yet, as a matter of fact, many of us seem to do precious little more to reclaim the myriad of children playing around the brink of hell, than the agents of any philanthropical society might do. That is to say, we make considerable use of natural means, but do nothing *commensurate with the gravity of the case* to secure a more liberal measure of the only assistance that can be in any sense efficacious, *i.e.*, the assistance of divine grace. We have not the excuse of sailors on a becalmed ship, who may whistle for the wind and yet whistle to no purpose. On the contrary every wind of heaven is at our service. We are given the control of them by Him who has said "*omnia quæcumque orantes petitis, credite quia accipietis, et evenient vobis.*"

An hour spent at the feet of Christ present on our altars in the Blessed Sacrament would do more to help us to reclaim our wandering sheep than many hours trudging along the narrow streets and dirty alleys of London, Liverpool, Manchester, or Birmingham, Glasgow, or Edinburgh; for the simple reason that it is grace that converts, touches hearts, kindles love, and awakens sorrow, and not words or phrases, nor promises nor threats. This of course is

so obvious that it merely needs stating, yet in practice is there not some danger of being guided rather by reason, than by such undoubted principles of faith? We do not wish to appear to cast any reflections on our brethren, far less to play the critic; but merely to get to the bottom of a very vital and momentous question, upon which the eternal salvation of souls may be hanging. Indeed we most cordially invite our brother priests to help us in this attempt, and to second our efforts in every way, and if we be wrong in our opinion, we shall be the first to welcome any correction and to show gratitude for further light, since we are fully conscious that we are led by a feeble and uncertain glimmer when following our own judgment. Yet, even should we be thought "censorious," or "impertinent," or "meddling," when attempting to discuss a vital question, we can bear that too, if only we may make the truth a little clearer. It is no time to be over sensitive to harsh words and accusations, when the fate of immortal souls may be quivering in the balance.

Let us then say openly that we suspect that sufficient recourse is not made to prayer. How many hours do we pass on our knees before Him who possesses all power over the hearts of men, and can communicate such power as He pleases, and when He pleases, and to whomsoever He pleases? How many priests, beginning with ourselves, can exclaim, "*nos vero orationi instantes?*" Is it because we are too avaricious of our time? Can it be that we are too much given up to gaiety and amusements? By no means. No! This certainly cannot be said. Many of our body are the most zealous and self-denying men in Christendom. Men who spend themselves and are spent in the service of the Church. Men who devote long hours to house to house visitation; to seeing after schools; building and decorating churches, and to the careful discharge of other duties far more arduous than seeking for help, strength and wisdom before the tabernacle. Why then is it? Presumably because we do not take sufficient account of the wholly incalculable part that grace plays in every divine work. It would seem that now at least, after so many brave, though not very successful efforts, we ought to arouse ourselves to a truer sense of the

paramount importance of God's grace, and the pressing necessity of struggling yet more persistently to secure a larger share of it. Are we right in our view? If not, we must ask the patient reader to express some other, as freely and as openly as we have expressed ours. No shadow of offence is intended, and we trust none will be given. But we admit that the necessity of more urgent appeals to the throne of grace is the lesson which the results of all the most recent and best intentioned efforts teach us. If, then, we are so much concerned about the loss of so many waifs and strays, why do we not besiege the throne of God by prayer? Why do we not, without relaxing our efforts in other directions, storm the citadel of grace, and knock at heaven's gate so long and so loud, as to force, as it were, a speedy answer? Surely we have precedent enough for this. Where is the saint, be he king or prophet, priest or bishop, who did not spend many hours every day in supplication? The busiest as well as the most leisured felt the necessity. Indeed the more one's duties accumulate the more urgent grows the necessity of securing that divine co-operation which lightens efforts while it multiplies results. One word from Christ filled St. Peter's net: surely, then, it will not be time ill-spent if we devote a more appreciable fraction of the day in urging our Lord to speak—just one short word for us. He will surely do so, if we will only prove, by our importunity, how earnestly we desire it. Our very importunity will at last prevail, and prayer will undoubtedly prove again, what it has so often proved already a remedy as simple as it is efficacious. If we cannot induce the faithful to join us, might not we at least apply ourselves a little more generously and a little more assiduously to this "*exercitium praeceptum vitae Sacerdotalis*?" We merely throw this out as a suggestion—as one suggestion more indeed to those already made by others far older and wiser than ourselves—and that is all.

To prayer might we not add penance and mortification, increasing it in proportion to our earnestness and strength. There are a thousand forms of penance of a disciplinary character, which even the most delicate amongst us might easily practise if we were really animated by the *spirit* of

penance; yet this spirit is perhaps as foreign to some among our brethren as we know it to be foreign to ourselves. Yet, we are persuaded (rightly or wrongly) that such means are more powerful than much labouring and toiling. In fact that evil now lifts up its head and stalks abroad, because this is no longer the favourite way of combating it. We are naturally inclined to prefer,—and who is not?—mere philanthropic schemes, and new-fangled methods to the means practised by the saints and laid down by the Gospel. Anything approaching prolonged prayer and personal penance is becoming just a trifle antiquated. It smacks of a bye-gone age. The nineteenth century has grown quite out of sympathy with such things. Yet some devils are not cast out but by prayer and fasting: and the devil that is now disporting himself in our mews and alleys and in the nooks and corners of our fog-crowned cities, and that blasphemes in our boys and curses in our girls, and sins in innumerable youths of both sexes, is, if we mistake not, one of these. Yet, we do not feel drawn to adopt such drastic measures. In sooth, we would have little of human nature left if we did. We much prefer to persuade ourselves that our want of success in combating the ghastly evil is owing to causes which are in reality only aggravating. No, we won't allow that we have very much to do with it. We put it alldown to bad drains, or over-crowding, or want of ventilation—to the proximity of the pig-sty or the foulness of the dust-heap—to poverty, or dirt, or drink, or hereditary taint—to anything in a word, that may shift the fearful burthen from our own shoulders. Yet, however, much such conditions may increase the difficulty and aggravate the disorder, may not the chief cause of our failure be after all our want of the spirit of prayer and the spirit of mortification? Or shall we say that these disorders have now grown beyond the power and skill even of the great Physician of souls, and that sin has tied His hands so that He cannot aid? Rather let us each cry with Samuel "*absit autem a me hoc peccatum in Domino, ut cessem orare pro eis*" or with Our Lord himself "*Pater sancte, serva eos . . . quos dedisti mihi.*"

Even the apostles themselves found that they were unable to cast out certain devils, and on one occasion, we are told by

St. Matthew, they complained to our Lord of their impotency, as many of us are complaining now, and asked just as we might "Why can not we cast them out?" and our Lord answers:—"this kind is not cast out but by prayer and fasting." (Matt. xvii.) Now the question which we have been raising is, whether the particular variety of devil that is causing so much defection from the Church among the masses of our beloved poor in the huge centres of commerce, be such as our Lord spoke of or not. The importance of the the question cannot be over-estimated. Yet we do not take upon ourselves to answer, but merely to ventilate it. Let some one better able decide the point, for a solution is imperatively necessary.

JOHN S. VAUGHAN.

THE ALPHABET.—II.

THE secret of de Rougé's success in grappling with a difficulty which had baffled so many others, that of connecting the Semitic and Egyptian letters lies in his having perceived the fact, that the immediate prototypes of the earliest Semitic character, must be sought for, not as heretofore among the hieroglyphic pictures of the Egyptian monuments, but among the cursive characters which the Egyptians developed out of the hieroglyphics in common use, these latter being reserved for monumental or sacred purposes.

Of these cursive characters there are several kinds. That which has the least resemblance to the hieroglyphics is the Demotic or highly cursive form, which originated about the time of the twenty-second dynasty, that is B.C. 975 to 750, a period when the Semitic character was already in use. The Demotic was formed from the Hieratic of the New Empire, represented by numerous MSS. of the nineteenth dynasty, about B.C. 1400-1280. Up to recent years these were the only forms known to scholars. De Rougé rejected them, not only because they fail altogether in point of resemblance, but also because they are of an origin too recent to satisfy the conditions of the enquiry. But discovery did not stop; other types were subsequently brought to light, a considerably

older form of Hieratic writing, of which the *Prisse Papyrus* is a sample. This form arose in the early Empire, and was in use at the time of the Semitic invasion of Egypt, the remarkable event known as the domination of the Hyksos or Shepherd Kings; and so de Rouge with great reason refers the origin of the Semitic Alphabet to the period of five or four or perhaps two centuries, for chronology here is quite unmanageable, during which a race of Semitic conquerors ruled in the Delta of the Nile.

The conjecture would be nothing more than a brilliant guess, but for the skill and patience with which he followed up the clue thus discovered, and the scientific manner in which he applied the stores of his immense learning to working out every detail of the problem. He began by determining the oldest known forms of the Semitic letters. For comparison with these he selected such of the old Hieratic characters as were used alphabetically, confining himself to the most ancient, namely those used in the first Empire, prior to the Hyksos invasion, and of course to the subsequent expulsion of the invaders. He next proceeds to study the sounds which were represented by the several symbols, aided in this by the numerous Egyptian proper names that are to be met with in the Old Testament as well as in profane history, he examines with minute care the question of the sound-value in Egyptian and Semitic of each symbol. In this way all the possible Hieratic models of each of the Semitic characters are ascertained; and it is found that the primitive form of almost every Semitic letter can be easily and naturally deduced from the form of its Hieratic prototype.

An examination of the two Alphabets, the ancient Semitic from the Moabite Stone, the Hieratic from the *Prisse Papyrus*, placed side by side, shows how close is the relationship between, and what solid grounds there are for the important conclusion drawn from them by de Rouge. It would be desirable to have the two Alphabets placed before our readers; but as this cannot be done, we must refer those who are anxious to satisfy themselves on this point to an interesting work on the Alphabets by Mr. Isaac Taylor, in which are to be found plates illustrating each step in the formation of the principal Alphabets known.

De Rougé's theory, solid as it is, and justified by the evidence collected by him, has not met with universal acceptance yet. It has had to encounter in some quarters opposition vigorous enough certainly, yet not surprising, taking into account the difficulties inevitable in an investigation like that conducted by him. It is right to take note of objections, if only to place the subject before the readers of the RECORD as fully as the limits of an article admit.

It is said in the first place that certain Semitic letters, as "teth," "tsade," "caph," and "ayin," denote sounds peculiar to the Semitic language, and, therefore, cannot have representatives in the Egyptian Alphabet. In reply to this it may be remarked that the history of Alphabets destroys whatever force appears in the objection. When Alphabets are transmitted from one nation to another, the characters are constantly used to indicate approximate, rather than identical sounds. Thus very different sounds are represented by the same Roman letters, in Italian, Spanish and English, not by all the letters of course, but by some. All agree on the descent of the Greek from the Semitic; if the objection were valid, that view also should be abandoned. The Semitic sounds represented by "teth" and "ayin" have no equivalents in any Aryan language, such as the Greek; and yet nothing is more certain than that the signs for these sounds are identical with the Greek, "theta" and "omicron."

Another apparently strong objection is taken from the names of the letters. We have already seen that the names of the Semitic letters do not refer to the objects represented by their prototypes, the Egyptian hieroglyphics. How is it for instance that "beth" should mean "house," if the character was obtained from the Egyptian picture of a crane? This difficulty vanishes also before the fact, which is unquestionable, that in the case of other Alphabetical transmissions the letters are constantly re-named. The Russian letters which were borrowed from the Greek in the ninth century, have lost the familiar Greek names, and adopted others having a meaning in Slavonic. B is no longer called "beta," but "buke," meaning a beech, while D has lost its old title

"delta," and gained a new one, "dobro," an oak. The Scandinavian Runes, taken from the Greek at an earlier period, have also been systematically renamed; and a similar liberty was taken with the Roman uncials or square letters by our own ancestors who gave Celtic tree names to them. It should be added, however, and it is much to their credit, that the Irish made reparation in another way. The grace and dexterity of their writing gave a more elegant form to the characters, so that travelling back once more to the Continent, these modified in part, and in part superseded the old script and became factors in developing later Lombardic forms, the immediate ancestors of the Venetian (Italic) and our present beautiful Roman type. This, however, by the way; our present purpose is to show how analogy goes to establish that the imposition of new names, significant to those borrowing an Alphabet is really more probable than the transmission of the original denominations.

The objection might have some weight if the Semitic Alphabet were derived immediately from the hieroglyphics, the pictorial character of which is unmistakable. But in the Hieratic writing these are so changed by what is technically called conventional rendering, as to have lost nearly all traces of the picture, so that, the Egyptian names conveying no meaning to a foreign race, it was easier for them to connect the forms and sounds of the letters by new titles. We may therefore dismiss the objection arising on that head.

Another difficulty urged against de Rouge, is the following:—The range of choice is so great among Egyptian hieroglyphics, there are so many alternative forms from which to select, that whatever the result obtained, it must be of necessity vague, and therefore unsatisfactory. This is, however, to measure out but scanty justice to the distinguished man, to whose ability we are indebted for the discovery. If like some who preceded him, from among the four hundred Egyptian symbols, he made an arbitrary selection of some only, his work would of course have little value, but this he did not do. Setting aside the whole chaos of signs he kept strictly to those representing the Egyptian Alphabet, as that

was handed down by tradition ; and it was from that list of twenty-five letters he started his investigation, succeeding finally in identifying the eighteen consonants of the Semitic Alphabet with their equivalent Egyptian symbols. There is, therefore, no ground whatsoever for looking on the results obtained as fanciful or arbitrary.

One only objection remains to be considered now, namely, the want of adequate resemblance between the Semitic letters, and their alleged Egyptian models. If this objection could be sustained it would, as a matter of course, be fatal to the theory ; we owe it therefore a good deal of consideration, and we must even risk a little trial of the patience of the reader, in order to make what we have to say on this, the crucial point of the whole investigation, as clear as the subject allows, and as convincing to others, as it is to ourselves.

If one were simply to glance at the two Alphabets placed side by side, there is no doubt the first impression would be how widely they differ from each other ; for it must be allowed, the dissimilarity is conspicuous. On closer examination, however, this first impression fades a little. It is seen that the differences are superficial rather than real. A national writing or script is, as a rule, prone to follow a method of its own, and tends to a distinct type. It becomes either upright or inclined, just as people's handwriting, minute or bold and striking, regular or irregular in the shape of the letters. It picks up, or, as the case may be, avoids hooks or tails, and shuns forms either curved or angular, preferring straight lines ; in short, it tends to become either geometrical or cursive. A mere glance at a printed page, without examining a single word, enables us to recognise, by their general character, Greek or Latin, Hebrew or German ; the features of these are widely different, yet they are most intimately related. In fact such is the decided tendency of all writing to assume a special national type, we ought to be rather surprised did not the Hieratic and Semitic exhibit, each of them, a distinct specific character.

Now, on examination of the two scripts, it is by no means difficult to specify the peculiar features of each. The Semitic

writing is marked by greater symmetry and greater simplicity of form. The letters have become more regular and more erect, as well as more angular and equal in size. These differences are precisely what we should expect, taking into account the nature of the writing materials used by the two races. The early Hieratic seems to have been traced with a thick glutinous ink on papyrus, a cheap and abundant material, by means of a pen, or more probably a brush, made of the soft stump of a reed. The characters consequently are free, bold and rounded. The Semitic on the other hand was laboriously carved on stone with a chisel, and the characters, therefore, are naturally more regular and delicate in outline. The rounded flowing older forms become stiff and angular, the curved sweeping tails re-appear on the stone as nearly straight and rigid lines. Simplicity of form is the aim, because elaborate forms tax too heavily the resources of those whose sole instruments for writing are the mallet and chisel.

It appears then that the differences between the Alphabets on which opponents of de Rouge's theory lay much stress, can be accounted for, and they are not too great. It is a matter of surprise rather that they should be in truth so trifling comparatively; for the interval of more than a thousand years separating the Prisse Papyrus from the Moabite Stone, gives ample time for the development of far greater variations in the forms of the letter than the most hostile scrutiny can discover. Greater changes by far have taken place within a much shorter period, as that, for example, between the Greek and Roman small letters, and the capitals from which they come. The Demotic script of the twenty-second dynasty differs more from the parent Hieratic than does the Semitic.

The only real obstacle to a conclusion satisfactory on all points is the paucity of the materials. So far as they go they are certainly in favour of de Rougé; but it must be acknowledged they are neither continuous nor numerous. It is not to be wondered at considering the remote period and the chances and accidents to which such monuments are exposed. History vouches for a Semitic rule in Egypt,

lasting from three hundred to five hundred years. They passed away and left no trace to mark their presence or their deeds, while the country abounds in memorials of the old Empire that preceded them and those that followed them. The same is true of a Phœnician settlement later on in the Delta. "They were, and that is all." It is by the merest accident the *Prisse Papyrus* was preserved; and yet without that fragment nothing could be known of the early Hieratic writing, which, nevertheless, must represent an extensive Hieratic literature—an idea of the sole surviving specimen, the *Prisse Papyrus*, has already been given in the article. Well! moral speculations on the decay of manners are not likely to be the first or the only effort of the intelligence of a people endowed with the power of writing. We must only hope that future discoveries may fill up the gaps. A single papyrus of the Hyksos period, or a Semitic inscription earlier than the Moabite Stone would for ever set the question at rest.

Considerable interest might be felt in determining the date of the Alphabet, so far at least as the nature of the case admits. The result must be to some extent indefinite as to the century, although it can be brought within definite limits, and there is a pleasure in noting how on independent evidence the use of letters by the Hebrews is traced up to the period and the country whence they went forth to establish their own kingdom under Moses. One of the old objections against Moses as the Author of the Pentateuch is finally disposed of.

M. Lenormant, who is among the very first Oriental scholars of the day, holds that the writing on the Moabite Stone bears signs of a script that was long in use; and the fact that letters in all respects similar are to be met with in inscriptions in places very remote from each other, is proof, according to him, that the Hebrews were in possession of the Alphabet long before the date of the Stone. There is, in fact, a catena of witnesses, admitting the inspired books, reaching back from the Moabite Stone to the Tables of the Law, which goes to prove that a knowledge of writing was the common possession of the Hebrews and other Semitics as early as the Exodus; and the inference is not unreasonable that it

was obtained through their kindred the whilom rulers of Egypt.

Long as these occupied the country which had made considerable progress before their invasion, they left behind them no great works to mark their occupation of it. They neither emulated the Pyramids, Titanic memorials of the people they supplanted, nor did they anticipate the graceful obelisks and magnificent temples of the new Empire. The history of the centuries their rule endured in Egypt is a blank. The one monument of their empire, that has survived, itself more imperishable than tables of brass or pyramids of stone is the Alphabet, which they held firmly, veritable spoil of the Egyptians, when they were driven back to the deserts out of which they came.

The date of the Alphabet is therefore brought within definite limits. It cannot have arisen before the arrival of the Semitic invaders, that is, not earlier than the twenty-second century, B.C. On the other hand it cannot have originated after the second type of the Hieratic writing, which came into use at the time of the eighteenth dynasty, that is, not later than the seventeenth century B.C. The limits lie between the twenty-third and seventeenth centuries, and there seems no reason why we should not accept de Rouge's date, at least provisionally, and place it about the nineteenth century or somewhat earlier, which would allow the ample period of ten centuries for the changes and developments which we notice when we first meet with it on the Moabite Stone.

A chart of the Alphabets named in the foregoing pages would enable the reader at a glance to trace the genealogy for close on four thousand years, and convince him by ocular demonstration that we owe the greatest of all boons to the interesting people who, in very remote times, had their home on the banks of the Nile.

In an article like this the outline only can be given of a subject so extensive as the present, which branches out in so many directions. Volumes have been written on the numerous Alphabets that exist, and it has been shown that wide as is the difference between many of them in appearance, they are capable of being connected, as we have connected the Latin

and Greek with the Semitic and Egyptian. On these subjects we cannot even touch. But there is one Alphabet that deserves notice, not only from the beauty of the letters, but still more because it is of special interest to us. That is the Irish Alphabet. In spite of a general resemblance to the Roman characters, to which family it belongs, there are differences enough in it to make its history somewhat of a puzzle. It suddenly appears in the sixth century as a perfect and fully formed book hand resembling the uncial or large scripts of the Continent, but differing from them in the form of many of the letters. Its history is obscure. There is no old Irish hand known out of which it would have evolved itself; and it appears in a perfect form. The only possible conclusion is that it was introduced by St. Patrick, very probably from Gaul, where he received his education, and having been thus introduced it was, by the skill and taste of the Irish penmen, brought to a high state of perfection in the sixth, seventh and eighth centuries, the golden era of Celtic culture.

What is its immediate parentage? It was generally supposed to have grown in some way not defined out of the Roman uncial. A glance, however, at the two upsets this conjecture. The Irish *g*, *b*, *a*, *m*, to say nothing of other letters, cannot have arisen out of the Roman uncial, with which they have obviously no relation. Much more probable is it that it came from the fifth century cursive character in use in the South of France. We have, in fact, proof of this. There is in the Archives of the Vatican an old MS. treatise of St. Hilary against the Arians, written in the fourth century, in which the letters are distinctly Irish, so much so, that it was assumed that the copy had been made by some Irish monk. The date, however, of the copy was found in a note, and that was A.D. 509—that is to say, fully a century before the Irish School was founded at Bobbio, A.D. 612.

Taking into account the place, Gaul, and the date, there is every reason to suppose that the writing of the Hilary MS. was general, at least among the ecclesiastics of that country in the fifth century, and was brought by St. Patrick to Ireland. How it was cultivated by Irish scholars and attained

a grace and beauty of form never surpassed before or since is shown by the "Book of Kells" and other ancient MSS. which still exist. And how in its improved form it was borne by Irish Missioners back again to the Continent and influenced the penmanship of those laborious monks, to whose patience in transcribing we owe whatever has been preserved to us of the treasures of antiquity, is a subject in itself, one of several at which it is possible only to glance in this sketch of Alphabetic history. Of course it did not remain unchanged in its new home. No alphabet did, as we have seen. It altered by degrees until it came very near the Venetian—what we call Italic—from which our actual Roman letters took their rise.

If it were possible to give here a chart with all the Alphabets in Chronological Order that have been in use, it would be seen how they are related and have grown one from the other. So that what at first sight are so widely different in form, meaning and use, as the Egyptian hieroglyphics and the Roman letters of to-day, are in truth closely connected, and the chasm is bridged over by a series of Alphabets, among which our own Irish script occupies a not ignoble place.

L. J. HICKEY.

THEOLOGICAL QUESTIONS.

CONFESSION OF DOUBTFUL SINS.

VERY REV. AND DEAR SIR,—I tender my sincere thanks for your very able reply to my queries. But permit me to state that the vagueness of my wording in the first question led you to an inference which I did not intend. The question was:—A penitent who made a good general confession six years ago, comes now to confession, having made bad confessions during these six years. He does not know whether certain sins he has actually committed were before or after the general confession. He quite forgets. Here there is a *dubium negativum de peccatis confessis*, and according to theological principles he would be bound to confess. But I think the case

resolves itself into a *dubium de commissis*, and is therefore exempt from the obligation of confession. For he cannot say whether *de facto* he has committed sins that have not as yet been submitted to the *claves*; in other words, he has no consciousness of sins that must of necessity be confessed. In the *dubium negativum de commissis*, theologians exempt from confession on the ground that he has not that consciousness of sin which the Council of Trent requires—“*quorum conscientiam.*” *A pari* in the former case, he has not this *conscientiam de peccatis necessariis*. I suppose the case of one who has not a lax conscience, but a scrupulous conscience, if you will, but has unfortunately made bad confessions, because, through shame, he has all along concealed one sin, and only one.

With regard to the presumption against one of lax conscience ought not this principle hold; “*Standum est pro valore actus donec de nullitate constiterit?*” Sig. lib. vi., 907, Lacroix lib. vi., 208, &c., and theologians commonly admit this principle;—“Confessions are not to be repeated unless it is morally certain that they are invalid.” Therefore it is not enough that they are prudently considered invalid, they must be certainly invalid with a moral certainty which implies something more than a prudent judgment, as Ballerini remarks in a note to Gury *de Poenitentia*, 513, Quaer 3°. I confess I am somewhat puzzled, probably because I do not fully comprehend the bearing of these principles. Here is another puzzle. Lacroix lib. vi., pars 11, No. 604, says, “*Si positive dubites de mortali commissio, et non habeas prudentem rationem pro eo, quod non fuerit mortale, praeceptum confessionis possidet contra te.*” Ought not the axiom “*standum est pro libertate,*” apply to this case? or, “*melior est conditio possidentis,*” which is tantamount to it? Now, St. Liguori lib. 1, No. 36, lays down this principle, “*Possessio est jus certum retinendi contra quod non praevalet nisi certitudo.*” This principle is commonly held by all theologians. But in its application to my case, St. Liguori would seem to bear me out in my opinion in all cases of doubt. “*Unde,*” he says, “*recte concludit Croix quod licet pro possessore non sit probabile argumentum, si tamen pro petitore non sit argumentum nisi probabile, possessor adhuc licite retinet, quia possessio est jus certum retinendi contra quod non praevalet nisi certitudo.*” Applying this doctrine, why should one account himself guilty of mortal sin even though he has a grave reason for supposing his actual guilt and no prudent reason contra? Is not his liberty, or in this case, freedom from guilt in possession until he be ousted from his position by a certainty of guilt?

I have been all along contending for exemption from obligation

unless where there is a moral certainty that the obligation exists, Here is a very practical case of frequent occurrence ; one contracted a debt. He has a *dubium positivum* that he has not paid the debt ; yet he is not certain of having paid it. Should he not be exempt from payment according to the principle as stated by St. Liguori, &c. ? I suppose the case where he has no *prudens motivum* to sustain his payment of the debt—in other words, he has against him a *dubium positivum*, while he has in his favour only a *dubium negativum*. It is all very well to say that the debt is in possession and must be satisfied by at least a probable payment. My liberty should be always in possession, as long as there is no certain law to fetter it.

A SUBSCRIBER.

Our correspondent may remember we did not argue from the words of the Council of Trent in replying to his first question. They are cited with equal confidence on both sides in these controversies about doubtful sins. This of itself suffices to show that, notwithstanding their beautiful expressiveness, they do not decide every detail of the obligation of integral confession.

Neither did we dwell at any length on purely intrinsic arguments. For, considering the difficulty of the subject and the attention it has received from those best qualified to interpret the Divine and Natural Law, it seemed better to state the general conclusion theologians had come to accept than discuss the reasons that influenced their decisions.

Now when a mortal sin has been committed for certain, they require with practical unanimity a soundly probable reason for thinking it has been duly confessed before holding a penitent free with regard to further confession of his offence. But in neither of his letters does our correspondent state any fact which would afford solid ground for believing that the fault had been mentioned in a good confession. There is an utter absence of proof as to whether the sin was or was not declared before the sacrileges began. Nor does the character now given of the penitent appear to be capable of removing this obstacle, unless our correspondent wishes to consider one who is *really scrupulous* in the theological sense. This we cannot suppose, for the confession of doubtful sins is not for the *vere scrupulosi* at all.

But in the ordinary cases a mere negative doubt, or the want of solid ground for opinion, on both sides, will not suffice. It is not enough that a penitent be uncertain, as he is with regard to the even or odd number of the stars. He should have a serious reason for affirming that his obligation has been discharged apart altogether from the negative doubt which must result from the other side being uncertain. Nay, some theologians of the greatest authority appear to require more than this. The context of St. Liguori, however, makes it plain that in practice he would be almost at one on this point with the seemingly more liberal De Lugo.

In any case, there is no conflict between them when a good reason for believing a sin to have been confessed is not forthcoming. For, however uncertain the obligation of confession may be on the score of mortal guilt, the precept is absolutely certain for the concrete event. The duty of declaring an offence of this kind, if not directly enforced by the law of integral confession, is at least indirectly made sure by a reflex law acting as its guardian in contingencies of this kind. The practical obligation, therefore, is beyond all doubt.

If it be asked why theologians proclaim this restriction on human liberty, the shortest answer seems to be that, not to speak of justice, whenever an obligation has been contracted, probabilist writers require at least a sound reason for believing it has been discharged before considering it as no longer pressing for satisfaction. Probabilism must in reason require so much.

Our correspondent enters a plea on behalf of lax penitents, and quotes from two writers of the very highest authority on these questions. But his argument and quotations have reference to a different matter. The obligation or absence of obligation to repeat whole confessions is a distinct chapter. For plainly a case might arise in which a penitent would be bound to repeat a confession in which every mortal sin has been confessed, while on the other hand one might need to declare separately sins he had forgotten in an excellent confession. But as the point has been mentioned we may add that the maxim, "*Standum est pro valore actus*," in regard

to doubtful confession applies only when, weighing all the circumstances, the invalidity of the previous confession is not morally certain for *this particular penitent*.

Our correspondent's difficulty in construing the saying he quotes from Lacroix is due, we think, to a previous conviction that there is absolutely no obligation of confessing sins doubtfully committed. Well, the great probabilist writers seem to agree about one exception. It arises, as described by Lacroix, when there is a cogent reason for believing a mortal sin has been committed and no reliable grounds for holding that the act did not occur, or that its guilt was only venial. Some modern theologians do not mention the case separately. De Lugo, on the other hand, maintains that the obligation arises even when a negative doubt exists *on both sides*.

Our correspondent relies on the principle of possession. He will find, however, that in the passage to which he refers St. Liguori is speaking about rights in *justice* that are controverted. St. Alphonsus agrees with De Lugo and Lacroix in holding that legitimate and *bona fide* possession creates a sound presumption which is not to be overcome by anything short of a moral certainty in favour of the person who claims to have disputed property taken from the possessor thereof. He also says the same reasoning applies to marriages of doubtful validity. But he does not state that it is of universal application in deciding questions of doubt. Nor do the theologians, who make such frequent use of the maxim, "*melior est conditio possidentis*" mean to convey that it rules questions under all other moral precepts on precisely the same terms as those that arise *in materia justitiæ*.

With regard to the doubtful payment of debts, we cannot at all concur in the opinion suggested. No doubt the maxim of possession will not be accepted as final in the matter, for its benefit may be claimed to some extent by the debtor also. But what we must look to is the equality which commutative justice requires. How is it attained when payments are doubtful? The obvious way seems to be by holding that the debt continues in diminished quantity. It remains, reduced by that fractional part of the whole which the

probability of previous payment expresses. Thus a half, or less, or more, may satisfy the debtor's obligations.

Some theologians, we are aware, hold him entirely excused if he have a sound reason for believing he paid in full, even though the argument to show non-payment be much stronger. But the probability of this opinion is very questionable. Accordingly we should not act upon it unless to the extent of not disturbing the *bona fides* of a penitent from whom it would be useless to expect rateable payment.

MAY THE MINISTER OF BAPTISM ACT AS SPONSOR?

A Very Rev. correspondent has sent us from England a letter on the above subject. As we cannot now find the document at hand, we state its substance in the form of a single question.

Apart from local law, the Minister of Baptism is not forbidden to act as sponsor for the child he baptizes. The responses may be given by the godmother. Nay, Lacroix thinks it sufficiently probable that a priest may name a proxy to go through the ceremonies for him.

But a local difficulty remains. For, although the Common Law does not prohibit secular priests to undertake the office of *patrini*, the first Synod of Westminster seems to exclude ecclesiastics altogether therefrom. Accordingly our respected correspondent will see that a priest in England may not at once be minister and sponsor, unless this regulation has gone into disuse. But if ecclesiastics are in the habit of acting as sponsors at all, we cannot find any insuperable objection against combining the offices of minister and sponsor.

THE PRICE IN BUYING AND SELLING.

I am anxious to have your opinion on a few questions in justice.

1. How far is a merchant or dealer bound to charge all his customers the same price for the same kind of goods?

2. A draper, Caius, in good business in a country town has customers from every class. He keeps a large assortment of tweeds

and serges constantly in stock. He has the name of charging smart prices ; but his materials are said to be the best in the town. I find, however, that he supplies bankers and professional men and shop-keepers much more cheaply than country folk. There is often a difference of two or three shillings per yard. Is this just ? I suppose ready money in each case.

3. When a dealer makes a bargain with the buyer, is there any limit on the price ?

SACERDOS.

In answering these questions we shall attend only to virtues that are of obligation, especially to justice, leaving the style or etiquette of good business out of consideration. Our correspondent will find much information in Croll's bearing on his difficulties.

I.

Apart from special contract to sell to one customer at the rate another is charged, a dealer is under no obligation to fix a constant price for goods of the same quality. Not only may the price vary with the times ; it may also change with the buyers to any extent within the limit of highest market value. *Pretium summum* and *pretium infimum* mark the greatest advantage which the virtue of justice can sanction for seller and buyer respectively. If a trader freely gives away his property for less than the smallest sum which men of ordinary judging capacity in respect of its value would consider the amount of its price in open market, the money received in exchange is only part price for the goods. In this supposition a portion of the property is either bestowed, given in charity, or heedlessly abandoned by the seller. A more likely hypothesis however is that he will go near the boundary line fixed by justice and demand almost the highest price. Charity, indeed, may occasionally forbid him to do so. But so long as he does not exceed the sum which persons of ordinary discretion in the matter would consider the highest amount for which the goods are valuable, *justice* makes no complaint. It is plain, however, that the range of prices between highest and lowest, for the necessaries of life and for manufactured wares in common use, is of a very limited compass.

II.

This second question involves a practical application of the foregoing principles. Shopkeepers sometimes think they are justified in taking any price they can secure by bargain. Occasionally, too, they imagine they may make good their losses on injudicious purchases, or levy compensation for an accident of a personal kind, by running up the prices of certain wares. But as the contract is one in which goods are exchanged for *what they are worth in money*, it is plain that the absence of a single price, fixed for all comers, or a peculiar misfortune, entirely distinct from those general accidents of trade that independently have already exerted their legitimate influence in raising prices all round, cannot create a title for exacting more than the highest current rate of sale in open competition, no matter how much the buyer haggles or how unfortunate the vendor has been. It is not for a game of chance, or to bestow his coin, an intending purchaser enters a shop. He goes in to *buy*; and so long as the contract remains one of buying and selling, failure on his part to bring the vendor by bargaining within the *pretium summum* does not alter the nature of the transaction nor therefore justify the latter in taking money, part of which is not price-money at all, since goods of corresponding value are not exchanged. A purchaser would rightly consider himself swindled to the extent of this excess. He knows very well that the seller will not in the end fix a sum below the lowest price. He has thus a range of rates through which he may strive to pull the seller. But should his skill in bargaining fail to bring the latter down to price-money, his effort to buy cheaply cannot relieve the transaction from the taint of unfairness. In such a case the sum charged is beyond market value. Money is given to which no goods correspond. The equality of commutative justice is violated, and an obligation of restitution arises as a natural consequence.

It is obvious that persons experienced in a particular kind of purchase have an advantage in dealing even with honest merchants. They will not purchase at the highest rate justice would allow. Thus the bankers, townspeople,

and professional gentlemen, mentioned by our correspondent, must as a rule be thought to fix a medium standard. They have some knowledge of the value of the materials in question, of prices elsewhere for similar goods, and of the cost of carriage. If they could procure articles of clothing more economically in some other town, it is unlikely they would continue to deal with "Caius." In short, these people possess that judgment in the matter of "tweeds and serges" which theologians require for fixing prices. Not so the "country folk," as is evident from the better bargains given those who have knowledge and experience for safeguards. It only remains, therefore, to say whether the difference of charge involves injustice. We think there can be only one opinion on the subject. The price paid by those who know what like articles cost elsewhere, may not be far removed from *pretium infimum*; but neither is it from *pretium summum*. With modern competition tending to reduce and equalize charges, the difference between an average price and a sum just above the highest rate is but trifling on manufactured goods in general request. If a certain class of tweed sells at from six shillings and sixpence to seven shillings per yard over the whole country to "those who know," is it just to charge a labouring man, who happens to be unaware of the fact, at the rate of eight shillings? It is clearly unjust. Hence *a fortiori* "Sacerdos" will infer that the practice he mentions is utterly indefensible on his statement of the facts. Nor will it avail to add that many traders act in this way, or that the lowness of prices, resulting from keen competition, forces them to these courses. The question turns on what is a just price in the present circumstances, and no consideration of better times or of equally unfair acts practised by others can touch the main point at issue. But while this is so, on the other hand, within the bounds of justice, fair latitude is by all means desirable to encourage the free exercise of industry and commercial talent.

III.

We have already answered this question; but it may be well to give Croll's¹ words on the subject: "Quoniam vero

¹ "De Contractibus," p. 513.

multi venditores saepe plusquam pretium summum pro suis mercibus postulant, non ut illud obtineant sed quia rustici praesertim putant primum pretium semper esse nimium, et ideo nisi mercatores hoc modo agerent aequum pretium non consequerentur manifestum est iis non licere primum pretium accipere, si quis id solvere velit."

P. O'D.

LITURGICAL QUESTIONS.

CONFESSION AS A CONDITION FOR GAINING AN INDULGENCE, WHEN MUST IT BE MADE?

Can a person who does not go to Confession every week gain a Plenary Indulgence, say for St. Patrick's Day, by going to Confession, not on the eve or morning of the feast, but some two or four days previously?

H. B.

We believe that it is necessary, when the person is not a weekly Confessionist, to go to Confession on the eve or morning of the feast, unless the Ordinary has obtained a special Indult, *ab inopiam confessoriorum*, allowing the people of the district to go within the eight days preceding the feast. This is the ruling of the Congregation of Indulgences, 28th September, 1838:—

"An vigore decreti, 12 Junii, 1822, possint omnes Christi, fideles ad lucranda indulgentia festivitati cuidam adnexam confiteri intra octo dies festivitatem hanc praecedentes?"

"Et in hypothesi negativa deprecatur ut haec facultas concedatur fidelibus diocesis Aturensis propter inopiam confessoriorum?"

Resp. S. Congregatio Indulg.—"*Negative quoad primam partem; quoad secundam recurat Episcopus ad hanc Sacram Congregationem pro gratia, ut Confessio scilicet peracta a fidelibus suae diocesis infra hebdomadam ante festivitatem, attenta confessoriorum inopia, suffragari possit ad indulgentias, acquirendas.*" 28th September, 1838.

MISSA PRO PACE, ON THE SECOND DAY OF THE QUARANT' ORE.

Is it in accordance with the Rubrics regulating the devotion of the Quarant' Ore to sing the *Missa pro pace* on a double of the second class, say the feast of an apostle? If so, what preface is sung?

No. The solemn Votive Mass *de SS. Sacramento* or *pro pace* on the occasion of the Quarant' Ore is forbidden on: 1° Sundays of the first or second class. 2° Feasts which are doubles of the first, or second class. 3° Ash Wednesday. 4° Monday, Tuesday, and Wednesday of Holy Week. 5° The days included in the octaves of Easter, Pentecost, and Epiphany. 6° The vigils of Christmas and Pentecost.

The Preface to be sung is that for the Feast of Apostles.

DOLOUR SCAPULARS.

In a former number of the RECORD it was stated that a priest having power from the Pope to bless beads etc., could not by virtue of that power bless Dolour beads. Can he bless and enrol in the Dolour Scapular?

D. G.

The ordinary form in which the Pope grants the faculty of enrolling in the Scapulars extends to the Dolour Scapulars.

We append a copy of the ordinary form:—

EX AUDIENTIA SANCTISSIMI HABITA.

Sanctissimus Dominus Noster Leo Divina Providentia PP. XIII. referente me infrascripto Sacrae Congregationis de Propaganda Fide Pro Secretario facultatem benigne concessit, de consensu tamen Ordinarii, et ad quinquennium, adscribendi utriusque sexus fideles Confraternitatibus a S. Sede approbatis, earumque Scapularia fidelibus imponendi, cum applicatione omnium et singularum Indulgentiarum, et Privilegiorum, quae Summi Pontificis memoratis Confraternitatibus impertiti sunt.

Datum Romae ex aedibus dictae Sacrae Congregationis die, et anno quibus supra.

What we said about the beads was that the ordinary faculty given at Rome, applies only to the Apostolic and Bridgettine Indulgences, and does not include the other Indulgences such as those granted to the Rosary proper which is blessed by the Dominicans or to the Dolour Beads.

SUBSTITUTE FOR THE USUAL COMMUNION CLOTH.

As a substitute for the communion-cloth attached to the altar or sanctuary rail, have been introduced, within recent years, into many of our American churches at least, square hand-cloths, which are either passed from one communicant to another, or carried by a server and large gilt patens with wooden handles attached, which are always carried by the server, not *directly*, but *indirectly*, through the handle.

These substitutes for the old method have many obvious advantages, not only in the matter of cleanliness, but in protecting the Blessed Sacrament from irreverence. The sacred particles are carried to the altar and there consumed, whereas with the rail-cloth unless the particles were conspicuous enough to be seen and removed, they were allowed to fall to the floor and be gathered up with the sweepings. After using the hand-cloth and the paten for a number of years, I am now informed I have been indulging in an erroneous practice. The plea is set up that the new method is wrong, because those who carry the paten or the hand-cloth are usurping the functions of a deacon or priest. With all deference to the objection I feel there is a sub-stratum of absurdity in it. It implies an abnormal enlargement of diaconal and priestly privileges. With regard to the paten, the irrelevancy of the objection is clear, because the server does not touch, nor is he allowed to touch, the paten *directly*. To carry the sacred particle that may accidentally fall on the hand-cloth can be no more wrong than to carry it on the rail-cloth, which may at any communion become the privilege of any Catholic.

However, as the objection is urged, I humbly ask, 1° Whether the practice is wrong on this special ground? and 2° Whether there is any decree or authorised usage of the Church opposed to it?

Awaiting a reply, believe me,

Yours sincerely,—J. W.

In reply we beg to say, 1° that the linen cloth is what the Church has prescribed to be used by the faithful in the ceremony of receiving Holy Communion.

The Roman Ritual (*Ordo administrandi Sacram Communionem*) when describing the preparations for administering communion mentions the linen cloth which is to be spread before the communicants, “et ante eos linteo mundo extenso.”

This cloth is usually attached to the balustrade, which is a venerable as well as a convenient arrangement. St. Charles recommended (*Instruct. pro administr. Eucharistia*), that the cloth should be held by two acolytes, as is ordered (Caer. Epes. lib. ii., cap. xxiv. 3), to be done when the clergy communicate at the predella of the altar.

At Rome and elsewhere it is now a common practice to use a card, about 12 inches square, covered with linen, which is passed from one communicant to the next. This is a convenient provision when only few communicants present themselves, or at an altar where the Blessed Sacrament is not reserved, or where there may be no balustrade.

It is generally known that communicants are directed not to use the finger towel, or priest's maniple or chasuble, as a communion cloth.

As to cleanliness the priest understands that it is his duty to see that the communion cloth is always clean. The communion cloth should be removed from the balustrade and folded when the Masses are over.

Moreover it should be borne in mind that it is the duty of the priest to instruct the people how to communicate. He has to remind them from time to time that the communicant is to hold his head slightly thrown back, his mouth moderately open, his tongue resting on his lower lip, and to keep the communion cloth spread under his chin, not in imitation of an inclined plane, but as a little table ready to receive securely the Blessed Sacrament, should it happen to fall from the hands of the priest. The young especially should be taught the importance and way of using the communion cloth for its proper purpose, *i.e.*, to take the place of a little table covered with linen, to receive the Blessed Sacrament should it happen to fall.

As to the very minute particles which may fly off, we can only say that in the administration of the Blessed Sacrament this consequence cannot be wholly avoided. Accordingly the Church does not order that the communion cloth should be even purified in ordinary circumstances. But the possible presence of these very minute particles in the cloth

is an additional reason why we should be very careful to keep the communion cloth scrupulously clean, and always respectable.

But what is to be said of the paten our correspondent describes?

We do not think that there is force in the objection that the acolyte who carries it by the wooden handle is usurping the position of a deacon or priest.

But neither can we recommend this special contrivance.

It is novel, having been introduced but recently into certain dioceses.

It is unnecessary; for the Church still continues to prescribe the use of the cloth only.

But we cannot say that it is a practice to be abolished as wrong, for the Sacred Congregation has not forbidden it in dioceses in which such a custom has been established.

Yet we do not think that it is right to introduce it into a church without the sanction of the bishop. The following is the ruling of the S. Congregation on this question:—

“An in ministranda fidelibus sacra communione liceat, loco tabellarum linearum, uti tabellis ex metallo, vel ejusmodi tolerari possit in iis diocesibus in quibus fuit introductus?”

Resp. S. R. C.—“Non esse interdicendum, nihilominus significetur Emo. D. Episcopo Alexandriae non esse improbandum usum tabularum linearum.”

20 March, 1875, in *Romana*.

THE SUFFRAGIA IN THE VOTIVE OFFICES.

On 2nd March, when we had the Votive Office of St. Joseph, should a commemoration of St. Joseph be made in the suffrages at Lauds and second Vespers?

E. K. (P.P.)

The commemoration should not have been made at Lauds, because the office was of St. Joseph; but it should have been made at second Vespers as the Vespers *a capitulo* were of the Blessed Sacrament.

THE CHURCH ABROAD.

During the past month the Church was afflicted by the loss of two of her most illustrious sons, Cardinal Jacobini and the venerated General of the Jesuit Order Father Beckx. The former was born at Genzano in 1832 and studied at the Seminary of Albano and the Roman University. He was appointed by Pius IX. one of the secretaries of Propaganda, and acted as one of the under secretaries at the Vatican Council. In 1874 he was raised to the dignity of Nuncio at Vienna. Pius IX. was much criticized for the appointment of so young a prelate to that important post but when somebody in conversation with the Pope one day alluded to him as "Il piccolo Jacobini," Pius IX. answered, "Piccolo, sí, ma di testa fine." He soon won several concessions for the Church at Vienna, and when invited to meet Prince Bismarck at Kissingen, on the occasion of the famous meeting of the Emperors, he there inaugurated the policy in which he was actively engaged up to his death, of conciliating the German Government and procuring the abolition of the May Laws. He was created a Cardinal by Leo XIII. in 1879 and Pontifical Secretary of State in 1880.

Of the illustrious Father Beckx one of the children of the order which he ruled for so many years has written in the last number of the *Civiltà Cattolica*, a touching account of his last days and a short sketch of his life, from which we gather the following interesting facts:—

Father Beckx was born at Sichem, near Diest, in Belgium, on the 8th of February, 1795. He belonged to a poor family and in his early years was obliged to go a distance of three miles on foot every day in order to attend school. He commenced Latin with a certain John Peeters who was an agricultural labourer, but who, like so many teachers of the olden times in Ireland, had acquired an excellent knowledge of the classics. He then entered the Seminary of Malines where he studied philosophy and theology.

The Abbé Sterkx his professor, who was afterwards Archbishop of Malines and Cardinal, had marked him out as of extraordinary ability and piety. Immediately after his ordination he entered the Jesuit Order, in October, 1819. When he had finished the term of noviciate and scholasticate he was sent to teach Canon Law at Hildesheim, and from there was directed by the order of the Holy Father to undertake the instruction of the Duke of Anhalt, recently

converted to Catholicism. His zeal extended to the Catholics of the Duchy to whom he preached incessantly, and amongst whom he founded a Church and a Mission. He was subsequently entrusted by the Pope and by the General of the Order with several delicate missions to Bavaria and to Austria, and in 1849 was nominated rector of the Jesuit College of Louvain. Again in 1851 he was transferred to the post of provincial of the Austrian province, and finally, in 1853, on the death of Father Roothaan, was elected Superior-General of the whole order.

"On his tomb," says the writer in the *Civiltà Cattolica*, "the Society of Jesus can inscribe the eulogium of the strongest-minded of rulers, and at the same time of the most tender-hearted of fathers. His generalship with the exception of that of Aquaviva was the longest, and perhaps without exception the most prosperous in the history of the Order. He saw during the thirty years of his rule the number of Jesuits redoubled, and under his authority were established in France, Ireland, Spain, Portugal, and America, several old provinces which owe to him their new and flourishing life. He founded new missions among the savages of the Rocky Mountains, in California, New Mexico, Brazil, Guiana, the Philippine Islands, the East Indies, in Madagascar, Zambesi, Australia, Armenia, Constantinople, etc., etc. The number of colleges and convents increased, the standard of studies was raised, the philosophy of St. Thomas was promoted, literature was carefully cultivated, and the education of youth brought to great perfection. He rendered several valuable services to the Holy See and watched with paternal care over all his children whom he encouraged with frequent letters and constantly urged on to the exact fulfilment of their duties. Finally he obtained from the Holy See the canonization or beatification of over eighty Jesuits, nearly all glorious martyrs for the faith.

"And he was able to do all this for the glory of God and of his Church in the midst of the most atrocious persecutions, spoliations, sentences of exile and all kinds of contradictions. From the very first days of his generalship he saw the society persecuted in Spain, Naples and Switzerland: then banished from almost all Italy in 1859, from the Venetian territory 1866, from Spain in 1868, from Germany in 1873, from France in 1880, and besides from several Republics of South America; yet in face of so many varied trials, the great figure of Father Beckx was always the same, placid, serene and incapable of losing his equanimity. He was indeed the man destined by

Providence to rule the society in these stormy times. Pope Pius IX. himself at the time the reunion was held in Rome to elect a successor to Father Roothaan did not hesitate to say to several members of his household that no one appeared to him more worthy to fill the responsible office than Father Beckx."

Not many days after the death of Father Beckx, there died also, at Turin, a priest who was once a bright ornament of the Jesuit Order but whose natural pride brought him into collision for a considerable time with that power which in the words of Cardinal Newman, speaking of Savonarola, "none can assail without misfortune." Every one has heard of the fame as a theologian and as a scholar of Father Passaglia. Unfortunately his name has acquired more notoriety as an opponent of the Pope's temporal power than as an eloquent expounder of the dogma of the Immaculate Conception. At a time when the great Pius IX. was struggling with all his might to fulfil the oath of his coronation to maintain the integrity of the Papal States the great theologian abandoned his mother Church in the hour of danger and threw all the weight of his authority into the scale with the mortal enemies of Papal power and influence. He maintained that the "non possumus" of the Pope had nothing to do with dogmas or Catholic belief, and was not founded on Holy Scripture or the traditions of the Church, and that the oaths instituted by Pius V. and Urban VII. had no validity as they were directly opposed to the welfare of Italian Society. He was rewarded by his revolutionary friends with an appointment to the chair of moral philosophy at the University of Turin. The last time he distinguished himself as a teacher was in 1880, when in a course of brilliant lectures he proved the immorality of divorce. It was well known that for some years the celebrated professor was in anything but an easy state of conscience. He was often seen in his parish Church at Turin, at the altar of the Madonna in deep meditation and prayer, and there is no doubt but the Virgin to whom he always remained devoted at heart obtained for him the grace of a happy death. When he felt seriously ill he asked for the Sisters of "Bon Secours" to attend him, and received with gratitude the visit of one of the Jesuit Fathers resident at Turin. Seeing clearly that the end was coming he sent for the parish priest of San Carlo and before him retracted all his errors, and asked pardon for the scandal he had given. He then went to Confession, and received Holy Communion. He was afterwards visited by Cardinal Alimonda and in his presence again repeated his retractations. On the following day he received the

Holy Viaticum and Extreme Unction. He bequeathed most of his earthly goods to the hospital established at Turin by the Venerable Cottolengo, and died a quiet and peaceful death with every sign of repentance and of piety.

On the very day on which Carlo Passaglia was buried at Turin Pope Leo XIII. added one more vigorous protest to the many he has recently made against the spoliation of his territory and against the insults that are daily offered to the Church in Italy. These repeated protests on the part of the Pontiff have so impressed the revolutionaries that one famous Garibaldian, Signor Fazzari, has come to the conclusion that the country must become reconciled with the Papacy at any cost, and that there never can be real union or prosperity, or happiness in Italy as long as the government is at war with the Pope. The extraordinary tokens of consideration and respect that reach Leo XIII., from all the governments of the world at the present time do not naturally tend to set at rest the anxiety of his enemies. In addition to this they are daily reminded by the *Moniteur de Rome* and the *Osservatore Romano*, that all the great Italian statesmen who effectually brought about the union of Italy clearly foresaw the disastrous results that would follow from the forcible occupation of Rome and the dethronement of the Pope. This is so true of Count Cavour that even the most ardent Radicals do not contest it. It is likewise true of Massimo d'Azeglio who survived Cavour and spent the last five years of his life in endeavouring to persuade his countrymen to refrain from doing violence to Rome. Of course it cannot be denied that the two Piedmontese ministers desired as ardently as possible that Rome with its centuries of traditions, and the prestige of its name, should be the capital of United Italy; but, at the same time, they held that arguments of persuasion alone should be used with the Holy Father to induce him to consider such a concession but that any attempt to force him, or any step calculated to deprive him of his independence, would not be tolerated by the Christian world and could not fail to bring endless difficulties and dangers upon the whole country. With regard to the Florentine minister Ricasoli even the prejudiced Arrivabene in his *Italy under Victor Emmanuel* cites the respectful supplication which he addressed to the Pope, as the father of Christianity, to settle the Italian question. All his utterances on the subject have been discussed in the *Revue des deux Mondes* in such a manner as to place his orthodoxy beyond all doubt. Discussions of the same kind have been carried on regarding Gino Capponi, but even his German

biographer, the materialist Hillebrandt, bears testimony to his attitude of respect for the Papal position and independence.

In support of the same views, the *Osservatore Romano* of March 22nd adds the testimony of many foreign sympathizers with the Italian patriots, of M. Thiers, of Disraeli, of Gonzalez Serrano, of Wellesley, Palmerston, Canning and Grey, of Napoleon III., and La Guéronnière, of di Revel, Ferrari, Lord Normanby and Lord Lansdowne. The words are quoted which Disraeli once uttered in the House of Commons, that "the question of Rome was a matter of general interest for the whole world: for the Pope is a sovereign who should not be placed under the undue influence of any power in Europe"; and those of M. Thiers who said that "the unity of Catholicism required that the Roman Pontiff should be independent in the most complete and explicit manner, and that for the Pontificate there was no other mode of independence than sovereignty in that country which centuries had assigned to it, and which all the nations of the earth had maintained for considerations of supreme interest and importance." Similar declarations are quoted of all the others.

Meanwhile the greatest opponents of the Pope are compelled to admire the prudence and dignity with which Leo XIII. under circumstances of the most extraordinary difficulty, upholds the ancient glory of the Papacy. His patience under unwonted provocation, and his fatherly desire to maintain above all things the preservation of order and of peace have overcome the most obdurate opponents of his influence. Nowhere is this more remarkable than in the case of Germany. It is consoling to witness the cordial relations that now exist between the Pope and that country after so many years of struggle. Prussia, which held out longest in defence of the May Laws, has at last come to terms. According to the new bill introduced by Prince Bismarck, all the religious orders will be allowed back except the teaching orders. It does not yet appear quite clear if the Jesuits and Dominicans will be permitted to return in their missionary capacity, but it is quite certain that neither they nor any others will be allowed to open schools. The bishops will be able to open seminaries for the education of priests, and no clerical students will be obliged to frequent the universities as required by the Falk Statutes. Some difficulties have been raised with regard to the seminaries of Posen and of Kulm, as it is feared that the Polish national sentiment may be too ardently fostered there. The extent of the veto accorded to the Government in the appointment of parish priests is also the

subject of discussion ; but it is expected these points will be amicably settled, Prince Bismarck having declared that it was never his intention to enter into a permanent struggle with the Roman Curia.

The altered tone of French republicans noticeable for some time past is also most remarkable. The following extract from *La Liberté* shows the great change that has come over a large section of republican deputies.

“It is beyond all doubt that amidst the rumours of war which have moved public opinion within the past few weeks, Pope Leo XIII. has expressed the most lively sympathy for France. We are assured that it is in great part in the interest of our country, and to preserve the threatened peace that he openly brought his influence to bear on the Catholic party in the German Reichstag to vote for the military septennate, which M. de Bismarck declared indispensable to European peace. The words which the Holy Father addressed to our Ambassador at the Vatican on the same occasion are not less characteristic. The desire to be useful to us in the difficult position in which our country is placed, is manifested in them without reserve.

“This is assuredly greatness of soul on the part of the Pontiff, for we give very little reason to the august head of the Church, to show much regard or concern for our country. We should therefore be all the more touched by those manifestations of sympathy, which are evidently a delicate appeal to our better feelings, to our reason and our justice. Once more by those expressive demonstrations the Pope seems to hold out his hand towards us, to forget the unfortunate past, and to think only of the greatness and happiness of France.

“If in these conditions we have the wisdom to desire it sincerely, the reconciliation of Church and State will be much easier than many seem to imagine. That such a reconciliation is infinitely desirable, will henceforth be the opinion of by far the greater number of “bona fide” republicans. They have seen by proof how unfortunate for the present regime has been the war against religion, what detestable passions have been let loose within the last eight years, and they evidently understand that the time has come for a more moderate, wise, and liberal policy. The majority of the Chamber evidently struck with this truth, leaves henceforward to the “*energumena*” of Radicalism a monopoly of the struggle against the clergy—Why should they persist any longer in a policy of sectarianism which has produced so much evil, and which can only excite passions and hatred?

“If it is true that Leo XIII., by the spirit of conciliation which

has characterized all his acts since his accession to the Papacy, shows such friendly dispositions in our regard, why should we not answer his generosity in such a way as to seal once more between the Papacy and France an understanding, which may have the happiest consequences for both one and the other? Why should we not, by going back on a deplorable error, endeavour to regain for the republic that great moral force of the Church, which intolerance and persecution have so awkwardly made our enemy.

“The terrible but powerful and able man, that for sixteen years has ruled European politics from Berlin, M. de Bismarck, has given us on this point an example which we should not hesitate long to follow. In order to obtain the help of the Sovereign Pontiff he gave up the *Culturkampf*. He went to Canossa though he had sworn never to travel on that road. He, a Protestant Power, became reconciled with the Catholic Church. Still more—he has glorified and raised up the moral authority of the Pope, and the prestige of the Papacy higher, and more brilliantly than any ruler that ever went before him.

“Shall we allow Germany alone to profit by the new influence which the head of Catholicity is about to acquire in the modern world and which he aspires to use so nobly.”

Another indirect testimony of respect to the Holy See is the satisfaction expressed on a recent occasion by General Grover Cleveland, President of the United States, at the elevation to the Sacred College of Cardinal Gibbons, Archbishop of Baltimore. Americans are justly proud of the marks of distinction with which the new Cardinal has been received in Rome. It is the crowning of a life of extraordinary zeal which has been acknowledged and admired by his countrymen, without exception of creed or party. In the ordinary course of things his Eminence has still many years of life to devote to the service of the Church. That in itself is a guarantee of progress for Catholicity in the United States, and especially for Catholic Education, in which his Eminence takes such an active interest. We have before us a circular which has recently been addressed, with his Eminence's concurrence and sanction, to the Church authorities of the United States, calling upon them to devise and adopt some plan of “*concursus*” or competition between the Catholic Intermediate colleges of America with the object of strengthening the studies of boys who have a vocation for the priesthood, and developing the teaching power of the masters. The necessity for such a course and the results that might be expected form it are admirably set forth in the document itself.

“Hitherto one of the principal obstacles to the improvement of ecclesiastical studies has been found in the imperfect preparation of the aspirants admitted to pursue them. First of all, their knowledge of Latin has been, and often is still, lamentably deficient. The great majority of them reach Philosophy and Theology unable to speak or write with any freedom the language which is to be the medium of their subsequent studies. Many of them even fail to catch the sense of an easy text book. Hence a considerable loss of the time which should be given to personal thought and deeper research—a constant drag—painfully felt to the end of the course by professors and students.”

Then the proposal is made for a concursus of colleges and the success of the Intermediate system recently introduced into Ireland is emphasized as an encouragement to try something similar in the United States.

J. F. HOGAN.

DOCUMENTS.

DECREE OF THE SACRED CONGREGATION OF RITES FOR THE INTRODUCTION OF THE CAUSE OF BEATIFICATION, OR DECLARATION OF MARTYRDOM, OF TWO HUNDRED AND SIXTY-ONE VENERABLE SERVANTS OF GOD, WHO WERE PUT TO DEATH IN ENGLAND FOR THE FAITH.

In the persecution which so fiercely raged in England during the sixteenth century and afterwards, against the Catholic Faith and the divinely instituted Primacy of the Roman Pontiff, very many of the faithful of every rank, after enduring mockery and stripes, bonds and imprisonment, and suffering many kinds of cruel torture, courageously laid down their lives for Religion. By their death the enemies of Catholicity, in the country which in past ages was deservedly called an Island of Saints, thought to tear up the Catholic Church by its roots. But the blood of the slain, who from the moment of their glorious death were everywhere held to be true Martyrs of Christ, became the seed of new offspring in the Church, which has there day by day wonderfully grown.

The times were adverse to the drawing up of the formalities required for the Process of these illustrious Martyrs, and to the introduction of their Cause in the Sacred Congregation of Rites, though it was greatly desired, not only in England, but also by the faithful throughout the Catholic world. But now, since the restoration of the Catholic Hierarchy in England, what was so earnestly looked for has in our day been happily accomplished; for the Catholic Bishops have been able to collect together the ancient records; and, by authority of the Ordinary, to institute in the ecclesiastical court of Westminster the formal Process as to the Martyrdom, the Cause of Martyrdom, and the Signs, or Miracles, of three hundred and five Servants of God who were put to death for the Catholic Faith.

The acts of this Process, supported by authentic documents, were laid before the Apostolic See, and were immediately followed by a Petition of the Bishops, and of many other distinguished ecclesiastics and laymen of the whole of England.

Our Holy Father Pope Leo XIII. was pleased to entrust the examination of this matter to a special Commission, consisting of several Cardinals of the Holy Roman Church and Officials of the Congregation of Sacred Rites, with directions that the said examination should be preceded by a Disquisition to be drawn up by the Right Reverend Promoter of the Holy Faith; and a Dispensation was also granted in respect to the introduction of the Cause before the lapse of the ten years required by Decrees, from the day of presenting the Ordinary Process in the Sacred Congregation, and in respect also to its introduction before the written documents had been revised.

Afterwards in a special Congregation, assembled at the Vatican on the day below-mentioned, the undersigned Cardinal Dominic Bartolini, Prefect of the said Sacred Congregation, who had charge of the Cause, proposed the following question: "*Whether the Commission is to be signed for the Introduction of the Cause, in the matter and to the effect under consideration.*"

Then the Most Reverend Fathers and the Official Prelates, after hearing the written and oral report of the aforesaid Promoter of the Holy Faith, and after the matter had been fully discussed, decided: *That the Commission is to be signed, if it shall please His Holiness, in respect of two hundred and sixty-one; namely—Anthony Brookby, Thomas Belchiam and Thomas Cort, of the Order of St. Francis; Griffith Clark, Priest; N. Waire, of the Order of St. Francis; Adrian Fortescue and Thomas Dingley, Knights of St. John of Jerusalem;*

John Travers, Priest of the Order of Hermits of St. Augustine; John Beche, Abbot of Colchester; Hugh Faringdon, Abbot of Reading; Richard Whiting, Abbot of Glastonbury; Roger James and John Thorn, Monks of Glastonbury; William Onion and John Rugg, of the Order of St. Benedict; Edmund Brindholm, Priest; Clement Philpot, layman; David Gunston, Knight of Jerusalem; John Ireland, Priest; Thomas Ashby, John Slade and John Bodey, laymen; George Haydock, James Fenn, Thomas Hemerford, John Nutter and John Munden, Priests; William Carter, layman; James Bell, priest; John Finch and Richard White, laymen; Thomas Alfield, priest; Thomas Webley, layman; Hugh Taylor, Priest; Marmaduke Bowes, layman; Edwd. Strancham and Nicholas Woodfen, priests; Margaret Clithero, of the laity; Richard Sergeant (*alias* Lee), William Thomson, Robert Anderton, William Marsden, Francis Ingolby, John Finglow, John Sandys, John Lowe, John Adams and Richard Dibdale, Priest; Robert Bickerdike and Richard Langley, laymen; Thomas Pilchard, Edmund Sykes, Robert Sutton, Stephen Rowscham, John Hambley, George Douglas, Alexander Crow, Nicholas Garlick, Robert Ludlam, Richard Sympson, and William Dean, Priests; Henry Webley, layman; William Gunter and Robert Morton, Priests; Hugh More, layman; Thomas Holford and James Claxton, Priests; Thomas Felton, of the Order of Minims; Richard Leigh, Priest; Edward Shelley, Richard Martin, Richard Flower, John Roch, and Margaret Ward, of the laity; William Way, (*alias* Wigges), Robert Wilcox, Edward Campion, and Christopher Buxton, Priests; Robert Wildmerpool, layman; Rodolph Crochet, Edward James, John Robinson, and William Hartley, Priests; Robert Sutton, layman; Richard Williams, John Hewett (*alias* Weldon, Edward Burden, William Lampley, John Amias, Robert Dalby, George Nicols, and Richard Yaxley, Priests; Thomas Belson and Humphrey Prichard, laymen; William Spenser, Priest; Robert Hardesty, layman; Christopher Bales (or Bayles), Priest; Nicholas Horner and Alex. Blake, laymen; Miles Gerard, Francis Dickenson, Edwd. Jones, Anthony Middleton, Edmund Duke, Richd. Hill, John Hog, Richd. Holliday, and Robt. Thorpe, Priests; Thos. Watkinson, layman; Momford Scott, George Beesley, and Roger Dickenson, Priests; Rodolph Milner, William Pike, and Laurence Humphrey, laymen; Edmund Genings, Priest; Swithin Wells, layman; Eustace White and Polydore Plasden, Priests; Brian Lacy, John Mason, and Sydney Hodgson, laymen; William Patenson and Thomas Pormort, Priests; Robert Ashton, layman; Edward

Waterson, Priest; James Bird, laymen; Anthony Page, Joseph Lampton, and William Davies, Priests; John Speed, layman; Wm. Harrington, Priest; John Cornelius, of the Society of Jesus; Thomas Bosgrave, John Carey, and Patrick Salmon, laymen; John Boste and John Ingram, Priests; George Swallowell, layman; Edward Osbaldeston, Priest; Robert Southwell, of the Society of Jesus; Alexander Rawlins, Priest; Henry Walpole, of the Society of Jesus; William Freeman, Priest; Philip Howard, Earl of Arundel; George Errington, William Knight, William Gibson, and Henry Abbot, laymen; William Andleby, Priest; Thomas Warcop, Edward Fulthorp, and John Britton, laymen; Peter Snow, Priest; Rodolph Grimston, layman; John Buckley (or Jones), of the Order of St. Francis; Christopher Robinson and Richard Horner, Priests; John Lion and James Dowdall, laymen; Christopher Wharton, Priest; John Rigby, layman; Thomas Sprott, Thomas Hunt, Robert Nutter, Edward Thwing, and Thomas Palasor, Priests; John Norton and John Talbot, laymen; John Pibush, Priest; Mark Barkworth, of the Order of St. Benedict; Roger Filcock, of the Society of Jesus; Anne Line, of the laity; Thurstan Hunt and Robert Middleton, Priests; Nicholas Tichborne and Thomas Hackshot, laymen; James Harrison, Priest; Anthony Bates and James Ducket, laymen; Thomas Tichborne and Robert Watkinson, Priests; Francis Page, of the Society of Jesus; William Richardson and John Sugar, Priests; Robert Grissold, Laurence Baily, Thomas Welbourne, John Fulthering, and William Brown, laymen; Nicholas Owen, Edward Oldcorne, and Rodolph Ashley, of the Society of Jesus; Robert Drury and Matthew Flathers, Priests; George Gervase of the Order of St. Benedict; Thomas Garnet, of the Society of Jesus; Roger Cadwallador, George Napier and Thomas Somers, Priests; William Scot and John Roberts, of the Order of St. Benedict; Richard Newport, John Almond, Thomas Atkinson, and John Thulis, Priests; Roger Wrenno, layman; Thomas Maxfield, Thomas Tunstal, and William Southerne, Priests; Edmund Arrowsmith, of the Society of Jesus; Richard Herst, layman; William Ward, Priest; Edward Barlow, of the Order of St. Benedict; Thomas Reynolds, Priest; Bartholomew Roe, of the Order of St. Benedict; John Lockwood, Edmund Catherick, Edward Morgan, and Hugh Green, Priests; Thomas Bullaker of the Order of St. Francis; Thomas Holland, of the Society of Jesus; Henry Heath and Arthur Bell of the Order of St. Francis; Price, layman; John Ducket, Priest; Rodolph Corby, Henry Morse, and Brian Cansfield, of the Society of Jesus;

John Goodman, Priest; Philip Powel, of the Order of St. Benedict; Edward Bamber, Priest; John Woodcock, of the Order of St. Francis; Thomas Whitaker, Priest; Peter Wright, of the Society of Jesus; John Southworth, Priest; Edward Coleman, layman; Edward Mico, Thomas Bedingfield, and William Ireland, of the Society of Jesus; John Grove, layman; Thomas Pickering, of the Order of St. Benedict; Thomas Whitbread, William Harcourt, John Fenwick, John Green (or Gavan), Anthony Turner. and Francis Nevill, of the Society of Jesus; Richard Langhorne, layman; Wm. Plessington, Priest; Philip Evans, of the Society of Jesus; John Lloyd and Nicholas Postgate, Priests; Charles Mahony, John Wall, and Francis Levison, of the Order of St. Francis; John Kemble, Priest; David Lewis (*alias* Charles Baker), of the Society of Jesus; Thomas Thwing, Priest; William Howard, Viscount Stafford; and Oliver Plunket, Archbishop of Armagh. As to the other forty-four, the decision was: Delayed, and further proofs must be given.—On the 4th day of December, 1886.

The undersigned Secretary having then made a faithful and accurate report of all that precedes to our Holy Father Pope Leo XIII., his Holiness, ratifying the decision of the Sacred Congregation, vouchsafed to sign the Commission for the Introduction of the Cause with his own hand, on the ninth day of the same month and year.

D. CARDINAL BARTOLINI,

Prefect of the Congregation of Sacred Rites.

LAURENCE SALVATI, *Secretary.*

L. ✠ S.

[Owing to the length of the essays and the large number of questions sent by our subscribers, we are obliged to hold over for this month our usual Notices of Books.—Ed. I. E. R.]

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

MAY, 1887.

NOMINA PATRICIANA.

IT is to be regretted that there are few such national saints as St. Patrick whose historical picture in many salient points has been kept in more uncertain light, or has been more absolutely obscured. The causes of this are not far to seek. However, the aim of this paper is not to dwell on these causes or indulge in useless regrets, but to supply, as far as may be, an existing want.

Second in interest only to his consecration is the question of the ordination of an apostolic bishop, especially when taken in connection with the scene of his future labours; and than the place of St. Patrick's ordination, no question has given rise to more discussion, uncertainty, and hopeless contradiction. The present article is intended then to establish as tolerably certain the ordainer and the scene of the ordination; and I the more willingly undertake to do so, as it has been associated with the famous "Staff of Jesus," whose rich ornamentation has been graphically described by St. Bernard, and whose possession was deemed necessary and sufficient for conferring primatial jurisdiction.¹

The old scholiast on the first Life of our national apostle tells us that Pope Celestine refused to consecrate St. Patrick, though he did so afterwards, because he had already sent

¹ It was publicly burned by Protestant bigots in Dublin, at the beginning of the so-called Reformation.

another bishop, Palladius, to Ireland. (*Trias Thaumaturga*, Colgan, p. 5, n. 14). The Life then proceeds to state :—

“When Celestine then refused to ordain Patrick a bishop, he turned away to an island of the Tuscan sea, and there found the Staff of Jesus in an island called Alanensis near Mount Arnon.”

The author of the third Life writes in reference to the same matter :—

“But whilst Patrick had been in Rome, he heard the voice of an angel from heaven saying ‘go to the island, Ireland, and help those who cry to thee.’ And Patrick said ‘I will not go till I salute the Lord.’ And the angel conducted him to Mount Arnon on the sea of Latium overhanging the rock of the Tuscan sea, in a city called Capua, and, as Moses, he saluted the Lord.”¹

The fourth Life on the same subject thus writes :—

“He therefore sailed right through the Tuscan Sea, and received the ‘Staff of Jesus’ from a certain young man in a certain island, who had entertained Christ. And the Lord spoke to Patrick on the mountain, and ordered him to go to Ireland.”²

We learn from Joceline, author of the fifth Life, the following particulars :—

“Patrick answered that he was unequal to so heavy a burden and difficult task, that he could never think of undertaking such responsibility without seeing and saluting the Lord. He was then conducted by the angel to Mount Morion near the Tuscan sea by the city of Capua, and there, as Moses, he merited to see and salute the Lord according to the desires of his ardent love.”³

The Tripartite Life (Colgan) on the question in hands writes as follows :—⁴

“He sailed through the Tuscan Sea until according to divine arrangements he came to a certain island on which, in a house as if new, he found spouses of a flourishing age with a decrepit old woman who could move only on all fours, and leaning on a stick. The saint while condoling with her extreme age and weakness learnt from the young robust man that she was his great grand daughter, and that her mother more decrepit and feeble still lived. Our saint, on inquiring into the cause of such a novelty, was told by the young man that he and his wife had been devoted to works of mercy, and that their house and table had been open, and at the service of travellers and

¹ *Trias Thaum.*, p. 13, ch. xxv.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 70, ch. xxvi.

² *Ibid.*, p. 39, ch. xxix.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 122, ch. xxxvi.

pilgrims who sought hospitality for Christ's sake. Hence on a certain occasion we entertained with all possible courtesy and attention Christ Our Saviour under the appearance of a pilgrim with a staff in hand. Before leaving us, he blessed us and our house, declaring that he was Christ the Lord; and by his blessing we have been kept in pristine youth, while our offspring not then born did not share in the like blessing. On that account they are subject to the natural law as to age. He left us the staff, which he carried, commissioned us to keep it for a certain pilgrim who was to come after many years and to be the apostle of Ireland. We therefore present your holiness with the staff left with us for you by the Lord Jesus. But Patrick refused to accept it till he should receive it from the hands of Jesus, and have him confirm the donation. And after three days' tarrying there, he came to a neighbouring mountain called Hermon, where Christ through a merciful condescension did appear to him, and directed him to prepare for the conversion of Ireland, and then gave him as to Moses the staff."

Its powers for the working of miracles are then lengthily described.

The fifth Life by Probus (Colgan, p. 48), speaks as follows in reference to the journey of St. Patrick:—

"Again the angel appeared to St. Patrick and said 'go to holy Senior, bishop, who is on Mount Hermon at the south side of the sea of the ocean; and his city is fortified by seven walls,' (Vallatam septem muris.) And the Saint having rested there for several days, received order of priesthood from him and read with him long and frequently. While the Saint tarried there, he heard in vision the voices of the young crying in their mothers' wombs in Ireland and saying, 'come, holy Patrick, and save us from the coming wrath.' At the same time the angel said to him 'go to Ireland: thou shalt be apostle of that island.' Patrick answered 'I cannot go, for there are evil men there.' The angel replied 'go;' but Patrick rejoined 'he would not go without seeing the Lord.' Patrick then went forth and saw the Lord. And the Lord said, 'sit at my right hand.' Patrick did so sit. Then the Lord said 'go to Ireland and preach the word of eternal life.' Then Patrick in reply made three requests of the Lord."¹

We have now before us all the available evidence in reference to the places and persons connected with St. Patrick's ordination. The learned Dr. Lanigan has inferred from all this that the scene of St. Patrick's ordination was

¹ "Postulo a te, Domine, ut homines scilicet Hiberniae divites sint in auro et argento; et ego sim patronus eorum; et post hanc vitam sedeam ad dextram tuam in cœlo." Ch. xviii.

the rock of Mount Saint Michael, in the bay of Cancale, near Avranches. He had to admit that there had been no fixed bishop there for a long time subsequent to St. Patrick's age; but suggests that he may have been temporarily there. He understood by the *southern sea*, the English channel, as being south in reference to an Irishman. But we must understand the *south* as spoken in reference to France. For St. Patrick when directed to go to the hermits, to Lerins, and to Rome, was in France; and it is presumable that there he was when told immediately after to go to the south side of the sea. He had been previously in the northern part of the Tuscan sea; and the *south* must be understood as referring to the director St. German rather than to the narrator. Indeed, Dr. Lanigan speaks with reserve when he says that the whole passage is curious and worthy of further inquiry.

The Bollandists indicate Pisa as the object of our inquiry. They suggest that Saint Senior may have been bishop of Pisa, who lived on Mount Hermon. But it is considered that the learned Bollandists had no better grounds for their suggestion than the similarity of the river Arno on which Pisa stands to Mount Arnon.¹

The very learned Colgan, editor of the *Lives*, could not with the aid of his brethren scattered through every part of Italy, identify a mount called Hermon. He would then suggest that it was probably a mistake for Orland, that Capua was perhaps used instead of Cajeta, and that thus Cajeta could truly be said by the *Lives* to be in the Tuscan sea; whereas Capua is not there but on the river Volturnus.² The learned writer anticipating an objection—that Cajeta was not on the way to Rome from France, brings into play the force of the winds, and throws St. Patrick in a tempest on the shore of Gaeta.

Sir Samuel Ferguson, late President of the Royal Irish Academy, suggests that the Bishop of Arles was St. Patrick's ordainer. For he judged that the seven-walled city spoken of in the *Lives* probably referred to Marseilles, and that the Irish writers may have mistaken seven for six, "the six-fours."

¹ *Comm. ad vitam S. P.* 29, 35.

² *Tr. Thaum.*, p. 31, m. 25, 26.

In this theory he supposes that the Bishop of Arles ordained our Saint in Marseilles.¹ But the objection against Dr. Lanigan's supposition tells also against this theory. And indeed the indecision of the learned President does not inspire confidence; for he says that we can suppose that some city in Provence *may* have been called Capua, as Arles was called the Rome of Gaul.

The late Father Shearman who had been painstaking and successful in tracing the footsteps of St. Patrick has not been equally fortunate in the identification of his continental journeys. For he suggests that Lerins or Capraria between Corsica and Tuscany may have been the island of which we have been in search.² But it should be borne in mind that the earliest and most authentic life of our Saint speaks of his journeying through the Tuscan sea, after having passed the Alps, and of his tarrying in the southern portion of Latium. The *Book of Armagh* represents St. Patrick himself saying: "I had the fear of God as my guide in journeying through Gaul, Italy, and even in the islands of the Tuscan Sea."³ And in another passage of the same Book he is described as journeying by land and water through Gaul, *all* Italy, and in the islands of the Tuscan sea, (in *campestribus* locis et in convallibus montanis.)

St. German was the first person, as the *Book of Armagh* assures us, to whom St. Patrick after leaving home applied in order to prepare for the ecclesiastical state. For Germanus had excited universal remark and admiration. Previous to his consecration he had ducal power; he was Governor of Brittany, and had studied civil law in Italy. He became after consecration the head of a famous school of clerics at Auxerre. St. Patrick after having remained for some time with him went, according to the Lives, by his direction to the famous monastery of St. Martin of Tours, where he is represented to have received the ecclesiastical tonsure. He was directed subsequently to go to the 'hermits and solitaries.' In the next place St. Patrick

¹ Tr. R. I. A. vol xxvii. part 6; Dec. 1885.

² *Loca Patriciana*, no. xiii. p. 442.

³ *Documenta de S. P.* (Ed. by Rev. E. Hogan, S. J.) pp. 57, 58.

had been advised to go to Lerins where St. Honoratus presided. St. Honoratus of patrician rank turned his back on his father's home, and renounced title and earthly possessions. The School of Lerins drew around it the most noble and learned in Gaul. After some years at Lerins, St. Patrick was directed by the angel or St. Germanus, under whose guidance he acted, to go through the Tuscan Sea to some famous school of sublime virtue and apostolic detachment; and of that sort was the School of Saint Paulinus. Famous contemporaneously as were the Schools of St. Martin of Tours, who from being a centurion became monk and bishop; of St. Germanus, who from being duke became monk and Bishop of Auxerre; of that of St. Honoratus, who from being a Patrician became monk, abbot, and bishop of Arles, no less famous was the School of St. Paulinus, whose praises were celebrated by St. Ambrose, St. Augustine, St. Martin, and St. Jerome. St. Paulinus, descended by father and mother from a long line of consuls, enjoyed himself the consular dignity. He was connected with the renowned Melania, and thus could claim kindred with the Scipios and the Gracchi. With the consent of his wife or rather at her suggestion he sold out their vast possessions in Gaul and Spain; and both having disposed in charity of their property renounced the world.

He became a cleric, a monk in the prime of life, the head of a famous school, and subsequently Bishop of Nola. Even St. Germanus had sent some students to him; amongst others was Victricius who became Bishop of Rouen. The school was near Nola, the only remnant of the vast possessions held by St. Paulinus.

We should not then wonder if our apostle had been directed to the famous school of St. Paulinus, in order to perfect himself in the science of the saints. Sailing right through the Tuscan sea to its southern limits according to the description of the Lives, a pilgrim comes to the shore of Naples. At the southern horn of the crescent bay there lies an island called Capri. It is so far southern that the Tuscan Sea mingles with the Mediterranean, and thus mediately with the Atlantic Ocean; and thus would be verified in Capri, the description

given by the Lives of an island lying in the Ocean-sea, (Tyrrheni Maris Oceani).

The island lying N.E. by S.W. would naturally be first touched at the former point by a pilgrim sailing from the Gaulish coast. Here it was St. Patrick received the "Staff of Jesus." Here the need of the staff was felt, for the cliff is very steep. It is only by a flight of three hundred and thirty-two steps, called the *Scalinata*, there is a descent to the shore. The staff was very useful whether we consider the descent or the long journey that stretched before the pilgrim homewards. And here it may not be amiss to offer some remarks on the novel incidents connected with the island.

We may suppose that the lord of the mountains, and perhaps of Capri, visited the solitaries on the island, and, on leaving, left his staff to be given to some more weary visitor than himself, such as St. Patrick: hence St. Patrick, as said in the Lives, would have the staff given him by the lord himself. Or we may suppose that there had been a legend connecting the staff in some way with our Saviour, and can understand why St. Patrick may have scrupled keeping it till he should previously have consulted the lord or master on the mountain. And as to the marked difference in the ages of those in the island, it may be accounted for on the principle by which an island near Roscrea was called the "island of the living"—a misunderstood metaphor.

Again, an easy and natural explanation of the staff may be given by supposing that a pilgrim came to the island and died there; but before dying left his staff to his hosts and then went to heaven. When the Gospel tells us that whoever entertained or gave to eat to the least in the name of Christ did it to Christ himself, the story of the "Staff of Jesus," worked up by a lively imagination with the use of metaphor or allegory need not be unintelligible. Minds less imaginative than the Celtic mind make use of figures in explaining a very plain fact.¹

¹ "Quid, putamus, nisi quia hospitalitatis officio ad suam cognitionem pervenire posse intimavit, ut cum longius ab hominibus abscesserit super omnes cœlos, tamen cum iis sit qui hoc exhibent servis ejus." St. Aug. *Quæst. Evang.* lib. 2, ch. 51.

To be sure some of the Irish Lives speak of persons four hundred years old in the island. But this may be explained by supposing a legend represented in writing or art, in connection with our Saviour's entertainment at Emmaus or with some other passage of His life. And in this connection it is well to bear in mind that the Emperor Tiberius spent ten years on this island, and that he proposed to the Senate to have our Saviour admitted among the Roman deities.¹ This arose from the wonderful account which Pilate gave of our Redeemer, in the usual official statement drawn up in reference to the crucifixion and life of our Redeemer. Who can say what representations in sculpture or otherwise were made by or attributed to Tiberius in regard to our Saviour? For it is unquestionable there were false acts of Pilate forged in the third and fourth centuries, on the strength of which several lessons were founded and read for some time in parts of France. As there had been then false representations in writing, what wonder if there had been such in art? Capri is rich in relics of metals and sculpture.

If we would understand several passages in the Lives, we must make allowance for a poetic turn with a moderate use of figurative language. For instance, we learn (in *Vita Quarta*, ch. xxxvii.) "that Bishop Loarn was in Imreathan, and that he dared to rebuke St. Patrick for holding the hand of the youth at play." This, prosaically told, means that a little boy at play allowed his hoop to fall into St. Patrick's grave. He stooped and thrust down his hand for the hoop, but could not withdraw it. The neighbours thought it advisable to tell the circumstances to Bishop Loarn, who came and addressed St. Patrick: "why, Senior, detain the hand of the boy?" And Bishop Loarn was said to be in Imreathan because his remains were there.

I have lingered the longer about the island Capri, as Dr. Todd in his *St. Patrick* has deemed the incidents mentioned in the Lives in connection with it as unworthy of any notice unless a sneer, and has accused the honest and learned Father Colgan of dishonesty in his endeavour to lessen the

¹ Justin ; Tertullian, *Apolog.* 5, 21 ; Gregory of Tours, *Histor.* l. 1. Epiphanius, *Hæres.* 50, c. 1.

absurdity of the incidents. But so far from being absurd, if read rightly they are true. If Dr. Todd were a competent historian by detecting the error of copyists, the apparent absurdity would disappear, as I shall show just now as I hasten to the main subject of my inquiry.

Probus informs us that St. Patrick having tarried three days in the island went to a bishop in a neighbouring mountain. It has been called Morion, Hermon, or Arnon. The Lives are not and should not be positive, as there is no mountain of that name there. From the Cape of Minerva, which almost touches the island Capri, on to the river Liris, there rises a semicircular chain of mountains which enclose the rich plain of Campania. A link through which to break into Campania is Mount Sarnus. It is washed by the river Sarnus, which makes its way after a course of eleven miles into the gulf of Sorrentum. The endings of the letter were mistaken in the old Lives for *H*, and thus Sarnus (appellatum Harnum) was transformed into Hermon. The mountain is so high as to overhang the rock of the sea (*supra petram Maris*). It was not literally on the rock, as mistranslated by Dr. Todd and later biographers. But what does it overhang? It overhangs the ancient Stibiaë where the elder Pliny in the year 79, from an indiscreet zeal for knowledge, lost his life. To make observations he approached too nearly to burning Vesuvius, which rises thousands of feet high between Stibiaë and Sarnus. The ancient Stibiaë gave way to a city called Castel-a-mare. It is built partly on a rock in the sea and partly on the mountain. The *petra Maris* of the Lives is a fair equivalent for Castel-a-mare. But there is another Castel-a-mare on the Sicilian coast, west of Palermo, and six miles from Alcamo; and hence the Lives very accurately added the distinctive characteristic—*Maris Tyrrheni*—which Dr. Lanigan characterised as *bungling*. Alack! we would quench the lights kindled for our guidance. The description of the mountain is graphic and accurate. If there had been a monastery at Sarnus, it must have been subject to Nola, as being within a few miles of it. To my knowledge there had been no monastery there then: and if so, St. Patrick must have alluded to the mountain only as a passage

through which he moved on to Nola. Between Nola and the mountain lay St. Paulinus' monastery. He built a church there too in honour of the martyred Felix. Now we see why the bishop's city on the mountain or summit level was surrounded by a rampart and seven walls (*ejus civitas vallata septem muris*). This was the more necessary as the plain was quite level. The towers were as useful for, and more easy of defence than walls, and with great propriety may be called walls. The Lives and Silius Italicus¹ agree in their description of Nola.

“*Campo Nola sedet, crebris circumdata in orbem
Turribus, et celso facilem tutatur adiri
Planitiem vallo.*”

The only draw-back to this accurate description of St. Paulinus' city, a source of irremediable confusion too to the biographers, is the allusion to the city of Capua. But it should be borne in mind that while Capua is eighteen miles from Naples, Nola is only fourteen miles distant, that Paulinus was consul, and subsequently consular of the rich province of Campania, that Capua was its capital, and that it was there the consuls used to reside.² For all these reasons we can understand how the Lives called Capua his city, though he did not usually reside there. He generally lived at Nola, owing to his great devotion to St. Felix; and to the intercession of the saint he attributed the great mercy of having had to put no person to death during his consulship. Even when bishop he dwelt in the monastery outside Nola, towards Sarnus, where he recited the offices with his monks, as he called them, fasted, acted as porter to the martyr's church, and swept it daily.

One objection lies against St. Paulinus being St. Patrick's ordainer: it is this—the Lives call him Senior. But this need not be a Christian name. Colgan suggests it to be a mistake for senator. Dr. Todd has no light to offer and makes him Saint Senior (*sanctum seniozem Episcopum*).

Senior, like *presbyter*, one the comparative of a Latin word, the other, that of its corresponding Greek word,

¹ *Punica*, lib., xii., v. 161.

² Muratori, *Dissertat.* 9. p. 816.

signified an elder or venerable, and in course of time came to mean, in ecclesiastical language, a prelate or priest, though *senior* sometimes retained its original signification. Tertullian speaks of the *Seniors* who acquired their dignity not by money, but worth.¹ The rule and even the Penitential of St. Columbanus speak too of the Senior.² The Irish Mass discovered by the famous Matthew Illyricus speaks of the Senior,³ as does also the Irish Stowe Missal,⁴ (Oblationem quam offero pro seniore nostro; senior noster, N. presbyter). We saw awhile ago how Bishop Loarn in expostulating with St. Patrick, in reference to the little boy's hand being caught, called him Senior. Colman-Elo addressed a rebuke to the monk (bone Senior), who grew tired of listening to the hymn in honor of St. Patrick. Nennius, who describes the excesses of King Vortigern, brings St. Germanus on the scene to reproach and correct him. In order to bring conviction home to the guilty king, the saint ordered a youth to approach his father among a crowd of bystanders; who, in obedience to the voice of the holy, very venerable bishop, pointed out the king, (mox ut audivit puer, obedivit verbo sancti senioris).⁵ This last instance proves how wrong was Dr. Todd in making *sanctus* a noun, in order to prepare for another mistake—that of making *senior* a proper name. A Saint Senior then in connection with St. Patrick's ordination is a myth.

A mistake of a kindred nature, but far more serious in its consequences, is one in connection with the word *dominus*. The Lives inform us that St. Patrick set out through the Tuscan Sea in order to visit the lord (dominum), on the mountain. Paulinus could be called such for many reasons. He was Consul; he had possessions so extensive on the Garonne, at Bordeaux, at Narbonne, in Barcelona, that Ausonius (Ep. 23), says they were divided between a hundred possessors. In addition to these claims to the title of lord or master, he was the most literary character of the day, so much so that the celebrated Ausonius acknowledged himself

¹ "Non pretio sed testimonio adepti." Apolog. 39. ² C. 7; C. 28

³ Malone's *Church History*, vol. 1, p. 189.

⁴ Fol. 28, b.

⁵ *Histor. Briton.*, ch. xxxix

inferior to St. Paulinus. In proof of his talents and the good use made of them we may point to the sweet ode annually composed in honor of St. Felix's festival. And it is very remarkable that the Lives, speaking of St. Patrick's stay with St. Paulinus, state that he read frequently and long with him. (*Lectitavit multis temporibus*). But the word applied with propriety to St. Paulinus by the original biographer underwent a slight change in the hands of the copyist, and the simple lord (*dominus*, or master), was transformed into the Lord and Saviour. Hence, the indecent and almost profane requests which the Lives state had been granted by the Lord to St. Patrick. But stripped of poetical imagery or rhetorical flourish, there is nothing unbecoming in that St. Patrick begged the prayers of St. Paulinus for the temporal and eternal happiness of the Irish, that they would receive himself as their teacher, and that he would share in the glory which he confidently hoped was in store for St. Paulinus.

While the biographers of our national saint, some very learnedly, and all very earnestly, have endeavoured to throw light on what was not very clear, Dr. Todd forms an exception. After establishing his own incapability, he accuses Colgan of dishonesty, who fairly gave his best aid. Colgan in editing one of the Lives omits the foolish petitions attributed to St. Patrick in reference to the gold and silver for the Irish while he was with the lord or master; on which Dr. Todd asks, what purpose was served by this suppression? The answer is simple, that he had given these petitions in a previous life, (*Vita Sexta*), that they may not have been in the copy that he had before him, and that they appeared incredible. The apprehension that mention of what appeared absurd would shake all faith in what was certain, would be a natural motive. Dr. Todd's criticism on the alleged omission reminds me of his strictures (p. 435 of his *St. Patrick*), on Franciscan Friars. He accuses them of paganism because they copy in the seventeenth century the old annalists, who in figurative language described the sun and wind as killing King Leogaire for having violated an oath taken on them. The friars were pagans for honestly quoting

the annals; now they are rogues because they appear not to quote what did not seem credible or worthy of God.

In the same connection Colgan is accused of stating some thing which some Irish Lives related about the people in the island near Sarnus—that some of them were four hundred years old. On this Dr. Todd remarks, “it was not worth while to commit this piece of dishonesty.”

Dr. Todd devotes some 18 pages of his *St. Patrick* (pp. 320-38) to the passages under our consideration; and as his views differ from those in this Essay, I shall briefly notice them.

He states that (a) the whole story cannot be applied to one person, a part referring to St. Patrick, and another part to Palladius, who was before him on the Irish mission, and that the places referred to are *fragments of forgotten geography* (this is copied by Sir Samuel Ferguson and Father Shearman) (b) that St. Patrick was falsely represented as receiving a good education under St. German; that (c) the biographers deliberately interpolated the old *Book of Armagh*, in order to establish St. Patrick's education under St. German; (d) and that Palladius was ordained about Capua, while St. Patrick was ordained not about the Tuscan Sea but the Straits of Dover. To reply briefly: the biographers and genuine admirers of the Saint say that he got the best education, not intellectually but morally and as an Apostle; the places being identified do not belong to a chapter of *forgotten geography*; the biographers did not interpolate the *Book of Armagh*, there was no motive for so doing, but Dr. Todd has forged a fanciful *Book of Armagh*, or misquoted the real one. “The *Book of Armagh*,” he writes, “was interpolated to impose on a credulous people the fables of the ecclesiastical education of St. Patrick under St. German;” again “interpolation done deliberately to exalt their hero.” Let the *Book of Armagh* tell its story:¹

“St. Patrick remained with Germanus no short time, like another Paul at the feet of Gamaliel: in all subjection, patience and

¹ *Documenta de S. P.* (most learnedly edited by Rev. E. Hogan, S.J.), p. 24, which supplies the missing folio of the *B. of Armagh*.

obedience he learnt, loved, practised, with all the affection of his soul, knowledge, wisdom, chastity, everything that was useful to his spirit and soul, in great fear and love of God, in goodness and simplicity of heart, a virgin in body and mind."

Comment is unnecessary on the charge of deliberate interpolation of the *Book of Armagh*.

Dr. Todd so far from being equal to a life of St. Patrick appears not able to rise to the full measure of the Saint. Hence the many pages of his work bearing on our subject are one unbroken tissue of error in fact and opinions, of groundless suspicions and accusations and baseless theories. He foolishly assumes that the Schools of St. Martin and Germanus were intended for intellectual development merely, and that St. Patrick, if there, would have occupied himself in mastering the beauties of the classics. At the risk of being deemed Gothic in my views by the admirers of Dr. Todd's *St. Patrick*, I believe that our national Saint, the lowest amount possible of knowledge sufficient for his profession supposed, learnt "from the hermits and solitaries" (*nudis pedibus*) with whom he is said to have spent eight years, what was more useful for the conversion of our forefathers than the mere secular knowledge that all the Professors of Oxford and Cambridge ever had. He sought out the best schools for learning the sublimest lessons in the science of saints. He spared no trouble, shrank from no sacrifice, from the bank of the Avon to the shores of the Mediterranean, in culling and treasuring up the choicest flowers of virtue.

Despite Dr. Todd's writings we have found, I fancy, the remotest turning point in our Saint's holy wanderings. His Ordainer, who was Bishop of Nola from the year 409 to 429, is an additional proof of the fallacy of the theory that would push St. Patrick's mission back to the third century or move it on to the end of the fifth. He was ordained by the famous Paulinus of Nola, under the shadow of Mount Sarnus.

There are grounds for thankfulness if we have been fortunate enough to have discovered the long-lost name of the place of the saint's ordination. Even in the ninth century the holy Culdee Aengus was unable to spell out of the old MSS. anything more certain than Narnchin. The

festologist in gathering saints into his long litany from France, Rome, Greece and Egypt, did not overlook the hidden away mountain of Sarnus. He venerated the spot, however dimly known, on which our glorious apostle stood. We, with a more distinct knowledge of the locality, ought not be less reverential. *Adorabimus* (in spiritu) *in loco ubi steterunt pedes ejus*. The holy writer while commemorating the saints of God not only individually but in batches and boatsfull, aye, in fleets numbering each 150 vessels does not forget the little band that headed by their gallant leader, scaled the rugged heights of Sarnus.¹ After a thousand years we too make commemoration of them, and echoing the words of the Litanist pray: "The party who journeyed with Patrick on mount Sarnus *in auxilium meum invoco; per Jesum Christum*."²

SYLVESTER MALONE.

PHASES OF THE DIOCESAN SYNOD.

Ferraris—"Bibliotheca Canonica, etc."

Moroni—"Dizionario di Erudizione Ecclesiastica."

Soglia—"Jus Canonicum." Laureti, 1853.

Craisson—"Jus Canonicum." Paris, 1879.

Smith—"Ecclesiastical Law." New York, 1875, *seqq.*

"Pontificale Romanum—Ordo ad Synodum."

"Concilia Plenaria Baltimorensia, II. et III." Baltimore.

ONE of the chief theological works is that of Lambertini (Benedict XIV.), *De Synodo Dioecesana*. The subject, therefore, should be interesting, if only from the fact of so great a writer having devoted so much attention and labour to it. Moreover, we believe that your readers in the United States and Australia will be pleased with having some facts and opinions on the subject set before them, for in the former of the two last-mentioned countries at least Diocesan Synods not unfrequently take place.

A Diocesan Council or Synod is a meeting of the clergy of a diocese over which its Bishop presides. As for its

¹ Some give 9 as the number of persons who accompanied St. Patrick, while others variously give 20, 22, and 24.

² In *lucht oo oechutap la patpucc ipleib napnclm Leubar Breac* p. 23, penult, line.

definition, Benedict XIV. (*De Syn.* l. 1, c. 1, n. 4), thus writes: "Ad definitionem quod attinet non *incongrue*. . . . Synodus Dioecesana hisce fere verbis describitur: Legitima congregatio ab episcopo coacta ex presbyteris et clericis suae dioecesis aliisque qui ad eam accedere tenentur, in qua de his quae curae pastoralis incumbunt agendum et *deliberandum* est." Here we may perceive at once the truth of what Bellarmine says (*De Conc.* c. 4), that "diocesan synods can hardly be called councils, as there is no one that has jurisdiction there, excepting only the Bishop." Still the law gives the chapter, not the clergy in general, what is equivalent to a decisive vote in certain cases, as the Bishop for instance cannot alienate Church property nor erect new parishes without their consent; moreover, legitimate custom in some places makes it necessary to have the chapter's consent to synodical statutes (v. Craisson, *Elementa Jur. Can.*, n. 414). But as that law is by no means universally binding (as, for example, where there are no chapters, nor perhaps even legally appointed consultors); and as scarce any custom of such moment is legitimately prescribed in our recently established hierarchies; and as, besides, the Bishop is not bound to ask even the opinion of his clergy in general as to his enactments, it is apparent why Benedict XIV. rather describes than defines a diocesan synod, and why Bellarmine says it is hardly deserving of the name of a council.

The synod is therefore, *strictly speaking*, and in the rigour of law, merely an assemblage of the clergy, convened *freely*, or of *obligation*, by the Bishop, for the solemn enactment of such laws as he wishes to make, or as have been made by plenary or provincial councils. We say *freely*, because these meetings can be called more than once a year, if the Ordinary wishes, and although the law of the Council of Trent (Sess. xxiv. cap. 2), ordering them to be held annually, has not been repealed, yet, as we shall see, it has very generally fallen into desuetude; we say of *obligation*, because the Second Plenary Council of Baltimore (no. 67) commands them to be held after, and for the promulgation of the statutes of plenary and provincial councils. We say *now*, *strictly speaking*, and *in the rigour of law*, because synods were

not always what they are thus described as being, but bore some analogy to what are properly called legislative assemblies, in some of the enactments or at least appointments of which the clergy had not only a consultative, but a decisive vote; and that the Church still wishes them to have this weight, seems evident from the fact that the legislation of Trent on the subject, how much so ever modified in practice, on account of unavoidable circumstances, is still unrepealed, while the description of a synod given by Benedict XIV. as a "*congregatio . . . in qua deliberandum est,*" necessarily supposes that the clergy share in the bishop's deliberations. Above all, the formula of the *Pontificale Romanum*, whereby each member is invited to state "openly before all, and without any scruple as to being guilty of disturbance, whatever may displease him in what is said or done," is still suggested to be read to the clergy by the bishop; nay, on the second day, before the reading of the statutes, the clergy are to be again admonished to "bring forward without hesitation whatever they may know deserving of correction," after which, "*leguntur constitutiones, per synodum approbandae, quibus lectis, habito scrutinio, quae placent per patres confirmantur.*" (*Pontif. Rom. Ordo ad Synodum.*)

The *placet* here referred to is declared by Sarnelli (quoted by Moroni, *Sinodo*) to be merely ceremonial, and may be only an expression of obedience, or, perhaps, implies that a wise bishop will be careful to make only such laws as will be acceptable to the body of his clergy. Absolutely speaking, according to Nardi (*Dei Parrochi*, ap. Moroni, l.c.), the Bishop is free to put any measure to a formal vote either secret or open, yet he can always say, if the proposed law is rejected: *Si non placet vobis, placet nobis*. But, as the Archbishop of Paris said at the opening of his synod in 1849, "the authority of bishops rests on the union of hearts, on a holy unity of thought and sentiment which secures to him love and respect."

But to come to the phases of the synod:—

Synods are of natural origin, that is they grew out of the very nature of man. For the bishop recognized that while

the power resided in him, the knowledge of pastoral work and of the needs of the people lay as much or more in those of the clergy who were engaged in the ordinary offices of the ministry; hence he naturally sought their approval for his proposed legislation.

"Natura et ratione ipsa ducimur," says St. Charles Borromeo (*Acta Eccles. Mediol. in Conc. Balt. II. no. 62*), "ut in gravioribus rebus deliberandis, aliorum consilia exquiramus; vel quod cautior deliberatio est, si ad nostrum iudicium multorum sententia accesserit, vel quia apud illos quibus consulere maxime cupimus, maiorem auctoritatem et pondus habet consultatio in quam plures consenserint."

Besides this the synod was a joint visitation of his diocese, which made the clergy know and recognize each other as a body, and know and be known by their Bishop who is supposed to have visited them and their parishes severally, and now declares to them all the general needs and the remedies he would prescribe.

"Generalis quaedam visitatio Synodus; alias enim per annum particulares quasdam ecclesias duntaxat visitamus, hic vero generatim sacerdotes omnes et clericos, atque in ipsis suo etiam modo populos eis commissos." (*S. Car. Borrom. Syn. xi.*) Nay, even it was a visitation in a similar manner for each pastor, who there sees his brethren one and all, and hears their experience, views and practice of their common calling.

Moreover, it is extremely important that laws like law-givers be acceptable to those concerned: hence just as in the early ages the bishop, even the Pope, was chosen with the expressed approbation of the people, it is but reasonable that the laws for the people's government should be enacted with the approval of those at least who represent them in spiritual relations.

The first diocesan synod, however, whose acts were published, seems to be that of Siricius, Bishop of Rome, who, writing to various bishops against Jovinian in 389, says that the heresiarch was condemned by himself and the entire clergy of Rome "assembled *before him*." (*Bened. XIV. l. 1, c. 1, no. 6*). These last words appear to imply that

status in the assemblage which the second order of the clergy hold in a diocesan synod.

In ancient times, before seminaries were properly conducted, or when and where the due training of the clergy was neglected, the priests had to come to the synod with their sacred vestments and utensils, to practise the ceremonies of the Mass and Sacraments. They also had to bring parchment and writing instruments to take down the bishops' regulations, and moreover three days' rations (*Moroni, Sinodo*), as well as, we presume, a portable bed such as is mentioned in the Scriptures, or at least a blanket or a cloak to serve its purpose. Dr. Smith in *Brownson's Review*, July, 1875, is our guide to much of what we shall set down relating to this subject, and we have to refer in a general way to an article which he has followed up by several erudite and approved works on Canon Law. He quotes from Phillips (*Jus. Can. vol. vii.*) an *Ordo Synodi* of the ninth century: (1) The bishop cordially saluted all the clergy assembled in synod. (2) Then followed a homily or brief instruction, after which a sermon was preached on the dignity and responsibilities of the priesthood. In fact the synod was daily begun with a sermon or instruction. (3) It was not to last over fourteen days. (4) On the first day examiners were appointed. The bishop then investigated charges against priests, and proceeded judicially in all cases coming before him. (5) Accusations against laics were also examined into and determined upon. (6) Pastors finally were bound to render an account of the administration of their parishes, of the condition of sacred vessels, vestments, etc. These synods were preceded by preparatory ones held by the archpriests or rural deans, each in his own district. Indeed the latter were held in places, monthly, while the episcopal council was, after a time, convened only once in six months; and then by decree of the Fourth Lateran, made doubtless because they were being neglected, diocesan synods were summoned once a year—a law re-enacted by the Council of Trent, and still "on the books."

Another *Ordo Synodalis* of the 10th century runs as follows: (1) The Synod should continue four days. It was daily opened

by mass, at which the laity could assist, but after which only specially invited laymen could remain. (2) After the reading of the Gospel, "cum sero esset die illo una sabbatorum et fores essent clausae," the bishop *requested the clergy to bring forward any complaints* they wished to make. The discussion of diocesan affairs then began. (3) Complaints on the part of laymen were also admitted and determined upon, and adjudicated by the synod. (4) During this period laymen were allowed to attend diocesan synods, nay, in some instances were obliged to do so. This was owing to the fact that bishops were not unfrequently possessed of vast temporal domains, and were princes of the realm.

The scope of synods at this time seems to have been to foster theological learning amongst the clergy, and preserve true faith amongst the laity. Hence errors were refuted and condemned in them. They also made regulations with regard to the proper and conscientious administration of ecclesiastical property, and the erection of monasteries. The earliest collection of synodal statutes we possess are those of Toulon (A.D. 1192), and Utrecht (A.D. 1209), while the expression "synodus diœcesana" does not occur before A.D. 1290.

The decree of the Fourth Lateran commanding bishops to hold annual synods sub poena suspensionis (can. 6, cap. *Sicut olim*), was carried into effect with the natural, and most desirable results, but its observance was gradually neglected and the effect of this was that "widespread ignorance and immorality which was prevalent among priests and people at the outbreak of the Reformation." These words of Dr. Smith are confirmed by those of Carracciolo (Life of Paul IV.) wherein he declares the object of the Theatines to have been "clericis quos ingenti populorum exitio improbitas inscitiaque corrupissent clericos alios sufficere" etc. Hence the Council of Trent renewed the Lateran decree *De Synodis Diœcesanis*, and its law being carried out they flourished for a time after the close of the Tridentine Council as we see conspicuously illustrated in the episcopate of St. Charles Borromeo, Archbishop of Milan, perhaps the chief model of bishops in modern times. But in the course

of time the synods again lapsed into desuetude, and not even the erudition and eloquence of the learned and exemplary Archbishop of Bologna (afterwards Benedict XIV.) could revive them. Nay even provincial councils seem to have shared the same fate. We have authority for stating that the Bishops of the Neapolitan province have not met in such a manner for six hundred years, the command of Lateran and Trent notwithstanding.

The tyranny of the Sacristan-Kings of Europe has doubtless had a good deal to do with these facts as the governments are so much afraid not only of the bishops, but of the people, that even to-day we believe in Republican (!) France, twenty men cannot assemble for any purpose without a permit from the police. Even the bishops too perhaps feared that the example of Ricci's Synod of Pistoja might have infected the clergy, and the parliamentary spirit aroused in '89 might attempt to control the Supreme Legislative power of the ordinary. At any rate diocesan synods in many countries of Europe are things of the past, and it belongs chiefly to our free and fresh Catholicity, in a country ruled from, and for, and by the people, to revive the genuine, proper, and legal manner of Church Government.

The first diocesan synod in the United States was held in Baltimore, beginning November 7th, 1791, at ten o'clock, A.M. The priests having vested in surplices and the Bishop in rochet, amice, alb, cincture, stole, cope and precious mitre, went in procession to the Cathedral, where a sermon was delivered by the bishop, after which all the members made the profession of faith, and two Promoters and a Secretary were appointed. The synod then adjourned to three in the afternoon of the same day. Statutes were passed as to the conditional baptism of converts, on baptismal registers, and on not confirming children before the age of reason.

The third session on the 8th took up the Sacrament of the Eucharist; treated of the first Communion of children, and enacted that they should not be allowed to receive the Blessed Sacrament immediately on reaching the use of

reason, but only when they attained to a more perfect use of the same. Statutes were also made with regard to decency of ceremonial, ecclesiastical dress, collections and trustees.

In the fourth session, November 9th, the fathers considered the Sacrament of Penance, and all were reminded of the necessity of approbation for priests; the Sacraments of Extreme Unction and Matrimony were also treated of, and mixed marriages subjected to proper guarantees.

In the last session, on the 10th of November, regulations were adopted as to holydays, manual labour being tolerated in certain cases on holydays not falling on a Sunday, and decrees were passed in regard to the offices, the life of the clergy, their maintenance and burial. (Conc. Prov. Balt. opus editum Baltimore an. 1842.)

Many synods have since been held in the United States but on account of the *magnum incommodum* or *peculiariorum rerum adjuncta* alluded to by the second Plenary Council of Baltimore (No. 67) the law of Trent has not been observed; New York, for instance, holding only five since its organization as a diocese.

The first step in the holding of a synod is the decree of the bishop convoking it. By order of the third Plenary Council of Baltimore, 1884 (No. 20), the advice of the consultors must be taken for this step, and the document ordering the synod should contain the place, time and matter for discussion (Phillips, vol. vii., quoted by Smith); this last clause, however, would appear to be only of *decentia* in the United States, because the bishop is only bound by *decentia* to ask the opinion of the members of the synod about his laws (Conc. Plen. Balt. ii., n. 66). The indiction should be made a reasonable time in advance, say one or two months, according to Ferraris (Conc. Epis., No. 103), doubtless in order that the members may discuss the proposed legislation and make up their minds what to advise the ordinary, as well as that all may pray for divine aid in advance. The powers of the clergy, although restricted in some respects, as we shall see and have seen, have been enlarged in others. For example, the bishop must now in

the United States ask his consultors' advice about convoking a synod; whereas formerly he was not bound to take counsel for this even with his chapter (Ferraris, loc. cit. no. 17). Likewise in former times he was obliged to ask the advice of his chapter before publishing his statutes, though not bound to follow it; yet two months had to elapse before the laws were in force, in order that those who felt themselves aggrieved might appeal to the bishop or to the Holy See (*Ibid.* No. 44); whereas now in the United States, such limitation in time seems not to be recognized.

When the synod is held according to the general prescriptions of the sacred canons, the following is the practice more or less exactly referred to.

After the *indiction* (*sit venia verbo!*), the Bishop invites some of his wisest and most learned priests to aid him in preparing his statutes, and a Secretary to record their views. In this preliminary congregation the officers, whose appointment lies with the bishop alone, are designated; these are: the SECRETARIUS; the LECTOR, who besides reading the roll, decrees, etc., helps the Secretary generally; the PROMOTERS, who take the initiative in the discussions, and ask the members what their various opinions are (Gavantus, *Praxis Exacta Syn. Dioec.* cap. iv.); the NOTARIUS, who formally attests the acts at the end of each session; the PROCURATOR CLERI, who advances the arguments and objections of the clergy against what they deem objectionable; the PRAEFECTI SYNODALIS DISCIPLINAE, who have charge of the seating arrangements, etc.; the JUDICES EXCUSATIONUM, who adjudicate on excuses of absentees; the CONFESSARI CLERI; PRAEDICATORES; CAEREMONIARI; OSTIARI. All these officials should be elected by the preparatory committee, or else by the clergy in general, though the bishop has the chief vote of course (Gavantus, *Bened.* xiv., op. cit. lib. x., cap. 1).

There are besides other officers to be elected or appointed in the synod itself, called OFFICIALES CLERI. The chief among these are the JUDICES SYNODALES, whose office is so important as showing the desire of the Church to guard liberty under the aegis of law, that we quote the decree of

Trent establishing and describing their duties (Sess. xxv., chap. 10, De Ref.) :

“Whereas by reason of wicked intrigue and remoteness of places a proper knowledge of persons appointed to judge cases in their own parts cannot be had . . . the holy synod ordains that in each provincial or diocesan synod there shall be designated some persons (whose names must be sent to the Apostolic See), having the endowments noted by Boniface VII. (Const. *Statutum*), in order that, besides the ordinaries, to them also may be referred ecclesiastical and spiritual cases occurring in their districts, referred, that is, by any legate or nuncio or by the Apostolic See. If one of these (four or more) should die, let the bishop, with his chapter’s advice, substitute another to hold till the next synod,” etc.

Here we see a tribunal of Papal delegates to judge appeals from the ordinary, and whose sentence is reversible by the Holy See alone. They are totally different from our *Judices Causarum*, who are only associated with the bishop, and hold from him and are now superseded where the *Curia Episcopalis* of the third Plenary Council of Baltimore is organized. At present in the United States those Tridentine judges are not ordered to be designated in the synod nor out of it, but we perceive at once from the decree of Trent on the subject the consideration with which the Church regards the second order of the clergy. And this is still the general law of the Church.

Here we behold the bishop obliged to appoint four of his own subjects, in order that if appeal be made, even against his laws (Bened. XIV., lib. iv., c. 5) the Holy See may delegate its powers to them to decide the case. Every one sees how careful this must make the ordinary, how little it matters after all that the clergy have not a decisive vote in the synod, and how the rights of the subjects are guarded, all the while that the monarchical prerogative of the ruler is preserved, the strongest obstacles being still opposed to arbitrary exercise of power.

Passing over the *Testes Synodales*, whose business it was to report abuses, &c., we come to the *Synodal Examiners*, whose place it was to examine candidates for parishes, and out of the number approved by them the bishop chose the new incumbent. These Examiners were to be “proposed

by the bishop, and should be such as to satisfy the synod and be approved by it, and all conferring of parishes made except in this way was null and void" (Trid. Sess. xxiv., ch. 18, de Ref. See also 3rd Plen. Counc. Balt. No. 23). Until the canonical erection of parishes in the United States examiners preside over the concursus for the "irremovable missions," and by permission of the Holy See, the bishop may appoint them out of the synod, but with his Consultors' advice (3rd Plen. Counc. Balt., No. 24); nevertheless as their office may be extended to include examination for sacred orders, and for hearing confessions, &c., the Second Plenary Council, No. 76, advised that they be named in diocesan synods or meetings of the clergy. According to the Instructio of June 25th, 1878, the *Judices Causarum* are as far as possible to be chosen by the bishop in the synod "*audito consilio clericorum.*" (*Vide Responsio Conc. Plen. Balt. III.*, p. 296), but according to the general law of the Church, such judges are chosen by the Chapter alone.

The diocesan synod has reference to the pastoral charge and care of souls, that is, parochial and missionary duties, and preservation of discipline amongst the clergy. Great care is to be taken, however, lest bishops make any statute opposed to more recent enactments which relax the rigour of the universal law, or against the peculiar and old usages of the diocese and country, even when these customs, if legitimately prescribed, run counter to the general discipline of the Church (Bened. XIV. De. Syn. l. xi.; Gavantus, *Praxis Exacta*, p. 1, cap. vi.), else the justness of his legislation may be impugned.

It is not necessary that we should use any space to describe the manner of conducting the diocesan synod at the present day. It may be read in the "*Pontificale Romanum*" as well as in the Baltimore "*Ceremonial.*" All that we wish to note is, that the words suggested by the Pontifical to the bishop when opening the proceedings, and already quoted by us, very clearly invite every one of the clergy to give his opinion freely and fearlessly on the proposed legislation; that the Pontifical and the

Ceremonial direct that the votes of the clergy, albeit only consultative, be taken on the measures proposed, and that while the Second Plenary Council of Baltimore does not appear to consider this last rubric obligatory, nevertheless it declares that "it is becoming (*decet*) that the bishop before enacting his constitutions ask the opinion of all the members of the synod, and patiently listen to it and carefully take it into consideration, so that what is done with the consent of all may have stronger sanction and be more easily and efficaciously executed." (No. 66.)

"*Decet*" is a very strong expression, and stronger according to the dignity of the one of whom the *decentia* is predicated. Scotus proved the Immaculate Conception with this single word: "Potuit; decuit; ergo fecit." Now the episcopate is a "*dignitas splendidissima*" (Third Plen. Coun., No. 12); hence our conclusion.

"Respectful freedom of speech is very desirable," as Phillips, quoted by Dr. Smith, maintains and supports by the identical argument just quoted from the Council: "When synods sink into mere publications of episcopal statutes, they become" (just like theological conferences similarly conducted) "irksome to the clergy and lose their hold on these;" and it was for this reason in fact that they went out of use in Europe. Although it must never be forgotten that the bishop is the sole legislator, yet it is clearly the will of the Church that he should propose his laws in synod, and it is clearly her mind that the clergy should have a full, fair and free opportunity to discuss those laws before they are enacted.

In some places the officer or officers called *Procuratores cleri* receive and report to the bishop the objections or opinions of the clergy, which must be handed in to them in writing, and this method at least, which would seem to suppose that the subjects for deliberation were made known in advance, is required by the nature itself of any council whatsoever: but in Baltimore the bishop retires after the opening religious services and forms of the *Praxis Synodalis*, and leaves the clergy to discuss his proposed legislation freely, paragraph by paragraph, with the synodic officers,

and the exceptions, if any, are taken down by the secretaries and by these referred to the ordinary.

We would further call attention to the fact that as the numbers, tone, and education of the clergy in the United States improve, the Church recognizes their right to a larger share in the administration, and their privileges are more and more extended. Witness the advance made between the Council of 1852 and that of 1866; between the latter and that of 1884. One point of legislation in particular, that of "Synodical Examiners" (Third Plen. Coun., No. 23) though now established, seemed so remote to the Fathers of 1866, that they thought it could scarcely ever be realized in our country (Second Plen. Coun., No. 126).

Finally let us conclude with the Fathers of 1884 (Third Plen. Coun., No. 17): "Verily so many and so great are the burdens and cares of the pastoral ministry, that bishops by themselves alone are scarcely equal to the administration of their dioceses. Hence it were very much to be desired that in these regions also those most wise canonical provisions regarding Cathedral Chapters could be at once carried out in practice." This cannot be done at present as they declare. When it is possible, however, doubtless the Diocesan Synod will again assume the full canonical form, and be conducted according to the regulations of the Council of Trent; the Church in the United States will cease to be governed by temporary, tentative legislation, and the Common Ecclesiastical Law will prevail throughout the land.

EDWARD M'SWEENEY.

PROSELYTISM IN WEST CLARE: A RETROSPECT.

THE *Freeman's Journal* has lately laid bare the inner workings of the Bird's Nest system in Dublin. It is a pitiful story—displaying on the one side the Magpie instinct which under the specious guise of Christian zeal watches for and pounces on the weak and wounded; and on the other the depth of moral degradation implied in the sale of their poor

innocent children to heresy by Catholic parents. While reading those sketches it occurred to me again and again, that other episodes of the same unholy war against the faith of the Irish poor are well worth recording. The West and South of Ireland must be full of them. Wherever wide-spread poverty prevailed from time to time, there was the field for operation, and it cannot but be both useful and interesting to note the methods and, thank God, the miserable failure also, of a system which leans for its support mostly on the purses and the bigotry of rich English dupes. With one of these I became thoroughly acquainted during the eight years of my missionary life in the parish of Carrigaholt. Many still remember something of the story of "The Ark." Far the greater number of the readers of the RECORD have either forgotten it or never heard it. I purpose reviewing in the following pages, the principal events that led up to, and made of "The Little Ark," as it is still affectionately called, another clear living proof of the truth that "the weak things of the world hath God raised up to confound the strong."

The parishes of Moyarta and Kilballyowen, now separate, were up to 1878 united and called, after the central and principal village, the parish of Carrigaholt. It is a peninsula twenty miles long and about two miles on the average wide, with the "lordly Shannon rolling like a sea" on the one side and the restless Atlantic beating incessantly against its iron-bound cliffs on the other. It is part of the immense property forfeited by Lord Clare in his stubborn but unsuccessful support of the Stuart dynasty. His castle still stands almost untouched by the hand of time, looking down proudly over the bay of Carrigaholt and the broad river. Around it, as tradition tells—where now, owing to the incessant tidal encroachment only rocks growing sea-weed stare you at low water—stretched the fair strand on which "Clare's Dragoons" were wont to go through their military exercises. Such a favoured locality could not but be, as it really is—rich in legend and story. Almost in our own times, Lever and Griffin have made it the scene of some of their most successful novels, and better still, Eugene O'Curry drank in there from his earliest youth that love of Irish literature, which was his inspiration in

the noble and successful task of rescuing from oblivion Erin's ancient historic records. The people speak with reverence of the fact, that in their parish St. Senan made the immediate preparation for entering on his reward. On his return from one of his periodical visits through the district, he took ill and received the last sacraments in the convent the ruins of which, like those of his own temples in Iniscatha (Scattery), still exist and retain the ancient title, Kyll-na-Giallach or Church of the Nuns. The memories of the past combine with the ever-present majesty of nature to give to the minds of those brought up there a tone and a vigour, that fits them for any struggle undertaken in defence of Faith or Fatherland.

Before the great famine the parish had a population of over 12,000, almost exclusively Catholic. In 1849 it had dwindled down to less than 8,000. More than a third of the people had been sacrificed within four years to misrule and mismanagement. In that terrible year the Parish Priest of Kilrush and Vicar General of the diocese of Killaloe, was shocked to learn, that the three priests in Carrigaholt were down with cholera and the whole flock literally left without a pastor. Though much over-worked—for Kilrush with its group of workhouses, ranked next to Skibbereen in those evil days—Father Kelly proceeded at once, taking with him Father Meehan, one of his curates, to the relief of priests and people. He told me that after crossing the ferry they had to begin visiting from house to house people sick of cholera and famine fever, till before the night fell they had administered the last sacraments to no less than about forty of the poor sufferers. In the account brought to him of the condition of the priests, there was no exaggeration. All three were lying ill, and poor Father Duggan the parish priest, whose almost super-human energy during the famine, was the admiration of all in West Clare, after a short struggle of only a few days against a violent attack of cholera, went to his reward. The people told me, that on the Sunday on which he took the sickness, he had to say Mass in the chapel of Dunaha, and before his return home, was called to, and attended, eighteen cases of cholera and fever. The shedding of blood for the

Faith does indeed give a distinctive character, a never-failing aureola, to martyrdom. Only that was wanting to the sacrifice of their lives made by Father Duggan and many other Irish priests, in those awful years when they nobly sacrificed their lives, martyrs to duty.

The occasion brooked of no delay and so the bishop, Dr. Vaughan, in a few days after, gave Father Michael Meehan who had anointed Father Duggan, charge of the stricken flock. There was, I firmly believe, a Providence directing the appointment. A man of more than ordinary ability, energy and perseverance, was required for an impending struggle, of which neither priest nor people suspected anything then, and just such a one did God vouchsafe the parish in its new pastor. When I mention the fact, that during his college career in Maynooth, he won high premiums in all his classes, competing not unsuccessfully in some of them, with no less a rival than Dr. Murray the late professor of Theology, I have said all I need say of his ability; and before this paper is concluded, if the reader takes the trouble to run through it, proof sufficient will have been afforded, I think, of his energy and perseverance, and priestly zeal.

At the time of Father Duggan's death, there was but one National School, that of Carrigaholt, in the whole parish of twenty miles in length. Such schools were few and far between, especially in remote localities so far back as 1849. Private schools, mostly night-schools, did the work, and from a religious point of view, did the work admirably, of educating the young. Between the village of Cross and Loophead a distance of about ten English miles, there was neither a fixed school nor a chapel. All the tenants there were tenants-at-will, completely at the mercy of landlord or agent, and in that year of "black '49" the crowbar, as well as the famine, had done its fearful work among them. It is easy to conceive how public spirit—hope itself, must have almost died out there, and then it was, that what I am, I think justified in calling an inhuman, as well as an unscrupulous effort, was begun and persevered in for years, to bribe or terrify the disheartened people into an outward, mere hypocritical, profession of Protestantism. The guiding spirit

in this attack, was a local little despot, who lived near Ennis. He was agent to two absentee landlords of great territorial influence, and he availed himself of his position in the carrying out of his designs to a degree, that made him be regarded by the tenantry almost as the Czar is by his subjects. His will was fate. He was said to be the inventor, he certainly made use of, a grappling-iron machine, for the more expeditious tearing down of thatched roofs. He had married a daughter of the landlord, owning most of the property from Cross to Loophead, as well as other properties in the same, and other parishes in Clare. The landlord, it seems, shared in the proselytizing spirit of his son-in-law and agent, and between them, it was deemed the fitting opportunity to commence the work, before the new parish priest could win for himself the affection and firm hold of his flock, which his predecessor secured and enjoyed. The first move made was to all appearance not only harmless, but of a most benevolent nature. The landlord and agent undertook to provide schools and teachers and educate the children of the tenants, free of all cost. Could kind-hearted agent or landlord go farther? There was to be no interference, *not the slightest*, with the religious instincts of the children within the schools. To make sure of this, so as not to leave room for the remotest suspicion, although the teachers appointed happened to be Protestants, with one—for the time being—nominal exception, the parish priest, or some priest deputed by him, was allowed to bring out the children who cared for it—they were not to be coerced—and impart to them *outside* the schools religious instruction at a fixed hour on a fixed day of each week of the whole year. The parents who would not send their children for instruction on such favourable conditions were to be, and *were actually*, regarded as unmanageable and refractory, and worthy of tight and strict handling in all the ways known to landlords and agents, when their will was law; and the priest who would not arrange, amid all his other duties, to be there at those schools at that fixed hour in each week, afforded clear evidence that, in his educated intelligence, Catholic teaching was not worth the trouble of a ride or a drive of a few paltry

miles. So if the rising generation who were to be more enlightened than their forefathers through the generosity of their landlord, did not receive thorough Catholic teaching not he but their own regularly appointed pastor was to blame! The bait took. It was skilfully arranged and cleverly thrown out, and for a time, in the first excitement of a new sensation, was eagerly gobbled at. Three schools, one at Dunaha, another at Kilballyowen, and the third at Kiltrellig, the most western and the most vulnerable point, because farthest away from any of the parish chapels, were in an almost incredibly short space of time set in full swing. The children, however, going to the schools soon began to open, literally, the eyes of their benighted parents. They told them things they never heard before of confession, though they were so familiar with it; of the idolatry of the Blessed Eucharist; but above all of the wickedness implied in paying special devotion to the Virgin Mother of God. It came to be known that in one at least of those schools, that as far as I can remember taught by the nominal Catholic, a picture of the Blessed Virgin was passed along from desk to desk *to be spat upon* by each of the children as a final parting with the old superstition. One of the curates, Fr. McMahon, the present parish priest of Kilmihil, going to this same school at the appointed day and hour to teach the Catechism, found the poor children as if glued to their seats and with carefully averted eyes and closed ears. The eye of the master was on them. They had been evidently warned that it was not advisable for them to go out under the elements at the bidding of anyone, especially of anyone claiming authority as a Priest of Rome. The time had now come for dropping the mask. There was no longer any need of disguise. The schools were established, and the children were frequenting them. There was hardly one in the miserably-impooverished district who had not something to hope for or fear from the evangelical agent, so opposition to his project seemed almost vain, especially when the full scheme disclosed itself by the presence in the locality of a couple of parsons, a staff of Scripture-readers, the building of a Protestant church, and crowning all, the appointment of

the agent's brother at a good round salary as local manager and manipulator in the interests of the Irish Church Missions Society. His special duties were to go about among the tenants and labourers, offering the starving poor little patches of potatoe land and remunerative employment on condition of keeping their children in the schools and going with them to the Protestant Church to receive enlightenment on the absurdities of Catholic dogmatic teaching. Those who were not in dire want, and who could not, therefore, be induced to go so far were to be coaxed through the respect they owed the "Masther," to accept a religious edifying tract, even a Douay Bible—anything from him. He could then put their names down on his list, as in a sense converts, for were they not willingly opening their eyes at last to the blessed truth! The most glowing accounts of the success of the mission were forwarded to the Society, and money flowed steadily into the pockets of such deserving officials.

Such was the state of things that stared Fr. Meehan in the face at the very-outset of his career as Parish Priest. No wonder that he was struck with consternation at the sight of his poor parishioners, made the victims of such base unchristian traffic. His first effort, aided by his curates, was to rescue the children. Theirs was the greatest danger. He could count with some confidence on the return to the fold of those who had been instructed, no matter how imperfectly. "Good-bye, God Almighty, till the potatoes grow well again," was the cry of one of the starving creatures, and the principle upon which they all, or nearly all, acted. But if the children's minds were poisoned from early youth in all probability they were lost for ever. "Save the child," became the end to which all his efforts, all his energies, were directed. But how? That was the difficulty that threw him almost into despair. He had neither school nor chapel in the neighbourhood of the bulk of those who had fallen or were falling away, nor any chance of securing either, as the whole place was in the hands of the proselytizers. His appeals, his admonitions, could only reach them as echoes from the distance, if they reached at all. In this extremity he bethought him of giving Holy Mass and instruction to the

people every Sunday and Holiday in the house of some independent farmer. There at least he could work directly on the community, among whom the poor renegades lived. This went on for some time and with good effect, until it was brought home to the farmer who lent his house that he was a marked man. Then a chance offered of which Fr. Meehan gladly availed. Two labourers, whose cabins were adjoining, were about to emigrate. He negotiated with them, gave them some money, got possession from them, threw down the wall separating the poor little cottages, built up with it an altar at one end, and lo! St. Patrick's Church, with its coat of new thatch became a living present reality in the very thick of the fight. It was hoped that shame would deter the landlord and agent from interfering with a structure so insignificant beside the handsome Gothic Protestant edifice literally looking down on its upstart rival with the high-sounding title. But little, even then, did priest or people know of the men they had to deal with if they thought so. As soon as ever the law could be put in motion Fr. Meehan was ignominiously evicted out of St. Patrick's Church. When the day for taking forcible possession arrived, even the "souters" as they were then beginning to be called, could not be induced to touch the rude stone altar. It was the agent's own hands, I was assured, that wielded the crow-bar in rooting it out of its place. Where those hands are now, not all the police intelligence, nor the rewards offered can discover. His remains were stolen from the vault in which they were placed a few years ago. I abominate the barbarous act. I only mention it as a public well-known occurrence to which people have attached some significance. That eviction looked like the final crushing blow to the hope entertained by priests and people of a successful struggle against the evangelical invasion. The bulk of the people, indeed, stood firm to the Old Faith. They were not a whit less zealous in the good cause than their priests. Scripture-readers came in occasionally for hard knocks which they provoked and profited by as showing how they suffered for the faith that was in them. But all to no purpose. The demoralizing influences were there securely lodged, and no one could

tell how far or how deeply they might spread. Every day Fr. Meehan trudged about from house to house, encouraging the timid, supplying as far as his means would permit the wants of those who were in the greatest temptation, and using all possible persuasion on the parents who would listen to him, to withdraw the children from the schools. "Kill, boil, eat them if you have to do it," he said once in bold metaphor, "that will be but destroying their bodies, but don't sell their immortal souls." All this time those who most needed his council obstinately shut their houses and closed their ears against his appeals. The great want he felt, was in having no place in which he could gather the well-disposed together and offer for them, in their presence, the Holy Sacrifice, and nourish in them a strong Catholic zeal, which might make, with God's help, its influence felt on their weak and fallen brethren. He was ever thinking, how he could overcome this apparently insurmountable difficulty. At last in the moment of his greatest gloom, a light broke in on him. Could he not build a movable timber structure large enough to shelter him while offering the Holy Mass, and which could be fixed in some nook on the shore, from which neither landlord nor agent could again evict him, and round which the faithful people would be sure to come in spite of wind or weather? He seized on the idea, worked it out, built the little wooden shed, placed it on wheels so as that it could be easily moved about as the weather, or the convenience of the people might require, put windows in the sides, so that the congregation kneeling round might see the Altar, and fixing the Cross over this novel house of Divine Worship called it, in what proved to be a prophetic spirit, "The Ark." It did, indeed, become an ark of salvation to the sorely-tried and harassed people, a veritable "tower of strength against the face of the enemy." Here was literally the turning of the tide. Priests and people driven not merely to the wall, but to the ocean, fixed the Ark on its shore and gathering round it, turned to face resolutely the perservering and insidious attack on the Faith of their Fathers. An attempt made to have it removed, as an illegal obstruction to the highway, failed; and there on the wild sea-coast, in all weathers

the people knelt under the canopy of Heaven, on the Sundays and Holidays of the next five years, their eyes fixed on the little wooden Temple of God, where the great Sacrifice was being offered, and their hearts glowing with the enthusiasm born of such a novel method of Divine Worship. A stranger looking on the scene, used afterwards to declare, that he knew little of the fervour of Irish Catholic faith, till he heard from that kneeling crowd with heads reverently bent at the moment of consecration, the suppressed murmur, wrestling with the beating of the sea on the shore, "Cead mile failthe, a Thierna," "a hundred thousand welcomes, O Lord." Not to weary the reader, it will be enough to add, though many interesting incidents ensued, that the poor unhappy perverts one by one began to exhibit signs of repentance. The children were by degrees withdrawn from the three Protestant schools, leaving them empty monuments by the roadside, of the utter defeat of landlord and Kildare-street proselytism. Only a few who had bound themselves hand and foot to the agent and his family, continued to frequent the Protestant place of worship. The greater number of those, who had committed themselves deeply, could not bring themselves, through shame of their apostasy, to join the congregation at the Ark. They left the country as quickly as they could, but in every instance, came, before leaving, to the priests, seeking re-admission to the Catholic Church, and a written acknowledgement to show their friends over the water, that they had renounced the detestable name of "souper." I remember well the joy manifested in the countenances of some of these for whom I performed the pleasing office.

After years of silent struggle, the world around began at last to know something of its peculiar hardships. Dr. Cahill, happening to come to Kilkee on his holidays, visited the scene, and immediately the *Catholic Telegraph* published his indignant protests. Public opinion in England and Ireland, honourable Protestants even joining in the outcry, was so aroused that the very landlord and agent, who led the attack were forced to grant a site for a Catholic Church. Subscriptions poured in, and a handsome Gothic structure now takes the place of the Ark. It still stands however,

cherished by the people upon whom it brought under God's grace such great blessings. Chips of it are all over the world, carried away by the Exiles of Erin, as mementos of the fight for the Faith, while Father Meehan has passed away to the reward of a life spent nobly and zealously in the service of God and His people. His mortal remains lie near the Ark in the Church, which is his most befitting monument, and amid a people who owe it to his energy, under God, that what seemed a curse proved a lasting blessing.

P. WHITE, P.P.

DR. MIVART'S DEFENCE OF THEISM.

THESIS II.—(CONTINUED).

"There is and always must have been, underneath, behind, and distinct from matter, an agent which is ever working in and through matter, and which created it, if it ever was created."

PROPOSITION II.

"Our intellect forces us to acknowledge that certain judgments are necessarily true; but if there were nothing but matter, there could be no truth necessary."

LET me repeat briefly what has been the drift of the previous papers.

I have endeavoured to establish two Theses:—first, that there was always something; second, that there must have been always something other than mechanical force. This second point has been proved from the fact that forces are ever being produced from and reduced to nothing. Chemical changes go on unceasingly; life began, species were evolved, until at last arose the man; what are these but new forces? Even the individual is a new force, comes into being to last its time, and then, as a rule, to lapse into nothing. Can matter create or annihilate?

For most of the argument in the preceding papers Dr. Mivart is not responsible; hence the paucity of quotations. He supplies however, a far-reaching principle,—that matter cannot create, and that without creation evolution is impossible. Vital energy is different in kind from mechanical force; intellect

and will are different in kind from sense. The higher forms of force could no more result from the lower than gold can be got from silver or silver from copper. This I take to be the central stronghold of Dr. Mivart's position.

He does not refer, except very incidentally,¹ to changes in inorganic matter; accordingly, what has been said on that point has been taken from the ordinary handbooks of Catholic philosophy. The same is true of most of what has been stated about substantial forms. These statements seemed necessary to meet an obvious difficulty which has been urged by Mr. Huxley² and others. They contend that, as we see no reason for admitting substantial forms in watches, so neither can they be admitted in other substances; "vitality," "aquosity," and all the other "itys," are but the unmeaning formulæ of ignorant pedants; they have disappeared since the days of Martinus Scriblerus. We reply that a watch does not mean a new substance or force different from that of its material, whereas water and life do.

Let us now proceed with the argument. Have we any further evidence that there must be in existence something distinct from material force? Yes; there are such things as necessary truths; and matter could never account for them. Here are two assertions.

I. In the first place we assert a fact,—that "there are such things as necessary truths." This may be taken as already proved;³ for what has been said with regard to the principle of causation, applies equally to all other truths of the same kind.

We are forced to believe certain propositions as absolutely and invariably true. This invincible propensity cannot be the result of association; for it is found to exist before associations have been formed, whereas it does not result from associations that are frequent and constant. We have no invincible propensity to believe that fire may not burn or the sun stand still.

¹ Cf. *e.g.* "Genesis of Species," p. 210.

² "Lay Sermons," p. 137.

³ RECORD, April, p. 305.

Should it be objected that some of our examples are drawn from miraculous interventions, which are not admitted, we reply that we only suppose the *possibility* of miracles, and this cannot be reasonably doubted. For why should a law of Nature be stronger than any other possible force?

Mr. Mill and his school do not deny that miracles may be conceived to occur, whereas we cannot conceive geometry untrue. They explain the difference between the two orders by the phenomena and laws of counter-association.

“No frequency of conjunction between two phenomena will create an inseparable association, if counter-associations are being created all the while. If we sometimes saw stones floating as well as sinking, however often we might have seen them sink, nobody supposes that we should have formed an inseparable association between them and sinking. We have not seen a stone float, but we are in the constant habit of seeing either stones or other things which have the same tendency to sink, remaining in a position which they would otherwise quit, being maintained in it by an unseen force. . . . Every fact of that nature which we ever saw or heard of, is *pro tanto* an obstacle to the formation of the inseparable association which would make a violation of the law of gravity inconceivable to us.”¹

Of course there always are counter-associations; and their effect is, without doubt, to make it more easy for us to imagine miracles, such as stones floating in water. But do not similar counter-associations occur in connection with truths which we must consider necessary? Parts are known to swell out so as to appear each greater than the previous whole. Who has not often seen a straight stretch of railway in which the parallel tracks seem to approach? Yet these counter-associations do not enable us to believe that the whole can be less than its part, or that parallel straight lines can ever meet. Similarly it has been believed for centuries that spirits—God and the soul—are present entire and yet without multiplication in every part of an extended space. Christians have even thought that there is a Trinity of Persons in One God. Mr. Mill does not, of course, admit

¹“On Hamilton,” p. 332; cf. *Logic*, B. iv., c. 5.

these truths; but he cannot deny the fact of association. And yet no Christian in his senses can bring himself to admit that one may be five million, or that x may be equal to $3x$.

Counter-associations, therefore, do not explain how it is that we believe certain things to be possible which we have never seen, whereas we are forced to think other things impossible. We do not deny that association has great influence on the mind. The Association Psychology contains a half-truth which might easily be mistaken for the whole. This half-truth has been already stated:¹ "Constant and oft-recurring occasions for associating any two things beget a habit by virtue of which we are liable on other occasions, when we feel the presence of one of these things, to expect or imagine the presence of the other." Dr. Mivart calls attention² to another illusion of a somewhat similar character:

"As a general rule, things which are very distant, or which happened a very long time ago, are known to us only in roundabout ways, and are more or less uncertain. On the other hand, our convictions concerning the things about us at any given moment can be tested by our senses, and we are certain regarding them. Thus it comes that we associate 'uncertainty' with statements about what is remote, and 'certainty' with what is present."

Notwithstanding these two influences, however, it is manifest that no amount of mere association, no nearness of presence, will of itself make us believe a thing to be *necessary*; whereas we are forced to assent to certain propositions as *necessarily* true for all space and all time, and this the very first moment we comprehend their meaning.

II. I take, therefore, our first assertion as proved,—that "there are such things as necessary truths." We contend, moreover, that "matter could never account for them."

This statement hardly requires proof: it seems to be

¹ RECORD, April, p. 306.

² "Nature and Thought," p. 123.

admitted by all; for why do materialists invariably deny that there are such truths? Manifestly because in their system there could be no ground for necessity.

Matter is finite and contingent. It may be thought uncreated, but it is not necessary. It is easy to conceive a state of things in which there would be no matter or material force; but one cannot conceive any state in which necessary truths would not maintain,—in which trilaterals might have four angles, and things might be and not be at the same time. Not being necessary itself, it is manifest that matter alone supplies no basis for necessary truths.

If there be anything about matter that wears even the appearance of necessity, it is those properties that we call natural laws. Stones must sink in water; men must die; the sun must rise; and so on. In effecting these necessities the utmost force of matter is expended; it can go no further. And yet how little necessary are these laws when compared with truths! How easy it is to conceive stones floating or a man immortal; but who can conceive anything existing and not existing at the same time?

Nay more; a consistent materialist could not admit even the conditional necessity of natural laws. For he could not consistently admit anything except what he knows by experience; and there can be no experience of necessity. We have experience of the past and of the present, but not of the future, and necessity has no meaning except in relation to future events. A materialist may *expect* things to last as they are for some time. They have been so in the past; they are not likely to change. It would be foolish to count on escaping death, or being able to walk over the sea to-morrow or next day. So too, it would be foolish to expect the British Empire to break up spontaneously in an hour, or that the next rich man one meets will make one his heir. In some such way as this a consistent materialist might rely on the constancy of natural laws; they are likely to last; but necessity—what knows he of it?

In confirmation of this statement I will quote the testimony of Mr. Huxley, who is often more consistent

to materialistic principles than the materialists with whom he objects to be classed.

“What is this dire necessity and ‘iron’ law under which men groan? Truly most gratuitously invented bugbears. I suppose, if there be an ‘iron’ law, it is that of gravitation; and if there be a physical necessity, it is that a stone, unsupported, must fall to the ground. But what is all we really know and can know about the latter phenomenon? Simply, that, in all human experience, stones have fallen to the ground, under these conditions; that we have not the smallest reason for believing that any stone so circumstanced will not fall to the ground; and that we have, on the contrary, every reason to believe that it will so fall. It is very convenient to indicate that all the conditions of belief have been fulfilled in this case, by calling the statement, that unsupported stones will fall to the ground, ‘a law of nature.’ But when, as commonly happens, we change *will* into *must*, we introduce an idea of necessity which most assuredly does not lie in the observed facts, and has no warranty that I can discover elsewhere. For my part, I utterly repudiate and anathematize the intruder. Fact I know, and law I know, but what is this Necessity save an empty shadow of my own mind’s throwing?”¹

This teaching is not true, and the common sense of mankind proclaims that it is not; but that is not the question with which we are now concerned. What I would have you observe is the force of the argument by which the writer proves that, on the materialistic hypothesis, there could be no necessity,—not even the conditional necessity of natural laws. I think the argument is unanswerable; but how much less could matter alone suffice to explain the far greater—the absolute—necessity of first truths. That these truths are absolutely necessary has been already proved. Hence there must be something in existence besides matter,—something higher and better than matter, as producing a greater and more absolute result.

PROPOSITION III.

“Our reason tells us that we are free and subject to a moral law; but if there were nothing but matter, there could be no free-will, and consequently no moral order.”

Here we make three other assertions: first, that we are

¹ “Lay Sermons,” p. 143.

free; secondly, that we are subject to moral law; thirdly, that matter alone is unable to account for either of these.

I. We are free. It is unnecessary to explain fully in what circumstances we enjoy this freedom. Indeed I think that actions free in themselves are fewer than is commonly supposed. We contend that we are free in *some* things; that in certain circumstances and under the influence of certain motives we determine to put forth certain energies, whereas we might have determined to abstain or to act differently in the very same circumstances and influenced by the very same motives. In the act of determining ourselves we are free.

The fundamental proof of this assertion is drawn from consciousness. Let Dr. Mivart explain:

“Consciousness can inform us what is meant by being dragged along (if we are dragged along) or otherwise compelled to go in any direction; and therefore consciousness is equally able to inform us that we are not being dragged along or otherwise compelled. Now let us suppose I am conscious of determining to take a walk. In the first place I am conscious that it is I myself who determine, and secondly, that I have no feeling of being forced or compelled in so determining. What more is necessary to make my determination free than to know, as I do, that it is emphatically mine, and that I was exempt from compulsion in making it? Further, though I will not assert that I am conscious of having the power to choose what I will of two alternatives, yet I do maintain that when I have resolved upon anything, my consciousness tells me that the act of resolution was mine, and that before determining it I stood in the same relation to two alternatives, *e. g.*, to walk out or to stop at home. It tells me further, that I have chosen one alternative, and I have a conviction almost as strong, that I might have chosen the other,—just as when I draw two balls out of a bag, I know by experience I have drawn one and have a conviction founded on this experience that I might have drawn the other. In one word, I am perfectly sure that every time I will anything I am conscious that I myself perform the act, and I am quite unconscious of any necessity compelling me to perform it.”¹

¹ “Nature and Thought,” p. 195.

This argument is cast into peculiar form for a special reason. Mill denies that we are "conscious of being able to act in opposition to the strongest desire or aversion;" "and quite right, too," remarks Dr. Mivart, "if he meant to deny, as he probably or possibly did, that we are conscious of freedom; for freedom may mean nothing more than the absence of necessity, and we cannot be conscious of nothing or mere absence." Dr. Mivart might seem to contradict himself afterwards, when he says that "I am conscious, secondly, that I have no feeling of being forced or compelled in so determining." This latter assertion, however, is afterwards put into another and better form: "I am quite unconscious of any necessity compelling me to perform" an act of will.

The argument might be analysed in part as follows:—(a) I am conscious that I act; (b) I should be conscious of a feeling of compulsion if I were compelled to act; (c) I am not conscious of any such feeling; (d) therefore, I might abstain.

The second of these propositions is the only one about which there can be any serious difficulty. Can one be sure that one should be conscious of compulsion if one were compelled? Might not one be compelled so agreeably as to relieve one of the feeling of restraint. If, to use Bayle's illustration, a conscious weather-cock were "impressed at the same time with a movement to the east and also with an internal inclination to turn to the east, evidently, such a weather-cock would be under the delusion that it turned itself to the east in accordance with its own inclination to go that way."¹

Let Dr. Mivart reply:

"Bayle's weather-cock actually points against the truth of what he urges. He supposes it to be at the same time both in the act of willing to turn to the east and also being blown in that direction. This seems to me to be parallel with the co-existence of a desire on my part to go to the meeting of the British Association at Sheffield,

¹ "Nature and Thought," p. 196.

together with my being at the same time seized, carried to the railway station, and sent to Sheffield by force. In that case my volition and the direction of my journey would coincide, but nevertheless, my common sense would tell me plainly enough that this coincidence was due to my having both desired to go to Sheffield, and to my having also been forcibly sent there. What would be true in my own case must—accepting Bayle's illustration—be true also of the weather-cock; and so it would know, clearly enough, that it both wished to turn to the east and was also carried there 'willy nilly' by the wind."

In considering whether there might not be an unfelt compelling force acting on us, we should distinguish between mere mechanical motions and voluntary acts. We may be moved mechanically without feeling the motion; as a matter of fact no one ever feels the diurnal and annual motion which all earthly bodies have with the planet through space. Not so with regard to the will; whenever the force of a motive is so strong as to render it necessary for the will to act, we are conscious of being necessitated. Thus we feel that we cannot choose evil as such, nor refrain from embracing that which we know to be good *sub omni ratione*. But even when mechanically moved by a force stronger than ours, if we are made aware of the motion, no matter how desirable it may be, we know that resistance or rest is impossible.

Dr. Mivart's example of the railway train shows this; it might be illustrated also from the earth's motion. We often long for some particular season,—spring or summer. We are travelling towards it with immense speed. We might never have known the necessity under which we thus live; but knowing it, does any one think that he is free to go or to stay, to move round with the earth to that portion of its orbit where summer is found, or to remain in this portion where it is always winter? Neither should a conscious weather-cock think itself free. Surely we do not feel this compelling power in our ordinary actions.

Again it is urged that we do not take into account the force of motives. The will depends on the intellect. We cannot desire anything but what we know to be good,—good in these present circumstances. Let there be two

objects before me, one better than the other. Can I choose the less and so deprive myself of the greater good? I can choose but what I know to be good; can I think it good to deprive myself of something greater and better?

This is and always was the stock argument of the opponents of free-will. It is urged by Mill and his school with as much confidence as if it had never been heard of before,—as if it had not been tried and found wanting hundreds of years before the time of St. Thomas.

In connection with this objection Dr. Mivart makes a wise observation. Determinists as a rule deny vital activity; they think that we are merely played upon by forces from without. If that were so, we could not, of course, resist the strongest motive, as an iron nail cannot but be drawn to the strongest magnet. But the supposition is false.

“Consciousness informs us that certain motives are impelling us to form certain determinations; it distinguishes also between the relative force of these several motives, and it proclaims that none of these motives produce or necessitate the determination itself, which it affirms to be one's own act. It is the exercise of a new force, entirely distinct from the force of motives. The existence of the strongest motive, and the influence which it exerts to urge us to an act of the will, is due to some cause over which we have no control; of the existence of that effect which we call ‘an act of volition,’ we are the cause—we produce it and we continue it.”¹

But still the difficulty remains; I can choose but what I know to be good; can I think it good to deprive myself of something greater and better?

I answer: one cannot elect *formally* to deprive one's self of a greater benefit, though one may deprive one's self *in effect*. One cannot choose but what is seen to be good; but given two objects both of which are seen to be good, one can deliberately choose the less of the two, knowing that the effect of the choice will be to give up something better.

How do we know that we can do this? Partly from consciousness and partly from experience. If there be placed before me two packages, one containing ten sovereigns the

¹ “Nature and Thought,” p. 201.

other containing twenty, and if I get my choice, I know that I am not necessitated to take the twenty. It is most likely that I will take the twenty; but even when I do, consciousness tells me that the act is mine, and I feel no compulsion. If I were under compulsion, I should feel it. Therefore I could have abstained, or I could have chosen the package of ten, as I know from experience in other circumstances that I have power to do.

What then, it may be asked, determines the will to one package more than to the other? The will itself; the act is its act. The human will is not like a piece of iron between two magnets; it is alive. It cannot act except in certain conditions,—except the object is seen to be good. But given two such goods, it can choose either, since it feels no compulsory motion to one of the two.

But, it is said, one must at least make up one's mind to choose, and this very fact of desiring one object more than another is an antecedent motive that effectually prevents the will from choosing the other object. One cannot prefer one thing and choose the other:

“When we think of ourselves hypothetically as having acted otherwise than we did, we always suppose a difference in the antecedents; we picture ourselves as having known something that we did not know, or not known something that we did know, which is a difference in the external inducements; or as having desired something, or disliked something, more or less than we did; which is a difference in the internal inducements.”¹

Of course “one must make up one's mind to choose; and this very fact prevents the will from choosing the other object.” But this fact of making up one's mind, instead of being an “antecedent motive,” is the very act which we contend is free. Hence we deny that we “suppose a difference in the antecedents” “when we think of ourselves hypothetically as having acted otherwise than as we did.” We do not “picture ourselves as having known something that we did not know.” And if we imagine ourselves “as having desired something . . . more or less than we did,” this is not an “antecedent” but the free act itself.

¹ Mill, “On Hamilton,” p. 583.

Indeed in his book on Logic, Mill virtually gives up the case. It is a question, he tells us, not of free-will but of causality. He sees no essential difference between walking and being made to walk. In this latter case "the imagination retains the feeling of some more intimate connection, of some peculiar tie or mysterious constraint exercised by the antecedent over the consequent." In the former case "we are certain . . . that there is not this mysterious constraint. We know that we are not compelled as by a magical spell, to obey any particular motive . . . But neither is any such mysterious compulsion now supposed by the best [!] philosophical authorities, to be exercised by any other cause over its effect. *Those who think that causes draw their effects after them by a mystical tie are right in believing that the relation between volitions and their antecedents is of another nature.*"¹ All, therefore, who believe in force, or the principle of causality, should also believe in free-will.

It would be out of place in a paper like this to deal exhaustively with all the arguments for and against free-will. I can but refer to another proof which Catholic writers have always thought to be of great value,—the argument from morality.

I shall presently endeavour to show that there are such things as moral law, duty, goodness, wickedness,—and this quite independently of utility or the reverse, of pleasure or pain. Good men are entitled to reward; bad men deserve punishment. All this supposes free-will. A magnet does its work well, but its goodness is not moral goodness. We do not *reward* machines. Vegetables and brutes may be *trained* but not *punished*. Beasts are *beaten* but not *blamed*. When we speak of reward or punishment in relation to brutes, we use a metaphor. We speak thus because of analogy: just as we talk of their friendliness, intelligence, and other such qualities.

These conclusions flow necessarily from our notion of right and wrong, which is independent of utility and its

¹ "Logic," Book VI., ch. ii.; the italics are mine.

opposite, of pleasure and pain. Mill tells us that "there are two ends which on the Necessitarian theory are sufficient to justify punishment: the benefit of the offender himself and the protection of others. To punish him for his own good . . . is no more unjust than to administer medicine." It is to supply a motive "counterbalancing the influence of present temptations." "In its other aspect, punishment is a precaution taken by society in self-defence. Free-will or no free-will, it is just to punish so far as is necessary for this purpose, as it is just to put a wild beast to death (without unnecessary suffering) for the same object."¹

All this supposes that criminal acts are those that are hurtful either to one's self or to society.

If this supposition be untrue, what other reason can be alleged as a justification of punishment? If a man has benefited both himself and society by bad acts, why should he be punished? Mill would, of course, deny the hypothesis. We on the other hand affirm, that, however close be the connection between crime and injury either to one's self or to the state, *crime is not injury*; and hence what justifies the restraint of one, cannot justify the punishment of the other.

II. This brings us to our second assertion,—“we are subject to moral law.”

Here also we have to deal with a question of fact, with regard to which it might seem at first sight as if there were no dispute. For, though there may be some so dead to all finer feeling as to deny that there is any distinction between good and bad, they must be very few, if any. The materialists of our time pretend to champion morality as stoutly as ourselves. Yet even with regard to the fact of the existence of a moral order we do not agree in reality. We use the same words but do not attach to them the same ideas. Hence it has to be proved that actions are good and bad, not in the materialistic sense.

¹ "On Hamilton," p. 592.

Let us understand in the first place what our opponents mean. Dr. Mivart shall explain.

"Their view is that in spite of the present differences between the ideas 'pleasure' and 'duty,' they are, nevertheless, one as to their origin—an origin consisting ultimately of pleasurable and painful sensations. Moral conceptions, they say, have been evolved from pleasurable sensations by the preservation through long ages (in the struggle for life) of a predominating number of such individuals as happened to have a natural and spontaneous liking for practices and habits of mind useful to their tribe or race, while individuals possessing a marked tendency to contrary practices and habits of mind were destroyed. The descendants of individuals so surviving (because fittest to survive) have, they say, inherited a strong liking for such useful habits of mind, and at last—finding this inherited tendency thus existing in themselves, distinct from their tendency to conscious self-gratification—have come to regard it as something fundamentally distinct, innate, and independent of all experience. In fact, according to this school, the idea of 'right' is only the result of the gradual accretion of useful predilections, which from time to time arose in a series of ancestors naturally selected. In this way 'morality' is, as it were, the congealed past experience of the race; and 'virtue' becomes a sort of retrieving which the thus improved human animal practices by a perfected and inherited habit, regardless of self-gratification, just as the brute animal has acquired the habit of seeking prey and bringing it to his master, instead of devouring it himself. 'Conscience' is thus (according to the teaching of this school) but an accumulation of traditional feelings of utility; 'right action' is but a form of self-seeking; and our 'perception of right' is but a modified feeling of pleasure which has come to mistake itself for something higher."¹

Let our author further explain the Catholic view.

"In the first place I should say that 'virtue' and 'utility' are ideas not only fundamentally distinct, but so far in natural opposition, that the existence of 'utility' in an action may now and again detract from its virtue. So essential is the distinction that not only does the idea of 'benefit' not enter into the idea of 'duty,' but we even see that the very fact of an act not being beneficial to us, makes it the more praiseworthy. Its merit is increased by

¹ "Nature and Thought," p. 135.

any self-denial which may be necessary to its performance, while gain tends to diminish the merit of an action. It is not that the absence of gain or pleasure benefits our neighbour more: it is that any diminution of pleasure which circumstances may occasion, irrespective of any advantage thereby occasioned to our neighbour, in itself heightens the value of an action. That therefore cannot be the substance of 'duty' which increases dutifulness by its absence. In the second place it is evident that good intention is of the very essence of an act of 'duty,' and not good results nor pleasurable feelings felt in its performance. I do not mean by this to deny that there is a primary objective goodness in the nature of a virtuous man's action, but, with our limited knowledge, intention is our test. No action done with a bad intention can be good, whatever its result. If a man intending to do harm to another by a spiteful act, really benefits him thereby through some miscalculation, his spiteful act is not made into a 'good' one or 'an act of duty,' because it happens accidentally to turn out well."¹

The question at issue between the two schools is, what is meant by goodness or badness which all acknowledge to be real? Materialists contend that utility,—and therefore pleasure and pain,—is the ultimate essential constituent; that, when thoroughly analysed, actions are found to be good or bad according as they are beneficial or hurtful either to individuals or to the race.

On the contrary we maintain that the essence of goodness is not pleasure, but that it is "simple and inexplicable"²—goodness. It is as simple as being, as inexplicable as unity. We maintain that there are two orders, the physical and the moral; that there are in each order primary ideas incapable of analysis, and first truths incapable of proof; that goodness is such a primary idea; and that some such axiom as, "good is to be done," is *seen* to be true, rather than *deduced* as a conclusion from any more primary considerations of pleasure or utility.

Dr. Mivart, in the extract just quoted, gives two reasons for this teaching. 1° Ask yourself in the first place what you mean by saying that an act is good. Do you mean that it is

¹ See "Nature and Thought," p. 136.

² Ibid, p. 138.

calculated to benefit the race? Or rather, do you think the ideas "virtue" and "utility," not only "fundamentally distinct, but so far in natural opposition that the existence of utility in an action may now and again detract from its virtue," whereas "the very fact of an act not being beneficial may make it the more praiseworthy?" If there be a God, would it be "good" to offend him even for the sake of benefiting mankind? Is Mill right when he says that it is "better" to go to hell for ever than deny the truth?

But if it may be conceived to be "good," and the "duty" of all men, to choose for their portion eternal torment, whereas it might be "bad" to benefit the race on certain conditions, surely pleasure and pain, benefit or injury, cannot be the ultimate essence of "goodness" and "badness." And as actions are admitted to be "good" or "evil," it follows that these qualities must mean something other than is intended by utilitarians.

So much for the first argument. 2° In the next place utility does not depend on intention, whereas morality does. If I benefit society when intending to injure it, my act is not virtuous. Of course, as a rule, it is useful for society that its members should act with an intention of benefiting; because, as a rule, one injures where one intends to injure. The contrary may, however, be conceived to happen; and if the good and the useful be identical, and if, moreover, my present act, no matter what it was calculated to effect, be conceived to actually effect benefit, not injury,—why is the act not useful, and therefore good? Accordingly, if you find that to your mind goodness and badness depend on intention, you cannot be a utilitarian.

In dealing with this question, as with so many others, our opponents have seized on a half-truth, and have erected thereon a whole system of fallacies. The half-truth is,—
"that good conduct and happiness ultimately coincide."¹ As a matter of fact, good acts usually do benefit the race, whereas

¹ "Nature and Thought," p. 139.

evil brings ruin in its train. This, however, might arise in two ways; either (1) because the good and the useful are *identical*, or (2) because they are intimately *connected*, though perfectly distinct. That this latter is the true view, is manifest from the reasons already assigned. If they were identical, we should be unable to separate them, not only in fact, but even in thought; just as we cannot conceive of man except as rational. But we can conceive an act which would be very evil, though contributing to the pleasure of the whole race. It would be evil to offend God by any act no matter what its consequences, or to be ungrateful or treacherous. And similarly we have it on the authority even of Mr. Mill, that it would be good for each one, and therefore for all, to be buried in hell rather than contradict the known truth.

For further confirmation of this teaching we appeal to the common sense of mankind. Is there or is there not a distinction between the ideas of goodness and badness, of reward and punishment, as applied to brutes and to men? We form higher or lower *estimates* of brutes, but we do not *approve* or *blame*; we *supply motives*, but we do not in any strict sense *reward* or *punish*. The same is true even of those actions, which, though performed by men, are not intended. We do not *punish* lunatics, we *restrain* them: we do not *blame* a man for what he does in his sleep. But such actions are useful or hurtful to society; and even lunatics and brutes may be terrified or allured by motives.

Hence the good and the evil are not identical with the useful and the hurtful; and, as a consequence, the terms "morality," "duty," "goodness," &c. are not to be understood in the materialistic sense. The notion of "goodness" is primary and ultimate; it is simple and inexplicable; it is not deduced but intuited. The utmost analysis of ethics must suppose that it is "right" and "good" to follow the right order. If we inquire further and ask why it is "good" to follow the right order, there is no answer but that we *see* it to be "good."¹

¹ See "Nature and Thought," p. 138.

Akin to the notions of "good" and "evil" are those of "duty" and "law." Let "right" and "wrong" be what you will, it is admitted, and indeed it is manifest, that we "ought" to do the one and avoid the other. Why "ought" we? Because it leads to happiness? Because it improves the race? But why "ought" one to do either? What binds one to the race? You see that the good of the race is not the root of "right;" it *supposes* "right" as its own root.

Dr. Mivart lays stress on this point:

"All our knowledge is either self-evident or is legitimately deduced from what is self-evident, and this of course applies to our ideas of right and wrong, as well as to all the rest of our knowledge. Now, if you or I know certainly that some definite line of action is right, the proposition which declares it to be right must either be self-evident or must be deduced from other propositions as to what is right, one of which at least must be self-evident, or else we can have no basis for our knowledge whatever about right or wrong. In other words the general propositions which lie at the root of any ethical system must themselves be ethical. This truth cuts the ground from under—renders simply impossible—the view that a judgment as to moral obligation can ever have been evolved from mere likings and dislikings, or from feelings of preference for tribal instincts over individual ones."¹

A consistent utilitarian has but one way out of the difficulty,—to deny that there is any such thing as duty. But what an alternative! Because pleasure and pain do not afford a reasonable basis for an ethical system, are we to doubt or deny the moral order? I could as easily persuade myself that the sun does not shine, that science is a lie, that I did not exist a moment ago, or that I do not exist now, as believe that one act may not be better than another, that St. Francis was not better than the ruffians of his time. These things are not proved, they are seen.

Another solution has been attempted, however. Why should it be our duty to benefit the race? Because, it is

¹ "Nature and Thought," p. 142.

said, "the survival of the fittest has given man a natural bias towards, and a liking for, such conduct;" and because "with the accumulated force of countless millions of years of evolution behind you, you should trust to the beneficial effect of the prejudices it has made ingrained and inherent in your nature."¹

Indeed; but why "should" we? What makes it our "duty?" Besides, it is not true that we have any such bias and prejudice. Go to the gaols; has the survival of the fittest given the wretches there incarcerated a natural tendency to benefit their kind? And would that they were alone in their wickedness, or the worst of their race! How silly they think us who tell us, with all our knowledge of the wicked world, and of the selfishness of the human heart, that each one has a natural inclination to sacrifice his own appetite for the sake of the general good.

We believe on the contrary that the majority of men have no natural inclination to sacrifice their individual interests for the general good; and that, even though they had, they would break through such inclination on some very early opportunity. They might be compelled by superior force to respect the rights of others; but soon after they have got the upper hand the weak should go to the wall. The strong and bad should then survive, because fittest to survive; they should transmit to their descendants their tendency to plunder and prey; and thus it might be, that, after a few centuries, all that we look upon as best and holiest should be rightly thought worst and wickedest, and that the saints of the future should be men with hearts as of Judas, of Nero, or of Marat.²

I take it, therefore, not only that actions are good and bad, but that their goodness or badness does not depend on pleasure or pain, on utility or injury. We shall soon see what corollary must be deduced from this teaching.

III. So far two facts have been proved: (1) that we are free, and (2) that there is a moral order. The third part of

¹ See "Nature and Thought," p. 140.

² Ibid., p. 141.

our assertion remains: "Matter is unable to account for either of these."

1° And first with regard to freedom. If the will were material, how could it be free? For remember what Materialists assert,—that there is nothing known to us which may not be explained by the persistence of these forces that are found in inorganic matter; that life, sensation, intelligence, are no new products, except in so far as they represent a new arrangement of pre-existing energies; that our force of will is the very same which in other forms might result in a steam-engine or an electric machine; that we are but "the cunningest of all nature's clocks."

But how can this be? Physical science and all experience tell us that in the inorganic world there is no power of initiative, that non-vital matter must be set in motion from without. Moreover, we have it on the same authority that the amount of motion produced is invariably proportionate to the energy expended. A piece of iron between two magnets must be drawn to the stronger; the heavier of two bodies must bring down its own arm of the balance; equal forces acting in the same directions must draw the object on which they act along the same line. And so, if we were mere machines to be set in motion from without,—by motives,—we should have no more freedom of action than a piece of iron between two magnets or than a sack of wheat in the scales.

The only satisfactory explanation of our free-will is to admit (1) a power of initiative, which (2) is not altogether the slave of motives, and which, accordingly can act somewhat independently and choose its own line. But such power is not contained within the properties of inorganic matter. Hence there must be something very much better than matter in the world.

2. Next with regard to morality. If good and evil may not be resolved into pleasure and pain, how can they be explained? No other analysis has even been attempted by Materialists. The "good" is something very different from the "useful"; it could not be, if matter were all in all.

"Good" is to be done: that is an axiom the truth of which we see in the very notion of good. But why is it to be done? "To be done" connotes "duty"; and "duty" supposes "praise," "blame," "reward," and "punishment." But what is "duty" to a Materialist? Why am I to do good—to do my duty—if there be nothing but matter? If I do not do good, what then? Am I deserving of blame or punishment, and why? The race, indeed; perish the race! If plunder, ingratitude, treason, lust, make my life pleasanter here,—and they well may,—I should be a fool to deprive myself of pleasure for the sake of posterity. If there be nothing but matter, I shall be nothing then: *dum vivimus, vivamus*. Hence if there were nothing but matter, there could be no real moral good or evil,—no real moral order.

W. McDONALD.

(*To be continued.*)

WAS ST. THOMAS A THOMIST?

- (1) "Controversiarum de divinae gratiae liberique arbitrii concordia initia et progressus." Auctore G. Schneemann, S.J., Friburgi Brisgoviae, 1881.
- (2) "S. Thomas et doctrina praemotionalis physicae seu responsio ad Rev. P. Schneemann, S.J., aliosque doctrinae Scholae Thomisticae impugnatores." Auctore P.F. Ant. M. Dummermuth Ord. Praed., Sac Theol. Mag. et in Collegio Lovaniensi ejusdem ordinis Stud. Reg. Parisiis apud editores ephemeridis *L'année Dominicaine*, via dicta "du Cherche-Midi," 1886.
- (3) "Bañez et Molina," Par le R.P. de Regnon, S.J.
- (4) "Saint Thomas et le Thomisme." Lesserteur.
- (5) "La Revue Catholique." Louvain, 15 Janvier, 1883.
- (6) "La Prédétermination physique et la Science moyenne. Sentiment de Saint Thomas." Par son Eminence le Cardinal J. Pecci traduit de l'Italien. Le Mans: Leguicheux.
- (7) "Jahrbuch für Philosophie und speculative Theologie." Paderborn und Münster 1 Band. 2 Heft. 1886.
- (8) "Literarische Rundschau," December 1886.

THE questions which cluster round the mysterious relations existing between the fore-knowledge of God, His infinite causality and the action of His grace on the one

hand, and the human soul with its complete freedom and moral responsibility both in the natural and supernatural orders, on the other, have in all times exercised the minds of philosophers and theologians. How warm, indeed, the struggle between contending schools could at times become, was seen in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, when the Holy See was obliged at length to interfere and calm the ardour of the combatants.

Among Catholic Theologians there are, as is well-known, two principal schools on the question of grace—the Thomists and the Molinists; the Thomists finding their leading representatives in the Order of St. Dominic, the Molinists in the Society of Jesus.

Both schools agree in accepting those positions which belong as much to reason as to faith, that God is the source of all created being, the first mover in all created motion, and at the same time that man's will is absolutely free and that he is accordingly responsible for his free choice.

They differ however as to the manner in which God is the first mover of the free act of the human will.

The Thomists maintain that, as in all other created action, there must be a previous movement from God, so in the case of the created will, no act can be performed without the previous action of God, not merely persuading but moving the will to this or that determinate act. This divine impulsion they term *physical premotion* or *predetermination*; and contend that it differs from the divine action upon necessary created causes, not in being less powerful or all-embracing in its efficacy, but in its being of such a nature as not only to cause the act of the will but to render that act absolutely free.

The Molinists on the other hand maintain that God does not thus premove the will, but that the will makes its own choice, and that God so interpenetrates and concurs with this election that the resulting action belongs both to God and the creature.

It is in these divergent propositions that the kernel of the controversy is to be found. For if God premoves the will to every act, whether natural or supernatural, *Praedestinatio ante praevisa merita* follows naturally, nor does any fresh difficulty

arise about the divine fore-knowledge. If, on the contrary, the choice of the will is in any way outside the divine causality, the question at once arises: How then does God know free created acts? Hence the *scientia media* of the Molinists as an attempted explanation, which, if satisfactory, would avoid the difficulties of *Praedestinatio post praevisa merita*.

As to the theological question in dispute, the writer of this paper wishes to make no secret that his convictions lie entirely on the side of the Thomists, although he is by no means blind to those grave difficulties which arise from our inability to grasp the conception of a divine action moving the will efficaciously to this or that determined act, and at the same time leaving its freedom intact.

But beyond stating the question in dispute, it is not intended here to defend the Thomist doctrines from the objections of their adversaries; but merely to consider the *historical* aspect of the same question, that is to say, which of the two systems represents the traditional teaching of St. Thomas and his earlier followers.

There is no doubt that this aspect of the controversy has assumed a new interest since the publication of the Encyclical of our present Holy Father, Pope Leo XIII., the "*Aeterni Patris*," urgently recommending the doctrines of St. Thomas, "that great master whom the Dominican family rightly glories in as its own," as interpreted by the tradition of his greatest commentators.

As was to be expected, a laudable desire to follow the Pope's directions was shown on all sides by professors and students in Catholic seats of learning. Those text books were chosen both in theology and philosophy which seemed best to represent the mind of the Angelic Doctor. Zigliara, Gonzalez, and Liberatore took the places of Tongiorgi and Palmieri in philosophy, while for theology a disposition showed itself to take up Billuart, at any rate for the more speculative parts of theology. Now Billuart, as is well known, is a strong, nay, often violent, opponent of Molinism, and it was but natural that the upholders of the latter system should view with alarm this tendency towards Thomistic teaching.

It must be made evident to all that the principles of Billuart and modern so-called Thomists were not those of St. Thomas and the early Dominican school, but the inventions of a later date. So with this object in view a Latin treatise was published at Freiburg by the late Father G. Schneemann, a distinguished writer of the Society of Jesus, in which it was boldly affirmed that not only had St. Thomas never taught the doctrines of the existing Thomist school, but that his faithful interpreters, Capreolus, Ferrariensis, Cajetan and the rest should, with their master, rather be reckoned among upholders of Molinism. The true father of modern Thomism is the Spanish Dominican, Bañez, so that his followers should rather be called Banesianism than Thomists.

The Latin work of Schneemann and another by him in German on the same subject were widely read, and the treatise came to be regarded as the best defence yet undertaken of the thesis under consideration. Various writers of Molinist views took on themselves the task of popularising Schneemann's arguments, with more or less original matter of their own. Fr. de Regnon, S.J., in a work entitled *Bañez et Molina*, and Professor Lesserteur in his book, *St. Thomas et le Thomisme*, did this for France; while in the *Revue Catholique* of Louvain, Professor Dupont attempted the same task, which was also undertaken in other theological periodicals.

From the opposite camp there appeared no reply to the whole range of Schneemann's arguments, though Dr. Prosper of Louvain and a Passionist Professor in Rome wrote pamphlets calling in question his interpretation of St. Thomas, and in Germany Schneemann was attacked in one or two of the theological reviews.

But within the last year has been published at Paris by the Regent of Studies in the Dominican house at Louvain, Fr. Dummermuth, a volume of 750 pages, which is certainly one of the most noteworthy contributions to theological literature that has appeared of late years. It goes step by step over the ground occupied by Schneemann, with a thoroughness that leaves nothing to be desired, and that

makes the book not a mere controversial brochure but a work of permanent value, an exhaustive treatise on the traditional interpretation of St. Thomas, in Dominican schools, on the questions of Grace and Free-will.

After a preliminary chapter in which the question at issue is stated, and it is brought out how consistently the Holy See has identified the Thomistic doctrines of grace with those of St. Thomas, Fr. Dummermuth occupies more than half his volume with a careful inquiry into the mind of the Angelic Doctor himself on these disputed points. After studying the lengthy extracts from the two *Summas*, the *Quaestiones Disputatae* and other writings of St. Thomas, which Fr. Dummermuth duly marshals before us, and his own elucidation of the text, and comparing them with Fr. Schneemann's treatment of the same subject, we venture to affirm, without fear of contradiction, that although here and there one may be surprised that the Master did not speak more plainly, and although this or that explanation of a difficult text may appear to us a little forced, no unprejudiced mind will remain in doubt that St. Thomas' teaching is something very different from the Molinistic doctrine of a mere *concursus simultaneous*.

In a recent pamphlet Cardinal Pecci, who declares himself neither Thomist nor Molinist but a follower of St. Thomas, while admitting that Molina's doctrine of *scientia media* finds no countenance in St. Thomas denies that the *præmotio physica* of the Thomist can claim the same great authority as its supporter. Reading his pamphlet side by side with the first part of Fr. Dummermuth's work, we can well understand that the Cardinal will find many admirers, especially among those who are lovers of peace, and desire to find a *modus vivendi* between the opposing schools, but he will be obliged to re-consider not a few of his arguments in the light of Fr. Dummermuth's demonstrations. Reading certain portions of St. Thomas by themselves, one can understand its being maintained that in the ardour of controversy, the later disciples of the Angelic Doctor have carried out to conclusions which he himself would have hesitated to accept his fundamental teaching that God is the first cause of all the actions of secondary causes, not only by giving

them the power of acting, and by preserving that power in being, but by moving them and applying them to determinate acts. But with the complete view which Fr. Dummermuth gives us of the teaching of the Master, even this concession can no longer be made, for there is scarcely an expression of the later writers which cannot find its counterpart in his own writings. That Cardinal Pecci's pamphlet will please either Thomists or Molinists we doubt, although its moderation will be admired; but of this we feel confident, that not even the learning and acuteness of writers like Fr. Schneemann will convince unbiassed persons that in some mysterious way a fundamental doctrine of St. Thomas has been entirely misunderstood in his own order of St. Dominic;—an order which, for six hundred years has in numberless general chapters imposed on its sons the obligation of following St. Thomas; of which every theological professor has always made an oath that he will never, in his teaching, depart from the doctrine of the same master; in whose theological schools, the *Summa* has ever been the text book to be read during four years of the curriculum, commented on article by article by its professors, its very words having to be committed to memory by the students.

And this leads us to the second part of Fr. Dummermuth's work, where he combats the thesis of Schneemann that the *true* Thomistic tradition remained in the Dominican schools only down to the time of Bañez, who, in opposition to the work of Molina, and the line generally taken by the Society of Jesus, first departed from the ancient traditions of his order, and founded the system of *Neo-Thomism*, and that ever since the true Thomist tradition is to be found among the followers of Molina.

Truly a hazardous thesis, and one which it would have been safer to have left untouched. Fr. Dummermuth's chapters "de vetere schola S. Thomae" simply reduce it to powder, and no one can rise from the perusal of his pages without a conviction that whatever may be the truth or falsehood of the Thomist doctrines of grace, they were taught by a succession of the great mediæval doctors of the Dominican School down to the time of the Council of Trent,

and frequently in the very same terms in which they were afterwards formulated by Bañez. At the risk of making his book so large as to alarm all readers whose minds are not made up for a profound study of the question, Fr. Dummermuth has done more than quote a few lines of his authors, he has given often a page at a time from these old scholastics, so that no suspicion can remain on a reader's mind that he has only half the truth before him. It is instructive in this respect to compare his quotations with those of the book he is answering.

We would willingly linger over the explicit testimony borne by Aegidius Romanus, Capreolus, Ferrariensis, &c., to the truth of *praemotio physica*, but space fails us. We can only refer our readers to Fr. Dummermuth's pages.

But what foundation is there then for the statement that Bañez introduced a change into the teaching of the Dominican School? Only this, we believe, that with the rise of the Calvinistic heresies in the sixteenth century, the Grace controversy entered on a new phase. Some theologians, and at least one of the Dominican School (if we may consider Catharinus as of that school), considering Thomism an inefficient system for resisting the new errors, ranged themselves on the same side on which Molina is found, and followed the new ideas he introduced. Nor can we regret this, for perhaps there will always be minds who have a repugnance to the Thomistic doctrines, and find consolation in the opposite opinions.

But be this as it may, Fr. Dummermuth proves in his chapter on the theologians of the time of the Council of Trent, that in spite of notable exceptions the more general feeling among theologians was in favour of what appears to be the teaching of the catechism of the Council of Trent: "Quae moventur et agunt aliquid, intima virtute ad motum et actionem ita (Deus) impellit, ut quamvis secundarum causarum efficientiam non impediat, praeveniat tamen, cum ejus occultissima vis ad singula pertineat."¹

That no fundamental change was introduced into the

¹ Cat. Conc. Trid. Parte 1, Art. 1.

Thomistic system by Bañez is evident from the fact that his own order, sworn defenders of the ancient traditions, never accused him of innovations. Fr. Schneemann indeed states, and the statement has been repeated many times, that when Bañez first published his system, one of his propositions was condemned by the Dominican Medina as "new and unheard of." It is a curious instance of how loose statements of this kind may be made and repeated, for when this "*nova et inaudita sententia*" is subjected to Fr. Dummermuth's criticism, it appears, *first*, that it had nothing to do with the questions we are discussing: *second*, that Bañez rejects it almost in the same words as Medina; and *third*, that the opinion to which Medina objected is found, not in Bañez, but in Vasquez, a writer of a very different school.

In his concluding pages, Fr. Dummermuth inquires into the opinions of the early Jesuit writers as to the mind of St. Thomas. Let one example of his treatment of the subject suffice.

The famous Jesuit, Cardinal Toletus, studied with Bañez at the University of Salamanca, but in their later days they drifted widely apart, and are found teaching very divergent opinions on Grace and Free-will. But thanks to the edition of the "*Enarratio* of Toletus on St. Thomas," brought out in 1869, by Fr. Paria, S.J., Fr. Dummermuth makes it evident that the Cardinal, one of the greatest of the early Jesuit Theologians, who formed the succeeding generation of the Society's Professors, is so far from accusing Bañez or other living Thomist writers of novelty of doctrine, that he expressly declares, not once but over and over again, that the school afterwards called Molinist, with which he ranges himself, is in opposition with St. Thomas, and his exponents, Cajetan and Ferrariensis.

From what we have written our readers will see that all who wish to be *au courant* with the actual state of this controversy should read side by side the works of Fr. Schneemann and Fr. Dummermuth.

The latter work has been warmly received by theologians abroad, and many of the leading theological reviews have devoted articles to the new phase of the discussion it has

opened. We commend to the attention of those interested a valuable paper by Dr. Schneider in the second number of the "Jahrbuch für Philosophie und speculative Theologie," which thus concludes :

"Whoever has read St. Thomas as a whole will simply smile at the notion that he is not a Thomist or has turned Molinist. Only those whose acquaintance with Thomas merely extends to quotations taken from him here and there can seriously maintain this. However there is a difference between St. Thomas and the Thomists. Thomas expresses the Thomistic teaching more clearly and energetically than the Thomists. This is the impression left after reading the articles collected together by Dummermuth. There it appears, and it is the merit of Dummermuth to have made this positively evident, that no Thomist goes beyond his master in the clearness of his teaching on *Praemotio Physica*."

In concluding this paper let us say that in our effort to put before the readers of the IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD the present aspect of this question, we have tried not to let our own convictions make us in any way unfair to our opponents. If in a necessarily limited article we have not at all times put forward both sides with the fulness strict justice would have demanded, we can only say that the injustice is unintentional, we have habitually expressed ourselves far less strongly than our convictions warranted, for while deeply respecting the learning of our opponents, and with a full consciousness of those intellectual difficulties which make many reject Thomism and take refuge in the easier paths of Molinism, we are firmly convinced that on the historical aspect of the question there are not two opinions tenable. Thomism may be wrong, but it is certainly the doctrine of St. Thomas and the *entire* Thomist school.

Writing in a periodical like the IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD it is scarcely necessary to say that we wish to discuss the question purely on theological grounds, and we feel confident that no one will try and read between the lines to discover any animosity to the great society which all Dominicans are bound by their constitutions to hold in special honour for the great service it has rendered to God's Church.

F. CHARLES PRIEST, O.P.

THEOLOGICAL QUESTIONS.

FAST REQUIRED FOR COMMUNION.

“If on a Sunday a drop of water entered the chalice between the consecration and consumption, would the reception of it with the Sacred Species be a violation of the fast, so that the priest could not duplicate to enable the congregation at another Church to satisfy the obligation of hearing Mass? As I knew the case to occur, where a drop of water falling from the roof of the church, which was being repaired, entered the chalice when the celebrant uncovered it sometime after the consecration at his first Mass, I shall be grateful for a word on the query if convenient in the next number of the RECORD.

“A SUBSCRIBER.”

We think it is fairly probable that the priest in this case remains *jejunus* after consuming the chalice. No doubt the law of fasting before Communion is most strict. It is, indeed, so strict that we cannot rely on *parvitas materiae* as justification for our opinion, unless by way of a helping circumstance. Neither is it enough to reflect that a drop of water, which is accidentally let down in washing the mouth, does not break the fast. For whether the water in such a case is actually mixed with *saliva* or not, the point seems to be ruled on the general ground that it descends *per modum salivae*.

Apparently, too, the usual conditions for breaking the fast are present in the occurrence mentioned by our correspondent. The substance is a *res* (a) *consumptibilis* (b) *sumpta ab extrinseco* (c) *per modum potus*. It is, moreover, taken deliberately. Still, so long as a contrary decision is not given, we think one may fairly hold that the fasting law does not forbid its consumption.

For, not merely has this drop fallen into the chalice against the priest's wishes. What is more important is that, if not objectionable on the score of quality, he is most strictly bound to consume it. It cannot be separated from the Sacred Species which the celebrant must receive. He is not free to leave the Sacrifice in any way incomplete, and he may not put aside the contents of the chalice with the object of consecrating anew, unless the foreign ingredient be

dangerous or very disagreeable. Now in these circumstances we do not think the Church attaches a disqualification to receiving the drop of water. Taken by itself, deliberately, it would be a barrier against the reception of our "First Food." But in the case made by our correspondent, its consumption is due to the august Sacrifice itself, and may, we think, be considered as not falling under the fasting prohibition.

THE SICKNESS IN WHICH THE VIATICUM IS GIVEN.

"A lady who has been in the habit of receiving Holy Communion three or four times a week, has been pronounced by several of the most eminent physicians to be suffering from enlarged heart with valvular disease of the same. The disease is certainly a dangerous one, and may at any moment of unusual fatigue or emotion prove fatal. There is, however, one standing danger against which all the doctors have cautioned her—getting up in the morning without having previously taken food. She does not like Holy Communion to be taken to her room, as long as she can come to receive it in the Chapel, though that could be done with some inconvenience. I may add that she can take moderate exercise in the open air and drive out, such exercise being advisable in her state of health. She may, and I hope will live many years, and her heart may be somewhat strengthened by proper treatment and care, but never entirely cured. Can she receive Holy Communion *per modum viatici et non jejuna* ?

"SCIENS SALTEM DUBITARE."

There are extrinsic objections of an obvious nature against an affirmative answer to this question. The giving of Communion *per modum viatici* at the altar rails is generally calculated to excite wonderment on the part of those around. Others, too, if they heard of the lady's practice, might indiscreetly venture to do likewise, relying on their own judgment in regard to sufficiency of cause. Let us, however, suppose that these difficulties have been surmounted. It remains to discuss the intrinsic merits of the case.

Is the lady in *actual* danger of death? Is it solidly probable that each Communion, as it occurs, will be her last? If so, as to receive while fasting involves some inconvenience, she is, according to the general law of the Church, a subject

for the Viaticum though not *jejuna*. Otherwise she must receive fasting.

Accordingly, if the proximate danger would cease on condition of her taking food early, she should be resigned to receive only so often as the priest may be able to arrive before the fast is broken. Again, she is not a subject for the Viaticum as proposed, if apart from "fatigue and emotion" there were no serious reason to fear for her life, provided she could and would by a reasonable effort avoid these sources of peril.

But when able medical men, after every fair precaution, answer our inquiries by saying that, taking all the surroundings into account, it is really probable her next Communion will be her last, she may receive though not fasting. Information as to the precise state of her health is of course indispensable. In heart disease it can be had only from the judgments of others. Hence a priest should be very careful about the replies he gets to the queries we have above suggested.

CASUS SUB IMPEDIMENTO METUS.

"Paulus Catholicus, vix et longinqua regione in qua tribus annis manserat, ad patriam suam reversus, rogat pastorem suum ut eum admittat ad nuptias cum Martha celebrandas, quaestionibus tamen a pastore propositis candide respondens, fatetur se in ista regione catholicam puellam seduxisse nomine Aloysiam, ac propterea fuisse condemnatum a iudice civili juxta regionis leges vel absolute ad matrimonium cum ipsa celebrandum sub diuturnae incarcerationis comminatione vel disjunctive ad eligendum inter nuptias et carcerem: consensum tamen, sub influxu tanti metus, ab ipso fuisse sincere datum: sed, consummato jam matrimonio, se audivisse conjugium nullitate absoluta laborare, ac deinceps a quolibet vinculo conjugali reipsum immunem reputasse.

Re ad ordinarium delata, Pauli veracitas per diligentem inquisitionem agnoscitur. Unde ejus defensor instat ut declaretur conjugium ipsius cum Aloysia fuisse nullum ob metum *gravem* in ordine ad matrimonii celebrationem inessum per sententiam tribunalis laici formaliter saltem si non materialiter *injustam*. Matrimonii autem defensor contendit metum fuisse *juste* inessum, ac proinde, sub hoc respectu validitati conjugii nihil obstare!"

Matrimonium quod cum Aloysia contraxit Paulus videtur esse validum. Nullomodo enim constat metum sub cujus influxu consensum suum dederit sponsus fuisse injustum. Lex quidem illius regionis aliis in locis non viget. At vero mala quae grassantur ubique non sunt eadem. Et sane vix est qui negaret reipublicae ad seductores quam maxime refrenandos inesse potestatem lege generali defloratorem ad nuptias cum violata ineundas, sub comminatione carceris diuturni, cogendi. Res forsitan aliter se haberet si nullum daretur effugium quo evitari possit matrimonium. In casu vero allato lex est saltem virtualiter disjunctiva. Quoniam igitur aequum est tum Paulum ratione dilecti sui forum loci illius sortiri, tum ad bonum commune promovendum legem illam vigere, poena carceris, ad quam declinandam nuptias eligit, non esset injusta; neque invalidus haberi potest contractus sub metu illius poenae confectus.

ACCELERATIO PARTUS.

“Titius, suam uxorem Bertham domi relinquens, mercaturae causa ad regionem longinquam abierat, cum intentione non ante quindecim menses redeundi. Infelix mulier mox ex adulterio gravida facta est; sed prolem sufficienti tempore ante mariti sui reditum esse nascituram sperabat, ut calamitas ipsius lateret; quum ecce, epistola Titi nuntiat eum, ingruente bello, intra paucas hebdomadas penates suos esse revisurum.

Bertha, crudeli auxietate oppressa ad medicum catholicum omni fide dignum festinat, qui agnoscens septimum mensem esse fere completum, et advertens mulierem indignationi mariti aliisque damnis inde orituris fore obnoxiam concludit absque mora accelerandum esse partum. Obtenta prius parochi sui approbatione, feliciter peragit operationem, quae nativitatem procurat prolis viabilis, cujus anima, baptismo regenerata, post breve tempus evolat ad coelum.

Porro Titius tempore praefixo adveniens, Bertham perfectae valetudini restitutum reperit, nec ullam de infando secreto suspicionem habet.

Parochus autem a quibusdam sacerdotibus accusatus tanquam complicitatis in abortu procurando reus nunc postulat ut vel probetur eum errasse, vel argumenta praebeantur, quibus recte se egisse

demonstret; praesertim si animi perturbatione in corpus redundante grave damnum pro Berthac ipsiusque foetus incolumitate non improbabili-
biliter fuisset secuturum."

Nisi ageretur de facto jam completo opinionem nostram libentius de hac re difficillima exponeremus. Prouti res se habet, si iudicium, quod quidem videtur, sit quoad hunc casum individuum ferendum, quaestionem tantae difficultatis ad S. Sedem prius deferre omnino deceret. Quid nobis dicendum paucis explicabimus. Momenta ex utraque parte adsunt gravia. Imprimis tali partus acceleratione damnum ingens proli infertur. Hoc enim facto vel mors vel vita debilis semper sequitur. Secundo, si haec actio *ratione damni ab extrinseco eventuri* permitteretur, generi humano magnum sine dubio oriretur periculum. Altera autem ex parte negari non potest quin commoda pretiosa feminae, marito, toti familiae et interdum ipsi etiam proli acceleratione partus eveniant. Quae cum ita sint, re hinc inde perpensa, nobis videtur sic agere ob rationes allatas non licere, nisi forsitan paucis ante tempus parturitionis consuetum diebus.

DUTY OF THE CHAPLAIN OF A WORKHOUSE TO NON-CATHOLIC INMATES IN DANGER OF DEATH.

"A chaplain to a workhouse hospital in England finds that the rules of the workhouse forbid him to speak on religious matters to a patient who has been entered a *Protestant* in the Creed Register of the house. He understands that this moreover is forbidden by the law of the land.

A patient (Protestant) is dying and asks for the priest to attend him.

Quaeritur 1°. Can he do so in defiance of the law?

Quaeritur 2°. Is he *bound* to do so in defiance of the law?

In reply to Q. 2, a late lamented priest of much experience on the English mission answered, it is said, "He is not bound," relying on the fact that the evils resulting from such action in a bigoted Protestant country would be very great." "SACERDOS."

We find some difficulty in reconciling the experience of the deceased pastor to whom our respected correspondent refers with information that has come to us from another

source. We have been told on excellent authority that with a little tact and sacrifice of self a priest may secure fair liberty for the exercise of his sacred functions on behalf of the sick in English workhouses. Experience, however, in matters of this kind is liable to vary with the antecedents and surroundings of particular places. Hence, without further question as to facts, we turn to consider the difficulties proposed by "Sacerdos."

If the law to which he alludes is in some respects inconvenient, it has also decided advantages in protecting the dying poor of the Catholic Church against the inroads of proselytisers. Accordingly, whilst in discharge of the sacred office of charity towards those who are in extreme peril of salvation, a priest should avoid as far as possible all unfavourable suspicion in regard to this rule. If, then, the local authorities insist that a priest, though invited, is not free to attend any person who is not registered as a Catholic, let him at once see to the patient's right of having his name transferred to the Catholic roll. This once done, his way is clear.

But may not the officials through bigotry manage to evade the transfer? And again what is to be done when only a few moments of life remain? Either supposition plainly refers to a state of things which is easily possible. In the former case, if evidence were forthcoming to prove what has occurred, a priest should, we think, have little to fear, except perhaps for himself personally, in attending the dying man. Now no consideration of personal loss in the temporal order can withstand the claim here pressing on his charity. For, taking non-Catholic adults as they are generally found in workhouses, with their sins, their dimness in religion and their spiritual helplessness, no one can question the extreme danger of their state. A human soul in this sad plight bids us forget every temporal interest of self.

But, if we pass from this first hypothesis, higher interests may be involved. The future of religion and the claims of Catholic inmates are sometimes at stake. All evidence of a favourable kind may be beyond hope. Or again it may be a case brooking no delay. In such events we can conceive

the authorities so disposed that they will adhere to the letter of the regulation, and perhaps punish its infraction by making it impossible for any priest to attend the Catholic patients for a considerable time afterwards. Besides it is a matter of ready occurrence that several persons, if not the whole non-Catholic community, might through ignorance of what actually happened, come to detest our holy religion, if a chaplain persisted beyond his legal rights.

Thus our correspondent's questions in their most difficult aspect supply striking examples of acts from which good and bad effects follow in profusion. About the former no one among us has any serious misgiving. The salvation of a human soul is at stake, and will be secured by the priest's intervention. The evil results, too, are manifest. Now in these circumstances, if a chaplain foresees that the sinful children of his Catholic flock in the workhouse would for certain be deprived, even illegally, of a priest's ministrations at the hour of death owing to his attending this dying man, hard as the word is, we think he should not approach the poor sinner's couch. The claim of numbers here prevails.

If, on the other hand, an outcry against the Catholic priesthood or religion were the worst of *likely* consequences, whilst we can easily fancy extreme cases, in which one should prevent greater evils by leaving the poor sinner prayerfully to God, we think in ordinary circumstances the proper course would be to administer the necessary assistance relying on Providence and the justice of the cause for the future of religion in the institution and neighbourhood.

Throughout we suppose the priest is asked to be present.
P. O'D.

THE CHURCH ABROAD.

The following extract from an article in the *Ecclesiastical Gazette* of Berlin, written by Herr Stoecker, the famous Protestant pastor of that city, gives an idea of the relative position and influence of the Catholic and Protestant Churches in Germany and Prussia.

"In recent times," says this writer, "we have seen the Catholic Church in Germany acquire a preponderating influence in the State.

Whilst our Church threatens to succumb beneath the indifference of the enlightened classes, and the hatred of the lower element, Rome has gained the sympathy of princes, nobles, the gentry, the peasants, and the workmen. The Catholics entered into a struggle with the most powerful kingdom in the world and have been entirely successful. For ten years the "Centre" carried on the battle in the Reichstag, and can now be resisted only by satisfying its Catholic claims. The same Church has likewise acquired wide-spread influence in social as well as in political and religious matters. Very active in literature and in the life of association she has hindered the triumph of Socialism. She is now regarded as the friend of great economic reforms, and the pioneer amongst us of social regeneration." And farther on, "It is beyond question that the Catholic Church has taken the lead in power and influence, leaving us Protestants behind. She now seeks to maintain this advance. Her activity increases everywhere. She is sought after by courts, respected by parliaments, and loved by the people. She is indeed a power with which we have to count."

This is valuable testimony coming from one of the most earnest and intelligent adversaries of Catholicism in the German Empire. It shows too, how false are the criticisms which exult in what they call the utter break-down of the recent Papal interference in German affairs. Of the many extravagant appreciations of this action of Pope Leo XIII. which we have seen expressed within the last month, perhaps the most absurd is that which we have noticed in the April number of the *Contemporary Review*, from the pen of a gentleman who seems to be a native German, and who writes on "Contemporary Life and Thought in Germany." At page 598 he says, "It is a fact not sufficiently noticed that by this interference Leo XIII. strains the Papal Infallibility so as to make it cover everything. Evidently if there ever was a purely secular question it is that of the Septennate. The Pope can bring it within his reach only by extending it to the category of moral questions. But then what other political question may not be classed as a moral one. It was exactly the same reasoning which prompted the interference of Innocent III. in secular contexts, 'non quia judico de feudo sed quia judico de peccato.'"

As far as we Catholics are aware no disputed point of faith or morality has been decided by papal authority since the Vatican Council was held. The infallibility of the Pope, such as it was there defined and which pronounces "ex cathedra" on these matters of

belief or of morals, has not been *strained* to anything that we know of within the past sixteen years much less to an act of passing administration in the ordinary government of the Church. Both Pius IX. and Leo XIII. have addressed weighty or as the Italians say "stupendous Encyclicals" to the universal church, but even these although they are entitled to the assent and obedience of all Catholics on account of the high and sacred authority of the supreme teachers from whom they emanate, do not at all come within the limits of the definition of Papal Infallibility as set forth by the Vatican Council. That is what we Catholics hold ; so that writers like Dr. H. Geffcken must either be in complete ignorance of what is understood by Papal Infallibility, which is very unfortunate, or else they will insist that they know much better what we believe on the subject than we do ourselves. The enemies of the Pope may say what they will. He has gained what he wanted for the time being in Germany and the rulers of that country are not less anxious now than they were before the elections to secure his influence and co-operation in the struggle against socialism and revolution. Besides no act of the Pontificate of Leo XIII. has produced such a serious and salutary effect on Italian politicians. They seem to realize for the first time the paramount necessity of arranging some definite *modus vivendi* between Church and State. The following paragraphs from a letter written to the *Opinione* by a Liberal deputy of the Italian parliament, Signor Toscanelli of Florence, gives expression to the general uneasiness felt on the subject in Liberal circles.

"I am quite of your opinion as to the necessity for the Italian Government and people of arranging without foreign intervention the differences that unfortunately exist between Church and State. But in order to realize that object the State must make up its mind to grant the Holy See a position which she can honourably accept, as the Supreme Head of the Church is plainly justified in affirming that his present position is intolerable. All existing immunities are confined to the Vatican, and when the Pontiff goes outside the threshold of this palace he steps into the atheistical, persecuting state, which banishes God from the schools, from the marriage ceremonies and the courts of justice ; which denies religious assistance to the sailors of our war vessels, which allows our churches to fall in ruins, confiscates the property which has been raised at the expense of the Catholic world, and continually introduces laws hostile to Catholicism. If I were to enumerate all the acts which have been accomplished since 1860 and which taken in their entirety,

reveal a system which aims at the de-christianization of Italy I should be obliged to write for a whole week. The head of the Church is therefore compelled either to remain within the walls of the Vatican or to come forth into a kingdom which has officially declared itself to be the open enemy of Catholicism.

"I believe that if we were to recognise that the supreme ruler of the Church is the sovereign by right and in fact in the Vatican and if we were to give him in addition lands necessary for the establishments which form part of the Universal Church such as the Propaganda, the residences of generals of the religious orders and their procurators and of foreign representatives we could then have a Sacred Rome and a Profane Rome both independent of each other. What I propose is by no means calculated to restore the temporal power but would considerably modify the present state of things which justifies the Pontiff in his repeated complaints."

This proposal proves at least that the more moderate sections of the legislature are impressed with the necessity of coming to terms with the Church. They do not fail to see that the existing relations are a source of great weakness and danger to the state. Nowhere is this aspect of the case better developed than in the recent book of Signor Gallenga—*Italy : Present and Future*.

"The dethronement of the Pope-King" he says, "was the bitterest drop in the cup of humiliation which France had to drain in the issue of her fatal contest with Germany. So long as the Pope is a prisoner, so long as Italy is one, France cannot be said to have spoken her last word. It little matters whether a Thiers, or a Gambetta, a de Freycinet, or a Floquet, or even a priest-hunter like Clémenceau or Rochefort, be at the head of the Government—in the absence of any better cause, the Pope may still at any time furnish a pretext for a French Crusade against Italy and in any such occurrence Italy would have her enemy's ally within her own boundaries, in the very heart of the country," and in another passage—"Italy has reached only half the goal aimed at by Mazzini when he wished to enthrone 'Dio e il Popolo'—God and the people—The people is sovereign, but God is nowhere. What have the democrats done with him? They have broken the laws, the earthly ties of man to man and they have trampled on religion—*i.e.* on conscience which is the Divine link by which human bonds can be securely riveted. 'Away with the Pope! Down with the Priest! Give us godless schools in a godless State!' Such is the democratic clamour in Italy, in that benighted country where nine-tenths of the population can no

more exist without their Santa Messa (Holy Mass) than without their daily bread; and the other tenth consists of arrant infidels who dare not die without crying out 'Un prete! Un prete!' 'For God's sake send for a priest!'"

In France and Belgium the same pressing necessity of a restoration of the temporal power occupies the public mind. The eminent French publicist, M. Rendu, has rendered valuable service by his articles on "Rome capitale" and two interesting pamphlets have just been published which leave no aspect of the question undiscussed. The first has appeared at Brussels and is entitled "Nécessité d'une Restauration du Pouvoir temporel de la Papauté." It is divided into three chapters (1) "Le Pape est à la merci d'autrui" (2) "Le Pape doit être libre et indépendant" (3) "Le Pape doit être souverain temporel." The second work is entitled "La Restauration de la Royauté légitime à Rome" by M. de Dean de Varick, President of the "Catholic Circle" of The Hague in Holland. This work is still more valuable and complete than the preceding. It enters into the origin and development of the international conspiracy which has succeeded in depriving the Pope of his dominions as portion of the more general plan "pour écraser l'infame."

On the other hand the advanced Radicals of Italy are not idle. One of their ablest and most distinguished writers has recently contributed an article to the *Revue Internationale* on the "Roman Question." His argument is as follows:—"Every city or state that is conquered passes under the dominion of the conqueror. Rome was conquered, therefore it has become the property of the conqueror. Pius IX. opposed by force of arms the entry of the Italian soldiers into Rome. The resistance was short and he was vanquished. The inevitable result of this, as of every war, is a change of sovereignty over the territory of the party that was defeated. Nobody doubts that Alsace and Lorraine are now lawfully under the dominion of Germany, no more than they doubt that for over two centuries they *lawfully* belonged to France."

To this the *Civiltà Cattolica* replies (page 398): "We are sorry to see Signor Bonghi fall into such a serious error. For we hold as certain that the right of conquest when separated from the justice of the war, is null and worthless. It is simply the right of the assassin, nothing more nor less. We do not wish to examine here whether the justice of the war was on the side of France or on that of Prussia, but it is quite certain that France not only has some doubt as to the lawfulness of the possession of Alsace and

Lorraine by Germany; but she believes that she is fully justified in making war in order to regain those provinces which were hers for over two centuries. Besides the parallel between the two cases does not hold. For the German conquest of Alsace-Lorraine has been sanctioned by a formal treaty between France and Germany; whereas no treaty has ever been made and never can be made between the Holy See and the Revolution. We have on the contrary a series of the most solemn and explicit protests from Pius IX. and Leo XIII. which have prevented Europe from ever recognizing as lawful the material fact of the conquest of Rome. Whoever would recognize that fact as lawful should equally admit the right of the robber and of the assassin who are also in their way material conquerors."

J. F. HOGAN.

DOCUMENTS.

IMPORTANT STATEMENT REGARDING THE ASSOCIATION OF THE
 "KNIGHTS OF LABOUR," PREPARED BY CARDINAL GIBBONS,
 AND PRESENTED BY HIS EMINENCE TO THE CARDINAL
 PREFECT OF PROPAGANDA.

SUMMARY.

Great importance of the question.—The principles on which the investigation is conducted, found in the Encyclicals of his Holiness, Leo XIII., and Acts of the Holy See.—Wise provision of the Third Council of Baltimore for examining the character and objects of such associations, before proceeding to a condemnation.

Ten of the twelve Archbishops of the United States oppose the condemnation of the "Knights of Labour."—The reasons for this judgment enumerated and explained:—

- 1°. In the form of initiation there is no oath.
- 2°. The members are allowed to reveal their secret proceedings to competent ecclesiastical authority.
- 3°. No promise of blind obedience is exacted.
- 4°. They profess no hostility to religion or to the authority of the Church or the State.

Objects of the Association of the "Knights of Labour":—

1°. To protect the interests and rights of the working masses in the State.

2°. To redress the admitted social evils caused by the avarice, oppression and corruption of the few.

The Catholic "Knights of Labour" resist the temptation to join the Freemasons, from a spirit of obedience to the laws of the Church. The great danger of driving men who are so loyal to Holy Church into secret societies, if their own organisation formed to attain lawful ends by legitimate means be placed under the ban of the Church.

Reasons put forward by those who advocate the condemnation of the Association:—

1°. In this Association Catholics are mixed up with Protestants.

2°. Why not establish an Association under the guidance of the clergy?

3°. Such an organisation exposes Catholics to come under the baneful influence of anarchists, communists, atheists, &c.

4°. Similar associations of workingmen have been stained with crime.

These objections answered.

The democracy the great power of the future. Hence the mission of the Catholic Church to possess itself of the hearts of the masses, in order to form and guide them according to the principles of faith and religion. Important declaration of Cardinal Manning on this subject.

Evils to be apprehended from an attitude of hostility, or even of coldness or indifference on the part of the Church towards the masses.

Conclusions to be drawn:—

1°. The condemnation of the "Knights of Labour" is not justifiable on the principles hitherto followed in condemning certain societies.

2°. It is not necessary.

3°. It is not prudent.

4°. It is dangerous.

5°. It would be inoperative.

6°. It would be injurious.

7°. It would be ruinous in its effect on the support of the Church in America, and of the "Peter's Pence."

8°. It would alienate the masses from the Church and the Holy See.

9°. It would be very injurious to the influence of the Bishops in the United States.

[*Motifs de présenter au Saint-Siège cette mémoire sur les Chevaliers du Travail. Lettres Encycliques de Léon XIII. prises comme guide dans l'examen de la question. Affaires de ce genre déferées par le Concile de Baltimore à une commission d'Archevêques.*]

A. S. EM. LE CARDINAL SIMEONI PREFET DE LA S. CONGREGATION
DE LA PROPAGANDE.

EMINENCE,

En soumettant au Saint-Siège les conclusions qui, après plusieurs mois d'observations et de réflexions attentives, me semblent résumer la vérité sur la question de l'association des Chevaliers du Travail, je suis profondément convaincu de la vaste importance des conséquences qui se rattachent à cette question, laquelle ne forme qu'un anneau dans la grande chaîne des problèmes sociaux de nos jours, et spécialement, de notre pays.

En traitant cette question, j'ai eu grand soin de suivre comme guide constant l'esprit des Encycliques dans lesquelles notre Saint-Père Léon XIII., a si admirablement exposé les dangers de nos temps et leurs remèdes, ainsi que les principes par lesquels doivent se discerner les associations condamnées par le Saint-Siège. Tel fut aussi le guide du Troisième Concile Plénier de Baltimore, dans ses enseignements sur les principes à suivre et les dangers à éviter par les fidèles dans le choix ou la formation des associations, vers lesquelles l'esprit de nos institutions populaires les pousse si fortement. Et, considérant les conséquences funestes qui pourraient résulter d'une erreur dans le traitement des organisations qui souvent comptent leurs affiliés par milliers et par centaines de milliers, le Concile a sagement ordonné (n. 255) que, lorsqu'une association est répandue en plusieurs diocèses, pas même un Evêque d'un de ces diocèses ne doit la condamner, mais doit en référer la cause à la Commission permanente de tous les Archevêques des Etats-Unis; lesquels ne sont pas même autorisés à émettre une condamnation, à moins que leur décision ne soit unanime; et si cette unanimité vient à manquer, le jugement seul du Saint-Siège pourrait imposer une condamnation, pour éviter l'erreur et la confusion de discipline.

Cette Commission des Archevêques s'est réunie, en effet, vers la fin du mois d'octobre dernier, spécialement pour considérer l'association des Chevaliers de Travail. Nous ne fûmes décidés à tenir cette réunion par aucune demande de la part de nos Evêques; car personne ne l'a demandée, et même il faut dire qu'entre tous les Evêques nous n'en connaissons que deux ou trois qui en désirent la

condamnation. Mais l'importance de la question en elle-même et dans la pensée du Saint-Siège, nous l'a fait examiner avec la plus grande attention. Après notre discussion, dont les résultats ont été déjà communiqués à la Sacrée-Congrégation de la Propagande, seulement deux Archevêques sur douze ont voté pour la condamnation, et cela pour des raisons qui n'ont nullement persuadé les autres soit de la justice, soit de la prudence, d'une telle condamnation.

[Raisons qui ont déterminé le vote de la majorité de la commission. Règles correctes. Pas de serment. L'obligation au secret ne s'étend pas aux autorités ecclésiastiques. Aucune hostilité contre la religion ni contre les lois civiles du pays.]

Dans les considérations qui suivent, je veux présenter en détail les raisons qui ont déterminé le vote de la grande majorité de la Commission, et dont la vérité et la force ne me paraissent que plus évidentes encore aujourd'hui; et, en même temps, j'essaierai de faire justice des arguments mis en avant par le parti contraire.

1. Et, premièrement, dans la constitution, dans les lois et les déclarations officielles des Chevaliers du Travail, il peut bien se trouver des assertions ou des règles qu'on n'approuverait pas; mais nous n'y avons pas découvert les éléments, si clairement indiqués par le Saint-Siège, qui rangent une association parmi celles qui sont les condamnées.

(a) Dans leur formule d'aggrégation, il n'y a pas de serment.

(b) L'obligation au secret, qui empêche la connaissance de leurs affaires à ceux qui y sont étrangers ou ennemis, ne défend nullement aux catholiques de tout manifester aux autorités ecclésiastiques compétentes, même hors de la confession. Cela nous a été absolument déclaré par leur président.

(c) Il n'y a point de promesse d'obéissance aveugle. Les fins de l'association et ses lois sont distinctement déclarés, et l'obligation d'obéissance n'outrepasse pas ces limites.

(d) Non seulement leurs fins et leurs lois ne professent aucune hostilité contre la religion ou l'Eglise, mais leurs déclarations sont tout le contraire. Le Troisième Concile Plénier ordonne que nous ne condamnions pas une association sans en entendre les officiers ou représentants: "auditis ducibus, corypheis vel sociis praecepis" (n. 254). Or, leur président, en m'envoyant une copie de leur constitution, déclare qu'il est catholique du fond de son cœur; qu'il pratique fidèlement sa religion et reçoit régulièrement les sacrements; qu'il n'appartient à aucune association maçonnique ou autrement

condamnée par l'Eglise ; qu'il ne connaît rien dans l'association des Chevaliers du Travail qui soit contraire aux règles de l'Eglise ; qu'avec une soumission filiale il prie les Pasteurs de l'Eglise d'examiner tous les détails de leur organisation, et, s'ils y trouvent quelque chose de condamnable, de le leur indiquer, et il en promet la correction. Assurément, on ne voit là aucune hostilité envers l'autorité de l'Eglise, mais, au contraire, un esprit tout à fait louable. Après leur Convention de l'année dernière à Richmond, lui et plusieurs des officiers et membres, catholiques dévoués, ont fait les mêmes déclarations touchant leurs sentiments et l'action de la Convention, dont nous attendons de recevoir les documents.

(e) Nous ne pouvons y trouver non plus aucune hostilité contre l'autorité et les lois du pays. Non seulement rien de la sorte n'apparaît dans leur constitution et règles, mais les chefs de notre autorité civile traitent avec le plus grand respect la cause qu'ils représentent. Le Président des Etats-Unis m'a dit personnellement, il y a un mois, qu'il examinait alors une loi pour l'amélioration de quelques griefs sociaux, et qu'il venait d'avoir une longue conférence sur le sujet avec M. Powderly, président des Chevaliers du Travail. Le Congrès des Etats-Unis, suivant les conseils du Président Cleveland, s'occupe à présent de l'amélioration des classes ouvrières, dans les plaintes desquelles on reconnaît ouvertement beaucoup de vérité. Et les partis politiques, loin de les regarder comme des ennemis du pays, rivalisent pour réclamer les droits évidents des pauvres travailleurs, qui ne cherchent pas à résister aux lois, mais seulement à obtenir une législation juste par des moyens constitutionnels et légitimes.

Et ces considérations, qui montrent que dans cette association on ne trouve pas les éléments que le Saint-Siège condamne, nous portent à envisager en second lieu, les maux que l'association combat et la nature du conflit.

[L'objet de l'association est d'obtenir un remède légal aux maux sociaux et aux injustices publiques. Moyen naturel et juste. Les Chevaliers du Travail refusent les avantages de l'organisation Maçonnique.]

2. Qu'il y ait chez nous, comme dans les autres pays du monde, des maux sociaux graves et menaçants, des injustices publiques qui réclament une résistance ferme et un remède légal, c'est ce que personne n'ose contester, et ce dont la vérité a été déjà reconnue par le Congrès et le Président des Etats-Unis. Sans entrer dans

les tristes détails de ces torts, ce qui ne paraît pas nécessaire ici, il peut suffire de mentionner seulement que les monopoles, de la part des individus et des corporations, ont déjà excité non seulement les plaintes des ouvriers, mais aussi l'opposition des hommes publics et des législateurs du pays ; que les efforts de ces monopolistes, non parfois sans succès, pour contrôler la législation à leur propre profit, causent beaucoup d'inquiétude aux amis désintéressés de la liberté ; que l'avarice sans cœur qui, pour plus gagner, écrase impitoyablement non seulement les ouvriers de plusieurs métiers, mais spécialement les femmes et même les jeunes enfants à leur service, fait comprendre à tous ceux qui aiment l'humanité et la justice que ce n'est pas seulement le droit des travailleurs de se protéger, mais l'obligation du peuple entier de les aider en trouvant un remède pour les dangers dont la civilisation et l'ordre social sont menacés par l'avarice, l'oppression et la corruption.

On ne saurait nier avec vraisemblance l'existence des maux, le droit de résistance légitime, et la nécessité d'un remède. Tout au plus, pourrait-on douter de la légitimité de la forme de résistance et de remède employés par les Chevaliers du Travail. Tel doit donc être le point spécial de notre examen.

3. On peut à peine douter que, pour atteindre un but public quelconque, l'association, l'organisation des multitudes intéressées, est le moyen le plus efficace, un moyen tout-à-fait naturel et juste. Cela est si évident, et, en outre, si conforme au génie de notre pays, de notre condition sociale essentiellement populaire, qu'il n'est pas nécessaire d'y insister. C'est presque le seul moyen pour gagner l'attention publique, pour assurer la force à la résistance la plus légitime, pour donner poids aux demandes les plus justes.

Or, il existe déjà une organisation qui présente mille attractions, mille avantages, mais que nos ouvriers catholiques, avec une obéissance filiale au Saint-Siège, se refusent d'accepter ; c'est l'organisation *MACONNIQUE*, qui existe partout dans notre pays, qui comme M. Powderly nous l'a expressément fait noter, unit le patron et l'ouvrier dans une fraternité très avantageuse pour ce dernier, mais qui ne compte entre ses rangs presque pas un seul catholique. Renonçant de grand cœur aux avantages que l'Eglise et la conscience défendent, les travailleurs se forment en associations n'ayant rien de commun avec les desseins funestes des ennemis de la religion, et ne cherchant que leur protection et leur assistance mutuelle, et l'assertion légitime de leurs droits. Mais, de ce côté-là aussi, ils se trouvent menacés de condamnation, et comme privés de leur seul moyen de défense. Est il surprenant qu'ils demandent pourquoi ?

[*Objections contre l'association. Catholiques mêlés avec les protestants. Réponse. Protestants admis aux avantages des Catholiques. Inutilité de substituer les confréries et les réunions sous la conduite du prêtre. Dangers des influences sinistres. Réponse. Accès de violence dans les grèves d'ouvriers condamnés par l'association.*]

4. Voyons donc les objections qu'on fait contre cette sorte d'organisation.

(a) On objecte que, dans ces organisations, les catholiques se trouvent mêlés avec les protestants, au péril de leur foi. Naturellement oui, ils sont mêlés avec les protestants dans les associations de travailleurs, précisément comme ils le sont dans les travaux mêmes ; car, chez un peuple mixte comme le nôtre, la séparation des religions dans les affaires civiles n'est pas possible. Mais, supposer que la foi des catholiques en souffrirait, ce serait ne pas connaître les ouvriers catholiques d'Amérique qui ne sont pas, comme les ouvriers de tant de pays européens, des fils déçus et dénaturés, regardant leur Mère l'Eglise comme une marâtre hostile, mais ce sont des fils intelligents, bien instruits et dévoués, prêts à donner leur sang, comme ils donnent continuellement leurs moyens (quoique chétifs et péniblement gagnés), pour son soutien et sa protection.

Et, à vrai dire, dans le cas présent la question n'est pas que les catholiques sont mêlés aux protestants, mais que les protestants sont admis aux avantages d'une association dont les deux tiers des membres et les officiers principaux sont catholiques, et, dans un pays comme le nôtre, leur exclusion serait simplement impossible.

(b) Mais, dit-on, ne pourrait-on pas substituer à une telle organisation les confréries qui les réuniraient sous la conduite des prêtres et sous l'influence directe de la religion ? Je réponds franchement que je ne le crois ni possible ni nécessaire dans notre pays. J'admire sincèrement les efforts de ce genre qu'on fait dans les pays où les ouvriers sont égarés par les ennemis de la religion ; mais, grâce au bon Dieu, nous n'en sommes pas là. Nous trouvons que, chez nous la présence et l'influence explicite du prêtre ne serait pas à conseiller là où les citoyens, sans distinction de croyance religieuse, se rassemblent pour ce qui touche seulement à leurs intérêts industriels. Nous avons des moyens abondants pour en faire des bons catholiques sans aller si loin, et le simple bon sens nous conseille de ne pas pousser les choses aux extrêmes.

(c) On objecte encore que la liberté d'une telle organisation expose les catholiques aux influences sinistres des associés les plus

dangereux, même des athées, des communistes et des anarchiste. Cela est vrai ; mais c'est une des épreuves de la foi de nos braves catholiques américains, auxquelles ils sont accoutumés presque tous les jours, mais qu'ils savent bien mépriser avec bon sens et fermeté. Les journaux nous disent, et le président des Chevaliers du Travail nous a raconté, comment ces éléments violents et agressifs ont essayé de s'emparer de l'autorité dans leurs conseils, ou d'insinuer leur poison dans les principes de l'association ; mais aussi ils constatent avec quelle détermination ces mauvais esprits ont été repoussés et battus. La présence parmi nos citoyens de cet élément destructif, venu pour la plupart de certaines nations de l'Europe, est assurément pour nous une occasion de vifs regrets et de précautions particulières ; mais c'est un fait inévitable, et que l'union entre l'Eglise et ses fils rend très-peu dangereux chez nous où, en effet, le seul danger grave viendrait d'un refroidissement entre l'Eglise et ses enfants, que rien n'occasionerait plus sûrement que les condamnations imprudentes.

(d) On insiste spécialement sur les accès de violence, même jusqu'à l'effusion du sang, qui ont caractérisé plusieurs des grèves inaugurées par les associations d'ouvriers. Sur cela, il y a trois choses à remarquer ; premièrement, que les grèves ne sont pas une invention des Chevaliers du Travail, mais le moyen presque universel et perpétuel, chez nous et ailleurs, par lequel les employés protestent contre ce qu'ils jugent injuste et réclament leurs droits ; secondement, que dans une telle lutte des multitudes pauvres et indignées contre le monopole dur et obstiné, la colère et la violence sont souvent aussi inévitables que regrettables ; troisièmement, que les lois et les autorités principales des Chevaliers du Travail, loin d'encourager la violence ou les occasions de la violence exercent une influence puissante pour l'empêcher, et pour retenir les grèves dans les limites du bon ordre et de l'action légitime. Un examen attentif des violences qui ont marqué la lutte entre le capital et le travail pendant l'année passée, nous donne la conviction qu'il serait injuste de les attribuer à l'association des Chevaliers du Travail. Ce n'était qu'une des nombreuses associations d'ouvriers qui y ont pris part ; et les autorités principales de cette organisation ont fait, selon les témoins désintéressés, tous les efforts possibles pour apaiser la colère des multitudes et pour empêcher les excès qui, à mon jugement, ne sauraient justement leur être attribués. Sans doute, parmi les Chevaliers du Travail, comme parmi les autres milliers d'ouvriers, il y a des esprits passionnés, ou même mauvais et criminels, qui ont commis des violences inexcusables, et qui y ont

poussé leurs associés ; mais attribuer cela à l'organisation, serait aussi déraisonnable, il me semble, qu'attribuer à l'Eglise les folies et les crimes de ses enfants, contre lesquels elle proteste. Je répète que, dans une telle lutte des grandes masses contre le pouvoir armé qui, on le reconnaît, leur refuse souvent les simples droits de l'humanité et de la justice, il est inutile d'espérer que toute erreur et tout excès de violence puisse être évité ; c'est ignorer la nature et les forces de la société humaine dans les circonstances de nos jours, que de rêver que cette lutte puisse être empêchée, ou que nous puissions persuader aux multitudes à ne pas s'organiser, seul moyen pratique de succès. Le parti de la prudence chrétienne est évidemment d'essayer de tenir les cœurs de la multitude par les liens de l'amour, afin de pouvoir les contrôler par les principes de la foi, de la justice et de la charité ; de reconnaître franchement le vrai et le juste dans leur cause, afin de pouvoir les éloigner de ce qui serait faux et criminel ; et ainsi de faire converger à une lutte légitime, paisible et bienfaisante, ce qui, par une cause de sévérité repulsive, pourrait bien devenir pour les masses de notre peuple un abîme volcanique, semblable à celui que la société craint et que l'Eglise déplore en Europe.

Sur ce point j'insiste fortement, parce que ma connaissance intime de la condition sociale de notre pays me rend profondément convaincu que nous touchons ici une question qui ne concerne pas seulement les droits des classes ouvrières, qui doivent être spécialement chères à l'Eglise, envoyée par notre Divin Seigneur pour évangéliser les pauvres, mais une question dans laquelle sont compris les intérêts les plus fondamentaux de l'Eglise et de la société humaine pour l'avenir. C'est un point que je voudrais, en peu de mots, présenter dans une lumière plus claire.

[*Direction à donner par l'église au pouvoir du peuple. Absolue nécessité selon le Cardinal Manning de pourvoir à l'amélioration de la condition des basses classes. C'est le programme de l'avenir en Amérique.*]

5. Quiconque médite bien les voies par lesquelles la Divine Providence guide l'histoire contemporaine, ne peut pas manquer de reconnaître la part importante qu'y prend à présent, et que doit y prendre dans le futur, le pouvoir du peuple. Nous voyons avec une profonde tristesse les efforts du prince des ténèbres pour rendre ce pouvoir dangereux au bien social, en soustrayant les masses populaires à l'influence de la religion, et en les poussant dans les sentiers pernicieux de la licence et de l'anarchie. Jusqu'ici, notre pays

présente un aspect tout différent—celui d'un pouvoir populaire réglé par l'amour du bon ordre, par le respect pour la religion, par l'obéissance à l'autorité des lois : ce n'est pas une démocratie de licence et de violence, mais la vraie démocratie qui cherche la prospérité générale par les voies des sains principes et du bon ordre social.

Pour conserver un état si désirable, il est absolument nécessaire que la religion continue de posséder les affections, et de régler ainsi la conduite des multitudes. Comme l'a si bien écrit le Cardinal Manning : " Dans l'ère future, ce n'est pas avec les princes et les parlements, mais avec les grandes masses, avec le peuple, que l'Eglise aura à traiter. Que nous le voulons ou non, voilà notre œuvre, une œuvre pour l'accomplissement de laquelle il nous faut un nouvel esprit, une nouvelle direction de vie et d'activité." Perdre l'influence sur le peuple, ce serait perdre l'avenir tout entier ; et c'est par le cœur beaucoup plus que par l'entendement, qu'il faut tenir et guider cette puissance immense pour le bien ou pour le mal. Entre tous les titres glorieux de l'Eglise que son histoire lui a mérités, il n'y en est pas un qui lui donne à présent tant d'influence que celui d'Amie du Peuple. Assurément, dans notre nation démocratique, c'est ce titre-là qui gagne à l'Eglise Catholique non seulement le dévouement enthousiaste de millions de ses enfants, mais le respect et l'admiration de tous nos citoyens, quelle que soit leur croyance religieuse. C'est la puissance de ce titre-là qui empêche et rend presque impossible la persécution, et qui attire vers notre sainte Eglise le grand cœur du peuple américain.

Et puisqu'il est reconnu de tous que les grandes questions de l'avenir ne sont pas des questions de guerre, de commerce ou de finance, mais les questions sociales, les questions qui touchent à l'amélioration de la condition des grandes masses populaires, et spécialement des classes ouvrières, il est d'une importance souveraine que l'Eglise soit trouvée toujours et fermement rangée du côté de l'humanité, de la justice envers les multitudes qui composent le corps de la famille humaine. Comme l'a très-sagement écrit le même éminent Cardinal Manning : " Il nous faut admettre et accepter avec calme et avec bonne volonté, que les industries et les profits doivent être considérés en premier lieu. Je n'oserai pas formuler les actes du Parlement, mais voilà bien leur principe fondamental pour l'avenir. Les conditions des basses classes qui se trouvent à présent parmi notre peuple, ne peuvent pas et ne doivent pas continuer. Sur de telles bases, nul édifice social ne peut subsister."

Dans notre pays spécialement c'est le programme inévitable de l'avenir ; et l'attitude que doit tenir l'Eglise vers la solution est assez évidente. Ce n'est pas certainement à favoriser les extrêmes auxquels les pauvres multitudes sont naturellement portées, mais c'est, je le répète à les détourner de ces extrêmes par les liens de l'affection, par le désir maternel qu'elle montrera pour la concession de tout ce qui est juste et raisonnable dans leurs demandes, et par la bénédiction maternelle qu'elle donnera à tout moyen légitime pour l'amélioration populaire.

[Conséquences désastreuses qui s'ensuivraient d'une attitude de froideur envers les classes ouvrières. Grand danger pour l'église de rendre hostiles les partis politiques qui s'intéressent avant tout aux besoins des ouvriers et de perdre, à cause de cela, l'amour de ses enfants.]

6. Et considérons un moment les conséquences qui s'ensuivraient inévitablement d'un cours contraire, d'une attitude de froideur envers les classes ouvrières, de soupçon pour leurs objets, de condamnation facile pour leurs moyens.

(a) Premièrement, il y a le danger évident que l'Eglise ne perde, dans l'appréciation populaire, son droit d'être considérée comme Amie du peuple. La logique du cœur des multitudes va vite à ses conclusions ; et ce serait une conclusion funeste pour le peuple et pour l'Eglise. Perdre le cœur du peuple ce serait un dommage que l'amitié du petit nombre des riches ou des puissants ne compenserait pas.

(b) Il y a grand danger de rendre hostile à l'Eglise le pouvoir politique de notre nation qui se range ouvertement du côté des millions qui réclament la justice et l'amélioration de leur état. L'accusation d'être "unamerican," c'est-à-dire étrangère à notre esprit national, est l'arme la plus puissante que les ennemies de l'Eglise savent diriger contre elle. C'est ce cri-là qui a excité la persécution par les "Know-nothings" Américains, il y a trente ans : et ils ne tarderont pas à s'en servir encore si l'occasion leur en est donnée. Pour apprécier la grandeur de ce danger, on doit remarquer que non seulement les droits des classes ouvrières sont hautement proclamés par les deux grands partis politiques, mais qu'il est très-probable que dans nos élections prochaines il y aura un candidat pour le poste de Président des Etats-Unis pour représenter spécialement ces griefs et ces demandes populaires. Or, vouloir écraser par une condamnation ecclésiastique une organisation qui représente presque

500,000 voix, et qui a déjà une place si respectable et si universellement reconnue dans l'arène politique, cela serait regardé par le peuple américain, à parler franchement, comme aussi ridicule que hardi. Nous aliéner l'amitié populaire, ce serait courir grand risque de perdre le prestige que l'Eglise a gagné auprès de la nation américaine, et de détruire cet état de paix et de prospérité qui forme un si beau contraste avec sa condition dans quelques-uns des pays soi-disant catholiques. Déjà, dans ces mois derniers, un bruit de colère populaire et de menace contre l'Eglise s'est fait entendre ; et il nous faut aller avec beaucoup de précaution.

(c) Un troisième danger, et celui qui touche le plus à nos cœurs, c'est celui de perdre l'amour des enfants de l'Eglise, et de les pousser une attitude de rébellion envers leur Mère. Le monde entier ne présente pas un spectacle plus beau que celui de leur dévouement et de leur obéissance filiale. Mais, il faut le reconnaître, dans notre siècle et dans notre pays, l'obéissance ne peut pas être aveugle. Ce serait se tromper gravement que de s'y attendre. Nos ouvriers catholiques croient sincèrement qu'ils ne cherchent que la justice, et par les voies légitimes. Une condamnation serait regardée comme fausse et injuste, et ne serait pas acceptée. Nous pourrions bien leur prêcher l'obéissance et la confiance dans l'Eglise ; mais ces bonnes dispositions ne pourraient pas aller si loin. Ils aiment l'Eglise et ils veulent sauver leurs âmes ; mais aussi il leur faut gagner leur vie ; et le travail est maintenant tellement organisé, que, si l'on n'appartient pas à l'organisation, on a très peu de chance de gagner la vie.

Ainsi, voici les conséquences à craindre. Des milliers d'enfants les plus dévoués de l'Eglise se croiraient repoussés par leur Mère et vivraient sans pratiquer leur religion. Les revenus de l'Eglise, qui, chez nous, viennent entièrement des offrandes libres du peuple, souffriraient immensément, et ce serait la même chose pour le Denier de Saint-Pierre. Les rangs des sociétés secrètes seraient remplis des catholiques jusqu'ici fidèles. Le Saint-Siège, qui a constamment reçu des catholiques américains les preuves d'un dévouement presque sans pareil, serait regardé comme un pouvoir non pas paternel, mais tyrannique et injuste. Ce sont là assurément des conséquences dont la sagesse et la prudence doivent éviter l'occasion.

7. Mais outre les dangers qui résulteraient d'une telle condamnation, et l'impossibilité de la faire respecter et observer il faut aussi remarquer que la forme de cette organisation est si peu permanente, comme les journaux l'indiquent presque tous les jours, que dans la pensée des hommes pratiques de notre pays, elle ne peut pas durer beaucoup d'années ; d'où il suit qu'il n'est pas nécessaire, même si

c'était juste et prudent de diriger les condamnations solennelles de l'Eglise contre une chose qui s'évanouit d'elle-même. L'agitation sociale durera certainement aussi longtemps que dureront les maux à remédier ; mais les formes d'associations et d'attitude pour atteindre le but sont nécessairement provisoires et passagères. Elles sont aussi très-nombreuses, car j'ai déjà remarqué que l'association des Chevaliers de Travail est seulement une des nombreuses formes d'organisation ouvrière. Frapper donc à une de ces formes, ce serait commencer une guerre sans système et sans fin ; ce serait épuiser les forces de l'Eglise en chassant une foule de spectres changeants et incertains. Le peuple américain regarde avec un calme et une confiance parfaits le progrès de notre lutte sociale, et n'a pas la moindre peur de ne pouvoir se protéger contre les excès ou les dangers qui peuvent occasionnellement se produire. Et, pour parler avec le plus profond respect, mais aussi avec la franchise que mon devoir m'impose, il me semble que la prudence suggère, et que même la dignité de l'Eglise demande, que nous n'offrions pas à l'Amérique une protection ecclésiastique qu'elle ne demande pas, et dont elle ne croit pas avoir besoin.

8. Dans toute cette discussion, je n'ai pas du tout parlé du Canada, ni de la condamnation émise touchant les Chevaliers dans le Canada. Car nous considérerions comme une impertinence de nous mêler dans les affaires ecclésiastiques d'un autre pays, qui a sa hiérarchie propre, et dont nous ne prétendons pas comprendre les besoins ni les conditions sociales. Nous croyons cependant que les circonstances d'un peuple presque entièrement catholique, comme celui du Bas Canada, doivent être bien différentes de celles d'un peuple mixte comme le nôtre ; que les documents soumis au Saint-Office ne sont pas la constitution de l'organisation telle qu'elle est à présent chez nous ; et qu'ainsi nous ne demandons aucune inconséquence de la part du Saint-Siège, qui a jugé *juxta exposita*. C'est de la condition des choses dans les Etats-Unis que nous parlons ; et sur cela nous espérons que nous ne sommes pas présomptueux en croyant que nous sommes capables de juger. Or, comme je l'ai déjà indiqué, sur les 75 Archevêques et Evêques des Etats-Unis il n'y en a que cinq environ qui désireraient une condamnation des Chevaliers du Travail, tels que nous les connaissons dans notre pays ; de sorte que notre Hiérarchie est presque unanime en protestant contre une telle condamnation. Sûrement, un tel fait doit avoir grand poids dans la solution de la question. S'il y a des difficultés dans ce cas, il me semble que l'expérience et la prudence de nos Evêques, et les règles si sages du Troisième Concile Plénier, doivent suffire pour les traiter.

[*Résumé des raisons qui ont décidé la commission à s'abstenir de toute intervention dans les affaires de l'association.*]

9. Enfin, pour tout résumer, il me semble évident que le Saint-Siège ne saurait former le dessein de condamner une association, alors :

(1.^o) Que la condamnation ne paraît *justifiée* ni par la lettre ni par l'esprit de sa constitution, de ses lois et des déclarations de ses chefs ;

(2.^o) Qu'une condamnation ne paraît pas *nécessaire*, en vue de la forme passagère de l'organisation et la condition sociale des Etats-Unis ;

(3.^o) Qu'elle ne serait pas *prudente*, à cause de la réalité des griefs des ouvriers et de l'aveu qu'en fait le peuple américain ;

(4.^o) Qu'elle serait *dangerieuse* pour la réputation de l'Eglise dans notre pays démocratique, et pourrait même exciter la persécution.

(5.^o) Qu'elle serait *impuissante* pour forcer à l'obéissance nos ouvriers catholiques, qui la regarderaient comme fausse et injuste ;

(6.^o) Qu'elle serait destructive au lieu d'être bienfaisante dans ses effets, poussant les fils de l'Eglise à se révolter contre leur Mère, et à se ranger parmi les sociétés condamnées qu'ils ont jusqu'ici évitées ;

(7.^o) Qu'elle serait *presque ruineuse* pour le soutien financier de l'Eglise chez nous, et pour le Denier de St-Pierre ;

(8.^o) Qu'elle tournerait en *soupçon et hostilité* le dévouement insigne de notre peuple envers le Saint-Siège ;

(9.^o) Qu'elle serait regardée comme un *coup cruel* à l'autorité des Evêques des Etats-Unis, qui, on le sait bien, protestent contre une telle condamnation.

Or, j'espère que les considérations ici présentées ont montré assez clairement que telle serait la condamnation des Chevaliers du Travail des Etats-Unis.

Done, je laisse le jugement de la cause, avec une pleine confiance, à la sagesse et à la prudence de votre Eminence et du Saint-Siège.

Rome, le 20 février 1887.

J. CARD. GIBBONS,
Archevêque de Baltimore.

LETTER FROM CARDINAL MANNING TO AN EMINENT PRELATE
EXPRESSING HIS ADHESION TO THE VIEWS PUT FORWARD
BY CARDINAL GIBBONS, IN THE FOREGOING DOCUMENT,
REGARDING THE ASSOCIATION OF THE "KNIGHTS OF
LABOUR."

I have read with great assent the document of Cardinal Gibbons on the Knights of Labour.

The Holy See will, I am sure, be convinced, and his Eminence's exposition of the state of our New World will, I hope, open a new field of thought and action.

It passes my understanding to comprehend how it is that officious persons are listened to rather than official. Surely the Episcopate of the whole world is the most powerful and direct instrument in the hands of the Holy See for gathering correct local knowledge and for enforcing its decisions. Who can know the temper of America, of England, and of Ireland, as they who have their finger upon the pulse of the people?

Hitherto the world has been governed by dynasties. Henceforward the Holy See has to deal with the people, and it has the Bishops in close daily and personal contact with the people. The more clearly and fully this is perceived in Rome, the stronger will be the Holy See. Never at any time was the Episcopate so detached from Civil Powers, so united in itself, and so united to the Holy See. To realize and use this is power, to fail to see it and use it, will lead to much trouble and mischief.

My thanks are due to his Eminence for letting me share in his argument. If I can find a copy of a lecture on "The Dignity and Rights of Labour," I will send it to you. It will, I think, qualify me for Knighthood in the Order.

Brentano, some years ago, published a book on Guilds, in which he proves that the associations of labour and crafts go back into antiquity. But there is this notable fact. In England and the Teutonic lands they were recognised, favoured, and chartered. In the Imperial and Latin laws they were rigorously prohibited.

There we are at this day. The Church is the Mother, and Friend, and Protector of the People. As our Lord walked among them, so his Church lives among them. The Cardinal's argument on this is irresistible.

I hope he will not leave Rome till this New World of ours is fully understood.

Believe me, always, etc., etc.,

HENRY E. CARDINAL ARCHBISHOP.

BRIEF OF HIS HOLINESS LEO XIII. ON THE CATHOLIC TOTAL
ABSTINENCE UNION, ADDRESSED TO THE RIGHT REV.
DR. IRELAND, BISHOP OF ST. PAUL, MINNESOTA.

VENERABILIS FRATER, SALUTEM ET APOSTOLICAM BENEDICTIONEM.

Eximia pietatis et charitatis opera, quibus fideles in Foederatis Americae Septentrionalis Statibus concivium suorum utilitati ac saluti procurandae consulere adlaborant, gratissima Nobis ex iis quae nuperrime retulisti acciderunt. Placuit in primis quod oppugnando exitioso ebrietatis vitio optimis consociationibus, ac praesertim *Unione Catholica perfectae abstinentioniae servandae* constituta sedulam navetis operam. Exploratum sane est quam noxia ex immoderata potatione, quamque defendenda eum fidei tum moribus detrimenta pertimiscenda sint. Nec laudari satis possunt Foederatum Statuum Pastores, qui haud ita pridum in Plenario Conventu Baltimoreae habito gravissima oratione incontinentiam hujusmodi condemnarant, declarantes, ipsam perpetuum peccati fomitem, foecundamque malorum radicem existere, ebriosorum familias ingenti ruina obruere, plurimosque in aeternam poenam exitiumque praecipites agere; fideles vero in eam intemperantiam perlapsos acatholicis scandalo, veraeque religionis propagationi magno impedimento esse. Itaque praecipua commendatione dignum existimamus nobile piarum Societatum consilium, quo a potu quolibet inebriante omnino abstinendum proponunt. Minime vero dubitari potest firmam hanc voluntatem gravissimo illi malo opportunum planeque efficax esse remedium, eoque validius incitamentum universis ad cupiditatem refrenandam, quo major est eorum, qui illo utantur auctoritas. Maxime vero valere debet in hoc zelus Sacerdotum quorum uti est verbo vitae plebem instruere, ac bonis moribus fingere ita eos potissimum oportet sua virtute caeteros anteire. Itaque Pastores satagant ebriositatis pestem assiduis concionibus ab ovili Christi depellere, atque omnibus abstinentioniae exemplo praelucere, ut tot calamitates ex eo vitio ecclesiae ipsique patriae impendentes strenue avertere contendant. Nos vero Deum enixe adprecamur, ut votis in hac re tuis benignus faveat, consilia dirigat, coeptis assistat, atque in auspiciis caelestis tutelae, paternaeque benevolentiae Nostrae testimonium Apostolicam Benedictionem Tibi, Venerabilis Frater, aliisque Tecum sancto hoc foedere conjunctis peramanter impertimus.

Datum Romae apud S. Petrum, die XXVII Martii An. MDCCCLXXXVII
Pontificatus Nostri Decimo.

LEO PP. XIII.

IMPORTANT RESOLUTIONS OF THE IRISH BISHOPS ON COERCION, THE LAND BILL AND THE EDUCATION QUESTION.

The following Resolutions were adopted on the 20th inst. at Maynooth by the Episcopal Committee representing the Catholic Archbishops and Bishops of Ireland :—

“RESOLVED—That, after the transaction of the ecclesiastical business for which we have met, we cannot separate without protesting, in union with our venerated brothers of the clergy of Ireland, against the Coercion Bill which on Monday last obtained a second reading in the House of Commons.

“That, in common with our lay fellow-countrymen, we view with deep indignation this new attempt to despoil our country of her constitutional rights and liberties, and to place her at the mercy of unfriendly and irresponsible Government officials.

“That speaking with intimate knowledge of our respective dioceses and provinces, we confidently assert that, with the deplorable exception of a few notorious districts of very limited extent, Ireland is singularly free, not only from grave crime and outrage, but from ordinary offences against the law; and in this assertion we are fully sustained by the charges delivered at the recent assizes by her Majesty’s judges.

“That therefore we feel called upon to characterise as utterly unfounded the accusation of general lawlessness and criminality constantly made against our people and systematically propagated for party purposes by the anti-Irish Press of both England and Ireland.

“That the demand now made by her Majesty’s Government for coercive legislation for Ireland is therefore utterly unsustained by facts, and should consequently be rejected as causeless and unjustifiable.

“That in our deliberate judgment the employment of the contemplated coercive enactments will not only fail to check crime and outrage within the limited area where they now exist, but will provoke opposition to law where peace and order have hitherto prevailed; that they will merely ‘drive discontent under the surface,’ and substitute for open and constitutional action the disastrous agency of secret societies.

“That the distrust and hostility inspired by coercion will extend more or less to all legislation emanating from the same source; that those feelings will still further embitter the relations between the

coercing landlord class and their tenants, and render impracticable those calm and kindly negotiations, without which there can be no speedy or satisfactory settlement of the land question on the basis of purchase.

“That, ardently as our people desire such a settlement, they cannot help regarding with suspicion and disfavour the promised reform of the Land Laws, which is to be accompanied, or possibly preceded, by coercive legislation of such excessive severity.

“That still further doubt respecting the land measures of the Government is created by the hesitancy, if not unwillingness, of Ministers to adopt the recommendations so strongly made by the recent Royal Land Commission of their own selection.

“That it is not by County Insolvency Courts, but by the reduction of rents, regulated by the value of land produce, a reduction which the Royal Commission has declared to be of urgent necessity, that tenants will be enabled to meet the just demands of their landlords, and that an equitable basis will be established for the sale and purchase of land; that we, therefore, earnestly advocate, as an essential part of remedial land legislation, the speedy and general adoption of a fair system of rent reduction.

“That we renew the appeals which we urgently but ineffectually made before the passing of the Land Act of 1881, in favour of lessees and of the occupiers of town parks, and against the inclusion of tenants’ improvements in the valuation of their rents.

“That, without referring to Home Rule and other questions on which our opinions have been recently published, we cannot omit urging our claim upon the present Parliament for the removal of the educational grievances so frequently protested against by the Episcopal Body, which we represent. In the three departments of public education we demand perfect equality as to State help and endowments with our non-Catholic fellow-countrymen. With less we shall never rest satisfied. And we claim, as an essential condition of religious freedom, that we shall be at liberty to unite religious with secular education in all our schools.

“That copies of these Resolutions be forwarded to the Prime Minister, to Mr. Gladstone, and to Mr. Parnell.”

(Signed)

✠ WILLIAM J. WALSH,

Archbishop of Dublin, Chairman.

✠ BARTHOLOMEW WOODLOCK,

*Bishop of Ardagh and Clonmacnoise.
Secretary to the Meeting.*

NOTICES OF BOOKS.

PURGATORY, DOGMATIC, AND SCHOLASTIC. The various questions connected with it, considered and proved. By the Rev. M. Canty, P.P. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son, O'Connell-street.

At the present day multitudes live their lives through, and give never a thought to the life that begins after death. They rest as contentedly in the present, as if there were no *future* to claim their chief concern. They cling as fondly to the pleasures of this life, to its hopes and dreams, as if *vanity of vanities* had never been pronounced upon them all. Even to many seemingly good Catholics that pondering of the heart, without which the land is desolate, is an unfamiliar exercise. If these people did not believe in a future life, their unconcern would be intelligible; with that belief deep down in their souls, their position is an illogical one indeed. To convince them of the untenableness of that position, as well as indeed, in almost every instance, to assist the holy souls in Purgatory, many able and learned treatises have been written. Of these not the least able nor the least interesting is the work mentioned at the head of this notice.

Father Canty's work, though controversial neither in spirit nor in tone, is nevertheless one of the latest contributions to a controversy that occupied men's minds as early as the time of Origen—the question of Future Punishment. That question was warmly discussed in St. Augustine's time. His able exposition and defence of Catholic doctrine brought the discussion to a close, and for several centuries afterwards the question was left at rest.

The controversy was reopened in the sixteenth century by the Reformers. Luther wrote against Purgatory. The views of the other Reformers accorded more or less with his. They not only attacked the doctrine of the Church on indulgences, but moreover assailed the very first principles on which that doctrine is founded. They denied the existence of venial sin, and this denial, coupled with the rejection of indulgences, led naturally to a denial of Purgatory.

Many of their followers, however, found faith in an endless hell, an inconvenient doctrine, and were unsparing in their condemnation of never-ending punishments. The outcome of this dissatisfaction is a decided tendency amongst educated Protestants of the present day

to depart from the *common* or *orthodox* (Protestant) view, and a decided leaning towards *Universalism*.

The truth is but one; the by-paths of error, built upon the shifting sand of private opinion, are infinite in number. Whilst, therefore, Protestants, consistently with their fundamental principle, and in harmony with their universal practice, seek to fashion their doctrine each by his own unaided judgment, and according to his own individual will, the faith of Catholics knows neither addition nor diminution. It is ever one and the same. Yet it is none the less incumbent on Catholics to give reasons for the faith they profess, and to state accurately and with precision such portions of Catholic doctrine as may be assailed or imperilled by current speculative errors.

Father Canty, in his preface, justifies the publication, in the English language, of a dogmatic work, on the score of a desire to place his book within easy reach of many amongst the intelligent laity, to whom a treatise written in the language of the Church would be less—if, indeed, at all—accessible. We quite agree with him in his contention that the discussion in English of such questions as Purgatory and kindred subjects, must be a great boon to many hardworking Irish Priests.

Father Canty's work, unpretentious as it is, bears abundant evidence of much thought and study. A sufficient guarantee for solidity and accuracy of doctrine, is had in the revision of the book by the Bishop of Limerick, Dr. O'Dwyer, as well as in the fact that it appears under the censorship of Dr. Magrath, and bears the *imprimatur* of the Archbishop of Dublin.

J. P. M'D.

THE RELIGIOUS HOUSES OF THE UNITED KINGDOM. Containing a short history of every Order, and every House. Compiled from official sources. London: Burns & Oates, Limited, 1887.

We can say of this little work, that it fully justifies its title. It contains in succinct form, much useful information touching the foundation, habit, and rule of the various Religious Orders, and Congregations, to which is appended a list of their Houses and Colleges—the more important of which sometimes claim a paragraph setting forth the circumstances that called them into existence, and led to their subsequent growth and development. Compiled from official sources, the information it conveys may be presumed to be trustworthy.

The convenience and utility of the little volume as a work of reference is apparent.

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

JUNE, 1887.

BIGOTRY.

PRIESTS who are called to exercise their sacred ministry in Protestant countries, will, I think, agree with me in the opinion that one of the great obstacles to the conversion of heretics is the supposed bigotry of the Catholic Church. This bigotry is the great bugbear that is set up to scare away Protestants from looking into the claims and the teachings and the practices of the Church. "Catholics are bound to believe you all sons of perdition, fuel for the everlasting fire, enemies of God, no matter what your moral and theological virtues; no matter too what your good faith and your unquestionable sincerity in the religion which you profess. Avoid contact with such people as you would shun those who believe you to be irreclaimable liars, or robbers, or assassins." That is the drift of many a Protestant essay and sermon, and the key-note of many a huge volume of anti-"Romish" controversy.

As the RECORD has a large circulation in all English-speaking Protestant countries, it may not be out of place to put together in its pages a few notes as to the real teaching of the Church with regard to those who unfortunately live without her pale; and to compare that teaching with the doctrines enunciated and the sentiments entertained on the same subject by some of those bodies which have unhappily cut themselves away from her communion.

On the evils of religious indifferentism the Church has

always spoken with no uncertain sound. If God has proclaimed certain truths to the world, men are surely not left at liberty to accept or to reject these truths in the whole or in part. If our Lord commanded adhesion to the authoritative teaching of His Church, men cannot without sin ignore that teaching, any more than they can ignore the plainest doctrines of the Bible, or the plainest obligations of the Decalogue, or the plainest behests of the Natural Law. To be indifferent with regard to even one truth contained in the body of divine revelation is manifestly to show contempt for God Himself. In the same way to be tolerant of religious error is not to display a generous or a charitable spirit, but it is to undervalue the truth that God has vouchsafed to us for the enlightenment of our mind and the regulation of our conduct. To say that every man is free to follow what religion he will, and to exercise whatsoever worship he may please, and to indulge in a freedom of conscience that is untrammelled by any authority, human or divine; to profess that every creed is equally good, and leads equally to heaven, that in fact faith counts for nothing and moral rectitude for all, as the well known couplet has it:

“For modes of faith let graceless zealots fight,
His can’t be wrong whose life is in the right.”

or as Voltaire wrote: “Soyez juste, il suffit, le reste est arbitraire”—all that is unquestionably to pave the way to an entire rejection of revealed truth, and to universal unbelief.

The Vicar of Christ—the guardian of revealed truth—has therefore again and again most solemnly condemned this most baneful outcome of our latter-day liberalism. Gregory XVI., in the *Mirari Vos*, refers to this theory as “that wicked opinion that eternal salvation of the soul can be obtained under any profession of faith, if morals are directed by the rule of virtue.” He calls such a liberty of conscience as that referred to, an *insanity*; and Pius IX. qualifies it as a “liberty of perdition,” in the Encyclical *Quanta Cura*. In the Syllabus which accompanied this

Encyclical we find condemnation of such propositions as these :

“Men may in the practice of any religion whatever find the path of eternal salvation and attain eternal salvation.”

“At least good hopes should be entertained concerning the salvation of all those who in no respect live in the true Church of Christ.”

Now, this is a clear and an emphatic condemnation of error, but it is not *bigotry*. Bigotry I would define to be an unreasonable attachment to one's own opinions, coupled with an aversion or a hatred of all those who will not concur in these opinions. The doctrines of the Church can never be for us mere opinions—they are infallible truths; and the more closely and determinedly the intellect adheres to truth, the higher and the nobler is its action. No saint was ever a bigot, but every saint was supremely intolerant of religious error. No good Catholic hates or despises his neighbour because of his neighbour's unorthodox views, but every good Catholic hates doctrinal error, as every truthful man hates duplicity and falsehood. In the Catholic system therefore there is no room, theoretically at least, for the vice—for it is a vice—of bigotry. That which is sometimes laid to our charge as bigotry, is no bigotry, but an ardent love of God's truth, and a fervent zeal for its recognition by the whole world. No doubt if St. Paul lived in our day he would be set down by the infallible teachers who speak *ex cathedra* in English reviews and magazines and newspapers, as an incorrigible bigot. His exhortation “to mark them who make dissensions and offences contrary to the doctrines which you have learnt, and to avoid them,” would be regarded as an unpardonable attempt at boycotting. His anathema against all who preach a different gospel from his own would be ridiculed as a piece of ecclesiastical arrogance; and his delivering up to Satan of Hymeneus and Alexander, would be sneered at as a mere *brutum fulmen* of powerless priestly tyranny. Yet St. Paul, we know, was no bigot; he had more genuine liberality, more love for the oppressed, more sympathy for the poor and the weak, than all the liberal doctrinaires of the present day. He had the

deepest compassion for those that erred in doctrine as in morals, but he loved God's truth in all its integrity, and he did not hesitate therefore to denounce and to condemn in the most forcible terms those that wilfully denied or adulterated that truth. That and nothing more does pope or bishop at the present day, and that the Catholic Church must continue to do in fulfilment of her divine mission, "even to the consummation of ages."

But is it not, we are asked, grossly intolerant and bigoted to condemn to everlasting torments all those who do not happen to be in visible communion with the Church of Rome? To this question, we Catholics give an unhesitating "yes." But to another question implied in this we give just as unhesitating a "no." That other question is, whether we do condemn to hell all those who are without the pale of the Church? We are permitted to judge or to condemn no man. There is but One who searcheth the reins and the heart, and He alone is able to measure a man's responsibility and to pronounce judgment on his conduct. We say, and we believe that heretics can never enter into the kingdom of heaven, just as we say and believe of murderers, and adulterers, and robbers. For heresy is surely a deadly sin, and a soul defiled with sin cannot enter into the Kingdom of God.

But then, like every other imputable crime, this heresy must be wilful. It supposes essentially contumaciousness—known, and persistent opposition to revealed truth. If a man is born in a Protestant country, if he breathes a Protestant atmosphere from his cradle, if his whole intellectual food is leavened with doctrinal error from his first dawn of reason, it is clearly permissible to suppose that such a one may not be responsible for not accepting the authority of the Catholic Church. Whether as a matter of fact such responsibility does or does not attach to him, must depend upon a variety of circumstances, which it is here unnecessary to inquire into. All we Catholics say, and all the Church permits us to say, is that wilful (of course directly or indirectly) heresy is punishable for ever, like every other deadly sin that is not repented of. In this teaching of the Church, there is indeed

the noblest reverence for revealed truth, combined with the tenderest consideration for those who reject that truth, partially or entirely. In saying this, I shall not be taken by any reader of the RECORD as trying to water down the Catholic doctrine, or to make it appear less severe than it really is, in the eyes of non-Catholics. I am only following, indeed, the authoritative pronouncements of those Sovereign Pontiffs who have been most strenuous in condemning heresy, but who, nevertheless, are careful never to condemn the individual heretic. In his Allocution of 9 December, 1854, we find Pius IX. giving expression to the following words of true Christian charity and liberality:—"God forbid, venerable brethren, that we should dare to limit the divine mercy which is infinite. God forbid that we should wish to scrutinize God's hidden councils and judgments It is to be held, indeed of faith, that outside the Apostolic Roman Church no one can be saved, but it is *also to be held as certain that those who labour under ignorance of the true religion, if that ignorance be invincible, are implicated in no sin for this in the eyes of God.*" This solemn pronouncement is in itself sufficient surely to rescue Catholics from the stigma of condemning all outside the Church to everlasting punishment.

Nor is this teaching in any way antagonistic to the old maxim, "*extra Ecclesiam nulla est salus.*" For, those that are inculpably ignorant belong, as a matter of fact, to the soul of the Church. They live, as I suppose, good moral lives. They have faith, though not a full faith, in revealed truth. They are disposed to receive that faith in its plenitude, when it is clearly set before them. Their position at present is one of ignorance and not of perversity. Their spiritual vision is clouded. The scales of old prejudices still adhere to their eyes. God can reward them for their virtuous and docile dispositions; God never will condemn them for the accident of their Protestant parentage or Protestant education, or for the invincible ignorance to which these accidental circumstances may lead.

We Catholics go farther even than this, and we extend the same enlightened and charitable consideration to Jews and Mahommedans and pagans. All these God really

wishes to be saved. To them all He gives sufficient light and grace. If they are lost it will not be on account of their inculpable ignorance of Christian truth, but because they broke that law of rectitude which their consciences inculcated as binding on them.

No doubt, indirectly, even involuntary heresy or unbelief may and does lead to the loss of souls. For it shuts out men from those countless sacramental and other graces that are to be found only in the Catholic Church. All practical Catholics are able to bear testimony to the sustaining grace, say of the monthly confession and communion, and there are few among them that would not readily acknowledge that without this continual help they could hardly hope to resist the evil bent of their nature or preserve sanctifying grace within their souls. The loss of such graces to those outside the Church cannot therefore be exaggerated, and this consideration apart from a thousand others ought to quicken the zeal of Catholics to gather the wandering sheep into the one fold of the one true Shepherd.

I think that what I have so far written fairly expresses the teaching of the Church on heresy and heretics, and I think we may defy our adversaries to fasten a charge of bigotry on a single iota of that teaching.

In practice and in the ordinary transactions of civil life Catholics are equally guiltless of the charge. In the political strife of the present day we hear loud protests against "handing over"—that is the phrase—the Protestant minority of Ireland to the intolerance of their Catholic fellow-countrymen. Those that utter this charge only give expression to their own inborn bigotry. They cannot seemingly understand one religious body getting the upper hand without persecuting another. They shut their eyes most persistently too to the most patent facts. Who ever hears of a Protestant in Ireland being persecuted or hated or scorned simply because he is a Protestant? Are Protestant parliamentary candidates rejected by Catholic Ireland because of their religious belief? Does the Catholic Corporation of Dublin refuse to appoint men to lucrative posts if these men do not happen to belong to the people's

Church? Is any inquiry ever thought necessary in Ireland as to a man's religious belief when there is question of merely civil or political matters? The answer is obvious to everybody who knows anything of Ireland. Ireland, while perhaps the most intensely Catholic nation in the world, is the least bigoted country under the canopy of heaven.

But suppose we advance a little into the territory of those who make war against us for our bigotry, I think we shall find ourselves as strong in the aggressive as we are on the defensive. Protestants who are so ready to fling the taunt of bigotry at us because of our "*nulla salus extra Ecclesiam*" belief, have their own theories of exclusive salvation, and these theories are undoubtedly very much more stringent and "intolerant" than any advanced by a Catholic theologian. The Calvinistic doctrine as to reprobation is indeed absolutely cruel and savage. For certain men, teaches Calvin, are destined by God apart altogether from their merits or demerits to everlasting torments. And this teaching is formally incorporated into the *Credo* of all existing Presbyterian bodies—the Westminster Confession of Faith: "By the decree of God for the manifestation of His glory some men and angels are predestinated unto everlasting life, and others pre-ordained to everlasting death. These angels and men thus predestinated and pre-ordained are particularly and unchangeably designed, and their number is so certain and definite that it cannot be either increased or diminished." And again: "The rest of mankind God was pleased . . . to pass by and to ordain them to dishonour and wrath for their sin to the praise of his glorious justice." Do we not find too among the articles of the Anglican Church the following very distinct teaching on exclusive salvation: "They also are to be accursed that presume to say that every man shall be saved by the law or sect which he professeth, so that he be diligent to frame his life according to that law and the light of nature?" In the Confession of Faith formulated by the Dutch Reformed Church of the United States in 1815, we have this fundamental article of belief laid down: "That everyone is bound to join himself to the true Church . . . and that out of it there is no

salvation." This, however, be it remembered, is but a slight improvement on the Westminster Confession which had declared that outside of the Church "there is no ordinary possibility of salvation." And all this from sects that boast of unlimited "liberty of conscience" and that rail perpetually at the intolerance and the exclusiveness of the Catholic Church!

As a consequence of these doctrines we see the bitter rancorous spirit exhibited by the heresiarchs of the sixteenth century, first towards the church of their baptism, and secondly towards their dissentient brethren. Luther had unquestionably a fair command of coarse and violent language, yet he seemed to have ransacked his brains and his lexicon in vain to find expressions as virulent as his thoughts. The Pope he calls a "mad wolf," and all his followers "be they kings or emperors," "bandit chiefs" who ought to be scrupulously hunted down and destroyed. For the Catholic doctors of Louvain, the new apostle's least indecent epithets are "beasts, pigs, pagans, epicureans, atheists." The Zwinglians do not escape any better the Lutheran pencil of light. They are "damned," "fools," "blasphemers." "The devil," he declares, "is now and for ever in the body of the Zwinglians, and blasphemy shakes itself from their breast, satanized, super-satanized, and re-satanized." Calvin not to be out-done calls his adversaries "rogues," "fools," "madmen," "bulls," "pigs," "asses," "dogs," and many other titles equally polite and flattering.

Lutherans and Calvinists in England and Scotland made a heroic and a not altogether unsuccessful attempt to imitate the gentlemanly style of their continental models. In glancing over some of our Reformation literature we are enabled to pick up such pearls of rhetoric as:—"a bussard," "a beast," "a bluddering papist," "a great devil," "a beastlie and unlearned bastard," "the very draff of antichrist, and dregs of the devil," "a porkishe papist," and many others too choice for reproduction.

When the dissentient brethren so fiercely belabour each other, we ought to feel happy that the Pope, and the Church, and Catholics generally are let off with such comparatively

mild terms of reproach as the "man of sin," "antichrist," "son of perdition," "scarlet lady drunk with the blood of the saints," "heathens," "image worshippers," and so on.

Bigotry! Well I confidently challenge any of those who accuse us of bigotry to point me out a single Catholic controversialist advancing "arguments" of this nature against his adversaries.

Nor do we find much improvement if we come to the toleration shown to Catholics in the business of civil life. Every one knows what a different spirit animates the Corporation of Belfast—which will hardly consent to employ a Catholic scavenger—from that which distinguishes the municipal council of Dublin. And what I say of Belfast, I say of every municipal or poor law board in Ireland where the Protestant element has largely gained the ascendant.

Belfast, however, is but a true child of her mother. She bears all the lineaments of Presbyterian Scotland. John Knox was a bigot of the first water, and though his bigotry has been considerably diluted by the spread of education, it has managed nevertheless to filter down through the space of three hundred years. Here and there we find it in all its primitive ferocity. At the General Election of 1885, for instance, we had a minister in Argyleshire declaring, that if a Catholic was sent to represent that county in Parliament he would shake the dust of the county off his feet, and fly elsewhere before the wrath of God should fall upon the supporters of an idolater. And this seemed to strike nobody as a very exaggerated form of bigotry!

Indeed, bigotry in Scotland very often invades the domain of the ludicrous. A couple of years ago I remember that Elder Major M'Leod's great argument against instrumental music in church was put in this way at a meeting of the Edinburgh Presbytery: "We cannot have organs in our churches. For an organ is a Romish idol, and God has forbidden idols. An organ is an idol, for an idol is an imitation, and what is an organ," shouted the gallant Major, "but an imitation of the human voice." Needless to say that so cogent an argument scored a victory for the veteran warrior. Everybody remembers the desolation brought upon

thousands of Scottish families by the systematic robberies of of the Glasgow Bank directors some years ago. One of our brilliant controversialists—the Rev. Dr. Wylie, I think it was—knew the cause of both the robbery and misery; it was a punishment from God upon Scotland for allowing the re-establishment in the country of the Romish hierarchy! And these are the people that shudder with horror at the intolerance and bigotry of the “Romish” Church!

The truth is that bigotry springing from falsehood, and fostered by misrepresentation of everything Catholic, is the very life of Scotch Presbyterianism. To stir up or keep alive hatred of “popery” would, indeed, seem to be the sole purpose of most of the sermons preached from Presbyterian pulpits, and I shrewdly suspect that if “popery” did come to that end which they are always predicting for it, none would regret the downfall more than the preachers themselves. For their occupation would then be gone, and they would find it hard with any other subject to interest or to attract their hearers.

Naturally this constant denunciation of Rome’s heathenism and superstition, and darkness and tyranny, produces evil effects upon the minds of the listeners; and so it is that from the days of John Knox until now, Scotland has been, as I have remarked, characterized by what the Scotch themselves call its “sturdy Presbyterian spirit,” but what most other people would designate its grim and rancorous bigotry. In the faces of many Scotchmen you can read the word as if it were printed there in letters of iron. In the presence of a Catholic priest especially that feeling is sure to betray itself. In their eyes the priest is a dark, mysterious, unintelligible sort of being—an ogre to be shunned, a ghost of the dead past walking about among the living, covered in the ceremonies of a long buried superstition. That is the meaning of those looks of mingled sourness, fierceness and curiosity, with which the priest is met in so many parts of Scotland. That is why even little children (and for those that love childhood, and who does not? it is most painful to witness it) scowl angrily at the priest as they pass him by, or hiss at him in their not too melodious Doric “prust, prust, papus prust.”

However it is pleasant to be able to record that this intolerant spirit is visibly on the wane even in Scotland. When people come to see the Catholic priest (as they are coming to see him more and more in Scotland) not as he is painted, but as he is in his everyday life; when they find him at every hour of the day and night seeking after some lost and abandoned creature in the lowest purlieus of town and city; or when they see him breathing the fetid atmosphere of the fever-stricken hovel; or moving about intrepidly day after day through the fever wards of the public hospital, where no other minister of religion dares to tread, they begin to question all they had heard about the ogre, and the ghost, and the craft and cruelty and tyranny, and all the other bad and terrible things that had been associated in their minds with the Catholic priesthood. Even within the last few years I am assured there has been a very great reaction in the popular mind with regard to the Catholic Church, and I may add that certain late political events have gone a wonderful way in toning down old resentments and in establishing a truer view of Catholic teaching as well as a kindlier feeling towards Catholics themselves. The Church will no doubt have a hard fight to win back Scotland to her fold; but if old prejudices and misconceptions were once cleared away; if the old fortress of traditional lies and misrepresentations were once knocked to pieces; if the Church were allowed to meet the Presbytery in a fair field, it is not difficult to discern on whose side the victory would rest.

At any rate I submit that if a charge of bigotry is to be made against the Catholic Church, it is not Protestantism or Presbyterianism, in any of its ever varying shapes, that is entitled to cast the stone.

M. F. SHINNORS, O.M.I.

PROPORTIONS AND DIMENSIONS OF CHANCELS AND ALTARS, AND ARRANGEMENT OF SAC- RISTIES.

MISTAKES that have been made in the construction of chancels, arising from the deficiency of knowledge of ecclesiastical functions on the part of architects, and in great part from the insufficiency of knowledge of ecclesiastical architecture on the part of priests, have suggested to one of their brethren the propriety of writing the following pages. If he contribute aught to the information of either, that may enable them to promote the glory of the services of God's Church, his object will be fully attained. The priest who has undertaken the good work of building a church, will readily find an architect who will provide a design in the main graceful and correct. He will not as easily find one who will so arrange the chancel, that it will best provide for correctly carrying out all the functions of religion.

The chancel is that portion of a church which is set apart for the offering of the Holy Sacrifice, and for the principal ecclesiastical functions. Of old the altar was always placed at the east side of the church. Hence the wall at the back of the altar is styled the eastern wall without consideration of aspect, and the side walls are termed northern and southern relatively. The chancel, therefore, is said to extend from the eastern wall of the church to the communion rail. Generally, this is placed beneath an overhanging arch, which marks the division of the roof of the chancel from that of the nave and the rail extends from wall to wall of the chancel. But in towns where communicants are very numerous, and where churches have usually aisles, it is frequently placed about four feet in advance of this arch, and is extended to the walls of the aisles on each side of the church. Wherever it is placed, the level on which it stands should be about six inches higher than the floor of the nave, and should

extend eighteen inches, and never less, in front of the rail. On this step the faithful kneel to receive Holy Communion and often they carry children in their arms as there they kneel to receive blessed palms and ashes. It should ever be considered a hard and fast rule, that the communion rail should never have more than one step before it, and that this step should be always eighteen inches deep. To set off a chancel architects will put two or more steps before a communion rail, and will make these steps inconveniently deep or shallow. But it should be always remembered that to this communion rail come the aged, the lame, and the blind, and only the greatest convenience of these should be consulted in their approach to the holy table spread by their mother, the Church, for all her children.

A church may comprise only a nave and a chancel. But for a parochial church, however small, it is well to make provision for a second altar. The providing of a second altar for the mass of Maunday Thursday, and the service of Good Friday, suggests the construction of an aisle. The mediæval architects were not repelled by the idea of uniformity from constructing only one aisle, when a single aisle supplied all the need of the church service; and their bold and happy skill raised a beauty of construction, where the timid lovers of our uninventive age would have shrunk from supplying the useful and even necessary, through inability to give it grace and symmetry. The inventors of church architecture in the middle ages constructed churches of a nave and single aisle of a beauty that we must admire and may advantageously copy, if we fail to surpass them with the materials at our command so varied beyond those of the old masters. If only one aisle be constructed to a nave twenty-three feet wide, the aisle should be considerably wider than each aisle would be, where two are built. This increase of width is needed to give dignity to the structure. A tower, though of moderate proportions, adds all the grace that simplicity needs. The communion rail may be advanced beyond the arch of the chancel, and extended across the nave and aisle. If a church have no

aisle, and the communion rail extends only from wall to wall of the chancel, the general level of the chancel must either be the same as the communion step, or any required elevation of the chancel must be reached by steps about four feet inside the communion rail. Chancels and naves may be any convenient width and length, but a chancel less than twenty-two feet six inches wide, does not provide sufficient space for carrying out becomingly the ceremonies of High Mass.

St. Charles Borromeo established the rule that high altars should not measure less than seven feet six inches in length. The predella of an altar, that is the level in its front and on which the priest stands when he offers the Holy Sacrifice, should be exactly the length of the altar. It should not extend beyond the ends of the altar, as the deacon at High Mass should stand lower than the celebrant, yet at his side during the recital of the Introit, the singing of the Collects, and the reading of the Epistle. During the recital of the first and last Gospels, the deacon should stand alongside the celebrant, but a step below him. During the Gloria and Credo, the Offertory and the Canon, the deacon stands on the predella.

The extending of the predella beyond the ends of the altar may often necessitate the widening of the chancel and also the nave, at great expense, in addition to displacing the deacon during the Holy Sacrifice. When the altar is eight feet long and the predella is also eight feet in length, and the two steps at each end measure eighteen inches each, and the levels beneath the steps at each side measure five feet each, a most excellent and convenient chancel is provided in the width of twenty-four feet. For a church of medium proportions it is a most favourable width. Should, however, the predella exceed the length of the altar by only one foot at each end, the six feet allowed for the four steps of eighteen inches each, must be reduced to four, allowing only the insufficient depth of one foot for each step, or the chancel and the nave must be widened from end to end by two feet. A chancel twenty-two feet six inches wide can provide all arrangements required for all ecclesiastical functions if the

predella is made the same length as the altar. If, however, the predella is lengthened by two feet, the narrowest chancel suitable for the ceremonies of High Mass must measure twenty-four feet six inches. An altar only seven feet long would be admissible in a difficulty, and so a width of twenty-two feet of chancel would suffice, and the deacon would have his right position, and all ceremonies of High Mass be performed with dignity and ease. Let the predella be always the same length as the altar, and let the width of the chancel be always thrice the altar's length, and a most servicable chancel will be the result. As the altar should measure seven feet six inches, the chancel should measure twenty-two feet six inches.

The extent of the predella in front of the altar that is most convenient is four feet, and a less depth is insufficient. This level is reached by two steps in front and at each end. The predella makes the third prescribed ascent, and any uneven number is admissible. Steps eighteen inches deep and six inches high are the easiest. If the measure of the depth and of the rise of steps exceed united twenty-three inches, the ascent of a considerable number will not be made with ease. If eighteen inches in depth cannot be provided for each step fifteen will suffice, but not less. Beneath these steps extends the general level of the chancel. At each end of the altar the level below the steps should not be less, if possible, than five feet deep. On this level are placed the seats for the clergy, requiring a depth of three feet, and two are needed in front of them for the convenient passage of the master of the ceremonies. The above measurements provide all spaces needed for the width of a chancel, and the ceremonies of High Mass cannot be carried out with ease and dignity if any be diminished. The length of the altar needs seven feet six inches; the two steps at each end, measuring fifteen inches each, require five feet; and the level at each end below the steps, needing five feet each, require ten. The total space should thus measure twenty-two feet six inches. This width, it is to be noted, is exactly thrice the length of the altar. And let it be ever borne in mind, that except in very wide chancels exceeding thirty-six feet, the

width will be always convenient that will closely approximate to thrice the length of the altar. As the altar is lengthened the chancel should be widened, or as the chancel is widened the altar should be lengthened. If this rule of proportion is kept, all arrangements of functions can be carried out.

Churches and chancels may be any convenient width and length. Necessity may contract the measurements. It may require the steps beneath the predella to be only one foot deep each, and the levels on each side to extend only four feet. The altar of seven feet six inches may therefore stand in a chancel only nineteen feet six inches wide. No ecclesiastical canon prohibits such a chancel, but it must be borne in mind that ascents and descents on steps only one foot deep cannot be made at ease, and on a space only four feet deep a master of ceremonies cannot pass with suitable freedom in front of the seated clergy.

The length of chancels of various widths may be nearly the same. It should be in good proportion to its width and to the dimensions of the church. The length of a narrow, yet sufficiently ample chancel, may measure from twenty-eight to thirty-four feet. If the church consist of a nave and chancel twenty-two feet six inches wide, with or without aisles twelve feet wide, and the length be from one hundred to one hundred and ten feet, the chancel need not be more than twenty-eight or thirty-four feet long. To construct a chancel only twenty-eight feet long from the communion step to the eastern wall, the following arrangements may be made. The reredos may be built into the wall, and not exceed one foot in depth. Against this the altar, four feet deep, may stand. The predella needs four feet and the two steps in front fifteen inches each. The level in front may measure eight feet, and the two steps of fifteen inches each may lead to a level four feet broad in front of the communion rail. It is well to provide four feet for the passing of the clergy in ecclesiastical ceremonies, such as communicating the faithful, distributing blessed ashes and palms, and the administration by the bishop of the sacrament of confirmation. For the communion rail and the step of eighteen inches in front, it is well to allow two feet. These

various provisions are supplied in twenty-eight feet. But a passage behind the altar will be found advantageous. If a throne be erected for Benediction to which the Blessed Sacrament is to be conveyed from the back of the altar, six feet may well be allowed between the altar and the eastern wall. The reredos is usually brought forward and affixed to these advanced altars. About a foot must be allowed for this, and some buttressing must support the throne. The steps to the throne will need two feet nine inches, and the remaining space making up the six feet will prove most useful. A chancel of these measurements, thirty-four feet in length and twenty-two feet six inches in width, gives every accommodation for carrying out all the functions of religion with suitable ease and becoming dignity. If the chancel be widened a few feet no increase of length will be required. But if it be thought well, on account of the proportions of the nave and aisles to lengthen the chancel, the eight feet provided for the level beneath the predella may be increased to twelve, sixteen, or more feet; and the two steps beneath this level may be increased to three or four. This elevation would add dignity to the chancel, and economy suggests the elevation if the site itself be a slope.

The following arrangements may be well made as chancels are widened from twenty-two feet six inches to thirty-six feet. If the chancel be twenty-three feet wide, let the length of the altar be increased six inches and be eight feet, the steps fifteen inches each, and the levels beneath on each side be five feet each. If hot water pipes intrude on this space, the chancel should be widened the requisite space. An excellent width of chancel is twenty-four feet. The altar should be eight feet long, the steps eighteen inches each in the tread, and the levels beneath them five feet deep, each. The length may well be thirty feet from the eastern wall to the chancel arch, and beyond this the nave and aisles deserve a length of ninety feet, and a width of fifty. This space would accommodate from eight to nine hundred persons. But the width of chancel, exactly thrice the length of the altar, it should be noted, is particularly good. It provides full space for every function, can be fully adorned with plants and

flowers without profusion, and be well lit without a superabundance of wax lights. Such a chancel deserves a communion rail four feet in advance of its arch, extending from wall to wall of the aisles. If a chancel be constructed twenty-five feet wide, allow eight for the altar, six feet for the four steps, and eleven for the two levels, that is five feet six inches each. If a chancel measure twenty-six feet, let the altar measure eight feet six inches, the four steps six feet, the two levels eleven feet six inches, that is five feet nine each. If a chancel be twenty-seven feet wide, let the altar be nine feet long, the steps measure six feet, and the levels six each. This is an excellent arrangement. The length of the altar is a third of the width of the chancel; the steps are ample and the levels also, being six feet each. This width of chancel needs a large amount of plants, flowers, and candelabra to decorate it fitly for the devotion of the forty hours. Hence in building a church, a priest may be acting very wisely in limiting the width of the chancel to twenty-seven feet. It is the proper width of sanctuary for a nave twenty-nine feet wide, as the nave is measured from the centre of the pillar on each side. In like manner the aisles are measured from the same centre to the northern and southern walls. A nave twenty-nine feet wide may well have aisles fifteen feet six inches wide each. This width of sixty feet will suit a nave one hundred and sixteen feet long, and a church measuring one hundred and fifty feet from the eastern wall to the western entrance. A chancel twenty-seven feet wide may well have its altar advanced six feet from the eastern wall, with steps to the throne for Benediction screened by an advanced reredos. If the level of the communion step continue from the communion rail to the steps beneath the predella it may well measure twenty feet, but if two steps be placed beneath the chancel arch the level above them to the altar steps may fitly measure thirteen feet. This length of forty feet from the communion step to the eastern wall, and this width of twenty-seven feet, present a most noble and commodious chancel for a noble and commodious church. For a chancel twenty-eight feet wide the altar may remain nine feet long and the steps six, the levels

measuring six feet six inches each. A chancel twenty-nine feet wide is suitably provided if its altar measure nine feet six inches in length, the steps eighteen inches in tread, and the levels six feet nine inches in width. For a chancel thirty feet wide give ten feet to the altar, six feet to the steps, and seven feet to each level. Thus chancels may widen, and altars lengthen, and levels increase, but the steps remain eighteen inches each deep. The altar of the chancel thirty-six feet wide may well be twelve feet long. But if the width of chancels exceed thirty six feet, the altar twelve feet in length remains ample and sufficient.

When the width of the chancel reaches thirty-eight feet it may be well to increase the number of steps to the altar; to place four steps beneath the predella in place of two, and to lessen the depth of the side levels. The altar being twelve feet long, the four steps will also measure twelve feet, and the levels below, seven feet each. This increase of the number of steps may commence in a narrower chancel provided the levels on each side be allowed a depth of six feet each. Thus the chancel, thirty-six feet wide, may have twelve for the altar, twelve for the four steps, and twelve for the two levels of six feet each. An ambry (a small safe) for the protection of the holy oils should be fixed in the northern wall of the chancel.

THE HIGH ALTAR.

The best height for an altar is three feet three inches. The depth of a high altar, detached from its reredos, is usually four feet. The whole surface is a single slab of marble. The entire slab is anointed and consecrated, and the consecration extends to the entire structure. The sepulchre for the relics is near the front in the centre. The tabernacle is fixed on the surface, two feet six inches from the front; and usually two steps for the six candle-sticks and for vases for flowers are placed on each side. A passage behind the altar is so useful that it is generally provided; and if arrangements be made for conveying the monstrance to its throne for Benediction by steps rising behind the altar, it has been often judged well to separate the reredos from

the eastern wall, to make the passage between the two, and to let this space be six feet deep. The reredos and the altar are built into each other, and their united depths provide room for raising the throne behind and above the tabernacle. Height and depth are secured, and the steps are becomingly screened behind the reredos. The wider the chancel, the wider may be the reredos; and the wider the reredos, the more steps may be raised behind it, and the greater may be the elevation of the throne.

The construction of the altar is the provision of the church for the becoming celebration of the Holy Sacrifice. The tabernacle is constructed for the resèrvation of the Blessed Sacrament with security and honour. Its material, wrought iron or steel, preserves it from violation, and its adornment of silk, or cloth of gold, of colour or gilding, of precious stone or precious metal, gives such honour as we may be able to supply, where all that we may offer is but little. The wrought iron safe of the tabernacle may be cased with marble or alabaster, or other stone, or with cedar or other rare wood. The bulk of the whole should be moderate, and well proportioned. About eighteen inches in width, and at most two feet in height, is ample size. The wrought iron may be made to this measurement without any addition of other material. The metal should be ornamented on each side, as we usually see it ornamented on its door. It should be raised slightly, and only slightly, on a moulded pedestal. The slighter the elevation the better (at most four inches) that the door may be easily reached and opened by every priest, and the ciborium reached without effort. It should bear a well defined cornice, which may be surmounted by a brattishing of silver or copper gilt. No crucifix or vases of flowers, or ornaments of any kind distinct from its construction, should be placed upon it. Beneath its cornice silk curtains should hang upon a movable rod. The wrought iron ornamented safe may be quadrangular as described, or it may have the form of a circular tower decorated throughout, and it may bear a sloping roof, well gilt and surmounted by a pelican. Other forms may be used, but the wrought iron safe which defends the Blessed Sacrament must always be bolted

into the masonry of the altar. Where danger of violation has been considered great, the following means of security has been carried out. At the back of the tabernacle a second safe has been fixed in the reredos, or the base of the throne for Benediction. This is reached by a small door in the back of the tabernacle, and into this the Blessed Sacrament is moved every night by the priest. The lock of the inner tabernacle is unlike that of the front, and violence could not be exercised upon the door unless the outer tabernacle were removed. Where one well constructed iron safe is considered sufficient, it is fixed against the throne for Benediction. This should be two feet square, and should have some buttressing at the back, six inches at the base and less higher up. Thus the depth of the altar and reredos extends five feet six inches, and a provision of six feet is not too much for the space behind the reredos. The steps to the throne with a protecting handrail will need two feet nine inches, and the remaining three feet three inches will be found most useful for holding flowers and candle-sticks in readiness for church functions.

Side altars may be any convenient length. Three feet is a convenient depth. Eight inches may be allowed for the candlestep and for flowers, and the central crucifix. If a church have two side altars one may be provided with a tabernacle for the altar of repose on Maunday-Thursday. There should not be a tabernacle on the remaining altar. It is well to make the candlestep eight or nine inches high for the support of the cards. The depth of two feet four inches is not too much for the table of the altar. A full-sized corporal measures twenty-three and a-half inches square. It should be laid on the altar a short distance from the front, and the card should stand free of it. The crucifix of a side altar should be such a height that the card resting against the cross beneath the figure should not dwarf it. It might rise from two feet to two feet six inches above the candle-step. The statue of a saint or of the Sacred Heart might stand over the altar, and a small crucifix at its base.

THE SACRISTY.

The sacristy is a structure adjoining the chancel for the safe keeping of the sacred vessels and vestments, and for the vesting of the clergy and servers. It is advisable to separate the portion for the vesting of the priests from that for the use of the servers. This arrangement gives the laity that opportunity of communicating confidentially with the priest which they need, and protects serving boys from loss of the reverence due to sacred things. In the division for the vesting of the clergy should be the safe for the sacred vessels. Usually it will stand secured in the wall of the church. The other walls may not be thick enough to receive and protect it. A safe less than two feet high inside, and of proportionate width and depth, is not large enough; and a safe more than three feet internally is not needed. The price will be from £14 to £21. If there be no ambry for the holy oils in the gospel side of the chancel, they may be fitly kept in the safe. A requisite of first consequence in every sacristy is a reliable eight day clock, sounding hours and half-hours. The provision of presses for vestments, copes, and linen, must vary with the circumstances of churches. In determining these provisions, the requirements for vestments, &c., are to be noted. Chasubles and copes will be best preserved if they are laid in drawers without folds. A drawer for vestments should support itself when drawn out and so be slightly wider than the vestments are. A drawer or slide three feet ten inches long internally, by two feet ten inches wide, and two and a quarter inches deep, will receive two plain chasubles or tunics or dalmatics, or one richly ornamented Roman vestment. A drawer five feet two inches long internally, two feet ten inches wide, and three and a half inches deep, will receive two plain copes, or one ornamented Roman cope. Stoles, humeral veils and burses can also lie in these drawers. Vestments will also keep well if hung upon shouldered-framed swinging brackets in presses protected by doors. Drawers or slides containing vestments need doors to protect them from dust. The protection is complete if brown holland is tacked to the back of each

slide, and drawn over each vestment when put away. Linen will be better preserved, and be kept in better order, in shallow than in deep drawers. Two drawers, four or five inches deep, will be more economical than one eight or nine inches deep; and two drawers three feet wide will be more economical, and be kept in better order than one five feet wide. A drawer to contain the church books, namely, two missals a book of the gospels and epistles, the books of the chaunt of the Passion, the registers of Baptisms, Confirmations, Marriages, and Deaths, requires to be two feet seven inches wide, five inches deep, and three feet from front to back internally. The most convenient height for a vesting press is three feet three inches. If it contain drawers two feet ten inches from front to back internally, and protected as they should be by doors, the surface must exceed three feet. It will be best to make the top amply deep that three feet may be allowed for the internal length of the drawer for the missals, registers, &c. The ends of the press should be equally deep, and a protecting ledge on top would prevent things falling behind. Beneath the crucifix standing on the vesting press might be placed a card bearing the name of the bishop of the diocese, and the heading of any prayer appointed by him to be said in the Mass. The length of the press must depend on the number and the length of the drawers it is to contain.

It is well to place it against the longest wall in the sacristy. In this wall, at one end of the vesting press, is a good place for the piscina. It should have an ample basin. If this is made circular, and fourteen inches in diameter, it will suit for the washing of the purificators by the priest. If vessels, in which these have been washed, are to be emptied into it, and are to be left there to drain, it must be longer than it is wide, about eighteen inches by fourteen. The pipe to carry away the waste water, should convey it to the ground beneath the floor, where it could percolate. It is well to fence this spot by brickwork, about a foot square, from the ground to the floor. Over this "sacrarium" a trap door would be found useful. The cotton applied after sacred unctions should be burned.

The custom is widely spread, of burning all such cotton in the sacristy, and dropping the ashes into the sacrarium. They might easily block the waste pipe of the piscina.

At the other end of the vesting press, is a good place for fixing a cabinet on brackets against the wall, or on a table, to contain small altar linen, palls, corporals, &c. For these there might be nine drawers in three rows, each drawer measuring internally eight inches from back to front, by six inches wide, and five inches high. Beneath these drawers a large one, about twenty inches wide, eight inches high, and eight inches from back to front, might receive soiled linen. Above these drawers might be a vacant space, about nine inches high, and the width of the cabinet; and there pegs might be fixed on which purificators in use might hang and dry. The cabinet should be protected by doors and a lock.

A good provision in a sacristy is a confessional for the deaf, and a speaking horn. This occasional confessional might be formed by placing at a right angle when needed, and steadied by a bolt dropping into the floor, the door of a press in which albs in use hang, and in this door a grating should be fixed. A small window, looking on the high altar would aid the sacristan, and would serve the priest in making his thanksgiving. A door giving access to a passage behind the altar would increase the utility of the space. The best mode of warming churches and sacristies is by hot water pipes. A coal fire creates dust. A gas stove tarnishes metal. The evil may be lessened by a sharp draught. Asbestos well heated by gas is cleanly; but not economical.

Churches with aisles that have but two altars (and minor churches do not need a third) have usually space for the best sacristy. A calvary four feet deep in place of a third altar would be very devotional, and the faithful kneeling before the moving representation of our suffering Lord would be likewise kneeling before His real presence on the high altar. The space between the eastern wall of the chancel and the eastern wall of the calvary may well be twenty-four feet: and whatever be the width of the calvary, the sacristy beyond

it will be very commodious, that will be seven feet wider. This width provides suitable space for the two sacristies, and also for a passage five feet wide for the priest to the altar by the best approach, namely, on the south or the north side of the calvary. Should the space for the sacristy be twenty-four feet by twenty, the priest's division may well measure fourteen by twenty, and the servers' division nine feet six inches by twenty, allowing six inches for the separating wall. In this the space of a door may be left open, or a door may be fixed of which the upper half may be glass.

Whatever may be the form or size of the servers' sacristy it will need a provision for wax candles, oil, incense, charcoal, and in some cases for house coal. It might be formed thus: over a cupboard two feet six inches high, five feet wide, and three feet deep, might be in one row three drawers five inches high, and three feet from front to back, of which the middle one should measure six inches in width internally, and the other two occupy the remaining space of five feet. Over these might be a fixed wooden tray for wax candles, with sides five inches high, and a rising lid on hinges. Across the centre from front to back might be an opening, two inches wide and twenty inches long, into the drawer beneath; the opening commencing eight inches from the front, and ending eight inches from the back. On each side might be three compartments a foot wide, comprising the three feet of the depth of the tray from front to back. The divisions of these compartments might be four inches high and fixed parallel to the front a foot apart, and might measure from each end twenty-one inches towards the centre. Here might be a free space eighteen inches wide, with the opening into the drawer below across the centre, and here wax might be scraped, and wicks adjusted, and the candles be placed in the separate compartments; and all refuse could be swept into the drawer beneath. The side drawers might receive clean towels and dusters, incense, lamp-floats, wax tapers, and any surplus wax. The cupboard below might receive on the best oil cloth an ample supply of oil, a box for charcoal, and one of house coal if needed, and a division could receive candlesticks, torches,

thuribles, &c. The bottom of the tray might be most advantageously, and at slight expense, cased with slate. Two half-inch slabs thirty-six inches by thirty, screwed down, with the two inch opening twenty inches long at the junction, would provide a cool level on which wax candles would lie straight and firm in all weathers. The divisions might be fixed by screws from beneath and might be slate.

HENRY TELFORD.

ON PROBABILISM.

THE subject of Probabilism occupies a relatively large space in our course of Moral Theology, and has, in modern times, especially since the days of St. Liguori, afforded much matter for discussion and disputation according to the varying views of authors and professors respecting it. Having paid attention just recently to the matter, as it came in my way in looking back on by-gone studies, which I feel pleasure in doing, so far as time and other occupations allow me, I am induced to place my thoughts in the hands of the Editor of the RECORD, in the idea that he may indulgently consider them not altogether unworthy of its pages, with a view to any interest they may present to its numerous readers. To treat it comprehensively, and in its various aspects, the subject is considerably extensive, so that I can do little more within the reasonable limits of a single article than clear the ground, and prepare the way for entering upon its regular treatment.

Moral Theology in its general sense, as we all know, has to do with the conduct of mankind so as to guide them in the path they should pursue, "*declining from evil, and doing good*," according to the words of the psalmist (xxxvi., 27) in order to attain the end of their creation. This guidance of mankind is, to a very large extent, the function of the holy tribunal of Penance. In the institution of the sacrament of Penance our Divine Lord was mercifully pleased to confide

to the ministers of His Church the dispensation alike of God's mercy and justice. This dispensation places upon them a most momentous responsibility, the responsibility of judges to decide who are worthy of the mercy of the Almighty after having offended His Divine Majesty, and who, on the other hand, not being yet worthy of this grace, must be left still subject to the rigours of His justice. This marvellous discretion is most distinctly conveyed in the stupendous commission, with which they are invested; for our Divine Redeemer does not only say "*Whose sins you shall forgive, they are forgiven them,*" but He immediately adds, "*and whose sins you shall retain, they are retained,*" (*John* xx. 23). How awful such responsibility—how amazing such discretion, to deal with the mercy and justice of the Most High with respect to fellow mortals here on earth! In contemplating such a dispensation we may well exclaim with the Prophet: "*Who hath ever heard such a thing! and who hath seen the like?*" (*Isai.* lxvi. 8). St. Chrysostom commenting upon it observes: "the princes of this world have power over our mortal members to bind or loose them; but the power of the priest of God reaches the soul, and in its effects mounts up even into heaven" (*Lib.* iii. *de Sacerd.*); and speaking of it elsewhere in the same treatise, and comparing it with the authority divinely committed to the priests of the Old Law with respect to the leprosy, he asserts, that they were commissioned not to cure the poor patient, but merely to pronounce upon the question of fact, whether he was, or was not cured, but that the priests of the New Law had power respecting the leprosy of sin, not only to say that the sinner was cured, but actually to cure him.

But the minister of the sacrament of Penance is not only invested with judicial authority and power to give effect to the judgment he forms, but he is further invested with the attributes of physician, doctor or teacher, and father, with respect to the penitents, who approach him, as he is seated in the holy tribunal; and in the functions which these several attributes require of him, no less than that of judge, he has to guide his ministry with a discrimination as careful and solicitous, as the issues involved are serious and important.

From these considerations of the attributes of a confessor it is necessarily to be inferred, that he should be deeply versed in the science of dealing with the souls of men in the various ways the discharge of such a ministry requires, and on this account the Church from the commencement sought by every means to have her priests duly instructed before granting them licence to exercise the power received from the hands of the bishop in their ordination of forgiving and retaining sin in accordance with the divine institution of the sacrament of Penance.

The apostles, in the first instance, were especially enlightened for their various functions by the descent of the Holy Ghost on the day of Pentecost, and as they went forth on their several missions extending the kingdom of their Divine Master, and founding churches everywhere they preached, they ordained priests to minister to the faithful whom they had converted. Before ordaining them they saw that they possessed the qualities required for their sacred office, as we see in the instructions given by St. Paul to his beloved disciples Timothy and Titus. We are to allow of course, according to the exigencies of the times, that divine agency largely supplied what was wanting in human resources. Hence St. Paul tells us, that by special vocation God had given "*some Apostles, some Prophets, and other some Evangelists, and other some Pastors and Doctors, for the perfecting of the saints, for the working of the ministry, for the edifying of the Church of Christ.*" (Eph. iv. 11, 12).

The first pastors in the newly founded churches instructed the priests by whom they were assisted, and as nearly every city and town had its own bishop, the first and chief concern of the bishops was to train those whom they selected for the sacred ministry, and instruct them especially in the knowledge required for the sacrament of Penance. These instructions were committed to writing, and formed treatises and rituals in the hands of the clergy. In course of time rules and canons regulating the administration of the sacrament were drawn up, and put in use. In the Eastern Church, St. Peter of Alexandria, St. Gregory Thaumaturgus, St. Basil and St. Gregory of Nissa framed regular compilations, which

tradition has handed down associated with the names of these early Fathers, and which regulated the penances to be imposed for the various sins, which they set forth in minute detail. Other penitential canons were enacted by particular councils of bishops from the earliest ages of the Church, even before the first general council of Nice, which legislated largely on the subject.

The Western Church taking example and instructions from Rome was not slow in compiling her penitential canons, which, however, varied according to the prudence and discretion of the bishops in different countries, and these rigid ordinances continued to regulate the administration of the Sacrament of Penance with certain modifications and relaxations, as the progress of time required, till the thirteenth century.

We are now arrived at a new phase in the Church's history. Hitherto the authority of her councils and chief pastors ruled the practice of the sacred tribunal, but now, and henceforth, individual teachers are allowed to speak and claim a hearing on the subject.

Already beginning with St. Anselm, the treatment of theology has been assuming a more systematic form, already has Peter Lombard given to the world his four books of sentences compiled from the Fathers and Councils of the Church, which hand down his name to posterity as "the Master of the Sentences," and already too has the Paris University, and other seats of learning produced rich fruits in the distinguished men, that came forth from their halls. "The Master of the Sentences" was their great repertory, and in earnest rivalry they elaborated from this source that methodised system of teaching, which flourished throughout the middle ages, and is known to history under the title of "Scholastic Theology" receiving its perfection from making philosophy its handmaid, and dealing with the sacred science in the three-fold departments of dogma, speculation, and polemics; and it may be well conceived with what ardour the work of the school was carried on from the fact, that "the Sentences" had no less than two hundred and forty commentators in course of time. Side by side with scholastic theology progressed

also the teaching of morality. Gratian's decree, as also the decretals of Gregory IX. which owe their compilation very much to St. Raymond of Penafort, were, like the "Master of the Sentences," and about the same period, in the hands of men who framed out of them systematic courses of moral teaching arranged so as to embrace the whole extent of human obligation in our duties towards God, our neighbour, and ourselves, in the various positions we may occupy in our passage through life. By dealing with their matter to a large extent by illustrations, or *cases*, they obtained the appellation of "Casuists" an appellation which the Lutherans and other corrupters of Christian morality sought to apply in a disrespectful sense in their references to the moral teaching of our Catholic divines. It is to be observed that on account of the affinity, and in many instances the blending, of subjects in the various departments of theological science the scholastic teaching had also to treat frequently of matters more strictly belonging to morality, and reciprocally the casuists had to mix up scholastic questions with their own special work.

In the earnestness and rivalry of so many different minds it was inevitable that differences should spring up, and warm discussions should agitate the schools. Socrates, whose name comes down to us as the "Prince of Philosophers," pronounced the remarkable sentence of himself "all I know is, that I know nothing," whilst his constantly repeated maxim was "know thyself," thereby intimating, that we all have mysteries in our own mind, the depths of which we are incapable of sounding, whilst we are still more incapable of reaching the depths of the minds of others. We must all agree of course as to first or self-evident principles, but as we launch into conseqtaries, and are carried away into inferences by dialectic disputation, we are liable to part company, and drift away into endless divergences. Hence arises the necessity of a controlling tribunal, and the supreme guidance of the Church, which our Divine Lord was graciously pleased to invest with the great gift of infallibility for this purpose. Yet the Church allows large range for discussion on the principle that from the clashing of intellects the cause of truth is served as a

main result, the ruling maxim being, “in necessariis unitas, in dubiis libertas, in omnibus charitas.”

In this mode of maintaining what we may call a “concordia discors,” or perhaps more properly a “discordia concors,” what a contrast have we not presented to us between Christian and pagan philosophy! The philosophers of old started, indeed, from a common point of agreement, namely that the craving of happiness in the human mind pointed to a “summum bonum” as they called it, by which the craving was to be satisfied, but putting before them the question in what this “summum bonum” consisted, they went asunder into endless divisions, so that Terrentius Varro, styled in his day “the wisest of the Romans,” was able to count up no less than two hundred and eighty different opinions, as St. Augustine tells us in his immortal work of “the City of God,” maintained and defended in rival philosophical systems upon the one capital point which the Christian child knows from seven years of age, namely, what is the supreme happiness, or the end in the designs of God for which we are created; and so little practical efficacy had their teaching over the conduct of their own lives, that we are appalled and horrified from our inmost souls at the worse than brutal enormities in which, as St. Paul informs us in the first chapter of his epistle to the Romans, they prostituted human nature in their every day habits of life.

And in the great revolt of the sixteenth century against the teaching authority of the Catholic Church, what dissensions violent and interminable had not the world to witness? Plainer words language could not supply than those which our Blessed Lord made use of in the institution of the ever blessed mystery of the Adorable Eucharist, and He selected these words, it is to be observed, having before His mind the discussions that were to arise in course of centuries, as if they had already sprung up. Nevertheless, the reformers so tortured these Divine words into such a variety of senses, as that, before Luther himself had passed away, he had to count several different interpretations notwithstanding his tyrannical endeavours to maintain some sort of union on the point amongst the leaders of the so-called reformation; nay, he himself .

wavered from meaning to meaning, as he felt pressure put upon him in the different stages of his tragic career. Already so early as 1527 he counted up eight different interpretations of the words of our Divine Lord, and thirty years later on, if he had lived so long, he could reckon no less than eighty-five, all doing violence to the plainest words that language could supply, in order to wrest them from the acceptation they bore in the hearts, and mouths, and practice, of the whole Christian world from the ever memorable night when they were first pronounced by our ever Blessed Redeemer; and since the days of the arch-reformer how has not interpretation followed interpretation, as sect beget sect down to the present day! I have before me Whitaker's Almanack for last year, and I count up two hundred and nineteen different sects for England and Wales alone, having added five to their number of the preceding year, and as many as thirty-three since 1882; and when we find "the believers in the divine visitation of Joanna Southcott, Prophetess of Exeter," still holding their place on the catalogue, we have our memory refreshed with what St. Augustine said of the heretics of his own day, that ravings so absurd never passed through the heads of patients in the delirium of a burning fever than have seized on the minds of those, who having abandoned the teaching guidance of the Church, have cast themselves on the ever vacillating principle of private judgment in matters of faith.

And whilst tossed to and fro by every wind of doctrine, what has been the ethical code of the Reformation? Alas! the corrupt passions of poor human nature were allowed full swing. What was sin, and what was not sin, were debated from press and pulpit, till all restraints were removed, and Christian morality utterly overthrown, and if sin was in any particular case admitted, it was rendered uncertain in the disputes that raged upon the subject, how the sinner was to recover the grace of his offended Creator.

Yes, we have had in our schools controversies about "genera" and "species;" we have had our "Nominalists" and our "Realists;" our "Thomists" and our "Scotists;" and, later on, our various systems respecting the action of Divine Grace on the will of man; but these divergences with several

others were all within the limits, on one side, of free discussion which the Church has constantly encouraged for the investigation of truth, whilst, on the other hand, she has ever maintained with unyielding firmness the right of restraint and control necessary for the guardianship of the deposit of Faith, divinely committed to her safe-keeping till the end of time. She has had also within her bosom in the domain of morality her various teachings from Tutorism, on the one side, to the borders of Laxism, on the other, but from her watch towers she has ever exercised an unremitting vigilance over her casuists, whatever denominations they may have assumed, or to whatever category they may have belonged, in order to preserve unsullied the attribute of sanctity, with which her Divine Founder invested her; and as the subject of Probabilism has, in modern times, occupied a conspicuous place in the disputations she has permitted, I now feel I have reached the threshold of my subject, which I must defer entering upon for the present, reserving it for another paper, for which, allow me by anticipation to bespeak a few additional pages of the RECORD.

A VETERAN PRACTITIONER.

SOME CATHOLIC REMINISCENCES OF THE INDIAN MUTINY OF 1857.

INTO a complete history of the Indian Mutiny the writer of these pages does not purpose going. Nor will he, except incidentally, touch upon the revolt which followed, and which was in certain places, more or less popular in its character. But as he was an eye-witness in the North-Western Provinces, where it assumed its most alarming dimensions, he will endeavour to present a brief sketch of the Mutiny itself, together with some account of the reasons for its occurrence. This, he considers, may be interesting to many readers of the IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD, who may not have seen the particulars which he is able to adduce, and which certainly,

seem to point to a really miraculous interposition of Divine Providence, in protecting the Most Rev. Dr. Persico, at the time Vicar-Apostolic of the Agra Mission, and now Archbishop in the Kingdom of Naples, as well as the priests and nuns of the same mission, during the Mutiny. The reader, however, will be able to draw his own conclusions when the facts have been stated.

There is no doubt that the English Government had advice from the civil and military officials in India of the approaching storm. Even in the city of Delhi, the seat of the last king of the Mogul dynasty, placards were posted up on the Jumna Musjid or Mahometan Mosque, stating that the days of English rule in India were numbered. But to these and many other warnings no heed was given. In fact the idea of the Sepoy, or any of his countrymen, rising in rebellion against the English authorities, was thought too ridiculous to be entertained for a moment. It was considered positively absurd. After a twelve years' residence in India, previous to the Mutiny, and after having actually seen the native soldiers under fire in the Seikh campaign of 1846, such was our own decided conviction.

In the beginning of 1857, a mutinous spirit appeared amongst the native troops at Barrackpore, but was soon suppressed. Greased cartridges were alleged as the cause of their insubordination. The idea got abroad that the cartridges were made up in paper, greased with a mixture of suet and lard. Such materials were looked on by Hindoo and Mahometan as an abomination, for the cow was held in veneration by the Hindoo, and the hog was an object of disgust to the Mahometan. To our thinking the whole affair was a device cleverly got up by the wily Mahometans, to inveigle the simple Hindoos in their scheme.

The majority of the troops knew well that the cartridges were the same as they had been using for years. Even the Governor-General issued a proclamation, assuring the native army that the tales told them were malicious inventions and falsehoods. Lord Canning succeeded the Earl of Dalhousie as the supreme authority in India. He was called on not only to suppress, but crush the mutiny, and well and

thoroughly did he do so under trying circumstances and great difficulties. He was, as is commonly said, the right man in the right place. "Lord Canning was a real statesman,¹ because he would not listen to the blood-thirsty clamours of mere frenzy, he was nick-named 'clemency Canning,' as if clemency was an attribute of which a man ought to be ashamed."

To say that the Government ever intended to destroy the castes of the Hindoos or tamper with Mahometan belief would be an assertion not supported by facts. For example let there be a vacancy in some Government office or department, and let us suppose that the office in question is that of a sub-sheriff, worth about £50 per annum. Four candidates, all natives, but of different modes of worship, present themselves for the post, a Hindoo, a Mahometan, a Protestant and a Catholic, while a very great superiority in the matter of education is possessed by the two Christians over their competitors. Who will be successful? Invariably the Mahometan or Hindoo. Again no native soldier may become a Christian. And if he does express such a wish, he must either leave the regiment, of course with permission, or suffer from his comrades more severe trials than being merely "sent to Coventry."²

I frequently conversed with a Pundit who was by caste a Brahmin, and had come originally from Cashmere. He had been educated at one of the Government Colleges; could speak English fluently, and was well up in the sciences. This gentleman acknowledged to me that he had no religion, and laughed at the numerous and different sects in existence. But, he added, with every appearance of sincerity, that if any of the various religions were true it was the Catholic. "But, sir," he continued, "if I became a Catholic, look at the consequences. My mother, wife, and children would abandon me, and to crown all I should lose my situation; would your bishop then support me?" This person was a Government official.

¹ *History of Our Own Times.* By Justin M'Carthy, M.P.

² This is not so in the Madras or Bombay Presidencies, we think.

There are colleges and schools in abundance all over India, Oxford and Cambridge in many instances supplying professors and masters; they are all principally, if not entirely, supported and endowed by the Indian Government. But in few, if in any of them is the Christian religion alluded to, or if at all mentioned no effect apparently follows. So that Hindoos and Mahometans who, before entering these godless colleges, had some belief in a Supreme Being, leave them believing in nothing, with no idea of real religion, and with their minds no better than *Tabulae rasae* in the matter of religious belief.

It was in 1498 the Portuguese arrived in India; and, for more than a century, Portugal commanded the Indian trade with no effectual opposition, though the Dutch, French and Spaniards had in the interim entered into sharp competition with them. The King of Portugal sent out in all the ships not only chaplains to attend to the spiritual wants of the sailors and soldiers, but also missionaries for the conversion of the poor benighted natives of India. And the better to succeed in this enterprise, all the Government officials were ordered by His Majesty to give every possible aid to the priests in the discharge of their spiritual and temporal duties. Large sums of money also were allotted by the Crown for these purposes. So well had the Bishops of Goa done their duty with a small band of missionaries, that when St. Francis Xavier arrived in India in the year 1542, he found a cathedral at Goa, and chapels and schools scattered over a considerable portion of the southern extremity of India.

St. Francis Xavier after only ten years of missionary labour had converted nearly the whole of southern India. Amongst his converts were kings, princes, princesses, and the nobles of their courts. It is, alas! but too true, that he was thwarted by the jealousy and covetousness of those who should have helped and encouraged him in his arduous labours. At length when he was no longer able to endure the immorality and tyranny of Government officials, he sailed to Malacca, and after some time to Japan. The vast kingdom of China appealed to his charity, and he was resolved at the risk of his life to force an entry into it, when God took him to Himself.

He died, like Moses, in sight of the land of promise.

In the vicinity of Madras, Madura, &c., there are flourishing Catholic missions of natives, as also in the island of Ceylon. On returning home in 1859, we stopped a night with his Lordship Dr. Fennelly. Going ashore in the purser's boat we saw thousands of poor natives fishing. Their clothing was merely a cloth round their loins, called a *dhotee*; they were riding on hollowed pieces of wood, which are named *catamarans*, with their legs dangling in the water. They were sometimes thrown off the catamarans by a large breaker, but in an instant they were up and on again. Whilst we were admiring their agility, the officer said to us "these all belong to you." This was really true, as on speaking to the Bishop on the subject, he assured us there were sixty thousand of these poor natives along the coast belonging to his flock.

The Portuguese in the south of India, and their other Oriental possessions, carefully observed Sundays and all the holidays of the Church, and if they did not compel the natives to observe them, at least they made them *respect* them. This is not the case in our Indian possessions, as Christian feasts are ignored by the native population; whilst the Mohurrum and other Mahometan feasts, together with the filthy and disgusting orgies of the Hindoos, are carefully attended to by the Government. In order that the tender and delicate religious feelings of the natives may not in any way be wounded, *all* Government offices are closed on these occasions. The Portuguese employed neither force nor violence in converting the Indians, but they respected and supported Christianity; and when a post had to be filled up in their offices or service, they invariably gave the preference to a native Christian. If the English had pursued the same line of conduct since their first arrival in India, now nearly three centuries ago, there should at present be millions of native Christians in the country, whereas we have not fifty thousand from Calcutta to the Khyber Pass. Close by every courthouse, or, as the natives term it, "the place where the law is sold," you will find either a Hindoo temple or a Mahometan mosque, built by the Government for the convenience of

their officials and servants, who are either Mahometans or Hindoos. This is certainly not tampering with the faith of the natives, or attempting to convert them. Many and various are the faults and crimes attributed, whether justly or unjustly we do not say, to British rule in India. But I do allege without fear of contradiction, that of the charge of tampering with the natives in religious matters, or of improving and correcting their impious code of morality, England is perfectly innocent. Consequently religion was not a factor in causing the Indian Mutiny.

No doubt America, Germany and England spend millions of money in sending out missionaries with their families and Bibles to convert the poor natives of India. These apostles are certainly energetic and active men in their way; but the almighty dollar and rupee are the real and effective causes of conversion. Protestant missionaries invariably have schools, printing presses, &c., in their service, and employ many natives in conducting them; but money, money is the real attraction. There is rarely such a thing with them as a real and solid conversion. On the smallest deficit occurring in the exchequer the natives look out for other hunting grounds.

Another reason for the outbreak is sometimes brought forward on which I place no more reliance than on religious aggression, that is Russian gold. Everyone knows that Russia has no bullion to spare, nor is her credit the best in the European market. But I now come to what, in the judgment of many, was the real cause of the Indian Mutiny, and the revolt which followed it, namely, *annexation*.

The subject is immense, but I shall touch only on its salient points, beginning with the first arrival of the English in India. In 1602 a small fleet of five ships, under the command of Captain Lancaster, arrived in Acheem roads, and established a factory. Through a Doctor Boughton, on account of his medical services at the Imperial Court, the company of merchants, with originally a capital of £30,000, obtained a Firman in 1651, from the Emperor at Delhi, to carry on trade throughout the province of Bengal. In 1661 the English company obtained the island of Bombay, from the Portuguese, and from that period to 1854, the East India

Company acquired, by fair means or foul, fifty-seven kingdoms and principalities. In the short space of forty-seven years they had become masters of the whole seaboard, from Sandoway in Arrican to Cape Comorin.

Many indeed have been the Governors of these vast possessions, from Clive down to the present Lord Dufferin. But among all, Lord Dalhousie¹ and Lord Canning hold conspicuous places; the former for his energy and ruling powers, the latter for his masterly effort in crushing the Indian Mutiny. Lord Dalhousie was certainly a great man, of commanding energy and indomitable courage. He had also some parliamentary experience in both houses. Towards the close of 1847 he succeeded Lord Hardinge, and an administration of more activity than that of Lord Dalhousie it would be difficult to trace in the history of any country. Within fifteen months the telegraph was in operation from Calcutta to Agra; thence it was extended to Attock on the Indus, as also to Bombay and Madras. We may here mention that the first Superintendent and Director of the Indian Telegraph was an Irishman, Sir William O'Shaughnessy.

During Lord Dalhousie's few years of office, he eclipsed his predecessors in the line of *annexations*. He annexed the Punjaub, a portion of Burmese territory, Nagpore, Sattara, Jhansi, Berar and *Oudh*. We cannot bring forward any reasonable cause for all these kingdoms and principalities being swallowed up by the British Lion, under his Lordship's management. His minutes in the Government Records are certainly concise, sharp and decisive. Here is one of them:—
“We are Lords paramount of India, and our policy is to acquire as direct a dominion over the territories in possession of the native Princes as we hold over the other half of India.”
Now such a policy as this could only lead to a course of direct annexation in the near future. And notwithstanding that excuses and justifications were alleged by the authorities for each of these annexations to show that they were not only justifiable, but actually inevitable, none the less must a succession of such acts have produced a deep feeling of opposition

¹ *A History of Our Own Times.* By Justin McCarthy, M.P.

among the natives, in whose midst the events were accomplished. The people of India, although naturally indifferent, cold and apathetic, were now struck with alarm as they saw their Princes thus successively dethroned. The flower of the Sepoy army came from the kingdom of Oudh, and other annexed territories adjacent, and when they saw the advancing avalanche of British power crushing their country, they felt a natural and reasonable resentment against such irksome intervention. The annexation of Oudh we consider to have been the last straw that broke the camel's back, and brought on the Indian Mutiny. Lucknow, the capital of the kingdom of Oudh, was a magnificent city. Dr. Russell, the correspondent of the *Times*, says of it :—

“Not Rome, not Athens, not Constantinople, not any city I have ever seen, appears to me so striking, and beautiful as this, and the more I gaze, the more its beauties grow upon me.”

It had numbers of magnificent palaces, villas, and gardens laid out in gorgeous style and with the most delicate taste, a population of more than a million of people and nearly two hundred thousand armed men. Cruel and tyrannical was the treatment dealt to the Sovereign of this grand city. Let us quote again Dr Russell :—

“The menagerie of the King of Oudh, as much his private property as his watch or turban, were sold under discreditable circumstances, and his jewels seized and impounded, though we had no more claim on them than on the crown diamonds of Russia. Do the English people care for these things? Do they know them? The hundred millions of Hindostan know them well, and care about them too.”

To Sir James Outram, a thorough soldier, as well as a clever diplomatist, is due the annexation of Oudh. I do not allege that such was his own personal design, but like a true soldier he was obedient to orders. My reason for alluding to the General is this. On his returning to India on one occasion there were in the steamer with him a few Catholic missionaries, who were grossly insulted by some British officers on their way out to join their respective regiments. On the matter being reported to the General, he

at once gave them a sharp reprimand, and also said he would put them under arrest if they did not at once make an ample apology to the Fathers, and promise future good conduct. The officers complied with his orders. On the General's final return to England he came by Rome, and was graciously received by the late saintly Pontiff, Pius IX., who presented him with a large gold medal.

Many other reasons might be adduced as affording fuel to the Mutiny flame, such as the haughty treatment of the Sepoys, and the despotism exercised over natives in general. Even native officers, descended from a princely line of ancestors, did not escape such degradation.

At length the eventful day arrived, big with the fate of British rule in India, the 10th of May, 1857. Some eighty men of a native cavalry regiment, for refusing to use the cartridges, were tried by courtmartial and sentenced, some to six, and others to ten years' imprisonment with hard labour. The prison in which they were confined was guarded by *native* soldiers, whilst British cavalry, artillery, and infantry, were tranquilly reposing in their barracks. The prisoners were soon released by their comrades, and immediately began their bloody work. They killed the colonel and several officers, and were busily engaged in attacking all the European inhabitants when English soldiers appeared on the scene. The mutineers were now driven from their cantonments. This was the turning point of the Mutiny; for had there been prompt and vigorous action on the part of the military and civil authorities, the mutiny could have been partially checked, if not entirely crushed. In Meerut at the outbreak there was a strong force of British cavalry, artillery, and infantry. What did they do? They marched through the bazaar after the insurgents had fled, and discharged a few rounds of shot amongst the trees where voices were heard; this, and destroying the villages of some innocent natives around Meerut made up the sum total of their exploits. It is to this day a mystery how the insurgents, after the commission of murder and arson, could march off to Delhi without opposition, when there was such a splendid British force of all arms in Meerut as could have effectually destroyed them. No;

nothing was done, and a reign of terror and bloodshed was soon inaugurated, which might have been so easily prevented at the beginning by English troops within a few hundred yards of the insurgents. Delhi is about 40 miles from Meerut. It was at the time of the Mutiny the principal arsenal for supplying with the munitions of war all the stations up to Peshawur. It contains thousands of stands of small arms, parks of artillery, shot, shell, etc.; but by whom was all this guarded? Who had the protection of this once imperial city with its four hundred thousand inhabitants? Native troops, native infantry and artillery, with a few English officials!

On the arrival in Delhi of the insurgents from Meerut, and while crossing the bridge of boats, the first European they met with was the Commissioner, the highest English authority in the place, and they killed him at once. Then they swarmed into the palace of the King, proclaimed him Emperor of India, and hoisted the standard of rebellion against English rule. We need not say any thing of the palace which was a small city in itself, and by all accounts a den of infamy. The King was an absolute monarch in his palace, though a pensioner of the British Government. At once the Sepoy troops in the city, with those on the Delhi ridge, about two miles distant joined hands with the mutineers. There were but few Europeans in the city, principally writers in the Government offices, and some officers over the Commissariat and Ordnance departments.

We have now to narrate the death of Father Zacharias, an Italian Capuchin, and the chaplain of Delhi. No sooner had the insurgents rested a little after their hasty march from Meerut, than native officials were appointed by the King's authority, and a general search ordered to discover the abodes of all Europeans in the city. Then commenced a ruthless massacre of men, women and children. Father Zacharias had been appointed but a short time before the Mutiny broke out to Delhi by the Most Rev. Dr. Persico, then Vicar-Apostolic of the Agra Mission, which at that time extended from Allahabad on the confluence of the Ganges and Jumna rivers to the borders of Afghanistan. The missionary's flock was small, consisting of a native colony of Catholics, some

few Eurasians and non-commissioned officers of the Ordnance department. The holy man quickly grasped the state of affairs, and made his preparations; but not for flight. His servants begged and implored him to dress himself in native costume and thus effect his escape; this he could have easily accomplished, as he was of a rather dark complexion and had a long black beard. But no, the saintly old man told them to provide for themselves by flight; "but as for me," he said, "I shall die in my church." Very soon after a body of cavalry appeared at the gate crying out "where is the Padre?" At that moment in the humble little chapel he could be seen prostrate before the altar, bathed in tears with the crucifix in hand, ready as a victim for the sacrifice. No reply was given to the murderers' demand, for all others had fled. So they advanced into the little court yard, tied their horses, and proceeded to the chapel. As they arrived at the door, they stopped as if in awe, looking at the prostrate figure before the altar. Soon, however, a shot was fired, and then volley after volley discharged, until his body ceased to move. He was dead. This was not enough. As if not satisfied with their bloody work they rushed into the chapel to cut and hew the lifeless remains of the holy priest. No vestige of his body nor of any of the sacred vessels or vestments were ever discovered. The chapel, with its humble presbytery, was afterwards used as a stable for cavalry. In this state it remained until the fall of Delhi, on the 8th of September, when it was taken possession of by Rev. Father Bertrand, chaplain to the British forces before Delhi, and again cleaned up and opened for Divine Service. Nearly two years after the event the writer passed through Delhi, where he had the great privilege of celebrating Mass in this church, and even then one could see slight traces of the martyr's blood on the wall within the sanctuary.

In about three weeks the British forces marched from Umballa for Delhi under General Anson and about the same time the Mutiny broke out in Lucknow and the kingdom of Oudh. All over the north-western provinces native regiments either mutinied or were disbanded, with the solitary exception of the Seikhs and Goorkhas, who remained

faithful to the British Government. To increase the danger still further, the population of the towns and villages now made common cause with the native troops against English rule. The state of affairs is thus described by Dr. Russell :—

“The revolt spread, not with lightning flash all over the plains of India, but rather as a smouldering fire, which, having long burned secretly, at last bursts forth in flame at one point, and thence creeps round and steals along through reed, and bush, and jungle, till, at the solicitation of some favourable breeze, it leaps with a mighty roar from tree to tree, and soon wraps the whole scene in a universal sheet of all-consuming, furious, irresistible heat.”

Agra, being the head-quarters of the mission, possessed a magnificent cathedral. It had six chapels, and was built in the Grecian style, not unlike the Madeleine in Paris. Its architect was an Italian Capuchin, Father Bonaventure, who died a martyr of charity. In Agra also were the bishop's palace, a large and stately building for the accommodation of his Lordship and the Missionary Fathers; St. Peter's College for ecclesiastics and European boarders; St. Paul's Orphanage for soldiers' boys, a large convent with some thirty nuns, French and Irish, and several young ladies as boarders, St. Joseph's Orphanage for native girls, and lastly, St. Patrick's Orphanage for the daughters of Catholic soldiers. All these communities, with his Lordship, Dr. Persico, the professors, priests, nuns, and children, together with the whole European and Eurasian population of Agra, had to take refuge in the old fort on the Jumna. Who can picture the weary, sad, and painful life its inmates had to lead for some four months? No sooner did the Europeans enter the fort than all native Agra turned out to have their day. The city contained nearly 300,000 inhabitants. The Budmashes, a special class of their own, something like “our corner boys,” and 2,000 prisoners from the gaol, all with one accord began to destroy Government buildings, barracks, colleges, schools, churches and private residences. Every day news would arrive in the fort of some rebel force approaching, but fortunately indeed for the inmates no real attack was made upon them. There was one English regiment of infantry in the fort, with plenty of cannon and ammunition. But they

had not two dozen men to discharge their big guns. It was principally to awe and frighten the people of the city that they had planted artillery all around. But had any small force of artillery attacked the fort, a breach could have been made in its walls in a very short time. It was built originally more for ornament than active warfare, and had very little about it, or rather nothing, according to the principles of Vauban. On one occasion the troops in the fort sallied out to arrest a band of mutineers on their march for Delhi, then the grand centre of the rebel forces. But our troops had not proceeded far when they saw the superior strength of the enemy's contingent, which consisted of both cavalry and infantry, and thereupon prudently retreated back to the fort.¹

WILLIAM BRADY.

(To be continued.)

¹ Mr. McCarthy's paintings of Indian affairs at this time is interesting:—"Never at any time came such news upon England as the first full story of the Mutiny in India. It came with terrible, not unnatural exaggeration. Stories of wholesale massacres of English women and children, of the most abominable tortures, the most degrading outrages inflicted on English mothers and daughters. During the Indian Mutiny the blood of innocent women and children was cruelly and lavishly spilt. But there were no outrages on women in the ordinary meaning of the word. Upon this fact all historians of the Mutiny agree. . . . The advices which some English journals showered upon the Government, the army, and all concerned in repressing the Mutiny, might more fittingly have come from some of the heroes of the Spanish fury. Nay, the Spanish fury itself was, in express words, held up to the English army as an example for them to imitate. An English paper of high, and well-earned authority, distinctly declared that such mercy as Alva showed the Netherlands was the mercy that English soldiers must show to the rebellious regions of India. . . . It is painful to have to remember that the talk was not of repression but of revenge."

Dr. Russell, after contrasting Indian and English cruelty, sums up as follows:—"All these kinds of vindictive, unchristian, Indian torture, such as sewing Mahometans in pig skins, smearing their bodies with pork fat before execution, and burning their bodies, and forcing Hindoos to defile themselves, are disgraceful, and ultimately recoil on ourselves. They are spiritual and mental tortures to which we have no right to resort, and which we dare not perpetrate in the face of Europe."

THE HABIT OF ST. THOMAS, ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.

THE interest which Catholics take in St. Thomas of Canterbury shews no sign of abating. On the contrary, it has increased with the beatification of the English martyrs. By the recent decree a fuller light has been thrown upon the motive which actuated Henry the Eighth's almost inconceivable rage against the archbishop's name and relics. The fury which stopped not at rifling a tomb, but jackal-like, could batten even upon the dead is sometimes styled insane. For the honour of human nature we wish it could be set down to mere frenzy. It is plain, however, that there lurked much method in the Tudor's madness. He was ferocious on instinct. He understood what thoughtful men even outside the Church begin to understand, that one and the same cause linked together the glorious Pontiff, Thomas, and Blessed John Fisher; that a common interest animated Henry the Second's former Chancellor and his own Lord High Chancellor and victim, the Blessed Thomas More. All died in defence of the same imperishable rights. The Primate's blood fertilised the soil and Magna Charta sprang up; the Cardinal's blood drenched the same soil too late to save, though not too late to witness to the fundamental principle of the Charter. And now its first and vital article was blotted out. With the substitution of King for Pope the Church of England had ceased to be free. The great and strong tree of English liberty was cut down, and the stump of its roots was bound with a band of iron and brass.¹ Might not the ruthless tyrant suppose his work finished? What visible obstacle did there remain in the realm to the success of his sacrilegious plans? None. Yet he is not satisfied or at ease. An obstacle, unseen but felt, meets him on every side. An adversary as impalpable as the air, and as resistless, withstands him. This is the heroic example of St. Thomas. The martyr is still a power in the land. His story is treasured up in every heart. His

¹ Dan. iv., 12.

cathedral is still a favourite place of pilgrimage. His spirit starts from every missal and breviary, from painted window and sculptured reredos, and men are roused by it to resist even unto blood against the invasion of ecclesiastical rights and immunities. And so it came to pass that Henry "deemed his triumph incomplete so long as St. Thomas's shrine at Canterbury stood as a silent witness against him, or St. Thomas's name rose in prayers to heaven."¹ Accordingly his name by Royal ordinance was erased, and his shrine demolished. And these acts of Vandalism only served to make it clear that the patriot Bishop stood not alone, but was the leader and proto-martyr of that white-robed army which fought to the death for England's ecclesiastical and civil liberties.

It is this aspect in which St. Thomas has lately come to be more generally viewed that gives me hope that a paper on his dress when Archbishop will not prove uninteresting to the readers of the IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD. This may seem a point of little moment, but the place it takes up in all the *Vitæ* warrants us in assuming that his earliest biographers attached some importance to it. No other saint can we recall whose dress has had so much attention bestowed on it. Each chronicler, in his own way, tells us what the Archbishop wore, each supplies a detail, each adds a stroke, a very light one sometimes, to the picture. Yet all taken together fail to satisfy entirely our curiosity. With all the minuteness of their descriptions a certain obscurity hangs over the subject, and apparently conflicting statements have been to later biographers a source of much trouble and occasionally of mistakes. I have no pretention to say much that shall be new in a field where so many have laboured with industry and success. If I can help a little towards giving his clients some clear and consistent notions about the habit, which the Christian hero wore in the days of conflict and in the hour of martyrdom, these delvings will have served their purpose.

On becoming Archbishop, St. Thomas did not at once leave

¹ *Life of St. Thomas*, by the late Mrs. Hope, p. 378.

aside his worldly dress. Over the hair-shirt, which he put on as soon as he was consecrated, he retained for a time, even in the primatial chair, the secular dress he used to wear in the days of his Chancellorship. This behaviour is certainly strange, but as Fr. Morris very judiciously points out, it probably was "not from a worldly feeling that he did not conform himself in dress to his new manner of life. It may have been that he retained his gay attire in order to conceal the interior change that was taking place within him, and to secure himself from the observation of the Church."¹ The monks, however, were scandalized, and one of them reproved him. The reproof brought tears to the Archbishop's eyes, and made him determine to assume a dress more in keeping with his ecclesiastical status. He did not, however, tell his monitor what his intention was, "*propositum tamen suum ista sibi referenti monacho minime revelavit.*"² But by the close of the year in which he was raised to the primatial See, a change took place in his exterior; his valuable and coloured dress was laid aside with its foreign and variegated furs, and he assumed a dress at once clerical and religious. What this dress was and the different articles which went to make it up may be gleaned from the original *Vita*, written by the Saint's contemporaries and faithful companions, and as far as possible, I shall give the text of the old biographers exactly as it stands in the Rolls Series, that so my readers who may not have easy access to these precious records may test step by step the value of my conclusions.

Herbert de Bosham informs us that the Saint's garments were closed all round, dark, and reaching his feet, and that the skins he wore were not costly furs but simply lambskin, "*Clausæ ipsius vestes, pullæ et poderes et pelles non quidem pretiosæ sed agninæ.*" These pelles or garments of skin are more fully described by the Auctor Anonymus I. He also enables us to form an idea as to the relative place they held in the dress. His words are: "Super

¹ *The Life and Martyrdom of St. Thomas Becket*, 2nd edit., p. 78.

² *Rolls Series*, "Materials for History of Archbishop Becket," vol. iv., p. 21.

³ *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. iii., p. 196.

cilicium, quo ad carnem induebatur, pellicias agninas bysso tantum munda coopertas habuit.”¹ So we find that over his hair shirt St. Thomas wore more than one lambs-wool pelisse. Now referring to the *Catholic Dictionary*, p. 786, we read that “such dresses of fur (pelliciae) came into use among monks (*sic*) early in the ninth century; probably to protect them from the cold and damp during the long offices in church. The great Synod of Aix-la-Chapelle in 817 (can. 22) ordered each monk to have two dresses of fur (pelliciae).”² We may thus reasonably suppose that this was the number the Archbishop wore. An allusion is made to these pelisses by one who describes his appearance after death. “Pallium ejus et pellicia exterior,” complains Benedict of Peterborough “sicut erant cruore infecta, pauperibus pro anima ipsius minus discreta pietate collata sunt.”³ He adds a reflection which shews that time brings few changes, and that gifts of clothing often met in the twelfth century with the fate that so frequently attends such presents in the nineteenth. Speaking of the recipients of the precious relics, he says they were “satis felicibus, nisi ea statim inconsulte vendentes parvum eis pretium praetulissent.”⁴ Who obtained this pellicia I cannot find, but William, priest of Bourne, secured the pallium *i.e.* cappa, and miracles were wrought through it.⁵

“Over these pelliciae, a linen garment, the superpellicium or surplice, was worn in choir . . . In the twelfth century it reached to the ankles.”⁶ In the passage quoted above from Anonymus I. we see that St. Thomas’s pelisses were covered with clean, fine linen, “bysso munda.” This was no shirt, but the same white garment he had on when he fled from Northampton “indutus veste alba et monachili cappa super scapulas posita.”⁷ It was his surplice. Did it have sleeves, and if it had, were they wide? Zunggo, no mean authority, holds that anciently the surplice

¹ *Rolls*, op. cit. vol. iv., p. 21.

² *Cath. Dict.*, 3rd edit., p. 786.

³ *Rolls* op. cit., vol. ii., p. 16.

⁴ *Rolls*, op. cit. *ibid.*

⁵ *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. ii., pp. 53, 54.

⁶ *Cath. Dict.*, p. 786.

⁷ *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. ii., p. 335.

(colobium) was sleeveless.¹ We believe it had sleeves. Sleeves to some garment St. Thomas certainly had, for Herbert of Bosham tells us that the saint would carry manuscripts about with him in the large, loose sleeves of his dress, "schedulas etiam manicis suis laxis complicare consueverat . . . ut ita legendo semper promptius penes se haberet quod disceret."²

Doubtless the Archbishop immediately under his pelisses wore a tunic or close-fitting garment, reaching to the heels (vestis talaris). This tunic which has developed into the modern cassock, would be of a dark colour. The reader will remember the words of Herbert de Bosham, "clausae ipsius vestes, pullae et poderes." From this we may conclude that the saint wore openly more than one dark garment, that, in other words, the cappa was not his only black dress. Further on we shall revert to this point.

Over the surplice St. Thomas wore a black cappa, made of some cheap material and trimmed with white lambswool. Anonymus I. speaks of it in these terms: "Amiciebatur quoque pallio pullo, id est nigro, parvi pretii, solo tenus defluente, quod agnibus pellibus muniebatur."³ The learned writer, to whom I am indebted for much definite information on this subject, holds that it was closed all round.⁴ This agrees with the statement given above from Herbert, and with what other writers tell us about the shape of the cappa in those times. It was what is known to-day as the "cappa magna," which, according to the *Catholic Dictionary* "seems to have been at first the choir vestment of Canons Regular, and which is used by cardinals, bishops, and in many churches [*e.g.* Rheims Cathedral], also by canons."⁵ From Hélyot we learn that ecclesiastics, finding it troublesome to have to gather up the anterior part of the cappa on their arms, first made a slit in the front to pass their hands through, and later on, put wide sleeves to it, thus converting the cappa into the monastic cowl. This latter expedient may have been in use even in the lifetime of St. Thomas,

¹ *Historiae Gen. et Spec. de Ord. Can. Reg.*, vol. i., p. 429.

² *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. iii., p. 206.

³ *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. iv., p. 21.

⁴ Fr. Morris, *Life*, §c., p. 78.

⁵ P. 116.

for we find the practice condemned as early as 1215.¹ We have no reason, however, for supposing that the Archbishop acted after this manner, but neither can it be clearly established that he could not pass his arms through the front of his cappa. That he could and did appears to me not to be altogether unlikely when we consider one of the circumstances that happened at the Council of Northampton on the memorable 13th of October 1164. "The Saint," says Fr. Morris, "would have gone to the Court vested as he was [for Mass] if some of the Templars, with whom he was intimate, had not persuaded him not to do so . . . At their urgent entreaty, he laid aside his mitre and pallium; he threw his black cappa, as a Canon Regular, over the sacred vestments,"² &c. Alanus, who is the authority for this incident,³ seems to infer that the Archbishop sought to conceal the sacred vestments, so as not to give the king any pretext for annoyance. But if this were the saint's intention and there were no slit in the cappa, his object would most certainly have been defeated the moment he took his primatial cross into his hands, for then he would have had to gather up all the front part of the cappa and thus expose to view what he knew would irritate the monarch. Let me add that this cappa was never abandoned by the saint. We have seen him wear it at Northampton; he wore it the night he fled, this, according to Fr. Morris, being the same cappa which Alan calls "monachilis."⁴ Finally St. Thomas was vested in the cappa when he met his end; it was dyed in his blood, says Benedict of Peterborough.⁵

Here we may pause and put together from the evidence before us the different articles worn by the Archbishop from the moment he changed his worldly attire. First there was a hair-shirt and drawers in one. Over this penitential garb he had two pelisses or garments of skin. A long linen surplice covered the pelisses, and probably between these and the surplice was a black gown not entirely covered by the

¹ *Histoire des Ordres religieux*, vol. ii., p. 20.

² *Life*, §c., p. 168.

³ *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. ii., p. 330.

⁴ *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. ii., p. 335; Fr. Morris, *Life*, §c., p. 187.

⁵ *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. ii., p. 16.

surplice. A black cappa adorned with lambswool enveloped him from his neck nearly to his feet, but allowed some portion of the black robe and surplice to be seen. Such I gather to have been St. Thomas's every day dress.

I am not unaware that exception can be taken to my view. Fr. Morris, whose interesting book is a valuable mine of information on all matters touching the Archbishop, says nothing of the black gown or tunic, and in one place, sets down distinctly that the surplice was worn *over* the cappa.¹ A surplice over a cappa seems so unusual an arrangement that I have been long casting about for some example of it but in vain. The statement appears to me to be almost in flat contradiction with what the Auctor Anonymus I. tells us.² I have tried to discover by what road Father Morris has arrived at this conclusion. My surmise may be incorrect, but I fancy he has been influenced by an expression of an ancient biographer, for at the close of his volume when describing the Archbishop's burial he has the words, "they took off his black cappa with its white lambswool and his fine linen surplice, which, enriched with the stains of his blood, were given to the poor."³ These details come down to us on the authority of Benedict of Peterborough and have already been given in the original Latin.⁴ But, the expression by which St. Thomas's latest biographer translates surplice is "*pellicia exterior*" in the old chronicles. Can the adjective *exterior* have been taken to mean worn over the cappa which is mentioned in close connection with the *pellicia*? And should it be taken in this sense when a more obvious interpretation presents itself, viz.: the outer pelisse of the two St. Thomas wore? Again, I doubt whether *pellicia* in documents of so early a date may be rendered by fine linen surplice. In the words "*fine linen*" there may be an allusion to the "*byssus munda*" spoken of by Auctor Anonymus I.⁵ as covering the garments of skin. If so it confirms the view I have adopted that the "*byssus*" was the surplice worn (as the etymology of the word surplice indicates) over the pelisses. And when *after* mentioning

¹ *Life*, §c., p. 79.

Vide supra, p. 529.

³ *Life*, §c., p. 424.

⁴ *Vide supra*, p. 529.

⁵ *Vide supra*, p. 529.

this "fine linen" garment the old biographer goes on to say that besides this and his other vestments the Archbishop was robed in an ample cappa "*amiciebatur quoque pallio,*"¹ &c, we are, I imagine, warranted in inferring that the cappa was exterior to and covered almost entirely the rest. Was not the "*vestis alba*" in which St. Thomas fled from Northampton a surplice which in those days was nearly as long as the alb is to-day? If it was, then he wore over it "his usual black cappa."² Can Alan's words admit of any other interpretation "*indutus veste alba et monachili cappa super scapulas posita*"?³

The black gown or tunic involves greater difficulties. Saving the passage already given from Herbert⁴ where he says that the Archbishop's "*vestes*" were "*pullae*," which I take to mean that, besides the cappa, he wore another dark garment reaching to his feet, presumably a black "*vestis talaris*" or cassock, I have met only one other passage which may bear the same construction. Benedict of Peterborough informs us that, over the hair-shirt of the martyred Archbishop, the monks found a woollen shirt or robe, and a cowl, "*exeuntes autem eum vestibus exterioribus . . . corpus ejus cilicio . . . involutum . . . habitumque super indutum monachalem, stamineam videlicet et cucullam reppererunt.*"⁵ In spite of this worthy historian I am inclined to think that the *staminea* was no monastic dress but simply the clerical or canonical black gown. My first reason for holding this to be a black gown reaching to the heels is that otherwise the "*vestes pullae et poderes*," described by Herbert cannot be identified. Some other dark garment reaching to the heels must have projected from beneath the black cappa to justify de Bosham's expression. A second reason is the fact that no other biographer speaks of any monastic habit, except a sleeveless cowl, being found on the corpse. Again the cowl is the only part of the Cistercian dress that we read of his assuming. Lastly, the same word *staminea* occurs

¹ *Vide supra*, p. 530.

³ *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. ii., p. 335.

² Fr. Morris, *Life*, &c., p. 187.

⁴ *Vide supra*, p. 528.

⁵ *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. ii., p. 17.

in another passage of the same writer, and in a place where it can only mean a long robe. Speaking of a vision seen on Salisbury Plain soon after the death of St. Thomas, Benedict tells us that the boy who was favoured with this heavenly sight “obvius habuit in planitie grandi viros tres statura proceros, habitu quasi heremitas, staminiis albis vestitos.”¹ Here the expression white woollen shirts is felt to be inadmissible. The writer must mean white woollen robes, and Canon Robertson, in his glossary appended to this volume, gives “robe” as one of the meanings of “staminea.”² We are not, therefore, bound to render it by a woollen shirt in the other passage. Neither are we compelled to hold that it was a monastic habit, for at that time, when the cappa was closed all round, the long tunic or gown worn by canons would scarcely differ from that worn by monks if we may credit Hélyot.³

There remains another proof of its being a clerical habit, and though indirect, this proof will, I venture to think, have some weight with my readers.

St. Thomas's external appearance was such that, as Herbert of Bosham, with apparent reluctance, informs us, he was in his life-time believed to be a Canon Regular. “Nonnulli eum ob similitudinem vestium suspicati sunt fuisse, sicut vulgo dicitur, regularem canonicum.”⁴ The inference was a very natural one, so long as the axiom stands that “nihil est in intellectu quod non prius fuerit in sensu.” So far as men could trust the sense of sight St. Thomas was habited exactly like a Canon Regular; no other religious habit was visible at any time; the conclusion followed as a matter of course. Let us see what his contemporaries say of his new attire. According to William of Canterbury the Archbishop rejoiced “quia in triplici veste triplicem personam gereret; exteriori clericum &c.”⁵ Here in the word “triplici” this writer and others seem to anticipate the Cistercian cowl which he received at

¹ *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. ii., p. 129.

² *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. ii., p. 464.

³ *Hist. des Ordres religieux*, vol. ii., p. 26.

⁴ *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. iii., p. 196.

⁵ *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. i., p. 10.

Pontigny.¹ The term "clericum" is explained by William a couple of lines lower " . . . quia exterius canonicus pateret" an explanation which shews that, by the "clericalis vestis" which St. Thomas wore habitually, we are to understand the canonical dress. We have evidence of the soundness of this interpretation in the Life by Edward Grim. At one place he says that those, who, after the death of St. Thomas would strip him of his clothes, "sub habitu Canonici Regularis eum . . . reperiunt."² At another place the same writer tells us that "tam ordinem quam habitum Canonici Regularis suscepit et susceptum . . . mirifice pariter cum officio Archiepiscopi conservavit."³ This testimony of the courageous adherent of our saint will be considered later. Gervase, a monk of Canterbury, uses almost similar language. "In exterioribus," he says, "Canonicus apparebat . . . in veste canonica [secutus est] magnum Augustinum."⁴ William Fitz-Stephen informs us that St. Thomas "sub absconso chlamydis canonicalis" wore a cowl and a hair shirt.⁵ The same writer calls these outer garments of a canon, the saint's "every day clothes," "ejus quotidianis vestibus superioribus,"⁶ and in another place says that he wore "habitum . . . supremo canonicalem."⁷ This agreement of the saint's contemporaries in stating that he wore the habit of a Canon Regular is of the greatest value. Even by itself it completely settles all questions about the Archbishop's exterior attire, and enables us to pronounce with more confidence upon the different articles that went to make up his dress. We have a point of comparison, a standard by which to judge. The ancient canonical habit we know; it has been fully described.⁸ In Hélyot's work there is a very fair engraving shewing the dress worn of old by the Canons Regular. Therein we see the black vestis talaris, over that appears the surplice perhaps three inches shorter than the cassock, and above all the black cappa with its

¹ Fr. Morris, *Life, &c.*, p. 79.

² *Rolls*, op. cit., vol. ii., p. 442.

³ *Ibid*, p. 368.

⁴ *Rolls*, *Gervase of Canterbury*, vol. i., p. 172.

⁵ *Rolls*, *Materials, etc.*, vol. iii., p. 147.

⁶ *Ibid*, p. 148.

⁷ *Ibid*, p. 37.

⁸ Tanner, *Notitia Monastica*, pref. xviii.

hood, a couple of inches of the surplice peeping out below the cappa. The cappa has an opening down the middle large enough to let the hands pass through. In short it represents exactly what Herbert de Bosham would lead us to expect.¹ This, if St. Thomas wore the canonical habit of the black Canons of the Priory at Merton, should be a faithful delineation of his dress, and according to this picture we ought to supplement and harmonize the imperfect and puzzling descriptions left us by his first biographers.

My readers will pardon me if I here insert some words from a book I have already made several references to. "The black cappa with lambswool, and the linen surplice," says Fr. Morris, "was not the monastic habit of the monks of Christ Church. It was that of the Black Canons Regular, to which order Merton Abbey belonged. When a boy there at school, St. Thomas had doubtless worn the same habit as the religious among whom he lived. It was therefore natural that, being surrounded by a chapter of religious, and sitting on a throne which had been rarely occupied save by religious, when he sought to show even by his habit that he had devoted himself to the service of God, not being himself a Benedictine, he should resume that habit which he had worn when young, and with which were associated his recollections of strictness and holiness of life."²

Some other motive may also have induced our saint to adopt this habit. Perhaps his confessor Robert the Prior of Merton suggested the idea to him. It was not the first time nor the last that an Archbishop clad as a Canon Regular occupied the throne of St. Augustine. To mention only two instances, less than thirty years before St. Thomas's consecration a Canon Regular was Archbishop of Canterbury, and within thirty years of St. Thomas's death the habit of the Black Canons of Merton was again seen on the primatial throne. The first was William, Prior and Canon of St. Osyth's.³ His

¹ *Vide supra*, p. 528.

² *Life and Martyrdom of St. Thomas*, p. 79.

³ *Rolls, Gervase of Canterbury*, vol. ii., p. 381.

Archdeacon Helewisius, the same historian informs us, was also a Canon Regular.¹ The other was Archbishop Hubert, of whom William of Newburgh says, that "after having received the pall from the Roman Pontiff, he was enthroned; and shortly after, having taken the habit of a canon at Merton, he manifested by his outward garb the religious purpose of his mind."² Hence we gather that even if Dr. Smith, the venerable Bishop of Chalcedon, were wrong in holding that St. Augustine put Canons Regular in his Church at Canterbury,³ even if the clerics brought over by him and by St. Paulinus, never set foot in Christ Church,⁴ even if the Saxon chronicler is mistaken where he states that Aelfric turned the clerics out to make room for the monks,⁵ the canonical habit was no novelty in Canterbury Cathedral, and, doubtless, the good Prior Robert was aware of this.

Prudence also may have had something to do with the selection of this particular dress. If a change was to take place, the Archbishop may have deemed it advisable to adopt a habit which he knew the king did not look upon with disfavour. Besides the respect in which the Canonical Order was then universally held,⁶ special circumstances had made the Black Canons of Merton acceptable to Henry II. "The good Canons Regular of Merton Abbey," says Fr. Morris, speaking of the time when St. Thomas was Chancellor, "were taken into the king's favour now that a child of their house had become a royal favourite. Fitzstephen tells us that the king completed the Abbey Church and endowed it, and that he would sometimes spend the three last days of Holy Week with the community."⁷ Before leaving the king—I will quote a passage from an old writer, which tends to show in what respect Henry II. held the Canons Regular, and what Order he considered St. Thomas connected with, judging from his habit: "Cum Henricus secundus Rex de nece S. Th. Cant^{sis}. diffamatus in expiationem propriae famae et sancti martyris

¹ *Rolls, Gervase of Canterbury*, vol. ii., p. 383.

² *Church Historians of England*, vol. iv., part ii., p. 611.

³ *Hélyot*, op. cit., vol. ii., p. 137.

⁴ *Rolls, Walter of Coventry*, vol. i., p. 20.

⁵ *Rolls, Anglo-Saxon Chronicle*, vol. i., p. 244; vol. ii., p. 106.

⁶ *Rolls, Giraldus Cambri.*, vol. vi., pp. 46, 47. ⁷ *Life, &c.*, p. 33.

honorem de fundando monasterio in honorem ipsius martyris cogitasset, ac etiam votum fecisset, parcere volens propriis sumptibus, exactis clericis [canonicis]¹ saecularibus, in eo canonicos regulares statuit [auctoritate summi Pontificis²] *ratus sancto Martyri pergratum futurum si illius habitum honestasset.*—Polydorus Virgilius, *Hist. Angl.* l. 13, sub an. 1178.³

It would be interesting to know whether St. Thomas, like Archbishop Hubert, went to Merton Abbey to be invested with the habit. It would seem the most natural thing to do, but on this point all the biographers whom I have consulted, are silent. In the *Officia Propria* of the Canons Regular, we are told that after he was created Archbishop, “cum timeret in alto periclitari, habitum et institutum assumens Canonico-
rum Regularium in dicto monasterio de Maretonia, &c.” But I have not seen any evidence corroborative of this statement concerning Merton.

We must conclude. We have endeavoured, so far as the works at our disposal would allow us, to draw a true and distinct picture of the exterior dress habitually worn by St. Thomas after his elevation to the See of Canterbury. We have shown whence he took his new attire, and have suggested some motives which may have influenced his choice. Had the Thomas Saga, which is based on the only life written by a Canon Regular, and Garnier been within my reach, my researches might have been more fruitful. But what I have written will, I trust, be a help in their meditations to the devout clients of this glorious member of the patriotic Triad whom the Canonical Order loves to honour amongst its saints, Thomas of Canterbury, Laurence of Dublin, and Peter Fourier of Lorraine.

I cannot finish without expressing my best thanks to the Rev. Fr. Morris, S.J., who, amidst all the work which the cause of our martyrs imposes on him, has given me much assistance in the elucidation of my subject.

GILBERT HIGGINS, C.R.L.

¹ *Rolls, Matt. Paris. Chron. majora*, vol. ii., p. 300.

² *Rolls*, *ibid.*

³ Pennotto, *Hist. Tripartita*, p. 385.

THOUGHTS ON THE VIATICUM.

THERE is one phase of the sacramental life of our Divine Redeemer which probably does not engage its due share of the devotion of the faithful. *Jesu sacramentado*—to use the Portuguese phrase which a holy man, Father Augustus Law, S.J., desired to see naturalised among us—Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament is not content with being offered up as our victim, with being received by us in Holy Communion, or with abiding constantly amongst us in the tabernacle, ready to receive us when we find time to pay Him a visit. No, all this is not enough for our Emmanuel, our “God with us”; for, when we are no longer able to visit Him, He comes to visit us; He desires to be Himself in return carried to the bedside of the sick; and, when they are sick unto death, He becomes their viaticum.

It is strange that this last title is confined to the holy Communion of the Christian deathbed. Viaticum means provision for a journey, and our journey seems then to be almost over. The Blessed Sacrament is indeed the viaticum of the whole Christian life, food for all our journey across the wilderness of this world. “I will not send them away fasting lest they should faint on the way.” That compassionate word was spoken out in the desert before the miracle which was the last and almost the most striking type of the Eucharistic banquet and which led on to the promise of that food from heaven. The name, therefore, of Viaticum would be most appropriate for the Blessed Eucharist all through the journey, rough or smooth, long or short, which lies between the first Communion of happy childhood and the last Communion of a Christian deathbed, still happier, we trust. But the journey is not quite finished yet: a short stage, but a difficult one, remains, and we still, more than ever, need all the help we can get.

That Evangelist who has interpreted the tenderness of Jesus so fully as to be called the Apostle of the Sacred Heart, utters at the very beginning of his Gospel that terrible reproach, “He came unto his own, and His own received

Him not. In none of our relations towards our Divine Redeemer is this more sadly true than as regards the obligations arising out of His sacramental presence among us, especially outside the times when He is offered in sacrifice and received in Communion. Is there any point in our spiritual life that suggests keener self-reproach than our manner of visiting our Blessed Lord in the tabernacle? Some have tried to excite their fervour in such visits by imagining that they may thus entitle themselves, in a special and even] a literal sense, to a share in the welcome which our Lord has promised to those to whom He will be able to say: "I was sick and in prison, and ye did visit Me." Pious pictures represent the Prisoner of Love as barred and fettered in the tabernacle; and the pious muse has asked indignantly:

How do we treat the Prisoner of our shrine?
 Ah! does He never from His altar-throne
 Look round for us and find Himself alone?
 Alone! though angels round His prison shine,
 Yet does His heart for our poor love so pine
 That 'mid their homage He feels sad and lone
 And mourns the cold unkindness we have shown,
 A poor return for all His love divine.¹

But we are thinking rather of what Jesus in his sacramental life does for us than of what we should do for Him; and what therefore is it that on His part corresponds with our visits to the Blessed Sacrament? The visits which He in turn pays to us when we are unable to visit His holy temple. Those who are bound down on the bed of sickness, especially when it is to be their deathbed, can say to our Lord with this meaning also: "I was sick and in prison, and Thou didst visit me." Thus does Jesus continue still to perform one of those corporal works of mercy to which so much of His public and no doubt much of His hidden life was devoted. Jesus visiting the sick.

There are indulgences for those who in Catholic countries accompany the Blessed Sacrament when borne publicly to the dying. Many of the pious faithful, if they adverted to it, would be glad to accompany our Divine Lord in spirit when

¹ Sister Mary Stanislaus MacCarthy.

the priest carries Him by stealth to the chamber of the sick, less openly than He was borne in the Blessed Virgin's arms when St. Joseph fled with them across the desert. That word of the Gospel is verified here: *transiens per medium illorum ibat*—"passing through the midst of them He went his way" (*Luke iv. 30*). At that time He escaped from the malice of His enemies, but now He hides, from the unbelief indeed of those who dare to "find His saying hard," but also from the adoration of His faithful servants, in order that He may the more freely, at every hour of the day and night, visit in their own homes those who are no longer able to come to Him. Those to whom He thus comes may address to Him literally those words of the centurion which have been blessed and honoured in being applied so many millions and millions of times to our Eucharistic Lord when He comes forth from the tabernacle to seek the hospitality of our hearts¹: "Lord, I am not worthy that Thou shouldst enter under my roof."

It would be well for us to meditate occasionally on this startling proof of the divine condescension. It might come home to some hearts as a peculiarly touching and pathetic devotion to take part with the invisible retinue of angels in what one might venture to think of as the sick calls of the Sacred Heart. At any rate it would be an excellent exercise of faith and piety to pray with special fervour that those anointed ministers of the Eucharistic mysteries whose privilege it is—so awful though so amiable a privilege—to bear the Viaticum to the dying, may habitually cherish the feelings which we have tried to express in the following lines:—

Lord, one of thy poor creatures is yearning for Thee now.
 She cannot 'mid the faithful before thy altar bow
 When at the *Non sum dignus* they strike their breasts, and say:
 "Lord, Lord, I am not worthy, yet come to me, I pray."

Full oft she thus received Thee, but now she captive lies
 Chained to the bed of sickness, and lovingly she cries:
 "I cannot come, O Jesus, but Thou wilt come to me—
 Ah! how thy angels marvel such boundless love to see!"

¹ "Et pour l'hospitalité d'un cœur celle des cieux." Octave Ducros.

Then I the Lord's anointed His tabernacle ope—
 No clouds of burning incense, no snowy alb or cope—
 The pyx within my bosom I reverently lay,
 And so, a new Christ-bearer, I take my lonely way.

Not lonely: He is with me who dried the widow's tear,
 Yet through Judea journeyed unrecognized as here.
 Not lonely: angels worship their hidden Lord who speeds,
 As Mary first sped with Him, to help His creature's needs.

No tinkling bell gives warning, no tapers light the road;
 By all but me unheeded He seeketh the abode
 Of this His lowly handmaid who doth her heart prepare
 To welcome Him who cometh to ask a lodging there.

Is this her last Communion, or shall the ebb-tide turn?
 God knows. But may her bosom, made pure and purer, burn
 With love and faith and fervour, that she with joy may greet
 Her Lord, or soon or later, upon His judgment-seat.

Good Shepherd, who hast set me to tend and feed thy fold,
 In spite of faith so feeble, in spite of love so cold:
 May I in turn receive Thee when my last day is reached,
 And be my priesthood's verdict: *he practised what he preached.*

Again for her I pray Thee to whom I bear Thee now,
 And for each dying creature, the death-damp on his brow;
 Yes, all whom at this moment the deadly chills benumb:
 O Jesus, be their Jesus, their true Viaticum.

In these lines the pronouns can easily be made masculine if we have to substitute "servant" for "handmaid" in the fifth stanza. One of them alludes, too, obscurely to St. Christopher, to whom the pious legend assigns the privilege of having once carried the Redeemer across the torrent near which the giant kept guard. This saint may thus be considered the patron of that phase of the priestly life, of which we are now thinking.

The preceding verses regard the Viaticum of others, but at least two poets have expressed in verse their own feelings, in receiving the Viaticum. In a small edition of the *Opere Sacre dell' Abate Pietro Metastasio*, the last page gives the following as the prayer made by the author on the occasion

of the Holy Viaticum being borne to him during a grievous illness in February, 1780 :

Eterno Genitor,
Io t'offro il tuo figlio
Che in pegno del suo amor
Si vuole a me donar.

A lui rivolgi il ciglio ;
Mira chi t'offro, e poi
Niega, Signor, se puoi,
Niega di perdonar.

This may be thus paraphrased less lyrically in English :

Eternal Father, reigning high above,
Thine own dear Son I offer up to Thee ;
For He hath deigned to give Himself to me
As a fond pledge and token of His love.

Father eternal, bend on him Thine eye !
He, God made man, has shed His blood for men.
See Whom I offer Thee, and then—and then
Forgiveness, if Thou canst, O Lord ! deny.

But if Metastasio made this his Viaticum prayer, he seems to have plagiarised from himself ; for this same book, four pages earlier, gives the following lines as the conclusion of his very unpsalmlike paraphrase of the Miserere :—

Pur troppo è ver che reo
Di mille colpe io sono :
Ma meco serbo un dono
Di queste assai maggior.

La tua bontà mi feo
Degno di tanto, ed io
Sequendo il tuo desio
Te l' offro, O Genitor.

T'offro lo stesso Figlio
Che già d' amore in pegno
Ristretto in picciol segno
Si voule a me donar.

A lui rivolgi il ciglio ;
Mira chi t' offro, e poi,
O gran Signor, se puoi,
Lascia di perdonar.

Though we have turned this into a different metre from the preceding translation, the close similarity between the two passages of the Italian poet cannot be concealed:—

Too true alas! the guilt and shame
Of thousand sins are on my soul,
Yet as my own I hold and claim
A gift that can outweigh the whole.

Thy gracious bounty, Lord, doth deign
This gift so precious to bestow;
And now I offer it again,
O Father, since Thou wiltest so.

Thy very Son I offer Thee,
Who, as a pledge of love divine,
Has willed to give Himself to me
Confined within a lowly sign.

Let but thy eyes upon Him fall!
See Whom I offer Thee, and then—
Then, if Thou canst, great Lord of all!
Refuse to pardon me again.

The other poet of the Viaticum is our own Callanan, the sweet singer of Gougaune Barra.

In the appendix to his translation of Father Lanzi's *Visits to the Blessed Sacrament*, Father C. P. Meehan¹ gave with several original poems by Richard Dalton Williams, a poem written by Jeremiah Joseph Callanan, after receiving the Viaticum at Lisbon, whither he had gone in the vain hope of eluding death.

“Thou dear and mystic Shadow before whose form I kneel,
I tremble as I think upon the glories Thou dost veil,
And ask myself can one who late the way of darkness trod
Meet face to face and heart to heart, his sin-avenging God?”

I quote the opening stanza from memory, and will not go in search of the rest. For both the Irish poet and the Italian have used terms that apply equally to every Communion as well as to the last. The same fault is to be found with the prayer given in some prayer books “to be said after receiving the Holy Viaticum.” A very useful suggestion

¹ He mentions in his preface that the poet's nephew, the Right Rev. Dean Neville of Cork, gave him the poem for publication.

made by some spiritual writers is to try sometimes to receive the Blessed Eucharist in our ordinary Communion as if it were indeed our last Communion. May we, each in God's good time, receive our Viaticum with as innocent and as happy a heart as we received our first Communion long ago!

MATTHEW RUSSELL, S.J.

THEOLOGICAL QUESTIONS.

QUASI-DOMICILE.

"In this part of the country it is customary for servant girls to hire for six months, or as they say, 'for the half year.' During the time of service, *outside their native parish*, many of them get married. Will you kindly say, in the next number of the RECORD, whether the Parish Priest of the place in which they are hired for six months, or 'the half year,' can validly assist at their marriage to a boy who resides in a different parish?"

"CANONICUS ARMACANUS."

"A girl hires for 'a half year,' and shortly after entering service becomes acquainted with a young man also living in the town, and hired for 'a half year.' Neither the boy nor girl are natives of the parish in which the two are now hired.

"Can these two be married *validly* by the Parish Priest of the place in which they are hired?"

"The question is a very practical one. The boy and girl *certainly intend* to remain for the period which *they* call 'a half year.'

"It sometimes happens that this period is the 'major anni pars,' sometimes the 'minor anni pars.' There could be no question of the validity in the first case, but even in the second, when the period is a few days less than a half year, many think that the marriage would be valid, and they reason thus: 1st. They have the 'habitatio incepta,' which is required; and, secondly, they have an intention of remaining in the place for '*a half year*,' the period for which they engaged. This being so, it is impossible for them to get outside the limits of the parish before the 'major anni pars' has passed. They, therefore, have the intention of remaining for the greater part of the year. The fact of the period which they call 'a half year' being less than a half year by a few days when mathematically determined, would not, when they don't advert to the point, interfere with their

having a *real* intention of remaining for half a year. Would you, then, be good enough to give your opinion on this important case? 'Can a boy and girl who are engaged as servants *for a half year*, who have entered in their term of service, and really intend to remain in the place for the term for which they engaged, be *validly* married by the parish priest of the parish in which they are hired?'
 "SACERDOS."

The question stated by our respected correspondents is most practical. We shall endeavour to set forth in reply the conclusions which authoritative decisions and the opinions of Canonists seem to warrant. No wonder this point should excite discussion. For, in addition to the reasons above assigned, it is remarkable that the authors of certain leading text books, writing within the last few years, still think that an intention of remaining for four or five months together with the inception of actual residence may suffice in order to acquire a quasi-domicile. This certainly appears strange in view of a well-known decision of the Holy Office given in 1867 to the Bishops of England and America and afterwards communicated to the Irish prelates in answer to a postulation from the Synod of Maynooth. In it an intention of remaining for the "*major anni pars*" is distinctly required. Possibly some of the writers just referred to were not aware of this document's existence.

In any case, seeing that an instruction of such precision has been given so recently for our guidance, *ante factum* marriage should not be solemnized with dependence on the *parochus loci famulatus*, unless its words are *fully* verified. *Post factum* we should not feel sure that the marriage is invalid when either party intended remaining for a "half year," even in the less exact sense mentioned by one of our correspondents. If a person had purposed staying for a half year literally taken, we think it highly probable he thereby acquired a quasi-domicile. The reason is not merely that so careful a writer as Lehmkuhl holds the view above-mentioned, but that many Canonists seem to equiparate in this context the two phrases, "*major anni pars*" and "*dimidia anni pars*," often connecting them by a "*seu*." But we wish to remind our second correspondent, that the law looks to connection with the residence, and not with the parish.

SPONSORSHIP BY PROXY.

"A person who has consented to be sponsor in Baptism, does not arrive at the appointed time, I assume that he has not withdrawn his consent; meantime, can he, *without his knowledge*, be represented by proxy, and thereby become a valid sponsor? "QUÆRENS."

No. A procurator, to act validly, must go through the ceremonies in the name and by the mandate of the sponsor. *Sine mandato*, he is in no proper sense a proxy at all.

SECRET SOCIETIES AND THE CONFESSIONAL.

"As the question of secret societies is a practical one, may I ask you to explain what exactly is meant by certain words which are found in the fourth of the excommunications which are reserved *simpliciter Romano Pontifici*, viz., '*earumve occultos coryphaeos adduces non denunciante, donec non denuntiaverint.*'"

"What I wish to know is: (1) Must a member—say of the Fenian or other such society—make known the secret leaders of such society before he may be absolved? If such is the case I fear it would lead to great difficulties in dealing with a member of such societies.

"(2) If a person refuses to take the oath, but in all other respects, or at least in some respects acts as a member, or gives favour or encouragement to sworn members, does he incur the excommunication? Such a case may easily happen.

"(3) Some persons are under an impression that it is only unlawful secret societies, *bound by an oath*, which are excommunicated. I suppose such is not the case.

I. Our correspondent will find some of the points he raises briefly explained in the IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD for February, 1886. We there discussed the extent to which the obligation of denouncing secret heads of condemned societies exists at present, adding that a confessor should weigh carefully the advantages and disadvantages likely to result before admonishing his penitent of this duty. Ignorance of the prohibition excuses from formal sin against the ecclesiastical law. Ignorance of the censure prevents excommunication from being incurred. Hence, on the general principles of monition, a confessor should abstain

from making known the full gist of the law to one who cannot be relied on for compliance therewith, unless a denunciation be necessary in order to prevent some great calamity, or where the public weal is at stake. But if excommunication has been already incurred, the censure ceases only when the precept has been complied with. Obviously, too, the duty of denouncing the heads or leaders of condemned societies is incumbent on anyone who knows them as much as on penitent members of these organizations.

II. The censure is incurred in this case if the law be known. The words "*iisdem sectis favorem qualemcumque prestantes*" of the Bulla Apostolicæ Sedis are plainly most comprehensive. Moreover a much stronger reason is often present for admonishing "*faventes*" who happen to be ignorant of their obligation than "*nondenunciantes*" similarly situated. For, apart from a proximate danger of grave sin which may arise owing to this connection, if they be admitted to the sacraments without withdrawing their support from a condemned society, serious scandal not unfrequently follows as a natural result. In this respect "*faventes*" are only a degree less difficult to direct than actual members. But danger of scandal is, as is manifest, more generally present if those who openly belong to a forbidden society are permitted to receive the sacraments. It is chiefly on account of this evil consequence that in many places members of such organizations are always admonished before absolution, even if little hope be entertained of a favourable result. Where, however, proximate danger of sin and scandal can be considered absent, the principles already explained with reference to "*non denunciantes*" will apply.

III. The censure falls on societies directed against either Church or State, whether secret or public, whether oath-bound or otherwise combined.

A CASE UNDER THE FASTING OBLIGATION.

"Sempronius sacerdos, ob infirmitates et laboriosum ministerium, a lege abstinentiæ et jejunii *non dispensatus sed exemptus*, nonnumquam in eodem prandio infra quadragesimam, ostreis primum vel

sardinis et postea carnibus vescitur. Qua de re objurgatur a Caio sacerdote, tanquam transgressor legis qua fidelibus omnibus prohibetur promiscuitas carnis et piscium.

“Cui respondet Sempronius, allegando sequentes rationes :

“1. Per decem et septem saecula, etiam tempore strictissimae quadragesimalis abstinentioniae, nunquam Ecclesia sollicita fuit de alimentario regimine eorum qui erant a communibus legibus exempti.

“2. Prohibitio miscendi carnem et pisces fuit recenter instituta non per modum novi oneris, sed tanquam pristini rigoris vestigium et memoriale, quando summi Pontifices permittere coeperunt usum carnis iis qui valent ab ea abstinere, et ad id tenerentur, nisi interveniret *dispensatio* proprie dicta.

“3. Nequaquam autem ista prohibitio spectat ad eos qui a communibus legibus sunt *exempti*. Nam (a) sedis apostolicae decisiones non satis clare tam singularem innovationem statuunt; (b) ratio *aequalitatis* inter validos et invalidos refutatione seria non indiget; (c) satis absonum videretur Ecclesiam *quando et quia* jugum robustis humeris impositum alleviabat, creasse simul pro debilibus humeris onus usque ad illud tempus inauditum; (d) non magis nunc decet quam olim decuit, supremam auctoritatem communibus regulationibus subicere stomachos, quorum plerique praesumendi sunt hujusmodi regulationum incapaces.

“Caius autem argumenta quaerit ad pertinaciam Sempronii frangendam.”

Quaeret Caius et ni fallor argumenta non inveniet. Si enim Sempronius a lege tum abstinentioniae tum jejunii sit *exemptus*, quo jure prohibetur permixtio? Tempore quadragesimali *dispensatus* carnes et pisces sine dubio simul sumere nequit. Hoc, autem, accidit eo quod sub hac conditione secundum legem generalem ecclesiae conceditur dispensatio. At vero nimis durum esse videretur restrictionem illam urgere ita ut attingat Sempronium, qui alioquin est a lege abstinentioniae et jejunii prorsus *exemptus*. Nonne fideles, qui a lege abstinentioniae diebus Veneris, decurrente anno sunt *dispensati* simul piscibus et carnibus vesci possunt? Idem, ad minimum a pari, et Sempronio licere durante toto anno etiam tempore quadragesimali nobis videtur, saltem donec contrarium auctoritative statuatur. Notandum vero est quaestionem supponere virum egregium esse ab utraque lege *exemptum*.

P.O'D.

THE CHURCH ABROAD.

If it is true that the enemies of the Church have never been more treacherous in their attacks or more perfidious in the manner of conducting their unholy warfare than during the present century, it is likewise a subject of pride and consolation to all Catholics that the interests of their faith have been guarded by defenders so worthy of the great cause. The august edifice has been furnished by Providence round about with champions capable of protecting it against its most unsparing enemies. In this never-ceasing struggle carried on by the "city of God" against all the powers of the world, some are but common soldiers, who lend indeed a willing hand, or play, it may be, a manly part in their small and narrow sphere, but are held withal by many ties of family and worldly interests from doing much effective work beyond attending to the wants of their own souls. That, no doubt, is a great deal, and happy are they who can do so much well. But others are not satisfied to stop here. They are leaders in the van, worthy members of the Church militant, who think only of the victory to be gained, who are always on the watch, and whose leisure is ever devoted to study and calculate the best means of defence. It is always with unspeakable regret that the Church sees such leaders disappear from the scene of their labours, particularly when "having borne the burden of the day and the heat" they took a long and noble part in the struggles of their time. Such was the feeling that pervaded Catholic France a few years ago when the indefatigable Louis Veuillot was called away. His loss was mourned as a calamity by all, except, indeed, the "Liberal Catholics" or "Catholic Whigs" of French national life against whom he had laboured so long and before whom he kept always floating the sacred banner of principle. Such is also the sentiment that is felt at present throughout Catholic Italy at the death of the theologian Margotti, who for more than forty years had taken such a conspicuous part, as a journalist and publicist, in every battle (and they were many) that had to be fought in defence of the Church and the Papacy in Italy.

The sorrow felt at his decease by Italian Catholics can well be judged from the touching circular addressed by Signor Mastracchi, editor of the *Voce della Verità*, and the Marchese Crispolti, editor of the *Osservatore Romano*, to their fellow-journalists and to the Roman people.

"The loss of this distinguished publicist, though deeply felt and deplored by all Italy, is particularly sorrowful and sensible for the

eternal city—for that Rome, the seat of the Papacy and the centre of Catholicity, which for about forty years he defended with such unyielding faith and with an energy that never failed. If Turin, which was the chief seat of his labours, is in tears at his death-bed or bowed down with grief as his bier is borne through her streets, Rome who counted him amongst her most valiant defenders cannot allow him to depart without paying a last tribute of affection to his soul.

“On us, humble members of the noble phalanx of Catholic journalists who venerated in Giacomo Margotti their model and master, has been conferred the honour of taking the initiative by fixing for the thirtieth day after his death a solemn funeral to which we invite not only our colleagues of the daily and periodical Catholic press, but also the number, which is very great in Rome, of admirers of the virtues and of the genius of our dear and illustrious friend.”

Giacomo Margotti was born at San Remo, in the province of Porto Maurizio, in 1823. He made his early studies in the Seminary of Ventimiglia and afterwards pursued a higher course in the University of Genoa. He was proposed by his bishop, Monsignor Giambattista Biale, to King Charles Albert of Sardinia, for the *Accademia di Soperga*, in which he was received and where he remained, admired and beloved by everyone, till the year 1849. It is easy to imagine with what anxious earnestness the attention of the world and especially of the Catholic world, was turned towards Turin during those years that intervened between 1848 and 1860. The tension of feeling in Italy itself was naturally as high as possible. It was at the commencement of that troubled period that Margotti entered upon his career as a journalist. With Mgr. Moreno, Bishop of Ivrea, and the Marchese Biragó di Vische, he founded the journal or periodical *L'Armonia*, with the object of defending the Pope and the Church. For nearly fifteen years he worked at this uncompromising organ of Catholic interest, having as colleagues in the editorship Mgr. Alimonda, now Cardinal Archbishop of Turin, Mgr. Guglielmo Audisio, Marchese Fabio Morea, Marchese Gustavo di Cavour (a relative of the statesman), and the Abbate Rosmini.

The Government of Freemasons that ruled Sardinia, under Cavour as Premier, in 1859 suppressed *L'Armonia* as being dangerous to the welfare of the State. This act was characteristic of those politicians who clamour for unlimited liberty of the press when there is question of an attack upon Christian institutions, but who are always ready to suppress the voice of truth when it becomes inconvenient to themselves and their projects. Margotti, however, continued

giving expression to his views in *Il Piemonte* until 1863, when by the advice of Pius IX. he founded the *Unità Cattolica*, which he directed up to the time of his death.

These were indeed troubled times in Italy, which witnessed the campaigns of Goito and Custozza, of Magenta and Solferino, of Melazzo and Mentana, which saw Charles Albert retire downcast and almost broken-hearted from the struggle against Austria, to make way for his ambitious and unscrupulous son Victor Emmanuel. It was during that time that Pius IX., who loved Italy with all the fulness of his great heart, was obliged, in pain and sorrow, to condemn the unjust plans and the guilty methods of a large section of his countrymen, that Mazzini founded the "Giovine Italia," that Santa Rosa died without the Sacraments, that La Marmora led 15,000 Italians to the Crimea, and Garibaldi plundered the two Sicilies. It was during this period also that Gioberti wrote his *Primato Morale e Civile degli Italiani*, and Count Cesare Balbo *Le Speranze d'Italia*, that the advanced patriots started the *Risorgimento*, that the Congress of Paris endeavoured to subdue the persistent clamours of Sardinia, that Manzoni's unworthy son-in-law, Massimo d'Azeglio and his still more famous successor, Count Cavour, repeated day after day in the Parliament of Turin their deadly onslaughts on the Church and its rulers.

These were stormy times for a journalist in Italy. But Margotti rose to every emergency. Every turn of affairs for good or evil brought from him impulses of eloquence and impassioned appeals to the best instincts and the noblest traditions of Italian Catholics. His words had enormous weight with all classes of his countrymen. The great Catholic soul manifested itself more clearly year after year, and at the same time laid bare before the world the pure and noble heart of a true Italian patriot. He was the unsparing enemy of evil principles and unworthy acts, but he loved his fellow-men without distinction, and with a large-hearted Christian sincerity. His disinterested motives and high-minded conception of the duties of his profession gained for him the esteem and respect even of his bitterest opponents. It is no wonder to find even in the anti-clerical *Italia*, the day after his death the following tribute to his memory:—

"He was our enemy every day and every hour for nearly forty years, yet to the man of lofty intelligence and to the valiant writer, who was the glory of the Italian press, and had no equal in his profession, it is a duty of journalistic brotherhood which we perform to-day to send to his deathbed a word of sincere and gentle sympathy, (un pensiero di compianto sincero e gentile.)"

It is almost unnecessary to say that Margotti was held in particular affection and esteem by the two Pontiffs, Pius IX. and Leo XIII. The former, a few months before he died, sent him a pen of gold, through Mgr. Mermillod, Bishop of Lausanne and Geneva, and Leo XIII., after having written to him two laudatory briefs in 1880 and 1881, sent him many other tokens of his esteem, and a last apostolic blessing before his death.

Besides his contributions to the above-mentioned journals and to various Italian reviews and periodicals, Margotti published several other works of more lasting value. In 1851 he wrote *Il Processo di Nepomuceno Nuytz, professore di diritto Canonico nell' Università di Torino*; in 1855 *Alcune considerazioni sulla separazione della Chiesa dallo Stato in Piemonte*; in 1857 *Le Vittorie della Chiesa nei primi anni del Pontificato di Pio IX.*; in 1863 *Le Consolazioni del Santo Padre Pio IX. nelle feste del terzo centenario del Concilio di Trento*; in 1867 *Memorie per la Storia dei nostri tempi dal Congresso di Parigi nel 1856 ai primi giorni del 1863*: and in 1877 *Pio IX. e il suo Episcopato nelle diocesi di Spoleto e d'Imola*.

It was the delight of Giacomo Margotti to train young journalists, particularly laymen, in the delicate art of controversy, that while urging with all the powers of earnestness and conviction the unassailable rights to which the Italian Catholics were entitled, they might always observe the courteous forms and gentle Christian manners which give a charm even to polemics, and raise Catholic journalism above the common place level of the ordinary daily press. Though an ecclesiastic himself, he well knew the value of lay assistance in the cause of Catholic truth, and often reminded his readers of the words of Joseph de Maistre (*Du Pape; Discours Préliminaire*): "We live in one of the greatest of religious epochs in which every man, who is able, is in duty bound to bring a stone to the august edifice, the plans of which are visibly designed. Every science owes something, and in these days especially should pay a tithe at least to Him from whom all science comes: for, 'He is the God of Sciences, and it is he who prepares all our thoughts.'—'Deus scientiarum dominus est, et ipsi praeeparantur cogitationes.'—*Reg.* 1, ch. ii.) The priest who defends religion does his duty, no doubt, and deserves all admiration, but in the eyes of a number of inconsiderate and prejudiced people he appears to be engaged in his own cause, and though his good faith is beyond question, every observer may perceive that the unbeliever is less suspicious of the man of the world, and allows himself to be approached by him with less repugnance."

The demonstration of sympathy at the funeral of the great journalist was, making allowance for official absentees, worthy of old times in Catholic Turin.

The necessity of thus keeping on the battle of Catholicism in the Press has been emphasized by the Holy Father in a recent letter to the Catholic Congress, assembled at Lucca, in which he says (*Vid. Osservatore Romano*, May 13th):—

“The condition of things and of the present time urgently demand that all true sons of the Church should take care to spread as much as possible among every order of citizens the helps that are necessary to Christian life, to advance the instruction of Christian youth, to propagate sound doctrine through means of the Press, to support and aid by every effort the societies of workingmen that are organized on a Christian basis.”

Among various contributions to Catholic literature of another kind, we can only mention the following works which have recently appeared:—

Récits d'un voyage en Palestine et en Syrie à travers l'Égypte et le Sinai, par M. l'Abbé Raboisson. (Paris: Librairie de Saint Paul, Rue Cassette). Biblical critics praise this work, as containing much new and valuable archæological information about Egypt and Sinai. Another work, *Jerusalem, Souvenir d'un voyage en terre Sainte*, par J. T. de Belloc (Paris: Victor Palmé), is an interesting account of a pilgrimage of one thousand Frenchmen who sailed from Marseilles to the Holy Land in 1884.

Continuazione della Storia della Chiesa Cattolica dall' Abbate Rohrbacher. Scritta da Monsignor di Pietro Balan. (Torino: Giacinto Marietti.) This volume continues Rohrbacher's history to the end of the pontificate of Pope Pius IX. Being to a large extent contemporary history, it is naturally very interesting. The Belgian firm, Desclée and Lefebvre, are publishing in a regular series the works of Cardinal Capecepatro. The third volume of the series just published, is the *Storia di San Pier Damiano e del Suo Tempo*. The name of the illustrious Cardinal who for more than twenty years has commanded the respect of his countrymen without distinction, and the other biographies of saints so well known in English speaking countries, are the best recommendation that can be given of his *Storia di San Pier Damiano*.

In the metaphysical work, *Constitution de l'être*, M. E. Domet de Vorges has collected his articles in the *Annales Catholiques* in which he treats of the method to be followed in metaphysics, the origin of

metaphysical notions and distinctions, the scholastic theory of *power and act*, of existence and essence, of matter and form, of substance and accidents (Paris, 20 Rue de la Chaise).

The history of the Vatican Council by Mgr. Cecconi, Archbishop of Florence has been translated into French by M. l'Abbé Bonhomme, Curé de Saint Jean-Baptiste de Grenelle in Paris, with the assistance of M. Duvillard, curate in the same parish. It is published by Lecoffre, Rue Bonaparte, Paris.

La Ligue et les Papes is the title of a book that has appeared in France by Comte Henri de l'Epinois. This work is full of valuable documents taken from the archives of France and the Vatican which scatter to the wind many notions of the Protestants regarding the relations of the legates Morosini and Gaetani with the Dukes of Guise and Mayenne, King Henry III., Henry of Navarre, and Philip II of Spain.

J. F. HOGAN.

DOCUMENTS.

LETTER OF HIS HOLINESS LEO XIII. TO THE ARCHBISHOP OF COLOGNE.

SUMMARY.

Constant and active interest of his Holiness in the affairs of the Church in Prussia. His frequent letters to the Emperor, the Prince Imperial and the Archbishop of Cologne on this subject. Much improvement effected in the position of Catholics in Prussia—bishops restored to their Sees, parish priests to their parishes, seminaries re-established, religious Orders recalled. These salutary changes largely owing to the interference of his Holiness. His vigilance and supervision will be continued to secure further improvements.

It is still necessary to furnish to the Government the names of priests nominated to parishes. This matter is at present the subject of negotiations between the Holy See and the Ministry of Prussia.

His Holiness promises to continue to defend the Catholics of Prussia with vigilance and charity.

VENERABILI FRATRI PHILIPPO ARCHIEPISCOPO COLONIENSI.

LEO PP. XIII.

Ex litteris tuis xiii. Cal. April. datis facile agnovimus, id quod iam erat Nobis persuasum, maximae tibi curae esse rei catholicae in

patria tua statum. Idque tibi laudi libentes damus : propterea quod iste animus, commune bonum tam studiose appetens, congruit cum tuae dignitatis gradu, nec est alienus temporibus, quibus nunc apud vos Ecclesia defungitur. Nostrarum vero partium arbitramur esse cum tibi ad ea respondere, quae vis ipse cognoscere, tum palam ostendere quid Sedes Apostolica sentiat de ea rogatione nuperrima, quae ad res catholicas pertinet in regno Borussiae ordinandas : de qua ipsa aliquot S. R. E. Cardinales sententiam rogavimus. Nos quidem vel ab initio Pontificatus multum et serio cogitare de vobis instituimus, atque, ut ratio Nostri ferebat officii, consilium cepimus omnia conari, si qua ratione liceret pacatam tranquillitatem cum libertate legitima catholico nomini restituere. Cuiusmodi voluntatem Nostram litteris consignavimus, nec solum iis quas vel ad augustum Imperatorem, vel ad serenissimum Dynastam dedimus, sed iis etiam quas ad tuum in Archiepiscopatu Coloniensi decessorem proximum misimus.

Quamobrem, ut erat proclive factu, a diuturna sollicitudine respirare, laetamque in spem ingredi coepimus, ubi placere intelleximus, contrarias libertati catholicorum leges, emendandi causa, retractari : quo facto iter ad componenda dissidia muniebatur. Quae vero consecuta sunt, magis ad spes augendas, quam ad infirmandas valuerunt. Partim enim data est, partim datur temperandis iis legibus opera : et quamquam non est impetratum de omnibus rebus, quas merito catholici adipisci cupiunt, plura tamen constituta sunt, quibus efficitur eorum conditio melior. Et sane illud vides quanti sit, Romani Pontificis auctoritatem posse iam libere exserere atque explicare sese in multiplici et vario rerum genere, quae Sedi Apostolicae vel cum potestate publica, vel cum Episcopis populoque catholico intercedant. Deinde, quod tam sollicito studio expetebamus, plurium Dioeceseon consultum est regimini, longinqua orbitate sublata : parocciis ad magnum numerum sui curiones praepositi : impedimenta, quae potestatem episcopalem in disciplina regenda exercendisque judiciis prohibuerant, amota. Restituta unum iam annum videmus Clericorum Seminaria quatuor : proximeque alterum instituendi in Limburgensibus, alterum Osnabrugensibus facultas erit : quibus dioecesebus Seminarium suum nec sit, ex iis dioecesebus alumnos alio intra regni fines in Seminariis instituendos mitti licebit. Semel autem religiosorum sodalium revocatis vel aliquibus ordinibus, manabit latius vitae actio christiana, plurimique ad perfectionem absolutionemque virtutis niti sine offensione poterunt. Qua re et catholicorum satis factum est honestissimae voluntati, constat enim

ordines religiosos in magno eorum fuisse desiderio, et ipsi civitati ad caritatis officia, ad fingendos mores populares, ad omne humanitatis lumen provehendum utilia adjumenta comparata. Hac igitur ratione facile intelligis, Venerabilis Frater, immitibus illis legibus aut abrogari, aut certe tantum derogari, ut tolerari minus moleste posse videantur. Nihilominus erit Apostolicae Sedis summam providentiam semper adhibere, omniaque circumspicere, ut ejusmodi rerum conditioni quae ab optimo abest, plura et ampliora quaerantur. Ex altera parte conscientia Nos Apostolici muneris atque ipsa rerum gerendarum prudentia admonent, ut bonum praesens idque certum anteponamus dubiae spei atque incertae expectationi maioris. Nam quemcumque rerum germanarum cursum tempora invexerint, illa certe magna sunt et Ecclesiae profutura, praeesse Clero populoque sacra cum potestate Antistites: multitudinem catholicam posse praecepta fidei et morum a pastoribus suis accipere: sacrorum alumnos ad spem sacerdotii in Seminariis sancte erudiri sodales ordinum quorundam religiosorum ad omne decus evangelicarum virtutum animose contendere in luce atque oculis civitatum. Illud restat, renunciare parochorum designatorum nomina. Sed ad hanc rem, quam sit Clerus vester sanctitatis officii retinens, testantur ea quae edidit integritatis ac fortitudinis in maximis rerum difficultatibus documenta. De Clericis autem adolescentioribus, jure sperandum, fore ut, ad munera sacerdotalia vobis auctoribus et ducibus instituti, illa ipsa virtutum exempla aliquando renovent. Ceterum, quod ad hoc caput pertinent, iam septem ante annis recepimus, ipsoque anno proximo superiore idem confirmavimus, Nos quidem nolle in hac parte, si e re esse visum esset, Borussiae postulata abnuere: proptereaque cum refigi reformarive leges, de quibus agitur, coeptae sunt, aequum fuit obligatam fidem exsolvere. Neque est praetereundum, hanc esse unam omnium conditionem, quam Nos denique non recusavimus. Postremo totum hoc negotium, quod est de prodendis Curionum destinatarum nominibus, cum inter Nos et administros regni Borussici agatur, quemadmodum ex litteris eminet ultro citroque missis, dabimus operam ut amice conveniat qua ratione rem interpretari, et quam sequi normam oporteat, si quando aliud Episcopus velit, aliud Praefectus, Provinciae contendat. Atque illae ipsae litterae summam sententiam continent Episcopi Fuldensis in eo quod attinet ad potestatem caussasque exceptionis opponendae. Igitur, spectatis maxime rogationibus eiusdem Episcopi Fuldensis, quas quidem Senatus sancivit, cum lata lex, de qua loquimur, multorum incommodorum remedium idque non commentitium, nec sane contemnendum

afferat, eademque aditum ad pacem tam diu tantoque opere expetitam patefaciat, idcirco opus esse iudicamus ut catholici viri eiusmodi rogationi, de qua ad alterum coetum legumlatorum referetur, assentiri ne recusent. Tute autem, Venerabilis Frater, pariterque Collegae tui, quantum hortatione et auctoritate potestis, tantum conamini et efficite, ut quotquot istie catholici numerantur, omnino Apostolicae Sedi confidant, in eiusque consiliis securi acquiescant; ipsa enim catholici nominis caussam eadem semper vigilantia eodemque tenore caritatis, uti debet, in Borussia tuebitur. Hac demum animus Noster cogitatione laetatur, futurum ut, deletis dissidiorum caussis, et Clerus et populus catholicus universus animum gerant cum Episcopis suis perpetuo consentientem, imprimisque, vereantur et colant, uti faciunt, Pontificem Romanum, qui in Ecclesia et principium unitatis est, et vinculum incolumitatis.

Interea, caelestium munerum auspicem et benevolentiae Nostrae testem tibi, Venerabilis Frater, et Clero populoque tuo Apostolicam Benedictionem peramanter in Domino impertimus.

Datum Romae apud S. Petrum, die VII. Aprilis, Anno MDCCCLXXXVII. Pontificatus Nostri Decimo,

LEO PP. XIII.

A CATHOLIC UNIVERSITY FOR THE UNITED STATES.

SUMMARY.

The University to be subject to the authority of the Bishops of the United States. An Episcopal Committee to map out the curriculum, make disciplinary regulations, appoint professors, and otherwise represent the bishops as the supreme governing body of the University. The University city to be selected by the bishops.

DILECTE FILI NOSTER SALUTEM ET APOSTOLICAM BENEDICTIONEM.

Quod in novissimo conventu anno MDCCCLXXXIV Baltimorae habito communi Venerabilium Fratrum Americae Borealis Episcoporum voto propositum fuerat, de studiorum Universitate in istius Reipublicae gremio erigenda, id modo Tibi caeterisque Ecclesiarum istarum Pastoribus in animo esse reipsa auspicari, communibus litteris die 25 Octobris elapso anno ad Nos datis intelleximus. Maxime vero delectati sumus praeclaro fidei vestrae testimonio, ac sincero pietatis obsequio in hanc Apostolicam Sedem, cujus patrocinio ad tutelam Academiam a primo eius exordio commendastis. Perpetua enim Pastorum ecclesiae, praesertim vero Pontificum Maximorum, laus semper extitit, veri nominis scientiam strenue provehere, studioseque curare ita disciplinas, imprimis theologicas ac philosophicas, ad

fidei normam in scholis tradi, ut coniunctis revelationis ac rationis viribus invictum inde fidei propugnaculum constitueretur. Itaque Decessores Nostri de erudiendo Christiano populo vehementer solliciti, elapsis temporibus, nullis unquam curis laboribusque pepercerunt ut in praecipuis Europae urbibus celeberrima scientiarum domicilia, Academiae scilicet studiorum excitarentur, quae tum media aetate, tum insequentibus saeculis florentissimam hominum doctissimorum segetem Christianae civilisque reipublicae emolumento praebuere. In hunc finem Nos ipsi, simul ac Ecclesiae gubernacula regenda suscepimus, sedulam instaurandis studiis dedimus operam et praesertim ad praeclaram Thomae Aquinatis doctrinam restituendam atque in pristinum decus vindicandum animum viresque adiecimus, id spectantes ut in graviorum disciplinarum cultu, ratione semper habita eorum omnium quae scite sapienterque recentiori aevo docti homines industria sua protulerunt, ad nobilissimam veterum sapientiam informaretur ratio philosophandi eaque disciplinam Angelici Doctoris docili studio sequeretur. Certum autem Nobis exploratumque erat ea scientiarum renovatione perfecta, literarum etiam caeterorumque humanorum disciplinarum studia cum verae pietatis cultu coniuncta plurima in civilem societatem conferre commoda posse.

Quae quidem nostrorum temporum in periculis quibus apud Europae gentes juvenus est obnoxia manifeste cernuntur, ac vos ipsi inspectis Americae Borealis conditionibus quanti facienda et quam gravis momenti sint aperte cognoscitis. Quippe immoderata cogitandi scribendique libertas ex pravis circa divinas humanasque res sentiendi modis late diffusis, uti in Europa, ita apud vos suborta effrenatarum opinionum radix est atque origo; religione vero ut plurimum a scholis exulare coacta, nefarii homines fallacis sapientiae astu Christianam fidem in adolescentium animis extinguere, impietatisque facem succendere audaciter moliuntur. Quapropter necesse est juvenilem aetatem sanioris doctrinae pabulo diligentius enutrire, praesertim vero eos adolescentes qui in Ecclesiae spem succrescunt, armis omnibus communire quibus propugnandae catholicae veritatis causae pares evadant.

Nos itaque consilium vestrum, quo communis salutis studio permoti inclytaeque istius reipublicae bono consulentes studiorum universitatem constituere aggredimini, libentissime excipimus ultroque probamus. Quo vero nobilissimum hoc institutum feliciter perficiatur maioraque in dies incrementa suscipiat, ita sub auctoritate tutelaque omnium regionis istius Praesulum perpetuo esse oportet, ut adminis-

tratio universa ab ipsis per Episcopos ad id muneris delectos geratur, quorum sit studiorum rationem definire, leges ferre disciplinae tuendae, doctores caeterosque academiae administratos eligere, aliaque ordinare quae ad optimam ejus academiae gubernationem pertineant. Quae vero de his omnibus constituta fuerint par est ut examini huius Apostolicae Sedis exhibeantur quo eius auctoritate probentur. De Urbe vero in qua Universitas studiorum sit erigenda, cupimus ut cum caeteris foederatorum Statuum Episcopis consilia communicentur, rogataque singulorum sententia de hac re decernatur.

Perge igitur. Dilecte Fili Noster, cum caeteris VV. FF. istius Americanae regionis episcopis concordi animo coepta perficere, nec quisquam vestrum ulla difficultate aut labore deterreatur, firma spe fretus sese uberrimos fructus ex curis ac sollicitudinibus esse relatutum, iis fundamentis et praesidiis positis quibus digni sacrorum ministri ad curandam fidelium salutem et catholicam pietatem propagandam, optimique in reipublica cives habeantur. Nos vero enixe Deum rogamus ut mittat e sedibus tuis assistricem sapientiam quae mentes et corda omnium vestrum dirigat, et divinatorum munerum auspiciem praecipuaeque benevolentiae Nostrae testem Tibi, Dilecte Fili Noster, cunctisque Venerabilibus Fratribus Foederatorum Statuum Archiepiscopis et Episcopis, caeterisque omnibus qui vobis hae in re opem sua liberalitate contulerint Apostolicam Benedictionem peramanter impertimus.

Datum Romae apud S. Petrum die 10 Aprilis, 1887. Pontificatus Nostri Decimo.

LETTER OF HIS HOLINESS POPE LEO XIII. ON THE STUDY OF
THE NATURAL SCIENCES.

VENERABILI FRATRI NOSTRO ALOISIO EPISCOPO PRAENESTINO
CARDINALI OREGLIA, S.R.E. CAMERARIO.

LEO PP. XIII.

Venerabilis Frater Noster salutem et Apostolicam Benedictionem. Quod Decessores Nostri accurare non destiterunt, ut non modo sacram, sed et humanarum scientiarum studia proveherent, earumque cultores honestarent et favore amplecterentur; id Nos semper Nostri muneris esse duximus, ac pro re nata praestare contendimus, quantum rerum, in quibus versamur, sinebat asperitas. Peculiares autem curas Nostras ad se convertit nobilis ea scientia quae naturae arcana rinatur et explicat, cuius dignitatem et incrementa, quae nostra illi attulit aetas, palam testati sumus, quum egimus de rationali

philosophia ad praecepta veterum revocanda. Ino et eius impensius colendae a catholicis viris necessitatem urgere haud negleximus, hac praesertim aetate, qua religionis hostes ex physicorum inventis et placitis tela sibi parata putant, quae Catholicae Ecclesiae dogmata oppugnent et evertant. Quare et multa commendatione dignam censuimus et ab exordiis Pontificatus Nostri praecipua benignitate complexi sumus Pontificiam Academiam Novorum Lyceorum, cuius observantia et fides, tempore etiam difficili, se Nobis probavit. Eius proinde curae commisimus ut saecularibus solemnibus memoria celebraretur insignis constitutionis, qua Gregorius XIII. Decessor Noster perturbatam temporum rationem restituit. Ex eo autem tempore huic coetui amplificando ornandoque animum adiecimus, rationesque cogitavimus, per quas sodalium vires et industria latius sese explicare possent, simulque ex eorum laboribus fructus in publicum manarent uberiores. Duplex itaque inivimus consilium, quod et eorum votis congruere novimus. Decrevimus nimirum ordinariorum sodalium numerum augeri, ut pro triginta, qui haecenus fuerant, quadraginta sint, sive in urbe morentur sive dissitos incolant ab urbe locos. Novorum autem sociorum delectum iuxta leges collegii fieri volumus. Cum porro a Nobis sperandum optandumque sit, fore ut, aucto sodalium numero, lucubrationes quoque vulgandae typis increscant, statuimus ut praeter eam quae fieri solet editionem actorum (in qua iamdudum praeclare enituit liberalitas illustris e romana nobilitate viri) nova inchoetur voluminum series, quae fusiores commentarios, historicas narrationes, documenta, quibus res physica illustratur contineat: cui rei expediendae Nostram libenter opem conferemus.

Equidem non dubitamus quin, agnito hoc testimonio Voluntatis Nostrae, iidem sodales alacrius in dies adlaborantes in explorandis naturae latebris, per alia atque alia ingenii sui monumenta et gloriam Summi naturae Auctoris et coetus sui decus amplificare studeant. Quod uti prospere cedat, auspicem bonorum, Apostolicam Benedictionem sociis universis et singulis praedictae Academiae, Tibique in primis, Venerabilis Frater Noster, qui eius patronatu pro tua dignitate fungeris, eiusque decus maxime exoptas, peramanter in Domino impertimus.

Datum Romae apud S. Petrum die XXI Januarii anno MDCCCLXXXVII.

Pontificatus Nostri Nono.

LEO PP. XIII.

INDULGENCES OF THE SCAPULARS.

SUMMARY.

One enrolled in the Confraternity of Mount Carmel and Third Order of St. Francis, must wear the Scapulars of both, and in the ordinary form.

The Blessing with the Plenary Indulgence (which is wont to be given nine times a year) and the two Papal Benedictions, when imparted publicly, must be given by a priest appointed over the Tertiaries for this purpose.

The Blessing with the Plenary Indulgence can be given privately after Sacramental Absolution by the confessor of each Tertiary.

The Indulgence is received when all the conditions are complied with, and not before then.

DUBIA QUOAD SCAPULARIA ET INDULGENTIAS LUCRANDAS A
FIDELIBUS PII SODALITII S. MARIAE CARMINIS.

Sacerdos Carolus Scavezzoni, coadjutor I. v. d. Avenza in Diocesi Massensi s. Pedem pronus exosculans, Sanctitati Vestrae demisse supplicat, ut cum ipsius, tum et poenitentium suorum quieti consulendi gratia, quaestionibus quas subjicit, responsum dare benigne dignetur.

I. Qui piae Confraternitati B. V. de Monte Carmelo nomen dedit, atque eodem tempore inter sodales Tertii Ordinis Saecularis S. Francisci cooptatus sit, tenebiturne e collo pendentia gestare, ut sacras Indulgentias lucretur, ambo Scapularia, an vero unum sufficiet, quum utrumque ejusdem coloris sit et panni?

II. Si ambo gestare necesse est, poteritne id fieri neglectis utriusque dimensionibus, si quidem invicem conjuncta sint?

III. Benedictiones cum plenaria Indulgentia (Absolutiones generales nuncupatae), quae novies infra annum dari solent (ut ex. gr. die festo S. Josephi); itemque duae Benedictiones Papales, possuntne a quolibet *Confessario* impertiri; an vero ab eo tantum, cui haec facultas facta sit?

IV. Si benedictiones hujusmodi ab eo tantum impertiri possint cui potestas data sit, a quonam dictus *Confessarius* hujusmodi facultatem accipere debet?

V. Poenitens in sacramentali Confessione suscipitne illico Indulgentiam pronuntiato verbo "impertior" an vero haec suspensa manet, donec ipse ad Sacram Synaxim accesserit?

Sacra Congregatio Indulgentiis Sacrisque Reliquiis praeposita die 10 Junii, 1886, ad supra relata dubia respondit :

Ad I. *Affirmative ad primam partem ; negative ad secundam.*

Ad II. *Servetur consuetudo vigens tum penes Confratres B. V. Mariae a Monte Carmelo, tum penes Tertiarios S. Francisci Assisiensis.*

Ad III. *Benedictiones nomine Summi Pontificis, et Benedictiones cum Indulgentia Plenaria publice impertiendae dari debent ab ecclesiastico Viro qui Tertiariis in id coadunatis praeest. (Caeremoniale Tertii Ordinis S. Francisci a S. Rituum Congregatione approbatum die 18 Junii, 1883 : art. 8 et 9.) Benedictiones vero cum Indulgentia Plenaria privatim et immediate post sacramentalem Absolutionem dari possunt ab uniuscujusque Tertiarii Confessario.*

Ad IV. *Provisum in responsione ad III.*

Ad V. *Negative ad primam partem ; affirmative ad secundam, si communio est postremum opus ex injunctis, quod expletur.*

Datum Romae ex Secretaria ejusdem S. Congregationis die, mense et anno uti supra.

I. B. Card. FRANZELIN, *Praefectus.*

FRANCISCUS DELLA VOLPE, *Secretarius.*

GENERAL ABSOLUTION AND BLESSINGS WITH PLENARY INDULGENCE.

SUMMARY.

Formula to be used for General Absolutions, and for a Blessing which has a Plenary Indulgence attached to it.

ORANEN.

DE FORMULA ADHIBENDA PRO ABSOLUTIONIBUS GENERALIBUS ET PRO BENEDICTIONIBUS CUM INDULGENTIA PLENARIA.

Oranensis Capituli Praepositus et Dioecesis Vicarius Generalis S. huic Congregationi Indulgentiis Sacrisque Reliquiis praepositae exponebat: piam Sororum Societatem a SSma. Trinitate nuncupatam et uti *Congregationem votorum simplicium* decreto S. Congregationis Episcoporum et Regularium dato die 22 Septembris 1869 approbatam plurimas habere in Oranensi Dioecesi domos: eandem Societatem, quae sub regimine est Moderatricis Generalis, Valentiae in Gallia residentis, die 15 Octobris 1847 aggregatam fuisse Ordini Fratrum Discalceatorum SSmae. Trinitatis: hujus aggregationis vi Sororibus

dandam esse novies in anno aut Absolutionem Generalem, aut benedictionem cum Indulgentia plenaria: sed disceptationem haberi de formula, quae in iisdem impertiendis adhiberi debeat post editas Apostolicas Litteras in forma Brevis die 7 Julii 1882, quae incipiunt: *Quo universi.*

Hinc a S. Congregatione quaerebat:

Quae formula adhibenda sit in casu?

In Congregatione plenaria habita in Aedibus vaticanis die 18 Decembris 1885, Emi. et Rmi. Patres Cardinales responderunt:

Adhibendam esse formulam secundam, cujus videlicet initium: "Intret oratio mea in conspectu tuo, etc."

SSmus. D. N. Leo PP. XIII. in audientia habita die sequenti a subscripto Secretario, Emorum Patrum responsionem approbavit.

Datum Romae ex Secretaria ejusdem S. Congregationis die 19 Decembris 1885.

I. B. CARD. FRANZELIN, *Praefectus.*

FRANCISCUS DELLA VOLPE, *Secretarius.*

THE INDULGENCE OF THE PRIVILEGED ALTAR.

SUMMARY.

The Colour of the Vestments to be worn *diebus non impeditis* is black, or, *ex causa rationabili*, violet. The priest who has failed through want of compliance with this or other necessary condition to gain the Indulgence of the Privileged Altar cannot compensate for this failure by applying an ordinary Plenary Indulgence to the benefit of the persons concerned.

QUOD AD PARAMENTA INDUENDA A SACERDOTE PRO LUCRANDA INDULGENTIA PLENARIA ALTARIS PRIVILEGIATI.

Cum in theologia morali auctore Scavini, edit. 11 lib. 3 pag. 229 § 283, apud Ernestum Oliva Mediolani bibliop. edita 1869, sic scriptum reperitur: Ex responsione S. Congreg. Indulgentiarum 11 Aprilis 1840, sacerdos debet celebrare in paramentis nigris, diebus non impeditis, ut lucretur indulgentiam Altaris privilegiati. Hinc quaeritur: an niger color sensu exclusivo debeat intelligi, ita ut indulgentiam Altaris privilegiati non consequatur qui v.g. ad ministrandam Eucharistiam per modum Sacramenti cum paramentis violaceis Missam de Requie celebret?—2. Utrum qui hac vel quacumque alia ratione Indulgentiam Altaris privilegiati non lucretur, possit satisfacere applicando aliam Indulgentiam plenariam defunctis; pro quibus ad Altare privilegiatum celebrare debuerat?—S. Congr. Indulgentiarum

die 2 Maii 1852 respondit: Ad 1. Ut fruatur Altare privilegiatum sacerdos diebus non impeditis, celebrare debet Missam defunctorum, et uti paramentis nigris vel ex rationabili causa violaceis.—Ad 2. Negative.”

Joseph Canonicus Ribezzo humillime postulat ut S. Congregatio Indulgentiarum declarare dignetur: Utrum hæc responsio quoad secundam partem sit apocrypha? Et quatenus negative, utrum intelligenda sit etiam de sacerdotibus, qui ad Altare privilegiatum celebrare debuerant, et jam celebraverint, sed non cum paramentis nigris a Rubrica non impeditis?—Et quatenus affirmative, quomodo ipsa conciliari possit cum decreto ejusdem S. Congregationis Indulgentiarum 22 Februarii 1847, in quo ad quæsitum: “Qui (sacerdos) diebus permissis non celebravit in paramentis nigri coloris in Altari privilegiato ad acquirendam Indulgentiam Plenariam, ad quid tenetur?”—Responsum fuit: “Debet lucrari Indulgentiam Plenariam pro iis defunctis quibus Missæ fructum applicuit, toties quoties diebus non impeditis usus non est indumentis nigri coloris.”

Sacra Congregatio Indulgentiis Sacrisque Reliquiis præposita die 24 Julii 1885 proposito dubio respondit: Responsio est authentica. In decreto vero diei 22 Februarii 1847 tantummodo sacerdotibus, pro quibus postulabatur de ratione quæ compensare debebant Indulgentiam Altaris Privilegiati ad quam applicandam obligarentur et quam bona fide errantes, non erant lucrati, censuit S. Congregatio ut compensatio fieret per applicationem alterius indulgentiæ plenariæ toties quoties illam altaris privilegiati non fuerint lucrati.

Datum Romæ ex Secretaria ejusdem S. Congregationis eadem die 24 Julii 1885.

J. B. CARDINAL FRANZELIN, *Præf.*
JOSEPHUS M. CAN. COSELLI, *substit.*

NOTICES OF BOOKS.

THE LIFE OF JEAN BAPTISTE MUARD. London;
Burns & Oates.

THIS is the ninth volume of the “Library of Religious Biography,” edited by Mr. Healy Thompson. It “is not a translation, neither is it the reproduction of any previous work, the writer having enjoyed the supreme advantage of consulting a large collection of

authentic documents, hitherto unpublished." Among them are "numerous depositions taken on oath with a view to the introduction of the cause of the servant of God at Rome."

The Life of P. Muard is interesting both for what it tells of the Father's own character and labours, and for the glimpses which it gives of the French priests' life during the first half of this century. It is the story of a noble struggle :—A poor boy reared by irreligious parents attracts the attention of a good curé, is educated by him and trained to habits of piety, sent to the seminary rather against his parents' wishes, receives Holy Orders, works a parish for more than five years, converts his parents and thousands of others who had almost lost the faith during the struggle of the revolution, founds a House of Missions, and afterwards a religious congregation. Such was P. Muard. He was a pattern priest, pious, hard-working, fearless, trustful, at the service of the poor, and withal frank and kindly in his relations with his brothers in the ministry.

We have marked some passages for quotation—on P. Muard's knowledge of mystical theology, his conversation, popularity, hospitality to the poor, attention to the sick, bearing towards the wealthy, meetings of the clergy, sermons, care of the church, of pupils, entertaining his fellow-priests. But where should we stop?

He had his failings, too; amongst which there was at first a want of punctuality (failing of many), which, however, his biographer refers to insatiable zeal and spirit of self-sacrifice rather than to indolence or selfishness. He could be hasty and even angry at times. These things are remarked here, not in any spirit of disrespect, but rather with a certain thankfulness that even very holy men struggle and sometimes fall. Their life-stories have thus a power to cheer us in our own struggles, to console us in our frequent and more serious failings.

The volume before us might, we think, be relieved of a certain amount of heaviness and appearance of monotony. It is impossible to lay one's finger on any particular page that might be set down as a typical illustration of this defect, which is known rather by one's impression of the book as a whole. Perhaps if the biographer allowed himself to refer occasionally to incidents bearing on the Church history of the time, it would serve, as in so many other pleasant books, to stimulate a reader's interest. But where God's work is substantially well done, fault-finding like this may appear unreasonable.

SERMONS AT MASS. By the Rev. Father O'Keeffe, C.C. Borrisoleigh, Archdiocese of Cashel, Author of "Moral Discourses." Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son, O'Connell-street.

The best way to notice a volume of sermons would be to give extracts as samples of excellence, and let the reader judge for himself. Obviously such a course would be desirable in the interests of the reader. It would, moreover, be a decided advantage to Father O'Keeffe, and better calculated to make friends for his book than the few general remarks which we must be content to offer. Our limits, however, do not permit us to give lengthened extracts, and curtailment would do an injustice to the author.

The modest volume before us comprises in all twenty sermons. The subjects are well chosen. Sermons on the "Presence of God," "Lies and Calumny," "Detraction and Backbiting," "Rash Judgment," "Temperance," "The Holy Sacrifice of the Mass," "Indulgences," &c., are eminently suited to the needs—and Father O'Keeffe's treatment of them to the capacity—of our Catholic peasantry. The greater bulk of our Catholic congregations—at least in country parishes—consists of the poor and uneducated. In stooping down to the lowly intelligence of such people Father O'Keeffe has been mindful of the example of him whose "preaching was not in the persuasive words of human wisdom," and of even a Greater than St. Paul, whose discourses, by reason of their simplicity, contrasted so favourably with the inflated language of the Scribes and Pharisees.

We are told by Fr. O'Keeffe that his Sermons are the work of the spare moments of seven years of a busy missionary life—such leisure hours as fall to the lot of a hard-working Irish curate, with his daily round of sick calls, and his daily—or at least weekly—visitation of schools. The sermons themselves bear evidence that they were not hastily written. They are short, and burdened with no superfluous words—very desirable qualities in any composition in this busy age, when people are in such a hurry to get to their conclusions. The simplicity and comprehensiveness which it was the author's purpose to combine are evidenced in every page. The outcome of much personal zeal and personal piety, Fr. O'Keeffe's Sermons are characterised by an eloquence and an ardour that leave their impression long after the book has been laid aside.

No words of ours are needed to recommend them. They will be accorded a cordial reception as well because of their intrinsic excellence, as because they are the work of the well-known and zealous author of "Moral Discourses."

J. P. M'D.

SAINT TERESA'S PATER NOSTER. A Treatise on Prayer. By Joseph Frassinetti, formerly Prior of S. Sabina, Genoa. Translated from the Italian by William Canon Hutch, D.D., President of St. Cohnan's College, Fermoy. London: Burns & Oates.

WE must welcome this little book as a valuable addition to the religious literature of the present day. Referred to by Fr. Bailerini in his edition of Gury's Moral Theology as an "excellent little work"—*erimum opusculum*—it has received marked commendation from that rather severe critic. A compendium of mystical and ascetical theology, it must be of utility to religious communities and to pious readers; to hard worked members of the ministry it will prove an attractive source of useful information. We possess, as the translator remarks, many excellent works dealing with ascetical and mystical theology, but the difficulty of understanding some, and the prolixity of others repel instead of attracting readers. This little work by its simplicity, brevity, and practical bearing will supply a long-felt want.

The work is an exposition of the teachings of St. Teresa, taken from her "Way of Perfection" and "The Mansions." Her instructions and reflections on prayer contained in these two works are collected, arranged and developed in the volume before us.

The "Treatise on Prayer" is divided into two parts—the first, treating of prayer in general, the second dealing with the seven petitions of the Lord's Prayer. In the first part we are taught the necessity of prayer, and the necessity of commencing the exercise of prayer. In the third, fourth and fifth chapters we have most useful information on the subject of mental prayer. In these chapters Fr. Frassinetti explains briefly and simply the kind of prayer to which St. Teresa would have us apply ourselves. Mental prayer is either *methodical* or *simple*, and simple meditation is necessary for all. This latter is "devoid of all art and method, unencumbered by divisions into certain parts and points, and unrestricted by any limits of time." It "consists in nothing else than in directing the attention of our minds to the truths of faith and to our own obligations." In the remaining chapters the teaching of St. Teresa on mental prayer is explained and defended. The first part contains many excellent instructions, many pious reflections on such subjects—as the presence of God, distractions, prudence in prayer, self-love.

The second part is an exposition of the petitions of the Lord's Prayer. As this prayer is a compendium of the Gospels, we may

expect to find useful and valuable information on every phase of spiritual life. The several petitions are treated in an orderly and simple manner. The reader of the reflections on any one petition cannot fail to acquire an exalted idea of this grand prayer.

The arrangement of the matter by the translator is most satisfactory. Short marginal synopses give at a glance the subject-matter of the paragraphs. He has deserved our gratitude for putting us in possession, in English dress, of this excellent little volume. His work has been performed with care, he has brought his experience to bear on his labour of love. The present work may well take its place beside the other works of the reverend translator. We wish it a ready and extensive circulation.

GIORDANO BRUNO E I SUOI TEMPI. Per il Padre Luigi Previti, S.J. Prato: Giachetti e Figlio. Un vol.

MODERN Italian infidels are not slow to avail themselves of the power which they now monopolize in the southern peninsula, to perpetuate the memory of those whom they are proud to call the pioneers of their independence. The political gods of recent times are of course above all to be immortalized. Even Mazzini, the cruel heartless Mazzini, the "apostle of the dagger," whose praises English statesmen have so often sounded, comes in for his share of the hero-worship. It is not alone in the "superb" city of Genoa, which was unfortunate enough to be his birth-place, that the fine arts have been profaned for his glory, but the poor Catholics of Calabria and of Romagna are taxed for the erection of marble statues and the painting of life-like pictures of the politician whom perhaps they detest most in the whole history of their country. As full of hatred of Cavour and of the "Re Galantuomo" as he was jealous of Garibaldi, who was yet worthy to be his colleague, it is hard to imagine any country falling so low as to hold Giuseppe Mazzini up to public admiration as one of the greatest of her citizens. But if a lower depth of degradation is still to be reached it is to be found in the worship of the apostate Dominican, Giordano Bruno. He, too, has his statue. It was erected at Naples in the ferment of one of the revolutions, and at a time when crowds of the poor inhabitants of that city were starving and dying of hunger on the streets. But that is not enough. His apotheosis must be celebrated in Rome itself, and out of the public treasury, out of the pockets of the oppressed Catholics of Italy, a statue is now to be erected on the very spot where his impiety brought upon him the supreme punishment of the

times in which he lived. But what is perhaps still worse, the Government has undertaken to issue splendid editions of his blasphemous works, and to publish cheaper editions which will be distributed for the perversion of the poor. The work, therefore, of the learned Jesuit, which we announce above, is signally opportune, and is besides an excellent biography of a most unworthy subject. The volume is divided into three books. The first treats of the life and travels and adventures of Bruno, and gives a vivid description of his character, which was such as to entitle him to a place in Adelung's "*Histoire de la Folie Humaine*." The second book contains an exposition of his doctrine, in as far as it can be gathered from his obscure, allegorical writings, and the acts of the process or trial to which he was subjected in Venice and Rome before his condemnation. The third contains various documents which clear up several points in the story of his life.

Giordano Bruno was a native of Nola in Campagna, and after having joined the Dominicans at Naples, went to Geneva where he apostatized. Falling out with Calvin and Beza he passed to Lyons, Paris, Toulouse, and subsequently to London, where he remained for a few years. He then went to Germany, and for a considerable time supported Lutheranism in Wittenberg, and thence made his way back to Italy where he fell into the hands of the Inquisition, and was burned in Rome in 1600. His most celebrated work bears the significant title "*Spaccio della Bestia Trionfante*," "*The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*" which was translated into English by the rationalist Toland. In this work in which the beast represents what he calls superstition or religion, he turns the mysteries of Christian faith into derision, puts Holy Scripture on the same footing with the heathen mythology, and treats the miracles of the Gospel as so many magical delusions. The most repulsive passage in the work is that in which he speaks of Our Lord in the grossest and most blasphemous language, and accuses him of teaching men "that black is white, that good is evil, and that human reason is altogether blind" "*facendoli credere che il bianco è nero, che l'intelletto umano, dove gli par meglio vedere, è una cecità, e ciò che secondo la ragione pare eccellente buono e ottimo, è vile, scelerato e estremamente malo; che la natura è una puttana bagassa; che la legge naturale è una ribalderia; che la natura e divinità non possono concorrere in uno medesimo buon fine e che la giustizia de l'una non è subordinata a la giustizia de l'altra ma son cose contrarie come le tenebre e la luce.*" His second work "*Cabala del cavallo Pegaseo*" is a satire against Christian piety and

a eulogium of ignorance and of what he calls "asinità" which we need not translate. In the dedicatory epistle of this work there is a "sonetto in lode de l'asino" which commences as follows:—

Oh sant' asinità, sant' ignoranza
Santa stoltizia e pia divozione
Qual sola puoi far l'anime sì buone
Ch' uman ingegno e studio non l'avanza

His last years were devoted to the propagation of pantheism. There was only one divinity which slept in the stone, felt in the animal and reasoned in man; as for religion which taught the worship of a personal God it was only a fable.

"Fabula que vitæ rationem evertit ea usum."

The book of Father Previti is not only interesting as a biography, but most instructive as an historical insight into the times of which it treats.

J. F. H.

THE OLD RELIGION IN ENGLAND. By the Rev. Patrick Lynch. Salford: J. Roberts & Sons, Chapel-street.

THE author tells us that his "little tract is the first of a series of papers on the Religion of the First English Christians. The present agitation for the disestablishment, and, perhaps, also the disendowment, of the Church of England, has driven the defenders of that system of belief into very difficult straits, indeed. They are compelled to assert, that the present Church, as by law established, is identical with the ancient British and the ancient Saxon Churches in this land." Fr. Lynch's aim is to prove from authentic historical documents that this assertion is groundless, and that consequently it must be confessed that the establishment is human in its origin, and not a branch of the one true Church of God.

Fr. Lynch goes over a good deal of the ground which used to be familiar to Irish controversialists some time ago, the religion of the monks of Hy, the paschal question, and the tonsure. He makes use for the most part of Adamnan's Life of Columba; and indeed proves to the hilt that the religion of the missionaries who won England to Christ, was the same as that of Rome at the present day. It is difficult to see how this can be called in question by any honest, sensible man. Defenders of the Established Church have, however, another position not so easy to be turned, that the Establishment is substantially the same now as it ever was, the only difference being, that in the sixteenth century it shook off the errors and abuses of a darker time.

We hope Fr. Lynch will find room in his papers and lectures for a discussion of this point. His ability and learning are fully proved by the tract before us, which in the meantime will be found of great value to English priests who may be called upon to state their views on the question of fact.

GEMS OF CATHOLIC THOUGHT. By Anna T. Sadlier. New York: The Catholic Publication Society Company.

"THE remark is not unfrequently made that Catholics have no literature of their own. In offering to the public these sayings of men and women, more or less widely known in the world of letters, the compiler merely aims at throwing out a suggestion, a suggestion of the real wealth of Catholics in the domain of fact, fancy, and fiction, of their actual rank in the sphere of thought as in that of imagination. Her embarrassment has been, not to find sufficient material, but to choose from a superabundance." We have counted near four hundred names of authors from whose works the selection has been made, which is surprising considering that "saints and writers on purely theological and religious topics do not come within the scope" of the compiler. There is an index of authors, and also one of subjects. The little book is got up with taste: we wish it success.

THE CLOTHES OF RELIGION. A Reply to Popular Positivism, in two Essays and a Postscript. By Wilfrid Ward. London: Burns and Oates.

THE two essays which Mr. Wilfrid Ward now publishes in a neat volume appeared originally in the *National Review*. Their main purpose is to refute Positivism in a way at once popular and scientific. Before taking up his ground to demolish Mr. Harrison's cult of Humanity, he half does his work by giving us that able writer's merciless exposure of Agnosticism, as propounded by Herbert Spencer. Awe for the Unknowable a religion! For sake of consistency, then, disrobe the Unknowable of such well-known mantles as "Energy," "Infinity," "Eternity," and see if the negative spectre that remains can command rational worship or guide human conduct. "Better bury religion at once than let its ghost walk uneasy in our dreams." But if Mr. Harrison will disallow Agnosticism the Clothes of Natural Theism without the reality of belief in one personal God, it is intolerable that he himself should steal the peculiar dress of Christianity and surround his phantom with the spirit of brotherly love, self-sacrifice, and devotion to an ideal, when the faith and hope that alone

can rationally support these feelings have gone down for ever. "By the Clothes of Religion," writes Mr. Ward, "I mean those ideas and corresponding emotions with which we invested the objects of religious faith, and which were their natural and due adornment, and the phrases that have been associated with religious belief Mr. Spencer dresses up the Unknowable with Infinity, Eternity, and Energy; Mr. Harrison dresses up humanity with Brotherly Love and the worship of an ideal. But the clothes won't fit." It costs Mr. Ward very little effort to show that the worship of "humanity controlling and controlled by nature according to law" is not sufficient, as a religion worthy of the name should be, to guide life, support in affliction, give hope in death. Where, he asks, in such a scheme, does high moral greatness find a motive force whereby it may realise itself in action "and what of the consolation it gives in affliction and hope in death?" "When a mother, wrung with anguish for her loss, asks for consolation, does it seem greater irony to say to her 'think on the unknowable,' than to say, 'think on humanity, or human progress?'" If Herbert Spencer, with all his ability, is the creature of a *monomania*, so too is Frederick Harrison. Mr. Ward's illustration in this hypothesis is most apposite. But the way both adversaries shift their equivocal positions as well as the scant courtesy they show to the dearest convictions of the noblest minds the world ever possessed must, we fear, force a suspicion that in religious matters steady uprightness of mental character is as likely to be wanting as the due physical adjustment of brain cells. Mr. Ward's volume is very pleasant reading, notwithstanding the weighty subjects with which he deals.

P. O'D.

SERMONS OF THE REV. JOSEPH FARRELL, late C.C. Monasterevan. With an Appendix containing some of his Speeches on Quasi-Religious Subjects. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

THE author of these Sermons holds a deservedly high place among English Essayists, and there is no indication that his reputation is likely to suffer by time. That alone is a guarantee that there must be something real—something having the elements of permanency in his Essays.

It is now more than nine years since the *Irish Monthly* began a series of papers under the somewhat odd title of "Lectures of a Certain Professor." The Lectures were eagerly read and re-read, and people asked who the "Certain Professor" was, or what manner of man was he, who discoursed in so easy and familiar, yet in so dignified and philosophical a style, about divers commonplace things—even about the commonplace itself.

It was plain that he had a well-formed and highly-cultured mind, and that he had what was next in importance, the power of graceful utterance. The subject-matter and the manner of treatment appeared to point to the author as one comparatively free from the cares and anxieties of life, with superabundant material comforts, leisure-time enough, and a mind accustomed to revel in philosophic rest. "My materials," he says, "are collected in all sorts of out-of-the-way places—from the tags and fringes that hang from the most tangible subjects: from the odds and ends of knowledge; from the clippings and pairings that accumulate in mental studies, from which solid work has gone out; from the rainbow coloured theories spun from the mists that hang about the limits of *the known*, in that dim debatable land where reason glides into feeling, and certainties begin to melt into impressions."

Accordingly the hard-working curate, with his days and nights of incessant care and anxious watching, spending his life ministering to the poor and the sorrow-stricken, is not the manner of man one would at first sight, suppose the "Certain Professor" to be. Yet such he was.

When Father Farrell brought his splendid talents to bear on the commission which he received to preach the Gospel, and in which they were unsparingly spent, it is no wonder that he produced solid and abiding work. He did not live to publish his sermons, nor is it certain that he intended to publish them, though we are told that with one or two exceptions, they are written with much care. They were, moreover, nearly all written in the early years of his priesthood. But friendly hands have done what he left undone, and the public have reason to be thankful for introducing them again to the author of the "Lectures of a Certain Professor."

It will be found, we think, that there is much in common between the "Lectures" and the "Sermons;" it will be seen that the "Certain Professor" thinks and feels and speaks with the same deep thinking sensitive feeling, and graceful picturesque speech, though, of course, the subject-matter of the Sermons banishes all those lighter fancies that sparkle throughout the "Lectures," whilst it gives scope for the richer chords of sympathy that are struck by the author with unerring instinct.

The sermons are clear and simple, though there are no formal divisions in them. It is difficult to select one as a specimen. We shall, however, take the first sermon. It is on the Blessed Virgin. The introduction is a development of the ideas of Mother and Son—

Jesus and Mary—which are inseparably entwined : whosoever wishes to know the Son must know the Mother. The body of the sermon shows—1st, that the Mother's life on earth was a life of obscurity, poverty, mortification and sufferings—like the Son's ; 2nd, that the Church honours the Glorified Mother, and has recourse to her intercession, because she is worthy of honour, and both able and willing to help us.

The conclusion is an inference implicitly drawn, that like the Mother and Son our way to the Crown is by the Cross, and since Mary is our Mother we ought practically regard her as such.

Speaking of a mother's love, Father Farrell says :

“ It is unselfish and everlasting, patient and ineffaceable ; it never tires, never gives up ; time cannot weaken it ; ingratitude itself cannot kill it. Even in this cold world the mother will not forget the son whom she has borne. . . . He may have placed the early wrinkle on her brow, and sown the silver streak upon her hair ; he may have planted thorns in her pillow, and made her heart ache with very anguish for his follies and his crimes, still she remembers only that she is his mother. When all her schemes have failed, when his sins—as sins always do—have found him out and dragged him down, when the hand of sorrow has bowed him to the dust, his mother's hand is there to soothe, his mother's heart is there to sympathise, his mother's love is there to pour balm into the wounds that sin and sorrow have inflicted on his soul. And Mary is your Mother. You have it on the words of the dying Saviour—‘ Behold thy Mother.’ ”

In the Appendix there are three speeches. The first is on the Education Question, in which Father Farrell holds it to be a principle which no statesman can reasonably refuse to accept, viz. : The convictions of Catholics, as Catholics, ought to be the basis of legislation in matters of Catholic Education. He ably exposes the fallacy that Catholics are treated with equality by eliminating religion from the schools. The second speech is on Religious Education, where he develops the idea that as religion is necessary both for the individual and society, so is a Religious Education. The third speech is one delivered in 1870, at Maryborough, in favour of the Pope. It is a stirring appeal, in which he utilises the entwined sentiment of Faith and Fatherland.

Since we feel confident that these Sermons will be largely read, and that a new edition will soon be called for, we would suggest that an index of the subject-matter be prepared, which would thus make the book easy of reference, and accordingly more useful.

As we close this volume we cannot but feel regret that the unsparing hand of death cut short a life so replete with usefulness and so bright an ornament to his Church and his country, whilst we admire the fidelity which has rescued his MS. remains from oblivion, and has thus served to perpetuate his memory.—J. C.

LITTLE COMPLIMENTS OF THE SEASON and other tiny rhymes, for tiny readers, simple verses, original, selected or translated, for Namedays, Birthdays, Christmas, New Year, and other festive and social occasions. By Eleanor C. Donnelly. New York : Benziger Brothers, 1887.

THIS volume of poetry and illustrations is intended for young children. It is a marvel of variety and appropriateness. The most fertile imagination will find difficulty in fancying an occasion for which a suitable poetic effusion is not provided. The sentiments are pure and natural, the language simple, the versification pretty and careful. Miss Donnelly's little book is sure to be a first favourite.—P. O'D.

MONTH OF THE DEAD. THOUGHTS OF ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI.
SIMPLE READINGS ON SOME OF THE PARABLES, &c.

Month of the Dead. Besides solid instruction on the doctrine of Indulgences, this little book contains numerous historical examples, which are calculated to excite compassion for the souls in Purgatory. The prayers to be found at the end render it very useful as a book of devotion.

Thoughts of St. Alphonsus is a collection of the most striking passages in the writings of the latest Doctor of the Church. The selection is very judicious, and includes a pious thought for every day in the year.

Simple Readings on the Parables supplies a want long felt by the faithful. It gives a clear explanation of those moving stories, which Our Lord made use of to convey His most sublime doctrines to His followers.

St. Germaine Cousin. The translator of this little work has conferred a favour on English readers by supplying them with an interesting story of the life and trials of one of the least known of God's saints.

Consolation to those in Suffering. The considerations and Divine promises collected into this little book are calculated to afford true comfort to those who are being purified in the fire of tribulation.

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

JULY, 1887.

DR. HUGH DE BURGO.

THE commission with which Fr. Hugh De Burgo was entrusted by the Irish Confederates on the 29th of November, 1642, was one of great political importance. He was appointed to represent to the Most August Emperor, Ferdinand the Third of Germany, the interests and aims of the Irish Catholics at that period. The despatches which he received conjointly with Count William Gall authorised him to represent to his Imperial Majesty that the Irish "were driven to arms by the ferocity of the Puritans, who sought to destroy at once his religion and his nation,"—that the struggle in which his countrymen had become engaged was a struggle for "religion, country, liberty, and justice." He was in the name of the Supreme Council to solicit the Emperor's approval and support; and to remind him "that the Irish people were bound by many ties to the house of Austria." He was to remind him of the feelings with which Ireland was regarded by the late Emperor. Irish blood had been freely shed in the service of Austria. The valour and fidelity of Irish soldiers in defending the interests of Austria had been proved in many well contested fields: and in return for such heroic services, the richest emoluments and highest honours in the gift of the crown were generously conferred upon Irish soldiers. Fr. Burke and his lay associate, Count Gall, were to represent those facts, as at once the motive and justification of their appeal.

The young Franciscan's hopes must have been high, as he set out from the peaceful cloisters of St. Anthony at Louvain, to represent before the German Court the aims and needs of his Catholic fellow-countrymen. In their union for the holy cause of faith and fatherland, he saw an evidence of strength, and a hopeful augury of success. The steps which they had already taken were equally energetic and resolute. A national parliament had assembled at Kilkenny, which placed Preston and O'Neill at the head of the Irish troops in the east and north: and well might De Burgo and his countrymen regard their prestige as a guarantee of future military successes. He saw six thousand men of his native province, under the command of his kinsman, John Burke, an experienced officer who had served thirty-eight years under the King of Spain, and who now returned to place his good sword at the disposal of his Catholic compatriots. In that parliament sat the Catholic Peers, spiritual and temporal, O'Queely and Mountgarrett, Darcy and De Burgo; the representatives of Irish tribes, whose ancestors were old and honoured when Brian drove the invaders into the sea at Clontarf, as well as of the Anglo-Irish whose fore-fathers fought by Earl Strongbow's side, and shared his triumphs and his plunders. And already the Holy Father's formal approval and support of the movement was foreshadowed by the active support of Cardinal Antonio Barberini—the Cardinal Protector of Ireland, and nephew of His Holiness. The wrongs of Ireland were now proclaimed as they had seldom been before, by lips that were rendered eloquent by an unselfish love of country. From Gibraltar to the Baltic, from the German Ocean to the Adriatic, there was not a Catholic court or a Catholic people who were not made familiar with the cause and sufferings of the Irish. It was a new crusade in the preaching of which Fr. Hugh Burke was to have a large share of the labour and of the success. However, he had in Fathers Hartigan and O'Shea able and successful fellow labourers, while Fr. Luke Wadding overshadowed them all in his zeal for fatherland. Nothing could be more encouraging than the result. The sympathies of Catholic Europe became centred on Catholic Ireland, and

practical support was cordially, if slowly, given. It was to Irish hearts the call of duty; even those of Ireland's children who heard the summons in their exiled homes at once yielded willing obedience to the call.

The man who at such a critical moment would be selected by his countrymen as ambassador to some of the greatest courts in Europe, must have been a man of known abilities, recognised prudence, and undoubted patriotism. But there can be no doubt that Fr. Burke had already established for himself a reputation for these and other high qualities. His name was even then associated in Flanders, with those of Colgan and O'Clery. His position as superior of the house at Louvain was the willing tribute of his Franciscan brethren at this period to his piety and worth.

Hugh De Burgo was born in a remote village called Clontusket, in the diocese of Clonfert. His father was a gentleman of considerable influence, and connected by close ties of kindred with the ancient and noble house of Clanricarde. And it may be added that this was the period to which Sir J. Davies virtually refers when he stated that "there were more able men of the name than of any other name in Europe." Hugh being intended for the Church, like his elder brothers John and Oliver, was educated with care by his pious parents from his earliest childhood. He made his elementary classical studies in his father's house, under the guidance of the family tutor, a man named O'Malley, whose classical attainments were in those days widely known and recognised. O'Malley certainly had pupils worthy alike of his abilities and attention in the subject of our sketch, as well as in his brother John, afterwards famous as Archbishop of Tuam; and in Oliver, afterwards Vicar General of Clonfert. In his twentieth year John left home for the Irish College, Lisbon, where after a satisfactory examination he was received as a student. Hugh, having decided to become a religious, proceeded to Louvain, where he prosecuted his studies as a humble monk of the order of St. Francis. He arrived at Louvain in 1614, and was in due course promoted to Holy Orders, after the completion of a very distinguished course of studies. The pathways in life of the

brothers seemed to diverge widely for a period. But it was only for a period, as they were destined to struggle together through one of the most troubled periods of our history; and as the character of Hugh De Burgo was much influenced by the career of his brother John, some of the leading events in the life of the latter must occupy our attention.

At the close of a distinguished collegiate course at Lisbon, John was selected to defend a public "thesis" against a chosen disputant selected by the College of Evora. The disputation was continued for three days, when the laurels were awarded to John de Burgo. The fame of his abilities had reached Salamanca, and that old university did him the honour of inviting him to take part within its halls in a similar friendly academic contest. Here, too, he was victorious; and in generous recognition of his abilities, the degree of Doctor of S. Theology was conferred upon him. After those noteworthy triumphs, he returned to his native diocese to engage in the laborious and then dangerous duties of a secular priest. Such, however, were the evidences of ability and zeal which he displayed in the discharge of his sacred duties, that he was appointed to the episcopal charge of the See of Clonfert in the eventful year 1641. The ceremony of his consecration in the following year was celebrated as an event of great importance. Fires blazed on the slopes of the Echte ranges in manifestation of popular joy. Even the aristocracy shared in the rejoicing. The Earl of Clanricarde with many of his distinguished friends journeyed to the remote church of Kinalahan, and graced the ceremony by their presence. O'Queely, the saintly and patriotic Archbishop of Tuam, was the consecrating prelate. He fondly hoped that the influence of the newly consecrated would secure many powerful friends for the cause which he loved so well. He was not destined to live and experience the sadness of disappointment. Immediately after his consecration, Dr. De Burgo was nominated one of the representative Spiritual Peers in the national Parliament at Kilkenny. His connection with the Marquis of Clanricarde caused his accession to be regarded as a marked gain to the cause of the Confederates. It was also expected that the active

support of Clanricarde would be thus finally secured. But these hopes were not destined to be realised. Clanricarde never joined the Confederates, and from the moment of the Bishop's consecration, he seems to have cautiously laboured to utilize his kinsman's great influence to weaken the national cause.

Such was the position which John De Burgo held in Ireland when his brother Hugh was associated with Count Gall in the Irish Embassy to the German court.

In the letters and despatches which he carried with him to that court, very special and just emphasis was laid on the oppression of the Puritans. It was expressly stated in those documents, that the "Irish had been driven to arms by the *ferocity* of the Puritans, who seek to extinguish at once their religion and their nation." And they added with truth that the cruelty exercised against them was but intensified by their fidelity to their king. In the letters which he received for presentation to other European courts, similar statements were made.

In his letters to the Duke of Bavaria, it was stated that the war against the Puritans in which his country was engaged, was one against "the enemies of the Church of God, and of the Princes of the Christian world." The aims and objects of his countrymen are as forcibly stated in his letters to the Prince of Liege. The *bondage* which they are represented as endeavouring to shake off is described as "worse than Egyptian." They deemed it a glorious enterprise to enter on that struggle in defence of the laws of God and of His Church. To shed their blood in testimony of their earnestness, they deemed as still more glorious. But to sacrifice all—lay down their lives in the attainment of their object, they regarded as the most cherished object of their ambition.

Fr. Burke was entrusted with other important communications. These to the Archbishop of Mechlin, and to the Nuncios at Flanders and Liege are noteworthy.

In those documents it was shown how the Irish were plundered of their land, and despoiled of everything; how they were cast into prison, and sent into exile; and how, not

content with those acts of cruelty, their enemies were then engaged in a supreme effort to utterly eradicate the Catholic religion from the land. Conscious that "their cause was the cause of God," they arose, though unarmed, against their enemies. So they assured the Holy Father himself, when with the heroic confidence of soldiers of the cross, they appealed to him for his aid and benediction. Rich and poor were united by fellowship in common calamities. The condition of the Catholic gentry was extremely sad. Robbed of their estates, they were, in many instances, forced to eke out an existence as tillers of the soil. Many died broken-hearted; and many others became raving maniacs under the consciousness of their wrongs.

The speedy return to Ireland of several experienced Irish officers, who were engaged in military service on the continent, was a source of much encouragement. Of those exiled patriots we have already mentioned the name of Colonel John Burke, who was appointed by his countrymen Lieutenant-General of Connaught; Owen O'Neill had also served in Spain, and enjoyed there a rank and reputation worthy of the representative of the Royal House of Ulster. In July, 1642, he returned to Ireland to sacrifice all for his country's cause. He was accompanied by many other Irish officers who, like him, returned to take their part in the gallant struggle for faith and fatherland. Several distinguished foreigners also volunteered their services, among whom the names of Count Overmere, Captain Oliver, and Antonio Vanderhipp, may be specially mentioned.

The Confederates were already giving encouraging proofs of their earnest activity. They were in possession of the most important ports on the western and southern coasts. The vessels in Wexford harbour were all manned by seamen from the town, under the Confederate flag. A vessel from Dunkirk "of good strength" had arrived to aid them, and had captured as many as five or six of the Parliamentary cruisers. Many other vessels were daily expected.

Fr. Burke's appeals were already bearing fruit. The Archbishop of Mechlin, to whom he had appealed in his country's name, had forwarded valuable assistance. His

Grace's welcome aid was fittingly forwarded to O'Neill, Ireland's greatest soldier. To Fr. Burke was entrusted the pleasing duty of giving him assurance of Ireland's gratitude. He was frequently reminded by the Council, that they sadly needed money. "The want of money," they wrote, "keeps us back from doing those things that are expected of us." His attention was also directed to matters of even minute detail, such as guns and war materials. Powder was much needed. He was therefore urged to send experienced men of that *trade* "and of any other that hath relacion to warr," to this country. As such an agent as "the Lord General of Leinster Ladye" did not hesitate to use her influence at Namur to induce MM. Le Fever and Goure, powder manufacturers, to come to Ireland to "worcke for the publique use at 6s. *le peice per diem*," we may be well assured that the matter was carefully attended to by Fr. Burke. A large quantity of ammunition had been already forwarded by him to Galway in charge of General Burke. The Council had occasion to point out, however, that many of the skilled artisans who arrived, though "vast in their promises," were able to execute but little. In the letter of instructions which was forwarded to him in December, 1642, we find he was urged to hasten to them a printer, and "coyners of money."

Continued acts of oppression, exaction, and extortion, on the part of the governing party, had caused a wide-spread scarcity of money. An order for a new coinage was issued by the Supreme Council, on the 16th November, 1642. A quantity of copper coin was issued to the value of £4,000. There was also a considerable share of silver coin issued. "Silver half-crown pieces were issued, to the value and goodness of English money then current." As this looked like an unlawful encroachment on the prerogatives of the crown, the Supreme Council was careful to point out that the step was taken by them in the interests of his Majesty and of the country. Specimens of the coin then issued represent on one side a crowned king in a kneeling posture, playing on a crowned Irish harp. The motto is "Floreat Rex." The opposite side represents St. Patrick with a shamrock, explaining to a group of people the mystery of

the Holy Trinity. On the saint's left is a shield with the arms of Dublin, and the inscription "Ecce Grex."

In order to encourage the importation of food supplies, as well as of war materials, Fr. Burke was directed to publish amongst the Flemish merchants and traders, that all such supplies might be imported entirely free of "duties." His attention was directed in a special manner, to the need of experienced seamen for the then growing Irish navy. A form of proclamation was drawn up by the Council, and forwarded to him for circulation. The object of the proclamation was to induce foreign seamen to engage in Irish service. The successful results of his labours in this respect are gratefully acknowledged by "his loving friends" of the Supreme Council in the letters quaintly dated "the last of December," "We find the benefit of your industry," they write, "by the resort of frigates unto us, and the encouragement which is given to adventurers to come upon our coasts, who are so well satisfied with their usage here that they now heartily affect the service."

Francis Oliver, to whom we have already referred, was a Belgian officer highly esteemed by the Irish, and one in whom Fr. Burke took a special interest. Indeed, it was mainly on the strength of Fr. Burke's recommendation, that he was appointed to the important office of Commander of a vessel named "St. Michael the Archangel," and Vice-Admiral of the Confederates. His squadron would consist of his own vessels as well as of "such as should join with him." He had already captured some prizes. These, as well as such as he might afterwards seize, he was free to convey into any ports in the kingdom which might be in the possession of the Confederates. The commission which was granted by the Supreme Council to their "well-beloved friend," Captain Francis Oliver, was dated from Kilkenny, on the "last of December, 1642." The terms of the commission were flattering as well as favourable to him. Foreign States and Potentates were asked "to defend, assist, and favour the said Captain." It is clear that much was expected from him; but those high hopes were not destined to be realized. He was soon after captured at Holland with his vessels and men, and detained

a prisoner there. The intelligence occasioned feelings of great uneasiness amongst the Confederates. Fr. Burke received a letter on the subject, dated 8th August, 1643, in which the Supreme Council expressed their deep sense of "the sufferings of Captain Oliver, and doe give you many thanks for your care of him, and of the Kingdom's honour in him."

But a greater disappointment awaited them. Belgian sympathy seemed to have undergone a sudden and an unexpected change. An edict was published at Dunkirk, by which all Belgian subjects in the service of the Confederates were required to return immediately to their country. Such an edict was calculated to prejudice the cause of Ireland in the face of Europe. Consequently the feelings with which the intelligence of its publication was received in Ireland, were those of indignant surprise. And when it is remembered that the number of Belgians then engaged in the service of the Confederates did not exceed twelve, it will be obvious that the publication of the edict was not dictated either by a sense of national necessity or utility. The Supreme Council lost no time in addressing a note of remonstrance to Don Francisco De Melos, Governor of Flanders. They expressed surprise that the sympathy and assistance which he had extended to them since the beginning of their just war, should be thus unexpectedly withdrawn. They were naturally surprised it should have occurred at a time when the cause of His Majesty of Spain, and that of Ireland, were identified. As the *execution* of the decree rested with His Excellency, they expressed a hope that he will not allow it to injure their cause. And finally they informed him that they commissioned Fr. Burke to wait on His Excellency, with full powers to arrange the difficulty. He received, however, very minute instructions for his guidance in this delicate matter. He was instructed to inform the Governor that the publication of the edict, or of the "placarr," as the quaint language of the letter expresses it, was the occasion of blank astonishment in Ireland. He was to speak of the services rendered by Ireland to the houses of Austria and Spain. They were services which should be remembered. Even within

the preceding sixty years, whole regiments of Irishmen were engaged in their service in Spain, and Flanders, Germany, Italy, and even in the Indies. Ireland's devotion to Spanish interests in the evil days of Elizabeth entailed upon many noble Irish families the loss of estates and fortune. Under these circumstances it was but natural that Fr. Burke, as representative of the Irish nation, should emphasize the magnitude of those striking proofs of fidelity, on the part of his countrymen, to Spanish interests. Nor had that fidelity grown weaker, even in the all absorbing struggle in which Ireland was then engaged. She had, at that very time, equipped two vessels to convey two thousand men to engage in the service of His Majesty of Spain. They had actually written on the subject to the Spanish Secretary of State. But as De Melos might have known nothing of the matter, Fr. Burke was authorised to give him a knowledge of the facts, should he deem it "necessary."

The most correct estimate of Fr. Burke's success in this and in the other missions in which he was engaged, may, perhaps, be formed from the letters addressed to him by the Supreme Council. A letter addressed to him from Clonmel, on the 7th April, 1645, contains the following flattering estimate of his acts:—

"You have given us occasion to approve of your endeavours, and we believe that nothing is omitted by you for the advancement of our cause that lies within the reach of a prudent and careful patriot. . . . We give you assurance that we are well satisfied with your carriage, and doe approve of your actions."

It cannot be easy to exaggerate the labour and anxiety attaching to the execution of commissions of such importance as those to which we have briefly referred. Yet we are satisfied that an unselfish patriotism, an absorbing desire to see the wrongs of his fellow-countrymen redressed, were the influences by which Fr. Burke was sustained in prosecuting his great mission. Emoluments there were none. Even the means of defraying *necessary expenses* seem to have been in his case both uncertain and insufficient. He was, indeed, assured by the Supreme Council that they were aware that the expenses incurred by him as their agent were necessarily

great; yet they can adopt no more satisfactory means of aiding him in defraying those expenses, than to recommend him to borrow £100 from Mr. Richard Everard, or "any other merchant." Should this rather precarious means fail, then—and only then—was he authorized to deduct that small sum "out of any moneys which for the use of this Kingdom should come into his hands." This was at the best but a poor and precarious provision for such a man. But those were days of heroic self-sacrifice.

J. A. FAHEY, P.P.

(*To be continued.*)

ON PROBABILISM.—II.

PROBABILISM, as we all know, appertains to conscience, and represents a special phase of it. Very properly, therefore, its treatment ranks after that of "human acts," conscience being concerned in giving practical application in detail to the general principles laid down in the doctrine of "human acts." Conscience, on this account, places us face to face with acts as they occur, one by one, in our everyday life, and tells us for our moral guidance how we are to act in each instance; and ever true to its derivative import, *con-scientia*, it guides our moral conduct in accordance with the knowledge which the understanding places before it.

St. Thomas describing the various functions of conscience says of it, that it testifies, that it binds or impels, that it accuses or approves, excites remorse or self-reproach; and he explains himself by noticing, that according as we have done good or evil, conscience testifies in one direction or the other; also when anything occurs to be done, or not to be done, we decide accordingly, and in doing so our conscience binds, or impels us; and finally, we look back on what we have done or not done, whereupon conscience accuses, approves, excites remorse or self-reproach. (*P. i., 2, 79.*)

Cardinal Newman treating of conscience in a similar comprehensive way speaks as follows in his own inimitable style:—

“Conscience considered as a moral sense, as an intellectual sentiment, is a sense of admiration, of approbation and blame; but it is something more than a moral sense—it is always emotional—it always involves the recognition of a living object, towards which it is directed. So, as is the case we feel responsibility, are ashamed, are frightened, at transgressing the voice of conscience; this implies that there is one to Whom we are responsible, before Whom we are ashamed, Whose claims upon us we fear. If on doing wrong we feel the same tearful, broken-hearted sorrow which overwhelms us on hurting a mother; if on doing right we enjoy the same sunny serenity of mind, the same soothing, satisfactory delight, which follows on our receiving praise from a father, we certainly have within us the image of some person to whom our love and veneration look, in whose smile we find our happiness, for whom we yearn, towards whom we direct our pleadings, in whose anger we are troubled, and waste away. These feelings in us are such as require for their existing cause an intelligent being. We are not affectionate towards a stone, nor do we feel ashamed before a horse, or a dog; we have no remorse or compunction in breaking mere human law; yet, so it is, conscience excites all these painful emotions, confusion, foreboding, self-condemnation; and on the other hand, it sheds upon us a deep peace, a sense of security, a resignation and a hope, which there is no sensible, no earthly object to elicit. “The wicked flees, when no one pursueth;” then why does he flee? Whence his terror? Who is it that he sees, in solitude, in darkness, in the hidden chambers of his heart? If the cause of these emotions does not belong to this visible world, the object to which his perception is directed must be supernatural and Divine, and thus the phenomena of conscience as a dictate avail to impress the imagination with the picture of a Supreme Governor, a Judge, just, holy, powerful, all-seeing, retributive, and is the creative principle of religion, as the moral sense is the principle of ethics.” (*Grammar of Assent*, p. 106.)

Not only does conscience guide us in the ever occurring details of life in accordance with the light or knowledge presented to it by the understanding, but it, moreover, prompts the understanding to acquire constantly increasing knowledge, that we may know more fully, and fulfil more faithfully our various obligations towards God, our neighbour, and ourselves in our passage through this life to the end of our creation. Thus it is that our desire of happiness, a desire which no enjoyment in this world can fully satisfy,

is within us the motive principle, or main-spring of conscience, making us feel the sentiment so touchingly expressed by St. Augustine, "My heart is restless, O my God, my heart is restless, nor can it rest till it rest in Thee."

In obeying the promptings of conscience for increased knowledge with a view to our moral guidance we recognize our obligations under the natural law under the Divine positive law, and under human law as well civil as ecclesiastical, and hence result the well known terms of "law" and "liberty" which are in such frequent use in the discussion of questions respecting Probabilism.

The preacher of God's Word, and the minister of the Sacrament of Penance are by their education and everyday practice, familiar with their ordinary work, and doubts and difficulties are of exceptional occurrence to them. But when they occur, they raise the question, do any of the before-mentioned laws decide the point at issue, or do they leave the agent free to act at his own discretion under the general obligation of referring the course he adopts to God alone as the ultimate end of all "human acts," and paying due regard as well to object and circumstances in accordance with the required conditions of moral rectitude, so as to comply with the Apostolic maxim: "*Whether you eat or drink, or whatsoever else you do; do all to the glory of God.*" (1 Cor. x., 31.)

In solving this question we are to recollect that we are not to expect metaphysical, or mathematical certitude to stay our mind upon. We must be satisfied with reasons or motives of a less coercive character. The Almighty, as the Scriptures tell us, "*has ordered all things in measure, and number and weight.*" (Wisd. xi. 21.) But He has not been pleased to give us rules of such precision in the course we are to pursue for our moral guidance. It may have been the design of His adorable wisdom to allow us a certain range of latitude for serving Him in a generous spirit according to the maxim: "*God loveth a cheerful giver*" (2. Cor. ix., 7), in order that he may give in return "*good measure, and pressed down, and shaken together, and running over into our bosom,*" according to His most gracious promise. (Luke vi., 38.)

And may it not also be His blessed wish, without interfering with our free will, to reserve room for the action of His Divine grace in the help we constantly stand in need of, that, in accordance with the prayer the Church puts into our mouth, "He may prevent all our actions by His holy inspirations, and carry them on by His gracious assistance, that every prayer and work of ours may always begin from Him, and be ended as begun by Him?"

Nevertheless, as doubts and difficulties come in our way, we are bound to stay our hand, and try to acquire, as best we can, a moral persuasion such as prudent, enlightened and upright men deem sufficient to warrant the conduct we are to pursue. In this endeavour we frequently find ourselves oscillating, so to say, between "law" and "liberty" in the technical sense already explained, and our authors would conduct us along a certain path by stages indicated by the well known titles, "*probabilissima*," "*probabilior*," "*aeque-probabilis*," "*minus probabilis*," "*tenuiter probabilis*," all indicating motives in different degrees, whilst in reference to "law" we have the titles "*tutissima*," "*tutior*," "*tuta*," and "*minus tuta*," and with regard to authority, "*communissima*," "*communior*," "*communis*," and "*minus communis*." It is not necessary to explain these qualifying expressions. They explain themselves sufficiently at least for the purpose I have in view. I merely recite them in order to point out the arms with which our probabilistic disputants carry on the war of Probabilism. In a field so vast at least in the sense of furnishing ground for disputation, it is by no means a matter of wonder, that there should be extreme views, and in opposite directions, and that the extremists should not be very complimentary to each other. The laxists on their side were only too free in accusing the rigorists of following the example of the Scribes and Pharisees of old "*by binding heavy and insupportable burdens, and laying them on men's shoulders, whilst with a finger of their own they would not move them*," as also "*of shutting the Kingdom of Heaven against men, they themselves not entering in, and not suffering those to enter that were going in*." (*Matt. xxiii.*) On the other side, the rigorists taking their parable from Ezechiel the prophet charged their

opponents with "*sewing cushions under every elbow, and making pillows for the heads of every age to catch souls,*" (xiii. 18), pretending to conduct them to heaven by the wide gate, and along the broad way that leadeth to destruction. It became necessary for authority to interpose "*with a strong hand and a stretched-out arm;*" and Pope after Pope, through a whole century condemned wholesale, on one side and the other, their extreme teachings as extracted and formulated in definite propositions both in dogma and morality.

This lopping off on both sides narrowed the field of disputation to questions on mere Probabilism, and so having the ground cleared I feel in a position to state the purpose I have in view, which is simply to show that these questions, though warmly debated in our treatises on conscience, have, in point of fact, a very limited bearing on the practice of our Sacred Ministry, either in the pulpit or in the sacred tribunal of Penance. To carry out this purpose it will be only necessary to indicate the questions in dispute, at least the leading questions, on which the others depend, and bring forward the arguments on which I rely to establish my view.

The whole controversy turns on the questions of Probabilism, in one direction, and Antiprobabilism, or, as otherwise expressed, Probabiliorism, on the other; and we are to intercalate the middle question of Equiprobabilism between them, and, as St. Liguori stands forth so prominently in the discussion, we may be glad to have such a master for the explanation of the terms we will have to employ.

In his treatise on conscience in his *Homo Apostolicus* he defines a probable conscience to be that, which relying on some probable opinion forms to itself a practical dictate of reason (*dictamen rationis*) out of reflex or concomitant principles, for acting licitly. He then proceeds to point out that a probable opinion is that which is based on a grave motive, sufficient to gain over the assent of a prudent man, with, however, a reasonable fear of the motive in opposition to it; whereas a more probable opinion relies on a graver motive with some fear, nevertheless, of an opposite motive as being yet probable; and the equally probable opinion is balanced between motives of equal force on either

side; and he further observes, that these motives may be intrinsic as furnished by the subject itself, or extrinsic as resulting from authority outside the subject, but bearing in some way upon it, and that the motives of both kinds may relate either to "the law involved in a particular case, or a fact or facts under the law."

Having laid down these and some other preliminary notions the holy Doctor proceeds to develop what he terms his "moral system," and in doing so he sets forth the following three propositions:—

The first relates to an opinion *on the side of law* as being *certainly* more probable than an opposite opinion *in favour of liberty*, and he asserts, that in such a case we are by all means bound to follow the former opinion.

The second proposition supposes an opinion *on the side of liberty*, being merely probable, or equally probable as compared with the opinion *on the side of law*, and he insists in this case, that we are not free to follow the former opinion as being merely probable.

His third proposition supposes a concurrence or opposition of two equally probable opinions, one *on the side of liberty* and the other *on the side of law*, and he alleges that this concurrence or opposition furnishes a doubt as to whether there be a law at all in the case, or what amounts to the same, whether the law has been promulgated, and that on account of this doubt the opinion in favour of liberty prevails on the ground, that an uncertain law cannot induce a certain obligation; and he here enters into a lengthened course of argument to establish this proposition, which accordingly he adopts in his *Homo Apostolicus*, as the cardinal point of his doctrine with respect to Probabilism.

According to this exposition it would appear that the Saint was, at least when he so explained himself, an Equiprobabilist, and had a large following in that system. On the other hand he was opposed by the Antiprobabilists or the Probabiliorists, who insisted, that to be warranted in taking *the side of liberty*, mere probability was not sufficient, nor even an equal probability, but a still higher degree of probability was required in the supposed concurrence of

motives. Indeed, it is not easy to fix the Saint as being invariable, and unswerving in his teaching and practice on the subject. This may be owing to the nature of moral certitude, and still more of probability, which had to be debated with no better standard than human prudence, or the enlightened estimation of mankind.

I see in a very elaborate *brochure*, which owes its origin to the elevation of the Saint to the dignity of Doctor of the Church, the question discussed as to his precise form of Probabilism, and it would seem, according to the author, that the Saint's views underwent considerable modification at different periods of his life. The *brochure* bears the title *Vindicie Balleriniæ, seu gustus recognitionis vindiciarum Alphonsianarum, &c.* It was occasioned by a regrettable incident, which, so far as it went, cast a gloom for the moment over the joy with which the well-merited honour paid to the Saint was hailed by the universal Church.

Already had the celebrated Ballerini differed in some points from the teaching of St. Liguori, and he felt he had a right to do so, as St. Liguori himself had differed in his day from St. Thomas, St. Bonaventure, and other first class theologians, but the curt and unceremonious character of Ballerini's style offended some of the disciples of St. Liguori, the Rédemptorists, and when the process came on for conferring the title of Doctor on the Saint it so happened that the Promoter of the Faith in the discharge of his official obligation of objecting to the proceeding drew his objections from the points in question of Ballerini's dissent from the teaching of St. Liguori. This gave occasion to the idea that Ballerini was opposed to the Doctorate of the Saint, and some members of the Redemptorist body deemed it a duty to their holy founder to vindicate his teaching, and in doing so they dealt rather severely with their adversary. Ballerini was thus put on his defence, and the *brochure* to which I refer was the result. In this production the author in tracing the teaching of St. Liguori makes him out, at different periods, a Probabilist, an Equiprobabilist, and a Probabiliorist. I happen to have in my possession a copy of an autograph letter I saw some years

ago in the archives of a community in Naples, addressed by the Saint himself to the then Superior of the community under date the 15th July, 1777, exactly ten years before his death, which shows what his attitude was on the subject at the time, when he was already eighty years of age.

The following is the letter, as I had it copied, and attested by the transcriber:—

REV. MIO PADRE E SIGNORE IN GESU MARIA E GIUSEPPE,

Mi è stata detta come cosa certa che il Superiore de' vostri Padri in Bari va tacciando per quella Provincia i miei compagni, i quali anche son chiamati alle missioni per che contorni, che noi siamo Probabilisti, e teniamo una dottrina larga. I miei fratelli sieguono la stessa dottrina che tengo io. Io per altro non sono Rigorista, ma neppure sono Probabilista, e dico, come ho scritto in più mie opere di Morale, che l'opinione que sta per libertà non può seguirsi, quando ella non ha altro appoggio che de essere probabile. All'incontro dico che l'opinione, la quale sta per la legge, deve seguirsi necessariamente sempre che ella è più probabile. Onde replico che io non sono Rigorista, né Probabilista ma vero Probabiliorista; e dico che oggidì, in mi meglio si sono delucidate le cose circa questa materia, che prima stava così confusa, questa è il sistema, che deve tenersi da tutti.

Prego V. P. Reverendissima di scrivere al mentovato Superiore di Bari ciò che qui ho scritto, acciocchè muti opinione circa nostra dottrina. So bene che alcuni anche in Napoli ci han caricati dello stesso difetto, ma spero, che poi siensi sincerati leggendo le diverse opere stampate, che ho dovuto pubblicare per liberar me, ed i miei compagni dalla predetta taccia. Spero questo favore da V. P. la quale sa quanto io e tutti i miei Fratelli vivono ossequiosi verso la sua Venerabilissima Congregazione. Resto raccomandandomi alle sue orazioni, mentre con tutto il rispetto mi protesto

Di V. P. Reverendissima,

Divotissimo obligatissimo servitore vero,

ALPHONSO DE LIGGORI, VESCOVO.

NOCERA DI PAGANI, 15 Luglio, 1777.

(Copiata sull' originale de verbo ad verbum.)

From this letter it appears certain that the Probabilism of the Saint, at least towards the end of his life, was of the Probabiliorist stamp, as he also leaves it to be inferred that he had exposed himself to be misunderstood by statements less distinct at earlier periods of his career, and this can be well conceived as an incident of the protracted discussions that were carried on with so much warmth on the matter.

A first condition for dialectic strife is a distinct understanding between the disputants as to the subjects and issues involved in their discussions, and this can hardly be, when the nature of the subject leaves it open to varying appreciations by different minds.

However, we know enough from what we have just seen of the distinctions of the Probabilistic controversy to enter upon the inquiry as to the practical effect, if any, this controversy exerts on the work of the sacred ministry, and I have made up my mind to think that however desirable it may be for the ecclesiastical student to be well made up on the subject, he will find it afterwards of very little practical use, either for the pulpit or the holy tribunal of Penance. But I feel I must reserve this view for a further paper, hoping you will kindly reserve space for it in the next number of the RECORD.

A VETERAN PRACTITIONER.

IS THE IRISH LANGUAGE WORTH PRESERVING ?

WHAT a melancholy, as well as deeply interesting subject for reflection, is the question asked at the head of this paper ! How humiliating to national pride, to reflect, that our language should be now in such a precarious condition. How painful to think, that after weathering the fierce storms of so many centuries, in its perilous passage down the stream of time, we should now see its very existence threatened as a spoken medium. An affirmative answer to the question proposed is certain to be given by all those who love the ancient and cultured tongue of the Gaedhill, now admitted to be one of the oldest spoken in Europe, if not in the world. No doubt, the insular position of our country was the great means of saving it from the vicissitudes which befell languages amongst other branches of the human family. Should the chief of epic poets, Homer, again revisit the earth, he would no longer hear in the classic land of Greece the beauti-

.

ful language in which he sang his immortal lay. Were the prince of orators, Demosthenes, to thunder again in the Areopagus, he would not be understood. Should Cicero now stroll into the ancient Forum, he would hear a language different from that through which he was wont to entrance his auditory. But if Ollauh Fodla, the Irish Solon, who was their senior by centuries, reappeared again, he would hear his own musical language spoken not far from where Strongbow landed. When we ponder on this unquestionable fact, we are reminded of what has been said by that singularly able writer Thierry: "The Keltic language is destined to be as indestructible as the Keltic race itself."

Philologists usually divide into six branches the languages derived from the Aryan the primitive tongue spoken by those who lived in the high tablelands of Iran and Armenia. According to this classification Irish is placed fifth on the list. It is universally admitted, that our national language has an origin far beyond the period of authentic history. It extends far back into the shadowy past, until it seems lost in the mists of antiquity itself. The monuments to which Ireland can point as undoubted evidences of her ancient civilisation are as notably abundant as they are various. With pardonable pride she boasts of a yet more convincing proof in the living language of her people.

"Sweet tongue of our Druids and bards of past ages,
Sweet tongue of our monarchs, our saints, and our sages,
Sweet tongue of our heroes and free-born sires,
When we cease to preserve thee our glory expires."

All capable of expressing an opinion on the subject are unanimous in declaring, that language is one of the truest tests of a people's civilisation. This truth is self-evident if we contrast the cultured languages of Europe with those spoken by man in his savage state. When judged by this standard, then it must evidently follow that the ancient Gaedhill were, comparatively speaking, a highly civilised people. "The Irish language," says Vallancey, "is free from the anomalies, sterility, and heteroclite redundancies which mark the dialects of barbarous nations. It is rich and melodious, precise and

copious, and likewise affords those elegant conversions which no other than a thinking and lettered people can use or acquire." "Est quidam," observes Ussher, "hæc lingua Hibernica elegans cum primis et opulenta." "The Irish language is the greatest monument of antiquity perhaps now in the world. The perfection at which Gaelic arrived in Ireland in such remote ages is astonishing"—(*Scotch Gaelic Dictionary* by Shaw.) "L'Irlandais, par son extension, sa culture et l'ancienneté de ses monuments écrits, est de beaucoup la plus importante des dialectes Gaeliques."—(M. Pictet.) "The Keltic dialects," says Jamieson, "seem to excel in expressive names of a topographical kind. Their nomenclatures are pictures of the countries which they inhabit." "If," says that lover of his country's language and history, Dr. MacHale, "the Irish language were to perish as a living language, the topography of Ireland, if understood, would be a lasting monument of its significance."

Sir Wm. Betham says, "that the most ancient manuscripts in Europe are in the Irish language; and the oldest Latin ones are written by the hands of Irish monks." These writers were, no doubt, earnest students of the latter, as the language of the Church. Nevertheless, as their extant works sufficiently prove, they sedulously cultivated their own beautiful and copious vernacular, quite capable of expressing the most complex ideas without borrowing from the Latin or Greek, if we except ecclesiastical terms. It is our proud boast, that we had and still have a language in which our history and antiquities are recorded long before any of the nations of modern Europe could lay claim to any such inheritance.

It goes without saying that our literature suffered irreparable disasters at the hands of the plundering Scandinavians. As our old annalists assure us, they took a special delight in "burning and drowning the books of Erin." It is yet a proverb in the country, that whatever escaped destruction from these marauders met it at the hands of the English. The latter from the day they first landed on our shores, even unto this very hour, have left nothing undone in order to stamp out the national language. Witness the savage

enactments passed against it in the Parliament of Kilkenny, A.D. 1367. The same fiendish policy was constantly enforced by the ruling powers with a view to banish the Irish language outside the English Pale. In the year 1483, we find the Archbishop of Dublin petitioning Parliament for leave to use the national tongue, as its outlawry in the very vicinity of Dublin "caused souls to be piteously neglected." In 1537, reign of King Henry VIII., according to the behests of that despot, a most stringent act was passed for the purpose of extending "the English habit and language." It was decreed that all spiritual promotions in Ireland, on becoming void, should be filled by candidates who were pledged under the severest penalties to use the English language and no other. If such could not be found, then the nominator should cause four proclamations to be made on four successive market days in the town adjacent to the said spiritual promotion. This formality being carried out, and the aspirant found, on swearing to observe the statute, he was at once inducted. All must candidly say that this was rather a novel way of collating to benefices, charged with the care of souls, but one quite in unison with the clerical pretensions of that much-married monarch Henry VIII., the father of Anglicanism. Suffice it to say, that in the reigns of his successors, the national language was proscribed with a hatred that knew no bounds. Every means at hand was turned to account solely with a view to insure its complete destruction.

Were it not for the self-sacrificing exertions of our continental scholars, Erin's exiles, who carried on the writing and printing of Irish books at Paris, Antwerp, Rome, and notably at Louvain, and other seats of learning, the most of the richest treasures of our language would have been hopelessly lost in those dark and dreadful times when the infamous Penal Code held sway. Even short as the period is, comparatively speaking, that has elapsed since the Four Masters and Keating wrote: and yet what destruction has befallen our literature. Many of the works which they used are not now in existence. Everything considered, it is little short of a miracle to think how we preserved so much of our literature in the midst of such bitterly hostile elements.

Some will say "that as the national language is dying out, better let it disappear as soon as possible, as it is an obstacle in the way of acquiring English." This is totally opposed to what we see done elsewhere. In the words of Dr. Franklin, "the man who acquires two languages is twice a man." See what the Welsh have done in the way of reviving their tongue, which about a century since was almost extinct. The Hungarians on obtaining autonomy decreed that their own tongue, and not the German, should be the official language. The Czechs in Bohemia are preserving their vernacular despite any opposition to the contrary. The Flemings, for some years past, have done a great deal to revive their tongue, which for centuries had been sadly neglected. With these examples before us shall we be disheartened? There was a time, in the chequered history of our country, when there was less Irish spoken than at present. According to the last census, about one-fifth of the population was returned as speaking or understanding the language of ancient Erin. This is by far a larger percentage than that accounted for in the previous one, although we are all painfully aware that the population during the decade was mercilessly decimated. Such a fact unquestionably demonstrates that the study of the language was on the increase. The Society for the Preservation of the Irish Language, founded a few years since, has already done excellent work in the way of saving from destruction that priceless inheritance, the Keltic tongue. That such is the case is patent to all who take the trouble of reading the Society's annual Reports. Within a short period 90,000 of its publications in the interests of the language have been sold, and new editions are passing through the Press. Through the efforts of the Society, Irish has now a place in the Intermediate course of education, and with very encouraging results. It is also recognised in the curriculum of the Royal University. After a great deal of diplomacy and pressure on the part of the Society, the Commissioners of so-called National Education were induced to grant certain concessions in the way of teaching Irish in the primary schools. The boon which they seemed to bestow was, from experience,

found to be almost worthless. Tantalus-like, the people in the Irish-speaking districts could not avail themselves of the scheme, hedged in, as it was, with conditions which rendered it practically inoperative. It is true that the Commissioners have to a certain extent placed the teaching of Irish on the same basis as Greek and Latin, that is to say, by paying according to the programme for examination ten shillings a pass for each successful candidate. But beyond this they do nothing for the cultivation of the language. They afford no facilities whereby teachers in training may qualify for its efficient teaching. What renders the anomaly so glaring is, that they appoint in their own Training College professors of Greek, Latin, &c., &c., and pay them liberal salaries, whilst no such thing is done for the national language. Hence, we find that teachers totally ignorant of Irish are occasionally sent to teach in districts of the country where that language is still the vernacular. Under these circumstances is it any wonder that the reports of the school inspectors from these localities are such deplorable reading? If they were capable of examining the children in their own language, we may feel confident in saying that they would not receive so many meaningless answers. But how could it be otherwise? Only quite recently Irish has been placed on the programme of examination for the Inspectorship of National Schools. All capable of offering an unprejudiced opinion in the matter will at once admit that the practice of endeavouring to teach English in the Irish-speaking districts to pupils unacquainted with the former, and through its medium, is opposed to every principle of education, and tends to perpetuate ignorance, of which unfortunately we have abundant proof. In the twenty-second annual Report of the National Board of Education, p. 75, Sir Patrick Keenan, now a resident Commissioner, says:—

“Many good men seem to forget that the people might know both Irish and English . . . The shrewdest people in the world are those who are bilingual. But the most stupid children I have ever met with are those who were learning English whilst endeavouring to forget Irish.”

In the primary schools the obvious course manifestly is,

to teach the children English through the medium of the Irish, just as we find the bilingual system successfully carried out in other countries. The action of the Commissioners, in the case in question, is such an outrage on common sense that in no other civilised country in the world would it be tolerated for an hour. Besides they will not allow Irish to be taught to any pupils under the fifth class, which practically puts it out of the school altogether. None are better aware than the Commissioners, that in those districts of the country where Irish is still the vernacular the children of the peasantry are too poor to remain sufficiently long so that they may qualify to learn the national language according to their programme. Hence the reason of the rule. No doubt with a view to render their designs perfect, they have also decreed that it must not be taught during ordinary school hours. It is self-evident from the foregoing facts that the Commissioners tolerate the teaching of Irish for the sake of appearances, whilst at the same time they are determined to give it an euthanasia, and bury it out of sight as being indissolubly linked with a civilisation to which they have no claim. How true are the words of that sincere lover of his country the much lamented Dr. MacHale: "The so-called national system is the grave of the Irish language." The Kilkenny Statute no longer directly affects it, as it did in the mournful past. A far more deadly and disastrous effect is produced by the operation of the National system, as well as by the apathy of some amongst us who should entertain different sentiments. Here we have the modern tally with a vengeance. When we say now-a-days, let us preserve our glorious tongue, we are invariably met with the usual *cui bono*? "Leave it to the universities." We all know sadly and too well what is the result. Multitudes of our manuscripts now lie mouldering on the library shelves, with scarcely a person capable of making them known to the public. They are far less attended to than Egyptian and Etruscan inscriptions. If the living language is allowed to die out, what provision are we making to have these treasures made known in the future? It is very doubtful whether we would ever have such Keltic scholars as O'Connor, O'Donovan, O'Curry, and many others, unless they

spoke the language naturally from their childhood. It is palpable to any intelligence that without a knowledge of Irish the nomenclature, history, and antiquities of the country must ever remain a sealed book. How humiliating to reflect that in the curriculum of our schools and colleges modern languages have a very prominent place, and perhaps, learned in a way that might pass current in certain circles, whilst not a word is said about our noble tongue, which, in the opinion of the most eminent philologists, is fit to rank with the classic languages of antiquity. Everything considered, it would indeed be an indelible disgrace should we allow our national tongue hitherto so proscribed by the foreigner, and bequeathed to us with such sacrifices by our ancestors, to perish through neglect. Such censurable indifference on our part would evidently imply an avowed contempt for all that men have hitherto loved or respected. We would indeed prove ourselves unworthy sons of Erin, and justly deserving the unmitigated censure of posterity should we not appreciate our mother tongue, connected, as it is so, intimately with that glorious period of our history, when Ireland bore that time-honoured appellation, "*Insula Sanctorum et Doctorum*." Its disappearance from the category of spoken languages would be disastrous alike to the interests of history and philology. It should indeed stimulate us to cultivate it, when we now see it so much studied throughout the world for the sake of philology. The cultured Germans have taken the lead in this movement. Zeuss, the renowned Keltic scholar, was the first in the field. He wrote his great work, *Grammatica Keltica*, from the old time-worn manuscripts, written ages ago by the hands of Irish monks, who brought the blessings of religion and civilization to the Fatherland. In his efforts he has been ably seconded by the labours of Schleicher, Ebel, Bopp, Windisch and Zimmer. France, too, has supplied able students in the same field, namely, de Jubainville, Gaidoz, and Lizeray. Switzerland claims its Pictet. Italy, its Nigra and Ascoli. Scotland, which owes so much to Gaelic civilisation, has earnest advocates of our language in the persons of Blackie, Geddes, Mackey, and many others. In America, also, Irish is

cultivated with an energy characteristic of the great Republic. Even the Saxon, whose hatred of our language in former times knew no bounds, as if ashamed of the past, and with a view to make the *amende honorable*, has founded chairs for its culture in his universities. Already he has given us Keltic scholars whose names have acquired a world-wide reputation, namely, Latham, Pritchard, Arnold, and Max Müller. Such being the case, shall we be indifferent concerning the national trust of our language, when other nations are doing so much in its behalf? Shall we allow this priceless inheritance, our glorious tongue, to perish, inseparably connected, as it is, with the glory, the fame, the history, and the traditions of our noble and long suffering land?

P. A. YORKE, C.C.

SOME CATHOLIC REMINISCENCES OF THE INDIAN MUTINY, 1857.—II.

ABOUT eleven miles from Meerut is a small village, called Sirdhana, once the residence of the Begum Somroo, a Catholic Princess. Strange and extraordinary are the stories told of this high personage. One thing is certain—she was talented in many respects, and a great diplomat. The same may be said of Indian noble ladies in general. This has been attributed to the idle and luxurious lives they lead in the harem, smoking the hookah, and eating betel nut. They have thus plenty of time for brewing mischief; sometimes to the extent of poisoning relations, rivals, and high officials. In the village already mentioned, stands the modern palace of her highness, the old palace being converted into a native industrial school, now called St. John's College. It is intended for native boys who are Catholics. In it they are taught English, and learn different trades. They become carpenters, shoemakers, painters, &c. Here also is a magnificent church built principally of white marble, after the plan of St. Peter's in Rome. It is said to have cost the princess about a crore of rupees, or a million sterling of our money. There is a

colony of about two hundred native Catholics, all of whom are pensioners on the Begum's bounty. At her death she bequeathed a considerable sum of money to the Agra Mission, for the Church in Sirdhana, the resident priest, and the support of the school. I am not certain whether this money is still paid. All I know is, that when I was in Rome in 1870, there was litigation going on about the withdrawal of the bequest or its reduction to no small extent.

It is related of the princess that she appeared at the head of her troops, numbering 20,000 men, including artillery, cavalry and infantry, at the siege of Burtpore. And although the English general politely declined her services, still with the usual cleverness of her sex, she carried her point, and remained until the fall of the fortress. This was after the death of her husband, Sumroo. He was a German adventurer and a Catholic. Of this same individual we are told, that he gave much trouble to the English in their *amercations*, as he was in command of the native troops of different princes in the north-western provinces, always fighting against the foreigners. Owing to his good services, he obtained the Jagheer of Sirdhana and the adjacent country, and his wife by her diplomacy and winning ways got the English to confirm her territories to herself, and exempt them from the jurisdiction of the British civil power. The Begum from all accounts was a thorough soldier, and it is related of her, that while leading on her army, which was better drilled and equipped than the troops of many of the other native states, she exhibited a reckless intrepidity in the midst of the most frightful carnage. On one occasion, in the reign of Shah Alum, she saved the Mogul Empire by rallying and encouraging her own troops, when those of the king were flying before the enemy. Her highness was not only absolute in the field and in the palace, but sometimes would show her authority in ecclesiastical matters. On one occasion her chaplain, Fr. Julius Caesar, an Italian Capuchin, was preaching the usual homily after the Gospel on Sunday, and happened to touch rather plainly and sharply on the morals of the Court. Scarcely was Mass finished, when an aide-de-camp arrived in

the sacristy to tell the Padre Sahib that her highness was very angry, and that if he made use of such language again she would have him put in irons. The unpleasant consequence, however, did not happen to the good Father, as soon after he was raised to the episcopacy. In her declining years she would spend the whole morning, surrounded by her court, distributing alms in clothes, food and money to the poor and destitute. She also built a fine church and presbytery in Meerut.

The church, as we have already said, is built on the plan of St. Peter's. It is surrounded by beautiful gardens, and especially by groves of orange trees, lemon and citron, which perfume the air with their blossoms, and bend down their branches under a weight of golden fruit. In the left aisle of the church is a magnificent mausoleum, raised to the princess by her adopted son, Dyce Sombre, to whom she left all her property. A word about this young gentleman will not be out of place. He had no sooner got to Calcutta, than, of an evening playing billiards with a young surgeon of the Bengal army, he lost a lac of rupees—£10,000. On his arrival in London he was married to the daughter of Lord ——. The marriage did not prove a happy one, and owing to some of his Oriental customs he was pronounced insane. Yet, strange to say, after travelling through the continent, and presenting himself for examination in all the capital cities of Europe, he was declared to be sound and perfectly capable of taking care of himself and his property. *All* except England pronounced in his favour. When in Rome he purchased the beautiful monument we have spoken of at the cost of nearly £20,000. I can scarcely attempt to describe it, as being above any effort of mine. The whole of the interior of the floors and walls are of pure white marble. The tabernacle on the high altar is very chaste and rich, embellished with beautiful mosaics in rich patterns of sacred symbols, so delicately formed, that they look like embroidery on white satin. Behind the high altar are numerous sacristies, rooms, and apartments, and it was in those spacious and well ventilated quarters that his lordship established a convent of nuns, French and Irish, of the Order of Jesus and Mary.

They had some English boarders and native children as day scholars.

At the time of which we are about to speak, the revolt was in full blaze over nearly the whole of the north-western provinces. The most frightful accounts reached this peaceful retreat every day. The nuns did not fear so much for themselves as for the innocent little children under their charge. The chaplain, an Italian Capuchin, wrote to the officers in command in Meerut, begging for aid in arms and men. They may have received some arms, but as to men, none could be spared. What was to be done under the circumstances? The Reverend Father at once assembled all the native Christians, and plainly told them that, as there appeared no hope of succour, they should all receive the sacraments and prepare for death. He gave the religious and children the same instruction, and very soon all had fulfilled this important duty. At the same time, he did not neglect making some preparation for defence. All the great doors of the church were well fastened and secured, except one small one to serve as a sally-port. In the College stores were some old rusty native guns, and a few muskets; these with about two dozen scimitars he gave to the native Christians. Also he had two small brass cannon, souvenirs of the Begun's park of artillery. They were used principally in firing a *feu de joie* on great festivals. Again, he had a number of dummy cannon made of wood, painted and done up so as to represent pieces of ordnance of various calibre. All these he placed on the top of the church on the balcony. Still, there was a large vacant space in the centre, right facing the entrance gate, and commanding the road before the church. The deficiency was soon supplied. An old churn was discovered in the stores, and this peaceful machine was soon metamorphised, so as to represent a more warlike weapon. A carriage with huge wheels to support this "Woolwich Infant" was soon constructed, and all placed in position. Thus the fortifications seemed complete, at least in appearance. The Mahometans and Hindoos of the village and neighbourhood were most anxious to discover where the Padre Sahib had procured the monster gun, and when

passing the gate would invariably hasten their pace and stoop down most respectfully. Native Christians were placed as sentries all around the church to keep guard by day and night, in particular to keep off any examination of the armaments. At night all the colony of native Christians retired to the church, accommodating themselves as well as they could in the nave and aisles, while the chaplain, nuns, children, and a few natives occupied the roof. In the morning after Mass, the native Christians left for their several avocations. The Father during the day placed videttes at different and salient points to give immediate notice of the approach of any hostile force. Thus they spent many anxious days and nights in dread suspense of the future. At length came the dreadful news that the enemy was but a days' march from Sirdhana, and that the Goojurs, a low caste of Hindoos, were plundering and destroying the villages in the neighbourhood. As usual, all had returned in the evening to the church, but one and all felt some indescribable feeling that the approaching night would prove an eventful one ; and so it did.

Just here we should say in very truth, that the chaplain and Christians had no idea of making a deliberate fight for their lives. No ; all the warlike preparations were made merely to frighten ; certainly not to waste blood uselessly. To heaven alone, priest, nuns, children and native Christians looked for help. To God, through His Immaculate Mother, and the saints reigning in glory, all sent up fervent and incessant prayers in their hour of affliction. Night came on and soon they saw the near approach of the enemy. The insurgents entered the town of Sirdhana about four hundred yards from the church, and the work of destruction began. The bazaar is soon in flames, and now cries, shrieks and fiendish yells rend the air. After destroying the village, these infuriated demons march to the church in a body shouting as they advance "Death to the Christians." They surround the building, and set on fire the entrance-gate. The hour is two o'clock in the morning. All around is to be seen a lawless mob of thousands, yelling and frantically threatening destruction and death upon the poor inmates of

the church. At a short distance are visible the burning cabins of inoffensive natives, while the large torches carried by the insurgents fill the atmosphere with a lurid glare. Meantime on the roof of the church is gathered the "Pusillus Grex." The nuns are robed in their white habits, surrounded by their weeping children, who are also dressed in white. All are now prostrate in silent adoration before their God. They appear like fresh flowers, stainless, pure and white as the untrodden snow, soon to be cut down by one sweep of the furious tempest. A holy calm reigns amongst them, the glow of love is on their cheeks as they think on their glorious destiny, think, too, that ere another sun has risen they shall behold Him upon whom angels love to look, hear His sweet voice and feel His joyous welcome. Oh! love, indeed, is stronger than death. The good Father tells them their time is now come to bid adieu to this vale of tears, gives them the last absolution in *Articulo Mortis*, and administers the Holy Viaticum. He is now about to communicate himself, but first elevates the Most Adorable Body of our Lord, and with a lively faith exclaims, "Ne tradas bestiis animas confitentes tibi, et animas pauperum tuorum ne obliviscaris in finem."—(*Ps.* 73.) Scarcely is all this done when a profound silence followed, and the blood-thirsty infidels disperse! Evidently it was not in vain that the faithful Priest of God cried out, "Ne tradas bestiis, &c.," and that He the Omnipotent God had been invoked by his chosen ones in the Most Adorable Sacrament of the Altar.

But even another danger is apprehended, the approach of mutinous regiments on their way back to Delhi, as through Sirdhana lay the direct route. Crossids or couriers are again despatched to Meerut, urgently begging for aid. Some native cavalry who remained faithful, were asked to go to Sirdhana to escort the nuns and children to Meerut. The poor fellows said they were ready and willing but dreaded the undertaking as they were so few in number. Soon the whole station of Meerut heard of the perilous position of the priest, nuns, &c., and twelve chivalrous gentlemen volunteered for the work of rescue. Honour to whom honour is due, is an old adage; but what praise and credit should be allowed to

those heroes, all Protestants, we believe, who set out on this errand of charity! At break of day the party arrived at Sirdhana with some half dozen palanquin carriages, and nuns and children were speedily arranged in these vehicles. The sacred vessels, vestments, &c., had been previously buried, and the protection of the church left to the native Christians. Two of the gentlemen rode in front of the party as a sort of advance guard, but had not proceeded more than a few miles when they saw in the horizon clouds of dust, a certain sign of bodies of troops on the march. Still on they moved in fear and hope, when, alas, the spring of a carriage breaks, and a wheel comes off another! "Nil desperandum" seemed to be the motto for all; the nuns pray, and six of the cavaliers dismount and repair the damage. But an hour of precious time is lost, and their march must now be slow and cautious to avoid another mishap. At length all arrived safely in Meerut, and the nuns were located in an empty barrack until after the taking of Delhi. But the escape the party had by the break-down on their journey was providential, for after this escort had left Meerut, the sappers and miners corps mutinied, and were, at the very time of the mishap, but a short distance in front, crossing the same road to Delhi. The names of those gentlemen who so courageously escorted the nuns I do not know, otherwise I would mention them with sincere pleasure. After the fall of Delhi, the nuns returned to Sirdhana, where they found everything as safe as when they left it. How was this, when all the churches, colleges, convents and schools, all over the Agra Mission were utterly destroyed, nothing but the bare walls left standing? It was because, in Sirdhana, Mahometans and Hindoos respected the building, calling it their "Mother's Church."

Extraordinary were the reports current at the time in England and throughout Europe. So much was this the case that his Eminence the late Cardinal Wiseman, believing that all the missionaries in the north-western provinces had been massacred, sent out to India a number of Military Chaplains to supply their place. The Agra Mission lost but two during the Mutiny. Our saintly Fr. Zacharias, O.S.F.C., of whom

I have already spoken, as having been shot on the steps of the altar in Delhi, and another priest of whom I shall say a few words hereafter, Fr. Rooney, from Navan, Co. Meath, killed in Cawnpore.

There appeared in the *Tablet* of that period an account of the Sirdhana nuns, copied from a French paper published in Lyons. It said: "The nuns at Sirdhana near Meerut, were attacked by the insurgents, lost all their property, but were now in a valley in Thibet." Such a thing would be at the time impossible. It would require two months of a journey to reach Thibet, and involve considerable expense.

I know there have been other mutinies in India, and various symptoms of rebellion before the mutiny of 1857, but I am convinced that British rule in India was in greater danger during the first Seikh campaign in 1845 than at any other time. For had the Seikhs, once they came on British territory stood their ground and not re-crossed the Sutlej river in a panic, they might have marched to Calcutta supported and accompanied by every native prince in India. Runjeet Syng, the King of the Punjaub, both a soldier and a statesman died, leaving one son, the present Maharajah Duleep Syng, as his heir. His Queen the Ranee, therefore, had absolute control over the entire kingdom. The army was well disciplined, and composed of thorough soldiers in every sense of the word. Officers from Italy and France, Messieurs Allard, Ventura, Avitabile, &c., had been their instructors. The latter, however, having amassed princely fortunes during their careers, and knowing well the Orientals were not to be trusted after the king's death thought only of returning to Europe with their bullion. But to effect this was the difficulty. An opportunity came for them during the Afghanistan campaign; they gave all their cash to the English, and got bills of exchange on Calcutta—the very thing they wanted.

At this period the Seikh army became insubordinate and demanded more money. So to calm them the Ranee told them to cross the river and fight the English. The Seikhs obeyed their Queen and crossed the river near Loodianah in

number about seventy thousand fighting men, including artillery, cavalry, and infantry. But they were under native officers, a fact that sufficiently accounts for their ultimate defeat. At the time we speak of, Lord Hardinge, of Waterloo fame, was Governor-General of India, and Sir Hugh Gough, afterwards Lord Gough, was the Commander-in-Chief of the army. A small number of troops was at once put in motion, say about 15,000 men, and marched from Umballa under his Lordship and Sir Hugh Gough. Orders had been given for all troops from the lower provinces to join them on the banks of the Sutlej. This small British force had scarcely arrived at Moodkee, some thirty miles from the frontier, when they were attacked by the enemy then but a short distance from the British camp. The day was declining, and the ground chosen by the Seikhs was covered with low brushwood so that the infantry alone could make any proper advance. The artillery and cavalry met with great difficulty, but still were able to attack the enemy. Here and there were large trees from the branches of which the enemy fired on our forces as they were passing underneath. The fighting on both sides was most desperate, and an English regiment of light dragoons suffered fearfully. As it was now getting dark both parties retired, but not before the enemy was put to flight.

The Catholic military chaplain attached to the British force was a Father Francis, a French priest. He accompanied an infantry regiment into the field of battle, and was in the midst of the carnage. At the foot of a tree he was in the act of hearing the confession of an Irish soldier who had been mortally wounded, when a body of English cavalry swept past, and one of the dragoons thinking the Rev. Father was a Seikh made a slashing cut at him with his sword and almost severed the head from the body. There was a real martyr of charity—dying in the confessional. The following day the priest was buried, together with many others, in the jungle. Immediately after the battle matters looked so serious that a council of war was held. Lord Hardinge thereupon made his will and despatched his son

with it to Calcutta, at the same time offering his services to the Commander-in-Chief as second in command. The English force then marched to Ferozeshah where the main body of the enemy was encamped. Terrible fighting ensued: but our forces held their own, and all slept that night on the bare ground, the enemy's artillery firing on them or rather over them. The ammunition of our artillery being exhausted some three or four batteries of horse artillery were despatched to Ferozepore for shot and shell, and some of the troops of the garrison then under command of General Litler. No sooner had the enemy seen the troops marching for Ferozepore than they thought they were about to be surrounded. Immediately panic seized the Seikhs and they fled, leaving nearly all their camp, equipage, and a great deal of treasure. The enemy, however, soon returned to their position and the British army marched for the Sutlej. The force under General Litler had left Ferozepore to meet that of the Commander-in-Chief.

Here I can give a short illustration in proof of what was alluded to in the beginning of these papers, that is, the general belief in the arrant cowardice of the Sepoy that he would never think of fighting against his masters. The general's division was attacked on its march by the Seikhs, and an English infantry regiment with a native regiment on each flank formed line and marched against the enemy. They had not proceeded beyond a few hundred yards when many officers and soldiers of her Majesty's —— regiment fell to the ground shot dead, not from the front but from the rear. The general idea at once arose that they were surrounded by the enemy. They wheeled about and found the Sepoy regiments now right behind them, loading and firing they knew not where. Naturally there was great confusion, and the fiercest indignation was felt by the English soldiers, who with great difficulty were restrained from annihilating the two native regiments. It happened in this way: clouds of dust were raised by the Queen's Regiment charging at the double: the native regiments proceeded at a slower pace, one might say one step forward and two backward. Ultimately they

lost their proper place, became united, and on hearing firing in their front, loaded and fired where they could not see a single object before them.

Again I can adduce another specimen of the Sepoy's gallantry in the field of which I was an eye-witness. The whole of the British army, about forty thousand men, were now encamped on the left bank of the Sutlej, whilst the enemy occupied the other side. After some time a division of the Seikh army crossed the river at Sobraon, and threw up entrenchments for defence. This was the very thing the Commander-in-Chief wished for, as now he should not have to cross the river to attack them. When the enemy had made some considerable progress in their works and placed their heavy guns in position, Sir Hugh Gough called out a division of the army, when some artillery practice began on both sides. An advance of our forces followed, and some of the irregular native cavalry was ordered to the front to skirmish and also to bring in intelligence of the enemy's strength. One of the cavalry galloped back very soon; his horse was shot and dropped dead right in front of a native infantry regiment. There was no real danger to our forces at the time. This very native regiment was ordered to advance, more to show themselves to the enemy than for any more serious purpose; their marching was anything but soldier-like. It was no longer a straight line such as British troops keep in advancing in the field. No; such pushing and shouldering one another, one making a great effort to go forward, others acting in an opposite direction, such jabbering, quarrelling, abusing and cursing of one another, all presented a spectacle that was disgusting in the extreme.

After a short time the British force retired as if beaten, and the camp of the enemy resounded that night with great rejoicings as if they had been victorious. The whole affair was a ruse of Lord Gough's to draw over the river all the enemy's forces. He succeeded admirably. In fine at the battle of Sobraon a Sepoy who might get a slight scratch would fall down, and then many of his comrades would fall out of the ranks, as if to take care of him. Such was the

native soldier's courage before the mutiny, but during the revolt they certainly fought with much more spirit and determination.

As we are on the borders of the Punjaub, I should not omit some account of the providential escape of the nuns at Sealkote, about eighty miles from Lahore. What I am now about to write is from one of their number. On the 9th of July the native infantry and cavalry mutinied and killed several of their officers and other Europeans. A party of the rebels as early as half-past three o'clock, a.m., attacked the church and convent, plundering what was valuable, and destroying what they could not carry away. As soon as the alarm was given, the chaplain, an Italian Capuchin, went to the church to secure the Blessed Sacrament, which he brought to the affrighted nuns and children. They all surrounded the good priest, knowing that in the ciborium were contained their only arms, their only defence, their only hope, the meek and loving Jesus. Four times were the nuns and chaplain menaced by different parties. Each party seemed fully determined to kill the priest first of all. Five times did a naked sword touch his neck, but as many times the Most Adorable Sacrament, which he held up with unflinching faith, arrested the infidel hand. Thrice was a pistol pointed to his breast, but as often did the murderous hand fall powerless. The poor nuns were also threatened in a similar way, but with as little success. The rebels actually seemed not only frightened, but even stupified. A villain, however, was now seen actually carrying off one of the boarders, a girl of fourteen years, but she was soon rescued by the chaplain and superioress, who pursued the ruffian at the risk of their own lives. After the fourth attack, the Rev. Father and nuns thought it better to attempt an escape. They left the convent, and soon after found themselves in European society. But *how* they arrived at the place of refuge is to this day, a mystery to all. Their new retreat was soon discovered and surrounded by the rebels, from whom no quarter was to be expected, especially as the Brigadier of the Station, and other officers, were amongst the refugees. The

Brigadier was the first victim they fell upon and killed. Then the Protestant minister, his daughter, and several others of the party were all murdered. Here the work of carnage was arrested by the arrival of a fresh band of mutineers, carrying with them chests of treasure. The boxes were soon broken open, and thousands of rupees scattered on the ground. Ere long there was quarrelling about the distribution of the money. To the nuns this appeared an excellent opportunity to attempt a second flight, and a native soldier who was, strange to say, a Christian, generously offered them his services as a guide to the fort some six miles distant. No time was to be lost, so one and all at once accepted his kind offer. This poor soldier's property was afterwards destroyed, and he himself cruelly treated by the rebels after they discovered his act of charity. When about two miles from Sealkote, then in ruins, one of the nuns found herself separated from the main body; she was exhausted, naturally enough, as none of her party had tasted a morsel of food that day, and it was now three o'clock p.m. Considering the intense heat of the sun in July, and that the nuns had nothing to protect them from its scorching heat, but a bed sheet which each brought from the convent when leaving, it is most extraordinary that not one of them got a sunstroke. When it was discovered that one of the sisters was missing, their guide (fortunately he had a horse) galloped back in search of the lady. She had sat down on the road side faint and unconscious. On recovering from the swoon she rose and tried to walk on the burning sand, but fell again exhausted, at the same time offering her life in sacrifice to her God. At that moment the soldier arrived, and placing her before him on the horse, as she was too weak to ride alone soon overtook their party. Here an Irish soldier met them, and accompanied them to the fort. These very Sealkote rebels were afterwards cut to pieces by the British troops.

Our account would not be complete without some mention of Cawnpore, its massacres and wickedness which have been exaggerated by the incessant efforts of a gang of forgers, to excite English indignation to the highest point. If we but consult history we shall find not only that similar

atrocities, but even greater have been committed, without travelling further than Wexford and Drogheda. But we speak of it chiefly because there Ireland lost a generous-hearted son, and the Agra Mission an energetic, zealous, and excellent priest. The Rev. Joseph Rooney, born in Navan, County Meath, and the Rev. Nicholas Barry, from Wexford, arrived in Agra, in 1847, to establish and conduct English and classical schools in the Agra vicariate. Both Fathers were amongst the first fruits of All-Hallows' College, then presided over by the saintly Father Hand, assisted by his Lordship the present Bishop of Ardagh, and other worthy associates. As soon as St. Peter's College and St. Paul's Orphanage were firmly established in Agra, Fathers Barry and Rooney were sent by his Lordship Dr. Carli, to open a college at Manor-house, Murssoorie, in the Himalayas, for the sons of officers and gentlemen. This place, now St. George's College, was the last residence in India of the present Maharajah Duleep Syng, of whom we heard lately in connection with his return to the Punjaub, of which kingdom he was the heir. As Father Rooney was now suffering from over-work, although much needed in the College, the Bishop sent him as military chaplain to Ferozepore. There he soon became very popular with both soldiers and officers. H. M. — Regiment had just returned after taking the fortress of Mooltan, and all were heavily laden with ingots of gold and silver: the chaplain was offered hundreds of these silver and golden bars, but would accept none of them. By degrees the Father made his flock think of their immortal souls. He got them to approach the sacraments, and every evening to assemble in the chapel for night prayers and Rosary.

Here I should mention that the conduct of the Irish soldier in India, as a rule, is not only good, but even edifying. Drop into a chapel, in any part of the north western provinces, in the middle of the day, and you will find some dozens of the soldiers saying the Little Office of the Blessed Virgin, but if in the evening, you will see hundreds of those brave fellows saying the Rosary in a voice of thunder. The colonel of the regiment alluded to—who was considered the bravest

of the brave, and proved himself to deserve the name at the battle of Sobraon, as well as afterwards as Brigadier during the Mutiny—would often tap the chaplain's shoulder, and say before officers and men: "Father Rooney, you are the colonel of the ——." After some time the good father's health was considerably impaired by hard work, and he had to resign his post. His Lordship then, owing to his state of health, gave him permission to return home for a few years, but to this he would not consent, and asked to be sent to some other station, whereupon the ill-fated Cawnpore was assigned to him. This was some time before the Mutiny broke out. When, however, there was no doubt of serious disaffection amongst the native army, in our frequent correspondence on the general state of matters he invariably appeared cheerful and resigned to the Holy Will of God. At length all communication was cut off from below Delhi, and it was only after the fall of that city that we learned the sad news of Cawnpore. Up to the present I have not been able to find out under what precise circumstances he met his death. That all, except one officer and three soldiers, were massacred is certain, and this officer in giving an account of his escape merely mentions that there was a priest in the entrenchments at Cawnpore.

I have already recorded the death of three priests of the Agra Mission. One on the battle field, the other two killed in the Mutiny, all at their posts like true servants of their Divine Master. There is still a fourth whom I should not omit to mention, the Very Rev. Father Adrodatus, an Italian Capuchin, who was the whole time in the Presidency with Sir Henry Lawrence and the other Europeans in Lucknow. He had an assistant with him, a Father Bernard of the same Order, and I cannot describe the invaluable spiritual assistance and consolation the two Fathers afforded the besieged during their weary, anxious, and painful captivity. On the garrison being relieved both Rev. Fathers left for Cawnpore with the other Europeans, under a strong British escort. But the journey was too much for the venerable old man, after his fifty years of missionary work in India,

and he died mid-way between Lucknow and Cawnpore. Truly he might say with St. Paul: "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith."—*St Paul ii. Tim. iv., 7.*

I shall now conclude in the remarkable words of Dr. Russell on British rule in India. He writes in his diary as follows:—

"That force is the base of our rule I have no doubt, for I see nothing else but force employed in our relations with the governed. The efforts to improve the condition of the people are made by bodies or individuals who have no connection with the Government. The action of the Government in matters of improvement is only excited by consideration of revenue. Does it, as the great instructor of the people, the exponent of our superior morality and civilization—does it observe treaties, show itself moderate and just, and regardless of gain? Are not our courts of law condemned by ourselves? Are they not admitted to be a curse and a blight upon the country? In effect, the grave unhappy doubt which settles on my mind is, whether India is the better for our rule, so far as regards the social condition of the great mass of the people. We have put down widow burning, we have sought to check infanticide, but I have travelled hundreds of miles through a country peopled with beggars, and covered with wigwam villages."

WILLIAM BRADY.

THE "MATERIA PRIMA" OF SCHOLASTICISM.

A FEW remarks on this subject may interest the readers of the RECORD. The schoolmen have borrowed the theory of *materia prima* or primary matter from Aristotle. Some of them consider it as capable of demonstration; others only as a probable opinion, or a plausible hypothesis. I have no intention of entering into this question. I leave its discussion to abler hands. My task is less pretentious; it is simply that of exposition. I will adhere closely to the teaching of the Thomistic School.

Primary Matter, then, according to the Aristotelian system of Philosophy, is one of the constituent elements of every corporeal substance. But what is the nature of this element?

The words of Aristotle, translated into Latin are these:—*Materia non est quid, nec quantum, nec quale nec aliquid eorum per quae ens determinatur. Non est quid*, it is not anything complete in itself, *nec est quantum*, it is not quantity, *nec quale*, nor is it quality, *nec aliquid eorum per quae ens determinatur*, nor is it any of those things which fix the nature of a being. Of itself it is nothing, can do nothing; it has no essence, no existence, no independence. It is intangible, invisible, it eludes every attempt of the senses to grasp it. It may indeed be imagined as a kind of elastic stuff spread through the universe, a material out of which everything is made. But such efforts of the imagination are apt to be misleading and ought perhaps to be discouraged, unless indeed we use them as aids to forming a right notion of our subject. It is the mind alone that may properly conceive primary matter as being the basis of all physical nature, the substratum of all the changes that are constantly taking place around us. We understand it to be an undefinable something which underlies those changes from one state of being to another, which itself remaining the same, is perpetually putting on and casting off a form in some part or other of the material world. We know, so the schoolmen speak, that it is ever assuming new modes of existence and is in this respect so changeable that it has been compared to Proteus. For everything it is or has, it is indebted to its form. For union with the latter it has a natural craving; it seeks an alliance and, having obtained it, settles down in a fixed habitation. If considered apart from its form, it must be regarded somewhat as a wanderer, undetermined what to be or what to do. In this sense it may be viewed as unlimited, unfettered; but these epithets, which sound so well, reflect no credit upon matter. They merely imply that it is without ability for anything. It loses its claim to these fine titles as soon as it is united to its form. It loses in one sense, but only in name, it gains in every other. No form comes amiss to it. Though this is most true, yet certain proprieties must be strictly observed. As there are forms of various kinds and grades of excellence, so matter should be variously prepared, elaborated, fashioned

and finished in order to their reception. The form of such things as have only being, say a stone, is satisfied with the rudest sort of preparation. I do not speak of a stone as it afterwards may be polished by art or by an after process of nature itself, but I speak of it as it comes forth a fresh original production. The form of such a thing being itself of lowly extraction is content with matter though it be in a corresponding lowly condition. But when we ascend to plants, trees, and other living things, a more complex development is requisite. When we reach higher still and come to animals, we perceive that their forms demand not only all that has gone before, but in addition an organism exactly fitted to be an instrument of the manifold functions which they discharge. Next appears man with his organism differing from the organism of all other animals; not only differing from it, but surpassing it; surpassing it, we may hold, in kind as well as in degree, and having a delicacy of finish and elaborateness of detail which have ever excited the admiration of philosophic minds. Nothing less exquisitely moulded could be a fitting receptacle for the human form which is a spiritual substance, a rational soul. These modifications of matter are produced by the agencies of nature, otherwise named efficient causes. When matter is thus suitably prepared, it is joined to its form and is an essential part of the compounds produced. Matter is not only useful to them but it is indispensable, not only an ornament to them but it is of their very essence. Without matter such compounds are impossible; they cannot come into being at all. This is why St. Thomas and Aristotle say that it is their material cause. It is the material cause also of their existence; nay more it is the material cause of the existence even of the form itself. *Materia est causa formae, id est, ejus causa materialis. Materia est causa entis corporei.* Statements, identical with these, if not in words, at least in sense, may be frequently met in the works of St. Thomas. And it must be confessed at first they are apt to startle one, for they have a materialistic savour around them. Still they are perfectly free from such a taint, as will readily appear if they are interpreted in the light of what has been advanced in

these pages. They must always be understood of primary matter.

But they attribute to it no efficiency whatsoever. They simply and invariably mean that matter is a necessary part of a material compound. When thus explained they are like axioms, of which there are many. I will give one more: "*Formae educuntur de potentia materiae.*" "Forms are an outcome of the potentiality of matter," or "forms are extracted from the resources of matter." Each of these translations favours the modern doctrine of evolution, but then both are utterly wrong. I will offer an easy and correct one. Forms presuppose in matter a capacity to receive them, and are produced, because that capacity exists. Primary matter being so imperfect itself is also a source and origin of imperfection to other things. Not that it can exert an active influence over them; for it is without energy; it is the principle of the *vis inertiae* of things; but since they are certain developments which are grounded upon matter, and which cannot exist without it, they follow its lines, and partake of the imperfection which is inherent in it. One of these, of which only I will speak, is *quantitas dimensiva*, or *measurable quantity*. This has a twofold imperfection consisting in a twofold limitation. One as to place, the other as to time. It cannot exist at once in two places. It is sluggish and inert; it is incapable of self-motion; and when it is moved by something else, time is required, not unfrequently much time between its leaving one term and reaching another. But here some difficulty may arise. I implied above, that the illimitation of matter is an imperfection, and now I state that the limitation of quantity is the same.

Can two opposite characteristics excluding each other be causes of imperfection? They may from opposite stand-points, just as an unlimited power for evil and a limited power for good are both imperfect. But the difficulty is not altogether removed. For how can quantity, which is limited be built, as I have said, upon matter unlimited, as upon its natural basis. In this case what affinity is there between the limited and unlimited? There is this. Every limitation is a step towards nothingness. For a limitation is the

privation or negation of something and nothingness is the privation or negation of everything. Now matter is in the nearest stage to nothingness for it implies privation of every kind excepting only a positive capacity for being or existence. We need not then wonder if quantity is constructed upon it as its natural foundation. I will beg the reader to note that this reason is given not to maintain such a construction but as an answer to the objection raised against its possibility. Quantity is an extension by parts, not indeed of matter which is incapable of being extended, but of a substance which has a material nature. It performs two functions. One is to extend by parts in such a way, that each one of them shall be outside any other, while neither the substance nor its quantity may fill space or occupy a place. Another function is to extend by parts in such a way that they shall have relation to place. This distinction may be more clearly understood if I illustrate it by an example. Let me suppose then the existence of a block of timber that has been sawed into several planks, having a fixed length, breadth, and thickness, or in other words certain dimensions. Let me now suppose these boards to be plunged into water and submerged in it. Then I may see that a certain quantity of water is displaced, that a certain quantity of it touches the wood, adheres to it all round, and that the dimensions of all correspond. In this case St. Thomas would say that the dimensions of the wood were contained by the dimensions of the water which surrounds it and were measured by them (*Dimensiones corporis quod est in loco continentur et mensurantur dimensionibus loci vel corporis ambientis*). It is evident that quantity in this position would be measurable and the water would supply a means of measurement. Let me now, on the contrary, suppose, if it be possible, no contact whatever between the particles of wood and those of the water in which it is sunk. Given this supposition to be a reality, no water would be displaced by the wood for want of any contact between them, nor would there be any proportion between the extent of the one and the surface of the other that might appear to surround it. The extent or dimensions of either could bear no comparison with those of the other;

nor could the terms *greater* or *less* be predicated of one in reference to the other. St. Thomas should now say that the above-mentioned wood fills no space, but exists in a point. It is, however, still measurable, for it has parts and dimensions one of which excludes another. And if we have no instrument keen or delicate enough for the purpose, the disadvantage is ours. Doubtless an angel might easily supply one.

But even we ourselves are able to distinguish or separate in thought one effect of quantity from the other, and what we may do in thought, God, by his absolute power, may do in real nature. He may *really* separate the two effects of quantity and suspend one without suspending the other. This suspension would be miraculous, and the miracle is actually wrought in the Sacrament of the Eucharist. For it is an article of Faith that the entire body of our Lord is really present under the consecrated Host, while St. Thomas and other theologians teach that the whole measurable quantity of His body is there also. Nor does the reality of this presence depend in any way upon the larger or smaller dimensions of the Sacred Host. (See St. Thomas on the Eucharist, *Summa*, Art. 4, Quest. 76). I have already spoken of two results of quantity. I will now speak of a third which is to cause numerical distinction between beings of the same species. Nothing in the ordinary sense can be divided unless it has parts; nor can anything have the parts here meant without quantity; nor is quantity possible without matter. Again, multiplication follows division, and whereas there is only one unit at first, they come to be several units afterwards; we may number them one, two, three, and so on. Numerical multiplication then, or its equivalent, numerical distinction, is due, first to division, next to quantity, thirdly to matter. Now in the angels there is neither matter nor quantity, and this is a reason why St. Thomas holds that the distinction between them is not numerical but specific. Each individual belongs to a different species, as there are myriads of angels so there are myriads of angelical species. I said above that matter and its attendants are closely allied to imperfection. This being so, the word itself and its derivations are employed in the schools to express or imply something which has its

shortcomings, something of no consequence, something unimportant to the question at issue, and which ought therefore to be overlooked. I request the reader's particular attention to the remarkable contrast between the English and scholastic usage of the word. "What is the matter?" is a question of serious import. "Nothing at all," is an answer which has often been welcomed with a positive sense of relief. Again a material witness in a case is one without whom the trial cannot proceed. Next, a material circumstance in an event is one upon which the judgment of it will greatly depend. Lastly, a material point in an argument, is that without which it loses the whole or a great part of its force. Had a schoolman been writing he would not have used the word "matter" in any of these connections. Had he used it, his meaning would have been not alone different, but diametrically opposite. It would be almost impossible to exaggerate the wide divergence in meaning of the same words occurring in scholastic and modern phraseology. I will conclude with two or three short extracts bearing on the general subject from the *Summa* of St. Thomas. In the first part, Quest. 4, A. 1st, he writes thus: "*Primum principium materiale imperfectissimum est.*" Quest. 3, A. 2nd, he proves that God is not compounded of matter and form. "*Omne compositum ex materia et forma est corpus; quantitas enim dimensiva est quae primo inhaeret materiae. Sed Deus non est corpus. Ergo, &c.*"

"*Omne compositum ex materia et forma est perfectum et bonum per suam formam; unde oportet quod sit bonum per participationem, secundum quod materia participat formam. Primum autem quod est bonum et optimum, quod Deus est, non est bonum per participationem; quia bonum per essentiam prius est bono per participationem. Unde impossibile est quod Deus sit compositus ex materia et forma.*"

I will venture on a paraphrase of these arguments, which may not be unacceptable. Every compound of matter and form is a body: for measurable quantity, found in all bodies, is the first modification inherent in a compound, on the side of matter; but God is not a body, therefore, &c.

The terms, perfect and good, are equivalent with this

distinction; that a thing is named perfect because it fulfils the end of its production; it is named good because it is an object of desire to the will. Now the goodness or perfection of a compound is derived from its form, not from its matter which is good only in so far as it shares in the goodness of the form. Besides one thing is said to be prior to another when on it the other depends. Therefore in the line of goodness or perfection, the form of a compound is prior to it. Likewise anything good from the exigency of its nature is prior to what is good only by participation, as the former bestows a part of its goodness upon the latter. For the latter obtains its goodness from a second, the second from a third, and so computing backwards. But as this process cannot go on for ever, we come at last to something having goodness not borrowed, but having it of and from itself, the cause of goodness in the rest, and thus prior to all of them. Such is God. But if he were a compound of matter and form, he would not be prior to his form, which is a contradiction. Therefore he is not such a compound.

I hope I have for the present said enough on a difficult subject. St. Augustine, addressing God in the 12th book of his *Confessions*, thus writes about it: *Tu eras et aliud nihil unde fecisti coelum et terram, duo quaedam; unum prope te, alterum prope nihil; unum quo superior tu esses, alterum quo inferius nihil esset.* The first clause has been understood of the angels; the second of primary matter.

T. J. DEELY, O.P.

THEOLOGICAL QUESTIONS.

ABSOLUTION FROM HERESY.

“May I trouble you to let me have your views in reference to the course to be adopted when those who are only guilty of material heresy are to be received into the Church? Not being guilty of formal heresy they have not incurred the excommunication which is reserved “*speciali modo Romano Pontifici.*” Father O’Kane, however, when describing Absolution from heresy, says c. 5, No. 468 that “the practice is to deal with all converts from heretical sects, as if they

had incurred the reserved excommunication," and Kenrick is quoted by him as stating that the Church does not acknowledge *in foro externo* the distinction between "material" and "formal" which would exempt from the reserved censure anyone living in a heretical Communion, and consequently that faculties should be got in every case from the ordinary for receiving such converts. There are others who act differently and in the case in which the heresy is merely material receive all comers irrespective of the Bishop. Which is right?

"P.P."

"Would you kindly answer the following questions in next number of I. E. RECORD.

(1.) "Does the first of the excommunications specially reserved to the Pope affect any persons except those who reject the *Confessio Fidei Catholicae*?

(2.) "I have read in Craisson that Bishops can without special faculties absolve from heresy if brought before their *forum*. If so what additional jurisdiction does the *Formula Sexta* confer?"

"VICARIES."

I. Heresy is commonly defined to be a voluntary and pertinacious error in regard to some truths or truth of *Catholic faith* in one who professes the Christian religion. Apostasy, which implies in technical knowledge a total rejection of Christianity, does not of course, escape the severe punishments visited from ancient times on those who rebel against God and His Church. Here, however, we are concerned with heresy alone, and with it only so far as the penalty of excommunication extends.

II. To incur the stain of heresy and the penalty of excommunication which is annexed to it, the doctrine rejected must belong to the Confession of Catholic faith. However one may sin by denying a doctrine which he considers to be revealed, or which is *next to being of faith*, or that is a *theological conclusion*, the unenviable name of heretic is not given until he has knowingly rejected a dogma which the Church commands her children to believe as the revealed word of God. The crime of heresy implies a rejection of that public faith which the Catholic Church, as an organised society, openly professes.

III. For formal heresy this denial of dogma must be *per-*

tinacious. Hence one is excused by reason of inculpable ignorance. Nay, it is not every voluntary error, injurious to faith, that constitutes formal heresy. A person holding wrong doctrine may be guilty of grave sin in neglecting to inquire about doubts that occur to him, and yet not commit the offence of which we speak, or incur the penalty thereto attached. *Gross* or even *affected* ignorance excuses from both. In short a person is not a formal heretic until he deliberately rejects a dogma of Catholic faith after it has been duly proposed for his acceptance. For to err *per-tinaciously* is to err knowingly, freely, deliberately.

IV. This much is enough for the crime, but not for the censure. To incur excommunication specially reserved to the Pope the delinquent must give outward expression to his erroneous judgment. Words are not needed, nor witnesses: but the act must be a *human* act declarative of heresy. Hence a denial of the Real Presence in a person's sleep, however publicly made, will not suffice.

V. Who can absolve from heresy? If it be merely *internal* there is no reservation. External heresy is or is not occult. If not occult, either it has or has not been brought before the bishop's *forum externum*.

Now the power granted to bishops in Chapter "Liccat," of the Council of Trent, to absolve from occult heresy *in foro conscientiae*, no longer exists. That it was withdrawn by the Bulla in *Cena Domini* canonists more commonly hold. That it does not continue after the publication of the Constitution, "Apostolicae Sedis" is absolutely certain.

Still, according to our best writers, the crime of heresy is not entirely beyond the range of a bishop's ordinary powers at present. For when notorious, if brought before his external tribunal, he may, *as a general rule*, reconcile the person interested to the Church, if he be duly disposed, and absolve him from excommunication, or even consign him to an ordinary confessor for absolution, after he himself has received the abjuration. In this latter event absolution *in tribunali Poenitentiae* will avail for both *forms*.

The importance of the power here in question is manifest, when it is remembered that Protestants who come before a

bishop to renounce their errors thereby bring their case sufficiently before his external tribunal for the jurisdiction to exist. This power may be termed either ordinary or quasi-ordinary.

VI. Our bishops, however, are provided with ample delegated faculties to absolve from heresy whether occult or public. In the *Formula* 17^a, this offence and the censure annexed to it are subjected to their jurisdiction, with some slight reservations which we need not here state. One of our respected correspondents asks what does the *Formula Sectæ* add to the ordinary powers of bishops over heresy, as described by Craisson. Well, besides the additional security, by reason of it a person who has been guilty of occult external heresy may obtain absolution without either going to Rome, or making his offence *notorious* by bringing it before the public tribunal of the bishop. Obviously in the absence of quinquennial faculties he could have no escape from this inconvenient dilemma.

VII. It is now time to deal directly with our first correspondent's letter. We consider Fr. O'Kane's opinion to be the correct one. Many converts from Protestantism may, no doubt, in reality be free from this censure, and may therefore be already partakers *in foro interno* of those spiritual advantages of which it deprives such as have incurred it. Some of them were *bona fide*, some were doubtfully baptized, and some were not aware of the censure. Any one of these is an excusing cause. How then can absolution from reserved excommunication be necessary when a convert is received? The answer is plain enough. In order to dispense with absolution in a particular case we must be assured on competent authority that one of the excusing causes is available. This point is essential in every individual case. But, apart from delegated Inquisitors, the only person in a diocese who is competent by law to give any such assurance is the Bishop. He is *ex officio*, under the Pope, the *custos fidei* and the *juxta hereticæ pravitatis* in his diocese. Accordingly he alone can *jure ordinario* pronounce *in causa hæreseos*, and declare authoritatively that one of the excusing causes exists. Hence he must be consulted in any case. Now it is as easy

for himself or his delegate to give absolution from censures, at least conditionally, as to investigate the question of their possible existence.

No doubt the opposite course has been sometimes followed in this country and elsewhere. But the procedure here advocated seems, apart from custom, to be the only one in conformity with law. From the fact that the bishop is judge of heresy it follows that the question of censures, the existence of proper dispositions for outwardly joining the Catholic community, as well as abjuration of errors and profession of Catholic faith, are points which *ex natura rei* belong for investigation to his office.

Moreover, *in foro externo*, the Church deals with converts as if they had incurred excommunication. What wonder? They have publicly belonged to a body which publicly rejects her confession of faith. *In foro externo*, which deals, not with the interior of men's hearts, but with the exterior of their outward lives, every presumption is against them. Being Christians the law inclines towards considering them liable to the obligations that follow from Baptism; and on the other hand the Church cannot go on the supposition that her marks are not clear, or her laws not known. The *onus probandi* is thus thrown on those who allege freedom from censure, and the public good at all times required that none but the clearest evidence should set aside this adverse legal presumption. Hence, though in theory excusing causes are admissible, the practice most convenient for all parties has been to deal *in foro externo* with converts from the various sects, as if they had been excommunicated.

THE KIND OF DOMICILE REQUIRED FOR RECEIVING ORDERS FROM EPISCOPUS DOMICILII.

"A Subscriber is anxious to know how far it is true that the Bishop of a person's domicile may confer orders upon him. What precisely constitutes a domicile for orders?"

"ADVENA."

I. The *Episcopus proprius* for conferring orders or granting dimissorial letters is either *Episcopus originis*, *Episcopus*

domicilii, *Episcopus beneficii* or *Episcopus familiaris*. A prelate who happens to be any one of these is competent to ordain the person in question. Nay, in the absence of fraud one is allowed by common law, for a reasonable cause, to seek different orders from different bishops. Obviously, however, an arrangement may be freely made, which will bind a person exclusively to the prelate from whom he receives his first grades or dimissorial letters for orders. In that event his liberty of selection ceases, of course, to exist.

II. For the *Episcopus domicilii* as distinguished from the *Episcopus originis* to be an *Episcopus proprius* much is required beyond what constitutes an ordinary domicile. In the first place, a person should have been in habitation for ten years, or otherwise must have transferred the greater part of his property to his new abode and been in residence for such a *considerable period* as will evidence an intention of remaining *permanently*. Three years are thought to suffice for this purpose, but the Bishop is judge in the matter. Secondly, in either case the person is supposed to take an oath that he does in reality purpose remaining there for life.

I.—CAPACITY OF IDIOTS FOR THE SACRAMENTS.

What is the smallest amount of capacity that would be required in imbeciles to admit them to the Sacraments of Penance and the Eucharist? Persons of variously impaired intellects are often found in the idiot-wards of workhouses or elsewhere in an extensive parish whom it is difficult to know how to treat. Their religious training is generally neglected by their own friends, and they may not be brought under a priest's notice until far beyond the years of discretion. Many of them will forget to-day what you taught them yesterday. Yet they have reason enough to recognise a priest, or a friend, or a sacred place, but seem incapable of retaining in their memories the principal mysteries, or any save a meagre knowledge of good or evil. How far may you presume on their religious knowledge in giving either conditional or absolute absolution—and at what intervals may you give it? Would it be a violation of the *Sigillum* in such cases to tell their friends after confession that you had prepared them for Communion. If not they may sometimes go of their own accord without being to Confession.

II.—CONSENT OF PARENTS IN MARRIAGE.

Theologians state that children in getting married require, for the liceity of the Sacrament, to have the consent of their parents, and if they marry without it and have not sufficient cause they are guilty of mortal sin. What would be considered a case sufficient to excuse them? Many children of poor parents especially will not on any account tell them, chiefly to avoid the noise they often raise on it. If the parties are keeping company and are committing, or are in great danger of sin—or if they are not residing in their parents' homes and are of full age, may a priest in these or similar circumstances marry them without requiring such consent? I presume that the banns have been dispensed with.

I.

Our respected correspondent in his first question puts as many important queries as can well be packed into the space he covers. At the same time his concise statement of the whole difficulty enables us to give our replies without any further explanation.

1°. What knowledge of the Blessed Eucharist must simpletons possess before being admitted to receive it? A distinction is to be drawn between the time of death and all other occasions. Outside the reception of the Viaticum, the persons with whom we are dealing must have some *actual* knowledge of the Adorable Sacrament. He must be able to distinguish our Lord's Body from ordinary bread. If he has this capacity he may receive not merely at Easter, but occasionally during the year, according as his knowledge is more or less perfect. At the hour of death, it will be enough if this imperfect understanding existed at some previous time and there be no danger of irreverence. For a person so circumstanced the Holy Eucharist may be very needful, and a respectful disposition towards it at a previous time may be construed to express an explicit desire of receiving the Viaticum at the last moment.

2°. What knowledge is required for penance? It is necessary that the person should be able to distinguish between good and evil and to elicit the supernatural acts that are indispensable in penitents before absolution. This

knowledge and these acts are supposed to be somewhat imperfect. Still if the confessor can make up his mind that a penitent of impaired intellect is able to distinguish even in a feeble way between good and evil, and that he can similarly elicit an act of supernatural sorrow, we think Reuter's recommendation of giving absolution once a month is perfectly safe. Moreover if there were danger that a particular penitent had incurred the guilt of mortal sin, it would be right to absolve him irrespective of this monthly rule. But when the capacity of the penitent for such knowledge and acts, is, as our correspondent supposes, only probable, absolution should be given chiefly *in articulo mortis*, in preparation for the Paschal Communion, and when the person confesses a sin that may have been mortal. In this hypothesis the conditional form is always used.

3^d. How should persons of impaired intellect know the necessary mysteries before being admitted to the Sacraments? We mean those mysteries, explicit belief in which is a *necessary means* of salvation. Well, two points deserve attention in dealing with this aspect of the case of simpletons. In the first place it is not, strictly speaking, required that they be able to state accurately what the revealed doctrine is when interrogated. It is enough if they have understood the truths and given them supernatural assent. No doubt a statement of the mystery is the ordinary guarantee that it has been believed. But it is also not impossible that a weak mind may become confused or blank as soon as it attempts to give expression to doctrine it has freely grasped. Secondly, a more important point is that actual knowledge of these truths is, strictly speaking, essential only so far as acts of faith are necessary. Not knowledge but *actual faith* constitutes the *indispensable means* of salvation for an adult who has come to the use of reason. Without supernatural assent the most profound understanding is of no avail; and knowledge is indispensable only so far as the act of faith, which cannot be elicited without it, is an absolute necessity.

Obviously, indeed, a person who knows the Sacraments sufficiently for their reception, will as a rule have equal knowledge of the mysteries. But the contrary is possible.

Hence on the principles just explained one should not hesitate to give at intervals the Sacraments to an old man who in his dotage is hazy about those necessary truths, which years before he believed with the assent of a clear mind. The same rule we would apply to simpletons if it be really probable that either now or a previous time they give or gave the assent of faith to the mysteries in question. One should also take into account the probability of explicit faith in the Trinity and Redemption not being absolutely necessary means of salvation, especially as these are the mysteries which half idiots more commonly fail to hold.

We need not add that in all these cases before giving the Sacraments great efforts should be put forth to instruct and dispose the poor subjects who are to receive them. By getting them to repeat acts of explicit faith and sorrow the proper dispositions will be much surer than they otherwise could be.

4°. Where a penitent is commonly known to be a simpleton, a confessor using due caution, can state to the person's relatives whether he is or is not to go to Communion, without either violating the *Sigillum* or bringing any odium on the confessional. But if in a particular case a priest thought his action might be misconstrued, it would be better for him to arrange to have a conversation outside the confessional with his penitent on the religious matters they have been considering. No one can object if on this occasion the penitent is asked about those religious truths which Christians should hold, seeing that the individual's capacity and, consequently, his obligations are not certain from time to time.

II.

We take the liberty of referring our correspondent to St. Liguori L. V., N. 849, &c, as being very full on most points contained in his second question. St. Alphonsus there states at length four opinions in regard to the duty of children to procure their parents' consent before marriage. From what he says we may conclude that apart from extrinsic circumstances, and looking only to the bonds of filial obedience and reverence, the obligation is probably not

grave. It is these external considerations that for certain render the omission either mortally sinful or absolutely free from guilt. Our respected correspondent can therefore infer that the reasons he alleges may suffice to exempt from the obligation where parents are so disposed that they will resist the union from motives of much less weight. He has mentioned the case of a person living apart from father and mother. Well, although *per se* this is not enough to exempt him, *per accidens* owing to his having lived apart from and independently of them for a long time, and at a distance, or for a similar cause, he may be excused.

P. O'D.

THE CHURCH ABROAD.

The religious history of the Canton of Geneva in Switzerland during the last fifteen years presents a picture of Catholic resistance to State oppression which deserves to be recorded in these pages. It was the counterpart of the Culturkampf and a re-enactment of all that was done in Germany. The motives of the persecutions were the same. The means devised were similar. The arguments and methods of the enemies of the Church were of the same insidious and intolerable character. The resistance of the Catholics was also just as determined, and the success of Leo XIII. in effecting a settlement was more complete, if less complicated than that which has just been made between the Church and the German Empire.

The following short sketch of the events that took place around Geneva, since the Vatican Council was held, may therefore be of some interest to a few at least of the readers of the RECORD.

The first assembly of old Catholics that met in Switzerland was held at Olten, on the 1st of December, 1872. It was presided over by the Prussian Reinkens, whom Bismarck had created Bishop of the schism. It was attended by a hundred and fifty delegates, and the following resolutions were passed.

1st. To use every effort to induce the parishes, municipalities and local government assemblies, to protest against the Infallibility of the Pope and against the "Syllabus."

2nd. To make overtures to the Cantonal governments to secure liberal ecclesiastics in every parish.

3rd. To admit foreign bishops to perform episcopal functions in Switzerland.

4th. To ask the federal government to dismiss the Papal Nuncio.

5th. To apply to the federal assembly for assistance in the effort to "democratize" and to "nationalize" the Church in Switzerland.

From Olten Reinkens went to preach at Soleure, at Basle, and at Lucerne. In the last mentioned city he spoke in the Protestant Church having been refused admittance into any Catholic place of worship. Later on, Herzog, who was afterwards to be consecrated, came to the assistance of Reinkens and installed, at Porrentruy, the apostate Pipy. The first pastoral of Reinkens was read in the Church of St. Germain, at Geneva, by the ex-Carmelite Hyacinthe Loyson, so that the official organ of the Council of State, *La Patrie* was able to declare in 1872 :—"Henceforward Germany and the 'old Catholics' of Switzerland go hand in hand in the fight against Roman Catholicism."

In their various missions through the country the Schismatics were seconded and encouraged by the German Ambassador at Berne, M. de Roeder, who pronounced an official discourse in Geneva, in 1873, and two others at the opening of Protestant temples in Freyburg and Sion in 1875. This quasi-religious diplomatist generally took as the keynote of his homilies the words written by Prince Bismarck to Count Arnheim in 1874.

"The bishops have become in the eyes of every government the functionaries of a foreign Sovereign, and a Sovereign who in virtue of his infallibility is completely absolute, more absolute than any monarch in the world."

Such was the general disposition of mind which prevailed through a large number of Cantons or rather which prevailed in the official circles of these Cantons: for the governing bodies were elected on a jerrymandered system, which was altogether unjust to the Catholic population. At all events the Council of State or local governing body in the Canton of Geneva was composed almost exclusively of Protestants and Freemasons, and it was this worthy body which acting under the most sinister influences from outside undertook the work of introducing new legislation for the Catholics of the Canton. The life and soul of this Cantonal Assembly, and of the Executive Council of State at Geneva was M. Carteret, a man who deserves to be mentioned as one of the bitterest and most uncompromising enemies of the Church that the present century has produced. Under his guidance the following decrees were passed by

the Cantonal Council and sanctioned by the Federal Government of Berne.

1st. The parish priests and curates shall be elected by the Catholic citizens inscribed on the roll of the municipal franchise. They may be dismissed or removed by the Council of State.

2nd. The bishop of the diocese must be recognised by the State, and cannot delegate his power without the approbation of the Council of State.

3rd. The law shall determine the number and the limits of parishes, the forms and conditions of the election of priests, the oath which they are to take on entering upon their functions, the organisation of the councils to be charged with the temporal administration of parishes, &c., &c.

Each of these articles was interpreted by sections and sub-sections introducing details that were naturally intolerable and, if possible, more incompatible than the primary clauses with liberty of conscience. One of these was the oath which all parish priests and curates were called upon to take.

"I swear before God to conform strictly to the constitutional and legislative dispositions regarding the organisation of Catholic worship and to observe all the cantonal and federal decrees relating thereto."

It was in vain that Messrs. de Montfalcon and Veulleret protested on the part of the Catholics. The former quoted the words which Dr. Dollinger himself once spoke in the old parliament of Frankfort.

"I wished to say that the principles of ecclesiastical organisation belong to the domain of dogma: that dogma and the constitution cannot be separated in our Catholic Church; and now I allow you to draw from that the necessary conclusion as to what is meant when we are told that the Church requires a radical change and should be reformed in all grades of government."

In like manner M. de Pressensé, himself a Protestant, wrote in 1874 (*Revue des Deux Mondes*, April 16th).

"No one will deny that Catholicism thus remodelled is no longer what we knew hitherto by that name. It is in reality according to the formula of the oath, the Catholic worship of the Republic, that is to say, a new religion altogether."

All protestations were fruitless and the iniquitous decrees became the law of the land. It is to the honour of the clergy of Geneva that not one was found amongst them under this heavy trial to betray the honour and the duty of the priesthood. Every one of

them signed the indignant protest which was presented to the Council of State, the refrain of which was "*Potius mori quam foedari.*" In this protest they were joined by all the leading Catholics in the city and throughout the canton. Then came the sad days of violence and tyranny. The Federal Council of Berne sustained the Cantonal Council in the work of bigotry and sacrilege. The Papal Nuncio or Chargé d'Affaires was expelled from Switzerland. Mgr. Mermillod who had recently been appointed assistant to the venerable Mgr. Marilley, Bishop of Geneva, was sent into exile. The Brief of Pope Pius IX. condemning "*les lois du schisme*" as they were called, and excommunicating any priest or false minister who recognised them or submitted to them, was burnt in the streets.

This Brief, however, was read by the faithful priests to their parishioners who received it with enthusiasm and pledged themselves to support at any cost the pastor appointed by Mgr. Mermillod. The brave priests of the Swiss Canton stood shoulder to shoulder, but a small band of renegade ecclesiastics from France and Germany came forward, like wolves, to seize the prey that was offered them by the Council of State. A ridiculous form of election was gone through in which half the Protestants of the district were allowed to vote, and Loyson, Risse, Marchal, Quily, Pacherot, Pelissier, Vergoin, and several other apostates, were declared elected pastors of the Catholic parishes. These men were, as Cardinal Guibert expressed it, "the refuse of the clergy of France, men who had lost all self-respect, as well as all faith, who were looked upon as religious and moral outcasts in the country of their birth." To these were delivered up the keys of the Catholic churches. The venerable priests who had remained faithful to every duty were dragged forth and the intruders installed in their place. The people protested energetically but were overcome by the presence of whole regiments of soldiers drafted for this noble service. Every honour was conferred upon those renegades by the Calvinistic aristocracy of Geneva, large numbers of whom flocked to their sermons and filled up the churches vacated by the faithful Catholics. Bribes of all kinds were held out, as usual, to induce the poor to betray their faith, but the few that proved false, were regarded with such universal horror and contempt that others were deterred from following their example. Any Catholic official who refused to conform to the new order of things was dismissed.

Church after church was besieged and taken. It was a sore trial to the poor Catholics every time they saw their places of worship,

their schools and their burial-grounds, profaned by innumerable sacrileges. A league was formed amongst them under the name of "Union des Campagnes," and the spirit of this league can be judged from the canticle which was sung with enthusiasm at all their gatherings.

Sous les tyrans et la tempête
 Nous ne courberons pas la tête,
 Nous unirons nos coeurs, nos bras,
 La foi transporte les montagnes,
 Enfants, l'Union des campagnes
 Est forte et ne se rendra pas.

Dieu qu'adoraient nos pères
 Nous garderons ta loi.
 Jurons, jurons, mes frères
 De mourir pour la foi.

Parmi nous, il n'est pas de traître
 Et Judas qui vendait son maître
 Eût de même trahi César,
 Nous abhorrons la tyrannie,
 Mais les deniers de l'infamie
 Sont à vous seuls ! Chacun sa part !

Dieu qu'adoraient nos pères
 Nous garderons ta loi.
 Jurons, jurons, mes frères
 De mourir pour la foi.

Such lively protestations kept up the spirit of the persecuted Catholics; yet the infamous work was carried to all extremes. There is a church at Geneva, bearing the title of Notre Dame, which certainly was not municipal property, and which hitherto had not been looked upon as being in any way subject to municipal authority, differing in this from all the churches in the Canton. It is a superb edifice of the purest Gothic, the building of which cost over a million francs. This immense sum was collected by Genevese priests all over Europe. Subscriptions were given liberally not only by the bishops and priests and Catholics of Switzerland, but also by French, Belgian, Italian, and German sympathizers. Amongst the most generous donors were the Emperor and Empress of Austria, the Emperor Napoleon III., King Victor Emmanuel, the Comte de

Chambord and Queen Amélie, wife of Louis Philippe ; several Princes of Bavaria and Saxony, Comte de Maistre, Comte de Riancourt, Duc de Brabant, Père Lacordaire, M. de Partalès, M. de Rochejaquelein, the Duchesse de Laval-Montmorency, the Comtesse De la Serraz and de Fégély, Lord Denbigh, Lord Gainsborough, and a host of other distinguished Catholics all over Europe. This noble monument of European piety was not spared any more than the humble little churches in the country, and was delivered up to the sacrilegious comedy of State worship introduced by the new apostles. Protests came from all parts of Europe, but as Bismarck and Gambetta favoured the innovators it was all to no purpose.

The next act of tyranny was the expulsion of the Sisters of Charity, the Little Sisters of the Poor, the Carmelite Nuns, and the the Christian Brothers. The police officers were commissioned to prevent priests from saying Mass even in private, and the priests who still remained in the Canton were persecuted by all kinds of annoyances. Heavy fines and imprisonment were decreed against those who would not show proper regard for the new ministers. On the 26th of March, 1874, twelve women were summoned to the courts of Lancy, some for having laughed, others for having coughed, and a few for having sneezed when the apostate was passing. (See *Histoire de la Persécution Religieuse à Genève*, page 462). They were fined heavily. Hundreds of similar cases were dealt with, and the offenders punished most unmercifully. M. Hérédier, the Newdegate of Switzerland, signalized himself as the most vicious bigot of the of the Council. A natural result of this wanton system of tyranny was that the bonds of authority were altogether loosened, and the whole range of morality deeply affected. Assassinations trebled in number in the space of a few years. The law of divorce received alarming application. Every day had its record of suicides and of wholesale robberies. A Protestant writer named Frédéric de Rougemont describes the state of the Canton in the following words (See *Le Cri d'Alarme*, par Fréd. de Rougemont, page 77) :—

“The name of justice does not exist for the present generation. It is sacrificed for that of progress. We have only to read the Swiss journals. The environs of our cities are haunted by vagabonds who attack and plunder the honest people who pass by the wayside. Strangers might think that our country has become another Calabria. Burnings, murders, robberies, are complemented by wholesale bankruptcies, without speaking of the new marriage laws which our people, to their shame, have sanctioned by a solemn vote. What the

third generation shall be of a society brought up and governed by Swiss despotism, without any fear of God, without faith in a future life, living only for this world and its pleasures, God only knows. The devil also seems to forsee and to enjoy it."

The attitude of the Catholic clergy and people throughout these exciting scenes was appreciated by Pius IX. in the Brief of December, 1876, in the following terms :—

"With regard to you, our beloved children, ecclesiastics and laity of Switzerland, we give thanks to God for the piety and sincere faith with which, struggling against the demon and the snares of his ministers, you show your invincible attachment to the Church and to this Apostolic See. We thank the Divine bounty for the strength with which it has favoured you. The day will come when you will understand what immortal joy and glory will be the prize of your constancy."

The Catholic population were enabled to defy the worst efforts of their enemies by their admirable union and devotion to their priests and by the indefatigable zeal and activity of their bishop, Mgr. Mermillod. Churches were improvised through the country and the poor barns where the true priest said Mass on Sunday were crowded to overflowing. From the farthest limits of the diocese parents conducted their children across the French frontier to be confirmed by their bishop. This was one of the most touching sights in the modern history of the church. "You have proved to me to-day," said the bishop on one of these occasions, "that you will never betray your faith, you shall never be deserters or perjurers, and you, my little children, you shall follow in the footsteps of your parents and your elder brothers. I am going to confirm you to-day over the tomb of the last Bishop of Geneva, in this town, which, three-hundred years ago received the Sisters of St. Claire, banished from our city by a stranger, who brought, for the first time to Geneva, the double reign of heresy and despotism. Let us pray all altogether that God may give us better days. Let us pray for Switzerland and for Geneva, and let us pray too for this noble nation which gives us a refuge in our exile and the protection of its liberties in our distress. You will keep this great souvenir living in your hearts all the days of your lives. You came to a foreign land to receive the Holy Ghost. You were refused the right of receiving His gifts in your native parishes. That is the hardest word I can find it in my heart to speak of my country. She holds the liberties of the Church in chains. Otherwise I have nothing to say of her but words of benediction and unalterable attachment."

The pious Bishop of Geneva, who is one of the most distinguished prelates in Europe, was everywhere sought after to preach and give clerical retreats in France, Belgium, and Italy, and took occasion of every opportunity to ask prayers for his persecuted children. These prayers were not said in vain. Even the Protestants soon grew tired of the impostors who masqueraded as priests and who turned out as troublesome in Switzerland as they had been elsewhere. M. Herzog who was elected bishop by the schismatics, and consecrated by Reinkens, in the church of Rheinfelden, in 1876, lost popularity among the Calvinists who did not believe in bishops, and who feared his influence. The federal assembly of Berne having commenced to feel that the honour and the dignity of their republic were suffering in the eyes of the world, showed signs of disapproval, and in 1883, Leo XIII. brought all his friendly and moderating influences to bear on this unpleasant situation of things. Mgr. Mermillod was created Bishop of Lausanne as well as of Geneva, and was to reside in the city of Freyburg, from which he was to exercise his jurisdiction. The decrees of expulsion were still in vigour against him at Geneva, and Messrs. Carteret and Hérédier protested loudly they would execute them if Mgr. Mermillod ever visited the city. After ten years of exile he returned to Switzerland, and was received in Freyburg and throughout the whole country with extraordinary demonstrations of joy and gratitude. Such scenes have seldom been witnessed since the early days of Christianity. He soon made his way to Geneva, where Carteret and Hérédier, notwithstanding their impotent threats, dared not do him violence—for it was well known that the executive of Berne did not wish the continuance of the scandal—and so Mgr. Mermillod, the worthy successor of St. Francis de Sales and a true friend of Ireland, returned to his flock. Several of the churches have since been restored. The influence of Carteret and his friends is on the wane, and on the whole a better state of things seems to be in store for the Church in the Canton of Geneva.

J. F. HOGAN.

CORRESPONDENCE.

THE ORAL SYSTEM OF EDUCATING THE DEAF AND DUMB
FROM A CATHOLIC POINT OF VIEW.

DEAR SIR,—By the kindness of a friend my attention has been accidentally drawn to a letter that appeared in the February number of the *I. E. RECORD*, entitled, "Some Observations on the Oral System of Teaching the Deaf and Dumb."

The object for which that letter was written is not quite clear ; but as a representation of the oral system in its method of teaching and in its results, it is as far from the truth as the silliest fables against Catholics that are to be found in the writings of Protestant historians and theologians of fifty years ago.

Your readers will, no doubt, be interested to know how far these charges and statements, contained therein, are capable of explanation.

To supply this explanation is the purpose of the present paper from one who is practically acquainted with the system, and has taken an active part in the conferences of teachers and other public movements in England in regard to the education of the deaf and dumb.

Your correspondent professes to give some observations on the oral system of teaching the deaf and dumb. Did it not strike your readers that his method of enlightening them upon the oral system was singularly defective ? Instead of visiting and describing what is actually done and achieved in oral schools, he favours us with such a description only of the sign-teaching schools at Cabra. What he has to report about oral schools are not experiences, or definite facts, but rather surmises, insinuations, or deductions drawn from what he has heard or read, the bearing of which he has not rightly understood.

He is generally careful not to make his statements positive and definite. But so skilfully is the letter worded that none the less definite and positive is the impression left upon the reader that the oral system requires that both teachers and pupils, male and female, should expose the chest ; that pupils must and do manipulate the chest of their teachers ; that religious instruction is little heeded ; that in the tribunal of penance penitent and confessor must be face to face watching each other's lips ; that the one great aim of the system is to teach speaking and lip-reading ; and that when the pupil enters the world he is incapable of either, drops both, and is left without any means of conversing with those around him.

Perhaps he did not intend to make his charges so positive or to apply them universally; but having found one abuse or defect in one school he attaches it to the system generally; and such is the impression produced by his letter that all who have appealed to me had been lead to believe the above statements to be so true of all oral schools, that the writer had deemed it necessary to warn the priests of Ireland and England of what must be done in Catholic schools if they adopted the oral system. Priests have even endeavoured to calm their misgivings by supposing that the education of the deaf and dumb might claim the same liberty as is allowed to the students of the medical profession.

The letter was intended for Catholic readers and especially priests. The most important points are, therefore, those in which the oral system is attacked on moral and religious grounds. To these two points I will mainly devote this letter. The hearts of good Catholics must have been shocked at the serious charge against decency urged by him in a paragraph carefully constructed and heavily weighted so as to crush, as he may have supposed, all life out of any possible explanation.

He begins by stating that "in a normal school it is laid down that an aspirant teacher should be taught the physiological structure and respective functions of the several organs of speech, beginning with the lungs, and comprising in succession the bronchial and tracheal arteries, the larynx, the pharynx, the buccal and nasal cavities, together with the action of the tongue, teeth, and lips, and tracing the voice from being a mere sound, to its becoming articulate for syllabic pronunciation."

There is a vein of satire running through this sentence which discloses his disapproval. Some persons will think him narrow. Of course an intimate acquaintance with the action of the tongue, teeth, and lips in the formation of articulate sounds is absolutely essential to the teacher. Is such knowledge wrong? As for the rest, such physiological knowledge would not be dishonourable in the most delicate-minded female, especially if she had to teach the mechanical process of speaking. On the contrary, it would be most useful in various exigencies. Nor need she be apprehensive of any taint in the study of such organs; for being internal, the information regarding them will be furnished from models and diagrams.

However, it is in the succeeding sentence that he offends so severely against common sense, charity and truth. He says, "Practice must go on concurrently with the learning of principles, and the future teacher has the double task on hands of teaching the

pupils, who are confided to him, the practice of lip-reading from his own lips, and tracing the emission of voice as it proceeds through its various organs in his own person. For this latter task he has to expose his entire chest and neck to the view of his pupils, so that the latter, partly by sight-seeing, and partly by manual feeling, may observe how the various vocal organs of their teacher are exerted from the lungs upwards for the ultimate production of articulate sounds; and when groping along they have found their way up to his mouth, he has to open it wide, so that they may see, as best they can, the process of modification gone through in the buccal and nasal cavities, as also by the action of the tongue, after all which they are to hang on his teeth and lips, to take from them the articulate sounds and words he desires to address to them. In this feeling of the chest and neck of their teacher the pupils, each in turn, employ both hands first, in order to notice the function of the bronchial arteries, as they emanate respectively from the lungs and unite in the trachea. Thenceforward one hand is sufficient to pursue the action of the trachea, larynx and pharynx."

How unreal is all this! If such a process ever did take place in a school, let it not be said that it was an honest effort to teach speaking. Give it another name.

The paragraph may seem clever; but note how it betrays the mind that theorises without observing. A few moments' experimenting upon himself will make it evident that no amount of attention to chest muscles will guide him in speaking; and that a vocal sound does not grope along. It is instantaneous. Who, then, is so ridiculous as to attempt to watch it groping along, or to suppose that it gradually works its way like some animal from lungs to mouth, and can be viewed and felt at any point in its journey? Sound is air in vibration, not locomotion.

Again, who does not know that vocal sounds do not commence in the chest, but where the vocal chords stretch across the larynx? Hence the inspection of the chest during speech is of no consequence, for it would give no indication of the difference between one vocal sound and another, and too much attention to it would have a tendency to make all sounds guttural.

The lungs are merely the bellows, and whatever help can be gained by noticing the vibrations of the chest can be equally well obtained from the vibrations of the bones of the head generally.

But does this correspondent really believe that such a process is necessary for teaching articulation? He says "the teacher *has* to

expose, &c., &c.," by which words he shows his own belief, and wishes to impose it on others. Does he think that because speech is accompanied by some slight movement of the muscles in the chest, the pupil must first learn how to move those muscles, and afterwards how to move the jaw, tongue, or lips? If such be the case, we must expect the teacher of the violin or athletics to begin by uncovering his chest so as to teach his pupils the movements of the chest corresponding with each action of the arm or fingers. Would not such a process be ridiculous, not to say detrimental to success? The musician knowing the end to be accomplished devotes his attention to the correct position of elbow, wrist, and fingers—whatever movements may be caused in other parts of the body, are of no interest to him though they may be to the physiologist or essayist.

So also in teaching articulation, the teacher concerns himself with the organs that are immediately engaged in producing vocal sounds. The chest muscles will not be wrong if these organs of speech are right.

Perhaps the most satisfactory way of correcting the misconception that has been raised will be to give a description of the mode actually used in teaching articulation. The first step is to teach the pupil to produce vocal sound, i.e. to make the vocal chords vibrate whilst air is being passed through them, as in sounding "oo". This may be the work of an hour, or of a few days; and in order to make him conscious of the vibration, it is generally necessary to let the pupil apply the back of his or her hand to the teacher's throat and then to his own. This vibration of the vocal chords when once acquired is not forgotten. It is the raw material out of which all articulate sounds are made; and these are severally produced by regulating the opening of the mouth, and the position and action of the tongue, teeth and lips, during the emission of the sound. There is no exposure; no handling; the occasional use of a spoon or ivory paper knife will be sufficient to guide the pupil in acquiring the various vowel and consonant sounds. Remembering that the children are seven or eight years old, when for a few hours they are learning their first lesson (the only period during which there is any contact) does your correspondent still charge the oral system with indecency? Does he still protest "What place are female teachers to have in this practice?" He ventures to say that "they are not spoken of at all except in so far as they may be employed in teaching the female pupils various kinds of work." How incorrect! All the teachers at Boston Spa are females—and at least half of those

in the other institutions in England. Does he still lay down that "religious communities are thereby excluded," and that it is difficult to see "how female teachers can avail themselves at all of such training?"

Does he still ask "how can female deaf mutes be taught, considering the process laid down?" If delicacy is so easily offended, there must be an end to matrons in institutions combing the hair or washing the faces of little children. *Honi soit qui mal y pense.*

With the view of discrediting the Oral System and its teachers he suggests an unwholesome picture of a mixed school of male and female teachers and pupils engaged in studying with eyes and hands the movements of chest muscles. These are his words: "And the poor female mutes are doomed, it would seem, to undergo the same process as males, whether in separate schools by themselves or in mixed schools with the other sex, since no distinction of treatment is pointed out."

What are his grounds for representing to the British and Irish Catholics, that such a scene is an ordinary accompaniment of the oral system? It is clear from the last words that he is not speaking from actual knowledge, but drawing conclusions from some incomplete information.

Really this is a most serious charge, and ought not to have been advanced until its truth was beyond all possibility of a mistake. The writer knows that nearly all the Catholic Deaf and Dumb Institutions in the world, except those at Cabra and Smyllum, have adopted the oral system; he knows that they are conducted by religious communities, mostly female; he knows the dress they wear; he knows how intense is their love and devotion to one particular virtue; and yet he rushes forward and without enquiry hesitates not to proclaim an infamous abuse that may have crept into some miserable school as representative of the system which these holy servants of God and Our Blessed Lady have adopted. So unmistakable is the impression given by his words, that priests are asking how far all this is true, and think that the writer "has made out a strong case against the oral system." To my knowledge he has inflicted inexpressible pain upon these holy religious, and upon the priests and others who are connected with these institutions by raising such a suspicion in regard to them.

It is difficult to keep patience with one who flings out such an imputation, as gratuitous as it is injurious.

In case your correspondent should wish to imply the alternative

that if at Boston Spa no such process as he describes is used, the oral system is not being properly observed there, I may say that our Sisters follow exactly the system of teaching articulation that is in force at the training college and school at Fitzroy-square, the most eminent in England, where two of the Sisters spent some months under M. Van Praagh, its able director.

I challenge your correspondent to say that any Catholic institution ever did allow such a process as he describes, or to name any respectable authority who insists that such a process is necessary, as asserted by him in his fifth conclusion.

From the fact that the references he makes are always to French papers and French institutions, it would seem that the article has been written in France; and we can just imagine it possible that in some of the state schools an abuse such as he describes has crept into a school presided over by some shameless and God-hating teacher who has become too much imbued with that system of education which is intended to sap all respect for God and supernatural virtue.

But let him write against French abuses in French papers. Let him not serve up those abuses to the Catholics of England and Ireland as essential to the Oral System, giving his readers the impression that such things are done by the teachers of the oral system, whoever and wheresoever they may be. To the religious communities, to the teachers and advocates of the oral system he owes at least an absolute withdrawal, as public as the imputation.

Let us now take the question of religious teaching, which in the eyes of Catholics is so important that the merits of any system of teaching the deaf-mute must stand or fall by this test alone. Knowing how strongly the readers of the RECORD will pronounce for or against the oral system on this one test alone, does your correspondent make careful enquiries, and produce facts from which sound conclusions can be drawn before venturing to inform his readers about this point? Love of truth and justice would have required him to do so. But on this momentous question he is satisfied to write just one line, and in that to utter a very injurious calumny. He says: "The oral system does not pretend to concern itself much about the religion of its pupils."

What does he mean? Is it that the inanimate *system* as a system does not concern itself much about religion? Of course such words can only apply to living *persons*. As they stand, the words seem to have no more meaning than would such a sentence as "The

English language does not concern itself much about the religion of those who speak it." But it is clear that he intends to convey the idea that the oral system is little fitted for the purposes of religious instruction; and, therefore, that the persons who adopt it, in doing so do not pretend to concern themselves much about the religion of its pupils.

If your correspondent is satisfied without enquiry that the oral system does not concern itself about the religion of its pupils, he must have a poor knowledge of the religious spirit that animates the Abbé Tarra, Mgr. de Haerne, and the religious who one after another have adopted it. If, on the other hand, he believed that such men have consciences, and act from motives of religion, the fact that so many had embraced the oral system should have been proof enough, until he had found instances to the contrary, that the system had been carefully investigated and found to be thoroughly adapted to the purposes of religious instruction.

Instead of so hastily dismissing this important point of suitability for religious instruction, a careful man would have enquired into the results that are actually attained in oral schools. But though your correspondent can spare time and space to give a long description of what is done in religious instruction by the *sign-teaching* school at Cabra, he makes no enquiries, gives no evidence or instances of the state of religious instruction in any oral schools, but boldly assumes that in this respect there is a "sad void." This is a calumny weighty in its nature, and grievous in the sacred character and number of the persons maligned by it. If he had made enquiries about the one Catholic oral school in these islands, he would have learnt that all the children who have been there two years are learning catechism; that every Sunday the chaplain hears the lessons that have been learnt during the week, the children in each class standing up in order, reading the question from the chaplain's lips, and giving the answers vocally with almost unerring accuracy. A full instruction on the lesson is then given, to be further explained by the Sisters during the following week. He would have learnt that the pupils approach the tribunal of Penance at regular intervals of from three to eight weeks, that there are Guilds of the Angels, and Children of Mary holding their Meetings every Sunday, and receiving Holy Communion oftener than once a month.

No doubt, other institutions are doing as much or more.

What value is then to be placed upon this or any other statement of

your correspondent, who, whilst undertaking to enlighten the public, takes no trouble to inform himself, even upon the most important of all subjects, but boldly proclaims "the oral system does not pretend to concern itself much about the religion of its pupils?"

What again can be said for the fairness of your correspondent in his next sentence, who, finding that the *Review* quoted by him had taken notice of the ceremony of First Communion at one of the institutions which had been made more than usually interesting by the presence of the Bishop and the administration of Confirmation, so perverts this proof of religious training as to mislead his readers to think that this instance of children being prepared for first Communion under the Oral System was quite exceptional? Here are his words, in which he not only gratuitously assumes there is a "sad void" of religious instruction, but insinuates a wrong motive for this item of news being recorded. "The *Review*, *feeling*, as it would appear, *this sad void*, gladly *parades* in its pages an allocution addressed to the Bishop of Vannes upon the occasion of the First Communion and Confirmation of a female deaf-mute institution by the chaplain, the institution being under the direction of a female community, and conducted professedly according to the oral system."

A little lower down is a sentence in which as on so many other occasions, whilst he carefully avoids committing himself to a direct statement he suggest a great deal. The natural impression given by his words, "but it must be observed that lip-reading affords no advantage to female-deaf mutes for the tribunal of penance; the very idea of such a licence is too revolting to dwell on it for a single moment," is, that persons brought up under the oral system have no other way of conversing with their confessor but by speech and lip-reading, and that this practice is so revolting as utterly to condemn the oral system. Here as in the whole of his letter, your correspondent carefully keeps out of view that such a person can read and write. Indeed, all the children at Boston Spa are trained to conduct their confessions in writing, that being the means most universally available for them elsewhere. So far, therefore, they are on an equality with the deaf-mutes trained under the sign system.

Sometimes, however, they make their confessions orally, and in this they have a great advantage over the deaf-mute who has no speech. The latter must either commit her sins to writing, or if she prefers signs she must be face to face with her confessor. On the other hand, when confessions are made orally, there is no fear of a confession paper falling into the hands of another person; and the

priest and penitent are not face to face, but the same screen separates him from the deaf-mute as from ordinary penitents, her communications being made in speech, his in writing. Where then is the "licence too revolting?" Again I say, *Honi soit qui mal y pense*.

I cannot say what is the practice in other institutions; but your readers may presume that their chaplains have respect for themselves and their responsibilities, and will train their subjects in such a way as will guard the tender feelings of penitents, and the sacredness of the Sacrament.

Enough has now, I trust, been said in regard to the moral and religious objections raised by your correspondent, to prove how groundless they are, and how much he has neglected to qualify himself to treat upon the subject.

In regard to what may be called his secular objections, I could if this letter had not already become too long, show them to be equally groundless, and to have arisen either from ignorance or misconception. The key to the principal objections lies in the writer's misconception of the nature and end of the oral system, and in his ignoring that its pupils ever learn to write or read written language.

With regard to the first, he says, "We are to bear in mind that the oral system proposes to itself as its end to deliver the deaf mute from the misery of his condition by giving him speech to speak like the rest of mankind, and substituting sight-seeing for hearing by means of lip-reading."

He has mistaken the means for the end. *Language* is the end, articulation and lip-reading are but the means. The great object of all systems for educating the Deaf, is to teach them to understand and use *language* as it is written and spoken by hearing people, in order that they may be able to *converse* with hearing people and acquire knowledge by reading books. We acquire language unconsciously, not because it is easy to acquire, but because from our infancy we are taking hundreds of lessons every day.

Scarcely any but those who have been engaged in teaching the Deaf and Dumb, can appreciate how difficult it is to teach language to those who have no more idea of it than a blind man has of colours. To learn to write the alphabet, and then the names of things, qualities and actions, though difficult, is comparatively easy. These are efforts of mere memory. But words no more constitute language than a heap of bricks, slates, and timber, constitute a church. A deaf-mute may soon learn a number of words, but it requires the greatest ingenuity, and continuous systematic training,

to teach him how to arrange those words and how to connect them by auxiliaries, conjunctions, prepositions, &c., so as to construct a sentence which will mean what he wishes to convey. Again he may know the meaning of every word in a sentence and yet be utterly puzzled to know what is meant by them so combined. As an illustration of the difficulty put a Cicero before a boy who knows no Latin. Give him a dictionary which contains the meaning of every word. How much will he understand? Yet he is in a better position than the deaf-mute, for he is acquainted with language (though not the Latin language), and the mode of thought in the mind of a deaf-mute is more unlike the order of words and construction of our sentences, than a Latin sentence differs from an English one.

The natural language, or mode of thought of the deaf-mute is displayed when they converse by natural signs, and bears a strong resemblance to hieroglyphic language. For instance our sentence "I went to Dublin yesterday," would be rendered by them "yesterday Dublin go." To train the deaf-mute to express himself in a mode so different to the mode in which he thinks, is the great object of the teacher of the deaf-mute. Does it not then seem self-evident that the process of teaching language is somewhat retarded when their education is conducted on the sign system: and that on the other hand the readiest way to train deaf-mutes to understand language is to use that language as much as possible? This is what is done in the oral system. The pupils are first taught to read sounds from the lips of their teacher, to write them, and to speak them. Then they proceed to words, and simple sentences. From that time the whole course of instruction is conducted by speech. The result is, as far as our experience goes, that the pupils are being trained to think in words instead of signs, and they write much easier and more correct English now than they did when the education was conducted on the sign system.

If the two systems are to be compared, the excellence or the deficiency of the oral system is not to be tested, as your correspondent would have it, by the proficiency of its pupils in speaking and lip reading, any more than the pupils at Cabra should be tested by their proficiency in the use of signs.

The true test is *language*, or the ability to converse with speaking persons whether by writing or by any other way; and if the two systems are to be compared with each other, let the final results be compared, *respice finem*.

What is attained under the sign system. The deaf-mute learns to write and read written language, he also maintains his natural language of signs, and acquires a number of conventional signs, whose use is limited, however, almost to the institution in which he is educated.

But a deaf-mute educated under the oral system has all that the other has and something more. His facility for writing and reading written language is probably greater; he can converse as readily as the other by means of signs, for it is his natural language; even if he were thrown into a company where, as in the institution, there was a system of conventional signs, he would in a few days be familiar with them all. So that the orally taught deaf-mutes, even if they carry away no power of speaking or lip-reading are on leaving the school, at least on an equality with those who have been taught by signs. But in point of fact they are in a decidedly better state, inasmuch as they also acquire more or less perfectly the art of speaking and lip-reading. Of course neither of these accomplishments is so perfect, except in few instances, that they can read from the lips of strangers, or speak so as to be understood by strangers readily. But conversation with strangers is not the business of their lives, neither is it fair as a test of whether their powers of speaking and lip-reading are useful to them. If any deaf-mute has acquired so much of the arts of speaking and lip-reading as that a few days' intercourse is sufficient to make him acquainted with another person's lip movements, and intelligible to the deaf person's voice, then, indeed, will his accomplishments be of service to him when he is in the company of his relatives, fellow-workmen and friends; that is to say, during the most considerable, important, and pleasurable part of his life. And this is attained by more than half the pupils under the oral system. For other occasions he can fall back upon the means used by those educated under the sign system, viz. writing, manual alphabet and natural signs, which the oral system does not necessarily discard altogether.

Let it ever be kept in mind that signs are the natural language of the deaf-mute, and that in the use of even a conventional system of signs as well as of natural signs, the oralist pupil if he chooses can be as perfect an adept in a few days as the one who has spent all his life in a sign-system school.

Before concluding I must call attention to two other instances of your correspondent misrepresenting facts for his own purpose. Firstly, in regard to the paragraph extracted from the *Quarterly Review of the Deaf-Mute Education*, headed, "A Weighty Authority,"

in which a friendly correspondent cautions teachers of the oral system that great care, zeal and efficiency are requisite in teachers; otherwise the result will be disastrous. Your correspondent would like this to be understood as condemnatory of the oral system. But it is simply a caution that as teaching by the oral system is a higher art than teaching by signs, so greater excellence is required. We may rest assured that concurrently with the strides that have lately been attempted and successfully attained in every other branch of public education, whatever is required for this higher system of educating the deaf and dumb will undoubtedly be supplied.

I must, however, find fault with a statement of your correspondent's, who attempts to show up the oral system as condemned out of the mouths of its own supporters, by speaking of the *Review* as "edited under the auspices of a distinguished committee in the interests of the oral system." This is not true. I was partly instrumental in the establishment of this *Review*, and can vouch that its object is the general good of deaf-mute education, irrespective of any particular system. If your correspondent had referred to the title page of the *Review* for the names of the committee under whose auspices it is edited, he would have found that amongst the eight are two, Mr. Sleight and Mr. Neal, who are uncompromising opponents of the oral system. So much for his "weighty authority."

I will refer to one more paragraph to show again how little reliance can be placed upon the data which he puts forward.

Referring to the Congress of Directors and Headmasters (not of various countries, as he wrongly says, but of the British Isles), held in London in 1885, he says: "The two systems were brought face to face, and applying the test of experience, the supporters of the sign system asked for the fruits of the opposite system. There were no fruits to exhibit—as to actual results there were none worth producing."

This is a wrong conception, very dogmatically expressed, but perhaps pardonable in the case of a person who was not at the meeting, but got his information without rising from his desk by merely reading the printed report of the proceedings.

However, as a member of the conference, I listened attentively to every word that was said during the three days. The great object the congress had in view was to move for obtaining State aid for the education of the deaf and dumb. The subject had been reserved for the last sitting. Every moment was now precious, for Mr. Ackers's paper on the subject had to be read and discussed, and the best method

of approaching the Government to be decided upon and arranged for. Just before Mr. Ackers was about to read his paper on State aid, Mr. Sleight, a teacher under the manual system for over fifty years, rose to speak, and leaving the proper subject under discussion, went on for half-an-hour beyond the time that was allowed him, declaiming in favour of the manual system, and challenging the advocates of the oral system to produce the fruits of their system. He was out of order both in point of time and subject; and it is needless to say that the reason why he was not replied to was that the members were too much irritated at his having appropriated time that was so precious, and too anxious about what was then the main subject, to care to waste further time.

The very sweeping nature of your correspondent's statement should convince the reader how careless he is, and how valueless is his testimony. He says, "There were *no* fruits to exhibit; as to actual results there were *none* worth recording."

Is it not absurd to suppose that a system has *no* fruits to exhibit; or rather that it has not exhibited most satisfactory and convincing fruits, when almost every institution on the continent and most of these in our own isles have at enormous sacrifices abandoned the sign system to adopt it. It is only after most careful comparison of results, that the managers of each institution committed themselves to the change.

Those persons who wish to know what the fruits are which the oral system can produce will do well to visit its schools. Failing that, let them seek information from those who are practically acquainted with it, and not from those who have been for a lifetime attached to the manual system.

Compared with the sign teaching schools they will find the staff more numerous, and progress slower in the youngest class, but proficiency in the older classes equal if not superior. With regard to the articulation, they will find that the children do not stretch their necks or make contortions, that their voices though deficient in natural tone are not unpleasant or guttural; that their words though often difficult for a stranger to catch, are readily understood by those who have associated with them; that they are as full of life in their recreations and games as other children, and that they are thoroughly imbued with the spirit of their religion.

Moreover, remembering that Rome was not built in a day, a person who wishes to form a true estimate, will make allowance for the short time that the system has been in operation, especially in

some schools where the antagonistic effect of the previous system of signs has kept up an element of great difficulty. Instead, therefore, of accepting what he sees as the ultimate perfection that can be arrived at under the oral system, he will rather forecast from present results what will be achieved when the art has had time and opportunity to develop.

However, my object in writing this letter has not been to parade the merits of the oral system, or to draw comparisons between the two systems. But, as a priest, I saw the importance of the serious charges affecting religion and morals, that had been raised against it by your correspondent.

These, I trust, I have shown to be groundless, and to have been put forward without any careful enquiry or regard for the feelings and character of the priests and religious who were concerned.

Instead of further discussion, I think I shall best meet the wishes of your readers by giving the shortest possible reply to each of the objections which concluded his letter.

OBJECTIONS.

1st. That it is not suitable to a general school, requiring as it does special aptitudes in its pupils and rejecting large numbers who are capable of being taught by the sign system.

2. That it requires a longer time, eight years instead of six, and therefore is much more expensive.

3. That to be uniform, which is an object universally called for, training schools are necessary for the teachers.

4. Religious communities are thereby excluded, and it is not seen how female teachers can avail themselves at all of such training.

REPLY.

It is suitable to a general school. All the pupils of ordinary capacity can be trained by it; the only exception being those whose mental faculties are so weak that under any system they must be treated separately. These are not rejected.

Partly true. But is it an objection if in the end the child gains additional faculties? To keep a child at school until it is 16 years old is no injury to it.

Uniformity is no more essential in this than in other educational systems which vary with every country, community, &c. Each large institution is a training college.

There is nothing in the process of teaching or training that is in the least objectionable, as has been explained in this letter. The fact that every Catholic institution is taught by Religious is a proof.

5. If female teachers are excluded, how can female deaf mutes be taught, considering the process of teaching laid down.

6. The system requires a much larger number of teachers, not only on account of the longer course of training but because of the small number of pupils each teacher can have charge of and on this account too it is so much more expensive.

7. Intellectual work is for a considerable time interdicted in order to make the child speak. And the use of signs is prohibited during recreation to the great detriment of health at that tender age. Pupils are deprived of the advantage of cultivating each others' minds by interchange of ideas and sentiments.

8. As the pupils after eight years in the institution pass into the world at large, they cannot understand the lip-movements of others.

9. And whilst they do not understand others in looking at their lips, so others have great difficulty and feel great pain in endeavouring to understand them.

10. As a consequence both lip-reading and speaking soon come to an end.

The Sisters at Boston Spa went through a course of training at the Training School in Fitzroy-square, and actually taught in the classes. Where has such a process, as he describes, been laid down, except in objector's mind?

Is the proportion much larger than at Cabra or other similar institutions? Practically the principal difference lies in this that deaf-mutes are excluded from being teachers.

This was attempted by some—but has been abandoned by most, if not all. Natural signs are now allowed by even the strictest oralists. It is conventional signs, which tend to supersede language, that are forbidden.

The pupils are as lively in recreation as other children.

The pupils can soon learn to understand the lip-movements of those with whom they associate.

This is only true in the case of strangers. The speaking and lip-reading are far superior to what the objector supposes, and are a great help and consolation to the pupils and to those with whom they associate. Few people understand the deaf-and-dumb signs, but all can understand spoken words.

Is a cripple to refuse the great help that an artificial leg will give him because it cannot put him on an equality with others who have their limbs perfect?

This is sometimes the case but not generally.

And as a final result the pupils have neither signs nor speech, and are therefore more destitute than the pupils of the methodic sign system.

This is entirely wrong. Even if he drops both speech and lip-reading, he has still the power of writing unimpaired; and this is the *ordinary* means of communication between hearing persons and the deaf.

Moreover, signs being his natural language he can not only use and understand natural signs at once, but he has the greatest facility for learning even conventional signs, so that in a few days he would be quite equal to a deaf-mute pupil of any methodic sign system.¹

This sweeping assumption has been sufficiently answered in the above letter.

The orally taught deaf-mute is better able than the other to converse with hearing people, having speech and lip-reading, in addition to writing and the natural language of signs.

11. On the whole, applying the philosopher's text, *respice finem*, the oral system is by no means a success, nor does it appear likely to succeed for the end to which it aspires.

Thanking you for allowing me to make this explanation,

I am, dear Mr. Editor,

Yours faithfully,

EDWARD W. DAWSON,

Chaplain of St. John's Institution, Boston Spa, Yorkshire.

DOCUMENTS.

RESOLUTIONS OF THE IRISH BISHOPS.

[*The Resolutions on Coercion, the Land Bill, and the Education Question, which were adopted on the 20th of April, 1887, by the Episcopal Committee representing the Irish Bishops, and published in our May number,*² *were unanimously re-affirmed by the Annual General Meeting of the Archbishops and Bishops of Ireland held at Maynooth on the 22nd ult.*]

¹ It is well known to those who are conversant with the deaf and dumb, that when two meet who have quite distinct systems of signs they will soon understand each other's signs.

² See I. E. RECORD, vol. viii., page 477.

ENROLMENT IN THE SCAPULAR OF MOUNT CARMEL.

SUMMARY.

For the valid reception of the brown Scapular it is necessary that it be blessed and imposed singly, and not together with other Scapulars.

The privilege of blessing and imposing the Brown Scapular at the same time with others will not be granted in future : and in the case of those who have already received this privilege, it is to cease in ten years from the date of this Decree.

DECRETUM ORDINIS CARMELITARUM ANTIQUAE OBSERVANTIAE DE
SCAPULARI B. M. V. DE MONTE CARMELO A SIMULTANEA
PLURIMUM SCAPULARIUM TRADITIONE EXCIPIENDO.

Ab initio huius saeculi in usu esse coepit quatuor Scapularium simultanea et compendiosa traditio, nempe SS. Trinitatis, B. M. V. de Monte Carmelo, Immaculae Conceptionis, septem Dolorum, quibus nuperrime additum est quintum, scilicet Scapulare rubrum Passionis D. N. J. C. Haec facultas benedicendi imponendique simul praedicta Scapularia collata primum alicui religioso Instituto, tempore praesertim ss. Missionum, breviori adhibita formula a S. R. C. approbata, deinde Sacerdotibus quoque saecularibus indulta est, quae etiam extra tempus ss. Missionum peragendarum ipsi utuntur. Quamvis autem haec agendi ratio fortasse contulerit ad istorum Scapularium receptionem facilius propagandam, ea tamen occasio fuit cur praecipuus ille honor, quo christifideles Scapulare carmeliticum quavis aetate celebrarunt, imminueretur, et fervens erga illud devotio aliquantulum tepesceret. Porro Scapulare Carmelitarum, quod nobilitas ipsa originis, veneranda antiquitas, latissima eiusdem in christiano populo pluribus abhinc saeculis propagatio, nec non salutare per illud habiti pietatis effectus, et insignia quae perhibentur patrata miracula mirabiliter commendant, omnino postulare videtur distinctionem honoris in ipso receptionis ritu, ut non quidem cum aliis commixtim, quasi unum ex pluribus, sed prouti in sua primitiva institutione illud beatissima Virgo uti tesseram propriam sui Ordinis tradidisse fertur B. Simoni Stokio, fidelibus quoque distinctim tradatur, nec cum aliis simul Scapularibus connumeretur. Ex quo procul dubio fiet ut illa singularis omnino, universalis et constans totius catholici Orbis religio integra servetur erga hoc sacrum Scapulare marianum, quod veluti antonomastice Scapulare audit, iure meritoque orta ex eo quod, uti traditur, pientissima Virgo speciales favores, gratias et privilegia conferre sponderit devote gestantibus hoc suum praedilectionis signum.

Haec sedulo perpendens hodiernus Vicarius carmelitici Ordinis antiquae observantiae Rmus. P. Angelus Savini honori simul consulere exoptans et devotioni sacri Scapularis B. M. V. de Monte Carmelo, instantibus quoque suis Ordinis Fratribus, huic s. Congregationi Indulg. et ss. Reliq. sequens dubium discutiendum proposuit :

Utrum conveniens sit Scapulare B. V. M. de Monte Carmelo honoris et devotionis causa, separatim potius et distincte, quam cumulative et commixtim cum aliis quatuor vel pluribus Scapularibus benedicere et imponere ?

Emi. ac Rmi. Patres in Generali Congregatione apud Vaticanum habita die 26 Martii 1887, re mature perpensa, rescripserunt : *Affirmative : et consulendum SSmo, ut Indultum huc usque in perpetuum concessum, etiam Regularibus Ordinibus et Congregationibus induendi christifideles Scapulari carmelitico commixtim cum aliis Scapularibus revocetur, et ad determinatum tempus coarctetur, neque in posterum amplius concedatur.*

Facta vero de his relatione in Audientia habita die 27 Aprilis 1887 ab infrascripto Secretario, Sanctissimus D. N. Leo Papa XIII Patrum Cardinalium responsionem approbavit, decrevitque ut praefatum Indultum in posterum non amplius concedatur, ac illi omnes, etiam Regulares Ordines vel Congregationes, quibus Indultum ipsum quocumque nomine vel forma ab Apostolica Sede est concessum eo tantummodo *ad decennium* perfruantur ab hac die computandum.

Datum Romae ex Secretaria eiusdem S. Congregationis die 27 Aprilis 1887.

FR. THOMAS M^a. Card. ZIGLIARA, *Praefectus*.

✠ ALEXANDER, Episcopus Oensis, *Secretarius*.

REPLY REGARDING THE STIPEND FOR REQUIEM HIGH MASS
ADDRESSED TO THE LATE RIGHT REV. BISHOP OF
PROVIDENCE, U.S.A., BY THE CARDINAL PREFECT OF THE
CONGREGATION DE PROPAGANDA FIDE, DATED JULY 10,
1885.

ILLUSTRISIME AC RME. DOMINE,

Amplitudo Tua litteris sub die 16 Martii exponebat fideles istius dioecesis solere aliquando decem aut etiam plura dollaria afferre, ut missa cantata pro suis defunctis celebretur. Aliqua pars istius summae solvitur organistae et cantoribus, quaestio autem orta est utrum reliqua pecunia tota debeatur celebranti, an vero parochus in

ea jus habeat, collatis duntaxat celebranti duobus vel tribus dollariis?

Antequam meum proferrem iudicium, opportunas informationes exquirere curavi circa consuetudinem, quae in Ecclesia Statuum Foederatorum Americae hae super re vigeat. Ex notitiis habitis sequentia deprehendi.

In ista regione consuetudo non fert ut aliqua taxa exigatur ratione cereorum, qui accenduntur sive in altari, sive circa feretrum, si adsit, utique aliqua pecunia organistae et Cantoribus est solvenda, quae etsi diversa in diversis locis, tamen in unaquaque ecclesia fixa est quibusdam vero in dioecesibus pro missa cantata taxa fixa statuta est per Synodum dioecesanam.

Insuper mihi relatum est in ista regione nihil solvi sacerdotibus ratione juris stolae, sed duntaxat ratione missae quae juxta vota familiae aut privata aut cantata est.

Attenta itaque hujusmodi praxi et consuetudine, propositae questionì respondendum existimo; pecunia quae, deducta summa organistae et cantoribus solvenda remanet, ipsi sacerdoti missam celebranti debetur, ac proinde parochus nullam partem pecuniae a fidelibus pro missis cantatis defunctorum oblatae suam facere posse videtur.

Interim Deum precor ut te diutissime sospitet,

Uti frater addictissimus,

JOANNES, CARD. SIMEONI, *Praefectus.*

R. P. D. THOMAE HENDRICKEN, *Episcopo Providentiae.*

DECREE OF THE CONGREGATION OF S. RITES REGARDING THE NUPTIAL BENEDICTION.

BEATISSIME PATER,

Archiepiscopus Remensis humillime exponit :

. . . 2. In dioecesi Remensi, ut in pluribus Galliae dioecesibus, consuetudinem invaluisse a tempore immemorabili non celebrandi missam pro sponsis nec erogandi benedictionem huic missae adnexam, si mulier jam non sit virgo. Haec consuetudo omnibus tanquam bonorum morum tutela videtur, et auctoritate Ordinariorum suffulta tanquam praeceptum exhibetur; legitur enim in Manuali Caeremoniarum Romani Ritus ad usum Eccl. Remensis sub Emo. et mem. Card. Gousset edito, p. 88: "On omet la messe *pro sponsis* ainsi que les deux bénédictiones qui s'y trouvent annexées dans le missel;

1. lorsque la conduite de l'épouse a été notoirement scandaleuse. . .”
Ideo ab omnibus haec consuetudo adnumeratur inter consuetudines
laudabiles quas Sta Synodus Tridentina optat retineri.

Quaeritur an liceat hanc consuetudinem conservare?

Feria 4 die 9 Maii, 1883.

In congregatione generali S. R. et universalis Inquisitionis habita
coram Emis. et RRmis. D.D. S.R.E. Card. in rebus Fidei generali-
bus Inquisitoribus propositis suprascriptis dubiis respondendum
censuerunt.

. . . Ad 2^{um}. Stet Decreto fer. iv., 31 Aug., 1881 huic adnexo.¹

[We are indebted to a Canadian subscriber for copies of the two last
Decrees —Ed. I. E. R.]

INDULGENCES RETAINED IN A NEW CHURCH.

SUMMARY.

A new church retains the Indulgences granted to the old one
which it replaces, if built within a short distance, such as thirty yards,
of the old site.

DUBIUM QUOAD DISTANTIAM LOCI, IN QUO AEDIFICANDA SIT NOVA
ECCLESIA SODALITII ROSARII NE CESSET INDULGENTIA VETERIS
ECCLESIAE.

BEATISSIME PATER,

Cum S. Congregatio Indulgentiis sacrisque Reliquiis praeposita in
una Leodien. sub die 9 Augusti 1843 sequentibus dubiis: 1. An
cesset Indulgentia Confraternitatis ss. Rosarii, vel aliae Indulgentiae,
si nova aedificetur Ecclesia fere in loco ubi vetus existebat? 2. An
cesset Indulgentia si nova Ecclesia aedificetur in coemeterio, non in
loco veteris Ecclesiae? 3. An cesset Indulgentia si nova aedificetur
Ecclesia in alio loco, et non in coemeterio veteris Ecclesiae? resolu-
tionem dedisset: ad 1. Negative, dummodo sub eodem titulo aedificetur;
ad 2. Affirmative: ad 3. ut in secundo: dubitatur inde de vero et
praeciso sensu responsionis: ad 1. praesertim circa verba *fere in loco*.
Unde quaeritur.

An verba *fere in loco* ita accipienda sint, ut intelligantur de parva
distantia a loco, puta quantum est jactum lapidis vel spatium 20 sive
30 passuum: aut contra, an accipienda sint lato sensu, ut adverbium
fere dicatur pro muris civitatis, vel confinio oppidi, paroeciae? etc.

¹ This Decree of the 31st Aug. 1881 will be found at page 506, vol. iii.
(1882), I. E. RECORD.

S. Congregatio Indulgentiis Sacrisque Reliquiis praeposita die 29 Martii, 1886, respondit :

Affirmative ad primam partem. *Negative* ad secundam.

Datum Romae ex Secretaria ejusdem S. Congregationis die et anno uti supra.

I. B. CARD. FRANZELIN, *Praefectus*.

F. DELLA VOLPE, *Secretarius*.

PROHIBITION TO TAKE PART IN THE ELECTIONS IN ITALY.

SUMMARY.

The answer of the Congregation "*non expedire*," includes a prohibition.

How a Bishop is to deal with individual cases *juxta suam conscientiam et prudentiam*.

DECLARATIO QUOAD RESPONSUM—"NON EXPEDIRE"—DATUM A S. POENITENTIARIA RELATE AD SUFFRAGIUM FERENDUM IN POLITICIS ELECTIONIBUS.

ILLME. ET REVME. DOMINE.

Opinio inoluit apud Dioeceses Italiae quamplurimas, politicas urnas adire licitum esse, ex quo S. Poenitentiaria quoad hoc percontata, tantummodo respondit : *Non expedire*.

Ut omnis vero abiiceretur aequivocatio SSmus. Pater, audita sententia istorum EE. DD. Cardinalium, inquisitorum generalium, collegarum meorum, jussit declarari quod *non expedire* prohibitionem importat. Ego autem, declarationem hanc dum Amplitudini Tuae communico, adicere cogor, SSmum. Patrem, his in adjunctis, firmam manutenere prohibitionem ejusmodi.

Perutile quoque Ampl. Tuae erit responsa agnoscere, quae S. Poenitentiaria anno, 1883, dedit Episcopis sciscitantibus, tum quoad peccatum quod committitur, tum quoad censuras quae contrahuntur, politicis interessendo electionibus. Quoad peccatum, an, id est, culpae gravis reus habendus esset, qui suffragium daret pro *Deputatorum* electione responsum paruit : "sese habebit in casibus particularibus juxta suam conscientiam et prudentiam, omnibus perpensis adjunctis." Quoad vero censuras : "Irretiri vel non irretiri censuris, electionum politicarum causa, pendere ab adjunctis facti, et ab animi electorum dispositionibus ; adjuncta et dispositiones ponderandae juxta normas quae in subjecta materia a probatis exhibentur auctoribus."

Interim omne bonum a Deo Ampl. Tuae adprecor.

Romae, 30 Julii, 1886.

Addictissimus in Domino,

R. CARD. MONACO.

NOTICES OF BOOKS.

SHORT PAPERS FOR THE PEOPLE, (Aleuthaurion). By the Rev. C. Moore, D.D. New York: Benziger Brothers.

It is a task of as much difficulty as responsibility to explain to the people points of Catholic doctrine in a precise, accurate and attractive form. For, there is not only the difficulty of acquiring and retaining the necessary knowledge, but also the difficulty of suitably expressing what one has acquired and retained. This is specially the case in Theology; as the language of Theology is the dead Latin language, and though it is useful, if not necessary, in the teaching of the schools, yet it tends to enfeeble the powers of expression in one's own language, and to make one's technical expression unpalatable to the people.

But difficulties like this are not insurmountable. They may be overcome by labour. Few will question that it is time that they should be overcome; for there is a decided want of books or tracts popularizing Theology and its handmaid Philosophy, a class of books so earnestly recommended by the Supreme Pontiff.

All honour then to those who have made the attempt in our own language, all the more to those who have made the attempt on a large scale. As such we congratulate Dr. Moore. He found himself in circumstances similar to those which very many from time to time will find themselves in. He lived in a community for the most part composed of non-Catholics, and the subject of conversation, and of friendly discussion turned very often on religious topics. He heard a great deal of clatter and small talk on these subjects; but he felt himself encased in an armoury of scholastic formulæ, and though he could see the false points, and could fathom the fallacies, yet he felt like David in Saul's armour, incapable of quick action, and scarcely able to move under such a weight of erudition. "I wished for a book," he says, "that would interest to such a degree that it could be read without a strain on the mind; one whose narrative and arguments would be strong, but not stilted, trenchant, but not murderous, witty, but not uncharitable. With this object in view, I began in the year 1873, to publish, through the columns of the *Catholic Advocate*, the series of essays included in this volume."

These essays amount to the number of one hundred and twenty-nine. A large proportion of them deal with questions that are

treated in the theological books on the Church, and on the Roman Pontiff. They display a vast amount of theological information, and are rendered attractive from the many interesting anecdotes that are interspersed.

But from the vast field of knowledge that the author had to traverse, and from the difficulty of guarding at all times against loose expressions, it is not surprising, though regrettable, that he occasionally nods. We would refer in a special manner to his treatment of the question of St. Peter's coming to Rome. He has devoted a great many papers to that question, and has established by full and detailed evidence, the historical fact that St. Peter came to Rome, and died there. We do not, however, regard the coming of St. Peter to Rome, much less his death there, to be what theologians called a *dogmatic fact*, that is to say as Dr. Moore defines it, "a fact so intimately connected with a doctrine of the Church, that, if one should succeed in proving the assumed fact untrue, the doctrine, or doctrines founded on it would also become untenable." Such, according to Dr. Moore is the coming of St. Peter to Rome. "Now, it is evident" he says, "that, if Peter never came to Rome, Pius IX. would have no more right to call himself Peter's successor, than the king of the Cannibal isles to pretend that he is the successor of General Washington, first President of the United States. Consequently with the disproof of the fact, all the claims and pretensions of the Pope of Rome would vanish into thin air."

That we do not conceive to be the case. It is defined by the Vatican Council that the Roman Pontiff is the successor of St. Peter in the Primacy over the entire Church; but he may be so, though St. Peter never came to Rome, much less is it required or implied by the definition, that he died there. For St. Peter could have been Bishop of Rome, though he lived at Antioch, and wherever he lived he would be within his territory. More than that, it was not necessary that St. Peter should have been Bishop of Rome; for it might have been left free to him to remain Bishop of Antioch, and then to designate any See, the Bishop of which would be his successor; if then one supposes that St. Peter designated the See of Rome, then the Bishop of Rome would be his successor. Further still, adopting the opinion which, though not defined, is now the most common, that the connection of the Primacy with the Roman See is *jure divino*, so that the Roman Pontiff *as such*, and not merely as *successor of St. Peter*, has the Primacy *jure Divino*, it is not necessary to suppose that St. Peter came to Rome for we may still suppose that even though St. Peter had not been

Bishop of Rome, his successor in the Primacy was expressly designated by the Divine will to be the Bishop of Rome, and that the Bishop of that See was by the express will of God to be successor of St. Peter in the Primacy.

There are several papers on Miracles, Apparitions, Theophany. The treatment of Miracles is very full. Theologians do not generally give the same criterion of a true miracle which Dr. Moore gives. In the paper on Theophany most of the arguments for, and against, the appearance of the Second Person of the Adorable Trinity are given, though we notice that the argument against that opinion from the appearance of the three Angels to Abraham, and afterwards mentioned in Heb., xiii. i., is not given, and this is an argument very much relied upon. But the author solves the difficulties he proposes pretty well, and so is in harmony with the more common opinion, and what was the almost universal opinion of the early fathers.

The author treats of many interesting questions concerning hell and purgatory, and devotes two papers to the life and personal appearance and habits of Dante, and what he saw in his poetical hell.

The bird's-eye-view of the General Councils is deserving of special mention, as a complete synopsis of them is given in a very small space.

Though there are faults in this work of imperfect exposition of Theological teaching, and some loose expressions, the result no doubt of hasty writing for a periodical, yet it is a work of great labour; it contains a vast amount of knowledge; it is written in a lively popular style, and is racy of American soil. It will be of considerable use not only to the people, but also to those whose duty it is to instruct them, and who in moments of weariness would wish to turn from the heavy tomes to lighter and more varied reading in Theology.

LEAVES FROM ST. AUGUSTINE. By Mary H. Allies. Edited by T. W. Allies, K.C.S.G. London: Burns & Oates.

THIS book has been compiled to supply a want that has been long felt in the field of religious literature. The works of St. Augustine are so voluminous, that few have time, and fewer still the perseverance to read them through. And yet who is there that takes an interest in the study of ecclesiastical literature, that should not wish to read some, if not all of the works of the greatest of the Latin Fathers, of him who did more to defend the Church's interests, and to mould her doctrines, than any individual since the time of the Apostles. Interest in the writings of the great Saint and Doctor, appears but to increase with time. They have been translated into almost every spoken

language. They have got two English editions of his works; one brought out at Oxford, and the other at Edinburgh. The latter contains fifteen octavo volumes, and still is far from exhausting all his writings.

The book before us—a handsome volume of about five hundred pages, contains characteristic extracts from his various writings, autobiographical, philosophical, apologetic, &c. The extracts appear to have been selected with care and judgment. They are not taken from the English editions, but are translated from the best Latin editions of his works, brought out by the Benedictines at Paris 1679.

ANNUNZIATA, 'OR THE GIPSY CHILD. By Laetitia Selwyn Oliver. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

THE style in which this pretty little book is brought out is very attractive; the matter of the book is no less so. We did not close it until we had read it through, so interesting did it appear. Each chapter has its surprises; and each has something incomplete which keeps one continually expecting completion, until one reaches the end.

"Annunziata" is the name of a mysterious child left by a Gipsy-woman to a school-mistress in England, but who, after many vicissitudes, is found to be Annunziata di Foligno, the stolen child of the Marchese di Foligno. The Marchese and Marchessa come to England for their child, and all three return to their fair Italian home.

The book is written in a truly Catholic spirit, it is admirably suited for prizes and presents; we heartily wish it a wide circulation.

J. C.

INTRODUCTION TO ENGLISH RHETORIC. By Rev. Charles Coppens, S.J. New York: Catholic Publication Society. London: Burns & Oates.

This is another valuable contribution to our stock of literature on English Rhetoric, and possesses all those qualities, which make such a treatise highly useful to that class of readers for which it is designed. It is singularly clear, simple, and orderly.

But there are special excellences in this book, which make it specially valuable as an educational work. Hitherto in many of our text-books on this subject, authors aimed solely at the training of the intellect, while no attention whatever was paid to the religious and moral training. This was a very serious oversight. To supply this deficiency, Fr. Coppens criticises the works of many authors, not merely from a literary, but also from a religious and moral point of

view, and marks out for the reader those which he considers unsafe, either to faith or morals.

Again, the author displays excellent taste and judgment in the selection of quotations for purposes of illustration. This makes the study of the book far more pleasant than it otherwise might be. He treats every part of his subject exceedingly well, and in "The Introduction to English Rhetoric" gives to students another work, which deserves as widespread a popularity as his "Art of Oratorical Composition" already enjoys.

HYMN TO THE ETERNAL. *The Voices of Many Lands, and Other Poems.* By Kinnerby Lewis. London: Sampson Low & Co., 188, Fleet-street.

This daintily dressed little volume comes to us recommended by the harp that decorates its cover, and the author's generous sympathy with us in our struggles for, and advocacy of our claims to, national autonomy. All the poems give abundant evidence of a cultured mind. In many of them lofty thoughts find a chaste and elegant expression. Several of the pieces have been set to music—a few of them by the poet himself.

The little book has the further recommendation of good clear type, and tasteful binding.

J. P. M'D.

FOR THE OLD LAND. By Charles J. Kickham. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

Of "Knocknagow" "Sally Cavanagh" and "For the Old Land" it may be truly said, as of Scott's novels, that, "as pictures of national manners, they are inestimable, as views of human nature, influenced by local circumstances, they are extremely curious . . . and, by running the course of the story through the most touching incidents, they carry the reader's sympathy perpetually with them."

The present work differs very much from "Knocknagow" and "Sally Cavanagh," but it gives abundant evidence of the power so conspicuously displayed in these two books, the power that requires no desperate plot to excite and keep alive the reader's interest.

Kickham's special excellence as an interesting writer is due to his close and appreciative observation, his keen sense of humour, his unbounded sympathy, all aided by a wonderful power of description.

He seizes the smallest features in a picture, and describes them with a care that appears unnecessary. Yet we find, on close examination, that the omission of some apparently trifling detail would deprive the description of all its charm.

His sense of humour, and his sympathy enable him to do more justice to the Irish character than any other writer who has described it: he exhibits Irishmen as witty and ingenious, without making them buffoons and cheats, and as a very religious people, without making them weakly superstitious.

Perhaps there is a want of definiteness about the character in the present work; however, the reader is always amused by Joe Sproul's eloquence, and Murty Magrath's philosophy, and charmed by Ambrose Armstrong's unselfishness and generosity.

ANNALES DE PHILOSOPHIE CHRETIENNE. Revue Mensuelle.

Directeur: M. L'Abbé J. Guien. Paris: 20 Rue de la Chaise.

SINCE the publication of the Encyclical "Aeterni Patris," the *Annales* has acquired new vigour, and has done good work in furtherance of the programme set before Christian Philosophers in that remarkable encyclical. Its essays, which are almost invariably of a high order, will do much towards the study of the Philosophy of the Fathers of the Church, and especially of the Philosophy of St. Thomas, whilst the medium of the French language will of itself tend a good deal both to the exact expression of the Scholastic formulae, and to the popularising of the teaching of the schools. Already there have appeared able essays on the primary idea of *being* and its constitution, the fundamental knowledge of which is so essential. The Aristotelian doctrine of motion—the *motor* and the *mobile*—is also ably treated in several successive numbers. The *Annales* proposes to deal with the different philosophical systems. But up to the present the system of Aristotle and St. Thomas has almost exclusively been treated. An interesting feature of the *Annales*, is the account given from month to month of the transactions of the Society of St. Thomas, lately founded in Paris, and the conferences held at the Catholic Institute of Paris on Scholastic Philosophy.

In pursuance of the study of the Natural Sciences in order to defend revelation, a series of papers was begun in the November number under the title:—*L'Histoire Religieuse D'Israel, et la Nouvelle Exégèse Rationaliste*.

New works bearing on the objects the *Annales* has in view are analysed and criticised. Amongst these the work of Cardinal Pecci, "St. Thomas on the Divine *Concursus* and the *Scientia Media*," published in an Italian periodical, is analysed, and criticised through several successive numbers.

EDWARD THE SIXTH. By F. G. Lee, D.D. Burns & Oates.

From a religious point of view, the reign of Edward VI. is full of interest. It was during his reign that the doctrines of the Reformation were exclusively introduced into England. Henry VIII. is generally set down as the father of the English Reformation, and indeed, he can fairly claim the title as it was his rejection of papal supremacy that paved the way for the religious revolution of succeeding reigns. Still the "*bloody six articles*" of Henry pressed almost as heavily on the reformers as on those who adhered to the ancient faith.

It was not till the reign of his son and successor that the doctrine of the German reformers received a political recognition in England, and were embodied in the Book of Common Prayer by Ridley and Cranmer. The chief reformers of this reign have been looked on by each succeeding generation of Englishmen as the ideals of Sanctity and the heralds of a new and superior civilization. Recently, however, there is the clearest indication that the cloud of prejudice, which was the cause of this opinion, is fast disappearing, and that the Protestants of England are coming to form a faster estimate of the extent to which these early reformers merit the praises that have been so lavishly bestowed upon them. This change is chiefly due to the researches that have been recently made by Protestant as well as Catholic historians, into their lives and characters. The latest work on the subject is from the pen of Dr. Lee. It contains much useful information on the stirring events that occurred in England during the reign of Edward VI. No statement is made or view advanced, without bringing forward full historical evidence in support of their truth.

THE GLORIES OF DIVINE GRACE. A Free Rendering of the Original Treatise of P. Eusebius Nieremberg, S.J. By Dr. M. Jos. Scheeben, Professor in the Archiepiscopal Seminary at Cologne. Translated from the Fourth Revised German Edition, by a Benedictine Monk of St. Meinrad's Abbey, Ind. New York, Cincinnati, and St. Louis: Benziger Brothers. London: R. Washbourne. Dublin: M. H. Gill and Son.

At the present day any religious book, indeed any book, outside the domains of fiction and politics, to be read at all—except perhaps by clergymen and religious communities—must be presented to the public in an attractive style. The reason is obvious. Modern

thought does not turn very much on matters appertaining to eternity. It seems to have a decided preference for the study of natural science.

Obviously then, if our religious literature is to occupy the attention of any appreciably large section of the public, it must be made more attractive than it is ordinarily found to be. Useful spiritual books indeed we have, in unstinted measure—but could they not be made more entertaining? We must be pardoned for thinking that many of our religious books are sent upon the world lacking the latter desirable qualification.

Religion and religious truths, we think, might be made a very interesting, as well as useful study, and in proof of our contention we would point to Dr. Scheeben's book. The learned author's treatment of his subject is characterised by great solidity, as well as much fertility of thought, and is methodical throughout. He has succeeded in making his exposition of an important subject—what it purports to be—both useful and interesting, and we would point to it as a good specimen of what we could wish our religious literature to be.

English speaking Catholics will find the intrinsic excellence of the book enhanced by that desirable but rare product—a translation excellent in style, yet faithful to the text.

J. J. M'D.

THE CATHOLIC WORLD: *A Monthly Magazine.* New York, 6, Park-place. London: Burns & Oates.

At the present day Catholics feel keenly the want of such books as can safely be put into the hands of the general reader, whose reading must not be dissociated from recreation, and whose interest is excited and sustained as well by the charms of a graceful style as by abundance of matter. For this large and ever-growing class of readers this excellent Monthly is well suited.

THE CHURCH OF OLD ENGLAND.

This is the title of a "Collection of papers bearing on the continuity of the English Church, and of the attempts made to justify the Anglican position." The object of the papers is stated in a short notice prefixed by the editor. They are intended to "offer a ready and complete answer to the chief claims and objections set up by the Anglican Church in its endeavours to pass itself off as Catholic." In the paper on St. Peter's Roman Episcopacy, we have a very full and accurate treatment of an interesting question.

THE STONEMASON OF SAINT-POINT. A Translation from the French of A. de Lamartine. By Georges Emile Barbier. Dublin : Browne & Nolan.

THIS is a good translation of Lamartine's "*Tailleur de Pierres*." M. Barbier may be congratulated on the exact knowledge which he has acquired of the English language. In this work he always finds the happiest idiomatic English expressions to render the corresponding ones in French. We believe, however, that he has done a bad service to boys preparing for examinations by offering them this translation. No language can be learned at all when the mind of the boy is passive instead of being active, and that is almost always the case when translations are used, particularly when the original work is so easy as the present. Annotated editions of the French text, such as those of M. Gosset of Oxford—*L'Avare*, *Tartuffe*, *Les Fourberies de Scapin*, or those prepared by M. Boiëlle, are all that can be desired, and give as much assistance as any student who knows the elements of the language should require. If, on the other hand, the translation is intended, as it well may be, for English readers unacquainted with French, the asterisks, references-marks, parentheses and foot-note annotations intended for the schools, take away much from the pleasure one might find in reading an otherwise pleasant and pure English translation.

J. F. H.

THE GREAT MEANS OF SALVATION. By St. Alphonsus de Liguori. New York : Benziger Brothers.

THIS is the third volume of the centenary edition of the complete Ascetical Works of St. Alphonsus, edited by Fr. Eugene Grimm. It comprises the important treatises on Prayer, on the choice of a state of life, and on the vocation to the religious state and to the priesthood. It would be almost impertinence to commend such a valuable book, which the saint considered the most useful of all his writings. "If it were in my power," he adds, "I would distribute a copy of it to every Catholic in the world."

It is only necessary for us to refer to the printing and general appearance of the volume, which are all that could be desired, and, indeed, such as might be expected from the eminent publishers.

THE COINER'S CAVE. By Wilhelm Herchenbach. Translated by Mrs. Josephine Black. Dublin : M. H. Gill & Son.

The Coiner's Cave is a short story in which the dangers and precautions against detection, inseparable from the coiner's trade, are

very well described. The story has several exciting incidents, and the writer's power of description is considerable.

The translator has done her part of the task admirably. There are none of those departures from English idiom and English terms of expression, which so often disfigure the pages of otherwise admirable translations.

PERCY'S REVENGE. By Clara Mulholland. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

Percy's Revenge increases the debt of gratitude that the reading public, and especially the youthful portion of it, owe to the gifted author.

Under the form of a simple story, delightfully told, are conveyed lessons in truthfulness and honesty, and in that self-forgetfulness and consideration for others without which even the family circle cannot be happy.

The characters introduced are judiciously few, and they are all well-drawn; we cannot but sympathise with poor Percy, and admire the efforts he makes to be good.

IRISH SONGS AND POEMS. By Francis A. Fahy. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son, O'Connell-street.

The author claims but to be "a singer of rhymes that will not linger." We hope his claims will be disallowed. His "rhymes" have the merit of patriotism. They are just such as our peasantry are apt to catch, and make long-lived.

THE SALVE REGINA. THE POETRY OF SIR SAMUEL FERGUSON. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

The Salve Regina, by Father Antony Denis, S.J., is a translation from the Second Edition, consisting of thirty-one Meditations divided respectively into two, three, and sometimes four chapters. The book is serviceable as a Month of Mary and will win many clients for our Queen.

The Poetry of Sir Samuel Ferguson, by Mr. Justice O'Hagan, is a just analysis of his friend's chief poems. The neat and attractive little book is a reprint of two thoughtful and appreciative Essays first published in the *Irish Monthly*.

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

AUGUST, 1887.

THE ORIGIN OF RELIGIOUS ORDERS.

AFTER the Papacy there is perhaps no institution in the Church that deserves more the admiration of her children and the careful attention of mankind than her Religious Orders. Had she no other claim to be recognized as Divine in her origin, they would be quite sufficient to establish her claim. For no supposition of the Church's being a mere human institution can explain why so many of her children have in every period of her history given up all that the world holds dear, to embrace what the world in its practice so clearly condemns, viz., poverty, chastity, and obedience. For more than fourteen hundred years Religious Orders have taken a prominent part in almost every movement that was directed to the improvement of man's religious and educational condition. They have been the homes of learning and piety, the devoted defenders of the Church against her enemies, the heralds of religion and civilization to the uttermost parts of the earth. These services the Church has been ever ready to acknowledge by the many favours which she has bestowed on Religious Orders in each succeeding age. The world also owes them a debt which it is slow to acknowledge, and slower still to repay. Religious Orders have, then, entered largely into the life and action of the Church in sanctifying her children and promoting the interests of civilization. They are not, however, essential to the Church's constitution: she lived and

fulfilled her mission without them for the first three centuries; and that a period the most critical in the whole course of her history. During those years of her infancy and early growth, without their assistance, she had to withstand the combined attacks of Judaism, Paganism, and Greek Philosophy, and pass through the fiery persecutions of a Nero, a Decius, and a Diocletian. They are not then essential to the Church: neither are they of Divine institution. They are the out-growth, the development, and full expression of her Religious life. This Religious life, which in its essence consists in the practice of the three virtues of poverty, chastity, and obedience, is as old as the Church herself, for it was practised by the College of the Apostles. It found expression in many different forms before the institution of Religious Orders. To trace briefly the history of those phases of Religious life, and show how each gradually developed into another till they culminated in the institution of Monastic Orders, is the purpose we set before ourselves in the present paper.

Anti-Catholic writers maintain that Christian monachism began with the Decian persecution (249-51), and that the first monks found in the Church were the hermits that were driven by this persecution to take up their abode in the deserts of Egypt. In holding this view they either totally ignore the witness of history, or distort it so as to make it subservient to their preconceived theories about the origin and growth of monachism. According to them, Christian monachism is not the result of an effort to carry out in practice the evangelical counsels, and to follow a mode of life that is praised in the Old Testament, and received from Christ such an unmistakable sanction in the eulogium passed by Him on St. John the Baptist. On the contrary, they hold that it is opposed to the spirit of the Gospel, that its first stage was brought about by persecution, and that the following stages were the result of error and superstition. Christian monachism did not begin with the Decian persecution; long before that time there were in the Church monks, or such as lived a life of retirement in the practice of poverty, chastity, prayer, and other ascetical exercises. St. Athanasius, in his life of St. Anthony, says that before

the time of St. Paul of Thebes¹ and St. Anthony, there were no hermits in the Church, but that there were monks who lived in cells in rural districts close to towns. He also tells us that when St. Anthony, about the year 266, thought of embracing the life of a hermit, he went to consult an old man who led the life of a monk from his early years (*ineunte ætate*). This would clearly require that he who was an old man in 266 and had embraced the life of monachism at an early age should have been a monk before 249, when the Decian persecution began. Cassian,² traces the history of Christian monachism in Egypt back to the middle of the first century of the Christian era; he states that it was introduced into the Church of Alexandria by St. Mark, and that the plan of life introduced by St. Mark was followed by subsequent Egyptian monks. Many writers of the last century, accepting the authority of Eusebius, held that the Therapeutae were Christians and the founders of Christian monachism. Had the Therapeutae been Christians, as stated by the Father of Ecclesiastical History, the honor might be fairly claimed for them of having introduced not merely the first stage of Christian monachism, but, even its more advanced stage, *scil.*, monasticism. For they lived a kind of community life in the practice of poverty, chastity, and retirement from the world. It has, however, been conclusively established, that the Therapeutae were not Christians, but an ascetical sect that sprung up among the followers of the Jewish Philo of Alexandria. It is very probable that some of them were converted to Christianity and exercised no inconsiderable influence on the forms in which Religious life afterwards manifested itself among the Christians of Egypt.

The monks or religious solitaires of the first two centuries are by many writers called *anchorites* to distinguish them from the *hermits*—citizens of the desert—that made their appearance during the Decian persecution; though, by most writers the words are taken as synonymous. For the sake of clearness we shall use them in different senses, understanding

¹ St. Paul of Thebes became a hermit in 250.

² *De Inst. Cocnob.*, Lib. ii., cap. 5.

by *anchorite* a religious solitary who lives not far removed from the abodes of men; while *hermit*, in accordance with the derivation of the word, will be taken to designate a religious solitary of the desert. At first, as we are told by St. Athanasius,¹ the *anchorites* lived in rudely constructed cells in fields near towns; but, when churches began to be built towards the close of the second century, they had their cells constructed either beside the church, or, as generally happened, in its very walls. The latter arrangement had this advantage, that the *Inclusi*, as they are sometimes called, could hear Mass and receive the Sacraments without leaving their enclosure. This mode of life was interrupted by the Decian and following persecutions. When peace was restored to the Church by Constantine the Great it was again introduced, and was adopted in many countries of Europe, especially in England, where it became so popular that it was made the subject of legislation. Thus, the Council of Lincoln (1323) ordered that the cells of *anchorites* should in future be constructed in the walls of the Church and that each cell should be provided with three apertures, viz., one into the Church, one for light, and one through which food might be passed to the anchorites. It also prescribed the ceremonies and prayers that were to be used in enclosing the religious solitaires. It continued in England as late as the Reformation, when it disappeared with the other forms of Religious life.

A remarkable class of anchorites called Stylites or pillar-saints made their appearance in Syria in the beginning of the fifth century. They pursued a manner of life strange in itself, and stranger still when judged by the standard of modern tastes and habits. To effect a more complete separation from earth than that afforded by the cell in the church, they took up their abode on the tops of pillars—a fact, from which they derive their name—and here they lived often for many years without descending to the earth. The height of the pillar did not always remain constant, but was often raised to indicate the progress in perfection supposed to be

¹ Life of St. Anthony.

made by the Stylite. Thus, *e.g.* the pillar of St. Simon Stylites, the first and best known of this class of solitaries, was raised four times during the thirty-two years that he spent in this mode of life. The changes in height are thus described by the poet, Tennyson :

“Then, that I might be more alone with thee,
Three years I lived on a pillar, high
Six cubits, and three years on one of twelve :
And twice three years on one that rose
Twenty by measure ; last of all I grew
Twice ten long weary years to this,
That measures forty from the soil.”

The Stylites generally took up their abode near towns that they might have an opportunity of preaching to the numbers that, on their way to or from the towns, flocked to see them, and were attended by disciples who supplied them with the necessary food. They were bound by chains to the pillars, and could never lie down to rest, as the diameter of the top was generally about two feet and a half, and never exceeded a yard. Neither had they any protection against the inclemency of the weather other than that afforded by the hair skins with which they were clothed. The sufferings they had to undergo cannot be conceived by us, much less realised. Tennyson has undertaken to give a description of them by contrast in the following lines on St. Simon Stylites :

“ But yet
Bethink thee, Lord, while they and all the saints
Enjoy themselves in heaven, and men on earth
House in the shade of comfortable roofs,
Sit with their wives by fires, eat wholesome food,
And wear warm clothes, and even beasts have stalls,
I, 'tween the spring and downfall of the light,
Bow down one thousand and two hundred times,
To Christ, the Virgin Mother, and the saints ;
Or in the night after a little sleep,
I wake : the chill stars sparkle ; I am wet
With drenching dews, or stiff with crackling frost.
I wear an undress'd goatskin on my back ;
A grazing iron collar grinds my neck ;
And in my weak, leaden arms I lift the cross,
And strive and wrestle with thee till I die.”

The Stylites were confined almost exclusively to the East: the only example known in the Western Church being that of a monk named Thulfilach, who, after spending some time on a pillar near Treves, was prevailed upon by the bishop of the diocese to retire to a monastery. They were most common in Syria, where they continued as late as the thirteenth century. Perhaps the most noteworthy instance of this peculiar mode of life is that given by Surius, in his catalogue of saints, of one Alipius, Bishop of Adrianople, who resigned his See, and embracing the life of a Stylite, spent seventy years on a pillar. So much for the anchorites, and that phase of anchoretic life pursued by the Stylites: we shall now pass to consider the next stage of monachism.

We have mentioned that the anchoretic mode of life was interrupted by the Decian and following persecutions: it would perhaps be more correct to say, that the anchoretic stage of monachism was transformed by these persecutions into the heremitical. The Decian persecution was the severest of the many that had as yet been carried on against the Church: and nowhere were the imperial edicts executed with greater rigour than in Egypt. Christians wherever found were put to death, churches were burned down, the anchoretic cells were destroyed and their holy inmates had to flee into the deserts to find amidst nature's solitudes the peaceful rest denied to them by the cruelty of man. Their example was followed by thousands who sought to escape persecution, and, by embracing the life of the hermit, to imitate their great prototype, St. John the Baptist. Then did Egypt "the mother of many wonders" see the most striking of her wonders, viz.—her cities and towns deserted, her deserts and mountain wastes peopled by holy solitaries living the lives of angels rather than of men. St. Chrysostom¹ speaking of this wonderful transformation brought about by the hermits in Egypt says: "If any one goes into the solitudes of Egypt he will see the entire desert raised above Paradise itself: and innumerable angels appear before him in the

¹ Hom. in St. Matt. cap. v.¹

bodies of men." The two most remarkable and best known of the Egyptian hermits are St. Paul of Thebes and St. Anthony. To the former the consent of ages has given the title of "*first hermit*." We are told by St. Athanasius¹ that he retired in 249 to the most secluded part of the Thebaean desert, where he took up his abode in a grotto with a stone for its door, and not sufficiently large to contain two at the same time. His raiment was the skin of a wild beast bound with a girdle of palm leaves, and his food was supplied each morning by a raven. In this mode of life he spent 100 years, and when he died, the charitable work of burial was performed by a lion. The life of St. Paul may be said to be substantially the life of many. The accounts that have come down to us of these saintly denizens of the desert are so replete with the wonderful, that our first prompting is to think that they were endowed with powers more than human and natures that were angelic. Catholics and non-Catholics would do well to read some of their lives: the former, to see what men endowed with a lively faith are capable of doing for God and eternity: the latter, to find examples of devotion and self-sacrifice that will be sought for in vain outside the Catholic Church. "Who is so ignorant," says Montalembert, "or so unfortunate, as not to have devoured those tales of the heroic age of monachism? Who has not contemplated, if not with the eyes of faith, at least with the admiration inspired by an incontrollable greatness of soul the struggles of these athletes of patience. Everything is to be found there, variety and pathos, the sublime and simple epic of a race of men, *naïfs* as children and strong as giants."

The heremital life, possessing as it did many advantages peculiar to itself, suffered from one great drawback, viz., the want of the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass and of the Sacraments, for the hermits were mostly laymen. To remedy this defect the monks living in the same district brought their cells together and erected a common church where they might attend at Mass and receive the Sacraments. Such a collection

¹ Life of St. Anthony.

of cells was called a *laura*, and formed a kind of transition stage between the purely heremital and coenobitical, modes of religious life. We are told by Eveagrius¹ that the difference between the *laura* and *coenobium* or monastery consisted in this: "a *laura* was many cells divided from one another where each monk provided for himself, while the *coenobium* was one habitation where all the monks lived in society and had all things in common."

That the *laura* should soon give way to the monastery is what we should expect. The transition, however, might have occupied a much longer time than it did, had not the great St. Anthony appeared to hasten it. After spending forty years as a hermit in the practice of those austerities that have hallowed his name in the Church he was persuaded to leave his retreat in the desert by the prayers of numerous hermits who wished to live under his spiritual direction. In the year 305 he founded at Faium, not far from Memphis, an institute, the members of which lived in community and recognised St. Anthony as their superior. This is the first religious institute that can claim the title of *monastery*. St. Anthony introduced an important element into the religious life, that was destined very soon to receive a further development. Before his time the monks lived in separate cells, bound together by no other bonds than a common mode of life, and that triple tie which unites all orthodox Christians. He brought them together and formed them into a kind of family under the rule of a superior and in this way added a closer bond to those by which they were already united, viz., a special governmental union. It is on account of this new element which he introduced into monachism that St. Anthony has been recognised as the founder of monasticism.

Though St. Anthony was the founder of monasticism, he cannot lay claim to the further title of founder of *monastic orders*. There were still important advances to be made before that further development of monasticism could be reached. As yet, there was no monastic rule, neither were

¹ Let. 1, cap. xxi.

vows required of those who embraced monasticism. The time, however, was not distant when those advances were to be made, and the men were already at hand that were to make them. St. Pachomius the disciple of St. Anthony drew up the first monastic rule, and before his death he had the pleasure of seeing it observed by 7,000 monks. St. Pachomius may claim the title of being founder of the first *Religious Congregation*.

The last stage in the development of monasticism was reserved for the great St. Basil. After he became Bishop of Ceserea, he brought the monks of his diocese together, and drew up a rule for their observance which after a short time was adopted throughout the East. He required that all who should embrace the Religious life should take the three solemn vows of poverty, chastity, and obedience. He tells us that before his time these vows were not required. Hence St. Basil was the founder of the first Religious Order. This Order was never popular in the west, as its rule was not sufficiently in keeping with the climate of Europe and the character of its people. A more suitable rule was introduced about a century and a-half later by St. Benedict of Nursia, who did for the west what St. Basil had already done for the east, and, thus, became the founder of Western Monasticism in its more developed form. Henceforth Religious Orders are destined to occupy an important place in the history of mankind.

T. GILMARTIN.

AMONG THE GRAVES.—V.

ONE of the finest monuments that have come down to us from comparatively remote times, having survived the ravages of time and escaped the spoiler's hand, is that of the O'Connor family in the old Dominican church of Sligo. Its style is what is usually called the Renaissance, which, whatever may have been its beauties or defects elsewhere, was in this country, at the time when this monument was erected,

wholly devoid of grace of outline and harmony of parts. Usually pillar rises over pillar, and arch over arch in a stiff formal manner, making but a poor contrast with the flowing tracery and the delicate pillars of the Gothic buildings into which they were allowed to intrude. This monument has most of these defects, and they are made more evident by the comparison which forces itself on the spectator between it and the little that unhappily remains of the old building. This Archdall describes as "beautiful and of extraordinary workmanship."

Yet, however defective its outlines may be, the details of its ornamentation leave but little to desire. As we cannot set before our readers any kind of print of the monument, we must strive to make up for the deficiency by a somewhat lengthy description. Below, as a support, we have some finely wrought scrollwork, with fruits and flowers grouped together with great skill, in the centre of which is a sand-glass with wings, and beyond it on either side a death's head, fitting emblems of the quick flight of man's mortal life. Immediately above this is a plain panel bearing the inscription with which we shall deal later; on each side a winged head. A high projecting moulding separates this panel from the next member and acts as a support for two figures, each in an arched recess, kneeling with their hands joined as if in prayer. The male figure to the left is clad in plate armour; his helmet is at his feet. The female figure to the right is clothed in the dress worn by women towards the end of the 17th century; a ruff round the neck, a rosary hanging from her waist, and a coronet on her head. The semi-circular spaces over the heads of the figures contain inscriptions, but these are almost wholly frayed away; so too the inscription on the square panel over the arches and separated from them by a double moulding. Over this panel and supported by a very heavy moulding we have a coat of arms, viz., on a shield a tree; over the shield a knight's helmet; as crest, a crowned lion passant regardant. On either side, not however as supporters, but as independent figures on pedestals set against the pilasters, are two full-length figures in high

relief, one holding in the right hand a key, in the left a sword ; the other having in the right a sword, in the left a book, most probably representing SS. Peter and Paul. The whole is surmounted by a fine figure of the Crucifixion.

The inscription on the lower panel is as follows, the end of each line in the original being marked by a star :—

HIC JACET FAMOSISSIMVS MILES DONATVS CORNELIANVS COMITATVS*
 SLIGIAE DOMINVS CVM SVA VXORE ILLVSTRISSIMA
 DOMINA ELINORA BUTLER *
 COMITISSA DESMONIAE QNE ME FIERI FECIT ANNO 1624 POST MORTEM SVI*
 MARITI QVI OBIT 11° AVGVSTI ANNO 1609 ITEM EIVS FILIA ET
 PRIMI MARITI, VIZ : *
 COMITIS DESMONIE NOMINE ELIZABETHA VALDE VIRTVOSA DOMINA
 SEPVLTA * FVIT HOC IN TVMVLO 31° NOVEMBRIS
 ANNO DOMINI 1623. *

[Here lies the most famous Knight Donough O'Connor, Lord of the County of Sligo, with his wife, the most illustrious Lady Elinor Butler, Countess of Desmond, who caused me to be made in the year 1624, after the death of her husband, who died on the 11th of August, in the year 1609. Also her and her first husband the Earl of Desmond's daughter, by name Elizabeth, a very virtuous Lady, was buried in this tomb on the 31st of November, 1623].

Two obvious errors occur in the above inscription, the first in line 4 where "qne" is put for "que"; the second gives 31 days to the month of November.

The Irish name O'Conchobhair is here translated Cornelianus. O'Donovan in this very valuable introduction to the topographical poems of O'Duggan and O'Heerin says of such changes of Irish names as this: "Conchobhar, or as Sir Richard Cox writes it Cnogher, is not identical, synonymous or even cognate with Cornelius . . . It is evident that there is no reason for changing the Irish Conchobhar to Cornelius, except a fancied and a very remote resemblance between the sounds of both." We may add it is just as evident that disputes about the way in which the name should be written in English are not unlike those *de lana caprina*, since the resemblance of sound between any one of them and the Irish word is almost as remote as between it and the Latin adaptation.

It is a common idea that all bearing the name of O'Connor are descended from a common stock, the royal Siol Muireadhaigh. This is a mistake; there were others who bore the name of a totally different descent, and little inferior to the Connaught family. The O'Connor Failge, O'Connor Kerry, O'Connor of Coreconroe, O'Connor of Dungiven, were all of them chiefs of extensive territories from a very remote period. O'Connor Sligo, however, belongs to the Connaught family, being descended from Brian Luighneach, the son of Cathal Crobderg, who was King of Connaught from 1198 to 1224. The tribe-name occurs in Irish history as early as the beginning of the 14th century. The Four Masters tell us under the date 1403 that "Murtagh Bacagh, son of Donnell (Lord of Sligo), died in the Castle of Sligo." This was built by Maurice Fitzgerald, second baron of Offaly, then Lord Justice, one of "the English who came to Connaught to build castles there." He was the founder of the Dominican monastery also. Richard Earl Marshal was said to be engaged in a conspiracy against the Crown. The Lord Justice was ordered to send him alive or dead to England. At a conference held on the Curragh of Kildare he was exhorted to surrender. He refused to do so, and charged into the midst of the crowd and was wounded. He died soon after of the wound. The Baron fearing the resentment of the Earl's brother hastened to London, and in the King's presence swore solemnly that he was wholly innocent of all share in the Earl's death; and as a further act of conciliation, he founded this house, the monks of which were to offer up prayers for the soul of the murdered Earl. In 1414 the monastery was burned to the ground by accident. Pope John XXIII. granted an indulgence of ten years and as many quarantines on the usual conditions to all who aided in its restoration.

Donough O'Connor succeeded his uncle Calvagh in the chieftaincy in 1581. The territory over which he had sway extended from Magh Ceidne to Ceiscorrainn and from the Moy to the boundary of Brefney. He claimed chiefry too over the O'Dowds, the two O'Haras, and O'Gara, but he was himself subject to O'Donnell.

The first mention made of him in the *Annals of the Four*

Masters is under the date 1597. "O'Connor Sligo, Donough, son of Cathal Oge, mustered a numerous army of English and Irish troops, a short time after the feast of St. Brigit to march to Sligo. O'Donnell (the famous Hugh Roe) was in Calry, in readiness to meet him; and he made an attack on O'Connor before he could reach Sligo. None of O'Connor's army waited to resist him excepting a few in the rear, who were overtaken on the Traigh Eothaile. These were wounded and drowned. O'Connor returned back, and his mind was not easy for having gone on that expedition." In the same year we read of his having established friendship and concord between his brother-in-law Theobald na long, and the Governor of the province of Connaught, Sir Conyers Clifford. These went into the country of MacWilliam, and drove him from it, despoiling and totally plundering all who remained in confederation and friendship with him. MacWilliam went to complain to Hugh Roe O'Donnell, who immediately made a hoisting into Connaught to assist MacWilliam, and the country was unable to resist him, so that he seized their hostage and pledges. He left his brother Rury to strengthen MacWilliam against his enemies and returned back to Tyrconnell.

Crucory O'Clery's unpublished Irish Life of Hugh Roe O'Donnell makes frequent mention, often in no very creditable terms, of O'Connor. In it we are told that he came from England to Ireland in the beginning of the summer of 1599, as he was commanded by the Queen and her council, and that he went secretly with a small body of soldiers to Collooney, and made excursions from that place into the lands of O'Donnell's dependents. O'Donnell set out in haste from Ballyshannon, intending to come on O'Connor unawares. O'Connor had withdrawn to the castle, which was a place of great strength, owing to its natural position and to the ramparts that had been made around it. The only thing left was to surround it and to reduce the garrison by cutting off their supplies. When the Earl of Essex heard that his friend and companion in arms was in such straits, he ordered the Governor of Connaught, Sir Conyers Clifford, to assemble all the forces that he could, both the English that

were in the garrisons, even as far as Limerick and Askeaton, and the Irish, who were then obedient to the Queen. The rendezvous was the monastery of Boyle. O'Donnell heard of their approach, and leaving a part of his forces to watch O'Connor, he set off with the rest to guard the passes over the Curlew mountains. A battle followed, known as the battle of the Curlews, in which the English were totally defeated, and their commander Clifford slain. His body was carried to Trinity Island to be buried; his head taken to be shown to O'Connor. "He would not believe that the English forces had been defeated; but when he was shown the Governor's head, he was perplexed thereat, and gave up all hope of release; and what he did was to come out into O'Donnell's presence and to make complete submission to him. . . . It was better for him he did so, for O'Donnell gave him abundance of cattle and horses, and every kind of beast, and corn too, so that he might inhabit his territory."

Two years later some friends of O'Donnell who happened to be in the neighbourhood of Dublin and used to hear the news, told him that one of the old English had seen letters in the hands of the clerks of the Council, in which O'Connor Sligo, in return for his friendship, promised the Lord Justice, "to search out and deliver up Hugh Roe to him and to the Council, whether by force, by wounding, or by capture." O'Donnell was sorely grieved when he read the letter. He sent a messenger to Hugh O'Neill to ask his advice. O'Neill considered for a long time what answer he should give, and at length replied that whereas O'Connor's treachery was well proved, he should be seized and cast into prison. O'Donnell assembled a troop of horse, and bade them be ready to do what he should command them. This they all promised as one man. They set off for Carbery Drum Cliabh, where O'Connor then was. He was sent for, and when he made his appearance, seized and carried away, to be imprisoned in Lough Esk.

The following year we find him once more on the side of the English. O'Sullivan tells how, at the crossing of the Erne at Ballyshannon, he and Inchiquin, who was drowned there, vied with each other which should be the first to attack the Irish enemy.

After about a year's imprisonment he was released by Rury, Hugh O'Donnell's brother. "He promised to be entirely submissive to O'Donnell's son; and they entered into a treaty of friendship with each other."

This was after the battle of Kinsale, when the Irish cause seemed to be a losing one. When news came of Hugh Roe's death in Spain, both O'Donnell's brother and O'Connor accepted the terms of peace offered them by Mountjoy, and laid down their arms.

No further mention is made of him in Irish history. Moryson in his *Threnodia*, printed at Innsbruck, 1659, gives among the nobles who were slain by heretics "the most illustrious Teigue O'Connor Sligo, descended from the family of the last and most powerful monarch of Ireland, a man of wonderful innocence and goodness; after the amnesty made with the whole Kingdom he was put to death by hanging at Boyle in the year 1652." More than one of the name too distinguished themselves in the service of foreign princes; their history we cannot give here.

The history of Elinor, Countess of Desmond, is indeed a tragic one. Born of the noble house of Dunboyne, a junior branch of the Ormond family, she was married to the Earl of Desmond. Between his family and hers, the Fitzgeralds of Desmond and the Butlers, a feud of the fiercest kind had existed for centuries; nor was it stopped by this union. When Earl Gerald, and with him all the Irish chiefs of Munster, and many even of the old English of the Pale, rose up in defence of their faith, which was threatened with utter ruin, his most relentless enemy was the Earl of Ormond. O'Sullivan, in his *Compendium of the History of Catholic Ireland*, gives a detailed account of this war during the fifteen years that it lasted. Little by little the Earl's soldiers were cut off either in the open field or by secret treachery. His few followers had to abandon him, and strove to seek safety for themselves. Sander, the legate, whom the Pope had sent to Ireland in order to cement the union of the north and south in defence of their common interests against their common enemy, "wandering in the woods without succour, died in a raving phrenesy," as Lord Burghley announced

with joy. The Countess Elinor was her husband's constant companion in his flight from one place to another. And so closely pressed were they on one occasion by their pursuers, that they escaped only by remaining all night long up to their necks in a lake. The countess thought to touch the Queen's heart by a woman's appeal.

"Most noble mistress," she wrote, "if I have not followed and performed according to my duty your Majesty's directions and promises I made before your Highness when I last departed your princely presence, I renounce God and do humbly refer me to the report of your Majesty's governor and council. Though my husband's dealing since his departure from Dublin proceeded not (God I take to witness) through any evil intention towards your Majesty or dignity, but rather incensed by ungodly disturbing of the common tranquility to conceive otherwise of your worthy governor than he had cause, yet I durst not until now that he hath both heartily repented and dutifully performed such things as was required by your Majesty's deputy and council of him, once more open my lips nor put pen to paper to entreat for your Highness' merciful clemency for him. But since that he is reconciled and hath most humbly submitted himself to your Majesty, I with all humbleness in most humblewise do heartily beseech your Majesty to vouchsafe of your accustomed mercy to restore him into your Majesty's favour."

But the appeal was not listened to. Not long after Ormond could say to the Lords Justices: "I wrote to you that the next news should be the killing of Desmond; so (I thank God) it is come to pass that the eleventh of this month he was slain in his cabin at a place called Glanee-gniclye near the river Maigne by Donell McDonell O'Moriarty. So praying God to send the like end to all traitors and unnatural subjects, I commit your Lordship to God's guiding." Desmond's head was sent by Ormond to Walsingham and put upon a pole on London Bridge.

When the Countess entered into the second marriage we do not know. It may be, indeed the Four Masters say it explicitly, that she was not without a hope of seeing her son restored to his father's honours. He had been for a long time confined a prisoner in the Tower of London. There he had been taught to look on the faith for which his father died as a damnable heresy. When in due time he had the lesson well by heart, the poor weakling was brought over to Ireland in

order to wean the people by his example from their errors. The author of *Pacata Hibernia* tells of "the mighty concourse of people at his entry into the town of Kilmallock, in so much as all the streets, doors, and windows, yea the very gutters and tops of the houses were so filled with them as if they came to see him whom God had sent to be that comfort and delight to their souls and hearts most desired; and they welcomed him with all the expressions and signs of joy, every one throwing upon him wheat and salt (a prediction of future peace and plenty). The next day being Sunday, the Earl went to church to hear divine service, and all the way his country people used loud and rude dehortations to keep him from church, unto which he lent a deaf ear; and after service and the sermon was ended, the Earl coming forth from the church was railed at and spat upon by those that before his going to church were so desirous to see and salute him." This mission of course proved an utter failure, and he returned to London and died there soon after.

There is mention in the same book of a certain Dermot O'Connor who was married to Margaret the daughter of the countess. "She too had been brought up among the English and stood reasonably well affected to the English Government, and likely it was that she would use all her industry to advance the service, in the hope that if it succeeded well, it would prove a good step or ladder to procure the liberty of her brother, son and heir to the old Earl of Desmond (now prisoner in the Tower) and to raise his fortunes." She prevailed on her husband to play the traitor and deliver up James Fitz Thomas to Carew, then Head President of Munster, the reward offered to him being £1,000 which the lady was to receive on the handing over of Fitz Thomas to the President's messenger.

Archdall says the countess was buried in a chapel which she directed to be built near the abbey of St. Dominick in Sligo; towards the erecting thereof and a monument therein she bequeathed £500 out of her arrears in England to be taken out by her noble cousin James, Earl of Ormond, and to be built by her appointment. Probably the chapel was never

built, but the monument was set in its present position in the lady chapel of the church.

De Burgo, who wrote the History of the Dominican Order in Ireland more than a century ago, speaks of other monuments as existing then in the church and cloisters, notably of a statue that was erected to a certain Pierce O'Timmony, illustrious for his birth, wealth, and virtues, and most attached to the Order, in proof of the lasting gratitude of the of the Order to him. This has disappeared and with it almost all the others.

DENIS MURPHY.

THE POLITICS OF ST. THOMAS AQUINAS.

“AS I was thinking what gift I could offer, worthy of your royal dignity and at the same time in keeping with my profession and office, it struck me that I could not do better than write for a king a book upon kingly government, in which I should expound to the best of my ability the origin of royalty and the duties of kings according to the authority of Holy Scripture, the teaching of philosophers, and the example of praiseworthy princes.” These words with which St. Thomas opens his treatise *De Regimine Principum ad Regem Cypri*, show that the saint did not consider that in writing about politics he was quitting his own proper sphere of duty. What he has written we may study and fearlessly preach to our people.

The Angelical Doctor's works on Politics are three in number: (1) a Commentary on Aristotle's *Politics*; (2) *De Regimine Judicorum ad comitissam Flandriæ*; (3) the above-mentioned treatise, *De Regimine Principum ad Regem Cypri*. Some doubt has been raised as to the genuineness of these works, or portions of them. De Rubeis, whose *Dissertationes Criticæ* have been prefixed to the Leonine edition of St. Thomas's works, is of opinion that the following only are genuine: (1) Commentary on Aristotle's *Politics* I., II., III.,

cc. 1-6; (2) *De Regimine Judæorum*, the whole; (3) *De Regimine Principum*, I., II. Care will be taken to quote only from the genuine texts. Political questions are also discussed in the *Summa*, the Commentary on the Sentences, and the various Commentaries on Holy Scripture. It would not be possible within the compass of a short article to give a complete account of St. Thomas's opinions on politics. All that I propose to do here is to take certain questions which are of interest at the present day, and to state the saint's answers.

I. THE ORIGIN OF GOVERNMENT.—The first question that interests us is the origin of government. And here at once we are struck by the contrast between the method of the Angelical Doctor, and the method usually followed at the present day. The nineteenth century is often called the century of progress, yet the characteristic of its writers is their study of the past. In almost every branch of inquiry it is now a recognized canon that unless we know what has been we cannot understand what is, and we cannot foresee what is to come. Hence patient investigators are everywhere raking up the past, and carefully scrutinizing every survival. Deductive reasoning is by no means excluded. All that is required is that the theories should first be suggested by the study of facts, and afterwards be shown to be in agreement with what might have been expected from the study of principles. If we were to inquire into the origin of government according to this method, we should go back into the past and endeavour to detect the earliest germs of government, and to trace their subsequent growth; we should examine with the greatest care the condition of backward peoples at the present day, looking upon them as so many survivals of stages through which the more advanced nations have already passed. Such is not the method pursued by St. Thomas. His argument is an *à priori* one, and it is briefly this: Society is natural; society implies government; therefore government is natural. Society is natural for two reasons: Man has needs to be gratified and faculties to be exercised. The due gratification of the one and the exercise of the other cannot take place if he lives alone. Nature has

provided the lower animals with food, covering, and the means of defence, or at least of flight. Man has none of these, but he has reason whereby he can procure them. One man, however, cannot do this all by himself. Division of labour is necessary and this means that men should live together and combine the results of their efforts. Again, man alone of all animals possesses the faculty of speech and this cannot be exercised unless he lives in the company of others. "It is better therefore that two should be together than one; for they have the advantage of their society." (*Eccles.* iv., 9.) Now if it is natural to man to live in society there must be some government.¹ For if a number of men live together each one will seek his own good, and there will be no common action but endless strife unless there be somebody to point out and to enforce what is for the common good. "Where there is no governor, the people shall fall" (*Prov.* xi., 14). Hence St. Thomas's opinion about the origin of government is that it is natural. It must be remembered that though this term "natural," is borrowed from Aristotle, the saint uses it in a somewhat different sense from his master. Nature, according to St. Thomas, is God's work, and consequently whatever is natural has a sort of divine right. "All power is of God," because government arose naturally. This of course does not refer to any particular form of government. All that is meant is that a government of some sort is not a mere matter of convention among men, but flows from the very nature of mankind.

II. THE END (OBJECT) OF GOVERNMENT. In the next question, the end or object of government, St. Thomas's method has more to commend it. The origin of government is now usually treated as a question of fact, and hence the *à priori* method is not commonly followed in discussing it. But the end of government is a question of right. What are the purposes for which government should

¹ "Si ergo naturale est homini quod in societate multorum vivat, necesse est in hominibus esse per quod multitudo regatur." (*De Reg. Princ.* I., 1.)

exist? And here the *à priori* method is available. We have already seen that the origin of government is due to the necessity of having some person or persons to point out and to enforce what is for the common good. Here we have also the end of government—the welfare of all. Governments should not exist for the benefit of the governors only but for the benefit of the governed also. “The enormous faith of many made for one” is strongly opposed by St. Thomas. Rulers who seek their own interest, he says, are cursed by the Lord through the mouth of His prophet, saying: “Woe to the shepherds that fed themselves.” (*Ezech. xxxiv., 2.*) By the common good is meant the good of the whole man. Government is not a mere machine for the protection of life and property. It has other officials besides the soldier and the policeman. It should provide for the moral well-being of the citizens as well as the physical. St. Thomas, following Aristotle, maintains that Ethics and Politics though not identical are yet inseparable. But this point will be more fully treated under the next head.

III. FUNCTIONS OF GOVERNMENT.—The functions of Government concerning the common weal are two-fold: directive and coercive, or, as we should now say, legislative and executive. The general principles of Natural law are plain to all men. Every one knows that he should do injury to no man, that he should honour his father and mother, and love and fear God. But in many cases it is not easy to decide, for instance, whether what we intend to do would injure our neighbour or not. There must be some authority to determine this. Moreover, Natural law does not enter into details. It lays down, for example, that evil-doers should be punished, but it does not specify the quantity and quality of the punishment. And even when we know what is right we are often tempted to disobey, because the benefits to be derived in this life from disobedience make us unmindful of the punishments of the world to come. Right conduct should therefore be enforced by punishments here on earth. For these reasons, then, that is to say, to determine and apply the Natural law, and to arm it with a temporal sanction, Human, or Positive law, as the English

jurists term it, is necessary. This relation between Human and Natural law is much insisted on by St. Thomas. Human law is law only in so far as it is derived from Natural law; if it disagrees with Natural law it is not law at all, but rather a corruption of law.¹ It is not, indeed, the business of government to prohibit all kinds of vice, but only the more grievous kinds, especially those which endanger the existence of society, as, for instance, murder and theft. If the government were to go beyond these, men would resist, and greater evils would ensue, according to the proverb: "He that violently bloweth his nose bringeth out blood." (*Prov.* xxx. 33.) Some vices may, then, be left unpunished, or rather left for God's punishment.² In the same way government does not command the practice of all the virtues but only of such as are for the common weal. This leads us to the important question whether human laws are binding in conscience. Hobbes has maintained the famous paradox: no law is unjust. According to him the command of the sovereign makes right and wrong. St. Augustine uses almost similar words, but his meaning is very different.³ "No unjust command is a law," that is to say, if the sovereign should ordain anything contrary to the moral law, such ordinance would not properly be a law, and, therefore, would not be morally binding. This is also St. Thomas's answer. Just laws bind in conscience; unjust laws do not bind in conscience, except, perhaps, for the avoidance of scandal and disturbances. But when are laws just? They are just when they are for the public good, when they do not exceed the powers of the law-giver, and when the burdens for the common good are imposed in due proportion; if they are wanting in any of these conditions, or if they are opposed to the spiritual good, they are not, strictly speaking, laws at all, and consequently carry with them no moral obligation:—

"*Leges positae humanitus vel sunt justae vel injustae. Si quidem justae sint, habent vim obligandi in foro conscientiae a lege*

¹ "Omnis lex humanitus posita in tantum habet de ratione legis in quantum a lege naturæ derivatur. Si vero in aliquo a lege naturali discordet, jam non erit lex, sed legis corruptio."—1a. 2æ. q. 95, a. 2.

² *Ib.* q. 96, a. 2—Compare Bentham's *Principles of Morals and Legislation*, chap. xiii., Cases unmeet for Punishment.

³ "Lex esse non videtur quæ justa non fuerit."—*De Lib. arb.* I., 5 quoted by St. Thomas.

aeterna a qua derivantur, secundum illud (*Prov.* viii. 15): ‘Per me reges regnant.’ Dicuntur autem leges justae, et ex fine, quando scilicet ordinantur ad bonum commune; et ex auctore, quando scilicet lex lata non excedit potestatem ferentis; et ex forma, quando scilicet secundum aequalitatem proportionis imponuntur subditis onera in ordine ad bonum commuae. . . . Injustae autem sunt leges dupliciter: uno modo per contrarietatem ad bonum humanum e contrario praedictis. . . . Et hujusmodi magis sunt violentiae quam leges; quia sicut Augustinus dicit, ‘Lex esse non videtur quae justa non fuerit.’ Unde tales leges non obligant in foro conscientiae nisi forte propter vitandum scandalum vel turbationem. . . . Alio modo leges possunt esse injustae per contrarietatem ad bonum divinum.”—*1a. 2æ. q. 96 a. 4 c.*

The third objection and answer are also worthy of notice:

“Praeterea [objicitur] leges humanae frequenter ingerunt calumniam et injuriam hominibus, secundum illud (*Isai.* x. 1) ‘Vae qui condunt leges iniquas et scribentes injustitias scripserunt, ut opprimerent in judicio pauperes, et vim facerent causae humilium populi mei!’ Sed licitum est unicuique oppressionem et violentiam evitare. Ergo leges humanae non imponunt necessitatem homini quantum ad conscientiam. . . . Ad tertium dicendum quod ratio illa procedit de lege quae infert gravamen injustum subditis; ad quod etiam ordo potestatis divinitus concessus non se extendit; unde nec in talibus homo obligatur ut obediat legi si sine scandalo vel majori detrimento resistere possit.”

Another question of great interest is whether law may be changed. It would seem that Human law cannot rightly be changed, for, as we have seen, it is derived from the Natural law, which is held to be unchangeable. St. Thomas, however, maintains that human law may rightly be changed for two reasons, one of which we may call subjective and the other objective. These reasons are especially interesting, because they give us his views about “Progress.” The first reason is that it is natural to man to proceed from the imperfect to the perfect. Take, for instance, speculative science. Early philosophers treated it imperfectly; those who came after them improved upon their teaching. So, too, in practical matters. Early institutions and inventions were defective; improvements were afterwards introduced. But, besides this subjective progress, there is also objective change. The

circumstances in which man is placed (his environment, as we now call it) are continually changing. For these two reasons, then, human law is rightly changeable, namely, on account of man's progress in knowledge whereby he is better enabled to discover and establish what is for the common good, and also on account of the change of conditions which makes different regulations useful under different circumstances. St. Thomas was thus no rigid conservative. He would not endorse the formula—"Nolumus leges Angliæ mutari." On the other hand he was no lover of change for the sake of change. He holds that change of law is in itself injurious to the common welfare. Custom is the great force which makes men obey the law, and change destroys this force. No change should, therefore, be made unless the gain compensates for the injury, and this will be the case when the new law brings very great and very evident gain, or when there is the greatest necessity to repeal the old law either because it is manifestly unjust or very hurtful.¹

IV. FORMS OF GOVERNMENT.—Hitherto we have been considering what is common to all governments; we have now to examine the different forms of government. The supreme power must always be exercised by one, or by few, or by many, and it may be exercised for the common good or for the good of the rulers. When this power is in the hands of one who is the shepherd of his people, seeking their interest and not his own, the government is styled a Royalty. If a small number of persons excelling in virtue govern for the welfare of all, the government is an Aristocracy. If the supreme power resides in the multitude and is exercised by them for the common good, the government is a Republic. To these three good forms of government are opposed Tyranny, which is the rule of one for his own interest; Oligarchy, where a few oppress the people; and Democracy,

¹ "Et ideo nunquam debet mutari lex humana nisi ex alia parte tantum recompensetur communi saluti, quantum ex ista parte derogatur. Quod quidem contingit vel ex hoc quod aliqua maxima et evidentissima utilitas ex novo statuto provenit; vel ex eo quod est maxima necessitas, vel ex eo quod lex consueta aut manifestam iniquitatem continet, aut ejus observatio est plurimum nociva."—1a. 2æ. q. 97, a. 2.

where the common people oppress the better classes. We have thus the following six forms of government :—

		<i>Good.</i>		<i>Bad.</i>
Rule of One	...	(1) Royalty	...	(4) Tyranny
„ Few	...	(2) Aristocracy	...	(5) Oligarchy
„ Many	...	(3) Republic	...	(6) Democracy

Putting aside for the present the bad forms, we may ask, which sort of government is best? St. Thomas gives a decided preference to Royalty. His opinion is founded on a number of reasons. The chief aim of government should be to secure the unity of peace among the citizens. Now it is plain that this unity can be better secured by one than by many, just as the most powerful cause of heat is something that by its very nature is hot. Moreover, the government itself must be united, and not a prey to diversity of opinion. This also can be more easily attained when one alone is ruler. Furthermore, nature herself points to Royalty as the best form of government. Our members are moved by one—the heart; and in our souls there is one power which presides—our reason. The bees have one who is their king, and in the whole universe there is one God the Maker and Ruler of all things. Now inasmuch as art should imitate nature, the best government will be the government of one. These arguments are confirmed by experience. States which are not subject to one suffer from dissensions and are restlessly tossed about; whereas in those which are ruled by a king peace reigns, justice flourishes, and wealth abounds. Hence the Lord promised to his people by the mouth of His prophets as a great boon, that there should be one prince in their midst. The superiority of Royalty over the other forms is further shown by the fact that the government of a few or many degenerates into tyranny more commonly than the government of one. For when dissensions arise in aristocracies or republics, it often happens that one man obtains the supreme power, and rules the multitude for his own benefit. The Roman Republic, for instance, fell into the hands of the most cruel tyrants; and, speaking generally, if any one reads history he will find that republics and aristocracies lead more frequently than royalties to tyranny. At the same time

St. Thomas freely admits the great drawbacks of the government of one. Democracy is bad, Oligarchy is worse, but Tyranny is the worst of all.¹

A tyranny is stronger than the others, and therefore has greater power for evil. Moreover, the people suffer according to the different passions which sway the tyrant. If he is avaricious, he robs them of their goods; if his temper is violent, he sheds their blood for no crime. He hates the good more than the wicked, and consequently does his best to make men wicked and keep them so. He sows discord among his people, and forbids all kinds of gatherings which promote friendship and mutual confidence. In short, the subjects of a tyrant are in the claws of a wild beast.² Another objection to monarchy is that the citizens have little inducement to patriotism, because they consider that their efforts benefit the king more than the public, whereas in a republic all are benefited. Hence we find greater public virtue in republics than in monarchies. Still, on the whole, the royal form of government is the best. St. Thomas next goes on to show what measures are to be taken to prevent a king from degenerating into a tyrant. Great care should be exercised in selecting the person who is to hold the kingly office; no opportunity should be given him of becoming a tyrant, and his authority should be limited. But how can this be accomplished? By combining in due proportion the three forms, Royalty, Aristocracy, and Republic. Two things are needed to make a good constitution. The first is that all the citizens should have some share in the government, so that all may be interested in the maintenance of order; the second is that the constitution should be framed according to the different forms of government above enumerated. Hence the best constitution is that in which one worthy man is supreme, and under him are other worthy men chosen out of the people and by the people. We thus have a combination of

¹ "Sicut autem regimen regis est optimum, ita regimen tyranni est pessimum." . . . "Magis igitur est nociva tyrannis quam oligarchia, oligarchia autem quam democratia."—*De Reg. Princ.* I. 3.

² "Idem videtur tyranno subjeci, bestie sævienti substerni."—*De Reg. Princ.* I. 3.

monarchy, in so far as one is supreme; aristocracy, because a number of the worthiest have power; and of democracy (that is, popular government), because the rulers are chosen of the people and by the people. But here we must give the saint's words, as no translation can do them justice:—

“Circa bonam ordinationem principum in aliqua civitate vel gente duo sunt attendenda: quorum unum est ut omnis aliquam partem habeant in principatu; per hoc enim conservatur pax populi et omnes talem ordinationem amant et custodiunt . . . Aliud est quod attenditur secundum speciem regiminis vel ordinationis principatuum . . . Unde optima ordinatio principum est in aliqua civitati vel regno, in quo unus præficitur secundum virtutem qui omnibus præsit; et sub ipso sunt aliqui principantes secundum virtutem; et tamen talis principatus ad omnes pertinet, tum quia ex omnibus eligi possunt, tum quia etiam ab omnibus eliguntur. Talis vero est omnis politia bene commixta ex regno, in quantum unus præest, ex aristocratia, in quantum multi principantur secundum virtutem, et ex democratia, id est potestate populi, in quantum ex popularibus possunt eligi principes, et ad populum pertinet electio principum.”¹

It is interesting to note that only five or six years before St. Thomas wrote this, Simon de Montfort had laid the foundations of the English House of Commons. The following extract from Blackstone's *Commentaries* bears a striking resemblance to the passage quoted above:—

“As with us the executive power of the laws is lodged in a single person (the king) they have all the advantages of strength and despatch, that are to be found in the most absolute monarchy; and as the legislature of the kingdom is entrusted to three distinct powers, entirely independent of each other: first, the sovereign; secondly, the lords spiritual and temporal, which is an aristocratical assembly of persons selected for their piety, their birth, their wisdom, their valour, or their property; and thirdly, the House of Commons, freely chosen by the people from among themselves, which makes it a kind of democracy: as this aggregate body, actuated by different springs and attentive to different interests, composes the British Parliament and has the supreme disposal of everything, there can no inconvenience be attempted by either of the three branches, but will be withstood by one of the other two . . . If the supreme power were lodged in any one of the three branches separately, we must be exposed to the inconveniences of either absolute monarchy, aristocracy, or democracy.”—*Introd. sect. iii.*

¹ 1a, 2æ, q. 105 a. 1 c. Cf. “Est etiam aliquod regimen ex istis commixtum quod est optimum.”—*ib. q. 95 a. 4 c.*

St. Thomas by no means insists that this mixed form of government should be set up in every state for all time. On the contrary he holds that it can exist only among an enlightened and moral people. He quotes in this connection an admirable passage of St. Augustine :—

“ Si populus sit bene moderatus et gravis communisque utilitatis diligentissimus custos, recte lex fertur, qua tali populo liceat creare sibi magistatus, per quos respublica administretur. Porro si paulatim idem populus depravatus habent venale suffragium, et regimen flagitiosis sceleratisque committat, recte adimitur populo tali potestas dandi honores, et ad paucorum bonorum redit arbitrium.”¹

We should also note that St. Thomas speaks of the election of kings, and that the aristocracy mentioned by him is not an aristocracy of mere birth or wealth, but of virtue.

V. SEDITION, TYRANNY, REBELLION.—Our final heading enumerates certain diseases of the state. Governors and their subjects are but men, and consequently may fall away from their duty: rulers sometimes seek their own interest at the expense of their subjects, and subjects sometimes refuse to obey their rulers. Both these difficult matters have now to be dealt with. We have already seen that just laws are binding in conscience, and that laws are just when they are enacted for the common good by a competent legislator and are not contrary to Divine or Natural law. Rulers are justified in making such laws and subjects are bound to obey. Sedition, St. Thomas teaches, is opposed both to justice and the common good, and is therefore a mortal sin.²

If, however, the laws are unjust, they have no binding force, and it is lawful for the subjects to disobey if they can do so without scandal or greater damage. But what if the government becomes a tyranny? When St. Thomas was a young man he is said to have held that tyrannicide was lawful.³

De lib. arbitrio l. 6 quoted in 1a. 2æ. q. 97a. 1.

² “Seditio opponitur et justitiæ et communi bono; et ideo ex genere suo est peccatum mortale et tanto gravius quanto bonum commune . . . est majus quam bonum privatum . . .” 2a 2æ. q. 42a. 2c.

³ “Qui ad liberationem patriæ tyrannum occidit, laudatur et præmium accipit.” In II. Sent. D. 44 q. 4 a. 2. De Rubeis, however, has defended the saint against the charge.

In his later works, however, he strongly rejects this opinion. The whole question is treated at great length in the sixth chapter of the first book *De Regimine Principum*. If the tyranny is not excessive, the subjects should bear it rather than run the risk of greater evils. For if their resistance fails, the tyrant will be provoked to greater excesses. Even if they succeed, they may fall into anarchy or into the power of another tyrant who will take care to provide against rebellion, and thus their last state may become worse than the first. It is related that when the Syracusans were longing for the death of Dionysius, an old woman never ceased praying that he might be spared. The tyrant asked her why she did so. "When I was a girl," she answered, "we had a grievous tyrant whose death I prayed for. He died, and a worse tyrant succeeded. His death also I prayed for, and now we have you who are still worse. If you were to die, a more dreadful tyrant would come after you." But if the tyranny is altogether intolerable, no private person may take it upon himself to slay the tyrant, for St. Peter tells us to be subject with all fear not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward. Thus, when the Roman emperors persecuted the Church, the Christians did not resist, even when they had arms in their hands, as in the case of the Theban Legion, but laid down their lives for Christ. Moreover, this private vengeance would be hurtful even to the people, because bad men would put to death good kings. A better way to proceed against a tyrant is by public authority. If the people have the right to choose their ruler, they have also the right to depose him when he becomes a tyrant. Such conduct is not seditious—rather it is the tyrant who is guilty of sedition.¹ If, however, the choice of a ruler belongs to some superior power, the people should apply to him for remedy against the tyrant. Here St. Thomas would seem to hint at the

¹ "Perturbatio hujus regiminis (tyrannici) non habet rationem seditionis; nisi forte quando sic inordinate perturbatur tyranni regimen, quod multitudo subjecta majus detrimentum patitur ex perturbatione consequenti quam ex tyranni regimine. *Magis autem tyrannus seditiosus est, qui in populo sibi subjecto discordias et seditiones nutrit, ut tutius dominare possit.*"—2a. 2æ. q. 42 a. 2 c.

advantage of an appeal to the Holy See. But if all human means fail, recourse must be had to the King of Kings, Whose hand is not shortened that it cannot save, neither is His ear heavy that it cannot hear. But to merit this help the people must cease from their sins, because a tyrant is often the minister of God's just wrath.

T. B. SCANNELL.

ROBERT BARRY, BISHOP OF CORK AND CLOYNE,
1647-1662.

NOTRE DAME DE MISERICORDE.

THE popular devotion of the city of Nantes in Brittany, is to the shrine or statue of our Lady of Mercy, *Notre Dame de Miséricorde*. The history of this devotion is so much mixed up with and owes so much to our exiled clergy in the dark days of persecution that in presenting a memoir of the life of Dr. Robert Barry I find it necessary to give a notice of this devotion to Notre Dame de Miséricorde. A vast forest covered the northern portions of the environs of the city of Nantes which the inhabitants commenced to clear away in the ninth century. In the 10th century an extraordinary monster, sometimes called a dragon, which is believed to have been crocodile like, shewed itself in the forest and during two or three years devoured a great number of travellers as well as of the inhabitants of Nantes. The entire city was in terror and had recourse to the intercession of the Blessed Virgin, and made a vow to build a chapel in her honour under the invocation of our Lady of Mercy as soon as this monster would be put to death. This vow having been made, three of the principal inhabitants of Nantes asked to have the honour of going alone into the forest and prepared themselves with Christian dispositions for the fight with the monster.

The first of these "chevaliers" whose dispositions, the tradition has it, were less penetrated with faith than the

others, on entering the forest was met by the monster and became his prey. He then attacked the others but was killed by them. The inhabitants who watched the result from the ramparts of the city came at once with the Bishop of Nantes and his clergy and laid on the spot near the entrance to the forest the foundation of the chapel, which they made a vow to build. They cut off the head of the monster, and kept the lower jaw bone which they enclosed in a silver box and placed it in the treasury of the cathedral where it was shewn up to the time of the first French Revolution. This occurrence is generally ascribed by historians of the city of Nantes to the year 1026. The chapel exists no longer, having been destroyed in that memorable epoch of the great Revolution, with its stained glass windows which depicted the events just mentioned.

The statue of our Lady was preserved by a pious woman, called Soeur Jeanne, who, when the fury of the revolution passed by, presented it to the parish church of St. Similien, to which parish the former chapel belonged.

In all their troubles the "Nantais" have had recourse to N. D. de Miséricorde and have had many favours, through her intercession. When the persecution at home drove our clergy into exile, they found protection and warm welcome in France, and nowhere more than at Nantes. It was selected by Dr. Patrick Comerford, Bishop of Waterford and Lismore, and Dr. Robert Barry, Bishop of Cork and Cloyne, as their home in exile. The States of Brittany voted them what was necessary for their maintenance, and such was the intercourse between Ireland and that seaport in those days that from there they could more easily communicate with their flock by letters and govern by vicars their dioceses.

They had recourse to our Lady of Mercy for help for themselves and their sorely tried people. The devotion, hitherto so popular, became, by this means, more so. The establishment of "The Station" to our Lady of Mercy, which takes place every year, from the Ascension of our Lord until Pentecost, is due to these prelates. Its object is to imitate the retreat of the Blessed Virgin and the apostles in the upper room in Jerusalem, and by the intercession of

the Blessed Virgin to prepare the faithful to receive the gifts of the Holy Ghost at Pentecost. This station was approved of by Pope Clement XIII., Nov. 6, 1764—and again by Pope Clement XIV., 14 December, 1771, who renewed for seven years the Plenary Indulgence granted by his predecessors for the like term to the faithful who, having complied with the usual conditions, would perform the station to our Lady of Mercy.

On the 28th July, 1786, Pope Pius VI. granted the like favour in perpetuity.

From the time of the foundation of the station, devotion to N. D. de Miséricorde seems, from documents handed down, to have been made their own by the exiled Irish clergy, whether in the chapel of N. D. de Miséricorde or the parish church of S. Similien. Cornelius O'Keeffe, a priest of the united Diocese of Cork and Cloyne, and a native of Glenville, and doctor in theology, was rector of S. Similien in 1710, whence he was promoted to the See of Limerick over which he presided from 1720 to 1737. He was succeeded at S. Similien's by Peter Burke, of the Diocese of Clonfert, doctor in theology, superior of the community of Irish priests (Irish College), Nantes, who held this cure until his death in 1724. The change from the former chapel, and the renewal of devotion to N. D. de Miséricorde, after the revolution in 1803, served to increase the devotion. On each day of the station pilgrimages arrive; crowds of the Nantais, rich and poor, frequent the shrine from five in the morning until nine o'clock in the evening. It is calculated, that at least from 8,000 to 10,000 people make the pilgrimage. The station was made with more than usual solemnity this year, on account of the monumental windows, explanatory of the devotion and in memory of its originators, which have been just placed in the church of S. Similien, from the design of the late M. Claudius Lavergne, and executed by his son and successor in his establishment for the manufacture of stained glass, Paris.

Without entering on an explanation of the several windows, and their subjects, suffice it to remark that one of the principal has for its subject, S. Patrick, Apostle of

Ireland, in memory of the place Ireland had in the establishment of the station, and also another window contains the armorial bearings of Doctor Patrick Comerford and Doctor Robert Barry, to whom is attributed the establishment of the station. As France, the home in exile, and last resting-place of our persecuted prelates, thus honours their memory, after the lapse of more than two hundred years, and pays a tribute to their labours, it is only just, that we who are at home should remember them. For this reason, I propose to give in this paper a short memoir of Doctor Robert Barry.

Robert, son of David Barry and Ellen Walters or Waters, was born towards the end of Queen Elizabeth's reign, probably about the year 1588 or 1589. He was of the Barrymore family. His father is styled "*Dominus Ardiae*," probably the modern "*Ballyard*," where the name of Barry is still represented, in the parish of Briagh (Brittway), near the river Bride. Having learned classics at home, Robert was sent to Bordeaux at an early age, where he perfected himself in humanities and followed the course of Philosophy in the schools of the Jesuit Fathers. After a short course of Theology he was ordained priest, probably about the year 1612 or 1613. On his return to Ireland he was named chaplain to Ellen Barry, of Buttevant, Countess of Ormond, and accompanied her to England on the occasion of her marriage with Sir Thomas Somerset, third son of the Earl of Worcester. Doubtless, referring to this period and to his zeal as a young priest that the Nuncio Rinuccini, recommending him in after years to the notice of the Holy See, says "that he has laboured much for the Faith in England and in Dublin and in other missions." Soon after this he went to Paris and spent there three years in following the course of Theology at Sorbonne, and again coming to Bordeaux was made Doctor of Theology. He then made a tour through Italy and spent two years in Rome, after which he was made Vicar Apostolic of Ross in May, 1620 (having been made Prothonotary Apostolic in December, 1619), and Abbot in commendam "*De Choro S. Benedicti*" (Middleton), by Pope Paul V., who sent him to his new labours furnished with special faculties which the exigencies of the times

required; not only did he show his zeal in the diocese and abbacy under his care, but by his preaching the word of God and by his writings, he converted even in other parts, those who were estranged from the Church, strengthened the wavering, and reconciled those who were at enmity, and for thirty-six years laboured much in the ministry.

His lot was cast in troubled times; from his great prudence and learning he was chosen by the "Confederate Council" as one of their members, to treat with Ormond at Jigginstown. He was also one of those who were sent to England to gain the King to the Confederate cause, and also to France to notify to the Queen the justice of their cause. In all difficulties he was had recourse to as to an oracle, so much so that "the Supreme Council" asked to have him appointed Bishop of Ross; but while the bulls were being expedited, the Bishop of Cork, Dr. William Terry, died and he was substituted in his place, and consecrated in Waterford by the Nuncio in the year 1648, probably in the month of April. With regard to his appointment De Burgo, in his *Hibernia Dominicana*, has another story from which it appears the Ormondists wished to appoint another more favourable to their cause, and have Dr. Barry appointed to Ross, but were defeated by the recommendation of the Nuncio who writes in more than one place in the highest terms of Dr. Barry. Immediately on his consecration Dr. Barry returned to his diocese, and as the city of Cork was in the enemy's power, he held a synod of his clergy at Macroom, when he gave instructions suited to the troubled state of the times, and restored by severe disciplinary laws what religion had suffered. He visited the parishes, administered the sacrament of Confirmation to those who had not had for many years the opportunity of receiving it; reconciled those who had been at enmity, and preached in season and out of season the word of God. He ceased not to discharge his episcopal duties in the diocese until he was summoned by the Nuncio to Kilkenny, and stood firmly by him on the occasion of his excommunication against the Supreme Council. His zeal for the splendours of Catholic worship which he wished to see restored, made him oppose the truce made with

the enemy. In writings and disputations Dr. Barry defended the cause taken up by the Nuncio, and sustained by him and his party. His name is signed to the sentence of excommunication pronounced by the Nuncio, and posted on the gates of the cathedral and churches in Kilkenny. He had after the departure of the Nuncio from Ireland to take to flight and conceal himself. Though Cromwell permitted many ecclesiastics to leave the country, still knowing how great a defender of Catholic faith was Dr. Barry, he held out no hopes for him, but determined to seize him and treat him as he did Dr. MacEgan, Bishop of Ross, his successor in the care of that see, whom his lieutenant hanged at Carrig-a-Drohid. Wherefore, the good prelate hid himself in woods and marshes, suffered hunger and cold and for a long time was obliged to remain at night without shelter of a roof in his hiding places, until at last a friendly ship brought him to Brittany.

Dr. Maziere Brady (in his *Episcopal Succession*) says that Dr. Comerford was at St. Malo in 1651, to which place he escaped from Ireland, after twice falling into the hands of pirates, and he and Dr. Barry proceeded to Nantes, where they were received with great kindness and respect by the clergy and people.

Dr. Comerford died on Sunday, 10th March, 1652 and was interred in the cathedral of St. Pierre, at Nantes. Although he is mentioned with Dr. Barry as founder of the station of N. D. de Miséricorde, still it must have been Dr. Barry who had most to do with the extension of this devotion as Dr. Comerford lived such a short time at Nantes. After the death of his great friend, the Bishop of Waterford, Dr. Barry continued to reside at Nantes and assisted the bishop of that city Monseigneur Gilles de Beauvais, in the discharge of his episcopal functions. He governed from thence his own diocese by letters, through vicars with whom he frequently corresponded. He was also entrusted with faculties by the Nuncio to remove the censures from those who incurred them and many had recourse to absolution from them at his hands. At length, after a severe illness of three months, borne with Christian fortitude he died at Nantes at 3 o'clock in the morning, Friday, the 7th July 1662. Beloved by all

and lamented in death he was interred with much pomp and his obsequies attended by all classes in the cathedral at Nantes. He was interred in the chapel of St. Charles, before the altar at the entrance to the choir. Cardinal Moran mentions in his *Persecution of Irish Catholics*, that the body of Dr. Comerford was found quite incorrupt when the tomb was opened to receive the remains of Dr. Barry. His tomb had inscribed on a blue marble slab the following inscription:—

“Messire Robert (Barry), par la grace de Dieu et du Saint Siège Apostolique, évêque de Cork (et de Cloyne) en Hybernie, réfugié à Nantes par la persécution des hérétiques en Angleterre, lequel mourut le 7 Juillet, 1662.”

For much of the information contained in this article the writer is indebted to Canon Delorme, of the Collegiate Church of St. Donatien, Nantes.

The following extracts and Matrimonial Dispensation may be of interest:—

Extrait des Registres de la Trêve de Toussaint, paroisse de Sainte Croix de Nantes:—

Le sept de Juillet mil six cent soixante et deux le corps de Révérend Père en Dieu, Messire Robert Evêque de Corq (Irlande,) réfugié à Nantes pour la persécution des hérétiques d'Angleterre depuis huit ou dix ans, fut sépulture en l'Eglise cathédrale devant l'autel Saint Charles. Décédé près la chapelle de Toussaint de Nantes.

Extrait des “Conclusions Capitulaires” du chapitre de la Cathédrale de Nantes (Vol. 1659–1666, page 67, au recto):—

Juillet 1662
Enterrement de
Mons. l' Evêque
de Cork
Hibernie.

Robert Barry Evêque de Cork et de Cloijn
en Hibernie exilé de son païs pour la foy
Catholique. Estant entré au chapitre a re-
presanté à Messieurs que ledit Seigneur
Evêque estoit

décédé ce jourdhuy sur les trois heures du matin et que durant sa vie il avait temoigne grand desir d'estre inhumé dans cette Eglise pourveu que Messieurs du chapre. l'eussent agréable. Et cela estant supplié mes dits Sieurs d'ordonner l'heure et la solennité de l'enterrement comme il leur plairoit. Sur quoy le chapitre après avoir delibéré a arrêté de faire de main le dit enterrement à l'issue de la grande messe, avec toute la solennité accoustumée des enterrements solennels. Et pour ce on sonnera aujourdhuy trente gobets de la plus grosse cloche depuis Midy jusqu'à Midy et demy, et ensuite un clas de toutes les cloches jusqu'à une heure et demie, et autre sem-

blable clas ce soir à huit heures, et demain à six heures du matin suivant la coutume puis demain après la grande messe l'on ira processionnellement en la maison où est decédé ledit Seigneur Evêque, paroisse de Ste. Radegonde pour lever le corps lequel sera conduit par la rüe de chasteau et par la grande rüe en cette eglise ou sera chantée solennellement la messe des deffuncts et après les ceremonies faictes le corps sera inhumé dans l'enfeu qui est soubz les marches devant l'autel de St. Charles. Et pour faire l'office audit enterrement est député Monsieur Robin chanoine.

Le vendredi septième jour de Juillet 1662.

Messieurs Merceron, scholastique ; Blanchard, herlat.

Boylesve, S. Vallin, Robin, Dubreil, le Bigot, Pageot, tous chanoines.

Ibidem, au verso.

Service de
Mr. l'Evêque
de Corck.

Le chapitre a arrêté de faire de main à l'issue
de la grande messe le service de feu
Monsieur l'Evêque de Corek avec toute

la solennité ordinaire et a député Monsieur Robin pour faire l'office. Et on sonnera les clas ordinaires de toutes les cloches aujourdhuy à Midy et à huit heurs du soir et de main à six heures du matin.

I am indebted to the kindness of the late Richard Caulfield, Esq., LL.D., for the following dispensation given by Dr. Wm. Terry, Bishop of Cork, and the performance of the marriage, by the favour of this dispensation, is attested, among others, by Dr. Robert Barry, Vicar Apostolic of Ross. It is the oldest document I am aware of, in existence of the same description in connection with the Diocese of Cork:—

“Guilielmus Dei et Apostolicae sedis gratia Corcagien. et Chuanen. Episcopus.

“Universis et singulis Christi fidelibus praesentes inspecturis litteras salutem.

“Apostolicae sedis spectata prudentia animarum tranquillitati ita providere consuevit, ut quoties fidelium laudabile votum id postulaverit, Juris rigorem benigna plenitudinisque potestatis communicatione suaviter temperet, quatenus Canonum Decretorum rigida observantia, aut nimia eorundem indulgentia, conscientiarum quieti nocumentum non praebeat. Cum itaque Ellyna Cormaci Cartii Diocoesis Nostrae Corcagiensis mulier Guilielmum Jacobi Barrii Diocoesis Rossensis virum, in Canonicis 3ⁱ. et 4ⁱ. 4ⁱ. similiter et 4ⁱ. consanguinitatis graduum impedimentis ex diversis stipitibus procedentibus sibi consanguineum in maritum ducere cupiat, nobis ex consensu praefati Guilielmi humiliter supplicari fecit, quatenus in praedictis impedimentis de benignitate Apostolica opportunum dispensationis remedium concedere dignaremur supplicationisque causam allegans, asserit, quod intra limites dictae Diocoesis quam inhabitat, nullibi cum tanta

animarum conjunctione, dotis competentia, aliorumque commodorum assecutione, sine aequali aut aetiori forsan consanguinitatis affinitatisque vinculo, matrimonialiter conjungi queat. Nos igitur animarum tranquillitati matrimoniique libertati, quantum cum Dei adjutorio possumus, consulere cupientes, Dietae exponentis supplicationi ut annuamus, facile adducimur. Ideoque in praedictis 3ⁱ. et 4ⁱ. 4ⁱ. similiter et 4ⁱ. consanguinitatis graduum impedimentis, apostolica, quae hae in parte fungimur, potestate dispensantes, facultatem tenore praesentium concedimus, ut iisque non obstantibus cum praefato Guilielmo praedicta Ellyna matrimonium in facie Ecclesiae juxta formam a Concilio Tridentino praescriptam in praesentia parochi et testium contrahat, solemnizet, et postmodum suo debito tempore consumet, atque ad debitos omnes effectus ex legitimo matrimonio sequi solitos, in utroque foro perducere libere et licite possit et valeat.

“Ne vero aliud consanguinitatis aut affinitatis impedimentum (2^o. gradum utriusque non attingens) hic non specificatum inter praenominatos Ellynam et Guilielmum lateat, tenore praesentium volumus pro nominato et indulto habeatur. Decernentes nec illud, si forte existat, nec denunciationum ex injuria temporum nostraeque super iisdem propter rationabiles causas, obtenta dispensatione praetermissionem obstaculo futuram, quominus matrimonium sit licitum, et proles inde suscipiendae habeantur legitimae

“In quorum omnium fidem et testimonium his propria manu subscripsimus, et sigillum quo ad talia utimur, subimprimi curavimus. Datum Coregiae in loco solitae mansionis nostrae die 4^o Novembris Anno Dni. 1635.

“GUILIELMUS, Coregiaen.

“Et Cluanen. Eps.

[On back of parchment.]

“Nos introscripti Guilielmus et Ellyna noviter conjuncti fatemur nos virtute hujus dispensationis a nobis humiliter obtentae matrimonialiter fuisse conjunctos Die mensis.

“Anno Dni. 1635.

“WM. BARRY.

“Nobis praesentibus :—

“THADIA FORHANE Parochus.

“ROBERTUS BARRY Prot. Apost. Vicarius Rossen. et Theologiae Doctor.

“TEIGUE MCCARTHY.

“JOHN OGE BARRY.

“CHARLES CHARTIE.”

The manuals of devotion to “N. D. De Miséricorde” and the constant tradition, has it that the Station was established by an Irish bishop, and the tradition points to Dr. Comerford and to Dr. Barry. In 1773, Dr. René Lebreton de Ganbert,

curé of the parish of S. Similien, in pages 37-38 of a manual, now out of print and very scarce says:—

“ Un Evêque d’Hybernie exilé de son pays, persécuté pour la foi Catholique, et réfugié dans cette ville de Nantes qu’il édifia par les exercices d’une piété exemplaire, établit cette Station dans la chapelle dédiée à l’honneur de la Sainte Vierge, sous le titre de Notre Dame de Miséricorde dans la paroisse de Saint Similien. Cette évêque ayant communiqué ses intentions à Mgr. Gabriel de Beauvau évêque de Nantes, célébra la Sainte messe dans cette chapelle s’y rendit tous les jours, depuis l’Ascension jusqu’à la fête de la Pentecôte, accompagné de quelques ecclésiastiques et de plusieurs personnes de piété, avec qui il récita des prières analogues aux pieux motifs qui les assemblaient. Plusieurs villes de Royaume et un très grand nombre dans l’univers chrétien, avaient déjà, les unes des confréries, les autres des dévotions semblables à celles-ci ; d’autres des exercices particuliers de piété pour préparer les fidèles à la venue du Saint Esprit, lorsque ce digne confesseur de la foi entreprit à Nantes cet établissement, la paroisse de Saint Similien fut honorée de cette faveur par le choix qu’il fit de la chapelle de Miséricorde.”

Which of the bishops founded the devotion ? Dr. Comerford writes to the Nuncio Rinuccini from S. Malo, 3rd March, 1651 (he died 10th March, 1652, at Nantes) : when he wrote from S. Malo he had only just come from Ireland, and did not know where to turn his steps. His stay there was very short. Dr. Barry spent ten years, and acted as auxiliary bishop during that period, so that necessarily he was identified with the city and its people ; and seeing that its foundation was, by the author of this manual, ascribed to the bishop, who went year after year to the sanctuary, in my opinion Dr. Barry was the founder of the Station.

In the list of “ Registered Priests ” in 1704, James Holane, aged 72, received Orders from Dr. Barry, at Nantes, in the year 1659 ; and from the same bishop, Luke White, of Clonmel, aged 67, in the year 1656, also at Nantes. He performed several ordinations for the Bishop of Nantes, as appears in the archives of the Evêché at Nantes.

PATRICK HURLEY.

PROBABILISM.—III.

I RESERVED from the last paper, which I had the honour of addressing to the I. E. RECORD on the subject of Probabilism, the chief purpose I had all along in view, which is to show that, however earnestly theologians discuss the distinctions they point out between Probabilism, Equiprobabilism, and Probabiliorism, these distinctions affect in a very small degree, if, indeed, they do at all affect the sacred ministry of the Church in the practical work of upholding Christian morality from the pulpit, or in the sacred tribunal of penance.

I now proceed to give effect, as best I can, to this purpose, hoping not to trespass too much upon the pages of the RECORD.

In the first place, after lopping off excessive rigour on one side, and laxism on the other, the Church allows free range to discussion within the limits of the distinctions under consideration, and disputants of eminent learning and sanctity have ranked themselves on different sides. If on any side there was anything blame worthy the Church would have restrained this liberty, for according to the words of St. Augustine, “*quæ sunt contra fidem, aut bonam vitam, nec approbat, nec facit, nec tacet Ecclesia.*” (*Epist 55 ad Januarium*), and this argument derives particular strength from the fact that in the process of St. Liguori's canonization the subject of Probabilism in its several branches was brought so prominently under notice. We are consequently free in the practice of our ministry, as the case occurs, to take sides, and I cannot blame you, as you cannot blame me for the sides we respectively take, if we happen to differ.

2ndly. There is a considerable number of questions, on which all Probabilists are agreed, for instance, questions about the matter and form of the sacraments, questions about faith, certain questions about justice and obedience, in all which even beyond the sphere of Probability of the highest order, certainty as far as possible must be sought out, and adhered to. Here also our ministry remains unaffected, as there is no room left for wavering.

3rdly. The questions coming within the range of Probabilistic discussion are of exceptional occurrence. The ordinary practice of the ministry follows a beaten track, and with a competent knowledge of theology, which is to be supposed, together with a certain degree of experience, we go arm-in-arm in the ordinary course of duty, whatever phase of Probabilism we may adhere to.

4thly. In our preaching we are to be guided by the golden rule "in medio stat virtus," and we are to refrain from the inculcation of views bordering on rigorism in one direction, and laxism in the other—from rigorism, as our teaching would not be followed, and might, therefore, be the occasion of sin on this account; and we should, as regards indulgent teaching, have to fear lest on account of the evil tendency of poor human nature our leniency would lead to abuse according to the maxim "grant an inch and people will take an ell" on the side of freedom in their moral conduct. We should observe the same moderate course in the holy tribunal of penance, recollecting always the words of our Divine Lord, that His yoke is sweet, and His burden light.

There is rather a pleasant anecdote told of the celebrated De la Motte, Bishop of Amiens, in the last century. It is known of his Lordship that he was fond of a practical joke whenever the occasion came in his way, but of course always with a view to something good. The story goes on to relate that a lady came to him to decide for her a case of conscience respecting herself, and stating the case she said:—

"Monseigneur, I come to trouble your Lordship, on a case of conscience. It concerns myself, and I am sadly perplexed about it. It is simply this: I have been in the habit of using some artificial means for improving my personal appearance."

"You mean," said the Bishop, "painting your face, madam."

"It is just so, as your Lordship has so plainly expressed it. Well, I took a scruple about the matter, and I consulted my confessor if there was anything wrong in it, who being rather indulgent said it was no harm, and that I should not disturb myself about such a trifle, as he called it. However, I did not feel at ease as to his view, and I addressed myself to

another confessor, who appeared quite shocked, telling me in a very decided tone, that it was in a manner casting a reproach on God to have recourse to adventitious contrivances to falsify the work of His hands, and the good gentleman added other things about humility and resignation in a very severe mood. Your Lordship has now the case fully in your hands, and I come to be relieved of the perplexity into which these two good gentlemen have cast me."

The Bishop falling back on his chair, and putting on a grave face, replied by saying:—

"Madam, I am a man of moderate views."

"Yes, Monseigneur, and let me say that is the precise reason I have had in venturing with such confidence to approach you, and I shall be so relieved by what you will tell me."

"I like moderation in all things, and I hate extreme opinions. On this account I would say, that you are to take a middle course between the extreme decisions of the two confessors, that is to say, you are to paint one side of your face, and leave the other as God left it."

The Bishop's meaning was of course easily seen in its general import; and it would teach us, that by avoiding extremes on one side and the other we can go together in the practice of our ministry, whatever may be our theoretic views respectively.

For example, you and I may be exercising our ministry in the same church, whilst holding different ideas on Probabilism; you, let us suppose, a Probabiliorist, and I simply a Probabilist or Equiprobabilist. You are absent for a time shorter or longer, and your penitents turn over to my confessional; I cannot raise any difficulty in my treatment of them on the presumption that they are guided by you in accordance with the stricter system to which you adhere; nor would you be authorised to object to my penitents in a similar supposition, on account of my more lenient views; nay, we may be mutually confessor and penitent to each other, and our different leanings and holdings as to one system or another do not tie up our hands, or cause the least difference between us.

5thly. As a matter of experience it is quite ascertained, that in practice we pay little, if any, attention to the probabilistic distinctions, or the controversies respecting them. The aspirant to the ecclesiastical state may, indeed, attach much importance to them, during the course of his preparatory studies, and embracing a particular system in preference to the others, he may fancy, that he has found an "organism" for the application of moral theology similar to that of Aristotle of old, or to the *Organum Novum* of Lord Bacon in more modern times for their systems of logic. But, as he enters on his ministry, he realises the vast difference between theory and practice, when it becomes his great endeavour to apply his theological knowledge, in the use he has to make of it, to the work, that comes before him in his every-day life. By attention and observation he comes to see how his knowledge of principles is to be applied in practice. His work in the commencement is on this account necessarily slow, as he seeks to warrant by principle every step he takes in practice. By degrees, however, he acquires experience, and standards of judgments grow up in his mind, which after a time guide him securely, and promptly, and leave him at ease in all ordinary cases; and, when any matter out of the ordinary course comes in his way, he pauses, and recognizing the difficulty, he has recourse to his books, or, it may be, to some one of longer and larger experience, and having thus satisfied himself as to how he should act, the special case becomes a precedent in his memory to deal with similar exceptional cases, as they arise, and in this way he gets up an enlightened practice of his ministry.

And in all this there is nothing singular in the ecclesiastical profession, that we do not find in the other learned professions as well. A medical student, for example, by his assiduity in the lecture hall, and by his private study at home, may become very learned in the theory of his profession. But this knowledge is far from being sufficient for the work he has before him. He must, moreover, see the practice of his profession in the various diseases that affect poor humanity, as they are treated in the wards of the public hospital, where he witnesses practice combined with

science ; and after all this training he still finds how much remains to be acquired when he puts his own hand to the work, and until he has exercised his profession for some time, carefully applying the principles he has learned to the cases as they come actually one by one before him. And what has not the law student still to learn after he has been called to the bar, as he witnesses the practice of the courts, and has to deal himself with briefs, as they come into his hands ? In the same way the ecclesiastical student has learned enough in college to qualify him to begin his ministry, and by practice in accordance with what he has learned he makes gradual progress, and acquires experience, till he becomes master of his work.

I must not, however, leave it to be inferred from what I have said, that I under-value the discussions of theologians on the probabilistic controversy. Quite the contrary, I respect, as every one must respect, the men eminent for learning and piety, who took part in that controversy, as we must all admire the power of argument, with which they sustained their respective systems. A student has much to learn in studying the subject in its various phases, and he cannot fail to derive great benefit from its discussion. But what I venture to insist upon is, that a student, who having embraced one system or another should be much deceived and disappointed, if he thought that he was to find in it an "organism," a kind of theological instrument, to carry out in a quasi-mechanical way the practical work of his ministry. Benedict XIV. would recommend a quite different course in his celebrated Constitution issued on the occasion of the Jubilee of 1750, in which he lays down the following rule for confession : "*in re dubia propriæ opinioni non innitantur ; sed antequam causam dirimant, libros consulant quam plurimos, eos cum primis, quorum doctrina est solidior, ac deinde in eam descendant sententiam, quam ratio suadet, ac firmat auctoritas.*" And St. Liguori himself, whose venerable name is so much mixed up with the question of Probabilism prescribes towards the end of his moral system as follows : "*confessarius, antequam opinionem amplexetur, tenetur utique intrinsicas rationes perpendere, et cum ei occurrat ratio*

adeoque convincens, cui adæquatam responsionem suppetere non aspicit; tunc oppositam amplecti non potest, quamvis plurimorum doctorum auctoritas ipsi faveat, modo auctoritas non sit tanti ponderis, ut videatur ei magis quam rationi deferendum.”

These two great authorities are dealing in these instructions, let it be observed, with the work of the confessional, and they are equally emphatic in laying down the rule for the guidance of confessors, that they are to use their own powers of thought sustained by eminent authority in coming to their conclusions, or, to repeat the words of Benedict himself “in eam descendant sententiam quam ratio suadet, ac firmat auctoritas.”

And as the question of authority presents itself, it may not be out of place to take account here of the well known declarations of the Sacred Penitentiary in favour of the theology of St. Liguori. They bear date 5th June, and are in the form of replies to questions submitted to that tribunal by the Cardinal Archbishop of Besançon.

The first question asked, whether a professor of sacred theology can safely follow, and profess, the opinions, that St. Liguori professes in his Moral Theology; and it is answered that he can, but, it is added that those are not to be considered as deserving censure, who follow opinions set forth by other approved authors.

The second question asked, whether a confessor is to be disquieted, who follows in the practice of the sacred tribunal of penance all the opinions of St. Liguori for the sole reason that nothing deserving censure was found in his works by the Holy Apostolic See; and the eminent prelate observed with regard to the confessor in question, that he read the works of St. Liguori only to know accurately his teaching without weighing the motives or reasons, on which the various opinions rested, considering himself to act safely on the ground, that he can prudently judge teaching, which contains nothing deserving censure to be sound, safe, and by no means opposed to the sanctity of the Gospel: and the sacred Penitentiary replied, that the confessor so acting was not to be disquieted, having regard to the mind of the

Holy See as to the approbation of the writings of the servants of God with a view to their canonization.

These declarations, no doubt, impart a high character to the moral theology of St. Liguori, which character is greatly enhanced by his being since raised to the dignity of a Doctor of the Church. But in controversial, as in other warfare, disputants are disposed not unfrequently to make too much of the vantage ground they may have secured. Accordingly, we are not to be surprised in observing the position maintained, that although the Holy See did not pronounce upon each and every opinion of St. Liguori taken singly and separately, still it would be a grave offence as well against the reverence due to the holy doctor, as also against that due to the Holy See to assert any one doctrine of his to be absolutely false, because, as it is alleged, such a proceeding would be an implicit impugning of the judgment of the Holy See itself.

Again, granting that, owing to the nature of probability, it is not impossible that some of the opinions of the holy doctor be proved improbable, and even false, nevertheless, it is asserted, that it is only some great doctor above all exception, who would be competent to pass such an adverse judgment, and this upon the ground, that all the unreformed opinions of St. Liguori are commonly held and acted upon.

In opposition to these views we are referred to the qualifying phrases accompanying the declarations of the Penitentiary, which, it is alleged, show that that tribunal was not called upon to pronounce on the truth of St. Liguori's teaching, but on a line of conduct pursued by a professor of moral theology, as also by a confessor. With respect to the former it is maintained that the qualifying phrase, which says, that "those are not to be blamed, who follow the opinions of other approved authors," affords licence evidently to challenge opinions of St. Liguori, and hold the opposite of his teaching as regards such opinions: whilst the answer respecting the confessor limits the approbation to the terms and scope of the Holy See in its general approbation of the writings of other servants of God, as well

as those of St. Liguori, which simply amounts to this, that nothing has been found in them to be an obstacle to their canonization. As, therefore, no special merit beyond this can be claimed for others, so neither can there be for St. Liguori.

The answer of the Sacred Penitentiary, saying, that the confessor in question is not to be disquieted in his practice, it is further observed, is not to be taken as an approval—at least it is a very slender approval—of his mode of acting. It comes pretty much to this, that if you or I were carrying on our ministry in a church under a very holy and learned man, we should be glad to have recourse to him in our doubts and difficulties, but we should, nevertheless, be much at fault, did we cease to work our own brains, and consult the leading works on theology in our own library, and be guided by them as well as by our living authority. St. Liguori, in his day, consulted the great theologians who had gone before him, and not content with their authority he sought out the motives and reasons of their decisions, and was not afraid to differ from them, even from the Angel of the School, St. Thomas, and the seraphic doctor, St. Bonaventure, although only a simple theologian himself, at the time. Nay, he differed from himself, and reformed in advanced life several opinions he had previously published, and continued even to his death retouching his *Moral Theology*, so as to leave several discrepancies after him between that most useful work and his *Homo Apostolicus*. It cannot, therefore, be denied to other theologians to go behind his authority, great, no doubt, though it is, and investigate his reasons, and come as Ballerini, Gury, and others have come, to opposite conclusions.

But, though we should allow ourselves to be ruled by his authority, we should yet have to do for ourselves in the practical application of his decisions, and in this we should be constantly exposed to go wrong, if we did not master the principle, or point, on which his decisions turned. We can easily understand this from what we every day witness in our courts of justice, in which the decision, or verdict, depends on two authorities, the judge and the jury.

The judge may lay down the law in a most lucid explanation of its provisions, but the jury have yet to see if the fact or facts under consideration come within the scope of the law as expounded by the learned judge. They have various circumstances to take account of, as all facts have their circumstances, and no wonder that, notwithstanding the able charge of the judge, they cannot in so many cases agree, their disagreement generally arising from their not clearly apprehending the point upon which the case hinges. So likewise must it be with us, even as we consult the most eminent authorities. We must still see ourselves to the application of the principle involved in the case we have to deal with, and be guided by principle according as we understand it, in employing our own minds in the consideration of its bearing on the matter in hand. Neither are we safe in ruling case by case on the ground of similarity. Such a mode of acting is distinctly repudiated by Canon Law not only where *a pari* reasons, but reasons *a fortiori* would present themselves, simply because the legislative authority does not mean that its enactments should go beyond what in terms they express. In a similar way it may happen in the other departments of practical theology, that, though cases be similar in their leading features, there may be a principle involved, which calls for different decisions in the cases respectively.

Even beyond this we have still to consider reflex principles, which are easily misunderstood in their application. St. Liguori, for instance, would extend the principle, or axiom of law, "*melior est conditio possidentis*," beyond questions of property, and solve other questions as well by its application. He makes the case of a person who, on Thursday night, does not know if 12 o'clock has yet arrived, and he would allow him in the doubt to eat meat, notwithstanding the law of abstinence on Friday, his principle being that Thursday's liberty being in possession, the maxim "*melior est conditio possidentis*," bears him out. But it is open for anyone to say, that this legal axiom is not in itself a self-evident principle, but rather an inference derived from the presumption that the occupant, in the ordinary course of things,

could not have entered into possession of property without having a right to do so, and this presumed right you are not allowed to challenge without showing cause. Everyone, therefore, sees how reasonable the axiom is as applied to property. But it does not by any means appear clear, that you could go farther, and apply it to a day, saying, it is doubtful whether just now it is Thursday or Friday, but the liberty of Thursday is in possession, and, therefore, according to the axiom, "*melior est conditio possidentis*," I will eat the meat laid before me. There are two serious differences between the cases. In the case of property possession there is a right grounded on a principle antecedent to possession, in the other case there is no such principle, and the doubt, moreover, is a doubt of simple nescience without a reason *pro* or *con* as to whether it be still Thursday, or you have already entered on Friday.

St. Liguori has unquestionably left to the Church a treasure of priceless value in his Moral Theology, and his *Homo Apostolicus*, but notwithstanding our reverence for the saint, now a Doctor of the Church, it may be doubted if these works be altogether suitable for students, who are mere learners of Theology, and this for the simple reason, that they are too learned to be placed yet in their hands. Learning and teaching are correlative, and judicious teaching must not go beyond the existing capacity of the learner. Is not this the lesson of the talents in the Gospel? One was given five talents, another two, and another one, and why the distinction? The Gospel explains it in saying, "*to every one according to his ability*" (*Matt. xxv. 15.*) And did not our Divine Lord himself observe this rule of discretion, as instructing his disciples He observed to them, "*I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now.*" (*John xvi. 12.*) Let us for a moment consider what St. Liguori tells us of himself in his preface to the *Homo Apostolicus*.

"I have endeavoured for the most part to explain my opinion, giving its due weight of greater, or equal, or lesser probability to every other opinion . . . But, whenever I did not find a convincing reason on one side, I have not ventured to condemn the opposite side, like others who too readily repudiate opinions maintained by several grave authors whom our holy Father, Pope Benedict,

already quoted in his elaborate works, abounding in every kind of erudition, mentions not without esteem, and frequently makes use of them But I would admonish you, kind reader, not to consider me to approve of opinions because I do not reject them, for, sometimes, I faithfully explain these with their reasons and advocates, in order that others may, according to their prudence, judge of their weight. Moreover, you will observe that when I note any opinion as being more true, I do not regard the contrary opinion as probable, although I do not expressly condemn it as improbable. Also when I call one of the opinions more probable without passing any judgment on the probability of the other, or when I use the expression, 'I do not venture to condemn it,' I do not, therefore, mean to say it is probable, but I leave it to the judgment of those who may be more prudent."

Now, is it not to be feared, that for a mere tyro in theology these minute distinctions are too embarrassing for him to keep in view, as he is endeavouring to make his way onward through his studies? And, as he observes in going along so many grave authors ranged on opposite sides, with different degrees of probability, and various opinions, set forth in the order first, second, and third, and so much, moreover, to be understood behind what is expressed, as also so much left undecided awaiting the judgment of the more prudent, is there not danger that thus at sea, with so many winds in different directions, he may deem it a matter of very little consequence what direction to take?

I therefore humbly think that the great value of St. Liguori's theological writings is reserved for those who, having already read a course of theology as it is usually taught in our seminaries, or great schools, have their minds matured to benefit by the teaching of the holy Doctor.

A VETERAN PRACTITIONER.

ST. PATRICK AND PALLADIUS.

WAS ST. PATRICK AND THE PALLADIUS MENTIONED BY ST. PROSPER AND THE VENERABLE BEDE ONE AND THE SAME?

THO ecclesiastical writers no point of Irish history has presented greater difficulties than the date of St. Patrick's mission. This is evident to any one who studies Ussher and Lanigan, and it was apparently this difficulty that induced Dr. Ledwich to deny the existence of our Apostle altogether. Now this stumbling-block would be entirely removed if it could be shown that the Palladius referred to by Prosper and Bede was not a different person from St. Patrick. This we hope to prove satisfactorily in the following paper, and if our arguments are not arranged in the logical sequence we could desire, the laborious duties of a missionary life must plead our excuse.

It is established by the testimony of the Irish writers that a person named Palladius preached the gospel in Ireland before St. Patrick.

There was a person named Palladius who was sent by Pope Celestine in 431 to preach the gospel in Ireland. This is established by the testimony of Prosper:—"Ad Scotos in Christum credentes ordinatus a Papa Celestino Palladius primus Episcopus mittitur." (*Chron.*) And again:—"Nec segniori cura ab hoc eodem morbo Britannias liberavit, quando quosdam inimicos gratiæ, solum suæ originis occupantes, etiam ab illo secreto exclusit Oceani; et ordinato Scotis episcopo, dum Romanam insulam studet servare Catholicam fecit etiam barbaram Christianam." This testimony of Prosper is repeated by Platina.

Bede writes:—"Anno dominicæ incarnationis 423 Theodosius junior post Honorium regnum suspiciens viginti et septem annis tenuit cujus anno imperii octavo Palladius ad Scotos," &c.

Is the Palladius mentioned by Prosper the same person as the Palladius mentioned by the Irish writers? We assert that he is not, but that he is St. Patrick. We do not confound the Palladius of the Irish writers with St. Patrick, but

we assert that the Palladius of the Irish writers is a different person from the Palladius of Prosper, and that the Palladius of Prosper is St. Patrick. About the Palladius of Prosper we have no information except what is contained in the passage quoted.

The Palladius of Prosper was sent "ad Scotos in Christum credentes." The Palladius of the Irish writers is sent to Ireland considered as an absolutely heathen country. Nennius, who of course speaks of the Palladius of the Irish writers, says he was sent "ad Scotos convertendos," a different expression from that of Prosper; therefore the Palladius of Prosper is not the Palladius of the Irish writers. On the other hand Patrick was sent to Ireland in which it was suggested some had already been converted by the Palladius of the Irish writers; therefore while the description of the mission "ad Scotos in Christum credentes" does not fit in with the Palladius of the Irish writers, it does fit in with St. Patrick. In a word, the Palladius of Prosper made the island Christian; the Palladius of the Irish writers was unable to convert any one, or scarcely any one, therefore the Palladius of Prosper is not the Palladius of the Irish writers. St. Patrick is the person who did make the island Christian, therefore the Palladius of Prosper is St. Patrick.

So conclusive is this argument that there is no way of getting out of it, except by charging Prosper with having stated what was untrue. Lloyd, Ussher, and Lanigan are quite conscious of the difficulty. Lanigan says that Ussher with his usual sagacity observes that Prosper's book was written not long after the mission of Palladius, when he had not heard of the ill success of that missionary. But the *Chronicon* of Prosper comes down to A.D. 455, that is 24 years after the sending of Prosper's Palladius. Granting, however, that it was written soon after Palladius' mission, then Lanigan's and Ussher's exculpation of Prosper simply comes to this, that not only did he state that the island was made Christian, though he did not know it to be so; but that he stated it to be Christian when he could not have known it to be so, and when it could not have been so. Is it credible that Prosper, knowing nothing more than that a missionary had

been sent, should roundly state that the mission was successful; or, granting that he might have stated merely from conjecture that it was successful, is it possible that from conjecture also he should have roundly stated that the whole island was converted? A statement of that kind would not have been made without certain knowledge.

Henthorn Todd did not accept that explanation of Prosper's words that they are only a too sanguine anticipation of success, which comes to what we said before, viz., that Prosper stated as a fact what was not a fact, what he had no reason for believing to be a fact, and what he could not have known to be a fact even if it were true. Dr. Todd, seeing the necessity of an explanation, gives one himself which is, that Prosper did not mean to say that Ireland was converted, but that by having had a bishop sent to it, it was admitted into the list of Christian nations. What a glorious exploit that was for Celestine! According to that explanation he could in twenty-four hours have made the whole world Christian. Did ever any one venture to say that because a missionary was sent to China, therefore China had become a Christian country?

One conclusion can be drawn from all these attempts at explaining away Prosper's words, and it is this, that every writer admits that if Prosper's words be true, then the Palladius of Prosper cannot be the Palladius of the Irish writers. They thus put us under the necessity either of denying (as the explanation) that Prosper wrote the truth, or of denying that the Palladius of Prosper is the Palladius of the Irish writers. To deny that the Palladius of Prosper is the Palladius of the Irish writers brings us into collision with no statement made either by the Irish writers or by Prosper, neither can it by any possibility come in collision with any such statements, for nothing whatever is known about the Palladius of Prosper except that his name was Palladius, that he was a deacon, that he was ordained by Celestine in 431, was sent to the Scots believing in Christ, and converted them, every point of which description corresponds with Patrick.

It may be useful to remark here again what we stated before, viz., that we do not identify Patrick with Palladius

because Palladius by itself stands for the Palladius of the Irish writers, but we do identify him with the Palladius of Prosper—with Patrick, but not Palladius as the name is used—in Irish histories. Thus we do not identify Nero with Cæsar when we say Nero was the Cæsar mentioned by St. Paul.

We are not then at liberty to set aside Prosper's statement that the island was converted, merely for the purpose of identifying the Palladius of Prosper with the Palladius of the Irish writers, an identification which has nothing to support it but the coincidence of a name which was then a very common name amongst ecclesiastics. Prosper knew, not merely conjectured, that the island had been converted, and it cannot be denied that he knew to whom the conversion was due. Prosper attributes the conversion to Palladius, therefore Palladius is the person who converted it, but Patrick is the person who converted it, therefore the Palladius of Prosper is Patrick.

Bede knew by whom Ireland had been converted, he gives the honor of its conversion to the Palladius of Prosper, but he knew it was converted by Patrick, therefore Bede understood the Palladius of Prosper to be St. Patrick.

So clear are those arguments, that many eminent men who have not adverted to the distinction between the Palladius of Prosper and the Palladius of the Irish writers, and the identity of Prosper's Palladius with Patrick, have come to the conclusion that St. Patrick never existed, on account of the impossibility of his having been passed over by Prosper and especially by Bede, if in reality it was Patrick who converted Ireland. We admit the impossibility of his being passed over: we deny that he is passed over; but undoubtedly he is passed over if the Palladius of Prosper is the Palladius of the Irish writers, therefore he is not. Finally, the Palladius of Prosper was sent in 431; the Palladius of the Irish writers was sent long before that, for he was sent long before St. Patrick; but if the Palladius of Prosper and that of the Irish writers be the same, St. Patrick must have been sent before 431, therefore the Palladius of Prosper is not the Palladius of the Irish writers. Of course

that argument depends upon the truth of the statement that Patrick was sent by Celestine. In favour of that statement we have the unanimous testimony of all the Irish writers; against it we have nothing but the argument that there was not time after the mission of Palladius for St. Patrick to have got a mission from Celestine. Now let it be well understood that the whole literature about the Roman mission of St. Patrick, for and against, depends on this, that Palladius was sent in 431, and as Celestine died in 432, Patrick could not have had a mission from Celestine. But how, we ask, do you know that it was in 431 that Palladius was sent? Certainly not from the Irish writers; their whole testimony about the Palladius they mention is in direct contradiction of that date. You may say that Prosper states it. Yes; he states that a Palladius was sent in 431, but how do you show that that Palladius is the same as the one spoken of by the Irish writers? Until you show that, you cannot show that the Palladius of the Irish writers was sent in 431. He may have been sent in 422, and there would in that case be sufficient time for all the events recorded about that Palladius to have occurred before St. Patrick's mission. We admit that we are compelled to choose between rejecting the unanimous testimony of the Irish writers that Patrick was sent by Celestine, and rejecting the identity of the Palladius of Prosper with the Palladius of the Irish writers. Of course if the narrative of the Irish writers comes into collision with well-established facts, it should be rejected. But it comes into collision with no fact. It comes into collision only with a statement unproved and unprovable, viz., that the Palladius of Prosper is the Palladius of the Irish writers, a statement, not only unprovable, but which, taking into account the arguments given already, is the direct reverse of the truth. The statement, therefore, of the Irish writers about the Roman mission of St. Patrick cannot be set aside—cannot be rejected, but that statement is incompatible, as is acknowledged, with the Palladius of Prosper being the same as the Palladius of the Irish writers, therefore he is not the same.

If it be urged that it is improbable that Prosper would

pass over the mission of the Palladius of the Irish writers, and that therefore the Palladius he mentions at 431 must be the same, we answer that we must make our choice of the probability of two omissions—we must say whether is it more probable that he passed over the Palladius of the Irish writers, or passed over St. Patrick. If it be the one of them he mentions, then he omits the other. Whether is he likely to have passed over a mission which produced no results, or the mission which converted the island? The same argument applies still more strongly to Bede. It is utterly improbable that they both passed over the successful mission, and mentioned the unsuccessful one; it is, therefore, utterly improbable that the Palladius they mention is the Palladius of the Irish writers. Perhaps Prosper out of adulation to Celestine mentioned the missionary Celestine sent, and omitted Patrick whom he did not send. But Prosper's *Chronicle* was written after Celestine's death when there was no cause for adulation; besides, would it not appear to be rather a sarcasm against Celestine, than a compliment to him, to speak of his having accomplished a something which another did, and which he failed to do. Prosper was the bosom friend of Sixtus III. the successor of Celestine, and private secretary to Leo I., successor of Sixtus; why then in their reign should he have had such zeal for elevating Celestine as to attribute to him what he did not do, for if the Palladius of the Irish writers be the Palladius who was sent in 431 by Celestine, then of a certainty Celestine had no share whatever in the conversion of Ireland. Prosper does not say merely that Palladius converted Ireland: he says that Celestine converted Ireland. If that have any meaning at all, it comes to this that Celestine sent the person who converted Ireland, but the person who converted Ireland was Patrick, therefore Celestine sent Patrick.

If Patrick was the person Prosper had before his mind, can we explain why he did not call him Patrick, but Palladius, can we explain why the Irish writers do not call him Palladius. We think we can explain the difficulty, not only satisfactorily, but also in a way to confirm our statement.

Patrick was a Roman citizen ; he was, moreover, of noble family. “*Ingenuus sum,*” he says, “*secundum carnem, nam decurione patre nascor. Vendidi autem nobilitatem pro utilitate aliorum.*” Therefore he must have had more than one name. There never was a Roman citizen, that is, one born a Roman citizen, who had not several names ; still more is that true of the noble families. Take, for example, Marcus Tullius Cicero, Caius Julius Cæsar-Octavianus, Thascius Cæcilius Cyprianus, &c. Every Roman citizen, besides his *nomen* (name), corresponding to our *surname*, a name which he had by birth, had a *prænomen* (a fore-name, a personal name) corresponding to our *Christian name* and generally had also a *cognomen*, and often an *agnomen*, *Patricius* was a personal name, which was St. Patrick’s *nomen*—his name? “*Multa,*” says the Scholiast on *Fiac*, “*Patricius habuit nomina ad similitudinem Romanorum nobilium. Succat primum nomen ejus in baptismo a parentibus suis ; Cathraige nomen ei inditum servitutis tempore in Hibernia ; Magonius, i. e. magis agens quam ceteri monachi nomen ejus tempore discipulatus apud Germanum ; Patricius vero vocatus tempore suæ ordinationis.*” St Patrick’s names, then, according to the Irish authorities, were *Patricius Succat Cathraige Magonius*. Of these *Succat* and *Cathraige* are the Irish equivalents of his Roman names. Putting back *Succat* and *Cathraige* into their Roman equivalents, we have Patrick’s name as follows, *Patricius Palladius Quadratus Magonius*.

“*Terechan Episcopus hæc scripsit ex libro Ultani episcopi cujus ipse alumnus vel discipulus fuit. Inveni quatuor nomina in libro scripta Patricio apud Ultanum episcopum Conchubernensium. Sanctus Magonus qui est clarus ; Succetus qui est deus belli Patricius : Cotherthiacus quia servivit iiii domibus magorum, &c.*” The reasons they assign for Patrick receiving these names we may pass over : they did not know that a Roman was born with a name, and often more than one. The Latin equivalent of *Succat* can be only *Palladius*. *Pallas* was the war-goddess, as *Ares* was the war-demon. *Pallas* is derived by Plato from *πάλλω* I brandish, and would represent spear-brandisher. Whether Plato was right or not

in his derivation does not concern us, the fact is all the same. Pallas was the war-goddess. As a representative or equivalent of Succat we must choose between Palladius, Arius, and Martius, for no other names in use are drawn from war-gods. Martius and Arius cannot have been names; they were rare among any but the old Roman families, whereas Palladius was a usual name at the time. It cannot be denied that this name Succat is, at least, a curious confirmation, nay, a confirmation almost as strong as proof, that St. Patrick's *nomen* (name) was Palladius. We do not need to prove further than we have done that his name was Palladius, for every argument to show that the Palladius of Prosper is the same as Patrick also proves that Patrick's name was Patricius Palladius. Patricius is the name by which he would be known in his own family and among his familiars, but outside his own family the only name by which he would be known would be Palladius—his *nomen* (name). That *nomen* (name) Palladius, is the only name which Prosper could use in speaking of him, and most probably, the only name by which Prosper knew him. On the other hand, in Ireland, seeing that there was another Palladius who had become of note before Patrick's arrival, Patrick could not be called in Ireland by the name of Palladius, but only by the name of Patrick. The Palladius of the Irish writers was in possession of the name, and by necessity the second comer would be called by one of his other names, either his prænomen or his cognomen—his personal name or his after name. Thus it was a matter of necessity that he would be known to the Irish writers only by the name of Patrick, and would be known to the continental writers only by the name of Palladius, for there was little chance that the appellation given to him in Ireland, would become known on the continent, at least until after a very long period.

Taking into account these considerations, we will see that the difference of name affords no reason for doubting that the Palladius of Prosper is the same person as Patrick, for the difference of name is just what must have occurred if they were the same. Next, the identity of name gives very little presumption for saying that the Palladius of Prosper

and the Palladius of the Irish writers are the same person, for the name was a very common one among ecclesiastics.

We, therefore, unhesitatingly adopt the conclusion that, the Palladius who *did not* convert Ireland cannot be Prosper's Palladius *who did*; that as the Palladius of Prosper is the person who did convert Ireland, and as Prosper knew and Bede knew that Patrick was the person who converted it, therefore the Palladius of Prosper and of Bede is our St. Patrick—the Patricius Palladius Quadratus Magonius.

E. O'BRIEN.

DR. HUGH DE BURGO.—II.

THE attitude which the Confederate States of Holland might assume towards the Irish Catholics, was regarded by the Supreme Council as a matter of very great importance. As a naval power, the States held a high place at that period. And as the Irish sea-ports were in a measure unprotected, and the coast much infested by the hostile cruisers of the Puritans, it was deemed extremely desirable to secure the support or sympathy of the Confederate States. Under the circumstances it was decided to commission Father Burke to treat with Holland with plenary powers. His commission was dated from Wexford on the 7th of August, 1643; and though brief it was well calculated to flatter its illustrious (*perillustri viro*) recipient, and also to conciliate the Government to whom he was sent as ambassador. "The Most Potent States" were assured that Father Burke was a man on whose *integrity* and *prudence*, the most implicit reliance might be placed. He received very minute instructions as to the objects of his mission. The Council's views on the subject, are forcibly urged on their agent in a letter addressed to him from Ross:

"The great use which wee have of shipping to defende our coaste, and infest the enemye is well known to you, and without some considerable number of them bee drawen into a body, with intent to secure our coast, and not to apply themselves wholly to traffic we shall want that end we look most after."

The prospects of a profitable trade had indeed, brought several vessels to the Irish coast: and though the Confederates had reason to complain of the selfishness of some in applying themselves so much to "traffic," they still desire that their ambassador should remind the people of Holland of the advantages which were sure to arise from a "free commerce" between both countries. He was to remind them of the *ancient friendship* which existed between Ireland and that "nacion;" and to urge forcibly, that the states should not permit that time-honoured friendship to be destroyed by the machinations of enemies. In order to prejudice the Irish cause in Holland, the English Dissenters represented Irish Catholics as in revolt against their King. Father Burke was instructed to point out that the Irish were driven to arms only by the oppression of the Puritans, who were also his Majesty's active enemies; that they had taken up arms only when they had clearly ascertained that their enemies had undertaken a war of extermination against them; and in fine that they had already addressed a "remonstrance of grievances" to his Majesty, soliciting his protection and support. The Council recounted for him even many recent proofs of the regard of the Irish people for their Dutch friends. "We are sure that to this day we continue our good affections to them." "And since these troubles," they add, "we did their men right and courtesies; the particulars, you have by our letters; and we are ready to doe more."

The particulars are given in the letters referred to, with minuteness: and are of sufficient interest to be referred to here.

But a short time previously, a Dutch merchant vessel under the command of a Captain Both, had been forced to put in at Berehaven, owing to the illness of its crew. The sick men were taken ashore, and received necessary care: and the vessel, which was richly laden, was guarded by the native Irish during their convalescence.

A frigate under the command of a certain John Classye, with seventy-six men on board, had experienced at Bantry bay a reception similar in its kindness. But a still more singular proof of the regard in which the Dutchmen of

those days were held by the Irish, was shown by another instance which occurred about Christmas of the same year. The vessel was from Fandanbouke, and was wrecked at Dungarvan. As soon as her nationality was ascertained, care was taken by the people of the coast to save every thing of value which it contained. Amongst the valuables was a sum of 1500 *pistoles of gold* which was scrupulously preserved for the States, by the mayor of Waterford.

“These (they add) have been some expressions of our redde will to persevere in that constant intercourse of good offices which have passed between them and our nation, and some light unto them how useful it will be to have us continue the same desires.”

These facts should at least constitute a strong plea for the liberation of Captain Oliver and his men; a subject which Father Burke was urged “to negotiate with all his skill and industry.” Such indeed was the anxiety felt for Oliver by the Confederates that they sent out a naval officer named Lambert, to aid Father Burke in effecting his liberation.

Under the circumstances the need of an experienced officer that should have supreme control over the Irish navy was all the more strongly felt. The Confederates were already in treaty with a certain Antonio le Condou Boue D’Overmere “a man of quality in Flanders,” and nearly allied to Preston, the Leinster general. This personage would himself supply a “squadron of frigates for their service,” on certain conditions. Amongst the most important of his stipulations was, that he would be appointed admiral of all the foreign vessels that might volunteer for active service of the confederates. He also claimed considerable share of the prizes which might be captured by Flemish vessels, together with certain important and unusual trading privileges. The Supreme Council apprehending that such concessions might be calculated to promote jealousies, and thus to injure their cause, resolved that the commission should be granted only under certain wise restrictions. The nature of those restrictions were communicated to Father Burke; and permission was given to him to grant or withhold the commission, as he might deem advisable.

“We have sent unto you a commission under our seale for Monsieur Overmere, the articles of our agreement with him, and our

answers to some questions of his ; all which are left to your dispose, cyther to bee detayned or given unto him at your election as your judgement and conscience shall conceive best for the advantage of the common cause."

The commission was however ultimately withheld.

A treaty with Holland was the result of Father Burke's mission to that country ; and this treaty it was thought desirable to publish throughout Ireland by a formal proclamation. From the terms of the proclamation, it seems clear that strenuous efforts had been made by malicious and designing parties, to have it appear, that the Confederate Irish were the open enemies of the States of Holland. Under those circumstances the importance of the treaty may not be easily exaggerated.

"To prevent, therefore, the mischeefes which might arise from the want of a right understanding of our sense herof, wee thought fit to establish and declare, and by those presents, doe publish and declare, that the States of Holland are now in league and amytie with our Sovereign Lord, and us his most faithful subjects."

And it was also declared that such as might presume to violate that treaty, with "the Hollander," rendered themselves liable to the penalties incurred by the ordinary disturbers of the "publicke peace."

Father Burke's successes in Holland were attained under very great difficulties. In addition to those already indicated, communication with Ireland was rendered for a time, difficult and uncertain. Many of the important despatches forwarded to him there, by the Council, never reached his hands. They wrote to him expressing their natural astonishment that so many of their letters should have miscarried. The date of this communication was the 8th of August, it would appear that Father Burke had received none of the letters addressed to him from Ireland since the preceding January. In his labours, however, he was sustained by the consciousness of unselfish zeal in his country's interests, until *at length* the assurances of his country's gratitude reached him. The Council continued to approve of his "endeavours," and to assure him that they felt satisfied he had omitted nothing consistent with prudence

and foresight. 'The following extract from a letter addressed to him by the Supreme Council, will show more clearly, their estimate of his untiring assiduity:—

“REV. FATHER—“We have received your several letters concerning your employment into Holland, and the diary of the accidents which befel you, wherein we find you have acquit the trust reposed in you with that care and judgement that merits thanks at our hands, which we heartily retourn unto you.”

The march of events at home and abroad, had been so far favourable to Catholic Ireland. It was much to have secured the sympathy of Bavaria, and Belgium, with that of Imperial Austria. The treaty with Holland also concluded through Father Burke's agency, was very important. The ambassadors of France and Spain were formally received at Kilkenny, and the sum of 20,000 crowns presented on the occasion in the name of the Spanish nation, went to prove, that the presence of their Excellencies in Kilkenny was no mere empty pageant. Father Scarampi, the Papal Legate, had also arrived in Ireland the bearer of 30,000 dollars, and valuable military supplies. Much of confiscated Catholic and Church property in the west, and south, was once more in Catholic hands; and very many of the grand old cathedrals so long desecrated by the heretics, were again glorified by the pomp of Catholic ceremonial. Such advantages pointed encouragingly to ultimate success. Yet strange to say it was at such a juncture that the question of a “cessation of hostilities,” began to be discussed. Father Burke hears of the “Cessation” for the first time, in the letter of the 26th of January just quoted “We have” they write “in the meantime while you are expecting of answers to particulars of your letters, sent you those to let you know the motives which did induce us to treat of a “Cessacion of Armes.” What opinions he entertained on this important proposal, it is now difficult to ascertain. But considering his zeal, in promoting his country's cause, it is difficult to think they could have been other than those of strong disapproval. Lord Ormond was instructed by the king to urge it privately, but strongly. As might have been expected, it had ardent advocates in such men as Clanricarde, and many more of the Anglo-Irish aristocracy,

who regarded with a jealous eye the claims of the Church for the restoration of its confiscated property.

The reasons against the Cessation were strong and obvious, and forcibly put before the public by Father Scarampi, the Papal Legate. He urged that the needs of the Irish for military supplies could not be regarded as a justification of the proposed Cessation. Though their needs might have been urgent then, they were at least, far less urgent than in the preceding year, when they had entered on the war. Were the Irish to rest satisfied with the advantages already gained, and not continue to follow up these successes, they would forfeit the support of the European countries then favourably disposed towards them. Constitutional liberty and the free exercise of faith should be obtained he urged "by arms and intrepidity, not by Cessations and indolence." It is impossible to read the Legate's statements against the Cessation without being struck by his political foresight.

"That *peace will ever be made* between the King and Parliament," he continued, "is *exceedingly improbable*; nor would it be our advantage; for if they *combined*, we should be necessitated to surrender, &c. If the parliament prevail—which God forbid—*all Ireland will fall under their arbitrary power*; the swords of the Puritans will be at our throats, and we *shall lose everything except our Faith*." Events soon proved how literally those prophetic words were realized. Should the Irish, on the other hand, vigorously prosecute the war, they would be found by the victorious English party whether King or Parliament, "well provided with increased territories, stronger in foreign succours," in a word, in a position to have their grievances fully redressed. He urged also that the war was a religious war, and as such had received the support of Princes not otherwise hostile either to the King, or Parliament. A treaty of peace which should secure no *permanent gain* to Irish Catholics, would alienate the sympathy of those Princes, and he indignantly added, "it should not be supposed that he had been accredited by the Holy See merely to obtain an uncertain peace *for a single year*, in which brief period no foundation could be laid for the *security* of the *Faith and the Kingdom*." But

notwithstanding those and similar representations the intrigues of Ormond prevailed; and in an evil hour the treaty of Cessation was accepted by the Confederates. The armistice was accordingly proclaimed in Dublin by the Lords Justices "for one whole year beginning the 15th day of September, Anno Domini 1643, at the houre of twelve of the clock of the same day."

One of the chief objects which the advocates of the Cessation asserted they wished to attain, was that they might be able during the armistice, to dispatch large reinforcements to England to aid the king; they also affected an anxiety, to be in a position to discharge in part, their obligations to the King of Spain. But the treaty of Cessation was no sooner signed than it was shamelessly violated by the Puritans, in the south and north. General Munroe had taken the field in the north; and the Supreme Council thought it necessary to dispatch a strong force under the command of Castlehaven to that province. And not only was that force of six thousand foot, and six thousand horse, considered necessary, but it was felt that "a great reserve of men for their supply" was also required. Under these circumstances the promised reinforcements for Spain could not be sent. Father Burke was accordingly required to represent to the Spanish Viceroy, Don Francisco de Melos, the foregoing facts, as a justification for the inability of the Confederates to fulfil, just then, their engagements to his Catholic Majesty of Spain. He was, however, to assure him, that they by no means repudiated their obligations. But, as they could not then part with their troops, without exposing the safety of the kingdom to imminent danger, they would defer the fulfilment of their obligations to a more favourable time. The Ulster Puritans had, as a matter of fact, received just then large reinforcements in men from Scotland; and large grants of money from the English parliament. A letter dispatched by the council to Fr. Burke, on the 22nd February, 1643, contains full and interesting particulars regarding the matter. "We could not," they write, "without the ruine of the kingdome, for the present, parte with our men, but we will soe provide that, how-

ever it falls out with us, we will perform our promiss with the King of Spaine."

It would have been well if they had measured their duties to King Charles, by the same equitable and cautious course of reasoning. Here, however, they permitted their "loyalty" to a worthless king, to blind them to their country's needs. They arranged with "all cheerfulness" to present his Majesty with £30,000 in consideration of "his royal intentions" towards them. The Irish Catholics were indebted to his Majesty for nothing more valuable than his "intentions." For his recognition of their position, and claims at the time of the treaty, they were mainly indebted to their own valour.

However undesirable the treaty of Cessation may have been, it indicated a sufficient degree of success to the Catholic cause, to justify, in a measure, the tone of self-congratulation noticeable in a letter addressed to Pope Urban VIII., by the Supreme Council, on the 14th June, 1644. After recounting for his Holiness the various benefits secured to the Catholics, they add:—"And these great benefits for our nation were reserved, most Holy Father, for your Pontificate, under whose auspices the Catholic religion so long oppressed in this island, now lifts its head with dignity, and is seen once more arrayed in a manner becoming the Spouse of Christ; and our people are confident that they shall eventually win the reward of their courage and patience." There can be no doubt that Urban VIII. entertained a high estimate of their ardour in unselfishly promoting the interests of religion, when it is remembered that he gave the Supreme Council the privilege of *nominating to benefices and vacant Sees*. He was pleased "to suspend the grant of any spiritual promotion or benefice within the kingdome, other than to suche persons as should be returned unto him," with the recommendation of the Supreme Council. Of this gracious concession they proceeded to avail themselves in this letter of the 14th June, to which we have already referred. As might have been expected there were many episcopal sees then vacant, in Ireland. Amongst the sees then vacant, for which the

Council desired that provision should be made, were those of Achonry, Ferns, Limerick, Kilmacduagh, and Ross. The period was fruitful of eminent ecclesiastics, whose admitted abilities reflected honour on their Church, and country. Amongst those Father Burke, Doctor O'Dwyre of Limerick, Doctor Kirwan, and others were specially distinguished. We are not, therefore, surprised to find that their names were selected for immediate ecclesiastical preferment. "Father Hugh De Burgo, of the Order of St. Francis, now in Flanders," stood first amongst those, whom, from the knowledge which they had "of their good lives and abilities, well fitting a pastoral charge," they recommended to the notice of his Holiness for the see of Achonry. The amiable and holy Doctor Francis Kirwan, who was also recommended for the same see was appointed Bishop of Killala; while Father Hugh De Burgo was subsequently consecrated Bishop of Kilmacduagh.

J. A. FAHEY, P.P.

(*To be continued.*)

ÍÚRAD—ITS HISTORY, SIGNIFICATION, AND TENSE.

IN the year 807 Ferdomnach wrote out of his own head, or as I believe, copied, on fol. 189 *ba* of the *Book of Armagh*, the glosses *cimbidi* and *íúrad* on some words of the last three verses of the 27th chapter of the Acts of the Apostles. Mr. Whitley Stokes¹ in 1860, Ebel² in 1871, Dr. Windisch³ in 1879 and 1880, Dr. Güterbock and Dr. Thurneysen⁴ in 1881, Dr. Thurneysen⁵ in 1883, Dr. Kuno Meyer⁶ in 1884, and Mr. Stokes⁷ in 1886, give and treat the interesting vocable, *íúrad* as a gloss on "factum est;" while I, in 1884, copied, and have since printed it as a gloss on "accederent." I believe

¹ *Irish Glosses.* ² *Grammatica Celtica.* ³ *Grammar and Dictionary.*

⁴ *Index to Zeuss.*

⁵ *Irische Miscellen.*

⁶ *Irish Miscellanies.*

⁷ *Celtic Declension*, p. 61.

these most learned men to have been mistaken; and I think Ferdomnach was misled by the manuscript from which he copied, and that, in transcribing the gloss, "*Scriba sapiens*"¹ *se aliosque circumscripsit*.

Mr. Stokes thought in 1860 (as I have not the book within reach, I speak from memory) that *íurad* = *factum est*, and is connected with the Gaulish word *eiwopov* (*fecit*) and the Irish *fritammiurat*, *fritammiorsa*; Ebel² says the same, but adds, "*si quidem recte iurad* (gl. *factum est*), *fritammiurat* (afficient me), *fritammiorsa* (gl. me adficiet) conferuntur," and he registers it as a "*praeteritum primum passivum*;" in their *Index Glossarum of Gram. Celtica*, Doctors Güterbock and Thurneysen connect it with *friuair* (efficit); in his grammar Dr. Windisch⁴ states, approvingly, that "Stokes connects *íurad* *factum est*, with *eiwopov*; in his *Woerterbuch* he says, "*cfr. fri-iuram*, afficio," and he makes *fritamm-iur-sa* a 3rd. pres. ind., and *fritamm-iurat* 3rd. pl. pres.; he gives "*iúrthund cfr. urtadh* to gore, to hurt, O'Don. Suppl.," without any reference to *iuraim*. Dr. Meyer says⁵ *iuraim* (facio) is proved by the following forms:—

3 sg. rel. ind. *mairg iuras in n-orgain sa*! LU. 87b (about twenty examples.)

3 sg. imper. pass. *iúrthar ind orgain*, LU. 88a.

3 sg. pres. sec. pass. *ro iúrtha mac secht m-bliadain*.

3 sg. b-fut. pass. *ní iurfaithe ind orgain*, the ruin would not be wrought.

On this Dr. Thurneysen writes⁶:—

"Mr. Meyer stands up for the existence of the fabulous verb *iuraim*, facio; but all the forms are examples of the future *iorr*, *iurr*. I will add to them the 2nd. sg. which is four times in the MS. of Milan, *inní irr*, wilt thou not strike? *inní irrsiu*, *indahierr*; and the 3rd. sg. *iúrthund*, he will kill us."

To these examples Mr. Stokes⁷ adds, *nád n-iurmais orgain*, we should not work ruin; *ní iúrtha ind orgain*, thou shouldst not commit the murder; in *ro iúrtha mac*, a child was destroyed, we have an inorganic Middle-Irish form, made

¹ So designated in *Chron. Scot.* 846, and called *Eagnaidh agus scribhnídh toghaidhe* in F. Masters, 844.

² *Gr. Celt.*, pp. 35, 477.

³ P. 118.

⁴ Vorrede, p. vii.

⁵ *Rev. Celt.*, vi. 191.

⁶ *Rev. Celt.*, vi. 371; cf. p. 96.

⁷ *Celtic Declension*, p. 61.

from an s-future stem *orgs*; *noirrtha orgain*, *frisoirectis*¹ (*adversabantur*). He remarks then that all these forms seem to be s-futures from the compound verb **i-organ*, and the forms in which Kuno Meyer sees a root *iur*, are all, he thinks, to be referred to the root *org*, the simple s-stem *orgs* regularly becoming *ora*, *ors*, *orr*, and even *or*. It is possible, he continues, that the simplex may be in the imperat. sg. 2, *urtha-sa* (betake thyself) LL. 58^a, and the t-pret. pl. 3, *urthatar* (they betook themselves) LL. 55^a; and that those words may have originally meant “make,” “they made.” Cf. the German phrases “*sich davon machen*,” “*sich fort machen*.” Of *iúrad* he writes in the same paper: “*Eiðru*, written *ieuru* in seven other Gaulish inscriptions, . . . seems compounded with the prep. *ei* = Gr. *ἐπί*, Skr. *api*, with regular loss of *p*. The root may be *ur*, “to make,” which Mowat finds in the Lat. *ur-na* . . . and which may also be the source of the Gr. *ὕρην*, whence Lat. *urceus*. In Irish the root apparently occurs, compounded with *ī* = *ἐπί* in *iúrad* (gl. *factum est*).”²

Such is the substance of a discussion about a fabulous verb *iúrain*, founded on the “gloss” “*iúrad*, gl. *factum est*.” Dr. Thurneysen³ affirms that “*iúrad* alone can be compared with *εὐρωπὸς*, and only on the supposition that the gloss is a simple translation of the Latin word.” But I venture to think that it glosses “occiderent” or “accederent,” which the glossator or transcriber mistook for *occideret* or *accederet*; and that *iúrad* really means “occideret,” he would kill, or perhaps “accederet,” which the glossator took to mean *striking* upon or against the shore. With a hope of making this clear, I shall give the text of the *Book of Armagh*, 189^{ba}:—

1. militum consilium fuit
ut custodias occiderent* nequis cum
natasset effugeret centorio h. vol
ens seruire paulum prohibuit fieri
5. iussitque eos qui possent natare mi
tere se primos et euadere et exire ad
terram et cæteros alios in tabulis tereb
ant et quosdam super ea quae de navi es
sent et sic *factum est* ut omnes animae
10. accederent* ad terram et cum euasisse
mus

¹ Is not this last a 3rd. pl. sec. present, the 3rd. sg. pres. of which is *orcaid*?

² *Celtic Declension*, pp. 61, 62.

³ *Rev. Celtique*, vi. p. 98.

Over “custodias” is written *cimbidi*, in the margin is a Latin gloss cut into by the binder, and conveying, if I remember rightly, that *custodiae* means qui custodiebantur, i.e. the prisoners. * Between ll. 9 and 10 is written *íúrad*; between ll. 10 and 11 is *euaderet* or *euaderent*; over the first *e* in *euaderet*, and the first *e* in *accederent* there is a dot; over the *n* of *acciderent* there is a mark (of reference?); over *sic* is the mark of length (or reference?); over “factum est” there is nothing. It seems that *íúrad* and *euaderet* gloss *accederent*.

As *íúrad* could not be a gloss on “sic,” I copied it as a gl. on “accederent” about three years ago, though I could not explain it. My view at present is, and I hope it may be received as more than a bold guess, or shrewd conjecture:—
 1°. That *íúrad* glosses “occiderent” (yet = *occideret*), and that it should have been written immediately after *cimbidi*; 2° that it was misplaced, because *accederent* “caught the eye” of the writer, perhaps after a nap; 3° that it is in the singular, as the *centurio* or *paulus* was uppermost in his mind, or because the MS. had *occiderent* or *acciderent*, as “*euaderent*,” here in the *Book of Armagh*, can hardly be distinguished from “*euaderet*.” This view is founded on, or confirmed by the facts, (a) that *íúrad* could mean “occideret,” as 3rd. sg. secondary future of *orcaid*, *occidit* (Milan MS. 19^d); (b) that *íúrad*, or any other word like it, has not been proved to mean “factum est,” or anything like it. From the Milan gl. “*fritamm-iorsa .l. quamdiu me adficiet*,” it first appears that a word apparently akin to *íúrad* is a future; Dr. Thurneysen has shown that many words like it are secondary futures, and in this he is supported by Mr. Stokes. I beg to introduce *íúrad* as sec. fut. to these learned men, hoping that they will give it *fáilte móir*. I shall now tabulate the persons of this tense, marking with a dash the compound or conjunct forms already found, and with an asterisk those which, I fancy, may be met with hereafter:—

ACTIVE SECONDARY S-FUTURE OF *orc-aid*.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
1.	<i>íúrainn*</i>	<i>íurmaís</i>
2.	<i>íurtha, írrtha</i>	<i>íurthe</i>
3.	<i>íúrad</i>	<i>íúrtais*</i>

PASSIVE SEC. S-FUTURE.

3. iúrtha

iúrtis*

S-FUTURE ACTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — iurr, — iorr

— iúram,* — arram,* iúrmme*

2. írr, ierr

— arraid, iúrthe*

3. iúr, orr, — arr, — ar.

— iúrat, iúrit*

Relative iúras

iúrte*

S-FUTURE PASSIVE.

3. iúrthar

iúrtar,* iuratar*

“iúrfaithe” is an S + B. future secondary 3rd. sg. passive, and is as corrupt as would be *audiebis* for *audies*; it should be *ní iúrtha*.

The meaning¹ of *orcaid*, is 1° *occidit*, (i. e. *a. vehementer cædit*; *b. ad necem cædit*.) in which sense under the form of *ár*,² slaughter of persons, it figures so often in the Irish Annals, that the Milan gloss might serve as a summary of them:—*Inti díb bis tresa orcaid alaile*, qui ex iis est fortior occidit alium. 2° *ex-cidit*, as in “*urbes excidere*,” “*aedes sacras, domos excidere*” (*Cicero*). In this sense *orcain*, *orccain*, *argain*, are used *passim* in the *Chron. Scotorum*, the *Annals of the Four Masters* and of *Loch Cé*:—thus *orgain Chuana Creamha agus guin daeine* in the *Four Masters* an. 810, which is rendered “*direptio organorum ecclesiae Clooncreeve et jugulatio hominis*” in the *Annals of Ulster* an. 814. On this erroneous translation Dr. O’Connor bases a very learned note on organs,³ and Mr. Warren grounds his statement, that “the Irish Annals speak of the destruction of church organs.”⁴ 3° *occidit* in a figurative sense, as *bith m-oirc domsa, gl væ mihi est*, *Wb*, 10^d, which reminds one of “*hei mihi, Geta! occidisti me fallaciis tuis*” (*Terent. Phorm.*), and might be rendered “*actum est* [“*ῥακτὺν ἐστ!*”] *de me*” (*Plaut. Pseud. I. 1. 63*).

Hence I should translate literally (though *barbare*) *mairg iúras in n-orgain-sa, væ illi, qui occidit occisionem hanc*; cf.

¹ O’Don. in Suppl. gives from Cormac “*iurtadh* to gore, hurt, query cognate with English hurt.” The form *iurtadh* should be, I think, *iúrad* or *iúr*; and if any one were now to hint at “un petit soupçon” of *orc* in hurt, heurter (French), ored (Ang. Sax.) *ἀναπέω*, würgen, eg-orger (!), he might be referred to Pott (*Etymologische Forschungen*).

² *ár*, *iur*, *úr*, *irc*, *iort*, *irt*, *iorthach* (deadly) are found in the dictionaries.

³ F. Masters p. 423 note.

⁴ *Liturgy and Ritual of the Celtic Church*, p. 126.

“copias occisione occideret” (Cicero, 14 Phil. 14), “mirum somnium somniavi,” he did the deed, he sang a song, he struck the blow, “thou shalt die the death.” (Douay Bible Gen. 2. 17), etc.

If *íúrad* glosses “accederent,” then I think the glossarist mistook this for “occiderent,” or had “cædo” and “cedo” mixed up in his mind; and I propose *íúrad* occideret as the real meaning. This secondary future, according to Dr. Windisch¹ answers to the French conditional, and has, says Dr. Thurneysen, “toutes les fonctions du conditionel roman;”² but that the conditional always corresponds with it, seems not correct, as here the French translate—les soldats furent d’avis de tuer les prisonniers—ut custodias occiderent; again St. John I. 19; dochum go bh-fiafróchaidis—pour demander; marufeste (Z² 471)—si vous saviez, si vous eussiez su; and so on in many cases with which I do not wish to crowd this paper.

EDMUND HOGAN, S.J.

CORRESPONDENCE.

PLURALITY OF ANCIENT BENEFICES.—MISSA PRO POPULO IN IRELAND.

REV. DEAR SIR,—In connection with the above obligation an important question was lately proposed to the Sacred Congregation. I annex the material points of the case, and the answers given. If I mistake not the question sent to Rome from France contains some considerations calculated to enlarge the responsibilities of a considerable portion of the Irish clergy, and consequently a discussion on what for argument’s sake I may be permitted to call the parallelism of the relative positions in this country and in France may not be altogether devoid of special interest to many of your readers. In view of the practical question proposed to the S. Congregation and the reply of that august body, we are led to inquire if the decision given in the one case may be taken as applying to Ireland either indirectly or by inference; according to established general principles. Are the cases analogous?

¹ Gram. 6. § 250.

² *Rev. Celt.* vi. p. 94.

If so, like case, like rule. Should we hold the analogy to exist, then the decision before us bears upon our status, and without further special inquiry or any appeal to antiquity we are bound to acquiesce in and to be subject to the operation of defined law. If however, there has existed in this country and for this we must have proof positive, a special provision amounting to a certain limitation of the law, then we may *salva conscientia* follow in the existing practice. But ecclesiastical law is a matter of "stern assertion," and is not to be blown away by mere speculation; much less by "the amiable feebleness of hypothesis." It is easy to understand how many of the disciplinary laws of the Church in the peculiar and direful social circumstances of this country for past centuries, became complicated and impracticable. During those penal days the exercise of the pastoral authority and the performance of sacred functions were surrounded with abnormal difficulty and irregularity, and very often attended with violent resistance, and positive danger to life. But happily those days have passed away and at length the Church of God in this country can adequately carry on, even in minutest detail, the work which our Lord has given her to do in so complex a form, embracing matters of faith and discipline, ritual and ceremonial. Now we can advantageously, yet with reverend speculation, apply a searching analysis to those laws of the Church which are not rendered impracticable by the condition of the country or local circumstances; and to this category somewhat belongs the legislation—the extension or limitation of which is the matter of my present letter.

Take the case as it stands in France. A priest has two churches and of course two flocks. One represents his original flock. The other has been annexed. Of course he has to say two Masses on Sundays and holidays. Now the Sacred Congregation has decided, that this priest is bound to offer up Mass for each of the two parishes,—that is, that one Mass will not serve for both, or in other words, that he must apply his second Mass to the members of the *second* parish; or to make it still clearer—for the superadded parish and flock:—*unitae accessorié*," to quote the expressive phrase of Craisson's *Juris canonici Manuale*.

In the time of Pius VII (1801), the ancient dioceses and parishes were by the Concordat suppressed in France, and new parishes created,—"*concurrenté simul utraque potestate, ecclesiastica scilicet et civili*;"—this led Craisson to inquire—"An parochi sunt hodié in Galliâ vere et proprié dicti parochi." To this he answers,

“Parochos inamovibiles esse veros et in sensu juris proprie dictos parochos,” “nullamque de hoc moveri difficultatem.”

Having thus by anticipation cleared away one radical difficulty, I will proceed with the case, following the form in which it was presented to the Sacred Congregation:—

“Pro insufficienti sacerdotum numero in dioecesi Divionensi non raro accidit ut idem parochus tribus ecclesiis inserviat, nempe: 1. Suae propriae parochiae; 2. Modo permanenti alteri ecclesiae quae, in alio loco sita tituloque parochiali non gaudens, annectitur ecclesiae parochiali; 3. Ecclesiae loci parochialem titulum habentis, sed, penuriae sacerdotum causa, parochum proprium residentem non possidentis ad tempus.”

“Vi suae institutionis, talis parochus singulis dominicis ac festis diebus bis celebrat, nempe in sua ecclesia parochiali, sed permanenter ecclesiae parochiali annexa ut dicitur. Inde sequitur ut idem omnino nequeat missam celebrare dominicis ac festis diebus in tertia ecclesia, nempe parochiae ejus ad tempus curam habet. Cum tamen ei parochiae, in qua non residet, invigilare teneatur tum ad visitandos aegrotantes, tum ad catechizandos pueros ac multa alia munia adimplenda. Quaeremus: 1. An talis sacerdos debeat supplere missas quas pro sua secunda parochia non potest celebrare diebus dominicis ac festis; 2. An debeat alterutram ex missis, quas celebrat, ut dictum est, singulis dominicis ac festis, applicare simul pro utraque parochia; 3. An debeat applicare huic parochiae missa privata, quae in ecclesia annexa sine titulo parochiali celebratur?”

“Cum evenerit ut plures sacerdotes bona fide pro sua secunda paroecia non celebraverint, ut in casu postulamus, ut ipsis, suae omissiones si necesse sit condonentur.”

“R.—Ad I. Affirmative, nisi quod optandum foret ut secundam missam celebraret in secunda paroecia.”

Ad II. Non licere.

Ad III. Affirmative,

Die 24 Julii 1886.”

The obligation of a P.P. in respect to the “Missa Pro Populo” is here distinctly reiterated; and that obligation being relative is only circumscribed by the extent or limit of his charge; so that, if he is in the position of one shepherd placed over two flocks within one fold he owes a duty to each section if that subdivision had been *once* a parish with covenanted spiritual rights.

I use the word *covenanted* advisedly, because it will shorten my

labour when I come to draw on theologians and canonists for support and light.

Let us waive this point for a little, and come directly to the hypothetical position. Some will be disposed to say that the flock *hic et nunc* under the P.P. is morally one and cannot be regarded in a distributed sense after incorporation. I admit the territorial union; and even the "*beneficia unita*." I will further allow that the P.P. is not only administering but actually has canonically the "*cura animarum*" within the territory allotted to him. All those points however do not together or separately put in abeyance the particular and specific right of the application of a "*singula missa pro singulis parochiis*," as Lehmkuhl states, for which assertion he takes his stand on a Decree of S. C. C. March 1771.

This learned author is very decided on the two-fold obligation of a pastor charged with the enlarged responsibility implied in such a case as we are considering. He says, "*Cui vero plena cura pastoralis competit; ille pro parte gregis sibi commissi sacrificia offerre absolute debet*." The italics are employed by the author. And in the same article, paragraph V. he writes. "*Imo si parochus duarum parochiarum administratio committitur debet aut per se aut per alterum curare ut pro singulis parochiis singulae missae applicentur*."

From the above it would appear that the learned Jesuit Father does not seem to think that corporate union dispenses with the particular right to Mass enjoyed by each community, previous to incorporation.

Moreover the obligation, by which a pastor is bound, of saying Mass for his flock or flocks is in proportion to the *finis praecepti* and this being a "*lex affirmativa* ;—*requiritur faciendi id quod praecipitur*."

The various grounds which concurrently stamp this obligation as one of a very grave character, seem to call for a very strict interpretation of its signification. Thus—*ratione officii*; *jure naturali*; *ex charitate*, *jure divino*; and "*ratione curae animarum*." (Trid. Sess. 22). We need not then be surprised at the solicitude with which modern theologians in particular discuss the particular case under review. We again find Craisson in his lucid "*Manuale Juris Canonici*" pointedly putting this question "*An parochus qui duas parochias regit et ideo bis in die celebrat, utrique parochiae suam missam applicare teneatur, non obstante reddituum exiguitate*," "*Affirmative*."

Craisson writes very diffusely "*de vera notione parochi et parochiae*," but having quoted him so far already I will leave your readers to examine that chapter for themselves and I expect they will find a good deal to be placed to my account.

It is time for me to bring my remarks to a close, and in summing up I can appropriately quote Fr. Ballerini:—*clarum et venerabile nomen*—"Parochus duabus parochiis praepositus duplicem Missam recurrentibus festis tenetur applicare nisi unio duarum parochiarum sit plenaria et extinctiva ita ut ex duabus ecclesia parochialibus una prorsus ob extinctionem tituli alterius evaserit." At length we arrive at the *crux* of the question. Ballerini lays down the absolute condition according to which corporate union makes a change in the general law, but how far that applies to our national case is a point I must postpone for the present. I have found bishops when collating parishes to use language in their official documents as—"the united parishes" of so and so. Now the historico-theological question is whether such *uniones* are *plenariae et extinctivae*?

But to exhaust this subject or even to deal with it fairly would require a volume and not the narrow compass of a letter.

With great respect I beg to remain

Your obedient Servant,

G. J. GOWING, P.P.

Kill, Co. Kildare.

[The decision of the 21st of July, 1886, in no way alters the clear teaching of theologians regarding the pastoral obligations of offering Mass on Sundays and Feasts of obligation for each separate parish of which the pastor has charge.

The case made was this: A priest has charge of two parishes which are *not* united. One of them is his own parish in which there are two churches—a parochial and an auxiliary church, and the pastor is wont to say Mass on Sundays and Holidays of obligation in each of these churches.

The other parish is one which is temporarily vacant, and the charge of which is entrusted to the pastor of the neighbouring parish.

The S. Congregation says:—

1. That Mass should be offered for the people of each of the two parishes on Sundays and Holidays.

2. That this should be done, even though the allowance for the pastoral care of the parish is miserably small.

3. That it is not allowable to offer the same Mass for both parishes in discharge of the twofold obligation.

4. That the second Mass should be said in the parochial church of the second parish, rather than in the auxiliary church of the first parish.

Ballerini, quoting the S. Congregation of the 11th of March, 1774, in the words cited by our correspondent, states clearly the nature of the parish priest's obligation in regard to two or more parishes of which he has the pastoral charge:—

"Parochus duabus parochiis praepositus duplicem Missam recurrentibus festis tenetur applicare nisi unio duarum parochiarum sit *plenaria et extinctiva*, ita ut ex duabus Ecclesiis parochialibus una prorsus ob extinctionem tituli alterius evaserit."

The bishop is the competent authority to decide whether the union is complete.—Ed. I. E. R.]

THE SIGN SYSTEM *VERSUS* THE ORAL SYSTEM OF TEACHING
THE DEAF AND DUMB.

VERY REV. AND DEAR MR. EDITOR,—I see in this month's number of *THE RECORD* an elaborate, and somewhat lengthy communication from the respected Chaplain of the Boston-Spa Institution for the Deaf and Dumb, Yorkshire, England, commenting on a paper from me in the number of February last, on the Oral System of teaching the deaf and dumb. The communication calls for a rejoinder, but as I happen to be just now away from home, and expect to be absent for some little time yet, I must defer what I have to say for your September issue, merely observing for the present, that I am glad to have elicited the criticisms of so able an advocate of a system I have ventured to call into question, as the controversial treatment of a subject so practical and important, and, at the same time so interesting to a benevolent public, cannot but do much good by putting its merits and demerits in comparison with the time-honoured system of methodic signs.

I have the honour to remain, Very Rev. and dear Mr. Editor, most respectfully yours,

THE AUTHOR OF "CLAIMS OF THE UNINSTRUCTED DEAF-MUTES TO BE ADMITTED TO THE SACRAMENTS."

DOCUMENTS.

LETTER OF S. CONGREGATION OF THE HOLY OFFICE TO THE
CARDINAL ARCHBISHOP OF STRIGONIA ON THE SUBJECT
OF MIXED MARRIAGES.

SUMMARY.

The Holy Office insists on the Catholic education of all the children of the marriage, and the removal of the danger of perversion of the Catholic party by exact compliance with the usual conditions prescribed by the Holy See.

Eminentissime ac Reverendissime Domine.

Quae ab Eminentia tua Rma nomine etiam aliorum Episcoporum exposita fuerunt de nova lege in isto Hungarico Regno sancita quoad religiosam institutionem et educationem prolis ex mixtis connubiis provenientis, Eminentissimorum una mecum Inquisitorum Generalium animum vehementer commoverunt. Probe enim intellexeretur praesentissimum fidei aeternaeque salutis discrimen, cui tot animae exinde objicerentur, tum graves angustias et detrimenta, quae

parantur sacris Ecclesiae Catholicae ministris. Hinc Emmi Patres optassent quidem quam maxime viam aliquam reperire, qua et fidei pericula amoveri, et simul Clerus catholicus ab imminente vexatione subtrahi posset; verum, re mature perpensa illud summopere urgendum eique instandum censuerunt, ut quod zelus sacerdotalis sacris Hungariae Antistitibus jam suggesserat, nunc post latam hanc legem eo magis curetur totis viribus, ut fideles a mixtis nuptiis contrahendis avertantur, atque omnino deterreantur. Etenim ad remedium quod attinet ab Eminentia tua propositum, obtinendi nempe a S. Apostolica Sede facultatem, qua vobis liceat cum sponso vel sponsa catholica in vetito mixtae religionis nupturientium dispensare, et benedictionem etiam nuptialem impertiri in iis saltem ineundorum mixtorum matrimoniorum casibus, in quibus, ex recte cognita partis catholicae, imo utriusque sponsi mente et voluntatis dispositione sperari potest fore, ut catholica educatio pro posse tribuantur proli etiam illi, quae vi legis civilis haud catholice educanda foret etiamsi sua forma sive baptismo hac intentione impertito, sive alio actu externo ad Ecclesiae sinum non reciperetur; illud tale visum est Emmis Patribus, ut ab eadem S. Apostolica Sede nedum permitti, sed neque tolerari unquam possit. Profecto novit Eminentia tua, Ecclesiam numquam permittere, imo neque permittere posse mixtarum nuptiarum celebrationem, nisi graves causae canonicae concurrant, et nisi opportuna exhibeantur cautiones, quarum virtute a conjuge catholico amoveatur perversionis periculum, et provideatur catholicae institutioni ac educationi prolis universae. Quae quidem catholica doctrina a Summis Pontificibus saepissime enunciata est et declarata in iis etiam concessionibus, in quibus illos indulgentiae se limites attigisse professi sunt, quos praetergredi nefas omnino sit. Ut alii Pontifices praetereantur, Pius VIII. s. m. in litteris Apostolicis ad Archiepiscopum Coloniensem ejusque suffraganeos die 25 mart. 1830 datis gravissime inculcat: "Nostis autem Ven. fratres, ipsas omnes cautiones eo spectare, ut hac in re naturales divinaeque leges sartae tectae habeantur; quandoquidem exploratum est, catholicas personas, seu viros seu mulieres, quae nuptias cum a catholicis ita contrahunt, ut se aut futuram sobolem periculo perversionis temere committant, non modo canonicas violare sanctiones, sed directe etiam gravissimeque in naturalem atque divinam legem peccare. Atque exinde jam intelligitis, nos quoque gravissimi coram Deo et Ecclesia criminis reos fore, si circa nuptias hujusmodi istis in regionibus contrahendas illa a vobis aut a parochis vestrarum dioecesium fieri assentiremur, per quae si non verbis, factis tamen ipsis indiscriminatim approbarentur." Quin etiam s. m. Gregorius XVI. ad ipsos Hungariae Episcopos

praedecessores vestros in litteris, quibus parem extremorum limitum indulgentiam ad istud Regnum extendit, idem omnino divinum jus asseruit de cautionibus in ipsa divina et naturali lege fundatis, in quam procul dubio gravissime peccat, quisquis se vel futuram sobolem perversionis periculo temere committi. Atque tandem jussu Pii IX. s. m. ad omnes Archiepiscopos Episcopos et Ordinarios di 15 nov. anni 1858 disertis verbis edictum est: "Quae quidem cautiones remitti seu dispensari numquam possunt, cum in ipsa naturali ac divina lege fundentur quam Ecclesia et haec S. Sedes sartam tectamque tueri omni studio contendit, et contra quam sine ullo dubio gravissime peccant, promiscuis hisce nuptiis temere contrahendis se ac prolem exinde suscipiendam perversionis periculo committunt." Secundum hanc doctrinam S. Apostolica Sedes semper constanterque retinuit atque retineret, nullomodo in vetito mixtae religionis fas esse dispensare, nisi singulis in casibus praeter causas canonicas simul concurrant tres conditiones sequentes, videlicet: 1. Ut partes, et praesertim haeretica, veras cautiones praestiterint, quibus se coram Ecclesia obligent ad ea, quae ab iisdem eadem Ecclesia exigit; inter quae praecipuum locum tenet catholica educatio universae omnino prolis absque ulla exceptione sive restrictione; 2. Ut superior ecclesiasticus moralem certitudinem habeat sive de cautionum sinceritate pro praesenti, sive de earumdem adimplemento pro futuro; 3. Ut cautionis exhibitio notoria sit, vel saltem talis esse possit ad omne scandalum removendum.

"Quae cum ita sint, nulla ratione fieri potest, ut spes illa, quae unice in bona voluntatis contrahentium dispositione fundatur, verarum cautionum locum tenere valeat, tum quia reapse contrahentes nullam coram Ecclesia obligationem assumerent, tum quia haec spes in praesenti rerum conditione, prout ab Eminentia tua descripta est, non excludit, imo supponit prolem nascituram, quae sequitur sexum parentis haeretici, a ministro sectae baptizandam ac institutione eidem sectae adscribendam esse; quae res non solum totam rationem cautionum pro Ecclesia subverteret, sed cautionem constitueret pro haeresi. Ex his necessario consequitur, fas non esse in expositis rerum adjunctis benedictionem nuptialem impertiri. Si enim absque consuetis cautionibus numquam licet super vetito mixtae religionis dispensare, multo minus licitum esse poterit sacro benedictionis ritu talia matrimonia honestare, quae juxta inconcussam Ecclesiae doctrinam legi non solum ecclesiasticae, sed naturali atque divinae omnino adversantur.

Quare Emmi Patres, postquam declararunt valde commendandum esse istius Hungarici Regni Episcoporum zelum ab ea, quae circa

gravissimum hoc argumentum jam ab ipsis acta sunt, sive Dei et Ecclesiae jura in publicis Regni Comitibus defendendo et propugnando, sive praesertim promovendo fidelium instructionem et inculcando sinceram Ecclesiae doctrinam quoad mixta connubia; necessarium omnino judicarunt, ut Episcopi de dispensationibus super impedimento mixtae religionis requisiti, eas nullomodo concedant, nisi prius a partibus et praesertim a parte heterodoxa consuetae cautiones exhibitae fuerint. Nam lex civilis prohibet quidem conjugii haeretico, ne filios respectivi sui sexus catholicae Ecclesiae baptizandos et educandos tradat, sed nullam eidem poenam comminatur, si prohibitioni contravenerit, adeoque pars haeretica nullam difficultatem habere poterit sive in praestandis requisitis cautionibus, sive in iis adimplendis. Tota difficultas se habet ex parte Parochorum, contra quos revera poena statuta fuit; sed pro spectata eorum religione dubitandum non est, quin poenas patienter potius sustinere parati sint, quam proprio officio et ministerio deesse. Quamobrem Parochis praecipiant, ne praetextu vitandi poenas a lege civili sancitas contra sacerdotes in Ecclesiae sinum recipientes eos, quos ipsa eadem civilis lex sectis haeticorum devovet, aliquem respuant sive a baptismo, sive a catholica educatione, sive a caeteris Sacramentis; quinimo iisdem Parochis imponant, ut invigilent, ac mediis opportunis et prudentibus satagant inducere parentes in mixto matrimonio viventes ad servandas et implendas promissiones datas. Si quando vero connubium sine cautionibus necessariis initum fuerit, non propterea conjugem catholicum negligant, sibi quae ac suo peccato relinquunt, sed studeant eum ad poenitentiam adducere, ut suae obligationi quoad catholicam educationem prolis quantum potest satisfaciatur: quod quandiu non proestiterit, aut saltem sincere promiserit, Sacramentis suscipiendis utique imparatus censeri debet; omnem denique dent operam, ne umquam accidat aliquem perire ex suorum ministrorum incuria et negligentia. Interea opportunum erit, ut Episcopi collatis prius inter se consiliis, concorditer ad Apostolicam Sedem recursum habeant, et ab instando ad regia comitia numquam cessent, ut rei catholicae in tam grave discrimen adductae efficaciter consulatur.

Haec Emme et Rmme Dne, postulationi exhibitae respondenda censuerunt Emmi Inquisitores Generales, quae eorum nomine caeteris Episcopis et Ordinariis istius Regni erunt ab Emma tua communicanda.

Interim quo par est obsequio ejusdem Emmae tuae manus humillime deosculor.

Romae, ex S. Congreg. S. Officii die 21 jul. 1880.

P. Card. CATERINI, *Praef.*

DECREE OF THE S. CONGREGATION OF THE COUNCIL REGARDING
THE PASTORAL OBLIGATION OF OFFERING MASS PRO POPULO.

SUMMARY.

1. A pastor has charge of two entirely distinct parishes, one is his own parish, the other is a neighbouring parish of which he has only temporary charge. He is bound to have Mass offered on Sundays and Holidays of obligation for the people of each of the parishes, even though the revenue he receives for his care of the second parish is very inadequate.

2. In his own parish there are two churches—one the parochial and the other an auxiliary church, and he is wont to say Mass on Sundays in each church. When the charge of the second parish is put upon him, he is recommended to say the second Mass in the parochial church of the second parish, rather than in the auxiliary church of his own parish.

3. It is not allowable to offer the same Mass for both parishes in discharge of his double obligation.

DIVIONEN. MISSAE PRO POPULO

Die 24 Julii 1886.

Per summaria precum.

Compendium Facti. Ordinarius dioecesis Divionensis in Gallia Apostolicae Sedi exposuit: “Pro insufficienti sacerdotum numero in dioecesi Divionensi, non raro accidit, ut idem parochus tribus ecclesiis inserviat, nempe: 1. suae propriae parochiae; 2. modo permanenti alteri ecclesiae, quae in alio loco sita tituloque parochiali non gaudens annectitur ecclesiae parochiali; 3. ecclesiae loci, parochialem titulum habentis, sed, penuriae sacerdotum causâ, parochum proprium residentem non possidentis, *ad tempus*.”

“Vi suae institutionis talis parochus singulis dominicis ac festis diebus bis celebrat, nempe in sua ecclesia parochiali et in altera ecclesia non parochiali, sed permanenter ecclesiae parochiali annexa, ut dicitur. Inde sequitur ut idem omnino nequeat missam celebrare, dominicis ac festis diebus in tertia ecclesia, nempe parochiae cujus ad tempus curam habet. Cum tamen ei parochiae, in qua non residet, invigilare teneatur, tum ad visitandos aegrotantes, tum ad catechizandos pueros ac multa alia munia adimplenda, ducentos francos pro supra memoratis functionibus a gubernio Gallico recipit.”

“Quaerimus 1. an talis sacerdos debeat supplere missas quas pro sua secunda parochia non potest celebrare, diebus dominicis ac festis,

attenta etiam ea circumstantia quod dicta pensio ducentorum francorum vix remuneraret supradicta munia, ambabus parochiis inter se multum distantibus; 2. an debeat alterutram ex missis, quas celebrat, ut dictum est, singulis dominicis ac festis, applicare simul pro utraque parocchia; 3. an debeat applicare huic parochiae, missâ privatâ, eam missam quae in ecclesia annexa sine titulo parochiali celebratur.”

“Cum evenerit ut plures sacerdotes bonâ fide pro sua secunda parocchia non celebraverint, ut in casu, postulamus, ut ipsis, suae omissiones si necesse sit condonentur.”

Resolutio. Sacra C. Concilii, re cognitâ, sub die 21 Julii 1886, censuit respondere: “Ad I. Affirmative, nisi quod optandum foret, ut secundam Missam celebraret in secunda parocchia. Ad. II, Non licere. Ad. III. Affirmative si in secunda parocchia celebrare non potest, facto verbo cum SSmo etiam quoad sanationem quoad praeteritum.”

DECREE OF THE S. CONGREGATION OF INDULGENCES REGARDING THE ROSARY.

SUMMARY.

One is not to add the Sacred Name at the end of the “Holy Mary” to gain the indulgence of five years and five quarantines.

De Indulgentia concessa Confratribus SS. Rosarii profereantibus nomen Jesu in Angelica Salutatione.

ORDINIS PRAEDICATORUM.

Cum inter Christifideles quorundam locorum invaluerit pia consuetudo invocandi SS num Nomen Jesus in fine Angelicae Salutationis immediate post *Amen*, dicendo: *Nunc et in hora mortis nostrae. Amen. Jesu*: dubium occurrit circa Indulgentias quinque annorum totidemque quadragenarum Sodalibus Smi Rosarii concessas, qui in fine uniuscujusque *Ave Maria Nomen Jesus pronuntiabunt*; uti in summario Indulgent. § IX. n. 3 a S. Congregatione Indulgentiis Sacrisque Reliquiis praeposita recognito, ac a s. m. Pio IX. approbato 18 Septembris 1862. Sunt enim qui putant, Indulgentias illas non fuisse concessas Confratribus Sanctissimi Rosarii invocantibus Nomen Jesus in fine, idest, absoluta *Ave Maria* post *Amen*, addito *Jesu*. Quapropter hodiernus Procurator Generalis Ordinis Praedicatorum votis plurimorum Fratrum et Sororum sui Ordinis obsecundans, ad majorem gloriam Smi Nominis Jesus in quo tota salus nostra pendet, atque

incrementum pietatis ergo Ipsum : sequens dubium proponit et humilimas porrigit preces pro ejus solutione :

An Indulgentias, de quibus in praedicto Summario, illi lucrentur Confratres, qui Nomen Jesus pronunciant post verba *Benedictus fructus ventris tui* : vel qui idem SSmum Nomen pronunciant additum in fine uniuscujusque Ave Maria, dicendo : *Nunc et in hora mortis nostrae. Amen. Jesus?*

Sacra Congregatio Indulgentiis sacrisque Reliquiis praeposita die 29 Martii 1886 respondit :

Affirmative ad primam partem : Negative ad secundam.

Datum Romae ex Secretaria ejusdem S. Congregationis die et anno uti supra.

J. B. Card. FRANZELIN, *Praefectus.*
F. DELLA VOLPE, *Secretarius.*

DECREE OF THE S. CONGREGATION OF BISHOPS AND REGULARS
DECLARING THAT THE INSTITUTE OF THE TRAPPISTS IS
APPROVED BY THE HOLY SEE AS A PART OF THE CIS-
TERTIAN ORDER.

DUBIUM — Eme et Rme Domine,

Non pauci inveniuntur sacerdotes, etiam docti, quique per plures annos Romam incoluerunt, asserentes Monachos Trappenses tum antiquae reformationis de Rancé, tum recentioris sub regula S. Benedicti cum primitivis constitutionibus Cistercii, ambæ in distinctam congregationem constitutæ, nullo pacto esse approbatos, sed tantum a Sancta Sede toleratos, non obstante facultate vota solemnia profitendi eis restituta, vigore Rescripti apostolici diei 5 februarii 1868

Quum porro his disputationibus solvendi imparem me ingenue professus fuisssem, atque Dominum Reverendissimum Vicarium generalem dubius adissem, is mihi ultro asseruit Trappenses haud dubio esse approbatos, veluti pars et membra universi Ordinis Cisterciensis.

Cui demum oraculo iterum adversarii contradicentes, supplex igitur Eminentiam Vestram enixe adprecor, quatenus mihi anxio mentem suam circa propositum dubium aperire dignetur.

Hms, obseqms et addictms.

F. Leo, Prior Beatæ Mariæ Minoris Clarævallis in America septentrionali.

Die 22 junii 1886

Sacra Congregatio Emorum et Rmorum S. R. E. Cardinalium negotiis et consultationibus Episcoporum et Regularium preposita, super praemissis respondendum censuit, prout respondet: Pater Procurator generalis Congregationis B. M. de Trappa oratorem moneat ut acquiescat responso dato a R. P. Abbate Vicario generali suae Congregationis.

Datum Romae ex secretaria ejusdem Sacrae Congregationis. sub die 21 decembris 1886.

Concordat cum suo originali quod asservatur in archivio secretario Sac. Congreg. Episcoporum et Regularium.

Loco ✠ sigilli.—Romae, die 28 decembris 1886.

Aloysius, Episcopus Gallinicensis.

Concordat cum originali.—Romae, die 29 decembris 1886.—Fr. STANISLAUS, Procurator generalis B. M. de Trappa.

DECREE OF THE SACRED PENITENTIARY REGARDING THE MODE OF EXECUTING CERTAIN MATRIMONIAL DISPEN- SATIONS.

DUBIA quoad clausulas quibus utitur Dataria Apostolica in expediendis dispensationibus matrimonialibus.

Beatissime Pater,

Episcopus L. exponet quod inter novas clausulas, Dataria Apostolica in expediendis dispensationibus matrimonialibus utitur, invenitur quaedam tenoris sequentis: "Discretioni tuae committimus et mandamus, ut de praemissis te diligenter informes, et si vera sint exposita exponentes ab incestus reatu, sententiis et censuris, et poenis ecclesiasticis et temporalibus in utroque foro, imposita eis propter incestum hujusmodi poenitentia salutari, Auctoritate Nostra hac vice tantum per te sive per alium absolvas. Demum si tibi expediens videbitur quod dispensatio hujusmodi sit eis concedenda, cum eisdem exponentibus, remoto, quatenus adsit, scandalo, praesertim per separationem tempore tibi beneviso, si fieri poterit, Auctoritate nostra ex gratia speciali dispenses, prolem susceptam, si quae sit, et suscipiendam exinde legitimam decernendo." Hic quaeritur:

I. Utrum executor ad validitatem executionis quatuor teneatur ponere actus seu decreta distincta, id est actum primum, quo Parochum vel alium deleget ad verificationem causarum; actum secundum, quo executor sive per se, sive per alium, sponsis impertiatur

absolutionem, et pœnitentiam imponat; actum tertium, quo sponsis scandalum reparandum injungatur; actum quartum, quo dispensatio, et prolis legitimatio concedatur?

Et quatenus negative:

II. Utrum sufficiat ponere duos actus seu decreta, scilicet primum actum seu decretum quo parochus seu alius delegetur ad verificationem causarum; secundum actum seu decretum, quo sponsis sive per executorem, sive per alium impertiatur absolutio, et imponatur pœnitentia, scandalum reparandum injungatur, dispensatio concedatur, et prolis legitimatio; et quidem ita, ut dispensatio et legitimatio concessa intelligatur sub conditione, quod sponsi prius absolutionem obtinuerint et reparaverint scandalum?

III. Utrum ad validitatem executionis requiratur nova et canonica verificatio causarum vi litterarum apostolicarum instituenda, casuque Ordinarius de causis dispensationis exactam et per juratos testes habitam informationem ceperit antequam preces, pro obtinenda dispensatione, Sanctae Sedi porrexisset?

IV. Utrum verba (in utroque foro absolvas) ita intelligenda sint, ut requiratur duplex absolutio separatim impertienda, una scilicet in foro externo, alia in foro interno; an ista verba ita intelligenda sint, ut requiratur una tantum absolutio in foro externo impertienda, quae valeat etiam pro interno?

V. Utrum casu quo separatio sponsorum fieri possit, ad effectum reparandi scandalum, executor ad validitatem executionis separationem eisdem imponere debeat; vel an ad validitatem ejusmodi sufficiat ut executor aliis mediis efficacibus scandalum reparandum curet?

Sacra Poenitentiaria, propositis dubiis mature perpensis respondit;

Ad I^m. Providebitur in secundo.

Ad II^m. Sufficere, ita tamen ut dispensatio et legitimatio prolis ab ipso tantum executore effici possit.

Ad III^m. Negative.

Ad IV^m. Negative ad primam partem; affirmative ad secundam.

Ad V^m. Expedire ut scandalum removeatur per separationem, sed non prohiberi quominus alii modi adhibeantur qui prudenti judicio Ordinarii sufficiant ad illud removendum.

Datum Romae in Sacra Poenitentiaria, die 27 Aprilis 1886.

✠ F. SIMONESCHI,
Ep. P. Regens.

L. ✠ S.

A. RUBINI,
S. P. Secr. E.

DECREE REGARDING THE MATERIAL TO BE USED IN VESTMENTS.

Sancti Severini.—A. Rev. D. Francisco Mazzuoli Episcopo S. Severini insequentia dubia, italico idiomate expressa S. Rituum Congregationi pro opportuna declaratione proposita fuerunt, videlicet :

Se possa permettersi l'uso de sacri paramenti lavorati in tessuto
 1° *in tutta lana* ; 2° *in lana e cotone* ; 3° *in seta e cotone* ; 4° *in bavella e cotone* ; 5° *in tutta cotone*.

Et S. eadem Congregatio, referente Secretario, sic respondendum censuit : *Serventur decreta* in una Mutinem. diei 22 Septembris 1837 ad S. n. 3¹ et in una Senen. diei 1877 ad 5².

Atque ita respondit ac declaravit diei 15 Aprilis 1880.

NOTICES OF BOOKS.

MARRIAGE. By the Rev. Charles W. Wood. Manchester: J. Roberts and Sons, 1887.

THE Church in this age of ours seems to be threatened by a new danger. The so-called Reformation, casting aside contemptuously the sacramental character, and abolishing without ceremony the two essential properties—Unity and Indissolubility—of marriage, has already borne bitter fruit for the Christian family. The manifold evils and disorders from which the Church, by her action with regard to matrimony, had long preserved society, are now unhappily prevalent. In almost every land marriage is regarded by the civil authority as a purely civil contract ; by every sect outside the true fold it is recognized as such, and hence in our times we have to contend with the evils and dangers that spring from civil marriages.

Many, too, within the pale of the true Church often seem to forget the sacramental character of matrimony. They seem to be ignorant of the great graces given for the married life by this sacrament. Frequently they lose sight of the many dangers both before

¹ *Ibi* : “ Quæritur : Num Planetæ, Stola et Manipula possint confici ex tela lineæ, vel gossypio, vulgo *Percallo*, coloribus præscriptis tineta, aut depicta ? ” — Et S. Rit. Congr. respondit : “ Serventur Rubricæ et usus omnium Ecclesiarum, quæ hujusmodi Casulas non admittunt.”

² *Qu.* : “ An Planetæ ex lana confectæ permittantur ? ” Et S. Rit. Congr. respondit : “ Usus Ecclesiarum laneas casulas non admittit.”

and after marriage. We see ill-considered marriages, mixed marriages, irreligious marriages, and often we are brought face to face with the far reaching evils of such unions.

Fr. Wood in his work on Marriage discusses these manifold evils, and suggests practical solutions of the difficulties against which a missionary priest will very often have to contend.

The work is a development of an essay on the sanctity of Christian marriage read at the November Conference of the Salford clergy. Those who heard it at once desired that the essay should be published, and the present volume is the outcome of that general wish.

This book on Marriage is divided into three parts. The first part is doctrinal. The third part contains a collection of documents and legal and ecclesiastical forms. An extract from Balmez on the influence of the Church in the formation of Christendom, and three discourses delivered by Père Monsabré during the Lent of 1887, bring the work to a close. The second part—the principal one—is a clear statement of the Conference case from which the book before us has grown. Perhaps we could not indicate the general purport of the entire volume in a better manner than by giving at length the Conference case:—

ON THE SANCTITY OF MARRIAGE.

Titius is in charge of a large mission, and is deeply concerned for the souls committed to his care. He is much struck with the appalling evils arising from the low estimate in which the sanctity of marriage is held. He hears of marriages taking place in the Registrar's office and in the Protestant Church. He is constantly harassed with *mixed marriages*, and the majority of marriages which take place in his Church are unsatisfactory, owing chiefly, he thinks, to the people's ignorance of the greatness of the sacrament, and of the duties it involves.

This abuse bears bitter fruit, for the children of such marriages must, like their parents, be irreligious. They are to be found in Board schools and Protestant schools; and after the years of schooling are passed, they are lost sight of, until perhaps they themselves come to present themselves for marriage.

Titius, previously disturbed in his conscience, asks the following questions:—

I. Can he, in conscience, allow these evils in reference to Christian marriage to continue without making special efforts to check them?

II. He is told that people must be instructed; upon what points should he instruct parents in their duties to children, with a view to preventing irreligious marriages?

How should he treat parents in the tribunal of penance with the same view?

III. What points of instruction should he choose when speaking in the pulpit—

(1) On the subject of Christian marriage?

(2) As to the remote preparation for marriage, *e.g.*, company-keeping?

(3) As to the immediate preparation for marriage?

IV. How should he deal in Confession with those who keep company?

V. What must he do with those who are keeping company with Protestants?

Father Wood treats each question at length. He gives us in his treatise valuable instruction. He traces for us in simple, earnest language the influence we are to use, the method of proceeding we are to adopt in order to procure holy marriages of parents, fitting education of children, and, in fine, the holy marriage of these children. The writer evidently has had experience; he speaks not like one who knows of the dangers and difficulties he treats of but from books; his knowledge is manifestly gained from the everyday observation of a zealous priest. We meet with no novelties, nothing startling. Every conclusion arrived at, every advice given bears conviction to the mind of the reader. The preacher who is often at a loss to collect suitable material for a much-needed yet difficult subject, will find this volume replete with suggestive thoughts. The confessor, perplexed at times, will value this treatise on Marriage as a book from which he may in difficulties draw information and guidance. The laity may look to this book as to one by which their estimate of the Great Sacrament will be raised. No one can peruse it, no matter how cursorily, without gaining much from the perusal. To all we can recommend this work as one in which useful instruction is conveyed. The author has conveyed to us that information in a manner certain to be appreciated by the reader. Brief synopses of the subject-matter precede the chapters, and are interspersed through the paragraphs. An index of the more important works is given at the end of the volume.

As we are sure the work will meet with a rapid sale, might we be allowed to suggest that, if the author could insert a chapter dealing with dispensations, and the manner to be adopted in obtaining them, he would render a very useful work yet more useful.

HANDBOOK OF THE HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY, by Dr. Albert Stöckl. Part I. Pre-Scholastic Philosophy. Translated by T. A. Finlay, S.J., M.A. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

FATHER FINLAY has done a substantial service to English Catholic literature by translating Dr. Stöckl's profound and ably written History of Philosophy. Now-a-days many books are published that are never wanted. Some are published before the need for them is felt, while to a very few belongs the privilege of supplying at their first appearance a keenly-felt want. To this last class belongs the translation, the first part of which is before us.

Anyone desirous of acquiring even an elementary knowledge of philosophy must make himself in some degree acquainted with the history of philosophy. Now, for Catholic students in these countries no text book of the history of philosophy, at once reliable and handy, hitherto existed. A few years ago, it is true, Vallet's *Histoire de la Philosophie* was published, but many who wish to study philosophy, and whose prospects require them to do so, are not sufficiently acquainted with French to enable them to profit by the use of works bearing on philosophy written in that language. Translations of Tenneman, of Schwegler, and of Ueberweg, have been published at different times within the past half century, but these works, as Father Finlay points out with regard to one of them, are not suited for Catholics. Most students of philosophy know Latin, but in that language as far as we know, there exists no history of philosophy that exactly meets the wants of Catholics in these countries. For the brief outlines of the history of philosophy given as an appendix to such works as Rothenflue's *Institutiones Philosophicæ*, and the old Sulpice Tract, cannot be looked upon as satisfactory. The writers of such sketches did not propose to themselves to trace the connexion between the different philosophical systems, nor did they attempt to point out such special features in the personal characteristics of certain philosophers, or in the circumstances of the times in which they lived, as may have contributed to bring about the great revolutions in the development of speculative thought.

The want of a good History of Philosophy written in English and from a Catholic standpoint has therefore for a long time existed, and has especially in recent years been very keenly felt. Now, however, such a book had become an absolute necessity. Father Finlay's translation has not therefore to create a demand for itself.

Dr. Stöckl's book, as the translator tells us, is largely used in the Catholic schools of Germany. For many years Germany has been the

centre of educational activity. A sufficient proof of the utility and thoroughness of the work then is to be found in its use in German schools. The volume before us treats of pre-Scholastic Philosophy. Beginning with the earliest indications of speculation, the author in this part of his work reviews the philosophico-religious systems of the Chinese, the Hindus and the Medo-Persians. He traces the rise and development of Greek philosophy from its first rude beginnings with Thales and Anaximander, down to its crowning glories in the elaborate and beautiful, if defective, systems of Plato and Aristotle, and finally he places before his readers an account of the struggle between Pagan philosophy and the Gospel, between "Athens and Jerusalem," between "the Church and the Academy," and tells them how some of the early Christians, as Tertullian, utterly abhorred the ancient philosophy, while others, as Clement of Alexandria regarded it as St. Paul regarded the Mosaic law as *παιδαγωγὸς εἰς τὸν Χριστόν*.

Dr. Stöckl is himself a true philosopher, and recognises, as every philosopher who seeks for truth and not for notoriety must, that revelation must guide and restrain his speculations. Speaking of the philosophers of the Christian period he says—

"Some have fallen in with the ordinances of God, have submitted to divine revelation, and in submission to it as the guiding principle of their inquiries, have sought to penetrate the truth more profoundly, and to establish it on a more unassailable foundation. Following this path they have achieved the most brilliant successes, the system which such thinkers have built up being the most imposing with which the history of Philosophy has furnished us.

"Others again have followed a course at variance with the divinely established order. . . . The philosophic movements begun by them have led always, in course of due development, to far reaching errors, and have at length lost themselves in Scepticism and Materialism." (Page 7.)

Father Finlay's name is a sufficient guarantee that his part of the work has been well done. It is sometimes difficult to render German and especially the German of philosophical works, into intelligible English. This difficult task Father Finlay has very successfully accomplished, and has earned for himself the gratitude of students not merely for giving them a translation of a highly important work, but for giving them a clear and readable translation of it. Let us express a hope that the remaining parts of the work will soon follow.

We noticed a few trifling errors of the press in glancing through this volume. On page 193, we read, "Some writers—Tertullian for example—did much *effort* to this." On page 211, "but the latter *He* only a creature" and on page 196 "they carried their arbitrary treatment of the *Scriptures* so far as to reject portions of *it* altogether."

D. O'L.

SHAMROCKS. By Katharine Tynan. London: Kegan Paul, Trench, & Co.

The many readers who admired Miss Tynan's previous volumes, will be curious to see whether in this book of *Shamrocks* her early promise is fulfilled. We think it is, fairly; the present volume is not unlike its predecessors, and contains, at least, one poem of pathos and power.

Miss Tynan was always best at description. We find in *Shamrocks* the same rich word-painting of scenery and, indeed, of all objects of sense. Her pages glow with the colours of sea and sky, of hill and flower; they thrill with the music of birds, of streams, and of the human voice. Many specimens might be quoted; we must be content with one,—a description of the song of “Lir's lonely Daughter”:—

“The voice was a woman's voice, all passionate fair,
Full of pleading and pain—
Singing, soaring, thrilling the earth and the air,
Falling like golden rain;
Drawing the heart from the breast, and an anguish of tears
From eyes that never had wept.
I stood as one of the dead, and, unknowing of fears,
My pulses a stillness kept.”

Another of the strong points of our poetess is her keen sympathy with all that is sensitive in human joy and sorrow. She is so far a poet of sense; the intellectual may come yet. We have in *Shamrocks* one fine example of what she can do in this way,—perhaps the best poem that ever dropped from her pen. It is too long to quote it entire; and it is all too closely connected to allow us to quote a part. These who read “The Dead Mother” will confess that Miss Tynan has true poetic genius.

In many of the descriptive pieces we have remarked a recurrence of certain peculiar words and phrases, the frequency of which, if not guarded against, might tend to a suspicion of poverty of thought or of expression. We noticed, also, what appeared to us imperfections both of rhyme and of metre; but really metre has become so irregular of late, it would be almost impossible to say what is metrically imperfect now. Nor do we wish to be ungenerous to a lady who never forgets her religion in her poetry, and who draws some of her finest inspiration from the legendary poems of Erin.

WALTER McDONALD.

THE NAMES OF THE EUCHARIST. By Luigi Lanzoni. A Translation from the Italian, with an Introduction by Dr. Hedley, Bishop of Newport and Menevia. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

Devout worshippers of Jesus Christ in the Blessed Sacrament will hail with satisfaction a translation into English of *The Names of the Eucharist* by Father Luigi Lanzoni, the Superior-General of the Institute of Charity, a little work which at the time of its publication last year by its gifted author attracted considerable attention, and won golden opinions not less amongst the learned than amongst the pious of Italy. For while embodying with deep theological learning the precious deposit of Catholic faith and tradition with respect to the great mystery of the Blessed Eucharist, the little instructions suggested in turn by one of the many beautiful names of the Eucharist which have been handed down to us by Christian tradition, are treated with a sweet unction which simply carries away the heart with love for Jesus Christ in the Sacrament of His tender love. Shakespear asks, with no little depth of meaning, What is there in a name? and our author in his preface well observes, that "names contain the philosophy of things, and the extraordinary wealth of names applied by Christian tradition to the greatest of the Sacraments lays the lines of a complete treatise on the Eucharistic mysteries."

Wishing, however, to commend to the faith and piety of English readers so precious a little work, for which we have to thank Father Cormack who has given us a very creditable translation, no other praise need be added to that of Dr. Hedley, Bishop of Newport and Menevia, under whose inspiration and encouragement the book is now published in English, gracefully adorned and honoured by a truly beautiful introduction from his Lordship's own pen. The Bishop writes: "It is a privilege to be permitted to introduce to the English-speaking public such a book as this. The writer, the learned and amiable General of the Institute of Charity, has chosen the happiest of subjects; and his translator, the Rev. Father Cormack, of the same Institute, has given a faithful and idiomatic version of a most charming book. The title, *The Names of the Eucharist*, suggests such a variety of thought and such wealth of devotion, that we may well wonder it has never been used before. The author's idea has been to take some thirty "Names" which are used in speaking of the great Sacrament and Sacrifice, beginning with 'Eucharist' and ending with 'Holy Viaticum,' and to write a short devotional commentary on each. This he has done with much knowledge of Holy

Scripture and of the Fathers, and with a pleasing and pious unction, so as not only to instruct the mind, but elevate the heart to Almighty God." The Bishop then, at considerable length, enquires how it is possible that with such a Sacrament in our midst there should be comparatively so little tender devotion amongst those who yet believe in the Real Presence—so few to attend daily Mass, so few to visit their Lord in His Sacrament of love, so few to occupy themselves with the adornment of His house, of His altar, and of all that belongs to the altar—a work which should indeed be to every Catholic a proud labour of love. "The very presence of a church in our neighbourhood," says his Lordship, "ought to be felt in the whole of our daily life. The sight of the tower or roof of a Catholic church on a journey should naturally bring to our lips the 'Tantum Ergo,' or the 'Ave Verum.' A procession of the Blessed Sacrament should find us proudly following the Sacred Host. When the 'Forty Hours' are being held, we should be glad to make any alteration whatever in our arrangements and habits for the sake of publicly and deliberately showing our allegiance to the King of the earth. No other way of acting is logically possible to a Catholic; and no other, we may add, can possibly be understood by a non-Catholic.

"These thoughts," Dr. Hedley goes on to observe, "have been suggested by a book which is in truth a panorama of Eucharistic devotion. For a name is a picture, and the names of the Eucharist touch every point of its human and divine interest. The names of the Blessed Eucharist are countless. Holy Scripture, the Fathers, the Martyrs, the days of persecution, the ages of faith, the devotion of later times, have all added some mystical word to that long list which in vain tries to put into human utterance all that the Blessed Sacrament is to man. The little treatise," concludes the Bishop, "is a worthy and welcome addition to our devotional books, and will certainly do its part in dissipating those clouds of ignorance and negligence which too effectually hide that sacred Sun, whose influence should warm and fertilise this earth of ours."

CONVERSATIONS ON THE BLESSED SACRAMENT. A Preparation for First Communion. Edited by Very Rev. J. B. Bagshawe, D.D., Canon Penitentiary of Southwark. London: St. Anselm's Society, 5, Agar-street, Strand.

The day of First Communion is among the most important days in one's life, as it surely ought to be the happiest. But to have it productive of most good it is necessary to prepare well for it. That

preparation should consist chiefly in laying the solid foundation, like a wise architect, of sound Christian and Catholic principles in the young unformed mind.

We welcome the *Conversations on the Blessed Sacrament* as a contribution to this most important subject, and we welcome it all the more because it is written in the easy natural style of conversation.

A mother and her two daughters take part in these conversations; the younger daughter is eleven years, and is considered by her confessor old enough for First Communion; the elder is sixteen, is already well instructed, and has read some controversial works. A Protestant relative, who is dissatisfied with her present state joins in the conversations. She is inclined to become a Catholic, but, like so many others, the doctrine of the Catholic Church on the Blessed Sacrament stands in the way.

The book is divided into four parts. The first part treats of the types of the Blessed Sacrament, and of the relations of the Old and New Law. The second part is controversial. It treats of the meaning of figurative language, and how the words of Institution are not figurative. The third part is chiefly Scriptural. It deals with the texts of St. Paul on the Blessed Sacrament. In this third part there are interesting conversations on the "Different Liturgies," "The use of Latin in the Mass," "Benediction and Devotions to the Blessed Sacrament." The fourth or practical part consists of the immediate "Preparation for Holy Communion."

Several controversial questions are introduced. Numbers of objections are urged; difficult texts of Scripture with the different explanations of Commentators are brought forward, yet, one would think, quite out of place in a book primarily intended to prepare a child eleven years, or thereabouts, for her First Communion. But one may find a reason for introducing them from the fact that a non-Catholic of more matured judgment takes part in the conversations, and puts the difficulties she is accustomed from childhood to have heard urged against the Real Presence. Besides, the children for whom these conversations are intended are those whose lot will be cast among non-Catholics, and it is right to have them well furnished with a ready means of giving, if required, an account of the Faith that is in them.

At the same time it would be misleading to act as if one were bound to go to the Bible for one's faith, or to make it the ordinary means by which the Christian revelation is made credible. Accord-

ingly, amidst the constant appeals to the Bible, we are pleased that a little conversation is devoted to show that one should have sufficient motives of credibility had one never seen the Bible; but we should be more pleased had the Catholic teaching—that the Church's living voice is the ordinary means appointed by Christ to bear witness to the truths of Revelation—got more prominence, as it surely should be reduced to practice, in the forming of a young Catholic mind.

For those who are engaged in the religious training of the young, this book will be found to be of much use, not only from the amount of information it contains, but also from the style which is truly conversational, and from the fact that it is the result of much experience in teaching.

J. C.

CATHOLIC TRUTH SOCIETY'S PUBLICATIONS., London:
18, West-square.

Volume I. of the *Catholic's Library of Tales and Poems* (Catholic Truth Society) is "good, readable, and cheap." The selections are varied and interesting. Such of them as are not written by Catholics have a Catholic tendency. Books of this kind are the need of the age.

The Church of Old England (Catholic Truth Society) is a collection of Papers at one time published separately but now presented to the public collectively. "They offer a ready and complete answer to the chief claims and objections set up by the Anglican Church in its endeavours to set itself off as Catholic," and, as such, need no recommendation.

Volume I. of the *Catholic Truth Society's Publications* contains the larger publications of the Society "in a form suitable for libraries, and convenient for reference." All the subjects treated are of great practical importance at the present day,

THE CHILDREN'S MASS, &c. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

Fr. Maher's *Children's Mass*, &c., consists of an accompaniment for the organ or harmonium for the voice part (already published) of the Music and Hymns used at the "Children's Mass." The little book contains also a Benediction service, an introduction "showing how the 'Children's Mass' should be conducted;" a synopsis of the subject matter: and a number of English Hymns.

Part II. of *Moore's Irish Melodies* (with Pianoforte accompaniments) and *Lalla Rookh* (The O'Connell Press series) are marvels of cheapness.

SELECT RECITATIONS. By Eleanor O'Grady. New York :
Benziger Brothers.

The object of the compiler of the *Select Recitations* is worthy of all praise. "That something more than taste," she writes in the preface, "and an acquaintance with our literature is necessary for the work [of preparing a book of Recitations for Catholic youth] is evident from the fact, that of the many volumes of Recitations published, scarcely one can be placed in the hands of our children without, in some way, offending faith or morals."

The present volume certainly meets this want in this respect, as nothing in the least objectionable is admitted into it. It contains over 100 pieces, and very many of them have the attraction of freshness about them—being drawn to a large extent from American poets.

LIFE OF LEO THE THIRTEENTH. By John Oldecastle.
London : Burns & Oates (Limited).

This is an interesting sketch of the Life of Pope Leo XIII. Mr. Oldecastle does not attempt to write a full biography, but with a few touches of his graphic pen he depicts the young student at the college of Noble Ecclesiastics at Rome, the youthful Governor of the Province of Benevento and of Spoleto, the Nuncio at Brussels, and the Cardinal Archbishop of Perugia, until he finally fixes the attention of the reader on the chief lineaments of the noble character of him who is the Head and glory of the Church, and the object of admiration to those outside the fold for his learning, statesmanship, and unceasing labour in the cause of the peace and social improvement of the nations.

The little book, which consists of about 120 pages, is enriched with a chapter by Cardinal Manning on Leo XIII., as successor of St. Peter, another by Fr. Anderdon on "The Pope's Muse," and a third by Miss Meynell on "The Pope's City."

Many who have little time for reading will be pleased to know that they can get through this interesting and instructive Life of Leo XIII. in an hour or two.

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

SEPTEMBER, 1887.

FRENCH SCHOOLS AND REPUBLICAN RULERS.

THERE is no question more easily misunderstood abroad, than this question of Public Education in France. And the fact admits of one explanation only. It is that our foreign friends and critics deluded by the pompous declarations and disingenuous sophistry of our Republican rulers accept as an established truth, that the intentions of those rulers are sincerely liberal, and that the Catholics complain loudly, less because they are harshly dealt with, than because, being “*reactionnaires*,” they feel fatally prejudiced against the Republican Government and its legislative work.

I remember having read in a foreign journal printed in a Catholic land, that the first article in the platform of the French Conservatives was a strong protest against *palace schools* being built for the children of the people, and that such an “article,” to be sure, was not likely to add many voters from the people’s ranks on the Conservative electoral roll.

Now such an accusation is mere nonsense. The French Conservatives have never objected to the children of the people being provided with schools; but they have protested and they protest still against so many *unnecessary* schools being built at the public expense—not in the public interest—but in the more or less avowed design of waging war against the Catholic religion of the people. I take for instance the case of a little *commune*, amongst the many *communes* of France. It had its two schools, one for its boys and the other for

its girls. But the two schools happened to be respectively under the care of the Christian Brothers, and of the nuns of some order. There the Government interfered saying, "you have your schools, well and good; but we want schools also, and you know they must be secular schools."

Then the Government says to the Prefect, the Council General and the Municipal Council: "You have to build secular schools now. If you have the money, so much the better; but if you want it, we promise to lend it to you, and moreover, will take our part of the expense."

When the Municipal Council had a Republican or infidel majority, the course was followed without objection. The *palace school* was built. The Catholics of the *commune* could preserve their school if they were allowed to do so by the Governmental University authority, which has supreme power in educational questions. But they had to pay first for the *palace school*, and to be weighed down with new additional rates for the same purpose.

When the Municipal Council was a Conservative one, the Government used very different language. "Well, you won't give the secular schools we wish for. Nevertheless we will manage to have them some day or the other. Meanwhile, we will spare nothing to worry you, to harass you and to let your constituents know that we intend to have the secular schools forced upon them." And the menace was often more than mere talk. The Government inspectors and their accomplices were put on the alert. Many a saintly nun, many a worthy brother were made the objects of a scandalous criminal information. Sometimes also they were accused of having infringed the neutrality prescribed by the law. In every case the school was secularised at once. In vain the population headed by its mayor and municipal councillors would try to save their school. They had to witness the expulsion of their chosen teachers from their school by the prefect and the *gendarmes*—and to find at once for the children and the teachers of their choice a convenient accommodation.

These things repeatedly occurred under the law and administration of Jules Ferry. We have gone further now

that the famous and infamous law of M. Goblet Minister of Public Instruction has been voted by our infidel majorities of the Chamber and of the Senate. But we will deal a little later with this new phase of the Republican persecution against Catholic France. For the moment we have our point to settle. It is not on account of ill-will or prejudiced partisan policy that the French Conservatives have protested against the *palace school*. These so called palaces were designed to be in every *commune* the infidel fortress—not a defensive but an aggressive one—raised against the church and the parochial house. In every possible circumstance the Conservative party would have been justified in opposing strongly such a use of the public money. But they are doubly right in opposing it when every citizen in the land is taxed to the utmost, when the public exchequer is emptied by two or three colonial wars made according to the ruinous and desultory process of M. Jules Ferry, and by the costly programme of public works due to M. de Freycinet, as well as by the growing follies of the Republican party in every department of the public service. The Republic was to be for Frenchmen the cheapest form of government. In fact it is just the reverse. Cheapness under the system is as scarce as liberty. And as to the character of Republican liberty we French Catholics know it well. As the chivalrous Count de Mun said when defending the sacred rights of Catholic conscience against M. Goblet and his infidel majority: “It is a liberty that cannot be paraded through our populations without being escorted by the prefect and *gendarmes* so as to suppress everywhere the legitimate rising of the Catholic fathers and mothers.”

II. So great, however, in this world is the power of profuse and fine-resounding declarations that in many a foreign country our Republican party is granted the monopoly of liberalism in France. Some time ago I read in a London journal some extracts from a report by M. Arnold upon the the new school system in this country. M. Arnold, as your readers are perhaps aware, was commissioned by the former Tory Government to make inquiries and collect information about our schools. Of course he came here amongst us; he

has seen and has reported. I do not profess to know the conclusions of his report which were not given in the paper I had in hand; but from the extracts I have read, I can safely infer that M. Arnold was not, on the whole, badly impressed by what he had seen of our Republican schools and teachers. It was of course the very thing to be expected. The English enquirer could not gain access to any school without being duly patronised and introduced by the proper authority. The "magister" was not without being duly warned about the quality and mission of the visitor before whom he had to conduct his class.

Is it a result to be wondered at if M. Arnold did not see or hear anything indeed that was not entirely consistent with *decorum* and propriety? Nay! had the *communal* schoolmaster been personally and habitually inclined to break the so-called *neutrality*—of which the least one can say is that it is a decorous lie—he was bound in such circumstances, to give his foreign visitor a favourable opinion of the respectability of his methods and the fairness of his *rôle*.

But let us grant for argument's sake that M. Arnold has met with that *rara avis*, a neutral schoolmaster really and sincerely bent upon the task of giving his pupils a teaching as free as possible from every latent or open attack upon their religious conscience. The testimony is just worth giving here as a statement of facts, and what is this statement of one, two, three, or more particular cases worth, against the overwhelming mass of established facts on the other side? Hardly a week, and I might fairly say hardly a day elapses without bringing out its scandal. The provincial press daily supplies the Catholic papers of Paris with the narrative of the revolting misdeeds of the Republican Government's teachers. And a few well-known cases will tell sufficiently of the nature of these misdeeds.

In the *Somme*, M. Goblet's own department, a *secular* lady not content with a sectarian teaching, catechizes half-a-dozen unfortunate little girls and by means of a hideously concocted story, brings before the tribunal an infamous action for immorality against the venerated pastor of the parish. Happily before the tribunal the miserable

story falls to pieces. The learned counsel of the pastor by a sweeping cross-examination makes short work of the conspiracy. The secular lady comes out in full light as the answerable authoress of the hideous concoction. Moreover, the life of that virtuous lady is narrated by the press. Before being admitted by our rulers to the sacred duty of teaching childhood she had led an adventurous and immoral career, and had even been a *riding* heroine in a circus!

It was too much of course for the departmental authorities. The adventurous lady was removed at once from her school where she had been such a success. But she was not so far dismissed from the ranks of the Government's secular teachers. She is now somewhere working on behalf of the good cause of secular education. A journal at least, has published the fact, and has not been contradicted.¹

Here is another case:

In the village of Benon (*Gironde*) a secular teacher desirous of impressing his young pupils with a due contempt for the superstitions of old, takes down the Crucifix forgotten upon the wall of the school. With the necessary accompaniments of odious gestures and sacrilegious words, he goes to the closet where in presence of all his young pupils he drops the sacred emblem of Catholic faith. Is that revolting story an old one? No, it took place little less than a year ago. Was it a secret one? No, it has been fully narrated by the local press. Every one who cares about the Conservative press in France knows the story. Nobody, however, has heard of the chastisement inflicted upon the miscreant. The language of M. Goblet in a similar case leads us to believe that perhaps he has been severely remonstrated with for his want of discretion. Perhaps he was momentarily displaced, and if so the fact has escaped my notice. But for certain he was not, nor will he be, dismissed for ever from the service. Our freethinkers want *secular* teachers and at any cost they will keep them.

A more recent case yet is that of the secular teacher in a

¹ The whereabouts of the interesting lady have been now duly ascertained. She is now in the educational service of the Colonies, in New Caledonia, not at the penitentiary of course, but in charge of a secular school.

village near Siorac Belvès, in the diocese of Périgueux. In that village a man of ill-fame had just died. The man was an apostate priest. He had led an immoral life, he had died a fearful death. But he had to be made the object of one of those awful masquerades, which our freethinkers call an *enterrement civil*, a "prayerless funeral," and which are nothing if they are not insulting manifestations against the Catholic faith of our Catholic populations. The business of course was managed by the freethinkers and the freemasons of the locality. And to give some *éclat* to their demonstration they mustered the rank and file of the party, so the government teacher at the head of his pupils cut a prominent figure in the sacrilegious masquerade. The *neutrality* which forbids the introduction of a single Catholic prayer-book into a government school is apparently respected when the master heading his boys takes a leading part in a designedly anti-Catholic demonstration.

But it would take volumes to recapitulate the scandals of every description which have marked everywhere in France, the progress of the secularization of our schools. Suffice it to say that, as a rule, the most insignificant instance of religious zeal on the part of the Catholic teachers has immediately called forth the secularization of the school or the chastisement of the teacher, while on the part of the secular teachers the most flagrant offences against "neutrality" have been easily pardoned, if not abetted and encouraged.

Everyone will grant that such a state of things has its meaning and disposes most effectively of the sweet words of M. Arnold on the perfect innocuity and decorum of our new educational system.

III. The facts, however, we have just commented upon, have all happened under the educational legislation we owe to the notorious M. Jules Ferry. M. Goblet, this distinguished successor of M. Jules Ferry at the head of our Education Department, has given us the crowning reform of Primary Education, such as it ought to be understood in an Infidel Republic. It may be safely said, indeed, that M. Goblet has made this reform his personal business. It is he who pushed

the bill through the Senate, hoping that if voted on satisfactory lines by the Upper Chamber, where the Government has a clear and well disciplined majority, it would be dispatched by the Lower Chamber and become law at once. It is he who discussing the Bill before the senators has made use of the occasion to add to his arguments, offensive remarks about dogmas and things sacred to the Catholics, to throw ridicule upon the dogma of original sin and upon the devotion to our Lady of Lourdes !

One must easily believe that a law discussed and voted on such lines is a complete piece of anti-Christian legislation. As was very truly said at the time "it is less a law upon primary education, than a law against Christian education in the primary schools."

It would be entirely too long to enter into the details of that infamous law which occupies no less than five columns of small type in an ordinary paper. But, I presume your readers will be glad to be acquainted, in a brief way, with the guiding principles and the main provisions of that *chef d'œuvre* of the legislative skill of our intolerant worshippers of the goddess Reason.

The Bill is divided into six parts, and each part into chapters, with the exception of the last two parts, which, providing as they do, for some regulations of a transient character and for the application of the Bill in the Colonies, do not call for a special notice.

In the first part are set forth the conditions under which the primary schools generally are founded, worked, and inspected by the State authorities.

The second part deals with the public schools, their rules, and their *personnel* or staff.

The third specifies the restricted liberties which the primary unofficial schools are to enjoy.

The fourth chapter in fine enacts the rules to be applied for the nomination and jurisdiction of the Departmental Councils and School Committees. These two bodies—the first for the Department, the second for the *Commune*—will have to decide upon every question connected with the working of the schools. The decisions of the School Committees may be

appealed against to the Departmental Council, whose decisions in their turn will be liable to an appeal to the Superior Council of Public Instruction, sitting in Paris under the presidency of the Minister.

IV.—Such is the “machinery” of the last bill framed by M. Goblet and voted by the Chambers, as the crowning chapter of the long and unjust war waged by our Republican rulers against the Catholic soul of France. The most unfair consequences of that illiberal law must be summed up here in a few lines. Every religious public school will have to depend for its existence as such upon the justice and tolerance of the Departmental Council, which will be a tool in the hands of the University Inspector and of the Prefect. The Catholic public teachers actually practising are indeed entitled to elect representatives for the Departmental Council. The number, however, of their nominees is so limited that they can never be anything but an impotent minority. And even that poor remnant of public life is to be taken from them; a clause in the new law enacts that all religious public schools for boys must be secularized in the *maximum* delay of five years. As to the free religious schools they will not be founded, they will not be worked except at the pleasure and by the authorization of the State Inspector and of the Prefect of the Departmental Council. Still more, they are to be attacked at their very foundation. Under the old law every Frenchman who would subscribe an engagement to serve for ten years in the profession of a teacher was, *ipso facto*, liberated from the military service. But under the new law which, voted by the Chamber, has not yet been taken up by the Senate, military service is made obligatory for all. And while the State teachers are to be included in the thousands who every year shall be *excused* for valid reasons, the religious teachers will not escape the life of the barracks.

One may then easily perceive what a near future has in store for our religious teachers. After having served their full time as soldiers, when everything is settled about their capacity, their diplomas, and their *civic* certificates and military discharge, they will have to fight for a school against the University Inspector, the Prefect, and the Departmental

Council. And that, so at least the Republicans hope, will be the end of Catholic primary education in France.

Before concluding that part of our observations we must remark here, that when in the opposition our Republicans had repeatedly asked to see the primary school free from the control of the Prefect, and of the central power. Then they kept constantly and loudly declaring that the primary schools should be brought under the direct influence and supervision of the local elective bodies. Now they have the power, but they do their best to make the moderate control of olden times a perfectly unbearable yoke. And they shrink from their programme, because it would allow a Catholic department and a Catholic commune to have Catholic public schools. Once more those virtuous democrats have eaten their promises of freedom.

V.—If our Republican reformers could say that the popular will claims from them the enactment of so monstrous a piece of legislation, they would at least have the shadow of a pretext. But they have not even that shadow. Everywhere in France—and I do not except the towns where the electors send Republican representatives to Parliament—the tide of popular favour is on behalf of the religious schools. Almost everywhere the Catholic schools are crowded to the utmost, in spite of the fact that in many cases the parents have to pay a small contribution, while in the State schools they could enjoy perfectly free education and other official favours. Almost everywhere it is only the want of resources of Catholic charity which are a limit to the foundation of Catholic schools.

Since the year 1877, 5,253 public schools have been secularized, and of that number 4,701 have been called back to existence as Catholic *private* schools. Within the same period, the public religious schools have lost on account of the secularization 845,000 pupils; but on the other side, as private Catholic schools they have regained 535,421 pupils. Who can have the least doubt that if the Catholics had been able to build everywhere their own school, near the secularized school, they should have now an immensely greater number of pupils?

The figures I have just quoted are taken from the latest official statistics of the Ministry of Public Instruction. From the same paper I quote also the following figures, as giving the comparative strength of a few religious and State schools in the country :—

			<i>State School.</i>	<i>Religious School.</i>
			PUPILS.	PUPILS.
Arpajon (Cantal)	...	...	30	120
Boissezon (Tarn)	...	...	6	150
Cancale (Ille et Vilaine)	...	...	100	860
Digne (Basses Alpes)	...	...	65	170
St. Flour (Cantal)	...	...	30	175
Bouillorgues (Gard)	...	...	2	140
Mauzat (Puy de Dôme)	...	...	15	168
Ranchol (Rhône)	...	...	15	102
St. Mars des Prés (Vendée)	...	...	8	38

These figures are taken *en courant* to give an idea of the favour our Catholic schools are enjoying amongst our Christian populations. I could of course extend my quotations, and meet with figures of a less favourable kind. I cannot profess to give it as a fact that the Catholic schools have everywhere more pupils than the State schools. It is not so, since, as I have already stated above, the State schools number a greater total of pupils than the Catholic ones. But then it must be remembered that of 5,253 Catholic public schools which have been secularized from the year 1877, 4,701 only have been re-established as Catholic private schools. What I assert is, that where the Catholics can build school against school, except in an insignificant lot of radical strongholds, they can safely compete against the State.¹

As I have already stated, it is only the want of resources and the insufficiency of the religious staff, which—withstanding the administrative persecution—prevent the Catholics in the educational struggle from crushing the State downright in spite of the resources of the Budget.

VI. But shall I perhaps be asked, How is it that since the majority of French families are Catholic—how is it that we have a Parliament bent upon making war against Catholic education and an electorate which does not revolt against

¹ The figures quoted above are taken from the official statistics made known at the beginning of this year. The ministry has since published statistics giving the complete figures for the last year, and in every sense they may be said to support my conclusions.

such a Parliament. My answer is that I can only state the fact, I do not profess to be able to explain it in a satisfactory way. It is not useless, however, to recall that too often, according to a celebrated saying of Pio Nono, "the universal suffrage is the universal lie." Our infidel writers and politicians have been continuously, in this century, poisoning the popular mind with utterly false notions upon the Catholic and glorious traditions of France. An unprincipled press, moreover, is daily inundating the country with the vilest imputations and calumnies against the clergy and the Conservative cause. At the same time those writers and politicians have kept loudly declaring that they were not hostile to religion but to the *abuses* of the clergy only. They kept affirming, in spite of every historical truth and experience in France, that their Republican party was the only party able to give us true union, true justice, and true liberty. No wonder then if, thanks to a Conservative party which is divided into three camps, and which, we sorrowfully confess, has lacked faith, energy and union, poor France has been once more entrapped into another awful experience. The voter who in his private affairs would not fail to think of his home, of his family, of his soul, is less concerned about doctrines and facts which—so he believes at least—develop themselves in the purely political region. It is a grievous mistake. Evil doctrines are not to be kept innocuous in the governing sphere of a society. They descend through every channel of social life, striking and wounding every nerve of the national body and their consequences sooner or later make themselves felt from the proudest mansion to the humblest peasant's cabin. The first laws of our Republic against the liberty of Catholic teaching were designed against higher education. The intermediate or secondary schools are let alone for the moment. The Government is afraid of causing them to be deserted, if they take from them the small religious guarantee the parents find there yet. The middle class would defend their children, but the people are defenceless. The object of the last law of M. Goblet, if given a long run, is intended to take every child of the Catholic workman and peasant from his parents' faith to nurse him in the infidelity of a godless State.

But I dare say our Republican rulers will not succeed to

the end in their war against the Catholic soul of France. Their educational legislation has told against them more than all the efforts of the generous sons of Catholic France, than all the good works and impassioned speeches of the defenders of our old faith and honour. That law which they consider as the crowning blow of their triumphant infidelity, is, if I am not mistaken, the beginning of their political ruin. Last year, at the general elections, their party, with so many millions of voters, gained the day only by a majority of some hundred thousands of votes. When France sees that she has no choice left save a complete apostasy or the downfall of the actual Republican party, that party will be crushed ignominiously. Our Republicans once more had their chance, a marvellous chance, of founding, probably for ever, their Republic. They have been tried and found wanting. They believe they are burying Catholic France, they do not perceive that Catholic France is weaving their shroud.

Every social and public symptom permits us to hope that our children are not likely to forget the old national motto : *Vivat qui diligit Francos Christus.*

L. NEMOURS GODRÉ.

P.S.—Since these lines were written, M. Goblet's cabinet has fallen to pieces and has been replaced by the cabinet of M.M. Rouvier-Spüller. For preservation sake the new ministry is bound to a certain amount of forbearance towards the Catholics, but M. Goblet's law continues of course doing mischief. The other day all the government schools of the city of Orleans were decreed to be secularized at once by the Municipal Council by a majority of one or two votes. The blow is hard for the Catholic inhabitants of Orleans. Like the rest of the French people, they are heavily enough burdened with taxes, but they will not give up the fight. Headed by their worthy bishop, Mgr. Coullier, they are setting to the task of preserving their schools, and it is to be hoped that in the coming electoral struggles the spirited citizens of the rich and gay city by the Loire, where Joan of Arc is so devoutly honoured, will know how to deal with their Municipal and Legislative impiety-mongers according to their deserts.

L. N. G.

INNISKEEL.

“ Dim in the pallid moonlight stood,
 Crumbling to slow decay, the remnant of that pile,
 Within which dwelt so many saints erewhile
 In loving brotherhood.”

OFF the coast of Western Donegal, in the district anciently known as Tir-Aimmirech, but called Boylagh, since the thirteenth century, lies the holy island of Connell Coel. Taking the direct route from Glenties to Ardara as the base of an equilateral triangle falling seaward, Inniskeel is found a few furlongs beyond the point on land where its apex should be marked. Thither the main road from either town would appear to stretch its way. But whether to suit public convenience, or from haste to greet Inniskeel, or to show in the end that they are no slaves of geometrical rules, these two lines insist on deferring their junction until they have got clear of our imaginary figure. The little spot where they meet is sunken as compared with the immediate surroundings, but a few perches of stiff ascent on the joint road bring us to a slight eminence commanding a magnificent view by land and sea. In a single sweep from north to east the mountains of Gweedore and Glenveagh, and nearer hand, bounding the wide expanse of waters that stretch across from this side, the bold, but less striking, elevations of Aranmore, Crohy and Lettermacaward, are minutely visible, whilst just at our feet, on the bosom of Gweebarra Bay reposes in all its verdure the saintly island of Connell.

In a past era the adjacent coast presented a much bolder face than it does now. Those ocean waves and earth convulsions that formed without overwhelming the unrivalled coast scenery that extends from Ardara to Carrick, and from Horn Head to Owey, probably devoured much of the less resisting rampart-wall that guarded the space between. Be this as it may, the surroundings of Inniskeel still remain strikingly beautiful, and, if they are far excelled for wild grandeur on either hand along this romantic shore, that, too, is advantageous in permitting the peculiar character of the island to stand out in more distinctive colours.

Its appearance varies largely with the season. During winter time the western squall, that makes dismal all besides, half spares its low-lying surface in the hurry of the gale. In summer an emerald of richest setting might envy the islet's orb as the slanting rays of an evening sun pour their brilliance into its glassy bed. But the moon must bathe the crumbling walls of yonder ruin in its flow of mellow light, ere the scene presents its most enchanting view. When the sea is calm and the sky clear it seems for a moment like catching a gleam of the pure peaceful delights of another world to stand on the mainland opposite and gaze across the starlit waters at S. Connell's blissful shrine. Another moment, however, and sad thoughts begin to rise. How many saints prayed in that cell? How many warriors walked that strand, doing penance for the rough deeds of a blood-letting time? The place was surely formed by nature for a retreat from this world's cares. Alas! that such a home of prayer and sanctity, where for long ages bell and lamp and psalm enlivened the midnight air, should now be laid so lowly desolate.

"I turned away as towards my grave,
And all my dark way homewards by the Atlantic's verge,
Resounded in mine ears like to a dirge,
The roaring of the wave."

Inniskeel rests on the waters over against Narin, the village from which it is usually approached. This, too, is the nearest land; and on a first view from the Glenties road, Inniskeel seems to lean gently forward on the Narin coast, with a fond look that might speak the story of a long struggle against isolation before ruthless ocean had rushed between and forced it into its present place of unexpected contentment. In sooth, it hugs the coast at this point so closely that, if old names did not stand in our way, we would gladly confine Gweebarra Bay to the picturesque expanse of waters that wind their courses inside the hoary bar of that name, and write of "the Island" as nestling in Narin Bay under the shadow and shelter of Dunmore. This peak, the highest in its range, stands out into the sea a mile west of Narin, with the village of Portnoo lying at the foot of its eastern slope.

It commands a splendid view of land and ocean, and boldly strives to protect Inniskeel from the south-western blast. Portnoo harbour lies inland from the shortest line joining Dunmore with the island, and in any change of old names might fairly oppose Narin in claiming Inniskeel as the gem of its blue waters. Meanwhile there is competition of another sort. The former, with its unrivalled strand, is naturally the favourite sea-bathing resort. The latter is a fishing and shipping station on a small scale, and under a wise home government would become a busy commercial centre. What little trade it now enjoys is mainly due to the enterprise of a Glenties merchant. Both villages receive little but cold neglect from those under whose fostering care they might rise and flourish. The lords of the soil should try, one would think, to develop the natural capabilities of this beautiful coast. But neither hotel nor pier adorns the scene.

On its western side Inniskeel is exposed to the unbroken fury of the Atlantic waves, which one after another dash themselves to foam on its rocky girdle, and then part their bulky volumes to race almost in halves on either verge until they meet, or try to meet on "the Ridge." This is a raised bank of well-baked sand, formed by the opposing tides in an apparent struggle to reunite their forces without sacrificing lately-acquired independence. By it pilgrims and visitors enter the island on foot, horse, and car from Narin. In favourable weather during spring tides it remains bare for several hours of each ebb; but when neaps prevail, if the waves subside at all so as to allow a passage on dry land, anyone wishing to return the same way should hasten his steps. Gruesome stories are told of imprudent attempts to get out out when the time had past. Over-boldness is sure to be attended with alarm and danger. But both are avoidable without much inconvenience. For, apart from the ever-unwelcome expedient of remaining all night or awaiting next strand, a courteous resident farmer never refuses the service of his boat. His is the only island family. The other tenants, two in number, reside on the mainland.

At most points Inniskeel slopes for a few perches from the

water's edge in a craggy ascent, and then assumes a surface half flat, half rolling. The soil is considered rich for Boylagh and is used chiefly to fatten sheep and cattle. The island's remotest point is distant a long mile from Narin, and its circumference apart from slight irregularities, should reach a mile and a half. Its general outline is that of an ellipse with the long axis running east and west; but as seen from points on the coast, the appearance varies from a straight line to a circle, especially when twilight or starlight is the medium of sight.

In days of native rule this little domain was abbey land attached to the monastic buildings, whose broken walls are still the first and greatest attraction for a visitor's gaze. In the Plantation of Ulster, if we mistake not, it became part of the Inniskeel glebe property. Afterwards it had the good fortune of being annexed to the Connolly estates for a time, and then the fortune, not so good, of passing by purchase to another owner.

But material considerations are not those which are most striking in connection with Inniskeel. The island has a sacred interest in the present and the past with a long, if broken, history to commemorate its former greatness. It is still the seat of a much frequented pilgrimage in honour of St. Connell, one of the most remarkable of Ireland's early saints. It contains his church and cell; and in it repose his sacred remains in the grave that had first closed over the body of his illustrious friend, St. Dallan.

The "station" may be performed at any time. But the solemn season lasts from the 20th of May, St. Connell's day, to the 12th of September. Besides the founder's well, there is another sacred to the Blessed Virgin. Fixed prayers are devoutly said at each, as also in going round the penitential piles, of which there are several, formed as a rule of small sea-stones which are kept together by the self-mortifying attention of the pilgrims. A number of decades repeated in walking round the old ruins and before the altar of St. Connell's Church bring the *Turas* to a close.

The devotion and faith of the crowds who throng to Inniskeel during the Station season recall the memory of the

first believers in Christianity. They possess the genuine spirit of Gospel Christians, and it would be strange indeed, looking to the beneficence of God's providence towards simple, faithful souls, if prayers offered up with such fervour and commended by such powerful patronage, did not bring down on those devout pilgrims the choicest blessings of heaven. They speak to their Saviour in earnest communion of heart, believing firmly that He is the physician of physicians for soul and body. Is it then unreasonable to think that for these meek confiding ones Christ in view of Connell's merits allotted curative properties to the saint's well? Their faith, their prayers, and the blessing of heaven on the spot do indeed work wonders. Nor need going round the piles a fixed number of times, raising at intervals the position of some low-placed pebble, or moving larger stones round the head and waist, force up the idea of superstitious observance. If St. Connell or any one of his saintly followers wished to found a penitential and supplicatory course of exercises, what more proper than that their ritual should be minutely fixed and accurately handed down? Now this is the feeling that sways these crowds of pilgrims from age to age. Their faith is simple and their hope unbounded. Flourish such faith and hope! They give as just a notion of God's warm providence as the acutest reasoning of philosophy.

There seems to be no ground for questioning the popular belief that St. Connell founded the buildings which still remain. At the same time substantial parts were certainly rebuilt at a later period. Both church and cell are situated on a beautiful slope of the south-eastern side of the island. The orientation of the church seems perfect. The other edifice which stands a few paces further east points in the same direction. The ground plan of both buildings is rectangular, the former measuring fifty feet by twenty, the latter something less in breadth, but almost the same in length. The church retains its gables, windows, and doors, in an state of fair preservation; but one of its sidewalls is almost completely broken down for some yards. The altar table, of substantial flags, has retained its hold with magnificent tenacity. The cell or monastery is in a still more ruined condition.

Apparently it was never so high as the church, and at present gables, from a little above the square, serve but to block the doors and narrow windows or fill in gaps in the lower masonry of its walls. Neither building can lay claim to exceptional beauty of architecture. But they are fairly large in size, neatly and well built, and above all charmingly placed in situation.

Surrounding the sacred edifice is an old cemetery, wherein Catholics and Protestants along the coast, until recent times, eagerly sought a last resting-place for their dead. Latterly new and exclusive graveyards are of course more in favour with Catholics. The central one in Glenties parish is appropriately dedicated in honour of St. Connell, the parochial patron. In Inniskeel the burial ground reaches the stony beach, and at high water is only a few yards above the surface of the Church-pool, a well sheltered basin in which ships of very heavy tonnage may ride safely at anchor in almost every condition of the wind.

On this delightful ground with the waves expiring gently at his feet or rolling in fury on "the Ridge" beyond, St. Connell raised each morning his pensive soul from thoughts of nature's beauteous handiwork to contemplate the great Creator by whose almighty word it had all been fashioned before time for man began. A glance northwards enhanced the view. It should have swept over kingly Errigal, and rest on Aranmore or the chainless waves of the sky-meeting ocean. What a home for meditation this peaceful isle with such giant surroundings by land and sea! Assuredly no island recluse can be an atheist, can fail of being an intense believer. With the impress of divine intelligence above him and around him, with a voice in the heaving billows or rushing sea-wind, if he have ethical uprightness of intellect and will to grasp the significance of the scene, no man could escape the all-pervading sense of God's presence, no man could here live the life of a hope-forsaken infidel. Neither the din of cities, nor social strife, nor crowded brick and mortar intervene to shut out reason's strong lesson or the light of divine faith. The island saint is a true philosopher; he must be religious to the core.

Such was Connell, founder of Inniskeel, and such was Dallan its frequent visitant. Colgan has left us several particulars of the latter saint. His notes on St. Connell are only incidental. The Christian name of Inniskeel's patron is variously spelled in Irish as in English, the form Conald being supported by some ancient authorities, whilst Conall, Connall or Connell approaches much nearer the pronunciation (Cuinell) common in Boylagh. In like manner his second name is written Caoi, Caoil, Cael, Coel or Ceol. Mac Cole is still a family name on the mainland. The local Irish pronunciation, however, sounds like Cáoí (slender), and hence some have thought the island derived its name from the needle-like appearance it presents from certain points of view along the coast. But more probably it came from Connell's father, for to distinguish the saint from a famous Umorian chief, who bore his double appellation, he is described by our annalists as the son of Ceolman. Thus in Latin he is said to be *filius Ceolmani* or *jilius Manii Coelii*.¹

The year of St. Connell's birth is not known with exactness. He died about 596 and had therefore been contemporary with a host of Irish saints. Sprung from the Cinel Conall, being the fourth in descent from Conall Gulban, he was a near relative of St. Columba. His name is mentioned in several of our ancient records. It is linked for ever with the famous Cain Domnaigh, a law forbidding servile works on Sunday. The prohibition ran from Vespers on Saturday evening to Monday morning and should delight the heart of a Sabbatarian by its exacting observance, did it not in other respects so unmistakably savour of Catholic practice. In the *Yellow Book of Lecan* the Cain is prefaced by a statement of its being brought from Rome by St. Connell, on an occasion of a pilgrimage made by him to the Eternal City. The metrical version contained in a manuscript copy of the ancient laws (in *Cod. Clarend.*), says it was the

¹ "Conallus de Inisceaoil, filius Manii Coelii, filius Caitherii, filius Ennii Cognomento Baganii, filius Conalli Gulbani, colitur in ecclesia de Innis-Caoil 20 Maii et ejus profesto tanquam totius illius districtus Patroni jejunium strictum servatur usque in hodiernum diem." Colgan, *Trius Thaumaturga*, p. 480.

"Comarb of Peter and Paul" who first found and promulgated the document. St. Connell is not credited in either account with its authorship. Nay, O'Curry thinks he was a hundred years in his grave before a knowledge of it became general in Ireland. Be this as it may our chroniclers make two notable statements in regard to it. They say it was written by the hand of God in heaven and placed on the altar of St. Peter, and secondly that it was brought from Rome by St. Connell. Now, however we may be inclined to explain away either or both these statements, there is no mistaking the avowal of respect they imply for Roman authority, nor any serious reason for calling the pilgrimage itself into question. And see the faith of our fathers shining through the old Irish ordinance. Though the law in its severity forbids journeying on a Sunday, yet¹

"A priest may journey on a Sunday,
To attend a person about to die,
To give him the body of Christ the chaste,
If he be expected to expire before morning."

The Cain Domnaigh was never enacted by the states or councils of Erin. That it was believed to have been brought from Rome sufficed to spread its sway.

It is now time to say something of St. Connell's famous friend Dallan Forgail. *Euchodius* is the Latin form given by Colgan for his original name. The better known appellation of Dallan is obviously derived from *dall*, blind; for at an early stage in his career he lost the use of his eyes. Notwithstanding this dismal fate he became the most eminent man of letters in Ireland, at a time when the paths of scholarship were eagerly pursued by a host of able men. He was antiquary, philosopher, rhetorician, and poet all in one. He was the literary chief, the *pilè* laureate of Erin in his day. A saint's life and a martyr's death crown the glory of his fame.

He was born, as Colgan tells us, in Teallach Eathach, which we take to be Tullyhaw in Cavan. Removed by only a few

¹ This we take from Cardinal Moran's beautiful note on Inniskeel in his edition of Archdall's *Monasticon Hibernicum*. His Eminence expresses his obligations to Mr. O'Looney for information in regard to the Cain Domnaigh.

degrees of descent from Colla, King of Ireland, St. Maidoc, of the same lineage, was his cousin. From his mother, Forchella, he received the second name, Forgail, which we sometimes find added in the old writers. Nothing that parental care could accomplish was left undone to perfect his education in sacred and secular subjects. From an early date he took to the antiquarian lore of his country as a special study. It was in this department, so indispensable for an Irish scholar of the sixth century, that he first attained an eminent place. Not unlikely his research into ancient records had something to do with the difficulty of the style in which he wrote. It appeared archaic even to experts who lived centuries before Colgan wrote; and we are told by this author how in the schools of Irish antiquities it was usual to expound Dallan's compositions by adding long commentaries on these rare specimens of the old Celtic tongue.

The *Amhra Coluim Cille* or written panegyric on Columbkille was his best known work. When the famous assembly at Drumceat was breaking up, just after Columba had succeeded in directing its proceedings to such happy issue, Dallan came forward and presented the saint with a poem written in eulogy of his merits. A part of the composition was thereupon recited; but only a part. For, as the event is told by Colgan, a slight feeling of vain-glory brought the demons in whirling crowds above Columba's head, before the astonished gaze of St. Baithen, his disciple and attendant. No sooner did the person principally concerned in this wonderful occurrence perceive the terrible sign than he was struck with deep compunction, and immediately stopped the recital. No entreaty ever after could induce him to allow the publication of the panegyric during his life. But by unceasing effort Dallan obtained the saint's permission to write a eulogy of him in case of survivorship. An angel, we are told, brought the news of Columba's death to St. Dallan, who forthwith composed his famous *Amhra Coluim Cille*, embodying in all probability, much of his former panegyric.

As soon as the learned work was completed Dallan recovered his sight, and received a promise that anyone who would piously recite the composition from memory should

obtain a happy death. This promise was liable to abuse in two opposite ways. The wicked might be tempted to look upon the recital of the eulogy as an easy substitute for a good life. The good, from seeing this interpretation carried into practice, might naturally be inclined to turn away in disgust from all use of the privilege. In point of fact both these errors began to show themselves, and were sure to grow, did not a miraculous event occur to put the promise on a proper basis. A cleric of abandoned life took to committing the rule as a more comfortable way to heaven than the path of penance. But, after learning one half, no effort would avail for further progress. So, as he still wanted to put off, or rather get rid of the day of reckoning, he made a vow, and in fulfilment of it went to Columba's tomb, whereat he spent a whole night in fast and vigil. When morning dawned his prayer had been heard. He could recite the second part of the poem word for word. But to his utter confusion not a trace of the lines he had known so well before remained on his memory. What happened him in the end we are not told. Let us hope he applied the obvious lesson his story preaches. As Colgan says, it not merely showed that a true conversion of heart must accompany the pious repetition from memory of Columba's praises, if eternal life is to be the reward. In this particular instance the value of the promise was clearly conveyed. The person's perverse intention was visibly punished by his being afflicted with inability to fulfil an indispensable condition of the privilege. He could not even commit the words.

St. Dallan composed another funeral oration in praise of St. Senan, Bishop of Iniscattery. It was prized both for its richness of ancient diction, and for the valuable property of preserving from blindness those who recited it with devotion. He composed a third Panegyric on St. Connell Coel for whom he entertained a most enthusiastic esteem. Colgan, who says he possessed copies of the two former compositions, states that he knew not whether that on the Abbot of Inniskeel was then extant. All three, unfortunately, are now gone.¹

¹ This we gather from Cardinal Moran's note. In O'Reilly's *Irish Writers*, St. Dallan's works are said to be extant.

Dallan had often besought in prayer that he and St. Connell might share the same grave. The favour came to be enjoyed in a manner at once saintly and tragic. He had been a frequent visitor at the island monastery, and the last time he came, a band of pirates landing from the neighbouring port, burst into the sacred building, as he was betaking himself, after the spiritual exercises, to the repose of the guest-room. These fierce sea-rovers, who in all probability were pagans, from more northern coasts, plundered ruthlessly on all sides, and brought their deeds of sacrilege to a close by cutting off the old man's head and casting it into the ocean. The abbot, who contrived to escape, on hearing that his dear friend had fallen a victim to the murderers, rushed to the spot where he had been slain, but only to find the headless trunk of what had been St. Dallan's body.

With tears and prayers he at once appealed to God, beseeching Him to reveal where the head of his martyred friend had been cast. The petition of one so favoured of heaven was granted. He saw it rise and fall on the waves at a distance and then move to the shore. He took it up with reverent care and placed it in its proper place on the body, when, lo! to his grateful delight, he found the parts adhere as firmly as if the pirate's cutlass had never severed them. St. Dallan's remains were then buried under the church walls with all the honour such earnest and mutual esteem was sure to prompt. This occurred about the year 594. Before the century closed St. Connell's body was laid in the same grave. Thus was St. Dallan's life-long wish gratified at last. No wonder the spot should be, in Colgan's words, the scene of daily miracles.

St. Dallan's Feast occurs on the 29th January. His memory survived in the veneration of several other churches throughout Ulster.

A very remarkable relic of St. Connell remained in the neighbourhood of Ardara until 1844. It was the saint's bell, called Bearnan Chonail. It was purchased in 1835 by Major Nesbitt of Woodhill, for £6, from Connell O'Breslen of Glengesh, whom O'Donovan calls the senior of his name. The O'Breslens, who had been *erenaghs* of Inniskeel, claimed

St. Connell as of their family, and hence the inheritance. Since 1844 when Major Nesbitt died, it has entirely disappeared and fears are entertained that in the succession of owners it may have been destroyed beyond hope of repair. Fortunately it had been previously seen and described by eminent antiquarians. We cannot convey a better idea of its appearance than by transcribing the following paragraph from Cardinal Moran's *Monasticon Hibernicum*. It is almost an exact transcript from one of O'Donovan's Letters.

"O'Donovan says it was enclosed in a kind of frame or case which had never been opened. Engraved on it with great artistic skill was the crucifixion, the two Marys, St. John, and another figure, and over it in silver were two other figures of the Archangel Michael, one on each side of our Lord, who was represented in the act of rising from the tomb. There is a long inscription in Gothic or black letters, all of which are effaced by constant polishing, except the words Mahon O'Meehan, the name, probably, of the engraver. There are two large precious stones inserted, one on each side of the crucifixion, and a brass chain suspended from one side of the bell."

Frequent mention is made of Inniskeel by our ancient writers. Its exposed position not unfrequently tempted the spoiler. Thus under the year 619 in the Four Masters its demolition by Failbhe Flann Fidhbhadh is recorded. This war-like chief was killed to avenge Doir, son of Aedh Allan. Failbe's mother said, lamenting him—

"'Twas the mortal wounding of a noble,
Not the demolition of Inniskeel,
For which the shouts of triumph were exultingly
Raised around the head of Failbe Flann Fidhbhadh."

In 1583 Donough, son of Torlough O'Boyle, was slain here by the O'Malleys, so that deeds of violence must have crimsoned from time to time the green sod of Inniskeel.

Besides the illustrious saints we have mentioned, their monks through several centuries, and many secular priests, the remains of other distinguished personages were borne from a distance to repose in this hallowed ground. Here was interred Niall O'Boyle, Bishop of Raphoe, who died at Gleneineagh in 1611. The Four Masters mention an important event in which this prelate took a leading part. In 1597

a numerous army of English and Irish troops entered Tyrconnell, under the command of Sir Conyers Clifford, President of Connaught. As was usual, Irish allies led the van of the invading host. Young Inchiquin dashed into the Erne, got badly wounded from the opposite bank while helping others to brave its current, and found, when it was too late, that Saimer's waters were not over partial to the enemies of Tyrconnell. So he sank beneath the waves whilst his followers succeeded in crossing. This was a Murrough O'Brien of that time. What a change from the day more than five centuries before when in the arms of victory another Murrough gave up his life for Ireland on the banks of the Tolka! Howbeit, Cormac O'Cleary had the body becomingly interred in Assaroe; when, lo! the Franciscan Fathers of Donegal claimed it for interment in their cemetery, on the ground that the O'Briens at home always buried their dead with the Franciscan brotherhood.

By this time, however, the enemy's forces, after several vain attempts to storm Ballyshannon Castle, had taken precipitately to flight. Despite the powerful supplies of siege ammunition sent by sea from Galway, they soon felt their position become rather unpleasant, as the neighbouring chiefs began to occupy the surrounding heights, and co-operate with the brave garrison. So at the break of day, one morning the "President and Earls" retreated across the river, leaving many of their forces in the swollen tide, and their whole camp in the hands of the sturdy clansmen. A close pursuit completed the enemy's discomfiture.

But now that victory had crowned native effort, there was time for peaceful duties, and no disposition to be anything short of generous to a fallen foeman. So the Franciscan claim was laid before Red Hugh, Niall O'Boyle, Bishop of Raphoe, and Redmond O'Gallagher, Bishop of Derry. As its decision, this strong court granted the petition, and three months after they had been first interred the remains of Murrough O'Brien, were exhumed and removed with becoming honour to Donegal abbey. How a Cistercian and a Franciscan community came to contend for the body of a non-Catholic seems strange. The Four Masters lay much stress

on Inchiquin's lineage, and possibly some material point has not been recorded.

The island of St. Connell lies at present outside the parish of Inniskeel. Half a century ago itself and the adjoining districts were ceded to Ardara in exchange for certain townlands lying near Glenties. So the people of both parishes look to it with equal pride, and visit it with equal reverence. We feel sure that the lesson its great saint teaches as well as the benediction they obtain, will stand the children of Boylagh in good stead as the ages roll on. This said, we have completed a little vacation tribute of homage and gratitude, long since intended, to St. Connell and St. Dallan.

PATRICK O'DONNELL.

THE BROWN SCAPULAR AND THE CATHOLIC DICTIONARY.

THE distinguished honor paid to the Scapular of our Lady of Mount Carmel by the Holy See, in the recent Decree relative to its investiture, which appeared in the July number of the *RECORD* for the present year, furnishes us with an occasion for comment on an article in the *Catholic Dictionary*, compiled by the Rev. W. A. Addis, and Mr. Thomas Arnold, M.A., under the word "Scapular."

It is true that two able papers, written by the Rev. Father Clarke, S.J., Editor of the *Month*, in refutation of the article in the *Catholic Dictionary*, have already appeared in that periodical, for which the clients of our Lady of Mount Carmel owe a deep debt of gratitude to that pious and learned Editor. But as the *RECORD* circulates in many places in Ireland, to which the *Month* does not reach, and as we purpose to meet the objections in our own way, it will not be deemed out of place if we supply the readers of the former, with an answer to the difficulties raised against the devotion of the Carmelite Scapular by the *Catholic Dictionary*. We do this all the more

eagerly, because this devotion is so widely spread amongst Irish Catholics, and is so dear to them.

It is indeed unaccountable how an article so un-Catholic and so repugnant to the feelings and belief of Catholics, could have found its way into the pages of a Catholic dictionary.

We might expect such teaching in a work avowedly hostile to Catholic devotional practices; but certainly not in a Catholic book. Although freely admitting that nothing could be farther from the intention of the compilers of the *Catholic Dictionary*, than to throw any discredit on devotional practices sanctioned by the Church, yet we are bound to assert that the article in question has that tendency.

Having given a brief description of the devotion of the Scapular, the writer of the article says, "Two statements, then, have to be examined. Is there any proof that the Blessed Virgin appeared to St. Simon Stock and made the promises related above? Is the Sabbatine Ball genuine, and the story it tells true?" He then adds, "We take the latter question first, because it may be despatched very quickly." He does indeed despatch it very quickly, but we must add very unsatisfactorily.

Now let us examine the authorities the writer adduces, to prove that the Bulls of John XXII. and Alexander V. are not genuine; for the weight of the evidence will very much depend on the character of the witnesses.

The first he brings forward is Launoy, a doctor of the College of Sorbonne, who died at Paris in 1678. Now it is well known that his works are distinguished by their sceptical and erroneous teaching. Nearly all of them have been proscribed by the Sacred Congregation of the Index. He is called by Benedict XIV., in his work on the Canonization of Saints, a most pronounced enemy of the Roman Pontiffs and the Apostolic See. Alluding to a theological opinion of Launoy's, he designates it—

"*Temerarium profecto et contumeliosum in Christi vicarium dictum! quod a solo Launojo proferri poterat, utpote Romanorum Pontificum et Sedis Apostolicæ hoste apertissimo, ex quo ipsius opuscula a Sacra Indicis Congregatione fuerant merito proscripta.*"¹

¹ *Act de Canon. Ser. Dei.* Lib. I., c. 44., n. 18.

No doubt Launoy was a man of great learning, but he turned it to bad account. He held weekly conferences at his residence in Paris, at which opinions were taught so subversive of society, and the authority of the Church, that the King was obliged to interdict them in 1636. He next made war on religious orders, canonized saints, and some of the most cherished devotions of the Church; employing his acrimonious pen in endeavouring to discredit them by false objections and unfounded imputations.

He wrote also against the Formulary of Alexander VII. condemnatory of Jansenism; and he is accused of altering, with incredible audacity, texts which he quoted in proof of his theory. Most of his reasonings too are not more just than his quotations (*V. Dictionnaire Universel des sciences Ecclésiastiques* Tom. 2, P. 1230). Being generally of a negative character, to give them the appearance of solidity he published a work on the force of negative arguments (*De auctoritate negantis argumenti*). He has been greatly praised by Protestants, and his works have been reproduced by them, no doubt, because of his anti-catholic and anti-papal tendencies.

In his work entitled *De Simonis Stokii viso, de Sabbatinae Bullae Privilegio et de Scapularis Carmelitarum Sodalitate Dissertationes quinque*, this cynical and unscrupulous critic attacked, to use the words of Benedict XIV., with inexpressible fury the vision to St. Simon Stock and the Bull of John XXII. "Adversus utramque quasi quodam, qui satis verbis explicari non potest, furore invehitur Launojus in Dissertationibus suis."¹

To show the lengths to which the man's morbid desire for attacking admitted facts carried him, and the kind of arguments he used, we may mention that he stoutly maintained that St. Thomas Aquinas was not the author of the *Summa Theologica*. The matter is thus related by Benedict XIV. and we give it here because it is much to our present purpose.

"Denique magnis olim animorum motibus agitabatur controversia utrum *Summa Theologica* S. Thomae Aquinatis ab eo fuerit

¹ Benedict XIV. *de Festis*, T. 2, P. 330 Lovanii 1761. This book by Launoy is on the Index.

composita, an potius a Vincentio Bellovacensi. Joannes nempe Launojus, *more suo*, sententiae adhaerebat quae favet Bellovacensi, innixus sermone Clementis VI. qui S. Thomam laudans, anno 1323, ad solennia ejusdem recens canonizati et ejus operum indicem retexens Theologicae Summae non meminit, sed cum eruditus ex Dominicana Familia Theologus, Jacobus Echard, in libro de S. Thomae Summa suo auctori vindicata (P. 439 et seq.) clarissime demonstraverit in eodem Clementis VI. sermone Summam S. Thomae esse commemoratam."

And the learned Pontiff adds :

"Ex his omnibus plene evincitur serio perpendendum esse ante omnia an negotium sit redactum ad punctum argumenti negativi; cum aliquando fidenter asseri contingat, nullum aequaevum auctorem rem retulisse, quamvis non desint qui retulerint."¹

Now this Launoy is the authority that furnishes the writer of the article in question with a "superabundance of reasons" to show that the Bull of John XXII. and that of Alexander V. are forgeries. Of course Launoy could supply "*more suo*" as Benedict XIV. designates his methods, a "superabundance" of what he calls "reasons," for denying facts admitted by all reasonable people. How many historical facts could stand the test, if the methods employed by Launoy were to prevail? Why even the most sacred and fundamental truths of religion have been attacked in the same way, by unbelieving and heretical writers who have furnished, in their own opinion and in the opinion of those who believe with them, a superabundance of "reasons" against doctrines which they do not wish to admit, but which are held by all Catholics.

The "reasons" supplied by Launoy against the authenticity of these Bulls, have been over and over again completely refuted by various learned writers. To quote them here would not only exceed the space allowed us in these pages, but would fill volumes. We can, however, refer the reader who wishes to follow this subject more fully, to works in which the objections and difficulties internal and external, historical and theological, raised against these Bulls are fully and completely answered and refuted, viz.: *Speculum Carmelitanum*, by the Rev. Fr. Daniel of the Virgin Mary (T. 1,

¹ Act de Canon, Ser. Dei, l. iii., c. x., n. 5.

L. V., p. 3, Antverpiæ, 1653); *Vinea Carmeli seu Historia Ordinis Eliani*, by the same author (Pars V., cap. iv. et seq.); *Bibliotheca Carmelitana*, by the Very Rev. Cosma of St. Stephen (T. 1, p. 52, et seq.); *Historico-Sacra et Theologico-Dogmatica Dissertatio de Vera Origine et Progressu Monasticæ Scapularæ Marianum illustratum et defensum*, by the distinguished Jesuit writer Fr. Theophilus Reynaud; Benedict XIV. *de Festis*, P. 2, c. 76, et seq., also *De Beatificatione et Canonizatione Sanctorum* (L. 4, p. 2, cap. ix., n. 10). Also the works of Ven. P. John the Baptist de Lazara, G. Colvener, John Palaeonydorus, Arnold Botius, John Cheron, Iraeneus of St. James, Paul of All Saints, and others.

The writer of the article in question says that the autograph of the Sabbatine Bull has never been found. Not since it was lost, but is that a proof that it never existed? If that test were applied to other rights and privileges, how few of their claims could be proved? Why, if it were lawful to make the comparison, the autographs of the most authentic documents in the world, the Holy Scriptures, are not now in existence. Would it therefore be lawful to conclude that they are apocryphal?

If the original of the Sabbatine Bull has been lost, we have unquestionable testimony that it existed, that its loss can be satisfactorily accounted for, and that authentic copies of it have been taken, some of which are at present in existence.

The first witness who testifies to its existence is Alexander V., who tells us that he saw it himself, examined it carefully, was convinced of its authenticity, and in order to put its existence beyond future cavil, he embodied it in a Bull of his own, in which he renews and confirms the privileges contained in it:—

“Tenore ejusdam privilegii fel. record. Joannis XXII. Prædecessoris nostri, dilectis filiis, Priori Generali et Fratribus et dilectis in Christo Filiabus sororibus confratribus, et Confratriæ Fratrum dicti ordinis Carmelitarum concessi, *per nos visi et diligenter inspecti, de dicto originali sumpto*, ut de ipso in posterum certitudo plenior habeatur, præsentibus fecimus annotari, qui talis est.”

Then follows the text, *in extenso*, of the Sabbatine Bull—
“*Sacratissimo uti culmine, &c.*” ¹Datum Romae 7 Dec. 1409.”
Apud Mariam Majorem.¹

The authenticity of this Bull has also been denied by Launoy, but the reasons he alleges for this denial have been shown by the authors we have quoted to be groundless. A very complete answer to these objections may be read in the *Bibliotheca Carmelitana* (T. 1, p. 51, et seq.) An authentic copy of this Bull signed by public notaries, judges, &c., who testify that they have compared it with the original and found it to correspond, was deposited in the archives of the Carmelite Fathers at Genoa, as may be learned from the *Speculum Carmelitanum* (T. 1, L. V., p. 543, cap. xii., et seq.) where a copy of it is given, and where its authenticity is clearly demonstrated. Other authentic copies were deposited at the Carmelite Convents of Messina, Mechlin, Cologne, Antwerp, Rome, and other places, as is proved in the *Speculum Carm.* (Tom. 1, cap. xii., p. 543).

John Palaeonydorus in his work *Fasciculus Tripartitus*, cap. xi., Arnold Botius in his *Speculum Hist.*, cap. vii., Baldinus Leersius in his *Collectaneum Exemplorum*, cap. vi., and others inform us, that the original of the Bull of John XXII., was conveyed to England, and an authentic copy of it kept at Genoa. This fact is also attested by a witness who will not be suspected of any bias in favour of the Bull, viz., Balacus, a renegade Carmelite Friar, who was named by Edward VI., Bishop of Ossory in Ireland. In his Catalogue of British writers, at the name N. Trineth, in the appendix, alluding not in friendly terms to the vision of John XXII., he thus writes:

“Istam apparitionem, &c., in quadam Bulla legi in Anglia; quae etiam Romae an. 1530 sub Clementi VII. renovata fuit.”

Theophilus Raynaud, the illustrious Jesuit writer, also gives clear testimony to the same fact. He thus writes in his work on the Scapular (Part 2, p. 2):—

“Joannes autographum Carmelitis ipsis tradidit, tamquam ad eos maxime attinens. Carmelitae autem variis apographis confectis

¹ Vide *Speculum Carmelitanum*, T. 1, p. 3, L. V., n. 2, 161.

et huc illucque transmissis, autographum ipsum ad Generalem Praepositum, ejus in Anglia sedes ordinaria erat, deferri curarunt, apud eum, in generali ordinis Tabulario cum aliis, magni momenti, Diplomatis aut Instrumentis asservandum."

The original of the Bull of Alexander V. was also transferred to England as we learn from the authentic copy of it, made Jan. 2nd, 1421, at the instance of Alphonsus de Theram, an Englishman, then Prior of the Convent of Captun, in the island of Majorca, afterwards Prior of the Convent of Coventry, England, who then took the original to be kept in the archives of the General in London. This copy was solemnly reduced to public form, before notaries, judges, &c. and kept at Genoa. Of this we are informed by Palaeonydorus, Botius, Leersius, &c.¹ An old authentic MS. copy, written in 1484, and kept at the Carmelite Convent, Mechlin, gives us similar information. These words are added to it—

"Haec est Bulla Joannis XXII. quam Alexander V. confirmavit, ejus originale dicitur fore in Anglia et in Conventu Januensi (Genoa) ejus Instrumentum authenticum." (V. *Spec. Carm.* T. 1., Pars. III., p. 544, n. 2158.)

It is confirmed by Fr. Paul of All Saints, in his *Clavis Aurea* (p. 2., c. 27) where he writes thus:—

"Singulari vero Divinae Providentiae beneficium adscribendum videtur, quod Alexander in suum Diploma, Bullam Joannis verbatim, integreque retulerit, quod paucis post annis, videlicet 1421, Diplomatis Alexandri publicum, authenticumque Majoricae instrumentum conficeretur, ad instantiam R. P. Alphonsi de Theramo Angli, qui autographum, seu Bullam originalem, Alexandri, quam Judicibus et Notariis legendam, inspiciendamque, ut iidem testantur, exhibuit, atque, in Angliam ubi Prioris munere fungebatur, erat asportaturus, una cum Bulla Joannis adservandam."

It may be asked why were these original and valuable documents brought to England and deposited there? The answer is, that, at that time, England was the most important and flourishing province of the Carmelite order, and the seat of the Prior General. There too were held many general chapters, in the first of which, after their

¹ Vide *Speculum Carm.*, T. 1, p. 562, n. 2204.

transmigration from Syria, St. Simon Stock was elected General. There too the latter was favoured with the heavenly vision in which he received the Scapular. The province too was remarkable for the number of its houses and the learning and piety of its members. Before the suppression of the monasteries by Henry VIII. it contained fifty-six convents and fifteen hundred religious. In attestation of these facts we may quote Pitsæus (*Lib. de viris illus. Angliæ agens de Carm.*). He says:—

“In Anglia plusquam in quacumque alia Europæ parte hunc ordinem floruisse constat; magisque abundasse et numero monasteriorum et doctorum virorum copia.”

Also Nicholas Herpfeldus, an English historian (*Hist. Ang., sec. 14, c. 17.*) Having enumerated many men of other orders illustrious for their piety and learning, he thus concludes:—

“Sed hos omnes et ceteros hoc seculo non modo singulos, sed universos non tantum exaequant, sed longe, ni fallor, in hac scriptionum palaestra, et laude librorum laborumque, magnitudine superant Carmelita.”¹

In the Convent of London were kept from the time of St. Simon Stock, the archives of the order in which were preserved important documents, treasures, apostolic diplomas and Bulls granted to the order. In proof of this, we can refer to the writings of John Grosius, John Bacho, Thomas Bradley, Bishop of Dromore, Leersius.²

From these writers we learn that some of the most important Bulls granted to the order were kept in the archives of the London Convent, the library of which was the largest and most valuable in London, as we read in the *Bibliotheca Carmelitana*, (T. II., p. 473). “*Bibliotheca Carmelitarum Londinensium deperit, multitudo et antiquitate superans omnes quotquot erant Londini 1420.*”

But alas! these glorious days of the Church in England were sadly changed by the wicked Henry VIII. Having rebelled against the Holy See, because it would not comply with his unlawful demands, he cast his avaricious eyes on the

¹ V. *Spec. Carm.* T. 1., p. 562.

² *Spec. Carm.* T. 1., p. 562, n. 2204.

rich monasteries, and resolved to replenish his coffers and those of his needy and greedy nobles, with their property. We need not go into the sad story of the suppression of those monasteries and the confiscation of their property. In this general destruction, the great Carmelite library of London shared the common fate of the other religious houses. It was taken possession of by the enemy ; its archives, documents, papal diplomas and Bulls relating to the order deposited there, were all seized, scattered or destroyed. It is not surprising, then, that, in this general overthrow and destruction, the original of the Sabbatine Bull, and that of Alexander V. which were deposited there, should be lost or destroyed.

That such was the fate of these Bulls, we have the testimony of George Colvenerius, Doctor of S. Theology and Chancellor of the University of Douay. In his work *Kalendarium Marianum* (Douay, 1638), he writes as follows, under the 7th December :—

“Hac die datum est Romae diploma apud S. Mariam Majorem Alexandri V. Pontificis, quae confirmat Bullam Joannis XXII.”

And afterwards he adds these words concerning the originals :—

“Diploma originale Joannis XXII. et Alexandri V. in Anglia periisse, ubi maxime florere hic solet ordo et Præpositus ordinis residere, ubi et commune totius congregationis erat Archivium, quod heretici violenta manu effregerunt.”

P. F. Daniel of the Virgin Mary, gives us similar testimony in his great work *Speculum Carmelitanum* (T. I., p. 562, c. 15).

But if these important Bulls have been lost or destroyed, many authentic copies of them remain as we have already seen. They have, too, been confirmed and ratified by many Popes. The first to do so was Clement VII. In his Bull “Ex clementi Sedis Apostolicæ,” he, by name, cites those of John XXII. and Alexander V., solemnly approves them, and ratifies their contents. This Bull is dated at St. Peter’s, Rome, August 12th 1530 (Vide *Bullarium Romanum* Cherub. T. 1, p. 683, item *Bullarium Carm.* Pars 2, p. 47, et seq.) Also that of Paul III. “Provisionis Nostræ,” 1534 (*Bullar. Carm.* T. 2, p. 68) of Paul IV. in his Bull dated 30th May, 1556, in which

he expressly cites those of John XXII., Alexander V., Clement VII., Paul III., and Julius III., and confirms them (*Bullar. Carm.* T. 2. p. 107); of Pius V. in his Bull "Superna dispositione, 1566; and of Gregory XIII. "Ut laudes," Rome, 18th September, 1577, in which he confirms the concessions of his predecessors, amongst whom he expressly mentions the names of John XXII. and Alexander V.¹

There are other Bulls to the same effect from other Sovereign Pontiffs in different ages of the Church which it is unnecessary to cite here. Now, it is worthy of remark that many of these Bulls mention the two fundamental Bulls of John XXII. and Alexander V., approve of them, and ratify their contents. These Popes would not surely quote these two Bulls, give them their approbation, and make them the foundation of their own if there was any doubt of their authenticity.

To these authorities we may add that of the Sacred Congregation of Rites, which has approved the lessons of the second nocturn of the Breviary for the feast of the solemn commemoration of the Blessed Virgin of Mount Carmel; and the decree of the Congregation of the Inquisition, under Paul V., February 15th, 1613, both confirmative of the privileges of the Sabbatine Bull.²

To the proofs we have already given of the authenticity of the Bulls in question, we may add the authority of the theological faculties of different universities. An agitation having been raised in Spain about the year 1566, against the devotion of the scapular, the matter was referred to the University of Salamanca for consideration. Four of its most learned doctors were deputed to examine it, and their unanimous decision was that the Sabbatine Bull and those of the other Sovereign Pontiffs relating to it, were authentic, and that the Carmelites could enjoy the privileges contained in them. (*Spec. Carm.* T. 1, p. 567).

The College of Sorbonne gave similar attestation. Eight of its learned doctors having examined the Bulls and considered the question, solemnly declared:—

"Indulgentiam Sabbatinam juxta tenorem Pauli V. publicandam asserendamque. August 19th, 1648."—(*Spec. Carm.* T. 1, p. 561.)

Bullar. Carm., T. 2, p. 194.

² *V. Spec. Carm.*, T. 1, p. 491.

In the year 1609, the University of Bologna gave a similar decision, adding :—

“Cum Bulla Joannis XXII. plures illasque Canonicas prae se ferat Summorum Pontificum confirmatorias constitutiones, nec ullo unquam tempore revocata fuerit, illam adhuc in suo robore manere.”

This is signed by six doctors and others.¹

We have, in our opinion, adduced sufficient authority to prove that the Bulls of John XXII. and Alexander V. are genuine. Launoy's condemned and oft-refuted “superabundance of reasons,” disinterred by the writer of the article in the *Catholic Dictionary* has no foundation. These “reasons” are based on audacious assumptions, and false statements. The book containing them has been placed on the index of prohibited books, and the objections raised therein have been satisfactorily answered and completely refuted by the authors to whom we have referred the reader.

We shall now consider the next assertion of the writer in the *Catholic Dictionary*, viz.: that the Bull of John XXII. has no place in the Roman Bullarium. Does it hence follow that it must be a forgery? By no means. There are many other Bulls issued by Sovereign Pontiffs that have no place in the Roman Bullarium, and yet their authenticity and the privileges conceded by them have not been questioned. John XXII. reigned as Pope for nineteen years, and during that long period transacted many important negotiations and issued many Bulls, and yet only few of them are now in existence. The rest have been lost. When we consider the stormy times in which he lived, that the Popes were obliged to live in exile at Avignon, exposed to the attacks of their enemies, we can easily account for the loss of these documents. Alphonsus Ciaconius in his history of the Popes, relates that the heretics and enemies of the Church invaded the palace of John XXII., and with violent hands opened the public archives, and destroyed the documents of the Apostolic Chancery, chiefly those issued by John. The same historian relates that Alexander V. issued some Bulls of which not one is now extant. The same fate befell Bulls and other important docu-

¹ *Spec. Carm.*, P. Daniel, T. 1, p. 571.

ments of other Popes during those stormy times. (V. *Spec. Carm.* T. 1, p. 560).

The Roman Bullarium does not profess to embrace all the Bulls ever issued. The first who compiled the Roman Bullarium was Laertius Cherubinus. He collected the Bulls from the reign of St. Leo the Great to that of Sixtus V. There are many Bulls of preceding Popes, however, not contained in this Bullarium, and few indeed of John XXII. and of Alexander V. Spondanus and Bzorius in their annals (*Ad an.* 1409), Renatus Cloppin and others cite many Bulls of Alexander V., not one of which is mentioned in the Bullarium of Cherubinus.

The next assertion of this article is that the authenticity of the Sabbatine Bull is unhesitatingly denied by the great Bollandist Papebroch in his reply to the attack made on him by the Carmelites and by Benedict XIV. The writer could not have selected a more unreliable witness on this subject than Papebroch ; for it is well known that a warm controversy was carried on for a long time between him and the Carmelites, concerning their origin, antiquity, &c. To such lengths was the controversy carried, that Innocent XII., while leaving the matter in dispute undecided, deemed it necessary to put an end to the controversy by imposing perpetual silence on the matter in dispute, by a Constitution dated 20th November, 1698, commencing, “Redemptoris Domini Nostri.” To show, however, that the Carmelites had the best of the argument, it may be mentioned that Benedict XIII. thought fit to break this silence, by permitting a statue of St. Elias to be erected in the Basilica of St. Peter at Rome, amongst those of the founders of other religious orders, with the following title written by the Pope’s own hand, “Sancto Eliæ Fundatori suo, Religio Carmelitarum erexit.”

The controversy was carried on chiefly between Papebroch and Father Sebastian of St. Paul, Provincial of the Belgian Carmelites, and Professor of Theology at the University of Louvain. The latter wrote a work entitled, *Exhibitio errorum quos P. Daniel Papebrochius suis in notis ad acta Sanctorum commisit* (Coloniæ Agrippinæ, 1693), in which he convicts Papebroch of over two hundred errors. In page 100 of this

work the author ably defends the Sabbatine Bull against Launoy and Papebroch, and puts its authenticity beyond question. At page 641 of the same book he accuses and convicts Papebroch of following, imitating, and quoting Launoy, the enemy of the Holy See, the contemner of Papal Bulls, the calumniator of saints and religious orders, the sneerer at and reviler of religious practices, whose works have nearly all been condemned by the Sacred Congregation of the Index. In support of the accusations he quotes the celebrated Jesuit writer Theophilus Raynaud, who thus describes the character of Launoy—

“Probat deinde Raynaudus Launoyum esse turbidum, inquietum garrulum, truculentum, alienae famae lanium, necnon infrunitum calumniatorem ac mendacem, omni proinde fide humana indignum.”

Then our author adds—

“Quae Papebrochium non videntur potuisse latere. Unde satis mirari non possum, quod hominem adeo infamem, ejus omnia fere opuscula ab Ecclesia sunt damnata, pro se citari audeat, dum Joannis XXII. Bullam a successoribus *proprio motu et ex certa scientia*, toties confirmatam, cum isto solo calumniatore et sedis Bullarum Pontificae contemptore, in opusculo ejus damnato proclamat esse *nullius fidei*.”

When we consider that the Sabbatine Bull has been approved and confirmed by many Popes, that it has been examined and sanctioned by the theological faculties of universities, that the objections raised against it have been again and again refuted by many able and learned writers, the fact that Papebroch agrees with Launoy in affirming that it is of doubtful authenticity has very little weight indeed, especially as the work containing Launoy's “superabundance of reasons” is condemned by the Holy See.

The writer of the article next produces two passages from Benedict XIV. (or rather the pious and learned Cardinal Lambertinus, for he had not been elevated to the Pontifical throne when he wrote the words quoted) which seem to bear the interpretation, that the learned Cardinal held that the Sabbatine Bull was of doubtful authenticity. Nothing could be more injurious to the memory of that great Pontiff than such an insinuation, for it is well known, that he took up his pen to defend it against the attacks of Launoy and Papebroch. We cannot admire the candour of the writer in quoting these passages, whilst at the same time he leaves unquoted other

passages of the same learned Pope in which he clearly affirms that it is genuine.

First let us see if these quotations bear the meaning the writer of the article would have us infer. "It is" thus runs the quotation "as hard, perhaps harder to believe in this Bull than in the story of the chapel built on Mount Carmel in honour of the Blessed Virgin during her life." But there is no difficulty in believing the latter, for it is an historical fact, supported by the authority of the Sacred Congregation of Rites, the received tradition of the whole order, and the testimony of different trustworthy writers, as may be seen in *Speculum Carm.* (T. 1. pars 2, page 355, n. 1455 et alibi). The next quotation is "He says he could give more reasons against it than he cares to produce and arguments drawn from things (in the Bull) which want all appearance of truth." The words "in the Bull" is a gloss of the writer. The writer then adds "He alludes we suppose to the style of the Bull which as Launoy points out, betrays in many ways the hand of the impostor."

Benedict XIV. says more reasons could be produced against the Bull if it should appear to him profitable or expedient (*si nobis videretur conducibile*). But evidently he did not deem it profitable to produce them. But what were these reasons? According to the writer of the article, they were, he supposes, some of Launoy's, which we may add, have been condemned by the Holy See, and refuted by many able and learned writers.

Now, Benedict XIV. clearly teaches and defends the authenticity of the Sabbatine Bull, both in his work *De Festis*, and his other great work *De Servorum Dei Beatificatione, &c.* In the former work (Tom. 2, p. 326, cap. lxx. et seq., Lovanii 1761), having stated reasons in favour of the Bull, in chapter 78, he says: "all the difficulties that could be brought against both the vision of St. Simon Stock and the Sabbatine Bull, have been removed, both by the wise disquisitions of learned men and by the decree of the Sovereign Pontiff."¹

¹ "Ea omnia, quae tum in B. Stokii visione tum in Sabbatina Bulla difficultatem creare poterant, et sapientibus doctorum virorum animadversionibus, et Romani Pontificis decreto sublata sint."

In the latter work he writes also in favour of the scapular. Having alluded to the difficulties raised against it by Launoy and Papebroch, he adds: "But the genuineness of the Sabbatine Bull, and many things in vindication of the afore-said matters (viz., the privileges of the scapular) can be read in the work of Theophilus Raynaud, entitled *Scapulare Marianum illustratum*." (Tom. 7.)¹

It is clearly evident, therefore, that Benedict XIV. was a strenuous defender of the Sabbatine Bull and its privileges.

We have said, we think, enough to prove that the strictures against the Sabbatine Bull contained in the first question discussed in the article of the *Catholic Dictionary* are groundless, and contrary to the belief and instincts of Catholics. With the editor's permission, we purpose in another article, to examine the difficulties raised on the second question discussed in the *Catholic Dictionary*, viz.: "The Vision of the Blessed Virgin to St. Simon Stock, and and the promises made to him."

JOHN E. BARTLEY, O.C.C.

THE MOZARABIC RITE.

OVERRUN as continental Europe now is with tourists of every kind and of every nation, Spain is comparatively speaking unknown. Yet there is much in this country to interest anyone, and to a Catholic few lands could be more fascinating. Among the most interesting spots in Spain is the conical hill, almost surrounded by the Tagus, on whose summit is Toledo, the See of the Primate of Spain. Its cathedral is unique, in that the Divine Office is always recited in it by two choirs according to two Rites. The Office of the Roman Rite is said in the magnificent *Coro*; and in a small chapel, the *Capilla Muzaraba*, situated at the

¹ "Sed Bullæ Sabbatinæ veritas et multa pro dictarum rerum vindicatione legi possunt apud Theophilum Raynaudum in opusculo cui titulus *Scapulare Marianum*." (V. *Act de Beat.*, &c., L. iv., Pars. 2, cap. ix., no. 10).

S. W. corner of the church, is said that of the Mozarabic Rite. The majority of the few tourists who visit Toledo, for the most part thinking two or three hours, the interval between two trains, time enough, see this chapel, but know very little of the Rite to which it is devoted. Some, indeed, I met there who expected to find something, they did not quite know what, going on in Arabic.

The ancient Spanish Liturgy was introduced by St. Torquatus, and in all essential matters closely resembled the Roman. But after the Gothic invasion, the old Spanish Liturgy got tainted with Arianism. In 633, at the fourth Council of Toledo, presided over by St. Isidore of Seville, the Bishops of Spain reformed their Liturgy, and made the reformed use obligatory throughout Spain and Narbonne. At the beginning of the eighth century Spain was overrun by the Moors, who applied the terms "Mostarabuna" to the natives who yielded to them, whence the Spanish Liturgy received the name of *Muzarabic* or *Mozarabica*. During the period of Moorish rule this liturgy became very corrupt, and some phrases in it seemed to favour the adoptionist heresy. Early in the ninth century, after a lengthened correspondence between Rome and Spain, the objectionable passages were removed, and the liturgy declared to be orthodox. At the beginning of the eleventh century a council was held at S. Juan de la Pena, at which Sancho Ramirez, King of Arragon, induced the Bishops to supersede the Gothic Rite by the Gregorian or Roman. This decision was confirmed by the Council of Burgos in 1085; but as there was a party eager in support of the ancient national Rite, it was determined to submit the matter to the judgment of God. A fire was made, into which each Missal was to be thrown in turn, victory being with the one which remained uninjured. The story relates that the Roman Missal was first thrown in, and immediately bounded out uninjured. The national one was then subjected to the test, and remained intact in the fire. This was accepted as a judgment that both were good, and so both were tolerated.

The Roman Rite, however, gradually superseded the Gothic, and in the thirteenth century the latter was not used

in any cathedral. At the end of the fifteenth, it was not used anywhere. In 1498, the celebrated Franciscan, Francis Ximenes de Cisneros, was appointed Archbishop of Toledo; and he immediately set himself to restore the national liturgy. In the year 1500, he printed the Missal, making a few changes which brought it into greater conformity with the Roman one. In this same year he founded a college of priests to whom he assigned the duty of daily saying Mass and Office according to the Spanish Rite. He built a chapel for them adjoining the cathedral and opening from it: at the present time there is nothing of any great beauty in the *Capilla Muzaraba* itself, the most striking object being a fresco of Cardinal Ximenes before the walls of Oran, which he besieged and took in 1509. In 1502 was printed the Breviary which is still used by the chaplains. It is a remarkable book, and the Offices differ very much from the Roman; as an example, it may be mentioned that the *Gloria in Excelsis* is said at Prime. There are twelve chaplains, and two sacristans (priests) attached to the chapel, the head chaplain being a canon of the cathedral. The fourteen priests who are appointed to the Mozarabic Chapel, enjoy the privilege of using their Missal and Breviary in any part of the world.

As this Rite is not very generally known, and the Missals somewhat scarce, a sketch of the chief differences between the Roman and Mozarabic ordinaries of the Mass may be of interest to liturgical students. In the first place, the translation of the Scriptures used is not that of the Vulgate: it is older than St. Jerome's, and is very similar to, but not exactly the same as, the *Versio Italica* still used in St. Peter's at Rome. It is the only Rite in the Latin Church in which the distinction between the *Missa Catechumenorum* and the *Missa Fidelium* is maintained; this distinction being still retained in the Missal. *Alleluia* is always used even in Lent and in Requiems; perhaps this is one of the effects of the constant intercourse between Constantinople and Spain in ancient times. There are other traces of Eastern uses in the Rite, notably in the constant admonitions made to the people by the Deacon, the Sanctus being repeated in Greek, and the *Sancta Sanctis*.

The priest says the *Kyrie* and *Pater Noster* in the Sacristy after vesting, and then proceeds to the foot of the altar where he says an *Ave*, the *Judica me Deus*, the *Confiteor* and some versicles, after which the *Aufer a nobis*. This preparation was added by Cardinal Ximenes, the old Missals prescribing nothing before the priest went to the altar. The *Confiteor* differs from the Roman, and there are more versicles. On great feasts, before the priest ascends to the altar he says an antiphon, commencing "Per gloriam nominis tui." On the Sundays in Lent some prayers are said before the *Judica*, the priest kneeling and holding the covered chalice.

On arriving at the altar the priest makes the sign of the cross over it saying *In nomine Patris &c.*, kisses it and says the Antiphon :

Salve crux pretiosa, quae Corpori Christi dedicata es, et ex membris Ejus tamquam margaritis ornata ; salva præsentem catervam in tuis laudibus congregatam.

This is followed by a versicle and response, and five prayers, after which the priest extends the Corporal saying :

In tuo conspectu, quæsumus, Domine, hæc nostra munera Tibi placita sint, ut nos tibi placere valeamus. Attollite portas principes vestras, et elevamini portæ æternales et introibit Rex Gloriæ. Quis est iste Rex Gloriæ ? Dominus fortis et potens in prælio, Dominus virtutum ipse est Rex Gloriæ.

Then cleansing the chalice he says :

Misce Domine, in calice isto quod manavit ex latere tuo, ut fiat in remissionem peccatorum nostrorum. Amen.

He blesses the water, using the words :

Ab illo benedicatur, cujus spiritus super aquas ferebatur. In nomine Patris et Filii et Spiritus Sancti. Amen.

He then mixes wine and water in the chalice, saying :

Ex latere D.N.J.C. sanguis et aqua profluxisse perhibentur. Hæc ideo nos pariter commiscemus, ut misericors Deus utrumque ad medelam animarum nostrarum sanctificare dignetur. Per eundem, &c.

After which the priest blesses the Host :

Benedictio Dei Patris omnipotentis, et Filii et Spiritus Sancti, descendat super hanc hostiam tibi Deo Patri offerendam. Amen.

The Host is placed on the paten ; and it may be observed that it never rests on the corporal.

Then follows the *Office* as the Introit is called, as in the Carthusian, Dominican and Sarum Missals. This is said at the Epistle corner, and is followed by the *Gloria in Excelsis*, except on the Sunday before the Nativity of St. John Baptist, called the Advent of St. John, ferias, fasts, the Sundays in Lent, after the first, and Requiems, on which days the *Benedictus* is said instead. Then follows the Collect and a Lection from the Prophets: after which, in virtue of a decree of the Fourth Council of Toledo, on Sundays and feasts of Martyrs the *Benedicite* is said. After the Lection, or *Benedicite*, is a responsory very similar to the Gradual, and then the Epistle, to which is responded, *Amen*; *Deo Gratias* being said after the announcement of the title. Before reading the Gospel the priest says *Silentium facite*, and when he kisses the book at the end:

Ave verbum Divinum, reformatio virtutum, restitutio sanitatum.

To the Gospel is responded *Amen*: and it may be noted that it is announced "*Lectio Evangelii secundum . . .*" whilst for the Epistle is said "*Sequentia Epistolæ . . .*" After the Gospel come the *Laudes*, which are always of the following form:

V. Dominus sit semper vobiscum.

R. Et cum spiritu tuo.

Lauda. Alleluia . . . (Proper) . . . Alleluia.

Then follows the Offertory which contains the following invocation of the Holy Ghost:

Veni Sancte Spiritus, sanctificator, sanctifica hoc sacrificium de manibus meis tibi praeparatum.

The priest asks for the prayers of the people, turning to them for the only time during the sacrifice:

P. Adjuvat me, fratres, in orationibus vestris et orate pro me ad Deum.

Ch. Adjuvat te Pater et Filius et Spiritus Sanctus.

Whilst the choir sing the "Sacrificium," the priest blesses the water with three fingers in silence; he then washes his hands, says the *Lavabo* and a prayer.

Here in the Missals is found the rubric *Incipit Missa*.

The *Missa Fidelium* begins with :

P. Dominus sit semper vobiscum.

Ch. Et cum spiritu tuo.

Some prayers follow which are proper to the feast, after which the priest says *Oremus*, and the choir sing :

Agios, Agios, Agios, Domine Rex aeterne. Tibi laudes et gratias.

After a prayer for the Church, the rubric prescribes a short sermon on the mystery of the day. Then the names on the *Diptychs*, or which were formerly on the diptychs, are recited as follows :

P. Per misericordiam tuam, Deus noster in conspectu sanctorum apostolorum, et martyrum, et confessorum, atque virginum nomina recitantur. *Choir.* Amen.

P. Offerunt Deo Domino oblationem sacerdotes nostri, Papa Romensis, et reliqui, pro se et pro omni clero ac plebibus ecclesiae sibimet consignatis, vel pro universa fraternitate ; ita offerunt universi presbyteri, diaconi, clerici, ac populi circumstantes in honorem Sanctorum pro se ac suis.

Choir. Offerunt pro se et pro universa fraternitate.

P. Facientes commemorationem beatificorum apostolorum ac martyrum, gloriosae Sanctae Mariae Virginis, Zachariae, Johannis, Infantum, Petri, Pauli, Johannis, Jacobi, Andrea, Philippi, Thomae, Bartholomaei, Matthaei, Jacobi, Simonis et Judae, Matthiae, Marci, et Lucae.

Choir. Et omnium Martyrum.

P. Item pro spiritu pausantium Hilarii, Athanasii, Martini, Ambrosii, Augustini, Fulgentii, Leandri, Isidori. . . . [Then follow the names of thirty-eight others, mostly Archbishops of Toledo : strange to say that of S. Ildephonsus is not amongst them.]

Choir. Et omnium pausantium.

After the names have been recited, some prayers (proper) are said and then the *par* is thus given ; the priest stretches his hands towards Heaven and says :

Gratia Dei Omnipotentis, Pax et dilectio Domini nostri Jesu Christi, et communicatio Spiritus Sancti sit semper cum omnibus nobis.

Choir. Et cum hominibus bonae voluntatis.

Priest. Quomodo astatu pacem facite.

Choir. Pacem meam do vobis, pacem meam commendo vobis,

Non sicut mundus dat pacem, do vobis.

Novum mandatum do vobis ut diligatis invicem.

Pacem meam, &c.

Gloria et honor Patri et Filio et Spiritui Sancto

In saecula saeculorum. Amen.

Pacem meam, &c.

The priest saying: "Habetote osculum dilectionis et pacis, ut apti sitis sacrosanctis mysteriis Dei," takes the Pax from the paten whilst the choir sings "Pacem meam:" he gives it to the deacon, or server, who in turn gives it to the people.

Then follows :

Priest. Introibo ad altare Dei.

Choir. Ad Deum qui lactificat juventutem meam.

Priest. Aures ad Dominum.

Choir. Habemus ad Dominum.

Priest. Sursum corda.

Choir. Levemus ad Dominum.

Priest. (inclining) Deo ac Domino nostro Jesu Christo Filio Dei, qui est in coelis, dignes laudes, dignasque [here he raises his hands] gratias referamus.

Choir. Dignum et justum est.

After which is said the Preface, or as it is called the *Inlatio* or Inference; because, Cardinal Bona suggests, the priest infers from the response of the people that it is "right and just" to offer the Sacrifice. After the Preface, which is proper for every Sunday and Festival, comes the Sanctus as with us: the words "*Agios, Agios, Agios, Kyrie o Theos*" being added to it. The priest says a prayer, which is proper, and then comes the *Canon*, which is very short, as will be seen:

Adesto, adesto, "Jesu bone Pontifex, in medio nostri sicut fuisti in medio discipulorum tuorum. Sanctifica hanc oblationem ut sanctificata ✠ sumamus per manus sancti Angeli tui, sancte Domine ac redemptor aeternae. Dominus noster Jesus Christus in qua nocte tradebatur accepit panem et gratias agens benedixit, ac fregit, deditque discipulis suis dicens: accipite et manducate, Hoc est Corpus meum quod pro vobis tradetur: (*Hic elevetur corpus*). Quotiescumque manducaveritis, hoc facite in meam ✠ commemorationem. Similiter et calicem postquam coenavit dicens: Hic est enim calix sanguinis mei, novi et aeterni testamenti, mysterium fidei, qui pro vobis et pro multis effundetur in remissionem peccatorum (*Hic elevetur calix coopertus cum jiliola*). Quotiescumque biberitis, hoc facite in meam commemorationem. *Choir.* Amen.

Quotiescumque manducaveritis panem hunc et calicem istum biberitis, mortem Domini annunciabitis donec veniat in claritatem ✠ de coelis. *Choir.* Amen.

The rubric directs the priest to say the words "in meam commemorationem," and "claritatem de coelis" *alta voce*

omnibus diebus praeter festivas. The old form for the consecration of the Chalice was, “*Hic est calix novi Testamenti in meo sanguine, qui pro vobis et pro multis effundetur in remissionem peccatorum.*”

The Canon is succeeded by a prayer (proper), after which the priest holds the Sacred Host over the uncovered chalice and says :

Dominus sit semper vobiscum.

Choir. Et cum spiritu tuo.

Priest. Fidem quam corde credimus ore autem dicamus.

The priest elevates the Sacred Host, and the choir say the Creed, two and two ; this is only said, however, on feasts of four or six copes, within octaves, and on Sundays for which there is no proper Antiphon “*ad confractionem panis.*” The form of the Nicene Creed used, differs in some particulars from that in the Roman Missal. It runs thus :

Credimus in unum Deum invisibilium conditorem. Et in unum Dominum nostrum Jesum Deo vero natum non factum, Omousion Patri hoc est ejusdem cum Patre substantiae ; per quem omnia facta sunt quae in coelo et quae in terrâ ; qui propter factus est. Passus sub Pontio Pilato. Tertia die resurrexit. Ascendit ad coelum sedet ad dexteram Patris omnipotentis. Inde venturus est judicare vivos Et in spiritum sanctum Dominum vivificantem, et ex Patre et Filio procedentem, cum Patre et Filio adorandum et conglorificandum Ecclesiam. Confitemur unum peccatorum. Expectamus resurrectionem saeculi. Amen.

The priest divides the Host into two portions, one of which is at once divided into four, the other into five portions. Each particle is known by a particular name and the nine are thus arranged on the paten :—

	Corporatio.	
Mors.	Nativitas.	Resurrectio.
	Circumcisio.	Gloria.
	Apparitio.	Regnum.
	Passio.	

When the priest has divided the sacred Host, he cleanses his fingers, covers the chalice and makes the *Memento of the living*, for which there is no special form. He then

says the *Preface to the Pater Noster*, and the prayer itself in this form, which is also used in the Breviary offices :

Priest. Pater noster qui es in coelis.

Choir. Amen.

Priest. Sanctificetur nomen tuum.

Choir. Amen.

Priest. Adveniat regnum tuum.

Choir. Amen.

Priest. Fiat voluntas tua sicut in coelo et in terra.

Choir. Amen.

Priest. Panem nostrum quotidianum da nobis hodie.

Choir. Quia Deus es.

Priest. Et dimitte nobis debita nostra, sicut et nos dimittimus debitoribus nostris.

Choir. Amen.

Priest. Et ne nos inducas in tentationem.

Choir. Sed libera nos a malo. Amen.

After the *Pater* the priest says a prayer, and taking the particle *Regnum* holds it over the chalice saying :

Sancta Sanctis et conjunctio corporis Domini nostri Jesu Christi sit sumentibus et potantibus nobis ad veniam, et defunctis fidelibus praestetur ad requiem.

During Paschal tide and the octave of Corpus Christi instead of *Sancta Sanctis*, he says :

Vicit Leo de tribu Juda. Alleluia.

To which the choir responds :

Qui sedes super cherubim radix David. Alleluia.

This is repeated three times.

After the *Sancta Sanctis*, or *Vicit Leo*, the particle is placed in the chalice which is then covered. After this the priest, or deacon if there be one, says :

Humiliate vos benedictioni.

The blessing, which is proper, is in four parts, to each of which *Amen* is answered. The choir then sings :

Gustate et videte quoniam suavis est Dominus.

P. Alleluia. Alleluia. Alleluia.

Ch. Benedicam Dominum in omni tempore semper laus ejus in ore meo.

P. Alleluia. Alleluia. Alleluia.

Ch. Redimet Dominus animas servorum suorum, et non delinquentur omnes qui sperant in eum.

P. Alleluia. Alleluia. Alleluia.

Ch. Gloria et honor Patri, et Filio, et Spiritui Sancto in saecula saeculorum.

P. Alleluia. Alleluia. Alleluia.

The priest takes the particle *Gloria*, and holds it over the chalice saying :

Panem caelestem de mensa Domini accipiam et nomen Domini invocabo.

Still holding It over the chalice he makes, without any special form, the *Memento of the Dead*.

He then says two prayers ; after which he consumes the particle *Gloria* and then the others. After another prayer he consumes the Precious Blood, and then says the *Prayer for Stability* :

Domine Deus meus, Pater et Filius et Spiritus Sanctus, fac me te semper quaerere et diligere, et a te per hanc sanctam communionem quam sumi, nunquam recedere, quia tu es Deus, praeter te non est alius in saecula saeculorum. Amen.

During which the choir sings :

Refecti Christi corpore et sanguine te laudamus Domine.
Alleluia. Alleluia. Alleluia.

The priest says the Communion and a prayer, both proper, and then :

Per misericordiam tuam, Deus noster, qui es benedictus et vivis et omnia regis in saecula saeculorum. Amen.

Dominus sit semper vobiscum.

Ch. Et cum spiritu tuo.

Standing in the middle of the altar the priest, or deacon if there be one, says :

Solemnia completa sunt in nomine Domini nostri Jesu Christi, votum nostrum fit acceptum cum pace.

R. Deo gratias.

Then kneeling the priest says the *Salve Regina* with the prayer *Concede nos famulos*, after which turning to the people he blesses them :

In unitate Sancti Spiritus benedicat vos Pater et Filius. *R.* Amen.

And so the Mass ends.

High Mass is only sung in the *Capilla Mazaraba* of Toledo Cathedral once a month, when there is a requiem for the soul of Cardinal Ximenes. There are two other churches in Toledo where this Rite is permitted, but I believe it is only used in them once a year. In the cathedral of Salamanca it is used on all the great feasts of the year. With these exceptions, the Rite has become obsolete.

I will conclude by mentioning a few peculiarities in the arrangement of the calendar, and the names of feasts. *Advent* has six Sundays; the *fourth Sunday of Lent* is called the *first Sunday of the Passion*, the fifth Sunday being the *second of the Passion*. December 18th is the feast of the *Annuntiatio B. M. V.*; the Epiphany is styled the *Apparitio D. N. J. C.*; Easterday, *In Laetatione diei Paschae Resurrectionis D. N. J. C.*; May the 1st is dedicated to St. Philip only, whilst December 29th is the feast of St. James, *brother of the Lord*. On July 16th there is a feast *Triumphus Sanctæ Crucis*. On Holy Saturday there is no Mass; and during Christmastide there is a special antiphon B. M. V. in the Office.

E. W. BECK.

THE HOLY WELLS OF IRELAND.—WESTMEATH.

IT is interesting to notice in the Lives of St. Patrick many references to wells and fountains, made use of by the Apostle in baptizing the pagan Irish. Before we draw attention to Westmeath holy wells, their traditions and locality it may not be out of place to follow for a short way St. Patrick's footsteps. We find that Hercus, or Erc was baptized at Tara, in the fountain or well of Loigles¹. The event is thus

¹ Loigles—Laog is a calf in Irish. We find the name in the form of Lee as Ballinree in Longford and Wicklow, *i.e.*, "The Ford Mouth of the Calves." (See Joyce's *Irish Names of Places*.)

recorded in *Documenta de St. Patricio ex libro Armachano*:¹—“Et venierunt ad fontem Loigles in Scotica nobiscum Vitulus Civitatum.”

St. Patrick's interview with, and conversion of, King Laoghaire's daughters at Cruachan is mentioned in the Tripartite.

“Patrick went afterwards to the fountain, *i.e.*, Clibech, at the slopes of Cruachan at sunrise. The clerics sat down at the fountain, Laeghaire MacNeill's two daughters, viz., Eithne the Fair, and Feidelm the Red, went early to the fountain to wash their hands, as they were wont to do, when they found the synod of clerics at the well with white garments, and their books before them, etc.”

Then follow St. Patrick's instructions to the maidens, and their interrogations as to the existence of God and the spiritual life. The same events are narrated in the *Book of Armagh*, beginning thus—

“Deinde autem venit Sanctus Patricius ad fontem qui dicitur *Clebach* in lateribus Crochan, etc.”²

There is still a well at the Rath which is surrounded by a double ditch.³

The next allusion to wells in the Tripartite is found in St. Patrick's foundation at Cill-Garad (now Oran, Co. Roscommon)—⁴

“Then it was that Patrick made the well which is called *Uaran-garad*, and he loved this water very much, ut ipse dixit

Uaran-gar, Uaran-gar

O Well; which I have loved, which loved me.

Alas! my cry O dear God,

That my drink is not from the pure well.”⁵

Patrick went to Gregraidh, of Lough Techet,⁶ founded a church there, and dug a well thereat, and no stream went into, or came out of it, but it was always full, and its name

¹ Edited with preface and notes by the learned Jesuit, Rev. Edmund Hogan, S.J.

² *Hodie Rath Croghan (Documenta, etc., E. Hogan, S.J.)*

³ *Life of St. Patrick* by Miss Cusack, p. 291.

⁴ See Lanigan's *Ecclesiastical History of Ireland*. Vol II., pp. 244-6.

⁵ Tripartite Life.—W. M. Hennessy. *Apud Cusack's Life of St. Patrick.*

⁶ *Hodie Lough Gara—Sligo.*

is *Bithlan*, i.e., ever full. In the *Book of Armagh* the event is referred to—

“Et perrexit ad tractum Gregirgi,¹ et fundavit ecclesiam in Drummae et fontem fodivit in eo [loco, et aqua non] exfluit in se et de se, [sed] plenus semper et perennis est.”

One other reference to St. Patrick's wells will suffice for this article. Again quoting the Tripartite, we find—

“Patrick went to Tobar Finmaighe, i.e., a Well. It was told to St. Patrick that the pagans honoured this well as a God. The well was four cornered, and there was a four-cornered stone over its mouth, and the foolish people believed that a certain dead prophet made it, etc.”

The *Book of Armagh* says :

“Et venit ad fontem Findmaige qui dicitur Slan
Fons vero quadratus fuit, et petra quadrata erat in ore fontis, etc.”

Westmeath with portion of Longford included the district known as *Teghja*, as far back as the time of St. Patrick; a tradition assigns a holy well under his protection at Usneach, near which he preached the Gospel; no traces of the well are identified. The well in the parish of Rathconrath has St. Patrick for its patron. St. Odran's well is situated near the old church of Kilkeiran, Castlejordan parish. Odran was St. Patrick's charioteer, who saved his master's life by sacrificing his own. There are other *Odrans* if we mistake not, among the Irish saints. The Bollandists mention one of the name (not *Odran* the Martyr.) There was Odran, Monk of Derry, who died A.D. 563 at Iona, and was interred there; he was son of Aingin, who was grandson of Conall Gulban. (See Ordnance Survey of Derry, by Colonel Colby). St. Fintan's well is at Briarstown, in the parish of Dysart. It was much frequented some years ago. St. Fintan was known by the name Munna, the oldest notice of him is given in his Acts preserved in Marsh's Library, Dublin, in the Codex Marsh.³

¹ Vel Gregraidi (E. Hogan, S.J., in *Documenta de S. Patricio*).

² Collectanea Tirechani—apud *Documenta de S. Patricio*, Rev. Edmund Hogan, S.J. This circumstance also mentioned in Jocelyn's Life of St. Patrick (translated from the Latin by E. L. Swift.)

³ See *Christian Biography* (Smith and Wace.)

He was of the *Hy Nial* race. St. Fintan's life as quoted by Ware begins—

“Fuit vir vitæ venerabilis nomine Munnu de claro genere Hiberniæ insulæ; idem de nepotibus Neil cujus pater vocabitur Tulcanus, mater vero Feidelmia dicebatur.”

Lanigan suggests that the name or surname Munnu may have some reference to the *Maine* (?) branch of that family. Fintan died A.D. 630. He founded Taghmon in Wexford, and most probably Taghmon in Westmeath. St. Diarmaid,¹ Bishop of Inis-Clothrann,² has a well under his invocation in the parish of Mayne—Anglicised, Darby. He was of the race of Fiachra maternally descended from Dubtach, chief poet to Laoghaire. Of Diarmaid it was said—“Ex monacho factus est sacerdos et sacerdote Abbas, et Abbate episcopus.” St. Diarmaid flourished in the sixth century. In the parish of Bunowen there is a well dedicated to the Blessed Virgin called “Tobermurry or Lady Well.” Stations were held there on 8th September in former times.

At the hill of Usneach³ is Tobar Amhaill—Saint Avell's well. At Kilmaglish is Fons S. Patricii. In the parish of Killucan there was formerly a holy well, now dried up—“Mionad's well.” A legend is attached to it which O'Donovan remarks as being a very general story of holy wells throughout Ireland. A woman, it is said, washed clothes in Mionad's well, in consequence of which profanation the well became dried up and broke out in the townland of Rathnarrow about half a mile from the original locality. There is a tradition preserved at Killucan that St. Mionad ni-Aimligh was of the O'Hanly family,⁴ and that she came from Roscommon to Killucan, and became patron of the parish. At Drumrany Saint Enan or Henan's festival was kept on the 19th August; his

¹ St. Diarmaid's ivory statue was preserved for a long time in the Island of Lough Ree. To preserve it from vandalism, it was buried in the earth, but was afterwards removed by a priest. (See Colgan's *Acta Sanctorum*—Vita S. Diermitii. Cap. vi.

² In Lough Ree.

³ *Uisnïoch*, the seat of one of the royal palaces of Ancient Erin, founded by Tuathal. The Druidic Rites were celebrated there; and a tract of land bestowed upon the Druid who lit the first fire in Erin. (See Keating and Irish Histories *passim*.)

⁴ Ordnance Survey Papers. Westmeath.

holy well is still held in reverence by the people. In the barony of Rathconrath is Disert Maeltuile, *viz.*, Maeltuile's "Desert" or "Wilderness;" Tobar Multilly used to be frequented 29th May. In the Martyrology of Donegal the following entry is inserted:—

"May 29th. *Maeltuile's Baculus*, or pastoral staff works miracles on perjurers before they go out of the church, his well, and his yellow bell, and his Baculus and his statue are there still."

Saint Aidus, or Hugh has always been held in great reverence by the Westmeath people. He was Bishop of Killare; at Foyran there is a well dedicated to him, and at Killare, Colgan mentioned three miraculous fountains, the waters of which turned a neighbouring mill. At Kilbixy there is Saint Bigsech's well. She was of the race of Fiachra. S. Bigsecha filia Bressalii colitur 28 June (*Acta*, Colgan). In the parish of Killucan, about half a mile from a place called Scarden, there is a well that used to be visited by numbers of people, the first three Sundays in autumn, there is a stone over this well with the following inscription:—"This stone was erected by Denis Martin, and Eleanor Martin his wife, and for John Martin, and son." The people made stations by going three times round, kneeling in four places each time, saying seven Paters and seven Aves and Gloria, and finishing by kneeling on a stone in the stream, and offering up whatever prayers their devotion might suggest. At Rathhugh, parish of Kilbeggan, St. Hugh's stone, and holy well were held in great veneration. Saint Hugh is said to have prayed at this stone, and the faithful after visiting it proceeded to his well. The stone was believed by the people to cure headaches. This well is now closed up. Saint Cumian's well is situated at Leekin, St. John's well near Rathconnell, and at Noughavall parish, townland of Creggan there is a well to Saint Patrick—*Fons S. Patricii*. At a hill called *Carrick-Moile* in the parish of Lickblae Saint Brigid's well is to be seen; there is also a well dedicated to the Blessed Virgin in the same parish. At Foyran St. Aidu's well is shaded by an ash tree, part of which was consumed some years ago by a man lighting his pipe, and leaving it ignited in the hollow of the tree. Ballimore Lough-Seudy has two wells, Sunday well

and Saint Mary's. Dr. Joyce in his work on Names of Places remarks that a great many wells in different parts of the country are called *Tobar righ an domhnaigh* literally the well of the King of Sunday. At Glammerstown, there is a well dedicated to St. Baoithin; he was a contemporary of St. Columba; at the Synod of Drumceatt, the latter declared that Baoithin¹ was the handsomest man in Ireland, and Columba prophesied that his spiritual graces would equal his beauty; Baoithin far from being elated at the admiration shown for his exterior attractions prayed that his beauty might be withdrawn. He was of the race of Enda Finn, son of Cuana (of Tech Baoithin in Airteach, Westmeath). So much for the interesting Irish history that is gathered round the holy wells of Westmeath.

JOHN M. THUNDER.

DR. HUGH DE BURGO.—III.

THERE were few of the Irish nobility whose alliance was more eagerly sought for by the Confederates, than was that of Ulick De Burgo, Earl of Clanricarde and St. Albans. His estates in Ireland comprised valuable portions of the confiscated Church lands of Connaught. His landed property in England was also extensive; and his political influence there must have been considerable, considering his close family connection with the Earl of Essex. He was also a Roman Catholic, and the only Irish Roman Catholic who was permitted to hold any office of honour or trust from the Crown. His influence with his Catholic fellow-countrymen might have been considerable, though they should not expect much active sympathy from the son of the man to whom their defeat at Kinsale, but a generation before, was mainly attributable. But the Catholics feared his duplicity and selfishness, and his connection with Essex caused the great body of Royalists to question the sincerity

¹ *Dictionary of Christian Biography.*—(Smith and Wace.)

of his loudly professed loyalty to the king. He was therefore sought for by the Confederates, less through motives of regard than distrust.

In 1642 Sir Lucas Dillon and the O'Connor Don waited on his Lordship at the Castle of Loughrea, and formally invited him to aid in promoting the cause for which they and their countrymen had taken up arms. They reminded him of his Irish birth, and consequent duty to his country. The interview was fruitless. His Lordship was careful, however, "to keep them in temper," and not "to contradict their opinion," and referring to the interview in his notebook, he cynically remarked, "I was born in Clanricarde House, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London." He was appealed to by Lord Fingall and others, who explained to him their position and their prospects. And the writers add: "There wanteth in this action no more but that your Lordship will declare yourself for us, to make it happy and successful to the end." He received a special letter from Lord Gormanstown, assuring him that the Confederates "will value beyond all respects the name of a zealous Catholic." On the 28th November, the same year, he was appealed to by the Supreme Council. The letter was signed by Lord Mountgarrett, the Primate, by his kinsman, the Bishop of Clonfert, and many others. In this appeal he is asked "to resist the injuries offered to religion and God, and the indignities to which his Majesty the King was exposed." He received a copy of the circular addressed to all the gentlemen of Connaught, by which they were invited to join in the endeavour "to assure the liberty of their consciences, and preserve the freedom of the kingdom." He was also appealed to by General Preston, in a letter characterized with the direct frankness of a soldier and the sentiments of a Catholic. Preston's concluding words were well calculated to move any other less callous than the selfish Clanricarde "Let it not be said in after ages that your Lordship should be so far degenerate from the worth of your ancestors, as to further the designs of the Parliament *against God, your kindred, and your country*, but remember you are an Irishman, and if that the Irish be extirpated, you must not expect to

escape scott free." But those appeals on behalf of religion and country were fruitless. He continued to observe what is mildly described by the Supreme Council as a "stupide neutrality." It is even plainly insinuated that his "neutrality" was attributable to the dangerous influence of his country's enemies.

Though the confederates addressed Clanricarde in language that might have pleased his vanity, they had given the military commander of the province *private* orders "to have a wary eye upon his actions." Should Clanricarde attempt to use his influence "to doe them harme," General Bourke had instructions to "fall upon him as a *professed enemy*." He was disliked by the clergy, and had the Archbishop of Tuam hurled against him the severest ecclesiastical censures, he would have been supported by the Supreme Council in his action. The consequence was on Clanricarde's part, a gradual decay of influence with the people, until he had "scarce men enough left, whom he might trust with the defence of Loughreagh or Portumna."

He frequently referred to his loyalty to the king, and sometimes to his scruples of conscience, regarding the oath of "association" as a justification of his neutrality. To the gentlemen residing in the several baronies of the diocese of Clonfert, he issued a "monition," requiring them to consult Oliver Burke, the then Vicar General of Clonfert, concerning some of his alleged conscientious scruples. They were to ascertain whether considering the obligations of their oaths of allegiance to the king, they could be bound "under pain of mortal sin," to take the oath of "association" if required to do so. And secondly, whether in case they refused, they would be liable to the censure of excommunication with which the recusants were threatened. As was natural, the Bishop of Clonfert was consulted by his Vicar on those difficulties. And the following reply, authenticated by his lordship's signature, was immediately published. "I answer that the said gentlemen, &c., &c., are bound under pain of mortal sin to take the oath of association thereunto required by their ordinary: and are in their default, liable to the censure of excommunication fulminated against obstinate refusers of said oath of association."

The significance of this declaration may appear in the course of these pages in a more startling light, when we shall see the severest censures of the Church hurled by the Nuncio against the Bishop himself and his noble cousin, for an alleged violation of *the stipulations of this oath*. Amongst the stipulations of the oath the following may be regarded as specially important:—

1°. No peace should be accepted by the Confederate Catholics until the terms received the approval of a majority of the General Assembly.

2°. It should guarantee to Irish Catholics the same freedom and immunities as regarded the practice of their religion, which their ancestors enjoyed under Henry the Seventh.

3°. It should guarantee to the bishops and secular clergy, *the possession and enjoyment of all the churches and church livings* in as large and ample manner, as the Protestant clergy enjoyed the same *on the 1st October, 1641*, together with all the profits, &c., &c., “and rights of their respective sees and churches belonging as well in all places now in possession of the Confederate Catholics,” &c., &c. It is important that the reader should keep before his mind both the nature and stipulations of the oath of association, when considering the sad events by which the ruin of the Confederate cause was effected.

Even before the close of the year 1644, memorable for the “cessation of hostilities,” Fr. Scarampi’s political foresight was being amply verified. In Ulster the Scotch Covenanters under the command of Munroe, were largely re-inforced. And the troops under the command of Sir Charles Coote had perpetrated cruel massacres in Connaught. In order to prevent those outrages a strong force under command of O’Queely, the Archbishop of Tuam, was despatched against Coote. But the venerated prelate, after some slight successes, was surprised at Sligo, and slain with many of the noblest and bravest of the west. By his sad death, which was a source of sorrow throughout Ireland, the See of St. Jarlath was rendered vacant. But the anticipated elevation of John De Burgo to the Archiepiscopal See, helped to console O’Queely’s sorrowing flock. His “translation” to

Tuam was recommended by Rinnucini, a prelate remarkable alike for courage, energy, and ability, and who had been just sent as Nuncio to Ireland by the new Pontiff, Innocent the Tenth. In a letter to the Holy See on this subject, the Nuncio referred to John De Burgo, as "a person of mature judgment and upright intentions, but a little slow in expressing himself, and has now a flux in his eye which may damage his sight." If this recommendation, which was written on the 1st March, 1646, may appear cautious, it should be remembered that in a subsequent report, written in August of the same year, the Nuncio's recommendation is more decided. "I have," he says "nothing to add respecting Tuam, because the Bishop of Clonfert, from the six month's experience I have of him, seems every way worthy of promotion therein."

The Nuncio, had, however, on the same occasion, expressed an opinion of Hugh De Burgo, which must be regarded as equally complimentary. He urged on the Holy See the desirability of his advancement to the Episcopal dignity; and if he did not recommend his actual elevation to the Metropolitan See, it seems it was because he wished that a certain deference should be paid to the years of the older brother. "I knew in Paris his brother, Hugh De Burgo," writes the Nuncio, "who seemed to me a person *more active and decided*; and I believe, I recommended him, in case of a change of bishops, but not directly for Tuam, not to *throw slight on his brother*. Hugh has merits of his own; but they are materially aided by the merits of his brother John, &c." In another letter Hugh is referred to as a man of "*greater energy and activity* than his brother." But his energy and activity were still employed in promoting the interests of the Confederates on the Continent. Having completed his laborious mission to the Low Countries, he was next sent as Irish representative to Philip IV. of Spain, to ascertain what his countrymen "had to trust to, and what aid they had to expect from that Monarch." It was on his way to Madrid, that he had met the Nuncio at Paris; and made upon him those favourable impressions just referred to. From such evidence it is clear that the relations existing between John

De Burgo and the Nuncio were hitherto at least of a cordial nature.

The recommendations to the vacant Sees made by the Supreme Council in 1645, were duly considered at Rome; though the Supreme Pontiff's death, and the election of his successor, occasioned some necessary delay, there had been some appointments made in the interval. Dr. Kirwan was consecrated Bishop of Killala, though Father Hugh De Burgo had been recommended for appointment to that See. But several other appointments were deferred. Clonfert was vacant by the translation of his brother to Tuam; Kilmacduagh was rendered vacant by the death of Oliver De Burgo, who was a distinguished member of the Order of Preachers, and first Rector of the College of Louvain. He governed the ancient See of Kilmacduagh as Apostolic Administrator from the year 1626. But it was the new archbishop's earnest wish that his brother should be appointed to Clonfert; and it would seem that he used all his great influence to attain this end. The archbishop's views as to the greater desirability of an appointment to Clonfert, were, it would seem, shared by Father Hugh, but were not favourably entertained at Rome. They were opposed by the Nuncio. He had in the previous year, recommended Walter Lynch, Warden of Galway, for the See of Clonfert, and added that his elevation to that See "would tend to the good of the Province." As Dr. Lynch was universally esteemed and regarded as a "good preacher and judge," it would be difficult indeed to object to the Nuncio's selection. Yet his appointment proved a fruitful source of disappointment to the archbishop. And though Hugh De Burgo was immediately appointed to the See of Kilmacduagh, he, too is charged by the Nuncio with sharing his illustrious brother's feelings on the subject. The matter was indeed made the subject of complaint in a letter addressed by Rinnucini to the Cardinal Protector of Ireland in 1647. The estimate in which their Lordships were held by him but twelve months before, was entirely changed. He speaks of them as "represented to be haughty, and *inclined* to govern after their own fashion."

It was, as yet, perhaps premature to form such a

judgment of Hugh De Burgo's character as the ruler of a diocese. It was perhaps unjust to accept unfavourable representations regarding him, as there then existed a complete estrangement between his brother the archbishop, and the Nuncio.

In the letter just quoted, the archbishop is referred to as "one whom I have found, whenever an occasion arose, the stiffest and most obdurate of all the bishops in opposing my authority." The new archbishop's duties as "Chancellor" of the Confederate council, brought him into daily contact with the Nuncio, and the differences of opinion between them on the great subjects which then engrossed the attention of the country, became daily more sharply accentuated. This, unfortunately for Ireland, encouraged the growth of two distinct parties by which the union of the Confederates was destroyed. The archbishop was supported by his kinsman, Clanricarde who now abandons his "*neutrality*," by Ormond who was always regarded as unreliable, and by the Anglo-Irish generally, who were unwilling to part with the Church plunder which recent legislation placed in their hands. The extent and value of those possessions will be easily understood by the reader, when he remembers that the Earl of Clanricarde alone held the Monasteries of Aughrim, Clontuskert, St. John's at Tuam, Kilcruenta, Rosserrilly, Loughrea, Kilbought, Annaghdowne, Clonfert, and Melick, with their possessions. He, with his party, would rest satisfied with the bare toleration of their religion.

On the other side was the Nuncio, with the great majority of the bishops, secular priests, and people of Ireland, with the great Irish General O'Neill, all of whom considered themselves bound to struggle on bravely till the ends proposed by the oath of association were attained. When, therefore, the Bishop of Kilmacduagh took possession of his See in 1674, it was to find the cause of his country, for which he had hitherto laboured earnestly and successfully, imperilled by divisions.

It would seem, however, that he understood the sad significance of those disunions, and regarded with patient

sorrow a state of things which he felt himself powerless to remedy. He seems, after his consecration, to have devoted himself almost exclusively to the duties of his diocese. During the reigns of Elizabeth and James, many of the old cathedrals of which the Catholics were deprived, were, if not plundered and wrecked, permitted to sink into ruins. The venerable cathedral of Kilmacduagh was much wrecked on the accession of Dr. Hugh De Burgo. Its restoration received his earliest attention. In 1649 he had so far succeeded, that the roof was nearly completed, and it was once more dedicated to divine service. Though he had amongst the gentry of the diocese many influential Catholic relations, whose castles still remain to attest their influence, he could have hardly laboured without the most serious misgivings. The booming of Cromwell's cannon already echoing from east and south, must probably have sounded in his ears as the death knell of Catholic hopes.

It was in 1649 that the two Irish parties referred to became directly opposed to each other. Against the authority of Rinnucini, the Ormondists entered into a treaty of peace with Inchiquin, whose hands were yet reeking with the blood of his countrymen, massacred at Cashel. The Nuncio regarded the "peace" as a gross betrayal of Irish Catholic interests, and as a violation of the oath of association. He was indignant at a course of action which he knew would be condemned by the Catholic nations of Europe; and he therefore published sentence of excommunication against those by whom the treaty was accepted. But notwithstanding the interdict, the *Nuncio was obliged to fly to Galway*. Clanricarde assuming command of the Connaught forces, laid siege to the town, and prevented the admission of provisions either by sea or land. The Archbishop of Tuam supporting his kinsman's policy—disregarded the "interdict," and now at least proved "the most obdurate" in opposing the Nuncio's authority. Rinnucini now summoned the bishops to Galway, but in vain. They were met by Clanricarde's and Inchiquin's soldiers, and compelled to return. Dr. French and Dr. Plunket had indeed come close to the city, when they learned with dismay that the Nuncio, opposed and deserted,

had set sail from Galway, leaving our unhappy country to its impending doom. Weary and careworn, the prelates repaired for hospitality to the castle of Sir Roger O'Shaughnessy of Gort, a member of the Council, and there gave pathetic expression to their conviction, that "no greater misfortune could have befallen them"—or their country. Their impressions were soon shared by the entire episcopal body. Disasters followed fast upon each other.

A synod was convened at Jamestown in 1650 for the purpose of devising some remedy for their sadly altered condition.

Ormond's policy was condemned by the synod. He was charged with being the cause of "*losing the whole Kingdom to God, the king, and the natives.*" He was asked to resign his position as Viceroy. And finally sentence of excommunication was issued against him and his adherents. The acts of this important synod had the signature of John, Archbishop of Tuam. Considering the disregard of the Nuncio's censures manifested at Galway and elsewhere, we may well assume that those of the synod of Jamestown were lightly regarded by Lord Ormond. It was too late. A peace with Cromwell might have saved the country from a continuation of carnage. But even this was rendered impossible by Ormond's duplicity.

In less than a month after another Synod was convened at Clonmacnoise. It was attended by the four archbishops, and by sixteen bishops, amongst whom was Dr. Hugh De Burgo. The perusal of its enactments almost recall the sadly solemn appeals of Jeremias to the Jews of old. The people are urged to engage in prayer and fasting, and to seek the remission of their sins through the sacrament of reconciliation.

The retirement of Ormond from Ireland in that year, and the consequent appointment of Lord Clanricarde as Lord Deputy of Ireland, inspired some of the people and prelates with new hopes. But Clanricarde had no claims to the character of a patriot or of a military leader. He had but little sympathy with the suffering people, or with the aims of the bishops. His negotiations with the Duke of Lorraine, which might have proved a source of protection to the country, were marred by his arrogance and all-absorbing selfishness.

All was lost. The Lord Protector's soldiers were, in 1652, in possession of Irish strongholds, and free to indulge, without restraint, their hatred of Ireland's creed and race. The churches were plundered and wrecked. It is recorded that over three hundred priests were put to death, and more than a thousand more driven into exile. The exercise of the Catholic religion was banned, and a price set upon the head of a priest who might venture to remain within the kingdom. Of the bishops, three were martyred, and the remainder were driven into exile. Hugh De Burgo was amongst those who had to fly to England, A.D., 1656, where he continued to reside till his death in 1660. At the request of the Bishops of his native province, he wrote from London to Rome, to make known the state of Ireland to his Holiness, through the Cardinal Prefect of the Propaganda. The letter is quoted by Dr. Brady in his *Episcopal Succession*. It has been also published by Dr. Moran in his *Spicilegium*. Its interest as a graphic sketch of the state of Ireland at the period, may entitle it to be regarded as an interesting and appropriate conclusion to this rather lengthy sketch.

“Of the twenty-six bishops who, previous to the recent persecution of the Church, resided with their flocks, four only, or at the most six, now survive. As the rigours of persecution allow no intercourse by means of letters between Ireland and parts beyond sea, I was sent hither (to London) by my colleagues in the province of Connaught, that I might from hence make known to his Holiness, and to your Eminence the state of that province and the neighbouring parts. Also before I departed from Ireland, Thomas, Archbishop of Cashel, was still then bed-ridden from old age; and the heretics, as I understand, dragged him from his bed, hurried him from Clonmel to Waterford, and put him on board a ship bound for Spain, without the food and commodities necessary for so old a man. By this cruelty the heretics sought to accomplish the bishop's death, a penalty they were unwilling to inflict on him publicly within the kingdom, lest his martyrdom should prove a solace to the Catholics. After a most rigid inquisition concerning all priests and ecclesiastics throughout the entire kingdom, a very great number of them fell into the hands of the heretics. They were all banished and shipped on board of vessels bound for various parts,—Spain, France, Belgium, or the Indies,—just as the first opportunity of the vessels offered; and that without food or the necessary stores after the heretics had taken all their goods and possessions for themselves. Not even a tenth part of the ecclesiastics escaped this inquisition, and

they who did escape it, lead now a life full of extreme misery in hiding places in mountains and forests. For the Catholics cannot aid themselves with loss of their chattels and farms. And lest this should happen, the good ecclesiastics prefer to continue in the woods, and to suffer every hardship rather than put Catholics to such risks. They lie concealed by day in caves, and in the mountains; and at night sally forth to watch for a few hours over the spiritual needs of Catholics. They are in great want of faculties, ordinary and extraordinary, which they humbly and earnestly request may be specially sent to me for secure transmission to them. Your Eminence, so zealous as Protector, will deign to forward those faculties to me by way of the Papal Nuncio, Paris, who will easily send them on to me. Without those faculties many things happen which bring heavy discouragements to the people and to the workmen in the Lord's vineyard. In times of such most cruel persecutions of the Church, the spiritual consolations ought to be abundant. It would be hard to suffer extremes for the Church, if the Church refused to compassionate the sufferers. This hardship will be removed by your Eminence, by your zeal for the salvation of so many souls."

J. A. FAHEY, P.P.

[P.S.—The writer of the foregoing sketch on Dr. De Burgo is mainly indebted for his materials to the valuable publications of Mr. Gilbert, F.S.A., on the Irish Confederation. He also used with profit Burke's *Archbishops of Tuam*, Hardiman's *Galway*, Moran's *Cromwellian Persecutions*, Canon O'Rourke's *Battle of the Faith in Ireland*, Father Meehan's *Confederation*, and the *Monasticon Hibernicum*.]

CORRESPONDENCE.

THE ORAL SYSTEM OF TEACHING THE DEAF AND DUMB.

I ventured to present to the readers of the I. E. RECORD in the February and March numbers of that very valuable publication some observations on the oral system of teaching the deaf and dumb, and I find myself severely taken to task for what I said by the Rev. Edward Dawson, the respected Chaplain of St. John's Institution for the Deaf and Dumb, Boston Spa, Yorkshire, so that I feel called upon to add some further observations on the subject by way of rejoinder to the Rev. gentleman.

To clear the ground for what I am going to say I desire to repeat what I noticed in the February number of the RECORD, that

my observations were suggested by the perusal of a periodical, edited and published in Paris, entitled *The International Review on the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb*, and that consequently I could not claim for what I advanced the merit of originality in any sense, whilst, at the same time, I considered observations grounded on such an authority worthy of the most serious attention from all, who had at heart the amelioration of a considerable number of our fellow-creatures, who claimed our most earnest sympathy. The *International Review*, as its title imports, consists of communications, reports of institutions and congresses of Directors, Head-masters, &c., of the Deaf and Dumb in various countries not only in Europe but throughout the world, and is devoted under the patronage of a most respectable committee to the oral system so as to present the most complete panorama, so to say, of the system as it is practically worked out in its various methods, and the measure of success it has achieved everywhere it is in operation. If Father Dawson had not allowed himself in his great zeal, which is beyond all praise, for the oral system to overlook the authority of a publication so faithfully representing his system, as also the fact that it was, as I mentioned, from this source I drew my observations, he would not, I am sure, do me the injustice of saying that my observations "were as far from the truth as the silliest fables against Catholics, that are to be found in the writings of Protestant historians and theologians of fifty years ago." Where, I would ask, are we to look for a true account of the system, if we fail to find it in a work, in which it is presented to our view in all its details, authenticated by such high authority?

To keep in view our relative positions it may be well to state on entering into the subject of our controversy, that Father Dawson holds that the oral system is suitable not only to the instruction of individual deaf-mutes, but also generally to a public school, or institution, whilst I, on the other hand, presume to regard it as unsuitable to such establishments, and to have whatever advantages it possesses confined to individual teaching under conditions very difficult to realize in practice.

Taking this stand I object to the oral system for the public school on the following grounds: first, that for its results, such as they are, more time, and a proportionate amount of increased expense are required, as compared with the sign-teaching school. This consideration may be overlooked in the case of individuals, where means are not wanting, and the parents are ready for the largest sacrifices in the hope of having their children given back to them with the

gift of speech by the exercise of the natural organs, and that of hearing, as it may be said, by means of lip-reading, that is, by understanding others in what they say from the motion of their lips. But when there is question of a public school supported, as it may be, by State aid or Christian benevolence, the case is very different. Take, for example, the great State institution of New York with its 450 pupils, and its pension or grant of £60 a year for each pupil, and suppose two years over and above the time required in a sign teaching institution, the difference of expense would be £54,000 for the number in course of education. Or to come nearer home, let us take the Cabra Institution with its 400 pupils or upwards, the difference at £20 a year would exceed £16,000.

And if we are further to take account of the fact, that the Poor Law Boards throughout the country, who pay a considerable portion of the cost of the pupils they send to the Institution, have them, in very many instances, removed after three years, the oral system could do nothing, or almost nothing for their religious education, whereas the other system can have them instructed and prepared within that time, for approaching the Sacraments of Penance, Confirmation, and Holy Communion. Having assisted some weeks ago at a public examination of the female deaf-mutes of the Cabra School, I heard the Rev. Chaplain in moving one of the resolutions proposed to the vast assembly present speak as follows:—

“Is it not a proof of the zeal, energy, and ability of the Dominican Nuns and the Christian Brothers, that all the pupils that enter the institution at the age of nine or upwards, are able to come to confession before twelve months, and make their first communion before eighteen months, and the great reverence and longing of the children for the Sacraments are not only most consoling, but an additional proof of their knowledge. Such results are the more important when we consider that fully one-third come here at a great disadvantage, being not only twelve or thirteen, but eighteen and twenty, and some even thirty or forty years of age; and again, that more than one-fourth—28 per cent.—remain less than three years. It is satisfactory, however, to know that even those who on account of age or time in the institution cannot be taught to read and write well, can be, and are taught their prayers and the meaning of the Sacraments, as well as their duties; and each of this class when leaving school is provided with a certificate for his or her parish priest, stating that though unable to understand written language, and express themselves correctly in it, they know well what the Sacraments are, and that they have received them.”

In the second place, I object to the oral system in the public school on account of the endless divergences in the views of its advocates and teachers—divergences not merely on accidental or minor points, but of a fundamental character reaching from extreme to extreme, from the extreme, on one side, of utter intolerance of all

signs natural or conventional, in recreation or class, to the extreme on the other, through a regular or irregular progression of compromises and concessions arriving in the end at a combination—at all but a fusion of the two systems into one. Now I would ask, How can we call that a system at all, which is so unfixed and discordant? It is only in the vaguest sense it is entitled to the designation.

In the third place I object to the oral system in the public school as being wanting in adaptability to a very large number of deaf mutes, who can be taught by the sign system. Here, too, I find the widest differences between the authorities of the system varying from four per cent. as to those who are considered capable of oral instruction, to an indiscriminate admission of all, who present themselves except mere idiots. But, taking no account of these extremes, I would invite attention to a foot note I find under page 231 of the excellent work of Mgr. de Haerne, entitled *De l'enseignement special des sourds-muets* (Bruxelles, 1855), where the distinguished author sets down the following figures on the authority of a Mr. Weld, whose testimony he puts beyond all question: "at Zurich 4 admitted out of 12 presented for admission; at Riehen 17 received out of 66 presented; at Pforzheim out of 149 received on trial, it would appear, between the years 1826 and 1845, 54 were sent home to their parents as being unable to learn the system."

Amidst this great variety in the views and practice of the oralist school, room is found for the *touch practice*, if I may use the term, called "le toucher," which I described in February last, and which caused Father Dawson so much disgust. I must confess it was by no means palatable to myself, but setting taste aside, the practice occupies a large place in the *International Review* being continued through several numbers of that periodical as an accredited adjunct of the system, and I see, moreover, that Mr. T. Arnold of the Northampton Institution, whose name is so prominent in the literature on the deaf and dumb, advocates the practice not only at home in England, as reported in the *Quarterly Review*, No. 4, October, 1886, (Messrs. W. H. Allen and Co., London), but also at the third International Congress for the amelioration of the condition of the deaf and dumb held in Brussels, in August, 1883, and who in the course of his dissertation sustains his views on scientific principles, which he developed extensively on the occasion. I referred to it chiefly to point out how it excluded, so far as it was employed, female teachers and female pupils alike from all participation in the oral system, and of course to that extent narrowed its application.

Whilst requiring suitability on the ground of capacity, the system acknowledges its inability to do anything for children beyond a certain age. Seven, eight, or at most nine are the ages required. What then is to become of the multitude of candidates, who for one cause or another cannot be admitted within that period? Here, indeed, is a signal difference between the two systems—a difference so much to the disadvantage of the oral system, and in favour of the system of signs.

In the American schools in general the two systems are combined in a friendly compromise, but then the oral department, unless in very exceptional cases, imparts its advantages only to the extent of a mere accomplishment, an accessory acquirement, as if yielding to pressure from without resulting from popular delusion. They do, indeed, find special aptitudes, from time to time, and no labour is spared in their instruction, but this is not general school-work, which is the subject under consideration.

In the fourth place, I object to the oral system, as being unsuited to impart religious instruction. I find nothing short of a "consensus" on this all-important point. The advocates of the oral system even in Germany, as well as in America, admit and confess it. Now, is not this defect alone fatal to the system? Heaven and earth shall pass away, but the words of our Divine Lord shall never pass away; and His blessed lips asked the thrilling questions: "What shall it profit a man, if he gain the whole world, and suffer the loss of his soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?" (*Mark* viii. 35-37). Yes, O yes, this is the test of tests; and tell me of any system of education that is incapable of imparting religious instruction to its pupils, and I pronounce upon it the fatal words written on the wall: *MANE, THECEL, PHARES.* (*Dan.* v. 25). But in yielding this essential point and in admitting the necessity of signs for religious instruction, the oralists make a distinction between *natural* signs, and *conventional* or *systematic* signs, and say, *natural* signs by all means, but not *conventional* or *systematic* signs. I must say that to my mind this is a distinction without a difference. Are natural signs all the same, and invariable? And when a number of pupils come together, and live together, do not their natural signs by the force of circumstances become conventional and systematic? And if it be, as it is, admitted and confessed, that the language of signs is necessary in the all-important matter of religious instruction, why, under heaven, discard the conventional or systematic signs, which are so much more distinct, precise, and in every way better than arbitrary signs, as well for the positive as the sentimental teaching of religion?

I can hardly expect that Father Dawson will admit this objection for I find him speaking of the Institution that has the happiness of enjoying his services as chaplain, in reference to me, in the following terms :—

“ If he had made enquiries about the one Catholic oral school in these islands, he would have learnt that all the children who have been there two years have been learning catechism ; that every Sunday the chaplain hears the lessons that have been learnt during the week, the children in each class standing up in order, reading the question from the chaplain's lips, and giving the answers vocally with almost unerring accuracy. A full instruction on the lesson is then given, to be further explained by the Sisters during the following week.”

In accepting this statement from Father Dawson we have simply to believe that by extraordinary zeal and exertions on his part he has made the impossible possible, in overcoming the difficulties which all others find insurmountable. But when he adds : “ No doubt, other institutions are doing as much and more,” he leaves us free to differ from him ; and I would refer him to the Report of the London Conference in 1877, at which the deficiency of the oral system especially in imparting religious instruction was distinctly and emphatically insisted upon by several of the speakers ; and it was asserted without a word to the contrary from the oralists present, that the teachers in the oral schools found it necessary to express themselves in signs when imparting religious instruction to their pupils. Mgr. de Haerne himself, who, I understand, is the founder of the Boston-Spa institution, and whose name is to be mentioned with profound respect, is made to bear testimony to this fatal defect in the oral system, for in the Report of the London Conference just referred to, he is represented as asserting, page 95 : “ The signs were much used in religious instruction, even at Berlin, because it is not enough to speak to the mind, you must speak to and from the heart also.” The Berlin institution is regarded as a model school of the oral system, where we must suppose it is carried to the highest degree of perfection of which it is susceptible, and if religion requires the aid of the sign language for religious instruction in that establishment, it is only natural to conclude generally that the other institutions pursuing the oral system throughout Germany feel the same necessity.

I found some time ago a Report in the French Paper called *Le Monde* of a Congress held in Lyons, in September, 1879, for the *amelioration of the lot of the deaf and dumb*, and having put the paper aside, at the time, I am just reminded of it to refer to a remarkable speech in favour of the sign system pronounced on the occasion by

a venerable ecclesiastic named M. Joseph Lemann. It was a pleading for the retention of the system against the proposal of superseding it by the oral method, and I feel the greater pleasure in quoting from it because, like the respected chaplain of the Boston Spa establishment, he spoke "from a Catholic point of view," but at the same time from a different—an entirely opposite stand-point. His arguments followed in consecutive order, and having stated his first and second reasons, he said:—

"Preserve it [the sign method] because *we Catholic priests, we have absolutely a necessity for it in our relations with the deaf-mute*. No, we cannot do without it. There is an act in the life of our children for the preparation of which we would desire to have several languages—it is the first communion of their souls with the God of the Altar. Oh! it is a matter of experience, a thousand times renewed, that with the help of the language of signs the knowledge of this august Sacrament is imparted with greater certainty to their understandings, its truth reaches them in a manner more profound and impressive, and were there but this reason alone, we Catholic priests, we should never sacrifice the language of signs."

From listening to this pleading of a Catholic priest, we will lend our attention to a Protestant minister on the same subject. It is the Rev. Charles Mansfield Owen, M.A., who speaks in a letter addressed to *The Hampshire Chronicle*, under date August, 1882. He writes in his capacity of Hon. Chaplain and Secretary of the Hampshire Mission to the deaf and dumb, giving to his letter the title: "Articulation and Lip-reading *v.* Finger and Sign-language."

It is as follows:—

"SIR—I hesitate to tax your kind indulgence at a time when such pressure is placed upon your columns, but I venture to ask you to insert a few words from one who not only takes a deep interest in all that concerns the deaf and dumb, and to a considerable extent is engaged in mission work amongst them, but who from family circumstances, has been associated with them from childhood. No thoughtful person can help being attracted by the very interesting accounts we have recently read of the practical results of the oral system *i.e.*, articulation and lip-reading; but I do most earnestly entreat the general public to pause before they acquiesce in the somewhat sweeping statement in the *Times* newspaper, that 'lip-reading and speech not only seemed destined to supersede the sign and finger language, but they are also of infinitely greater value.' Most gladly will I do all in my power to advance *any* system which has for its object the true amelioration of the condition of so many of our afflicted fellow-creatures, but I am more and more convinced that it would be a terrible mistake to adopt and enforce the 'articulate' system, to the complete exclusion of the sign and finger language, or even to such an extent that this latter system should prove the exception and not the rule. I venture to assert that there will always be not only a large number of deaf and dumb who will be unable to learn to speak, but also a large number whose voices will be so harsh and abnormal that it would be far preferable for them to talk on the fingers or write on paper.

"As I move up and down in society the conversation, naturally enough, often turns on this question, and I find that 'society' is by no means in favour of the deaf and dumb being taught to speak. Indeed, quite the reverse. By far the larger portion of 'society' shrinks from the oral system as being unnatural, and the deaf and dumb who adopt it are to a very large extent regarded as speaking automata rather than intelligent human beings. Now, Sir, as far as I understand, one of the strongest arguments in favour of the articulation and lip-reading system is that it enables the deaf and dumb to 'enter into society.' In fact, at a recent meeting at Kensington in support of their system, one of the speakers is reported to have said that 'when the deaf speak only in the sign and manual language they are a people apart, and the affliction descended from generation to generation; whereas by the present means, they are at once admitted on equal terms as members of the whole human family.' (The italics are my own.) I venture to assert, with all deference, that this last statement is an exaggeration, and I fearlessly challenge the supporters of the oral system to produce a single case where their method has enabled a *born* deaf and dumb person to be admitted *upon equal terms* as a member of the whole human family. The reports of the success of lip-reading belong, in a great measure, to those who have lost their hearing through illness or accident, and not, as a rule, to those who were really *born* deaf and dumb. On the other hand, I am at this moment thinking of some deaf and dumb persons who are, perhaps, more in society than any of their brethren similarly circumstanced. And what is the reason? Simply and solely because they confine themselves to the manual language, or to pen and pencil. If they could, and ventured to, indulge in what society would call unnatural and indistinct articulation, their position would be altered, and the appreciation with which they are now regarded would be considerably lessened. I have no objection to a 'combined method' being adopted in special cases (I maintain that articulation will only suit special cases), but should be deeply grieved to see further concession universally made. I am fully aware that the supporters of the articulation system assert that such combination is impossible; they bring forward as an argument the fact that where both systems are taught, the deaf and dumb themselves show a decided preference for the manual language, and become far more proficient in this than in articulation. Be it so. I claim this as an argument in my favour. 'A straw shows which way the wind blows,' and we shall do well to profit by a hint so clearly thrown out by the instincts of that very class whom we seek to benefit. Moreover, the manual language is really not hard to acquire, and it is most pleasing to notice how rapidly this knowledge is increasing throughout all classes of society. This has been the case to a very marked degree in our own diocese since the time when a special diocesan mission for the deaf and dumb was organised. It has called forth great interest and excited much sympathy, and I sincerely hope the time will come when *every diocese* will have a similar mission in thorough working order.

"Hitherto, Sir, I have set forth my objections chiefly from a *social* point of view, but there is a far more important aspect, viz., the *religious*. It seems to me a matter of no small regret that the London School Board should have entirely and absolutely adopted the oral system in all its classes. Time was when education and religion were inseparably connected, but those whom God had joined together man has put asunder. One of the chief instructors of the oral system in London told me a few days ago that they were obliged to look upon it purely from an educational point of view. He did not hesitate to acknowledge to me that it was not a good system for imparting religious instruction to a number of deaf and dumb

collected together, and he suggested that when they have left school it will be time enough to pick up the sign and manual language. Sir, I ask, in all humility, is this reasonable? Is this worthy of a professedly Christian country? The deaf and dumb are, from force of circumstances, debarred from the ordinary religious services, and the consequence is that when they leave the various schools and institutions to return to their own homes they too often lapse into loneliness and isolation. Thank God, great efforts are now being made to collect them together at various centres, and give them religious addresses and instruction, and this can only be done efficiently by means of the sign and manual language. How terribly we shall be hindered and handicapped if the rising generation of deaf and dumb are not to be educated in that language which is best suited for imparting religious knowledge. Take, for example, the various schoolrooms in our diocese, or the church in Oxford-street, London, where a number of deaf and dumb meet together. A very large proportion could not distinguish the labial movements of the speaker (especially if he indulged in a moustache—a very popular fancy of the present day), *whereas the sign and manual language can be read and understood with the greatest ease at a considerable distance.*

“It is said in high quarters that the sign and manual language is fatal to ‘the better way’ (*i.e.* the articulation system). I hope that I have made out my case, and proved that it is by no means a fact that the articulation system is the better way, either from a social or religious point of view.

“It has also been stated that the education of the deaf and dumb can never make proper progress in England until the funds now disposed of by the institutions (which, as a rule, adopt the finger and sign method), are applied in a manner totally different from that which obtains at present. I earnestly hope that those religious and philanthropic people who have hitherto so generously supported these institutions will not allow their contributions to be directed into other channels, however taking and attractive they may seem. I believe that time and experience will prove that there is only one way of really and thoroughly imparting religious knowledge to a congregation or audience of the deaf and dumb, and that is by the sign and manual language.

“I am, &c.,

“CHARLES MANSFIELD OWEN, M.A.,

“Hon. Chaplain and Secretary,

“Hampshire Diocesan Mission to the Deaf and Dumb.

“*Woolston Vicarage, Southampton, August, 1882.*”

In the fifth place, I object to the oral system in the public school as being wanting in results. I shall not here repeat what I said on this head in my paper of February last in the RECORD; but since then I have come by some authorities that are outspoken, indeed, on the subject. I shall quote the following, beginning with a weekly paper, published in Kansas, U.S., by the pupils of the deaf and dumb institution of that city, bearing the title of the *Kansas Star*, which under date 18th November, 1886, speaks as follows:—

“From the report of the Malone, N.Y., Institution, we clip the following, as being pertinent to our views on the subject:

“In this connection it may be well to say a few words in regard to the use of the language of signs or gestures in our institution. We do not

use signs as an end, but as a means of instruction. We hold that they are not only the best, but, in not a few cases, the only practical instrument of instruction. I make this statement on ample evidence. Even for the most advanced and intelligent deaf-mutes, and I may add semi-mutes, the explanation of difficult words and phrases by signs is of great value, but for beginners, and those whose mental faculties are of the lowest order, they are indispensable.

"I need only add here that the most distinguished men in the profession, men who have devoted the best part of their lives to devising means to reach the darkened minds of the deaf and dumb, have come to the conclusion that the sign-language cannot and should not be dispensed with. To do them full justice, they have not and never did shut their eyes to the other methods of instruction, but they have one and all, welcomed every new method that has been devised. They have given each of them a fair trial, employed the most distinguished advocates of such systems, frequently at double the salary paid to teachers of the sign system. They have sent men to Europe to investigate this new method of articulation and lip-reading, with instructions to bring an impartial report. In a word, recognizing the great difficulty with which deaf-mutes have always labored in the acquisition of language, they had hoped against hope that this new method would prove a success, and in that case they would have been the first to abandon signs. But the results of their costly experiments and the reports brought back from Europe proved beyond dispute that this new system rested upon no solid foundation, and that the exaggerated reports of the great success of the system were nothing but cunningly devised fables.

"Since then the advocates of the sign system have put forth greater efforts to perfect themselves in the language of signs, and never before have we seen such masters of the language. Go to any institution for the deaf in the United States, and you will find them enthusiastic on the subject of the use of signs in the education of the deaf and dumb. We are not retrograding, but we are advancing. Those who oppose the sign system prove beyond doubt that they know nothing of the sign language, or else they are too indolent to perfect themselves in it, and hence cry loudly for a shorter and easier means of educating the deaf and dumb. They succeed remarkably well with their best pupils, and bring forth these as the representatives of the whole school. The public is all carried away at a single bound. They imagine that the deaf can be taught to speak as well as any one, and many a parent has cherished the delusive hope that their child could be restored to society and placed on an equal footing with all the world. Hence they have snapped eagerly at the bait held out to them, and have spent thousands of dollars with the expectation that their hopes would be realized. Let us come down to the plain, unvarnished truth. The child is deaf. There is no disputing the fact. The parents themselves acknowledge it. Their family physician has informed them that there is no hope of restoration to hearing. This is, of course, a sad blow to them, and it is a long time before they realize the terrible calamity. If they are possessed of wealth, they spare no means to employ all the advertised humbug doctors, but always with the same result—total failure and loss of money. This, however, does not seem to deter them from catching at another class of humbugs, those who profess to be able to teach them to speak. The poor child is sent to an articulating school, and years are spent in the vain endeavour to teach it to speak. The parents spare no expense so long as there seems a single ray of hope that their child will be able to use speech. When, at the end of several years, the child returns to

the parental roof with the ability to say a few words, and perhaps a few simple sentences, the proud parents are satisfied, and exclaim : 'See, my child is deaf, but can talk.' They doubtless imagine that their child is a step higher than the true deaf-mute, but the fact is just the opposite. If that same child had been sent to a school where honest means were employed to educate it, it would have returned home with a mind stored with useful information, capable of giving expression to noble thoughts in written language. This is what we aim to accomplish, and all our efforts are in that direction."

I shall now adduce some authorities, which, I rather think, are not unfamiliar to Father Dawson. In the conference of Head Masters and other workers, as they were called, for the education of the deaf and dumb, held in London in 1877, the two systems were discussed by able advocates on both sides. I shall first quote from a Mr. R. Elliott, who read a long, and well studied paper, on the German, that is, the oral system. He says :

"In view of these considerations lip-reading seems to me to be an agency which is inherently defective. When I am told it is the only one to be used in teaching a poor child, who, previous to instruction, knows not one of the words, nor their meaning, and when, to this same agency we are told to look not only for the communication of knowledge but also for the development of thought and ideas in minds entirely undeveloped, I cannot help pitying the unfortunate object of a process so unnecessarily tedious and unnatural. I cannot but think, too, that to forbid to deaf and dumb children the use of signs, as a means for enlightenment, is to condemn them for a long period to the grossest ignorance, and, in the words of Canon de Haerne, is an attempt 'to force nature to submit to the yoke of art, since mimicry is the maternal language of the deaf-mute, or that, which he has learned in his infancy.'"

And proceeding to the subject of articulation, which is the other branch of the oralist system, Mr. Elliott speaks of it as follows :

"I have now to speak of the articulation of the deaf. And here I must lay claim to a little experience, for I have been a teacher of articulation for nearly twenty years. Some people think, that every deaf person has a voice, that every one has an equally good voice, and an equal capacity for learning to use it, and that, therefore, there is nothing to be done but to set to work and cultivate that voice to the required degree of proficiency. But, no idea can be more fallacious. I have found that, while some children have a natural aptitude to take the elementary sounds, which go to form words, with others no amount of time, care or skill, seem to produce any satisfactory result. And strange as it may seem to those, who have had little experience in teaching this subject, the most difficult, sometimes, I may say, hopeless cases generally are those of children, who having once heard and spoken, have been neglected since deafness has come on, and so have lost their speech Having drawn the distinction between those, who have some power of speech or hearing, or natural aptitude, or who, from some other cause, have the abilities to gain the elementary sounds distinctly and smoothly, and those, who, on the other hand, seem to be naturally wanting in that ability, and whose imperfect articulation seems never

capable, whatever pains may be taken, to rise above a jargon of unintelligible sounds, we may ask what are we to do with the latter class? Shall we, after full proof being given of their incapacity to gain speech with any degree of intelligibility, continue a hopeless task, and so lead them on to that bitter disappointment, that must be theirs, when they find that the voices, upon which so much time has been uselessly spent, are, after all, only a source of disgust to their auditors, without being a help to themselves in passing through life? For my own part, with every feeling of admiration for industry and energy, when displayed to overcome difficulties, I think such qualities are wasted when directed against impossibilities."

He next proceeds to speak of the results of the system, and on this all important branch of his subject he asserts :

"I now come to the second part of my task, in which I shall endeavour briefly to examine the results of the German system of education where it has been long followed. I shall call your attention to the investigations conducted by experts. I think that on any special subject of inquiry the evidence of men with whose profession it is connected is allowed, and rightly so, to have far more weight than that of amateur enquirers however intelligent. And I think such investigations must be all the more authoritative, when they are carried on under that sense of responsibility, which is given by the fact, that they are called for by the interests not only of a particular department, but also a department of State.

"The first of these investigations, to which I beg to call your attention is that made about 30 years ago, at the desire of the New York Institution, by the Rev. G. E. Day and Mr. Lewis Weld. I need not detain you with Mr. Day's instructions, which were full and precise. Mr. Day had been a teacher of the deaf and dumb, and had a good knowledge of the French and German languages. He visited about 20 of the principal continental articulating schools, and embodied his conclusions in a Report. In speaking of the degree of intelligibility of the utterances of the pupils he says: 'A foreigner would find no difficulty in understanding the more common forms of expression, and a few simple questions and answers as spoken by the largest part of the pupils.' He adds: 'On the whole, the greater part of the sounds they make in attempting to speak it is altogether impossible to understand.' In regard to the other, he says: 'The very general impression seems to prevail among intelligent Germans, that the articulation of the educated deaf and dumb is unintelligible. . . . The more common testimony given by physicians, clergymen, and gentlemen in other professions is: 'We cannot understand them.' Mr. Day summarizes thus: 'About one-third of the most advanced class with the aid of the signs employed, and the frequent repetition made use of, appear to understand the most of what the instructor says; another third appears to lose a considerable part; while the remainder seize the most common words, and are obviously, much of the time, at a loss as to what is going on.' He adds: 'Those who occupy the last stages in class are truly to be pitied. Unable from the want of sufficient power of attention and mental activity to unite the fleeting forms of the lips into intelligible words and sentences to the degree required, they lose a large part of the instruction, and receive only crumbs and fragments.'

"The Report of Mr. Lewis Weld, the Principal of the American Asylum, who made a similar examination, was in agreement with that of Mr. Day. In one place he says: 'I scarcely met with an intelligent person of rank, even in Germany, who spoke of the articulation of the deaf and

dumb with approbation.' Mr. Day, ten years later, made a similar examination under the same circumstances, and with the same results.

Mr. Elliott concludes by observing :

"The German system has been in England a sufficient time to have produced some specimens of pupils, who should now be following their several roads in life, examples of the advantages of the system. Can any of them be brought forward and shown in proof of the superiority of the training they have received? Do they hold their own in society, and justify in their habits and actions all that has been advanced in favour of the system? Have they attained to the measure of knowledge, however limited, of those who have been taught in the old way? And finally, have they been furnished with a faculty, by which they may raise themselves still higher in the knowledge of things human and Divine?"

"In conclusion I look forward to such a blending of the favourable points of the rival systems as shall result in the largest measure of good to those for whom we labour. If such a fusion can be made—and there are some of our best men who think it can—then the efforts of all may be brought to converge in one common united course of action, and instead of opposing each other, and each one offering his own nostrum as the sole panacea for the evils we are all fighting against, we shall work harmoniously together in the direction of that perfection of method and practice which will result in the fullest alleviation of one of the most grievous of the deprivations with which it pleases Providence to visit mankind."

We will now listen to the Rev. S. Smyth, who came also to the front in the London Conference. In his preliminary observations he distinctly affirms that it was proved, that the pupils of oral schools when they went out into life fell back on the finger and sign language.

After reviewing the favourable points of the oral system, he observes as follow :—

"It cannot be denied that one of the disadvantages of lip-reading is its indefiniteness. Its expression cannot be asserted to be distinct and unmistakable; for instance, there can hardly be any recognizable distinction in the formation of the words, *how*, *now* and *cow*, except what may be guessed from the context. There must be, therefore, great uncertainty in that mode of expression, and specially in the apprehension of new words; whereas, by means of the manual alphabet, every disposition of the fingers is distinct and undoubted. Another disadvantage of the oral system is that speech is unnatural to the deaf. Dr. Harvey P. Peet, one of the most distinguished and experienced instructors of the deaf and dumb, one who had examined this question thoroughly, held that 'speech—the use of articulate words—is natural only when acquired through the ear.' To the deaf and dumb, by the privation of hearing shut off from it inexorably, it is positively unnatural. Their only true language is that which they can instinctively create, the one outlet left through which their imprisoned spirits can break forth, that of gesture. Whatever theory may be embraced by their instructors, whatever restrictions imposed upon the use of signs, these will be their vernacular."

We are now to hear, and we should, at the same time, reverence some words from one who is entitled to be regarded as an apostle of

the deaf and dumb, Mgr. de Haerne, who assisted also at the Conference. He is known to be an advocate of articulation and lip-reading ; nevertheless, he says of the use of signs :—

“The suppression of signs in the conversations held between the deaf and dumb is a proceeding contrary to nature and most inhuman. It obliges the pupils to have recourse to deceit, and to break constantly the rules of the school. It spoils their character, and rears them up hypocrites. . . . To wish to banish it completely from the establishments of the deaf and dumb, as is attempted in some institutions, especially in Germany, is to deprive the pupils of a means of communication given them by nature ; it is to narrow the circle of their intellectual activity and æsthetic feeling, consequently placing a barrier to the complete development of their faculties.”

Mr. Hooper, who was justly esteemed at the Conference as an authority of the first order, having observed that his experience coincided with that of Mr. Isaac L. Peet, the Principal of the New York Institution, having visited at home and abroad many institutions, in which articulation was the basis of instruction, proceeded to say :—

“I have seen in this country many persons who received their education in such institutions. While subjecting them to the test of reading, I have found that where I followed the text with my eye, it was almost always easy to recognize the correspondence of the spoken with the printed words. In many cases, however, when I did not see the text, nor glance over it, so as to discover its tenor, I could scarcely catch a single word.”

Mr. Hooper noticed with satisfaction gentlemen acquainted with the finger alphabet and gesture language, communicating by these means what was passing at the Conference to the deaf-mutes present, and he would like to see one of those who teach on the oral system giving to those taught in their schools some knowledge of the proceedings by the movement of the lips, but this he believed had not been attempted here. He had visited some of the oral schools on the continent, and noticed one especially which placed its pupils out as boarders in families so that they should not be able to form a language of signs, but be compelled to use articulation and lip-reading out of school, and found the pupils to be greatly inferior to those taught on the sign system in their knowledge of things and words. He considered it a weak point in the oral system that it kept back the development of the pupil's intelligence, a thing essential to the system, as he learned from the lecture delivered by Mr. Ackers before the Gloucester Literary and Scientific Society. At another school in the heart of Germany, conducted on the plan of boarding the pupils in the house, the system was carried on under most favourable circumstances, the proportion of teachers to pupils being unusually

large, in which, notwithstanding, he found an intelligent boy who had been ten years under instruction, and who readily answered questions which he read on the master's lips, but failed to read a sentence pronounced by himself, and also failed to read it on the master's lips until it had been repeated several times. He came consequently to the conclusion that it is hopeless to expect the deaf and dumb, or the deaf not dumb, to be able to converse orally with one another, or even with hearing and speaking persons; as he also concluded that the development of the children's intelligence must be greatly hindered by their being deprived of the readiest means of interchanging ideas amongst themselves and with their teachers, namely, of their gesture language. At another school, the teacher being absent on account of illness, he was told by the teacher of a school of hearing and speaking children carried on in the same building, that the oral system failed, as the pupils could not make themselves understood when speaking to people out of the school. Mr. Hooper stated also of a school he visited in Switzerland, that he observed the oral system pursued in his estimation with greater success than he had witnessed in any other school, but he was pained, nevertheless, to witness the efforts required to make the pupils catch what their teachers said, and their numerous failures.

I may add another testimony from the London Conference. It is that of the Rev. James W. A. Sturdee, and I quote him especially because his statements have such an important bearing upon the results of the oral system as its pupils go forth into the world. He said that his connection with the Royal Association for the deaf and dumb had given him many opportunities for meeting with deaf-mutes after they had left school. He had met the pupils of every system—German, French, and combined—and had found that many of those taught under the German system, spoke audibly and intelligibly at first, but soon afterwards relapsed, *i.e.*, their acquired artificial speech seemed to go from them, and they resorted to dactylogy. With regard to another question, it had been stated several times that signs were not used under the German system except in the elementary stages. He had met pupils that had been educated under this system, and sent into the world as accomplished pupils, and he had ascertained from their parents that they could neither understand ordinary conversation nor answer questions. He had also spoken to them himself, and in many instances could not make them understand him. The parents of one girl told him that she never used signs to them, nor they to her. He asked her: "Did

you like your school?" and found her utterly unable to understand him. He repeated the question, and saw the mother make signs, and then she answered him. The promoters of the German system said their pupils could be educated, and sent into the world to mix with their fellow-creatures without any more assistance than hearing and speaking people received. Some time ago he attended at a magisterial inquiry in London, where a child taught under the German system was examined. He merely went to watch the proceedings, and to interpret if necessary. On arriving he found the interpretation unnecessary, as the child was taught on the oral system, but to his astonishment there was also an "oral" interpreter present.

I will bring these attestations to a close by quoting the words in which Mr. A. F. Woodbridge reviewed, and summed up the proceedings of the Conference. He said that—

"He felt strongly on the *oral* question, which he considered to be the question, the burning question, of this Conference. The system had been described and defended by its advocates in words, which he would shortly quote, and then proceed to give for himself and those that agreed with him, his own description of it. In a document he had seen he found that Mr. Van Asch was quoted as having one of the best schools of the kind in the country, and as strongly recommending, that all pupils on first entering an institution, should be taught on the articulating system, so that the 'silent method' (the language of signs) might gradually be superseded. Of the school in Fitzroy-square the same document reported, that the manual alphabet and all arbitrary signs were rigidly excluded there. Mr. Howard's opinion was, that the two systems should not be combined, though signs might be allowed at first. Mr. Thompson said the two methods should be kept as far apart as possible, and that they could not be combined. Mr. Akers said the German system made use of natural signs, at first, but dropped them as soon as the pupils could express themselves in words; and that no good could be done with pupils taught on the sign system. Miss Hull was strongly opposed to the use of signs, and said that her pupils had gone back in knowledge as soon as she began to use them in combination with the oral method. From all this evidence [said the speaker] we clearly see what it was that the oral system aimed at. It was to abolish signs entirely, if that be possible, and to substitute articulate speech and lip-reading. But is this possible? Can the noble and expressive language of signs, which has been the means, by which thousands have been educated, be entirely thrown aside, and the oral method set up in its place? Ever since the schools were founded, it has been employed to spread knowledge and enlightenment, and to fit the deaf and dumb to fill with equal credit the situations more commonly filled by their more fortunate fellow creatures. As tailors, carpenters, shoemakers, printers, bookbinders, clerks, artists; also as husbands and wives, fathers and mothers, it has enabled them to discharge worthily the various duties of social and domestic life, and it has prepared them for the great Hereafter. Is this an agency that ought to be abolished? He emphatically answered 'No.' He would now proceed to weigh the arguments for and against the two systems, which preceding speakers had urged. . . . 1. It was asserted, that those who taught on the oral system, would not only

obtain as much general knowledge as those taught by the sign language; but would also understand what was said to them orally, if the speakers would take pains to speak distinctly, grammatically, and standing in a good light. These appeared to him to be conditions very hard of fulfilment in the actual life of the adult deaf and dumb. 2. One gentleman thought much would be gained, if the deaf-mute could only be taught to articulate 'yes' and 'no.' But this was a very poor result for such enormous efforts; and the simple signs we ourselves involuntarily used of nodding the head, or shaking it, were surely as expressive as the two equivalent words so laboriously acquired. Mr. Howard, the Principal of the Yorkshire Institution, said 50 or 60 per cent. of the deaf and dumb could be taught to speak. This was not in accordance with his own belief, and he waited for further evidence of the fact. Now to look at the other side of the question. 1. If the sign system were abolished in schools, what would be the result to those adults, who had been educated by it? They would become still more isolated as a class, when even their fellow-mutes were unable to converse with them. 2. A strong and almost insuperable argument against the oral system was that it could not be applied to the further instruction or higher education of the existing adult deaf and dumb population of our large towns. They could not acquire the oral system; they must live and die with a knowledge of the sign language only. The oral method was only meant for the children of the future, and it would be many years before this very green tree could bear ripe fruit. 3. The discordant voices of the deaf, for want of the modulating power of the ear, must always supply an objection to the oral system. Speech, as the Rev. Mr. Smith had said, seemed unnatural to the deaf, while the language of signs came to them as their natural language. 4. The authorities already quoted all agreed that the two systems could not, and ought not, to be combined; that the attempt to combine them did harm instead of good, for that they were essentially antagonistic. This he held to be a fatal objection. The oral system would be limited to a favoured few, and the general body of the deaf and dumb would not be benefited by it in the slightest degree. . . . 5. If only 50 per cent. could be educated on the oral system, what was to be done with the rest? The sign system could benefit not merely 50 or 60 per cent., but 90, and even 99 per cent., for how very few deaf children there were in ten thousand, whom the language of signs could not reach? 6. The oral system having been in operation in this country for ten years, it was obvious to ask for visible proof of what it had accomplished, for under the old system thousands could have been educated in the same time. 7. Lastly, if the opinion of the deaf and dumb themselves were asked it would be found to be adverse to the oral system. He had frequently put the question to his own members, and the answer had been always most distinct and emphatic. They preferred the sign language as the one that was natural to them. He admired the efforts of those who advocated the oral system in trying to find out the best method of teaching; but his advice was, not to discard an old friend before they had thoroughly tried and proved the new one."

Looking back on what I have written, I see I have said a great deal, and, at the same time, I have said very little—very little from myself and a great deal from others. I have done so advisedly, for Father

Dawson would seem to rely but little, or rather not at all, on my personal experience or knowledge, and I have, therefore, preferred that others would speak, who by intelligence, experience and zeal, as well as official position in connection with the deaf and dumb, are entitled not only to attention but deference in the views and statements they advance. They are outspoken and unreserved, and their verdict is a condemnation of the oral system for general school use, reserving its application for anything that could be called success, to special cases of children who lost their hearing sometime after they had made use of speech, as also rare cases of congenital deaf-mutes in showing special aptitudes.

Father Dawson seems not to understand me as to my purpose in speaking of the Cabra schools and the sign-teaching system they employ. Let me explain. In speaking of a system it was most natural that I should illustrate its working by an example, and an example, with which I was familiar, and that, moreover, I should present its working by comparison with a generally known standard, for of what use is it to say that a particular system of teaching is working well or ill unless you have a standard in view to give definite meaning to these qualifying expressions? I, therefore, took for a standard of comparison our ordinary national schools, and to show the efficiency and success of the sign-teaching system in the Cabra schools for the deaf and dumb, I stated, as I was fully warranted in stating, that the children of these schools, age for age, and class for class, are as much advanced in the various departments of primary education as the hearing and speaking children of the best conducted schools under the Board of National Education in Ireland, that especially they are as well instructed in their religion, that they frequent the Sacraments with piety and devotion during their time at school, and what proves in a special way the lasting hold and practical influence religion retains over the conduct of their lives, they come up, year after year, at the rate of somewhere about 200 each year, according to a regulated succession, to make a retreat of several days in order to renew and confirm themselves in their good dispositions, and it is, indeed, consoling in the highest degree to observe from their dress and general appearance, that they occupy positions, in which they are making their way through life not only as good Christians, but as decent, and, according to their rank, respectable, members of society. I would be glad to see such gratifying results produced by any oralist school.

I felt a desire to say something before closing in reference to the

popularity of the oral system, and its adoption so extensively in the teaching of the deaf and dumb, for this is relied upon as a conclusive argument in itself in favour of the system. But I find I am to occupy so large a space in the pages of the forthcoming number of the I. E. RECORD by all I have said, that I must reserve my answer to this defence of the system for a future number.

THE AUTHOR OF "CLAIMS OF THE UNINSTRUCTED
DEAF-MUTE TO BE ADMITTED TO THE SACRAMENTS."

DOCUMENTS.

DECISION OF THE S. CONGREGATION OF THE COUNCIL IN AN INSTRUCTIVE MATRIMONIAL CASE REGARDING VAGI.

CRACOVIIEN. SEU VARSAVIEN.

MATRIMONII.

Diebus 27 Martii et 26 Junii 1886.

Sess. 24 cap. 1 de Refor. matr.

Compendium facti. Casimirus et Josepha matrimonium contraxerunt Cracoviae die 3 Octobris 1876 coram paroco ecclesiae Omnium Sanctorum; hujusmodi matrimonium nunc censent esse clandestinum.

Vir natus est Varsaviae, ubi quoque medicinae studia absolvit; dein, incipiente anno 1874, Lovicium venit, officio medici perfuncturus in hospitali S. Thaddaei. Et ibi Josepham vidit, quam brevi amavit, cui tandem fidem despondit. Sed antequam id fieret, ipse, Junio mense 1876, ex hospitali Lovicii discesserat, ac munus medici districtualis in oppido Nowo-Minsk susceperat, ubi stabile domicilium fixit.

Mulier autem pariter Varsaviae circa annum 1835 nata dicitur, sed nescitur qua de causa, nonnisi post decennium sacro baptismo abluta reperitur in ecclesia cathedrali Sandomiriae, quando scilicet ejus parentes, penates suos Sandomiriam transferentes, illuc venerunt.

Post aliud circiter decennium Josepha major aetatis jam effecta,

cum mundum relinquere statuisset, paternam domum deseruit ac Varsaviam rediit, ut institutum Sororum a Charitate ingrederetur. Voti compos effecta, ac inter sorores cooptata anno 1857, per integrum ferme vicennium religiosam vitam honesto more duxit; non uno tamen manens in loco. Etenim Varsaviae primum in instituto S. Casimiri fuit, dein aliquot annos Biala transegit, subinde Lovicium venit quo et cognovit medicum Krasuski.

Martio mense 1867, postquam duos circiter annos in hospitali Lovicii mansisset, aliquid forsitan in mente gestans ex iis quae cum medico Krasuski egerat, Varsaviam repetiit, ac in instituto S. Casimiri aliquot hebdomadas adhuc mansit, usque dum obtenta a gubernio facultate extra Imperium proficiscendi ad sex menses, cum beneplacito suae superiorissae, Lutetiam Parisiorum venit, ibique in domo generali Sororum a Charitate, die 3 Julii 1876, religiosam vestem exuit.

Libera sui sic effecta cito Parisiis in patriam reverti studuit; sed non apud parentes Sandomiriae, non Lovicii ubi prius manserat, non Varsaviae, ubi nata et plures annos versata erat, non denique in oppido Nowo-Minsk, novo sponsi sui domicilio; sed Cracoviae stetit, et habitavit una simul cum sorore sua Julia in domo a quadam muliere Balbina conducta in platea Szewka. In hoc habitaculo degit a fine Junii aut ab initio Julii anni 1876 ad finem Augusti ejusdem anni. Inde se ad plateam Grodzka contulit in domum possessoris, ejus nomen Delarko, ibique degit usque ad tempus initi matrimonii, scilicet ad diem 3 Octobris ejusdem anni. Affirmavit autem eadem mulier: "Cracoviam veni tantummodo ad nubendum viro meo."

Celebratio autem matrimonii sic evenit: postquam Josepha in plateam Grodzka habitationem elegit, parochum illius districtus, ecclesiae Omnium Sanctorum, adiit. Jam antea ipsummet ad effectum matrimonii rogaverat, sed ab eo fuerat repulsa, quia extra ejus parocciam tunc habitabat.

Haec vice vero eam benigne excepit. Et cum ipse sponsus Casimirus Cracoviam venisset, afferens testimonium proclamatorum bannorum et fidem status liberi parochi loci Nowo-Minsk, in qua dicebatur licere viro contrahere matrimonium ubi sibi libuerit; curatus ecclesiae Omnium Sanctorum ex parte viri nihil aliud requisivit. Item quum vir secum attulisset, eidemque curato exhibuisset delegationem Episcopi Sandomiriensis, cum dispensatione a duobus bannis Sandomiriae proclamandis ad effectum matrimonii pro Josepha, jam quoque ex hac parte parochus Omnium Sanctorum nihil excipere habuit, et

matrimonium die 3 Octobris benedixit, signans in libris parochialibus se idem benedixisse “ex delegatione Illmi. Rmi. Ordinariatus Sandomiriensis.”

Celebratis itaque nuptiis, sponsi venerunt Nowo-Minsk, ibique, ubi Casimirus medicus agebat, per tres annos et ultra convixerunt, prolemque susceperunt. Sed ob indolis utriusque diversitatem discordiae cito natae sunt, quae tandem anno 1880 acriter ardentes separationem, ab invicem induxerunt. Tum vero vir, nonnullorum suasionem coram tribunali seu consistorio Varsaviensi stetit, petens suum matrimonium cum Josepha contractum ex capite clandestinitatis infirmari. Acto regulariter processu, Tribunal matrimonium pro valido et indissolubili decrevit . . . ex eo nempe quod Josepha sub id tempus, nullum aliud domicilium, adeoque nullum alium parochum habuerit, sive ideo quod fuerit persona vaga.

Ab hac sententia cum appellavisset actor ad tribunal apostolicum delegatum Lublinense, hoc censuit priorem sententiam revocare, et matrimonium nullum edicere. A qua sententia appellavit vinculi defensor apud S. C. C.

DUBIUM.

An sit confirmanda prima vel secunda sententia in casu.

RESOLUTIO. Sacra C. Concilii, re cognita sub die 26 Junii 1886 censuit respondere: *Affirmative ad primam partem; confirmandam esse primam sententiam.*

OFFICIAL NOTICE REGARDING PROBATE OF WILLS AND LETTERS OF ADMINISTRATION.

TO THE EDITOR OF THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

VERY REV. DEAR SIR—I find that many priests are unacquainted with the arrangements of a recent Act relating to Probate of Wills, &c. You may think, with me, that it would be useful to direct their attention to the subject-matter of the enclosed *Notice*. The Wills of most priests, and also of many of their parishioners, would fall within its range. The best of it is that the intervention of a solicitor is rendered unnecessary. Even in a simple case one can hardly get out of the hands of a solicitor under £12 or £15 costs.

Yours faithfully,

M. C.

OFFICIAL NOTICE.

PROBATE OF WILLS AND LETTERS OF ADMINISTRATION.

Probate of the Will, or Letters of Administration of the Estate, must be obtained where a person dies possessed of personal Estate (inclusive of tenancies from year to year, farms held on judicial lease, and property held on lease for years), which, being situated in the United Kingdom, exceeds £100 in value.

The penalty for taking possession of, or in any way administering, any part of the personal Estate and Effects of a deceased person, without proving the Will, or obtaining Letters of Administration of the Estate within the period prescribed by law for the purpose, is £100, &c.

Where the death has happened on or after the 1st June, 1881, and the whole of deceased's personal Estate, as aforesaid, together with the personal Estate situate out of the United Kingdom, does not exceed the value of £300, the total cost of obtaining Probate of the Will, or Letters of Administration of the Estate, is as follows:—

	£	s.	d.
Where such personal Estate is under the value of £100 	0	15	0
Where such personal Estate is over the value of £100 and under the value of £300 ...	2	5	0
With an additional 5s. for the Stamp Duty upon the bond, where one is required.			

And in such cases application can be made either to the District Registry of the Court of Probate, or to an Officer of Inland Revenue duly appointed for the purpose.

Annexed is a list of the places at which Officers of Inland Revenue have been appointed for the purpose.

By Order of the Commissioners.

March, 1885,

Inland Revenue, Custom House, Dublin.

IRELAND.

List of places where the Local Officers of Inland Revenue are appointed to carry out the provisions of Sect. 33 of the Act 44 Vic.,

Cap. 12, for obtaining Probate, &c., in cases where Estates do not exceed £300:—

Antrim	Cookstown	Mallow
Arklow	Donegal	Midleton
Athlone	Downpatrick	Monaghan
Athy	Drogheda	Monasterevan
Aughnacloy	Dromahaire	Mountbellew
Balbriggan	Dundalk	Mountmellick
Ballaghaderreen	Dunfanaghy	Moville
Ballinamore	Dungannon	Mullingar
Ballinasloe	Dungarvan	Naas
Ballinrobe	Dungiven	Navan
Ballymahon	Dungloe	Nenagh
Ballymena	Ennis	New Ross
Ballyragget	Enniscorthy	Newry
Ballyshannon	Enniskillen	Newtownards
Banagher	Ennistymon	Newtownstewart
Banbridge	Fermoy	Omagh
Bandon	Fintona	Oughterard
Bantry	Galway	Ramelton
Birr	Graigie	Rathdowney
Bray	Granard	Rathkeale
Boyle	Gorey	Roscommon
Carlow	Kanturk	Roscrea
Carrickmacross	Kilbeggan	Skibbereen
Carrick-on-Shannon	Killaloe	Sligo
Carrick-on-Suir	Killarney	Strabane
Cashel	Kilrush	Taghmon
Castlebar	Kinsale	Thurles
Castlerea	Larne	Tipperary
Cavan	Letterkenny	Tralee
Celbridge	Lisburn	Trim
Charleville	Listowel	Tullamore
Claremorris	Longford	Virginia
Clonmel	Loughrea	Westport
Clonakilty	Lurgan	Wexford
Clones	Macroon	Wicklow
Coleraine	Magherafelt	Youghal
Comber		

[NOTE.—We are much obliged to our correspondent for this important document.—ED. I.E.R.]

NOTICES OF BOOKS.

OUR DIVINE SAVIOUR AND OTHER DISCOURSES. By Right Rev. Dr. Hedley, O.S.B., Bishop of Newport and Menevia. London: Burns & Oates (Limited).

Books of sermons are often, if not always, disappointing. Discourses which please the ear and appeal to the heart of the listener often seem dull and tedious to the reader.

This is more especially true of sensational sermons, where the energetic and animated manner of the preacher appears to give a substance and reality to what he says. There are, indeed, some sermons full of deep thought and weighty points of doctrine which deserve to be committed to print that they may be of service not only to those who heard them preached, but also to a number of readers who had no opportunity of hearing. To this class of sermons belongs the collection whose title is given above. The author is the Right Rev. Dr. Hedley, Bishop of Newport and Menevia, and member of the great Benedictine Order, that has deserved so well of the English Catholic Church. This collection comprises admirable discourses on the Incarnation, Redemption, the Blessed Eucharist, the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass, and Penance. There is also a series of five discourses treating of the Necessity of Faith, the New Testament, Teaching Regarding Faith, Obstacles to Faith, and the Divine Giver of Faith. Each sermon is full of grave thoughts expressed in clear and simple language. There is nothing emotional or sensational in the discourses, as they appeal entirely to the judgment and reason. They should produce most salutary effects not only on Catholics who hear or read, but also on non-Catholics to whom they present the teaching of the Church in a very intelligible form, and do not in any way tend to create prejudice or excite the suspicion that the writer is making a case. As the Right Rev. author says in the very first of his sermons, his object is not to treat the subject in the method of dry controversy, but to explain the truth as the Catholic Church holds it, and let it convince men's minds by the very power of its own light. This plan is followed with great success. The subject of each discourse is set forth with singular clearness and brevity, the illustrations from Sacred Scripture are very apposite, and the calm but forcible reasoning is such as to move even a most prejudiced mind. The book will be a valuable addition to the library of any thoughtful and reading man, cleric or laic, Catholic or non-Catholic, and we earnestly recommend it to preachers who must address mixed congregations, or whose duty brings them into contact with non-Catholics honestly seeking after truth.—A. B.

THE HISTORY OF ST. CUTHBERT, or an Account of his Life, Decease and Miracles; of the wanderings with his body at intervals during 124 years; of the state of his body from his decease until A.D. 1542; and of the various monuments erected to his memory by Charles, Archbishop of Glasgow, Member of the Archæological Institute. Third Edition. London: Burns & Oates (Limited). New York: Catholic Publication Society Co. 1887.

This is a magnificent and exhaustive work. The first edition appeared nearly forty years ago, and yet its illustrious author has been able to add but little to it in the present edition. The fact that neither study, nor reflection, nor the research of others has enabled him to make any substantial change in the original edition proves how thoroughly the work from the beginning had been done. The appearance of the present edition of the Life of St. Cuthbert in the twelfth century-year, is very appropriate, and speaks favourably as well for the piety of English-speaking Catholics, as for the learned zeal of the illustrious biographer. The work, while it gives light to the mind, warms the affections into enthusiasm; it may be read with great profit at the convent meal and private family circle, or take its place among the classical works of a public institute.

Though the *History of St. Cuthbert* consists of 360 pages, crown octavo, yet scarcely a third of it is devoted to the Life properly so called. In this third we find described the boyhood of St. Cuthbert, his call to the monastic state in the cloisters of old Melrose, his removal to Ripon, his return to and promotion in Melrose, his advancement to the abbacy of Lindisfarne, his retirement to the hermitage in Farne Island, his resignation of the bishopric, his retirement again to the hermitage in Holy Island, and finally his death there. No page of the most sensational character is more touching than the simple story of his last illness and death.

The greater part of the work is devoted to an account of the towns and churches connected with St. Cuthbert, and the three flights to which the faithful guardians of his body had to submit in order to save it from insult by the barbarians. A skilfully arranged map traces the wanderings with the body from Lindisfarne to Galloway, to York, to Lindisfarne again, to Chester-le-Street, till finally it rested under "Durham's Gothic Shade." The learned author gives a very accurate drawing of the cathedral, which became ablaze with gold and jewels, the offerings of piety. These were plundered at the

Reformation, but the body was not molested; very few cathedrals were so fortunate as Durham in having escaped from the hands of subsequent iconoclasts.

The learned author of the *History* defends St. Cuthbert from the charge of misogyny. He shows that the saint's conduct was guided by a love of discipline. And in this connection I looked out for some allusion to a visit said to have been paid to Durham by Edward III. and his royal consort, at Easter, 1333. The queen, after supper in the priory of Durham, having retired to rest, was roused by the king and reminded that St. Cuthbert did not love the company of her sex, so that she had to rise and go to the castle.

Very few saints have had a posthumous history so chequered and touching, and to very few has so ample justice been done as to him. The *History* with its fine print and meadows of margin, its maps of Holy Island, of the priory of Lindisfarne, of Durham cathedral, and of Northumbria, its antique frontispiece and bevelled binding, together with its copious index of places, persons, and subjects, offers attractions to the archæologist, the æsthetist, the historical student, and to the devout clients of St. Cuthbert. S. M.

LIFE OF ST. CUTHBERT. By the Right Rev. Edward Consitt, Domestic Prelate of His Holiness Pope Leo XIII.; Provost of the Chapter of Hexham and Newcastle; Vicar-Capitular. London: Burns & Oates (Limited). New York: Catholic Publication Society Co. 1887.

This small octavo volume is a very interesting Life of St. Cuthbert. It is brought out on very fine paper, in clear type, and is as full of matter bearing on the life and death of the saint as the bulkier and more expensive work by Archbishop Eyre. From this it principally differs in that it does not so fully or elaborately enter into the posthumous history of the saint. At the same time Monsignor Consitt's work gives a sufficiently full account of the translation of the saint's body, and of the heroic wanderings of its devoted guardians.

In this charming little volume we are treated, too, to a graphic description of the feretory and shrine at Durham; then there follows a very satisfactory sketch of the See of Durham till the Reformation. Finally there is a notice of the examination to which the sacred remains of the saint were subjected in the year 1827.

While the second half of this little volume, consisting of some 240 pages, is devoted to the posthumous history, the first half may without a misnomer be called a Life. It is divided into several parts

by the epochs in the saint's age, and the scenes of his labour. Several chapters are devoted to each of these parts ; and thus we have charming sketches of Melrose, Lindisfarne, Farne, Durham, of the saint's episcopate, of his last illness and death.

The learned author, like Archbishop Eyre, is disposed to question the "Irish Life" in the fifteenth century, which claims St. Cuthbert as an Irishman. He asserts with the generality of authorities that the saint was born in Lauderdale, near Old Melrose. Both, I think, might have strengthened their argument by adverting to the utter abhorrence of the saint expressed at the Scottish or Irish method of celebrating Easter—the disciplinary character of the rite, as well as the saint's natural mildness being considered. Though his dying instructions were: "To keep peace with one another and heavenly charity . . . moreover, maintain mutual concord with other servants of Christ;" yet, he added, "with those that err from the unity of Catholic peace either by not celebrating Easter at the proper time, or by living perversely, have no communion." Provost Consitt's charming little volume closes with a contrast drawn between the celebration of the saint's festival in the year 1448 and 1887, in Durham. The contrast is striking and sad. The saint's life has been to many only the basis of a myth:—

"On a rock, by Lindisfarne,
Saint Cuthbert sits, and toils to frame
The sea-born beads that bear his name:
Such tales had Whitby's fishers told,
And said they might his shape behold."

With a love for St. Cuthbert and his ways, which the excellent *Life* is apt to inspire, and through his powerful intercession, who knows the happy change in the near future that may be in store for his once hallowed diocese?
S. M.

SOME HISTORICAL NOTICES OF THE O'MEAGHERS OF IKERRIN.

By Joseph Casimir O'Meagher, M.R.I.A. London: Elliot Stock, 62, Paternoster row.

While England, Scotland, and Wales can boast of genealogical works in abundance, recounting the history of various noble families, but few such useful publications have appeared in Ireland, although the materials are most conspicuous in our public and private collections. However, these are mostly in manuscripts or in documents which rest under the accumulating layers of dust that have settled over them in our archives. Some few good general works of reference to Irish family history have no doubt appeared, yet these

are both scarce and high-priced. In the present instance, a spirit of patriotism, and the circumstance of family connexion with his distinguished tribe of the Ikerrin O'Meaghers, has induced the writer to place upon record, and in a form most attractive, much interesting information regarding the Cinel Meachair. These are descended, as the Pedigrees of Ireland sufficiently prove, from the celebrated Oiliol Olum, King of Munster, in the third century of the Christian era. The book in question does not profess to be exhaustive, and yet a most orderly arrangement of plan and matter, brings the narrative down in regular chronological sequence from early times to our own day. A list of authorities consulted is truly complete, and shows the writer to be fully conversant with the sources, whence all necessary information may be drawn for purposes of research. For centuries the noble clan of the O'Meaghers were settled in their territory, situated around the Bearman Eile or gapped mountain of Ely, and now better known as the Devil's Bit, owing to a curious legend associated with its remarkable outline. The Irish Annals supply many historic illustrations. One of the most interesting, perhaps, is the notice referring to the Blessed Thaddeus O'Meachair, who became Bishop of Cork and Cloyne, A.D. 1490, and who died in the odour of sanctity in 1492, at Ivrea, among the Italian Alps, where in a beautiful marble shrine of its cathedral his sacred relics are deposited and venerated. The successive confiscations of Cromwell and of William III. obliged the martial gentlemen of this race and numbers of their clansmen to take service in the armies of France, of Spain, and of other countries on the Continent of Europe. The gallant deeds of many among them are recorded in the Appendix. However, we miss from those pages one of the renowned for all time—the illustrious hero and the great orator General Thomas Francis Meagher—and this seems to us very strange, in any historic record of this distinguished race. We are pleased to see some admirable coloured lithographic illustrations of the Irish Regiment's uniform in the French service, with other family memorials and heraldic tokens engraved. The talented author's pedigree closes a work which reflects great credit on his industry, capacity and taste. It brings to light many facts not hitherto generally known, and especially as regards the O'Meagher family.

J. O'H.

REVELATIONS MADE BY OUR LORD TO BLESSED MARGARET MARY. Written by herself. Dublin: James Duffy & Sons.

We feel certain that this little sixpenny volume will be welcomed by the devout clients of the Sacred Heart. It is a literal translation

of the memoir written by Blessed Margaret Mary, at the instance of her confessor, wherein she details with the fidelity exacted by obedience the wonderful operations of God's grace in drawing her out of the world, and then of preparing her for the great work of making known the devotion to the Sacred Heart. The various supernatural favours she received, the heavenly visions, the constant presence of our Blessed Lord in a sensible manner, are simply but graphically described, and must have a deep interest for every spiritual nature. With the exception of a few explanatory notes, every line is from the pen of the holy ecstatic herself. J. O'D.

MOY O'BRIEN. A Tale of Irish Life. By E. Skeffington Thompson. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

We cordially welcome this book, which coming so opportunely, cannot fail to prove a wholesome antidote against the poisonous rubbish poured forth so copiously now-a-days from a venal press, against Ireland and everything Irish, *ex uno disce omnes, v.g. Parnell and his Island, Parnellism and Crime, et hoc genus omne.*

In our opinion the gifted authoress of *Moy O'Brien* may well plume herself on her keen political foresight in anticipating events which already have become historic. Grounding her judgments on the eternal principles of justice she was able to forecast with precision issues, soon destined, we trust, to become accomplished facts.

Anyone reading the work before us cannot fail to perceive that the authoress labours to show what Irish landlordism might have been, rather than what it was or is. She seems, as if instinctively, to shrink from saying much about its past or present, well aware, no doubt, that to speak on such a mournful and ghastly theme would far transcend the peerless powers of even Dante himself. What mind is capable of conceiving, or tongue describing, the unutterable sufferings involved in the decimation of upwards of three millions of our race?

Miss Thompson's ideal landlords are those who cease to be absentees; no longer squandering the fortunes squeezed out of the vitals of most impoverished peasantry, in the gambling hells of the continent, or amusing themselves in the London saloons. She has no sympathy for those remaining away, who know nothing, and care less for the country that is cruelly compelled to cater to their morbid tastes. The only time they think of Ireland is when they expect remittances from their trusty henchmen, the agents. According to her views Irish landlords should cease to be absentees, and

become resident amongst a warm-hearted and forgiving people; faithfully guiding them in those pursuits which would soon make our distracted country a veritable Arcadia. But is this ideal picture of what Irish landlords should be, destined to be realised? Considering their antecedents we fear not. They are now as a class, as blindly attached to their traditions as ever. The wanton savagery, of some of them seen just now in the lurid light of the peasants' burning huts, is an outrage on human nature itself. Like the Turks in Bulgaria they are ready to desist from their congenial pursuits, and take their departure provided they are liberally treated for so doing. How far their modest proposal may be complied with time only can tell. Space precludes our speaking further on this painful topic. We heartily congratulate the authoress of *Moy O'Brien* in her laudable efforts to scatter to the winds the mists of ignorance and prejudice that have alas, unfortunately, too long darkened and disfigured the fair face of our beautiful but unhappy island. P. A. Y.

MAXIMS OF CHRISTIAN PERFECTION. By Antonio Rosmini, a New Translation from the Italian. London: Burns & Oates, 1887.

Some of the most celebrated books have been found amongst the smallest, a single little volume having sometimes alone sufficed to raise its author to fame, as was the case with *The Imitation of Christ* and *The Spiritual Combat*, to quote those instances only from among many. More modest, however, have been the claims of the *Maxims of Christian Perfection*, a little work indeed, but whose author has obtained celebrity on account rather of his voluminous philosophical writings, or as a Founder of a Religious Order in the Church; so that the brilliancy of this little gem has remained somewhat obscured by the lustre of his greater works, if indeed greater they can be called. For Rosmini himself, after having dictated a series of remarkable works which at once gave him prominence amongst the learned of his time as an original thinker of profound philosophical genius, was accustomed to regard his *Maxims of Christian Perfection* as the most perfect, and most important book that he had ever written, next after the *Constitution and Rules* of his Order.

It may not be generally known that Rosmini, even when most busily engaged in dictating his principal philosophical works, was accustomed to meditate from two to three hours daily before the Blessed Sacrament, and that, like his master St. Thomas, it was chiefly there, or before his crucifix, that he received the light he has

communicated to the scientific world in his writings. He himself more than once admitted this to his confidential friends. But, speaking of his *Maxims of Christian Perfection*, he has left it on record, that this little ascetical work cost him more prayer and more meditation than he had devoted even to his most profound philosophical volumes. And so pleased and satisfied was he after having written it, that he used to say that he did not think there was a sentence in it that could be changed without injury to the book. Indeed, so highly did he prize the *Maxims* as a solid spiritual book, that he had it bound with each copy of the *Rules* of the Institute of Charity, that so it might be in the hands of every one of his spiritual children.

This little book, though less known to the scientific world than his philosophical writings, has nevertheless had already a run of twelve editions in the original Italian, and has been translated into French, German, and English. Wishing to bring out in this country a third edition of the book, it was thought advisable to make an entirely new translation from the original. For this we are indebted to the zeal and charity of Canon Johnson, of Westminster, who being himself struck with the singular beauty and simplicity, as well as solidity of this little spiritual book, and persuaded of the great good its circulation would do amongst Catholics of all classes, has made his elegant translation a labour of love. The *Maxims of Christian Perfection* bears the *Imprimatur* of the Cardinal Archbishop of Westminster, is published by Burns and Oates, and may be had at the modest price of nine-pence, which places it within the reach of all.

COMPENDIUM THEOLOGIAE MORALIS. Auctore, Augustino Lehmkuhl, S.J. Editio Altera Ab Auctore Recognita. Friburgi: Herder, 1887.

It is needless now to speak of Father Lehmkuhl's character as a theologian. His fame in that capacity is already more than established by his great work in two volumes—to him a “monumentum aere perennius.” In less than four years four successive editions of it have appeared, and have been snatched up as soon as issued from the press. This almost unprecedented sale, and the unanimous verdict of the Catholic press bear unmistakable testimony to the worth of Father Lehmkuhl's work. Soon there came from various quarters a call for an abridgement to meet the wants of a numerous class of theological readers who for various reasons have no leisure for the study of extensive treatises. To meet this demand, Father Lehmkuhl, in the early part of last year published his

Compendium, and already the first Edition, consisting of 2,000 copies is exhausted. A second Edition revised by the author, and embodying the most recent Roman decrees is now before us, and it is in every sense worthy of its distinguished author. It is a marvel of clearness, conciseness, and precision. So much information, so well put, and compressed into 600 octavo pages, we have not yet met with. The young theological student, as well as the hard-worked Missionary Priest will find it a veritable treasure. And one of its special advantages to our priests is that in the treatise, "De iustitia et jure," the author quotes from Dr. Crolley's great work those points on which theological decisions are affected by English law. Several theological compendiums have from time to time fallen into our hands, but we have no hesitation in saying that Father Lehmkuhl's is the best we have yet seen. J.M.

MEDITATIONS ON THE SUFFERINGS OF JESUS CHRIST. By the Rev. F. Francis Perinaldo, O.S.F. A Translation from the Italian, by a Member of the same Order. Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

This is the title of a newly translated work from the Italian of Father Perinaldo, by a Member of the same Order. The object of the Rev. author in preparing the work was to provide a spiritual guide for secular persons; knowing how difficult it is for them to apply their thoughts to merely abstract ideas, he has imparted to his *Book of Meditations* a historical, a moral, and as far as possible, a local character. The history of the Passion of Christ cannot be read as we would read the life of a saint and his sufferings. It is profound meditation that unlocks the treasures and brings to light that hidden wisdom contained in the *Book of Books*. All the marvellous colouring and finish of perfection that blend with such wonderful effect in the story of the Life of Christ, are conveyed to it through the medium of His Sacred Passion. His sermons, doctrine, and miracles, scattered through his whole life, shine forth more highly as his death drew near.

No devotion then can be more excellent to raise the falling from the pit of vice, to strengthen the feeble in the path of virtue, and to quicken the persevering in the way of perfection. This book must be read slowly and with reflection, and for the convenience of persons accustomed to make daily meditation each consideration is divided into two parts, which will furnish matter for morning and evening meditation.

The printing of the work is excellent, and reflects great credit upon the eminent publishers. J. D.

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

OCTOBER, 1887.

THE ACT OF PERFECT CONTRITION AND PERFECT CHARITY.—I.

IN former numbers of the IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD we reviewed the various “*media salutis*” provided for men under the Law of Nature and under the Mosaic Law, and we found that, in the accepted teaching of theologians, those Laws or Dispensations supplied absolutely nothing that could even modify the necessity of strict and rigorously perfect contrition, as a remedy for *actual* mortal sin. The sacramental rites and multiform sacrifices that existed before the establishment of the Christian Law, were (1) “*infirmi et egeni elementa*” that could not confer, because they did not “contain,” sanctifying grace; (2) they were, when appraised at their highest value, only so many agencies for exciting and making profession of faith in the future Messiah; and (3) the faith, so excited and manifested, could lead to justification only when “accompanied” and “informed” by perfect charity and contrition. Perfect contrition was, during all those melancholy ages, the “*medium necessarium*” for the remission of mortal sin; it should exist “*ex integra causa*”; if it failed “*ex quolibet defectu*” to be perfect, no “*remedium aequivalens*” was available to supply its place.

In view of this teaching, and even in the assumption that we are not ourselves personally concerned in the inquiry, we should be strangely incurious if we failed to sometimes consider what are the essential elements of the perfect con-

trition, on which the salvation of so many millions of our fellow-men had, for so long a series of centuries, so absolutely depended. We are anxious enough to become familiar with some of the prominent facts in their social and civil history; but, assuredly, even as mere students of history, we should find in the record of their relations with God and eternity, a subject immeasurably more engrossing. But, furthermore, and a thousand times more particularly, this inquiry should engage our most diligent research, when we remember that it involves a problem inextricably interwoven with many of our own most sacred personal duties and most valued interests. With all the facilities and advantages which the Law of Grace affords, it not unfrequently happens that our recovery or forfeiture of the friendship of God, and sometimes the eternal destiny of our souls, hinges upon our ability to elicit an act of perfect contrition. Hence, for every one of us, this is a question of paramount personal concern.

Before attempting an analysis of the act of perfect contrition, it may be well to remove certain ambiguities and define certain principles, a formal discussion of which, however valuable and instructive in other circumstances, would be foreign to the purpose of the present paper. We, therefore, assume as quasi-postulates:—

(1) That "*Contritio genericè sumpta est absolute necessaria necessitate mediæ illi qui grave peccatum unquam commisit: fuit autem quovis tempore ad impetrandam veniam peccatorum hic contritionis motus necessarius*" (Trid. S. xiv. c. iv)." It is, therefore, "*fide certum*" that, in the present order, penance or a retraction of mortal sin is, and has always been, an essential preliminary to pardon.

(2) That, in the words of St. Liguori, "*Contritio (perfecta) est actus formalis Charitatis, quum propter Dei dilectionem homo odit peccatum. Charitas tendit immediate in Deum, et mediate in odium peccati: Contritio autem immediate in odium peccati, et mediate in amorem Dei.*" Hence, when we discuss the extra-sacramental remission of sin, we may speak of the one or of the other almost indifferently, seeing that perfect contrition always pre-supposes the motive of perfect charity, and that the latter of necessity involves the former in the case of a soul polluted by sin.

(3) That, as defined by the Council of Trent, “*Contritionem Charitate perfectam . . . hominem Deo reconciliare, priusquam hoc (poenitentiae) sacramentum actu suscipiatur.*”

(4) That the “*opinio quae dicit contritionem cum charitate remissa non justificare extra sacramentum*” is, in the words of St. Liguori and of the other most eminent theologians to whom he refers, “*omnino improbabilis et falsa; ab omnibus theologis communiter rejecta; erronea; contra sententiam Catholicam; parum tuta in fide; temeraria et scandalosa, utpote apertissime contradicens variis Scripturae, Conciliorum, ac SS. Patrum testimoniis.*” (L. vi. T. iv. c. 1).

However unnecessary it will seem to illustrate by any *a priori* argument a teaching which rests, as our last quasi-postulate does, on so overwhelming a mass of unimpeachable extrinsic authority, it may nevertheless be well to indicate one or two of those arguments, in order that we may the more easily dissipate the hesitancy and alarm which arise from a superficial reading of the dissertations elaborated by some of the older theologians, in advocacy of a seemingly opposite doctrine.

We speak throughout, it must be remembered, of a “*contritio charitate perfecta*,” and in claiming for it “*hancque hominem Deo reconciliare*,” we are merely reproducing in words the dogmatic teaching of the Council. We affirm, moreover, that although that “*charitas sit remissa*,” it remits mortal sin the moment it becomes a veritable “*initium charitatis*”; that the “*initium Charitatis*” is itself perfect charity, since it springs out of the “*dilectio Dei super omnia*”; or, in other words, that so soon as we conceive a sorrow for mortal sin, *ex motivo Charitatis*, that moment the continued presence of mortal sin becomes an impossibility. There is no insuperable objection to our confessing that the expression “*Contritio charitate perfecta*” is, perhaps, etymologically equivocal; but, in its consecrated theological acceptance, it signifies a contrition that is perfect in its lineage from charity, not a contrition perfected by a new alliance with charity.

That the act of perfect contrition or charity, in quolibet gradu, effects “*quamprimum*” the reconciliation of man with God, is manifest from the following texts of Sacred Scripture :

“Qui diligit me, diligetur a Patre meo”: “Ego diligentes me diligo.” In the theory of our opponents, those sacred pronouncements would be falsified in all those countless instances in which the “diligentes” would not have achieved some indeterminate “gradus dilectionis,” which the boldest shrink from defining, and for the exacting of which there is in reality no valid Scriptural or theological warrant. That the minimum measure of perfect charity expels mortal sin is equally manifest from the words in which the Holy Ghost asseverates, without reservation or qualification, that the “impietas impii non nocebit ei *in quacunque die conversus fuerit*,” as well as from those other words in which He binds Himself to man by an immutable and universal law: “Convertimini ad me, ET ego convertar ad vos.” The gage of God’s merciful condescension conveyed in all those promises, would be cruelly fallacious and misleading, if, underlying those words of solemn compact, there lay a necessity of accomplishing some mysterious “degrees of conversion,” which neither God nor His Church has hitherto determined. “Ratio evidens est,” writes St. Liguori, “quia sicut *quacunque conversio* a Deo tanquam a fine ultimo, etiam in gradu remisso, sufficit ad amittendam Dei amicitiam, ita *quacunque vera conversio* sufficit ad eam recuperandam.”

Such are some of the arguments by which all our great theologians support the doctrine that contrition which arises from charity “etiam in gradu remisso,” reconciles man with God, and concurrently remits his mortal sin. It is needless to add that the universality of this teaching and its practical acceptance by the Church, not alone constitute this doctrine “tuta in fide,” but render its contradictory “temeraria, probabilis et falsa.”

It would, however, be disingenuous to imply that the apparent views of some of the older theologians, and the earnest emphasis with which they give expression and advocacy to those views, do not contain much that is calculated to startle and perplex the casual reader. It would not, indeed, be easy to find language more impressively punctuated than the following extract (selected as an illustration) from the Catechism of the Council of Trent, which we find repro-

duced triumphantly by Concina and others who, by setting forth its most telling words and periods in italicised and leaded letters, and by employing the other accentuating devices of type, impart to the extract new and artificial force:—" *Ut enim concedamus, contritione peccata deleri, quis ignorat ADEO VEHEMENTEM, ACREM, ET INCENSAM ESSE OPORTERE, ut doloris acerbitas cum scelerum magnitudine aequari conferrique possit? At quoniam PAUCI ADMODUM ad hunc GRADUM pervenirent, fiebat etiam ut a PAUCISSIMIS HAC VIA peccatorum venia speranda esset.*" To this extract, which commonly holds the first place, are invariably added copious cuttings from the works of St. Augustine and St. Thomas, all which, set in suitably diversified type, are adduced in further sustainment of the same theory. "Haec adeo comperta sunt et decretoria," writes Concina, "ut fateamur oportet Thomistas illos qui oppositum docent, non attigisse fontem Angelicae doctrinae, sed ex corruptis rivulis aquas suas derivasse." It may be parenthetically observed that when Concina, who was himself a Thomist, commented thus severely, he could scarcely have been unaware that the Angelic Doctor had composed no formal or specific treatise on Penance: "Praeceptor Angelicus," says Tournely, "sublatus e vivis, quo tempore contritionis argumentum versabat animo, luctuosum sui, et inutile desiderium reliquit." We have, therefore, scarcely more than the *obiter dicta* of St. Thomas, and these, as we shall find, may very well be appealed to as confirming the teaching of De Lugo, St. Liguori, and the rest.

The recurring references to "Charitas remissa," "Charitas summa," and other methods of expressing degrees of comparison; but, above all, the alleged necessity of a "Contritio vehemens, acer, et incensus" without which we are assured, "venia speranda non esset," naturally introduces the important distinction between "Charitas appreciative summa" and "Charitas intensive summa." Although Concina asserts that this "distinctio non valde antiqua est," he must only have meant to convey that the distinction was not in the olden times indicated by those scholastic names; for its necessity is patent to any one who recognises a distinction between the intellect and the will. Concina himself (*Theol. Christiana*,

T. i. L. iii. c. 3), describes these two "species of charity with sufficient accuracy: "*Amore appreciativo* Deum prosequimur, quum Deum omnibus rebus præferimus, et quum, tali amore flagrant, omnia mala pati et sustinere, et bona quaecumque amittere parati sumus, ne Deum offendamus. Amor *intensivus* addit fervorem vehementiorem, conatum intensiorem, et sensibilem etiam quasi teneritudinem majorem et minorem."

It is manifest that if *intensio*, as thus defined, be no essential part of true charity or contrition, the arguments of Concina, &c., fall to the ground, and all that has been written regarding the necessity of "vehementia," "acritudo," "sensibilis teneritudo," &c., must be abandoned as the expression of a false and untenable idea. And here, fortunately, we can invoke the authority of St. Thomas, who, in a supplement to one of his works, discusses this question at considerable length, and expounds his views in no uncertain words: "Contritio habet duplicem dolorem: unum *rationis* [dolor appreciativus] qui est displicentia peccati commissi; et hic potest esse adeo parvus quod non sufficiet ad rationem contritionis, ut si minus displiceret ei [rationi] quam debeat displicere separatio a fine: sicut etiam amor potest esse ita remissus quod non sufficiet ad rationem charitatis. Alium dolorem habet in *sensu* [dolor intensivus], et *parvitas hujus non impedit rationem contritionis*; quia non se habet per se ad contritionem sed quasi *ex accidente ei adjungitur*; et iterum [quia] *non est in potentia nostra*," (*apud* St. Liguori, L. vi. T. iv. n. 441). Arguing in other places on the principles stated in the last few lines, the Angelic Doctor concludes that "*quaelibet* contritio est gratia gratum faciente informata: ergo *quantumcumque sit parva*, delet omnem culpam." And again, "*quantumcumque parvus sit dolor*, dummodo ad contritionis rationem sufficiat, omnem culpam delet." A simple development of those arguments—such as may be found in La Croix—has created an almost universal consent among theologians—"certum esse quod ad contritionem, ut justificet, non requiratur certa intensio, aut extensio quoad gradus:" and we may conclude with St. Liguori "quod omnis dolor, qui oritur ex charitate prædominante, est contritio justificans

hominem extra sacramentum, ut communiter docent D.D. citati ex S. Thoma."

With all this weight of reason and extrinsic authority in apparent opposition to the Catechism of the Council, it is due to so grave and recognised a work to rescue its teaching—if that be possible—from the censure involved in its abandonment by eminent subsequent writers, and indeed its practical abandonment by the Church. Nor is it difficult to do so; for material for abundant vindication is found in the Catechism itself. It is quite true that the venerated and saintly authors of this great work have written (Quest. xxvii.) "that for past transgressions should be felt the deepest and greatest sorrow, a sorrow not to be exceeded even in thought;" that "as the Charity with which we love God is the most perfect love, so the sorrow that accompanies contrition should also be the most vehement &c." But it is equally true that the self same chapter explains the "depth and vehemence" of that sorrow as identical with the "dolor summae appreciationis," when it adds: "If as of all things that deserve our love, God is the supreme good, so also of all things that deserve our hatred, sin is the supreme evil, it follows that for the same reason that we confess God to be supremely loved, we should also necessarily *hold sin in supreme detestation.*" As if this declaration were not sufficiently unequivocal and explicit, the authors of the Catechism devote the following chapter to formally asserting and establishing that, although "sensible sorrow is very much to be desired and commended," nevertheless contrition "ceases not to be true" should sensible sorrow be imperfect: "If we may not succeed (*si id minus consequi nobis liceat*), our contrition, nevertheless, may be true and efficacious; for it often happens that things that fall under the senses affect us more than spiritual things; and hence some persons sometimes experience a greater sense of grief for the loss of their children than for the baseness of their sins." It is manifest that however earnestly the Catechism desiderated vehement and poignant sensible sorrow, as an accompaniment of contrition, it did not regard such evidences of "intensity" as in any sense or measure essential. It also commends the shedding

of tears: but no writer has ever asserted that their absence indicates imperfect or inefficacious sorrow.

Precisely the same exegetical rendering may be applied to the sayings of most of the other theologians of this school—to all indeed except the mere thoughtless copyists, who erroneously attribute to “accidental intensity” what was intended to indicate the essential quality of “supreme appreciation.” For the latter, a strength of conviction that God is worthy of supreme love and that sin deserves unqualified hatred, is essential. That vehemence or force of conviction is, in its unbending and tenacious character, “not to be exceeded even in thought,” since it springs from the certainty of supernatural faith; and the sensible fervour with which our souls sometimes go forth to render homage to an object worthy of our love, or to repel the object of our detestation, is, by an easy transition, oftentimes erroneously mistaken for the intellectual act of which it is the mere casual parasite. Men are disposed to measure the reality and the stability of their conviction by the ardour with which it asserts itself; but this effervescence of energy is not unfrequently an *ignis fatuus* most liable to mislead. In the matter of contrition, above all others, it may disport its delusive light where contrition has found no settlement, just as it may be wholly absent where contrition exists in its most perfect fulness. All this arises from the fact that, in the absence of material objects, our senses are frequently stimulated by the phantasmal creatures of imagination; but as these are not necessarily the product of intelligence, so neither do they prove its presence and influence. The intellect steadily exercises its functions without the faintest necessary reference to their existence or to the shape they may assume. Hence, as Lehmkühl puts it, “*intensio actus substantiam ejus non mutat.*”

“DURATION” is another accidental adjunct of contrition, to which we have as yet scarcely alluded, although theologians of considerable weight—explaining their views in diverse and inconsistent ways—sometimes seem to regard it as an essential of true contrition. Juenin, speaking for himself and “many others,” says that contrition remits sin “*tantum*

adulta charitate et per pietatis actus plurimum ducta." We are told by Collet that "post Scotum, Scotistae plures durationem temporis a Deo taxati requirunt;" but La Croix refers us to many eminent writers who undertook to interpret Scotus in quite the opposite sense. The argument adduced by Collet to establish the essential character of duration is singularly and strikingly weak, and—what is altogether unusual with Collet—is transparently untenable: "Etsi enim," he says, "in ictu oculi excidat homo a charitate et justitia, habet tamen nescio quid ambigui charitas pauco tempore perseverans, et sicut arbor vi ventorum facile et cito dejecta, non videtur bene radicata fuisse, tametsi aliquando bene radicata fuerit; sic charitas quasi momentanea, admodum suspecta esse debeat." The innuendo this argument suggests would manifestly imply that contrition—which *ex hypothesi* may be valid—could not be reasonably supposed to be lost in the second moment of its existence—a position which Collet was too rigorously orthodox to entertain. We are, as Catholics, constrained to reject, in all its modifications, the Lutheran doctrine of the "inamissibility of grace"; we are consequently bound to believe that in every stage of its existence, the habit of grace is liable to be lost; and the promptitude with which it is unhappily sometimes forfeited, affords no conclusive ground for suspecting that it had not existed. Loss and gain of sanctifying grace are effected equally "in ictu oculi"; for the same identical words, "quacumque die," are employed in Sacred Scripture to indicate the instantaneous effectuation of each. Nor would it follow from this, as a *reductio ad absurdum*, that the moments of man's life might, in our doctrine, alternate continuously in mortal sin and sanctifying grace; for no one asserts that man so lives in an atmosphere of actual grace that he may, at his capricious will, elicit or decline to elicit acts of perfect contrition. Even those theologians who teach that effective sufficient grace is given in most bountiful profusion to all men, limit the times of its concession to the uprising of such occasions as God in His wisdom shall deem suitable (*debito tempore*); in such emergencies God will not be wanting; but He cannot expose His graces to be toyed and trifled with

and wantonly abused. But, returning to the *duration* theory, we must remember that there is question here of a *transient act*, not of an *habitual state*, as the argument of Collet seems to assume. Our inquiry regards solely the elements and conditions of that act, and by no means the history of the habit infused in consequence of that act's being performed. The act is or is not valid, utterly irrespective of the future fortune of its effects. The texts already quoted prove to demonstration that man's conversion to God *ex motivo charitatis* is forthwith followed by the remission of his sin, unless indeed we admit—what no Catholic can hold—that God suspends the fulfilment of His part of the covenant, or refuses to be reconciled with those who, He foresees, will not persevere for at least some indefinite period. Just as well might we exact the prevision of final perseverance.

Perhaps we can account for the haziness of idea and expression that pervades this specimen argument, by recalling the unique and marvellous character of this conversion of God to man, and its utter dissimilarity to any other conversion we know of. The instantaneous transition from a state of sin to a state of justice is, in many ways, more stupendous than the primeval creation in which vacuous but neutral nothingness became substantial existence. Besides, all our ideas of "conversion" are derived from earthly things, and involve a series of subordinate changes which require duration for development. Human language cannot well describe, nor human ideas represent, the "*fiat lux*" by which the sinful soul becomes—is—the Temple of the Holy Ghost. We cannot conceive night changed into day without the intervention of at least a momentary twilight; and this means "duration." We cannot conceive enmity giving place to love where there has been no cooling down of wrath nor growth of kindly sympathy. We cannot picture to ourselves "the feast of ingathering" where there has been no spring-time of expectancy nor tardy autumn. Every purely earthly conversion is effected by time as an essential ally; not so that conversion which God worketh.

C. J. M.

(*To be continued.*)

IRISH MISSIONARY TYPES.

"THE OLD PRIESTS"—"THE DEAN."

THE class of Irish Missionary Priests to which "the Dean" belonged, has well nigh disappeared. Without disparagement of the more modern priestly type, we may state that the older has left behind it no heirs to many of the admirable gifts and special virtues that adorned it. A new sacerdotal race has sprung up abroad, as at home. It is endowed with new and excellent qualities no doubt. It is well fitted (as our new armaments are in other fields of warfare) for the changed conditions and tactics of spiritual combat and conquest. Yet we, who have lived and laboured during the transition period that marked the decline of the one and the birth of the other class, may well be pardoned if we say of the brave old pioneer band, "we shall not look upon your like again." Let others wait till the new levies, seasoned in war, drop off in their turn, "morts sur le champ d'honneur," and shed one day a proud tear to their memory. We were of "the Old Guard," raw recruits, if you will, in their immortal ranks, yet privileged to witness, and share to some extent their exploits. Let us glorify them: "*Laudemus viros gloriosos et parentes nostros in generatione sua. Homines magna virtute et prudentia praeditos.*" (*Ecc.* xiv.) Let us linger near the grey tombs that mark the resting places of the men of the "old brigade" in many a far foreign land. Let us raise a wet eye to many a neighbouring sacred pile, the myriad monuments scattered the world wide, that record their untiring zeal, their skill and success in consolidating on earth the kingdom of God.

It were well, indeed, that many another pen should be employed in preserving the memory and sketching the traits of the fine old types of the priesthood that have passed or are passing away. Be this a contribution, worthy only from its truthfulness, to the gallery that more skilful hands may some day continue and complete. Of bishops and prelates we have pictures without number. No one seems disposed to paint the modest features or gild the pious memory of the

humbler workers in the vineyard, to whose practical labours and unrecorded virtues the growth of the Church in our day is mainly due.

The writer's reminiscences of the "old priests" and of "the Dean," will lead the reader, should he consent to visit it, to a colony that of all others received and retained the deepest imprint of Irish missionary zeal and of Irish colonial enterprise, the free and independent Colony of Newfoundland.

A nobler band of men devoted to race and religion never left the shores of Ireland than those who built up the prospering church in Newfoundland. They impressed deeply upon it the living image of the island of saints. Those "old priests," as they were affectionately and familiarly called in our time, are now beginning to be remembered only by those who are themselves turning the hill-top of life to descend into the dark vale beyond. It is well to remind the growing race of the men who acted a powerful part in preparing their country for a great religious and political future.

The "old priests" followed the tide of Irish emigration to Newfoundland in the days when that colony was as well known, and as much spoken of in Ireland, as America or Australia are to-day.¹ They came there before and during the famine years, from Waterford, Wexford, Kilkenny and Tipperary, principally. Both the priests and people who emigrated to the colony at that time bore the well-known impress of those districts in their fine personal appearance and bold enterprising character. After wide observation in many lands, the writer can state that nowhere has he seen any who excelled in those respects the "youngsters" (as they were called) who landed in the colony in those early years.

A portion only, and the smaller portion of them had been accustomed to sea-faring life before their arrival in the colony. Yet the peculiar dash and daring of those men rendered them expert and successful in the new and perilous

¹ Geography notwithstanding, the name *America* is applied in Newfoundland as in Ireland to the United States alone.

occupation to which they had now to commit their lives and fortunes. The "old priests" entered heartily into the spirit and life of the country and times. They made the unstable sea tributary to the social and enduring monuments of worship. The ice fields bore their crops, and "the Banks of Newfoundland" yielded their dividends, to sustain and adorn religion. Never in any country were the sources more prolific or contributions more generous. Sunday after Sunday the long list was read from the altar, the muster roll of the brave fishermen who proudly gave a portion of their sea spoils to establish religion in the country. Thus the great cathedral, the convents and all the edifices sacred to faith and charity were built up. The old priests were in every sense equal to their position, and that, for them was an honour as great and as hardly earned as ever was won by a Bossuet or a Lacordaire in more æsthetic fields of religious zeal. Their lore indeed was mainly that of the account book and ledger; their eloquence the art of pithy appeal or ready reprimand. They were a hardy devoted body of men, of whose exploits by flood and field tales might be told to rival the chronicles of border chivalry.

It must not, however, be concluded that they were quite unlettered or mentally unendowed. They possessed the clear head and sound sense of a healthy, unimpaired race; that freshness and vigour of mind that is begotten of simple habits, of wholesome, physical and moral influences, and is, in fact, the fruit of personal and hereditary virtue. As theologians they possessed the useful practical knowledge that suited the work they had to perform. A large range of culture would have been objectless in their circumstances. Many of them were men of marked natural ability.

But we must not lose sight of "the Dean." In fact all this is but his introduction, and will serve to spare pencil and colouring in his portraiture.

The Very Rev. Dean Cleary, known for over a quarter of a century throughout Newfoundland as simply "the Dean," was known also for more than fifty years as one of the foremost figures in the religious and social world of the colony. He came there from the parish of Bannow, co. Wexford,

where he was born in 1796. He laboured on the Newfoundland Mission from 1830 to 1881. During this entire period of over half a century he never once left the field of his labours on any plea of respite or business. His life is inseparably woven into the history of Newfoundland. He was a leading spirit in the material advancement of the country, and a trusty guide to its people throughout the petty political turmoils that rendered it notorious, until its people won for themselves Home Rule in 1855. Calm, moderate, yet strenuous, he never for a moment suffered his priestly dignity or civic honour to become tarnished amid the hot frays from which few escaped unscathed. We will consider him first as a civilizer of the land to which he devoted his life, next as a priest and a pastor.

It is not easy for the "home" priests to understand the various directions the priest's influence had to take in the Newfoundland of past days. Outside the city of St. John's there was scarce a magistrate, lawyer, doctor, commissioner of works, policeman or civil officer of any kind. The priest had by times to assume each and all of those characters, and fulfil their functions. Some of them became eminent in one line, some in another. Father Cleary became famous for *road making*. He had a better right to the *soubriquet* of "Colossus of Roads" than another prominent Wexfordman, Hon. Laurence O'Brien, who bore that title for years in the colony. Strange to say there was great opposition to road making in the colony during the early years of the Dean's life. The "merchants"—the sea-lords, to coin a word—in that country, were opposed to it lest their dealers might frequent the city instead of the fishing ground, or be even tempted to turn their thoughts to agriculture: a direction of labour most reprehensible in merchant eyes. One at least of Father Cleary's confreres was opposed to roads on *moral* grounds. This was Fr. M——, a pious, zealous man, whom the bishop, Dr. Mullock, used to style "an Apostolic savage." Fr. M—— feared that his innocent people would use the roads for frequent visits to "the city," and become contaminated by what he deemed "its vices." All this time there was no road between St. John's (the capital), and the important

settlements where the Dean's parish lay twenty or more miles away. He made the journey over and over again by sea in a frail boat, and oftener by land, for he was the king of pedestrians. On one of these occasions he set out accompanied by two men, in the depth of winter. Blinded and bewildered by a snow storm they lost the track, spent the whole night on a frozen lake, walking constantly to shake off the fatal sleep, death's harbinger under these circumstances. In the morning one of the three lay stark and cold on his icy bed. "He had a bottle of rum," said the Dean, "and made free use of it during the night."

"The Dean" would listen to no arguments, moral or commercial, against the establishment of lines of communication between the various settlements and the capital. He was a true economist though he had probably never heard of Smith's *Wealth of Nations*. As far as his influence extended he opened up on every side avenues of industry and profit for the people. Time, labour, and hands in bringing produce to the market were saved. Cattle raising and agriculture were encouraged, and he never relaxed his efforts until he had bound the city and the settlements over which he had control by a line of roads unsurpassed in the colony or elsewhere. This particular feature of his career has been dwelt upon because it was that which rendered his life remarkable and useful to the country. In older lands excellence in letters, in statesmanship, even in war and destruction, may render a man famous. But in a new land the man who aids nature to open up to his fellow men her virgin resources, who places in communication with each other the scattered groups of the social body—useless when separated for all purposes of civilization and progress—this is the man who deserves to be called great. There were two such in the clerical body in Newfoundland within the writer's memory. Right Rev. Dr. Mullock, who went in advance of all; who would have been great anywhere; who lived in a future that he foresaw and foretold and that every day is realizing—and, less enlightened, less enthusiastic, but not less solid in his views or successful in his own particular work, the Very Rev. Dean Cleary. The Dean's civilizing influence took

other directions, chiefly in the line of church building, and the encouragement of a proper style of house building and ornamentation among his people. His word, supported by his example, was law. The contrast between the pretty cottages beaming, snow white in the sunlight in his district, and the rude mouldy log cabins of other settlements was remarkable. It was a pleasant ending to a drive of eighteen miles from St. John's, passing by scattered farms and homesteads, to drop at last upon Bay Bulls,¹ the largest village on "the Dean's shore," as that whole coast line was called. A fine harbour is this Bay Bulls, with crescent shore overlooked by pleasant white houses and crowned by its neat church deftly set over where the curve rounds off to stretch out an arm towards the sea. Most of the settlers here were English, chiefly from Devon, and called in the colony *West countrymen*. They were all Protestants when the Dean came among them. There are now about four non-Catholic families in the whole district. The Dean converted the whole convertible shore without a word of controversy but by simply living there his own useful exemplary life. Leaving Bay Bulls behind we have four miles more up a wooded hill, along a flat barren, then down an abrupt incline to the Dean's gate. There Witless Bay opens to the view where the Dean had his chief residence (for he had three pretty houses in various parts of the district) for fifty years. It is a wide open bay—too open for safe shelter when there is a stiff out wind. Across its jaws like a gag is a long narrow island. Around its shores, but chiefly on the north side, are the fishers' houses and the fishing flakes. On the right, on entering the gate, are open meadows—the Dean's fields. On the left a fairly imposing building—the Presentation Convent. A quick curve, after a few yards, brings one to the door of a cottage, comfortable looking and commodious, set in the midst of a thick growth of firs and facing the open meadows and the sea. This is Dean Cleary's house, a house every one loved to visit, and that was never

¹ *Baie des Boules*; it is said to have been named by the French who landed there in 1762, marched on St. John's and took that city. It was soon, however, recaptured and held ever since by the English.

without a welcome for the wayfarer. In that quiet spot, with its thick curtain of firs shading it from the world, where the deep silence is only broken by the deeper murmurs of the ocean, great thoughts visit the soul and voices are heard within that never speak amid the tumult of the world's thoroughfares. Here on the ledge that divides the nether elements, fresh and unchanged from the Almighty hand,—the vast primeval waste and the tameless sea—overawed by those two immensities, one turns with deeper trust and brighter hope to the starry heaven that is never so inspiring, never so eloquent, as when looking down upon those sad solitudes of earth.

In such a spot as this—on the silent shores of an obscure harbour, in a land little known—the Dean spent fifty years of a peaceful, useful life. No doubt the scene lent to his character some of its own features—breadth, simplicity, liberality, and a rare *naturalness*.

The Dean had spent only two years of his long missionary life (the first two) outside of this district of Witless Bay and Bay Bulls. They were passed along the shores of the immense bays of Trinity, Bonavista, and Notre Dame, a coastline as long as from Waterford to Londonderry. One anecdote of his career in that district is well worth preserving. It affords a complete picture of the state of the mission in those early days, and throws a side-light upon the Dean's character, in which there was a marked comic strain. The young priest in his wanderings about those bays and inlets came upon a settlement (Kingscove) where no priest up to that time had officiated. He was soon surrounded by a gang of stalwart men and buxom matrons (fish only is dessicated in Newfoundland), and blockaded by a crowd of rosy children, and even grown-up boys and girls coming forward for priestly baptism. This duty was naturally accounted for, and easily performed. But who had married the parents? There never had been priest, parson, or magistrate in the place before. However, there was a school-master, and him the Dean convoked into synod to inquire into the matrimonial discipline of the community. "I married them all myself, sir," said this worthy. "And who married *you*?" asked the

Dean. "I done that myself too, sir," replied Grammaticus. "How did you perform the ceremony?" "Well, your Reverence, I made them kneel down, and I said the *De Profundis* over them!" He looked the Dean straight in the eye, as daring him to "better that" if he could.

It would be impossible, in the space to be expected, to relate even a portion of the quaint stories that grew out of the Dean's long and eventful life. Let us turn to the spiritual and pastoral side of his character.

The Dean loved the priesthood and he loved youth, but both combined were his pride and glory. He was our natural and our appointed "guide, philosopher, and friend," and no one could fulfil the trust better. He was the best man to stand between default and authority that ever lived. In that excellent clerical body there was nothing very grave to require his serious mediation. All were prompt and obedient men, and admired and trusted their great chief, Dr. Mullock. Yet it was a harrassing mission, and there were occasional troubles and heartaches. To the Dean these only gave occasion for additional exercise of kindness. Without these, the Dean's occupation as mediator would be gone, and the best part of his nature deprived of exercise. He always took the part of the weak. Notwithstanding that poor times came upon the Dean from 1860 to 1870, there was no marked interruption to the celebration of the marriage rites in Witless Bay. And at one of the ceremonies, performed during these years, an incident occurred which throws a vivid light on the Dean's character. His tender thoughtful love for the poor, especially those exposed to the sting as well as the hardships of poverty; his simplicity; his shrewdness and humour, all are displayed in the incident. It was the custom in most parishes in Newfoundland, to pay the marriage fee by a collection made on the spot among the persons in attendance, beginning with the bridegroom. No one present, of any means, would think of refusing the silent appeal of the outstretched plate in the collector's hand. Indeed, it would not have been "wholesome," as they say, to do so, for keen eyes were there on the watch, and tongues were ready sharpened to publish any such delinquency. Women of any position, are supposed

as well as men, to tender a contribution, more especially if related to the happy pair. On the occasion referred to, a woman in the Dean's parish presented herself to him the day before the wedding. She had lost her husband, and had been reduced from a comfortable to a needy condition. She represented in touching language her shame at being unable to offer any contribution at the wedding. The tradition of her late respectable position was still alive in the public memory; the parties to be united in wedlock were her relatives; so that she could not avoid the difficulty by absenting herself, &c., &c. This was just the case to awaken the Dean's tender sympathies, and touch the fine chords that were deep strung in his nature; so he handed the poor woman a pound note to be paid back at the wedding on the morrow. The wedding took place, supper was ready laid, the collection proceeded gaily and successfully. The woman was present, respectably dressed in the garments of better days that yet remained to her; all had contributed who were expected to contribute except herself. The plate pleaded to her in vain. So did the anxious eye of the Dean, who beheld with amazement her absorbed and unconscious demeanour. She was thinking probably of her late husband—nothing else could account for that resigned "far off" expression that so well became her meek countenance and widow's weeds. Knowing what he and she, but none else knew, the Dean, rather than admit a harrowing suspicion, concluded that the woman really was unconscious of what was passing around. So, to call her to her senses, he cried out as the plate was returning, "Anyone else there?" Then, after a long and fruitless pause, with a delicate gradation that did credit to his head and heart, he repeated: "*Any woman there?*" This appeal going so straight but delicately to its object, would have moved a heart of stone; but it had no effect on the decayed gentlewoman, who retained the Dean's money, confident that she could not hold it as closely as he would preserve her artifice from disclosure. This story the writer had from a clergyman who was accidentally in the secret, and present at the wedding. The Dean himself never told it, but it was amusing to witness his silent reverie when twitted

with this mischance of his charity. He was evidently perplexed to find motives of excuse for the culprit, and of comfort for being cozened himself—a thing he never relished. He always ended by giving it up, and declaring that “the poor woman wanted the money at all events.”

The last few years of the Dean's life, from about 1876 to 1881, were spent in seclusion, and then for the first time he had a permanent assistant in his extensive parish. He had lived too long in the past to mingle actively with new scenes and systems. He retired to contemplate the past and prepare for the future. There is something very sad and sacred in those musings of venerable old age. The grave old man of heaped up memories, to whom nothing is new or strange or exceptional, whose light has passed over all the hidden places of life, and departs from them now with no unkindly gleam, has about him an unearthly air. He wears an expression that nothing in life except life's long protracted ending can give. It is begotten of the fulness of mortal experience, and its meaning is read in the words *consummatum est*.

Since about 1878 the Dean, then far advanced in age, yet retaining still much of the power of his iron frame, had fallen mentally into a childish state. In this condition the writer beheld him a few years before his death in 1881. He recognised no one and was fretful at times. It was the chafing of a strong and active spirit bound in darkness, all unconscious of its own yearnings, groping for the light that lies beyond.

There was always one unfailing remedy for this restlessness. This was, to seat the good old man in the vehicle that had so often borne him to the remote ends of his parish to the homes of the sick and poor. Then his face lighted up, and all his ancient energy seemed to return. He imagined he was setting out *on a sick call*! Love of duty outlived reason, and almost the vital principle in this heroic priest, and filled him to the last with a happiness as God-like in its source as it was childlike in its display. It became almost a daily care of the Dean's assistant and successor in the parish to humour this admirable passion of the noble old man.

The history of the Church and of the world presents no picture more sublime and touching than this. The comic

features of the spectacle—the motionless carriage, the clutched reins that guided nothing, the voice and whip upraised to urge an imaginary steed—all vanish before the lesson imparted of loyalty, tenderness and truth. After an hour thus seated in his carriage in the coach-house, the Dean would suffer himself to be led back to his room, comforted by the consciousness that he *had performed his duty*.

So lived and died a man the world will never reckon among its great. The world has indeed no rule or measure for greatness like this. The world deems such a life madness and its end without honour, because the light of justice hath not shined unto it and the sun of understanding hath not risen upon it. (*Wisd.* v.)

There is no other language that has an equivalent for the Irish phrase “Soggarth aroon,” and no other people that feels in the least, as far as our observation goes, the meaning or the emotion that phrase conveys to the Irish ear and heart. In continental countries the seminarist is constantly warned in spiritual direction of the dangers to himself of being much with and to the people outside the strict duties of his office. The continental priest, at home or abroad, though he is often a model ecclesiastic and a zealous missionary, is seldom, if ever, the popular priest, the friend, confidant, and familiar of his flock, the “Father John or Tom, God bless him,” of his parish or district. In fact the foreign priest or missionary is moulded, from the marrow out, into the *ecclesiastic*. The Irish priest remains always *a man*. No other priests in the world know their people so thoroughly and instinctively as they. This is one characteristic that distinguishes the Irish missionary from all others, and makes him successful even among those not of his race, and esteemed and trusted by those not of his creed.

Another mark of the Irish missionary is his practical common sense, and we may call it *utilitarianism*. He is a founder and builder of something solid, tangible, lasting, rugged perchance, yet religious. We have always admired more than any other the statue and picture of St. Patrick which represent him holding a complete little church in the crook of his left arm, and with his *Baccal* in his right hand to

show that he is setting out to plant that church somewhere. Whoever conceived this notion had a better idea of Patrick, of his mission, his work, and the genius he transmitted to his Celtic successors in the priesthood, than the mystic who pictured him driving the snakes over the Giant's Causeway. It is the ambition of every Irish missionary to build at least one church, and every Irish missionary that gets half a chance does it. Some build ten and some have built twenty. He knows that when his voice is stilled and his labours over, the temple he raised will speak for him and work out the work he began. His idea is to gather his flock together rather than pay them single occasional visits. Where there is a church there there will be a gathering, and when there is a gathering there the Lord is in the midst, building up his kingdom in the hearts of his people by grace and the sacraments. But this subject would lead us too far. Enough if we have succeeded in distinguishing by its main features the character of the Irish Missionary Priesthood in our sketch of the Dean who was its perfect type.

R. HOWLEY.

NOMINA PATRICIANA.—II.

BY whom, and where, was St. Patrick consecrated? In answering these questions the ingenuity of theorists has been much exercised in the past; but it would have been well for them, as it is for future theorists, to lay to heart a lesson conveyed to all antiquarians in one of his enchanting sketches by the "wizard of the north." The author of the *Antiquary* introduces us to the lord of Monkbarns, who fondly imagined that he traced in a mound on his property the remains of a Roman encampment and the spot on which the last decisive stand was made by the Caledonians against Agricola, the Roman general. Full of his pet theory, Monkbarns discovered a flag on which were marked the letters A. D. L. L., and judging the stone to be a pagan sacrificial instrument, he

interpreted the letters as meaning *Agricola dicavit libens lubens*. But while the antiquarian was exulting at his discovery, Edie Ochiltree, a professional beggar, appeared on the scene, alluded to the fancied Roman mound which years previously, he said, had been thrown up by himself; and in proof thereof suggested to Monkbarns to dig for a ladle, the imaginary pagan vessel, which was improvised for a rustic feast in connection with the Aiken family, and inscribed with the initials of the words *Aiken's Drum lang ladle*, and thus dissipated the airy theory of Monkbarns. A leaning to a particular theory influenced Monkbarns in the interpretation of the inscription, and a like bias appears to have influenced views in regard to the place of St. Patrick's consecration and his consecrator. Several theories have been started. Some refer to the name of the consecrator, while others refer to the place of consecration; and thus naturally, just as there happened to have been a preconceived theory in favour of a particular place or person, the interpretation of words bearing on persons and that bearing on places mutually reacted.

It is passing strange that the place of consecration of such a saint as St. Patrick has not been yet identified: nay, more; none of the half dozen of theories started appears to have suggested much less established it. But I must take warning from the example of Monkbarns; and that the general reader made judge how far my remarks are called for, and lest he may adopt, in preference to my own theory, the theories which I reject, I shall as briefly as possible state the several opinions on the questions under consideration.

The Scholiast on the first Life (Colgan, n. 13) tells us that St. Patrick was sent for consecration to Pope Celestine by Germanus of Auxerre; but that the Pope having previously sent Palladius to Ireland did not entertain the application of St. Patrick. He then turned to an island (Capri) where he received the "staff of Jesus." Urged by repeated visions he came to Germanus who sent him again with a witness of his worth to St. Celestine; and the Pope, having heard of the death of Palladius, consecrated, through Amatorex bishop of Auxerre, St. Patrick in presence of Theodosius ruler of the world (14. n). The Scholiast adds that Pope Celestine heard

in Rome the cry of children in Ireland inviting Patrick to come to them. The annotator differs from the Scholiast in this—that though he says there was an application made to Pope Celestine twice for St. Patrick, yet states that St. Patrick only once went to St. Celestine (p. 9. n. 29).

The writer of the second Life represents Germanus as sending Patrick to St. Celestine, who commissioned him to go to Ireland even while Palladius was there. St. Patrick in Ireland hearing of the death of Palladius in Britain, at Eboria, turned aside and received consecration from Bishop Amathorex. This version inverts the whole natural order of events.

The third Life makes Germanus send Patrick to St. Celestine. St. Patrick went to a holy man Amathorex who consecrated him. He was told by an angel to go to Ireland; but he replied that he should previously see the Lord, and having seen Him, he went to Pope Celestine who received him with honour and sent him to Ireland.

The fourth Life states that Germanus sent St. Patrick to Pope Celestine who commissioned him to go to Ireland. On his way thither, St. Patrick met the disciples of Palladius at Eboria, who announced his death. St. Patrick in consequence received consecration from Amathorex who gave him jurisdiction.

The fifth Life informs us that St. Patrick was ordained by Bishop Senior. St. Patrick having gone to Ireland did not succeed. He went to Rome, and received the Pope's blessing. Having heard on his way to Ireland of the death of Palladius, he received consecration from Amator.

The sixth Life sends St. Patrick to Pope Celestine who consecrated him. An angel urged him, on the death of Palladius, to set out for Ireland. The Pope sent with him some missionary auxiliaries. In returning to Ireland, he called on Germanus who gave him altar-requisites.

The Tripartite or seventh Life represents Germanus as sending St. Patrick to Pope Celestine. Patrick having made his way to Rome was well received by the Pope, who, on learning the death of Palladius previously sent, consecrated St. Patrick

in presence of Germanus and Amato Rege, the Roman, and honoured him with the distinguished name of Patrick. Here we see the consecration and witnesses of consecration are different from those given by the Scholiast on the first Life, while both authorities are contradicted by the other Lives, which are not quite consistent with each other as to the place and circumstances of consecration.

The obscurities and even contradictions which are to be met with in the Lives arise from faulty versions or wrong interpretations of the Saint's life in the *Book of Armagh*. This earliest and most authentic narrative tells us that St. Patrick warned by angelic visitations, and moved by the cry of invitation from Irish children which he heard in vision, determined to set out for the mission for which he had long prepared himself. Germanus with whom he studied sends with St. Patrick a priest named Segetius to be a companion and witness to his worthiness. It was the more necessary to have Segetius sent by Germanus in order to testify to St. Patrick's fitness for the episcopal dignity, as the Saint was not consecrated by himself. For it was well known that Palladius had been consecrated and sent by Pope Celestine to Ireland, and that the Church forbade the consecration of a second bishop without the consent of the first or chief bishop in a country. The writer in the *Book of Armagh* having told how St. Patrick, with the consent of Germanus, Bishop of Auxerre, with whom he studied, set out for his Irish mission, proceeds to describe the circumstances of accidental consecration at Ebmoria; and as several theories have been started on the description given in the *Book of Armagh*, I give just here a literal translation of it. St. Patrick and his companions had entered on their journey (*cœptum iter*).¹

“When then they heard of the death of holy Palladius in Britain, for Augustine and Benedict and others, disciples of Palladius, were returning and announced at *Ebmoria* his death, Patrick and those with him turned a little out of their way to a certain wonderful man, a chief bishop, Amatho (*rex*) by name, who dwelt in the neighbourhood; and there St. Patrick knowing what was to have

¹ *Documenta de S. P.* (p. 25) learnedly edited by Rev. E. Hogan, S.J.

happened received the Episcopal grade from Matho (*rex*) the holy bishop."¹

(a) One has only to read the above passage in order to reject Rome as the place of St. Patrick's consecration. Yet it has been mentioned in connection with his consecration by most of the Lives. The Tripartite (Colgan, 123, part I.) expressly states that he was consecrated by Pope Celestine in Rome in presence of Germanus and Amatus the Roman King; and that on the occasion three choirs sang in unison—the heavenly spirits, the Romans, and the Irish infants from the western wood of Foeluth. But there was no Roman King Amatus. Besides, the *Book of Armagh* informs us that Amatus, not St. Celestine, was the consecrator; and it is no better than pure fancy to have the three choirs join on the occasion. But if we suppose that Palladius died at the end of January, and Pope Celestine at the beginning of April in the same year, the interval would be too short to allow the messengers of Palladius' death to come from the confines of Caledonia to Rome.

On the one hand the Irish authorities assign the death of Pope Celestine to the 6th of April, 432. In this they are of accord with the Roman martyrology and Breviary, with Bede, Usuard, and, I may add, Ado, who, however, places his death on the 7th of April. The Irish Lives add that St. Celestine lived only one week after the consecration of St. Patrick. Furthermore, the Martyrology of Tallaght assigns the ordination or consecration of our Saint to the 6th of April. This does not refer to his priesthood, for the earliest martyrologies or Lives gave us no definite notion of the place of our Apostle's ordination or of his ordainer, and consequently it was very unlikely that the very date would be remembered:

¹ (Patricius) "coeptum ingreditur iter . . . et misit Germanus seniore cum illo Revertente vero eo (Palladio) hinc et primo mari transito coeptoque terrarum itinere in Britonum finibus vita factus. Audita itaque morte sancti Palladii in Britanniis quia discipuli Palladii, id est Augustinus et Benedictus et cæteri redeuntes retulerant in Elmoría de morte ejus, Patricius et qui cum eo erant declinaverunt iter ad quemdam mirabilem hominem summum episcopum Amatho rege nomine, in propinquo loco habitantem ibique Sanctus Patricius sciens quae eventura erant ibi episcopalem gradum ab Matho rege sancto episcopo accepit." *Documenta*, &c., pp. 25-6.

moreover the reception of priest's orders which some think he exercised in other countries before he came to Ireland was not of so much importance, if any at all, to the Irish Ecclesiastical Calendarist as his consecration.

On the other hand, though the 15th and 25th of December have been mentioned by some in connection with Palladius' death, Colgan deems it probable that he died on the 27th January, in the year 432. For he was sent to Ireland, according to Prosper's chronicle, during the consulship of Bassus and Antiochus in the year 431; and considering the delay in journeying and missionary work done by him in Ireland, his death could not reasonably be supposed to have occurred before the date assigned to it by Colgan. In this he is borne out by Ferrarius and the English Martyrology. No doubt some assign a festival in honour of Palladius to the 6th of July; but the Breviary of Aberdeen, which perhaps is its oldest authority, marks the July festival as a minor one; and surely the *natale* of a national saint in a national Calendar for the Scotch claim Palladius as their apostle, could not be fairly called a minor feast. And even though we were to suppose that the death of Palladius occurred on the 6th of July, how then could the consecration of St. Patrick in consequence of it be said to have taken place in presence of Pope Celestine who died according to most authorities in the preceding April? The interval then between the death of Palladius on the borders of Scotland at the end of January, account being taken of the delay in decent interment, would not suffice to have messengers bring the news of his death to Rome previous to the decease of Pope St. Celestine. On that account as well as for other reasons the consecration of St. Patrick in Rome by Pope Celestine, as stated in many of the Lives, is extremely improbable.

Furthermore, the Scholiast on Fiech (Colgan, p. 3, n. 14) states that it was Amatus who consecrated St. Patrick, and did not merely witness the consecration, as stated by the Tripartite, in presence of Pope Celestine and Theodosius ruler of the world. Again, while the Tripartite (vid. Colgan) represents Germanus as present at Rome at the consecration, the other authors state or imply the contrary. For the

scholiast on the first Life as well as the third, fourth, and sixth Lives, state that Germanus sent St. Patrick to Rome for consecration, while some say that our Saint called on Germanus on his return; and does not this clearly imply that Germanus' presence in Rome at St. Patrick's consecration was as fanciful as that of the infant choir from the woods of western Focluth?¹ Even the Tripartite, which is so much relied on for the consecration of our Apostle in Rome in presence of Germanus, had previously stated that Germanus sent our Saint with others to Rome, who having received his blessing embarked on the Tuscan sea. (Misit ergo Germanus denuo Patricium).

(b) There is a second theory which identifies the Ebmoria of the *Book of Armagh* with Eboracum, York. But this does not deserve much consideration, not because of the violence done to the word as because it is opposed to the express statement of the *Book of Armagh*. This assures us that St. Patrick, after leaving Germanus, learnt the death of Palladius, received consecration at Ebmoria, and crossed the British sea: therefore Ebmoria was not in Britain. The fact that St. Patrick, after leaving Germanus, faced his mission, and after consecration crossed the British sea tells also against the supposition of a consecration at Rome. This theory originated in a faulty collocation which connected Britain with the news rather than the death of Palladius.

(c) A third theory suggests that Ebmoria was Auch in the south-west of France,² and that the consecrator was Armentarius. But in going to Auch from Auxerre one goes neither towards Rome nor Ireland. It would have been far easier to return to Germanus than to go to Auch. Besides there is no great likeness between the words Ebmoria and Augusta Ausciorum. There is still as little likeness between Amato of the *Book of Armagh* and Armentarius, Bishop of Auch. Furthermore, there would in going to Auch be more than a mere turning off the road, as stated in the *Book of Armagh*. (Declinavit iter).

¹ "Audiebantur per totam Hiberniam vel usque ad ipsos Romanos." *Tr. Thaum.* p. 5, n. 5.

² *Documenta de S.P.*, p. 27, n.

(d) The suggestion of Dr. Lanigan that Evreux (called Ebroyca) was meant by Ebmoira does not indeed offer any violence to the words; but the supposition which sends St. Patrick so much westwards does not at all harmonize with the idea of mere turning aside.

(e) The learned Colgan suggests Boulogne or Liege in Belgium as the representative of Ebmoira. Between this and the ancient name for Boulogne, there is not the least similarity: moreover the Eburones of Belgium were too much away from the Roman road between Auxerre and Britain.

(f) A theory has been started on the reading or version of St. Patrick's life in the Bollandists' copy, which gives Curbia for Ebmoira, and thus identifies the place of St. Patrick's consecration with Picardy. This place, though not considerably distant from the old Roman road from Boulogne to Rheims, yet does not quite square with the idea suggested in the *Book of Armagh*. No doubt, Curbia bears a closer resemblance to Corbie than to Ebmoira; yet I am disposed to judge that the Curbia of the Bollandists is only another form for Ebmoira. On that account the able writer in the *Scottish Review*, to my mind, who acknowledged to a malignant joy at seeing the old perplexing Ebmoira displaced by Curbia in the *Patrician Documents* was premature in his notes of joy and triumph.¹ Even the Bollandists whose Life gives *Curbia* do not identify this with Corbie as the scene of our apostle's consecration; and this brings us to the seventh theory.

(g) Dr. Todd suggests that St. Patrick's consecration took place on the coast of Brittany. For this he relies on the *Book of Armagh*, which states that after his consecration he went on board a vessel that lay ready for him. But that venerable book only gives an outline, and leaves details to be supplied by more minute biographies. Thus in reference to his embarkation it states that "he went on board and touched the British isles."² One thing did not at once follow the other: sailing through many miles of water intervened. There is more reason for suspecting that St.

¹ *Scottish Review*, for July, 1884.

² *Documenta*, p. 27, "ascendit et pervenit Britannias."

Patrick's consecration took place in the centre rather than on the coast of France.

(h) Anything coming from his Eminence Cardinal Moran is entitled to our best consideration; but his remarks on the present question do not inspire much confidence. In his *Essays* (p. 14), he stated that Germanus on receiving the news of Palladius' death commissioned St. Patrick, by the authority of Pope Celestine, to go to Ireland; yet, in p. 12, he had said that it was after leaving Germanus St. Patrick, on his way to Ireland, received the news of the death of Palladius. He afterwards stated that St. Patrick secured the blessing of Pope Celestine shortly before his death for the Irish mission, returned to Germanus from Rome, and journeyed towards the British sea; yet, he stated subsequently (p. 74) that St. Patrick was commissioned by St. Germanus to go to Ireland: his Eminence conjectured that the consecration of St. Patrick was connected with Troyes, and thus suggests an identification of Amatho with Lupus its bishop.

In subsequent writings his Eminence took up different ground; and ably defending the theory of the Bollandists maintains¹ that St. Patrick was consecrated at Turin by Maximus of Turin, and that there is nothing "to prevent the words of the old Lives from being literally true"—he previously said they could be true only by a figure of speech—that the consecration took place "*in conspectu Theodosii, in conspectu Celestini*," and again "*in conspectu Germani*." To show us that he gave the very words of the Lives, the Cardinal italicizes them; but I venture to say that no Lives, to my knowledge, not even a single Life, give these words. The Tripartite Life says that our apostle was consecrated *coram S. Germano et Amato rege* (p. 123, Colgan); and the oldest Scholiast on Fiacc, says, that he was consecrated *in conspectu Celestini et Theodosii junioris* (Ibid. p. 5); but none of these bear out the quotation given by his Eminence. And even though the authority of the Lives could have been quoted for the assertion as to the incidental question of

¹ I. E. RECORD, first series, vol. iii. pp. 17, 18.

the witnesses, they contradict each other and the Cardinal as to the main issue. For the scholiast states that Amator was the consecrator, while the Tripartite states that Pope Celestine was the consecrator of St. Patrick; and the scholiast and Tripartite imply that Rome was the place of consecration by the fact that the former states St. Germanus sent St. Patrick with a witness of his worth to the Pope for consecration, while both state that the voices of the unborn Irish mingled with the Roman choirs on the occasion; whereas Cardinal Moran's last theory is that the consecration took place in Turin, and not by Pope Celestine, as stated by the Tripartite, but by Amator. To take a part of a quotation from one author and tack it to that of another, who are at issue on the main question of consecrator with each other, and are at variance with the Cardinal on the subject matter of both our articles—the place of consecration—is a species of eclecticism not warranted by any historical canon. I repeat that neither Lives nor any Life state the consecration of St. Patrick to have taken place “in conspectu Theodosii, in conspectu Celestini, in conspectu Germani.”

But if the Lives do not warrant the statement, is there any other authority for it? Absolutely none. All the Cardinal has to advance as proof is that the Roman Pontiffs used sometimes visit northern cities, and that the court used sometimes journey from Ravenna to Turin, and that Germanus sometimes had occasion to visit the emperor at Ravenna. But there is no evidence that, in the year 432, pontiff, and emperor, and St. Germanus visited singly, much less together, the city of Turin. All the evidence points the other way. The Lives speak of Germanus sending St. Patrick to Rome for jurisdiction or consecration rather than accompanying him, and of receiving him as he returned to Auxerre. And what is more important still, the most authentic *Book of Armagh*, after speaking of St. Patrick's education under Germanus, and of the length of time spent under his direction, informs us immediately after that the

¹ “Decantata audiebantur per Hiberniam totam vel usque ad ipsos Romanos.” *Scholium*, p. 5, Colgan, et. p. 123, “*Trip.* concinnebant classes Romanorum et . . . Hibernicorum.”

saint was warned in a heavenly vision to go on the mission to which he was called, and that he did set out in obedience to the call from the *children of the wood of Foeluth*, and that he was accompanied by a venerable priest whom Germanus sent with him as a witness to his worthiness of the episcopacy; for he had not been yet raised to the episcopal dignity by Germanus himself.¹ Does this give any countenance to the theory that St. Patrick turned his face to Turin after leaving Germanus, or that Germanus accompanied or followed him there?

The objections that are raised against Turin being the place of consecration are nearly as strong as those against Rome. If we bear in mind that Palladius died on the frontiers of Pictish territory, that Colgan judges the 27th of January to have been the most probable date of his death, and that most writers, native and continental, assign Pope Celestine's death to the 6th of April, we can infer that the interval between the end of January and beginning of April would be too short for a journey, especially by a circuitous route off the old Roman road, from Caledonia to Turin. Without going further North than the wall of Antoninus, there is from that place to Ivrea a distance of more than 1,200 Roman miles.² By allowing 20 miles a day, or something over 18 English miles, which is a fair average for flood and field, plain and Alp, Sunday excluded, the poor unfriended missionaries would require ten weeks to travel from Scotland to Ivrea, the reputed Ebmoria: by this time Pope Celestine would have been dead.

But even if we suppose that the messengers announcing the death of Palladius had found Pope Celestine alive, is there a scrap of evidence to show that he ever went up to Ivrea? Absolutely none. What reason can be assigned for a visit to the Alps? Why go there rather than any other part of Christendom? In the preceding year the Pope, who might with comparative ease have sailed back to the General Council of Ephesus, in defence of the maternity of the Mother of God, chose to be represented there by

¹ *Documenta*, p. 25.

² *Itinerary of D'Anville, Gale and Stukely.*

delegates. Why then go to the Alps? Besides, the Lives and the scholiasts say that Pope Celestine did not live more than a week after St. Patrick's consecration. Well, now even supposing that the Pope fell mortally ill on the very day of St. Patrick's consecration at Turin, as alleged, he could not have reached Rome easily in a week, distant by some 400 Roman miles from Turin.

While there is no evidence to show, as is incumbent on the advocates of the Ivrea theory, that the Pope was ever under the Alps, there is every reason to judge that he was not there. The diary which notices the journeys of the Popes, including Pope Celestine's predecessors and successors, is quite silent as to any journey made by St. Celestine to Turin,¹ so that as far as possible we prove a negative against the presence of the Pope in Northern Italy. Finally, how can we reconcile the confused narrative of the Lives as to the consecration of St. Patrick by Pope Celestine with the entry in the martyrology of Tallaght? This states that Patrick's ordination took place on the 6th April, while the Lives state, with other authorities, that Celestine died on the 6th April. Colgan tries to meet the objection by saying that the martyrology refers either to St. Patrick's simple ordination or appointment as archbishop. I have said enough to show that there is not reference in this to his mere ordination to the priesthood; and there is less reason to suppose that there was a festival to commemorate his Archiepiscopate. Once he was consecrated, he became bishop and Apostle and head of the Irish Church. It was competent with him to appoint bishops few or many with fixed sees or merely of an auxiliary character.² It is quite childish then to speak of his promotion to the Archiepiscopate.

Secondly, was Theodosius at Ivrea in the year 432? If his Eminence could produce any evidence to show that

¹ *Viagi di Papi*, by Abbé Francis. In 409 Innocent I. visited Jiusta; Honorius went to Ravenna; St. Leo met Attila in 452. No mention of Celestine.

² "Barbarae nationes Europae etiam olim ad fidem Christi conversae contentae Episcopis; de pallii praerogativa non curabant. Denique Hibernenses, Norici, &c., in nostris temporibus Archiepiscopos habuisse noscuntur." *Guliel. Newbridge*.

Theodosius was ever there I am anxious to see it. I could never gather from any of the records of his life, which came in my way, that the emperor had ever been in Turin or even in any part of the Western Empire. The historian of the Roman Empire tells us that on one occasion he might and ought have come but did not come.¹ His uncle died; the sceptre was usurped by a captain of the army; and instead of coming even to Ravenna, not to speak of the Alps, in aid of his cousin-german Valentinian, only seven years old, he was content with sending merely his patrician as commander. Until we get some proof to the contrary, there are good grounds for doubting the presence *at any time* at Turin either of St. Celestine or Theodosius the younger. As to the presence of Germanus there, there is nothing to justify even the suggestion of his Eminence: for the Lives state, or suppose, that Germanus so far from being present at St. Patrick's consecration sent him from his presence to be consecrated by others.

It is stated by his Eminence that the Amator of the Irish writers was Maximus of Turin, and that his character justified the praise given him for "sanctity and learning." But I beg to remark that the Lives do not allude at all to the *learning* of Amator. The Cardinal adds that Amator is the Irish name for Maximus, but so far from being so, it does not even suggest to my mind any Irish word like or unlike to it, as an equivalent for Maximus. He further adds, there was a tradition that St. Maximus was a Roman, to which the Lives allude. But the Tripartite speaks not of a Roman bishop, but a Roman king, in connection with the consecration: and as against the tradition of St. Maximus of Turin being Roman, we may quote Mabillon, who expressly states that he was a native of Vercelli and not of Rome.² Not only the Lives but their commentator understood the word *Roman* as referring to royalty and not to the episcopacy. Hence Colgan suggests that the Roman king *may* refer to Amantius the pious eunuch of Eudoxia, whose connexion

¹ *Decline and Fall of Roman Empire*, ch. 33.

² *Museum Italicum*, Vol. I., Part 2, p. 5.

with the imperial court may have acquired for him the title of king:¹ but Amantius was no bishop and it could not then be a mistake for Amator who, it is said, really consecrated St. Patrick.

Furthermore, the objection against the other theories in reference to the turning aside from the meeting place at Ebmoría tells still more strongly against the Ivrea theory. For St. Patrick at Ivrea should not only turn aside but go back fully 30 miles to Turin, nearly due south, according to Cardinal Moran's idea. Now this does not at all accord with the idea attached to the "turning aside" in the *Book of Armagh*. Thus it tells us that St. Patrick on feeling his end at hand intended going to and dying in Armagh. At once an angel suggested that he should not take such a step without consulting his familiar guardian angel Victor: at the same moment Victor appeared in a burning bush by the road-side (*secus viam*). St. Patrick in going to the bush is said to have turned aside, (*declinavit secus viam*), the very words that were applied to him at Ebmoría; therefore it were preposterous to explain these words by a journey from Ivrea to Turin.

But his Eminence lays great stress on a phrase in the Tripartite Life, which is *inexplicable*, he says, in the Gaulish theory of St. Patrick's consecration—that after his consecration he took leave of the *Apostolic Lord*. But no theory is bound to explain the words or arguments used in an opposite theory: much less are we called on to explain the Tripartite which is not consistent with itself or the other Lives. But as a matter of historical interest, the phrase *Apostolic Lord* did not apply exclusively at all times to the pope. Thus Sigebertus writing to Desiderius a mere bishop calls him apostolic lord² (*Domino sancto Apostolico*.) For all these reasons alleged against the theory advocated by his Eminence, I have no hesitation in pronouncing it as untenable as any of the others.

If then Ebmoría be not represented by Rome, Ivrea, Auch, Boulogne, Evreux, Liege, or York, where did it lie? In searching for it, we should bear in mind that when different words are welded together, the union takes place by syncope

¹ *Trias Thaum.*, p. 9. *Rege Romano*. *Ibid.* p. 123.

² *Bibliothec. Patrum.*, tom. 3 Ep. 9, 17.

or loss to each word. Hence the familiar name Autun is only a new form of the old word Augusto-dunum: hence the well-known name Saragossa was Cesaraugusta; Auvergne was Augusto-Nemetum; and coming nearer to the word under discussion, Ebro-dunum has re-appeared under the form of Embrun and Ambrun. Therefore if we suppose that Eb-moria underwent a like change we should expect it to have been something like *Eburo-briga*. Now this very word appears on the old maps. It is distant from Auxerre some 15 miles to the north, as the crow flies. The place is marked in the Itinerary of Antoninus. It corresponds with the present St. Florentine's¹ and is described by D'Anville as on the river Armancon in Gaul.

We should bear in mind that the *Book of Armagh* does not positively but conjecturally give Eb-moria as the real reading of the words; but Probus who had a copy of the Armagh Life before him gives positively Euboria, others give Eboria. Now the change from Eburo-dunum to Ambrun is as strange as, if not more than, that of Eburo-briga into Eboria. We should also consider that the letter *g* in the middle of Irish words is often silent: hence Brigid into Bride. If then in the word we drop, if I may use the term, the reduplication of the letter *b*, we easily have Eburo-ria—Eburia. For my own part I have not the least doubt as to the identification of the Eb-moria of the *Book of Armagh*. The old Roman road ran from Lyons through Eburo-briga; and St. Patrick after travelling some fifteen miles from Auxerre came to it. We cannot say whether the disciples of Palladius, who announced his death there, intended, probably they did, to deflect to the right towards Auxerre. St. Patrick's action was prompt and decisive. He turned aside not miles but merely off his path to the old convent of St. Florentine beside the Roman station, and received consecration.

The main source of error on the part of the Lives and their scholiasts flowed from the mistaken idea, that it was necessary that St. Patrick should receive consecration and jurisdiction immediately from the Pope; (sic² enim ordo

¹ Vide *Martyrology of St. Jerome and Usuard*.

² *Trias Thaum.* Vita Quarta, xxix.

exigebat) and from the supposed fact of such a consecration emanated the error of attributing to Celestine the name of Patrick borne by our national apostle.

A prolific source of error with our modern theorists lay in a misunderstanding of the language in the *Book of Armagh*. With the exception of the misprint in Ebmoría, for which indeed the writer prepares us by a warning note, the narrative is quite consistent and clear if properly understood. But there are some words in the passage from the *Book of Armagh* which have led to false theories.

Cardinal Moran having conceived the idea that Maximus of Turin was St. Patrick's consecrator, and that *Amahor* is the Irish word of Maximus, endeavours to show that the name of the consecrator as mentioned by the Lives is only a form of the Irish word. His Eminence says that "on one point the ancient records seem to be explicit—that the name of St. Patrick's consecrator was Amator." But if such be a fact, how is it that Dr. Todd in translating from the *Book of Armagh* a passage in reference to the consecrator (St. Patrick, p. 317), and his Eminence in quoting the same passage subsequently (I. E. RECORD, *loco cit.*) give the name as Amatorex? They appear to have been mistaken in making it a simple name; for the original is *Amatho rege* in the *Book of Armagh*, and in the Bollandists' copy.¹ If the *Book of Armagh* justified Dr. Todd, as it does not, in making it one word, as he does, Amathorex could be looked on as a word with the Gaulish termination of *rix* or *rex*; but the *Book of Armagh* gives no warrant for making the word Amathor and letting the *ex* take care of itself.

Not only the *Book of Armagh* but the still older Nennius give the *rex* separate from Amatho, while both make *rex* a title given to him. Nennius and the *Book of Armagh* mention that St. Patrick was consecrated bishop by Amatheus, a king and holy bishop.² This coupled with the fact that the scholiast on the *Prima Vita*, and the *Vita Secunda*, and the Tripartite³ give the *Rex* in capitals and apart

¹ *Documenta*, etc. p. 26.

² Mon. Hist. Brit. ch. 55.

³ Colgan, p. 123. Amato Rege Romano. The *Vita Quarta* gives Amatorege.

from Amato, leads to the belief that *Rex* is not a mere termination but an appellative of Amatho.¹

Now that we must admit the Lives, from the earliest in the sixth century down to those in the tenth, style St. Patrick's consecrator not only bishop but king (*rex*), the question arises; Has this epithet in the circumstances any meaning? Is it a Gaulish termination as Dr. Todd (*St. Patrick*, p. 317. n 2) would have it? King (*rex*) in ecclesiastical language was employed to mean abbot during the sixth and seventh centuries, and such was its meaning in reference to Amato: of this I now give some proof.

In one of the old Irish canons there was a decree that whoever shed the blood of a bishop or high prince. . . . should "in the judgment of the wise be crucified or bound to give seven handmaids."² The exalted prince here meant an abbot. So again (p. 141) St. Patrick says "whoever dares to steal from a king (abbot) or bishop . . . let him pay the price of seven female slaves, or do penance with the bishop for seven years" (*Mansi*, Tom. xii. col. 141). The eighth canon lays down a fine for an outrage on a simple priest, thus shewing that there was question of the ecclesiastical grades. The sixth canon, under the heading of inhospitality (*de jectiōe*, p. 142) enacts that "whoever does not entertain the exalted prince (abbot) or scribe . . . must pay the seventh part of the fine for murder."³ Of course there is no question here of a merely secular prince, who could, with his retinue, command whatever was best in every house. The abbot was called king or prince. So, too, in another interesting collection of canons by Wasserschleben, which was written about the same time as the *Book of Armagh*,⁴ the word *prince* is applied indiscriminately to abbot and bishop. It were tedious, as it is unnecessary, to give quotations in proof of this. But such phrases as "prince, that is, abbot;" and "he who would be a prince ought first to be a monk;"

¹ *Documenta*. &c. p. 26.

² *Die Altbritischen und irischen Bussordnung*, p. 140, Wasserschleben.

³ Martene, *Thes. nov.* tom xii., col. 141, "episcopum vel scribam vel principem magnum."

⁴ *Die irische Kanonensammlung*, Wasserschleben.

and a “monk ought not contend with a prince;” and the decree that “no prince is to be ordained unless all the clerics, &c.,” and “let the prince take care lest he badly rule his church”; and the phrase “the will of a bishop or prince—all these phrases put beyond doubt that an abbot was expressed by the word *prince* or *king*.¹

In the office of St. Martin of Tours, it is stated that, while ready to die, he did not object to the chieftaincy of the empire (*principatum imperii*). Here the spiritual sway was called not only a principality or kingdom, but empire. The regal power meant originally a ruling or governing power; and as the rule was the more perfect in proportion to the obedience of subjects, the abbot was really king, as his subjects were bound, even in their very souls, by the vows of obedience to him. Now that we have seen the meaning of *king* in the passage under consideration, we must not be surprised to find the distinctive appellative (*rex*) separated in the *Book of Armagh* and in the other Lives from Amathus.

In the second place, mention of a *chief bishop* in connection with St. Patrick's consecration has led to mistakes. Some have understood it to mean an archbishop, and have run in search of a metropolitical see. But it need not have, and very probably had not, that meaning in the circumstances. Writers of the eighth and ninth century in speaking of bishops often applied to them epithets which could not subsequently be employed. It was the language of compliment: there was no danger of its being misunderstood. Thus St. Patrick was spoken of by Cummean, abbot of Hy, as our pope.² So too Sidonius Appollinaris, speaking of the French bishops,³ calls them not merely high priests but the highest priests. And at the council of Agatho the fathers there, in legislating for the consecration of a simple bishop, decreed that the metropolitan should summon all the province for the consecration of mere suffragan bishops; yet these are called not

¹ *Irische Kanonensammlung*, ch. xviii. 6, 7, ch. xxi. 31, ch. xxxvii. 7; ch. xli. 2; ch. xlii. 32; ch. xliii. 6; ch. xlv. 20.

² Ussher, *Primordia*, &c., p. 840.

³ *Summi Sacerdotes*, lib. 4. ep. 11.

only pontiffs but chief pontiffs.¹ Language then which was applied to simple bishops, owing to the pretensions to which it was likely to give rise has been since applied only to the Sovereign Pontiffs. We need not then understand the epithet applied to Amatheus as implying necessarily archiepiscopal jurisdiction. We shall be the less disposed to do so if we bear in mind that he was an abbot. There is no reason then for saying that the consecrator of St. Patrick, unless by the possible accident of having been archbishop before entering religion, enjoyed metropolitical powers or a metropolitical see. Moreover it is certain that Ebmoira or Eburo-briga was subject to the metropolitan of Sens.

Thirdly, those who have been led to think that St. Patrick's consecrator was an archbishop have cast about for one whose name resembled Amator. Hence some have proposed Amandus Archbishop of Bordeaux; others have suggested Armenarius. Some have also suggested Amator who consecrated Germanus; but he had died fourteen years previous to the consecration of St. Patrick. The *Book of Armagh* however distinctly tells us that Amatho was the name of the consecrator. Amato or, contractedly, Amé was not an unusual name. We find a Saint Amathus bishop of Sion in the Valais, during the seventh century, and an abbot of Agaunum named Amatus in the sixth century. This name is as natural and had the same root as Amator, the predecessor and consecrator of St. Germanus at Auxerre. But Nennius, by an additional letter, suggests a different root in giving the consecrator of St. Patrick as Amatheus—a name perpetuated in the Amadei of Savoy. We may however conclude by saying that St. Patrick was consecrated by Amatus or Amatheus, abbot-bishop at Eburo-briga, the old Roman Station and the present railway station of St. Florentine, some twenty miles N.N.E. of Auxerre.

SYLVESTER MALONE.

¹ Con. ch. 35.

THE ORIGIN OF THE FEAST OF THE HOLY NAME.

WE can easily gather from Ecclesiastical history that Sunday, the feasts of Easter and Pentecost, which had been observed with appropriate solemnity during the first epoch, continued without interruption days of festive gladness or saddening sorrow, in the early ages of the Church. Her feasts, indeed, were few in number down to the time of Constantine.

At the opening of that happy period the Christians, yielding generously to the practices and holy inspirations of religion, gave expression in their exterior worship to their pious thoughts and ennobling sentiments.

The marvellous extension of Christianity under the sword of the executioner is not more powerful than the sudden growth of that mysterious worship, which in the fourth century burst into life and grew into a definite shape, gathering into itself all those constituent elements of her august ceremonial, which have continued down to our own day.

Well could Lacordaire say : “ We had won the right to clothe our doctrine in a robe of purple after all the blood they (the first Christians) had shed upon it.”

By degrees the churches increased in number and magnificence, and in proportion as paganism abandoned its temples, the Christians purified them, and inaugurated there the worship of the true God.

During the fourth century other great festivals were added to those already existing, in order to complete the cycle of sacred memorials by which the most prominent events in the life of Our Saviour were annually brought before the mind of the Christian in the order in which they took place. The Eastern feast of the Epiphany began to be celebrated in the same century in the West, but under a different signification from what it bore in the East. The festival of Christmas was of later introduction than Easter, Pentecost or the Ascension. This was owing to the uncertainty of the birthday of Our Lord.

After a time it obtained a rank equal to Easter, the cardinal feast of the Church, and eventually rose to a more exalted distinction by being made, through the efforts of some of the Fathers, to be the mother of all other feasts.¹

St. Epiphanius gives a full description of the feasts of the Church at the close of the fourth century. Their limited number at that time gradually increased with the growth of the Church till we reach that remarkable epoch in history rendered eventful by the institution of the feast of the "*Most Holy Name of Jesus.*"

Readers of Italian history and romance, as well as tourists to the Southern Peninsula, occasionally come across a place that is famous in the world of hagiology. It is Siena, an ancient and beautiful city of Tuscany, placed on a hill, and enclosed by heights of a sort of hard, dry earth, called *tufo*, so that it appears to lie among mountains.

It was erected into a metropolitan city in 1459, by Pope Pius II., one of its citizens, of the noble house of Piccolomini. From the time that it embraced the faith, this city has professed a singular devotion to the Queen of Heaven. It is called in fact the "City of the Virgin"—"*Siena vetus, civitas Virginis.*" One proof of this feeling of devotion is the dedication to the Mother of God of the cathedral, which for valuable marbles and exquisite workmanship, is reckoned one of the noblest and most gorgeous buildings in Europe. My subject carries the reader back to a time when a glorious luminary had been winning a golden reputation, which was to live in history, for pulpit oratory, and for those extraordinary gifts of winning souls and working wonders whenever and wherever he appeared during his missionary career.

He was styled Bernardine of Siena, the child of holy parents, and born and educated at Siena towards the close of the fourteenth century.

His genial, affable nature, his fair and frank countenance, to which modesty lent an air of becoming grace and dignity, made him dear to all, and the idol of attached parents. His innate goodness of nature inclined him to whatever was

¹ *Fide* "Hom. of St. John Chrysostom in diem Natalem," page 355.

right. Good habits and study placed him on the road to success. His early dispositions to piety revealed themselves in the innocent amusements common to his age. He was often found building up little altars, making small musical instruments, and carving the Most Holy Name on the trees of a neighbouring forest.

Without much stretch of imagination people foretold that this little blossom of goodness would one day be changed into blessed fruit. Coming events cast their shadows before, for, yet a mere child, he would steal away to a neighbouring church of St. Augustine to listen with the most rapt attention to the sermon, every word of which he repeated on reaching home. His progress in letters placed him in front of all his competitors. From the marvellous acquirements *in literis humanioribus*, moral philosophy and Canon Law, he passed to the study of Sacred Scripture, which became the fountain of all his knowledge, and the inspiration of that burning zeal for the conversion of sinners. Yielding to the pleadings of his heart, he withdrew to a lonely spot in the gardens near the *porta Tufi*, and erected there a little chapel and altar, with a crucifix above it, and in front a lamp, which he continually kept burning.

He doubled his accustomed prayers, prolonged his vigils, living on herbs and roots, and sleeping three short hours upon a sack of vine branches as a bed, and a log of wood for a pillow. In the light received from prayer he read the Divine Will calling him to an order that appeared to him best adapted for the accomplishment of his desire. The coarse brown frock of the Franciscan monk, fitted admirably over the irritating hair shirt and mortified heart of him who was destined to be one of the most devoted followers of the Cross, and one of the most illustrious children of the seraphic Francis. He became a bright light and mirror of sanctity in the house of novices, becoming perfect in every kind of virtue.

The Passion of Christ was the source of that abundant fruit that fed his spirit, and the scourges, scoffs, and sufferings of the God-man pierced his heart with the sword of compassion, till by the violence of its hardly suppressed throbs, he

thought it would burst the barriers that confined it in his heaving breast. A soul fed from such a source only waited the favourable moment to pour out upon others some of the flames that were enkindled by its love. Raised to the priesthood, and invested with the power of publicly preaching the Divine Word, Bernardine gave promise of that fruit which, by his holy discourses, he was afterwards to gather in the vineyard of the Lord. It was a lucky advent for the country of his birth; for in the fifteenth century Italy had been for a long time completely deluged by a flood of corruption and iniquity. The fair aspect of piety, and that tone of reverential regard for sacred things, had disappeared. Fraud, extortion, and usury increased the patrimony and swelled the coffers of dissolute men, whose sensual excesses were only bounded by their wicked desires and ungovernable passions. Every creek and inlet on the sea-board afforded shelter to those pirate ships that troubled every sea, and gave them protection and opportunity to dispose of the smuggled booty. The highways were beleaguered with assassins and depraved individuals who, buried in licentiousness, utterly discarded the rulers and discipline of the Church they dishonoured.

The clergy, too, sharing in the unhappy tone of public life, became listless, and cast away the spirit of piety, sharing in those rounds of pleasure and voluptuous gratification, which were caught from the unhappy temper of the time. All the elements of dissension were working in the bosom of Italian society, to give to their party strifes the character of a fierceness and obstinacy without parallel in history. It required a bold and unbending mind to direct with the hand of a master the spiritual destinies of a people whose hearts were the home of every species of agitation and revenge, personal enmity and political altercation.

Bernardine fully informed both by his own experience and the accounts of others, of the woeful condition of Italy, pitied her in all the sincerity of his great soul, and felt a burning desire to fly everywhere through the whole kingdom to enlighten and convert sinners by the Divine Word. The severe course of life that marked the early part of his novitiate was now pursued with greater vigour, and the late hours of the night

or the early hours of the morning found him prosecuting those studies which were to fit him for the great work he was soon to engage in. In some sequestered spot or remote place made solitary by its desert loneliness, did he often give vent to his feelings in groans of sorrow, bathing his face in tears of most tender devotion.

Often did he stretch himself on the bare ground in the form of a cross, crucifying that suffering spirit by a boundless grief, and an inward mortification to which no limit could be set. A lofty idea just then broke upon his noble soul; it was to preach the Gospel through all Italy.

With this view he set out from his native Tuscany, journeying through Lombardy, till he reached that noble and ancient capital, Milan, where thousands flocked to the cathedral to hear him who surpassed everyone's expectation, and who, for his zeal and eloquence, was considered a new apostle sent down from heaven. To the natural gifts of person, graces adorned his pure soul for the success of his good work.

All that the masters of oratory could teach regarding a finished and perfect style of pulpit eloquence, became for him an absorbing study. His voice was agreeable, clear, deep and powerful; it preserved gravity in its sweetness, and sweetness in its power, and was modulated in clear and easy tones. He had it so thoroughly under his command, and could adapt it so well to the matter of his discourse, with a directness, ease, and flexibility, that he easily surpassed all in grace and elocution. His eloquence, too, was controlled by those superior powers that could regulate its impulse and convey to it a character at once bold and impassioned. He could not merely move the mind, but he could shape it to his pleasure: insomuch, that whether he thundered from the pulpit in tremendous denunciations of vice, or whether he sweetly exhibited the beauty of virtue, or recreated the minds of his hearers with some witty, though always reverent remark, he was ever master of the feelings of his audience, moving them at one time, with surprising art, to tears; at another, to smiles. His natural appearance heightened the effect of his remarkable powers. His splendid features

expressed, with remarkable accuracy, the vivacity of a soul that spoke through his noble bearing and winning aspect. The elegance of his language was a very suitable channel to convey these sound instructions, the fruit of widely-gathered information from the fountains of true knowledge—Holy Scripture and the Fathers. Add to these a holiness of life that was never blemished by a wilful stain, and one can easily imagine why his hearers hung upon his lips, and, lost in admiration at the charms of his wonderful diction, called him the New Apostle of God.

Countless crowds of both sexes assembled before day-break in the public squares, where he was accustomed to preach, often making journeys of thirty miles. Fathers carried their children upon their shoulders: infants hung upon their mothers' necks: habitual sinners, who had remained away for years from the sacraments, were now seen making atonement, and bending their stubborn wills at the solitary voice of an humble monk, and generously performing penances that betokened the deep compunction of their converted hearts. Traversing all Italy, he put the sickle to a harvest that was never touched, and gathered, in its rich abundance, the fruit of that earnest toil, prayer, and mortification, that rendered his work so acceptable to God and so beneficial to his fellow-creatures. The land that was torn by implacable hatred and intestine strife, was reduced, by his holy and abiding influence, to Christian tranquillity; private enmities, which years had fermented into bitter hatred and accursed contention, till they burst out into public hostility when the hateful names of Guelph and Ghibelline rose above the contending factions, were abandoned at the formidable sound of Bernardine's voice. The fatal symbol that marked the flag that was lifted high above the field of blood and carnage, was effaced for the beautiful image of the Most Holy Name, that was carved or painted in its stead, in clear and well-defined characters. Christian honour and modesty began to return to a world that had hitherto been abandoned to every kind of evil-doing. Hospitals were erected; usury, fraud, and mercantile deceit ceased; multitudes of heretics, enlightened by the saint's aid to know the

truth, abjured their errors; the demon lost his tyrannical sway over countless souls, and the fervour of Christian piety flourished once more among men. After having preached through most of the towns and rural parishes in the Italian Republics, leaving no stone unturned or art unemployed to detach people from the loose method of life which gambling, party strife, and superstition, in its various branches, had brought about, Bernardine succeeded in having these licentious customs renounced, and those abominable practices abandoned, to which the slavery of bad habits had given a criminal sanction. He established everywhere a sincere union between hostile factions, that love and charity might reign sweetly in those hearts that had hitherto been embittered by the fierce venom of deadly hate. So thoroughly were those civil dissensions extinguished, that people hitherto remarkable for the inveterate hatred and jealousy they kept up, now renounced those dangerous, deadly customs, where multitudes of people fought, armed with clubs, with head-pieces, and shields; so that many in those encounters were severely wounded or left for dead. Harmony and brotherly love now began to flourish, and sober, Christian lives now witnessed to the change that was wrought by zeal that never flagged, and a heroic devotion that was ever ready to sacrifice itself for the redemption of the captive sinner.

Enriched by such a golden harvest of souls, Bernardine's heart would naturally yield itself to that pardonable vanity, which is often begotten of the conquests made in these spiritual realms from which the enemy of souls had been routed. Trials came, however, from unexpected quarters to anticipate the temptation, if any such were in store for the saint. These heroic qualities of his were to be tested in the furnace of tribulation, and that humility, the foundation of all those noble qualities which made his name a household word through all Italy, was to be measured to its deepest foundation, and tried by the sharpest pangs that could sound and torture the human heart. Yet it only proved the occasion to the holy man of superabundant merit by that patient endurance, which gave a shining lustre to heroic courage and noble submission. It came about in this way: the

saint was in the habit of holding up before the gaze of the assembled multitudes, who flocked to hear his discourses, the *Sacred Name*, carved or painted on a tablet in a cipher of gold characters, surrounded by rays like the sun. At the end of his discourse he was accustomed to make the people pay reverence on their knees to this representation, to remind them of the Saviour, who was exhibited to them in this cipher, denoting His Name—that Holy Name they were bound to honour, love and respect.

He hoped by impressing this devotion deep upon their hearts, to restore a lost love towards that Holy Name, which had well-nigh been effaced from their souls by the vices that then ravaged unfortunate Italy. The exposition of the Sacred symbol from his own and the pulpit of the members of his institute, was, to say the least of it, a novelty. Impatient spirits, jealous of a great reputation, and believing themselves of a superior caste, raised a loud cry that pierced the ear of the learned and supercilious, who began to regard the practice of Bernardine as a species of idolatry, or a custom that tended to superstition, and that the people venerated those letters more than Christ Himself, who was signified by them. On the other hand, the simple-hearted and pious were truly touched by what excited a lively devotion and inspired them with a tender love towards the Redeemer of men.

Bernardine had excited a feeling of dislike in the hearts of some belonging to the other orders, and the agitation that divided learned opinion regarding the practice we have alluded to above, imparts both courage and strength to those adherents who, armed with a false zeal, animadverted upon Bernardine with all the armoury that invective or rancour could supply.

They said that "he was a rough man, wholly devoid of any learning; that his speech was rude and unpolished; that he knew forty sermons and no more; they propagated calumny, insinuating the close affinity that some of his discourses bore to heretical opinions, and they circulated in published treatises exhaustive attacks upon the soundness of his doctrine and the sanctity of his life. The principal

opponent was a Milanese, of noble birth, and a highly distinguished member of the Order of St. Augustine.

Fr. Andrew Bilio wrote and published a work entitled, "The Disciples formed by the Teaching of Brother Bernardine of Siena, of the Order of Minors." He vigorously attacked the holy practice and method of the saint in preaching the Divine Word. Under honied expressions that conveyed an outward appearance of lofty zeal and just indignation, there lay concealed a treachery, which jealousy of the heroic grandeur of a noble soul had excited, and that could seek no peace but in a base attempt to sully a reputation that was won in the conquest over minds and hearts. The invidious work was prosecuted with incredible ardour, and the doctrine of the saint was attacked by the method of exposition, which was falsely charged as not being conformable to the teaching of the Catholic Church. Envy carried so far, worked upon the prejudiced minds of Bernardine's enemies, so that a long string of charges were with great zeal and warmth presented against him at the Court of Rome. They substantially amounted to this: that the saint had invented a new heresy; that he had induced the people to commit idolatry by the exposition and adoration of unknown tablets, on which was carved the sun, and in the centre of the sun strange marks of magic characters and spells. Martin the Fifth, the reigning Pontiff, felt very much disturbed at the startling nature of the indictment, and at once summoned Bernardine from Viterbo to Rome to answer the charges.

In obedience to the voice of the Holy See, he suspended his preaching and spiritual functions, started for Rome to await the charges that were levelled against him by the bitter jealousy of factious rivals; and to crown his troubles, he was pointed at in the streets of the Eternal City as a "heretic." The Pope who then ruled the Church, was one whose election was hailed with universal satisfaction. He was saluted with the grateful titles of Angel of peace and public happiness. The Church had just put aside her mourning from a fatal schism, more destructive to her than all the persecutions and heresies of former ages. Every throne in

Europe had been either vacant or overturned, and the papacy itself had been robbed of much of that glorious prestige that gathers round it as the centre of that marvellous unity which makes the Church unconquerable.

Martin belonged to the noble house of Colonna, that wielded a high and lofty sway among the Roman nobility. His election accordingly gratified the hearts of his fellow-citizens, who hailed him as the true father of his country. As he entered the city of the Popes, his eyes surveyed with grief the heaps of ruins which marked the passage of bloody revolutions. Ruined dwellings, shattered temples, deserted streets, taught the Romans the fearful lesson easily gathered from every page of her history, the awful price she had to pay for casting from her midst the Supreme Shepherd, who was appointed to feed and guard the flock from danger.

The presence of the Pope brought back life and activity to the great capital; trade revived and money circulated, and the earth again gave up its treasures, and public monuments marked the enthusiasm that hailed the advent of the Holy Father among his own people. Bernardine was for some time not destined to share in this joy that broke over the heart of every Roman. The Pope received him with an air of severity, and promised him that punishment of the severest character would be the penalty, if the truth of the charges brought against him could be satisfactorily determined.

The man of God bowed his head, and waited with confidence the record of the decision. All his writings and discourses, gathered from Holy Writ, Theology and the Canons were submitted to a learned body of theologians, in addition to whom the Pope named as judges of the cause three cardinals, as distinguished for their extensive erudition as for the morality of their lives. On the appointed day, prelates, theologians and religious met in the Vatican Basilica. The saint's adversaries were well represented by as many as sixty-two doctors in theology; whilst the supporters of Bernardine reposed all the weight of the defence upon one solitary man, but one, who possessed many of the gifts, which had brought Bernardine a reputation

that was to live in history, and one who had derived from the example of a holy life, sources of spiritual profit that rendered the pupil in many respects as illustrious as the Master he loved.

His sole defender was St. John Capistran, whose learned voice was now raised not merely in defence of injured innocence and in the sacred cause of truth, but in behalf of one whose holy and intimate friendship he valued equally with his own life. A heightened interest was lent to the discussion by the presence of the Pope, the cardinals, and an innumerable host of spectators. The studied arguments of the saint's adversaries, based on all the craft and sophistry of the subtle dialectician and the trained theologian, invested the charges with an air of truth. The Scriptures, Fathers, and Sacred Canons were ransacked for texts and quotations to impart vigour and add weight to representations, from whose craftiness it seemed almost impossible for even a saint to emerge with safety.

But human ingenuity can devise no argument, nor lodge an objection which the Spirit of God cannot let the light in upon and solve without any trouble. Bernardine answered every objection so clearly and so satisfactorily from the very sources from which they were taken, repelling his enemies with the very weapons furnished from their own armoury, that the Pope at once perceived that the accusation proceeded from malice and envy; that the saint had never erred against the Faith or Fathers, and that a trial so painful should be brought to an issue by a definitive judgment that gave the saint a complete victory over his enemies. His faithful friend and companion then, by permission of the Holy Father, rose and rendered the innocence of Bernardine more conspicuous, and to confirm his teaching, took up all the arguments of his adversaries—some eighty-five in number—and so satisfied the Court of Rome by the groundlessness of the charges, that Bernardine was declared to be, instead of stained by heresy, a faithful confessor and a true preacher in word and work of Catholic truth, and a most obedient son of the Church. His Holiness received him with special marks of favour, and imparting to him his blessing, gave him ample power to

to preach the Divine Word everywhere. To prosecute the noble mission he had undertaken, and to carry out successfully his sacred mission, he was to carry the Crucifix as well as the Holy Name in his pious work.

The historian of his life tells us that the Pope ordered that a solemn procession should take place, at which all the clergy and people were to assist, and in which St. John Capistran with holy pomp, should bear the glorious standard of the adorable Name amidst sacred hymns and signs of joy. In many of the large towns, the august Name which had been graven on a stone in golden characters, surrounded by rays of light, was set in the façade of the Church as a perpetual trophy of the victory just achieved. From this time the custom of painting or carving the Holy Name on church fronts, on walls or doors of houses, then became very common, and may still be seen in many parts of Italy.

To duly acknowledge this triumph, all the Orders of Minors celebrate yearly on the 14th of January, the Feast of the most Holy Name of Jesus, which they keep with a special office, by favour of a grant of Pope Clement VII., in 1530. The same feast was enriched with copious indulgences by the same Pope, which he granted to all who should recite the office of it, like those which are gained in the Feast and Octave of Corpus Christi. At the request of the Emperor Charles VI., this feast and office were extended to the whole Catholic Church by Pope Innocent XIII., to be kept on the Second Sunday after Epiphany. Thus that fierce storm of tribulation, which had threatened with its impetuous blast to extinguish the fire of devotion towards the Holy Name, conduced in the end to make it more revered, and to immortalize the triumphs of the holy preacher who had so energetically extended its glory.

JOHN DOHENY.

THE "FORMA SUBSTANTIALIS" OF SCHOLASTICISM.

IN the July number of the RECORD I attempted to describe some of the characteristics of the "*materia prima*" of Scholasticism. I will now venture on a similar attempt in respect to the "*forma substantialis*," its inseparable companion. What is the "*forma substantialis*" or substantial form? Is it shape, or figure, or beauty? Is it any of the things signified by the English word "form" in its ordinary sense? None of them whatever. What is it then? It is that inherent part which bestows on anything its specific perfection, supplies it with its essential requisites, and marks it off from every thing of a different species. It gives a special complexion and character to the constitution of a being, and to all its operations. It is like the mainspring of a piece of machinery, imparting gracefulness and energy to all its evolutions. It differs greatly from the matter to which it is united; it is of a higher rank; but it does not disdain the alliance. And the result exemplifies the advantage of such unions, when there is sympathy on both sides. Out of heterogeneous elements is formed a homogeneous whole. They combine to promote the common good, a perfect unity of essence and exchange of friendly offices. How this is brought about is a mystery of nature; perhaps beyond our comprehension. We cannot behold it; we cannot lay our finger on it and say we have found it, or that we have made a palpable hit. But that it is so, we must, I think, be convinced, if we pursue the inquiry by a chain of metaphysical or abstract reasoning. And our satisfaction, I venture to hope, though not sensibly felt, will be more deeply and more lastingly enjoyed. In spite of the absence of tangible evidence, we may still grasp the fact that the mingling of two elements seemingly so opposite will not produce a monstrous confusion or discord, but an order most symmetrical and a harmony most graceful. They are fused or blended into each other so imperceptibly that no one can tell precisely the line of demarcation. On the other hand they are never lost or swallowed up in each other, which would destroy every trace of the originals. The effects proper to

both are distinctly observable. Eating and drinking, man has in common with the brute creation as well as the intuition of first principles in common with the angels. But the acts of both kinds are of the same specific nature; for the former as well as the latter are referable to the glory of God, and may merit a reward given only to a work of intelligence. Their distinction is attributable to the influence of a dual element; their specific identity to the influence of one substantial form. This last is said to be the cause of the essence. The term causation is used by the schoolmen in its widest sense. Often the cause of anything is the thing itself present somewhere. Olive green on the panels of a carriage is the cause why they are coloured, for the green is itself the colouring. If a form exists anywhere it is the formal cause of its presence there. It is thus the substantial form is the formal cause of the essence being itself a part of it. It is also the cause of the properties which spring from it by emanation. Between these two, according to St. Thomas, a real distinction exists. The power of reasoning is of the essence of man; the ability to laugh is one of his properties. Some few have excelled in one without possessing the other. Of the essence of a thing is that a notion of which enters into the conception of it; a property does not enter into the conception; but it is inferred to be a necessary attendant on it. The form is called also their principle, because they originate from it. A principle may be of two kinds: the *principium quod* and the *principium quo*. The former is identical with the agent; the latter is a qualification in the agent for the performance of certain acts. Thus in reasoning, a human agent is the *principium quod*, a rational soul, the *principium quo*. But as the soul in reasoning employs the understanding, a faculty distinct from itself and closely touching the act, so the first is called the *principium radicale*, and the second *principium proximum*. The form is named substantial, because the terms essence and substance are often synonymous, also to distinguish it from an accidental form, this not being either a part of the essence or a necessary outcome from it. I may exemplify by recalling a scientific habit in a mathematician,

astronomer, &c., skill and manual dexterity in a performer on a musical instrument, a particular aptitude for a mechanical pursuit, and so forth. It is obvious that such ability, natural or acquired, is related but accidentally to the substantial form. There are other points of difference. The subject is not the same. The recipient of a perfection is its subject. Such is primary matter as to the substantial form; such is a compound of both as to an accidental form. Now, "*quidquid recipitur ad modum recipientis recipitur.*" The condition of the recipient modifies the condition of the thing received, favourably or unfavourably. The condition of the substantial form is lowered and deteriorated by its reception into matter. If it dwelt apart, the sphere of its activity would be greater, for it would then be fettered only by the limits of its nature. It is now narrowed in many other respects, and as St. Thomas says—" *Forma contrahitur per materiam.*" The condition of an accidental form, on the other hand, is raised and ennobled by its reception into a compound. This reception is indispensable even to its existence, much more to a useful existence, for it is a creature too feeble to support any existence alone. Of this form we may verify the axioms: "*Potest adesse, vel abesse salva rei essentia;*" "*Non dat esse simpliciter sed secundum quid;*" "*advenit rei post esse completum.*" It produces only a modification of being in a thing which already exists independently of itself. As to the substantial form we verify others, "*per idem res est et in tali specie est.*" "*Idem est principium essendi et operandi.*" "*Quae dat esse, dat consequentia ad esse.*" *Esse* may signify essence, existence or the agreement between a predicate and subject expressed by the copula *est*. Here I use *esse* in the first signification. "*Forma est causa materiae.*" "*Forma et materia sunt sibi invicem causae.*" Is this last possible? Is it possible for two things to be the cause of each other's existence? Yes, not in the same but in different lines of causation; you may be instructed by a Frenchman in French, and he may be instructed by you in English; but you cannot give instruction to an individual and receive it from him on one point in the same language. Similarly the form and matter are the cause of each other's existence, one is the formal, the

other the material. The form is the cause of the perfections imprinted on matter, the matter is the cause of limiting and restraining them. As the form is a principal source of perfection, so the word itself and all its derivations are employed to indicate something of great importance or indispensable. I need not tell the reader that a rule quite the opposite holds good in English. When it is stated that a report at a public meeting was read *pro forma*, it is thereby meant that such a course was unnecessary, the contents having been known to all interested in them. It is often allowed that a document may be substantially correct, although it is wanting in some of the formalities required in framing it. A mode of procedure is declared to be "formal," because it admits of dispensation without entailing injury to a cause or an individual. Some persons get impatient, nay, angry, if it is demanded of them or only requested to keep a ceremony of social etiquette. Their preference is to dismiss it as a contemptible formality. Now a schoolman could hardly pay you a greater compliment than to say you were exceedingly formal. "*Quod est maxime formale in qualibet re, id in ea est perfectissimum.*" He would think that he exalted the dignity even of supernatural grace if he said that it was the formal cause of man's justification. He would go farther and maintain that he then spoke most reverently of God himself when he attributed the greatest formality to the Divine perfections, and still more daringly he would refuse to look on them as perfections at all unless he might in his language consider them also as formalities. In the scale of essences there are steps, and the form of a higher step embodies in its unity the perfections of the one below it, superadding a perfection of its own. At the foot of the ladder, the form produces being with a blind instinct of resisting destruction. Higher up it produces also life, and, perhaps, in some instances, imperfect sensation; still higher, it produces in addition perfect sensation, a knowledge of things apprehended by the senses, and a strong inclination for them if agreeable. Highest of all, in man it produces the perfections of animal and rational nature combined. The superiority of one of these forms over another is easily recognized. But it may be satisfactory to discover a philosophical

test of it. I think we shall succeed by instituting a comparison between the sight and the touch; between the former and the imagination, between this last and the intellect. The object of the touch is a very small portion of a small extent of surface. It is circumscribed within narrow boundaries. Beyond these the power of touch cannot be extended, nor within these can it reach any thing which is not in immediate contact with it. As to the object of sight, distance almost in any direction appears to be annihilated. It is nothing less than a marvel that an organ so diminutive can delineate in an image just perceptible, the expanse of the firmament with its diversified features. But all this pales before the brilliant efforts of the imagination by which the past and future are realized as vividly as the present, and the present only if away or unseen. Still, in imaginary pictures we discern some very delicate shadowy lines of quantity and matter, but elevated almost to the verge of the spiritual world. This is the dwelling-place of the intellect which soars aloft in a region of its own, and meditates on truth abstracted from every condition of time and place, and, therefore, universal and eternal. The object of this faculty has no limits except such as arise from a specific and created nature, which being specific, must be definite, and being created, must be finite. But its distinctive object is unlimited truth in the abstract, or as really existing in God. I have followed the ascent towards perfection of two external senses, and two of the internal faculties of the soul; and I fancy I have suggested a mark for determining it. One of them excels another in the degree in which it becomes independent of matter, and escapes from its bondage. We may pronounce a similar judgment on the relative superiority of a substantial form.

I hope I have now prepared a way for introducing a passage from St. Thomas. In the *Summa Theologica, Treatise de Homine*, Quest. 76, art. 1, he establishes that an intellectual principle is united to the human body as its substantial form.

He then proceeds:—

“Sed considerandum est, quod quanto forma est nobilior tanto magis dominatur materie corporali et minus ei immergitur et magis

sua operatione vel virtute excedit eam: unde videmus quod forma mixti corporis habet aliam operationem quae non causatur ex qualitatibus elementaribus, et quanto magis proceditur in nobilitate formarum tanto magis invenitur virtus formae materiam excedere, sicut anima vegetabilis plusquam forma elementaris et anima sensibilis plusquam anima vegetabilis. Anima autem humana est ultima in nobilitate formarum, unde in tantum sua virtute excedit materiam corporalem quod habet aliquam operationem et virtutem in qua nullo modo communicat materia corporalis et haec virtus dicitur intellectus."

First, I wish to observe that *materia corporalis* and *elementaris* here signify nearly the same thing, matter that has the *forma corporeitatis*. Secondly, that according to Aristotle and St. Thomas, plants and animals have souls as well as man, but of different kinds. At least the term *anima* and its Greek equivalent, are indiscriminately applied to them, not, of course, in the same sense. I will translate the quotation freely: In proportion to the nobility of any form is the degree (or kind) of its independence of matter and of its sway over it, and in the same proportion is the degree of excellence in its power and operation: hence we see that the form of a mixed body, that is, one composed of the four elements, air, fire, earth and water, produces an operation superior to that which is caused by any of the qualities named elementary, as heat, cold, dryness, moisture, &c. (This is merely an illustration drawn from the state of physical science in the days of St. Thomas). And the more a form advances in rank the more its power excels that of elementary matter, as, for instance, that form which is the principle of life and growth in vegetable productions, is superior to the form of one or all of the elements, while itself again must yield to that which is the principle of sensation and knowledge in animals. Now the human soul is the most noble in the list of forms. Hence its superiority to corporal matter, or the *forma corporeitatis* is so great that it possesses a faculty which is exercised without the help of a corporal organ at all, and this faculty is called the intellect. Quantity and quality are the two principal modifications of a compound, and, perhaps, to these all others may be reduced, and as the former being passive is based upon matter, so the latter being more or less

active, is based on the substantial form. What is quality? It is like those things with which we are most familiar. It is easier to enumerate some of its species than to give a satisfying definition of any of them. I mention them when I speak of bodily quickness, agility or strength, sharp sight, acute hearing, a lively imagination, a keen intellect, a strong or ardent will, a hot temper, a readiness to acquire or use knowledge; a rapid glance will show that a principle of activity animates them. It is unnecessary to name their contraries, for "*eadem est scientia oppositorum.*" To know anything, is to know the extreme opposed to it. We may, perhaps, regard matter and form as two headings under which quantity and quality naturally fall. And although neither of them is produced by the substantial form, yet each in its way derives nutriment and support from the being or life which it imparts. The partnership between matter and form is liable to dissolution. This takes place, when they are no longer fit to be associated. Dispositions in the parts or organs grounded upon matter, fail and decay. The form departs and perishes. "*Formae educuntur de potentia materiae.*" Such forms are produced because matter has a capacity to receive them. When it loses that capacity they cease to exist. Being unable to perform any act without the co-operation of matter, their existence apart would be useless and a burthen. This is not true of the human form which is created. As it may operate, so it may exist independently of matter; and, therefore, in a state of separation. The loss of a form is called substantial corruption; its gain substantial generation, and as matter is never without a form, so the one is always followed by the other. Hence arose the phrase, "*Corruptio unius est generatio alterius.*" The corruption of anything leads to the generation of something else. In the corruption of plants, matter receives the "*forma inorganica*;" in the corruption of animals, it receives the "*forma cadaverica.*" There is a multitude of changes of this sort involving a transition from one state of substantial being to another daily occurring in every part of the world. St. Thomas adopted and interpreted Aristotle's doctrine of primary matter and substantial forms. He largely applies it

to elucidate several of the mysteries of faith. Without a clear insight into it, considerable passages in his works are unintelligible. From the fields of natural and supernatural science he has drawn materials and woven them into a tissue remarkable for its firmness, lightness and finish. By crossing and recrossing the silver threads of one field with the gold threads of the other, he has traced patterns of exquisite and varied beauty. Happy are they who have mastered them in their design and execution, who admire their loveliness and feel delight in contemplating it.

T. J. DEELY, O.P.

ROSARY DOCUMENTS.

AT the request of many subscribers we have collected the various Documents prescribing the recitation of the Rosary, which have been issued from time to time since 1883 by His Holiness Leo XIII. or the Sacred Congregations. Both bishops and priests have occasion to refer to these Documents as the month of October comes round each year, and it has been represented to us that some difficulty is experienced in finding them all, scattered as they are in so many different volumes of the I. E. RECORD. To remove this inconvenience we now publish all the ROSARY DOCUMENTS from the first which appeared on the 16th July, 1883, to the latest published on the 11th September in the present year.

LETTER OF THE CONGREGATION "DE PROPAGANDA FIDE,"
 PRESCRIBING THE RECITATION OF THE ROSARY AND THE
 LITANY OF LORETTO FOR EVERY DAY IN THE MONTH OF
 OCTOBER, 1883.

SUMMARY.

1. The Feast of the Rosary to be celebrated with special solemnity this year (1883).
2. Five decades at least of the Rosary and the Litany of Loretto to be recited every day from the 1st of October to the 2nd of November in all parochial churches.

3. The same devotions to be carried out in other churches and in oratories dedicated to the Blessed Virgin in accordance with such arrangements as the Ordinary may be pleased to approve.

4. It is highly desirable that Mass should be said, or Benediction of the Blessed Sacrament given in connection with those devotional exercises.

5. A Plenary Indulgence is granted to all the faithful who confess and communicate on the feast of the Holy Rosary, or (if hindered from doing so on the feast itself), within the octave, and visit a church, and there pray for the wants of the Church according to the intentions of the Pope.

6. Indulgences of seven years and seven quarantines for joining within this month in the public recitation of the Rosary in a church, praying, as above, for the intentions of the Pope.

7. Persons joining in the public recitation of the Rosary and Litany in a church on ten days in this month, as also persons, who being legitimately hindered from joining in the public recitation in church, perform the exercises in private at home, for ten days, and confess and communicate and pray, as above, for the intentions of the Pope, gain a Plenary Indulgence.

S. CONGREGATIO DE PROPAGANDA FIDE.

ILLME. ET RME. DNE.

Neminem profecto latet populum fidelem potentissimo B. Mariae Virginis patrocinio insignia a Deo beneficia semper et ubique fuisse assequutum. Praecipue vero singulare praesidium per pium SSmi. Rosarii exercitium experti sunt Christifideles quoties vel haereses vel vitia impie grassarentur, vel gravissimae Ecclesiae calamitates ingruerent. Hinc factum est ut Romani Pontifices rosarias preces, cum Christi grex gravioribus premeretur angustiis, coelesti indulgentiarum thesauro ditaverint ac fideles ad huiusmodi exercitium hortari atque excitare numquam destiterint. Haec animo suo recolens SS. D. N. Leo Div. Providentia PP. XIII., ad copiosius et promptius a Datore omnium bonorum auxilium impetrandum in tot ac tam gravibus necessitatibus, quibus Christiana respublica in praesens versatur. Praedecessorum suorum vestigiis inhaerens, Beatissimae Virginis opem ab universa quanta est Ecclesia impensius postulandam censuit

et imminente solemnī ipsius Rosarii celebritate nonnulla ad rem instituit atque indulget, quae Amplitudini Tuae per hanc Sacram Congregationem significari praecepit. Praescripsit autem :

1^o. Ut peculiari devotione et solemnitate festum SSmi. Rosarii hoc anno celebretur ;

2^o. Ut a prima die mensis Octobris usque ad secundum sequentis Novembris in omnibus ecclesiis, in quibus animarum cura exercetur, quinque saltem decades Sacratissimi Rosarii cum Litanis Lauretanis recitentur.

Id etiam servabitur in aliis seu Oratoriis Bmae. Virgini dicatis iuxta modum quem Ordinarii locorum magis utilem et opportunum indicaverint. Optandum vero est ut, ubi id commode fieri possit, praeter Rosarias preces sacrosanctum Missae sacrificium celebretur, vel SSmi. Sacramenti benedictio populo Christiano impertiatur.

Quo vero alacrius et maiori fidelium fructu haec peragantur, idem SSmus. D. N. sequentes indulgentias de thesauro Ecclesiae benigne concessit :

1^o. Indulgentiam plenariam iis omnibus qui die festo SSmi. Rosarii, vel, ubi necessaria Sacerdotum copia ad excipiendas sacramentales confessiones non suppetat, in quocumque alio insequentis Octavae Poenitentiae Sacramento expiati et sacra communione refectionem aliquam ecclesiam visitaverint, ibique pro Ecclesiae necessitatibus iuxta mentem Sanctitatis Suae pias ad Deum preces fuderint :

2^o. Indulgentiam septem annorum ac totidem quadragenarum, quam singuli fideles lucrari poterunt, quoties in aliqua ecclesia praedictum Sancti Rosarii exercitium devote peregerint orantes ut supra iuxta mentem Sanctitatis Suae. Iis vero qui aliquo detenti impedimento memorato pio exercitio interesse in ecclesiis non poterunt, Sanctitas Sua benigne concedit, ut eandem indulgentiam lucrari valeant, dummodo Rosarias preces et Litanias privatim recitent iuxta intentionem Sanctitatis Suae.

3^o. Qui vero per id tempus, quod est inter primam Octobris diem et secundum Novembris, decies praedicto SSmi. Rosarii exercitio interfuerint, vel, quatenus impediti, privatim illud persolverint, iisdem rite confessis et Sacra

Eucharistia refectis et, ut supra, iuxta mentem Summi Pontificis orantibus Sanctitas Sua aliam concedit plenariam indulgentiam, quam quisque die sibi beneviso, intra tamen praefatum temporis spatium, poterit lucrari.

Non dubito quin pro tua sollicitudine in exequendis Summi Pontificis mandatis et curando Ecclesiae universae bono ac spirituali fidelium tibi commissorum fructu, haec omnia iisdem tempestive significare satagas, quo singuli, si fieri potest, indulgentiarum beneficio fruantur, et Omnipotens Deus universorum fidelium preces per B. Mariae Virginis intercessionem benigne excipiens, coeleste, quod Ecclesia praestolatur, auxilium largiri dignetur.

Interum Deum rogo ut te sospitem diutissime servet.

Roma ex Aed. S. Congr. de Prop. Fide die 16 Iulii, 1883.

Uti Frater Addictissimus,

IOANNES CARD. SIMEONI, *Praefectus*.

D. ARCHIEPISCOPUS TYRENSIS, *Secretarius*.

ENCYCLICAL LETTER OF HIS HOLINESS LEO XIII., ORDERING THE RECITATION OF THE ROSARY AND LITANY OF LORETTO FOR EVERY DAY IN THE MONTH OF OCTOBER, 1883.

SUMMARY.

1. The Origin of the Feast of the Rosary.
2. Testimony of the Popes to the excellence of the devotion of the Rosary and their efforts to extend it.
3. The Feast of the Rosary to be celebrated with special solemnity this year (1883).
4. From the 1st of October to the 2nd of November, five decades at least of the Rosary, with the Litany of Loretto, to be recited in all public churches, and if the Ordinary deem it useful, in other churches also, and in oratories dedicated to the Mother of God.
5. It is desirable that Mass should be said, or the Blessed Sacrament exposed, the Exposition to be followed by Benediction, when the people are engaged in these devotions.
6. Processions of the Sodalities of the Blessed Virgin highly approved.

7. An Indulgence of seven years and seven quarantines each time one joins in the public recitation of the Rosary and Litany, and prays in accordance with the intentions of the Pope.

8. The same Indulgence granted to those who being legitimately hindered from joining in the public devotions in the church, perform them at home and pray in accordance with the intentions of the Pope.

9. A Plenary Indulgence granted to all who perform within the prescribed time these devotions ten times, either publicly in the church, or privately at home (when hindered by just cause from attending the church), and confess and communicate.

10. A Plenary Indulgence granted to all who on the Feast of the Rosary, or within the octave, confess, communicate, and pray in some church to God and the Blessed Virgin, for the necessities of the Church, according to the intention of the Pope.

VENERABILIBUS FRATRIBUS PATRIARCHIS, ARCHIEPISCOPIS ET
EPISCOPIS UNIVERSIS CATHOLICI ORBIS GRATIAM ET
COMMUNIONEM CUM APOSTOLICA SEDE HABENTIBUS.

LEO PP. XIII.

VENERABILES FRATRES,

SALUTEM ET APOSTOLICAM BENEDICTIONEM.

Supremi Apostolatus officio quo fungimur et longe difficili horum temporum conditione quotidie magis admonemur ac propemodum impellimur, ut quo graviores incidunt Ecclesiae calamitates, eo impensius ejus tutelae incolumitatisque consulamus. Quapropter, dum, quantum in Nobis est, modis omnibus Ecclesiae jura tueri, et quae vel impendent vel circumstant pericula antevertere et propulsare conamur, assidue damus operam caelestibus auxiliis implorandis, quibus effici unice potest, ut labores curaeque Nostrae optatum sint exitum habiturae. Hanc ad rem nihil validius potiusque judicamus, quam religione et pietate demereri magnam Dei Parentem Mariam Virginem, quae pacis nostrae apud Deum sequestra et caelestium administra gratiarum, in celsissimo potestatis est gloriaeque fastigio in coelis collocata, ut homini-

bus ad sempiternam illam civitatem per tot labores et pericula contendentibus patrocinii sui subsidium impertiat. Itaque proximis jam anniversariis solemnibus, quibus plurima et maxima in populum christianum per Marialis *Rosarii* preces collata beneficia recoluntur, preces hasce ipsas singulari studio toto orbe catholico adhiberi Magnae Virgini hoc anno volumus, quo Ipsa conciliatrice, divinum Ejus Filium nostris placatum et mitigatum malis feliciter experiamur. Has igitur litteras ad Vos, Venerabiles Fratres, dandas censuimus, ut, cognitis consiliis Nostris, populorum pietas ad ea religiose perficienda vestra auctoritate, studioque excitetur.

Praecipuum semper ac solemne catholicis hominibus fuit in trepidis rebus dubiisque temporibus ad Mariam confugere et in materna Ejus bonitate conquiescere. Quo quidem ostenditur certissima non modo spes, sed plane fiducia, quam Ecclesia catholica semper habuit in Genitrice Dei jure repositam. Revera primaevae labis expers Virgo, adlecta Dei Mater, et hoc ipso servandi hominum generis consors facta, tanta apud Filium gratia et potestate valet, ut majorem nec humana nec angelica natura assecuta unquam sit, aut assequi possit. Cumque suave Ipsi ac jucundum apprime sit, singulos suam flagitantes opem juvare ac solari; dubitandum non est, quin Ecclesiae universae votis adnuere multo libentius velit ac propemodum gestiat.

Haec autem tam magna et plena spei in augustam coelorum Reginam pietas luculentius emicuit, cum errorum vis late serpentium, vel exundans morum corruptio, vel potentium adversariorum impetus militantem Dei Ecclesiam in discrimen adducere visa sunt. Veteris et recentioris aevi historiae, ac sanctioris Ecclesiae fasti publicas privatasque ad Deiparam obsecrationes et vota commemorant, ac vicissim praebita per Ipsam auxilia partamque divinitus tranquillitatem et pacem. Hinc insignes illi tituli, quibus Eam catholicae gentes christianorum Auxiliatricem, Opiferam, Solatricem, bellorum Potentem, Victricem, Paciferam consalutarunt. Quos inter praecipue commemorandus solemnis ille ex Rosario ductus, quo insignia Ipsius in universum christianum nomen beneficia ad perpetuitatem consecrata sunt. Nemo vestrum ignorat, Venerabiles Fratres, quantum laboris et luctus, saeculo duo-

decimo exeunte, sanctae Dei Ecclesiae intulerint Albigenses haeretici, qui recentiorum Manichaeorum secta progeniti, australem Galliae plagam atque alias latini orbis regiones perniciosis erroribus repleverant; armorumque terrorem circumferentes, late dominari per clades et ruinas moliebantur. Contra hujusmodi teterrimos hostes virum sanctissimum, ut nostis, excitavit misericors Deus, inclitum scilicet Dominicani Ordinis parentem et conditorem. Is integritate doctrinae, virtutum exemplis, muneris apostolici perfunctione magnus, pugnare pro Ecclesia catholica excelso animo aggressus est, non vi, non armis, sed ea maxime preceatione confisus, quam sacri Rosarii nomine ipse primus instituit, et per se, per suos alumnos longe lateque disseminavit. Dei enim instinctu ac numine sentiebat futurum, ut ejus preceationis ope, tanquam validissimo instrumento bellico, victi hostes profligatique vesanae impietate audaciam ponere cogerentur. Quod reipsa evenisse compertum est. Etenim eam orandi ratione suscepta riteque celebrata ex institutione Dominici Patris, pietas, fides, concordia restitui, haereticorum molitiones atque artes disjici passim coepere: ad haec, plurimi errantes ad sanitatem revocati, et catholicorum armis, quae fuerant ad vim propulsandam sumpta, impiorum compressus furor.

Ejusdem preceationis efficacia et vis mirabiliter etiam perspecta est saeculo decimo sexto, cum ingentes Turcarum copiae Europae prope universae superstitionis et barbariae jugum intentarent. Quo tempore sanctus Pius V. Pontifex Maximus, excitatis ad communium rerum tutelam principibus christianis, omni studio in primis egit ut potentissima Mater Dei, per Rosarii preces implorata, nomini christiano volens propitia succurreret. Nobilissimum sane spectaculum per eos dies coelo terraeque exhibitum omnium in se mentes animosque convertit. Hinc enim Christi fideles non procul a Corinthiaco sinu vitam et sanguinem pro religionis patriaeque incolumitate fundere parati, hostem interriti opperiebantur: illinc inermes pio supplicantium agmine, Mariam inclamabant, Mariam ex Rosarii formula iteratis vicibus consalutabant, ut certantibus adesset ad victoriam. Adstitit exorata Domina; nam commissio ad Echinadas insulas navali praelio, christianorum classis, sine magna suorum clade, fuis caesisque

hostibus, magnifice vicit. Quare idem sanctissimus Pontifex in accepti beneficii memoriam, anniversarium tanti certaminis diem honoris Mariae Victricis festum haberi voluit; quem Gregorius XIII. titulo Rosarii consecravit.

Simili modo, superiore saeculo, semel ad Temesvariam in Pannonia, semel ad Corcyram insulam nobilis est de Turcarum copiis victoria reportata: idque sacris Magnae Virgini diebus, precibusque pio Rosarii ritu ante persolutis. Quae res Clementem XI. Decessorem Nostrum adduxit ut grati animi ergo, solemnem Deiparae a Rosario honorem quotannis habendum tota Ecclesia decreverit.

Igitur cum sacra haec precandi formula tantopere Virgini grata esse dignoscatur, eaque ad Ecclesiae populique christiani defensionem et ad divina beneficia publice privatimque impetranda apprime conferat; mirum non est, eximiis eam praeconiis alios quoque Decessores Nostros efferre atque augere studuisse. Sic Urbanus IV. *quotidie per Rosarium christiano populo bona provenire* testatus est. Sixtus IV. hunc orandi ritum *ad honorem Dei et Virginis, et ad imminetia mundi pericula propulsanda opportunum*; Leo X. *adversus haeresiarchas et gliscentes haereses institutum*; et Julius III. *romanae Ecclesiae decorem dixerunt*. Itemque de eo Sanctus Pius V., *hoc, inquit, orandi modo evulgato, coepisse fideles iis meditationibus accensos, iis precibus inflammatos, in alios viros repente mutari, haeresum tenebras remitti, et lucem catholicae fidei aperiri*. Demum Gregorius XIII., *Rosarium a beato Dominico ad iram Dei placandam et Beatae Virginis intercessionem implorandam fuisse institutum*.

Hac Nos cogitatione, exemplisque Decessorum Nostrorum permoti, opportunum omnino censemus solemnes hoc tempore supplicationes ob eam caussam institui, ut invocata per Rosarii preces Virgine augusta, parem necessitatibus opem a Jesu Christo ejus Filio impetremus. Perspicitis, Venerabiles Fratres, Ecclesiae labores dimicationesque diuturnas et graves Christianam pietatem, publicam morum honestatem, fidemque ipsam, quae summum est bonum virtutumque ceterarum principium, majoribus quotidie periculis videmus oppositam. Item difficilem conditionem variosque angores Nostros non modo cognoscitis, sed facit caritas vestra ut quadam Nobis-

cum societate et communione sentiatis. Miserrimum autem est, ac longe luctuosissimum, tot animas Jesu Christi sanguine redemptas, quodam aberrantis saeculi veluti correptas turbine, praecipites in pejus agi atque in interitum ruere sempiternum. Igitur divini necessitas auxilii haud sane est hodie minor, quam cum magnus Dominicus ad publica sananda vulnera Marialis Rosarii usum invexit. Ille vero caelesti pervidit lumine, aetatis suae malis remedium nullum praesentius futurum, quam si homines ad Christum, qui *via, veritas et vita* est, salutis per Eum nobis partae crebra commentatione rediissent; et Virginem illam, cui datum est *cunctas haereses interimere*, deprecationem apud Deum adhibuissent. Idcirco sacri Rosarii formulam ita composuit, ut et salutis nostrae mysteria ordine recolerentur, et huic meditati officio mysticum innecteretur sertum ex angelica salutatione contextum, interjecta oratione ad Deum et Patrem Domini Nostri Jesu Christi. Nos igitur haud absimili malo idem quaerentes remedium, non dubitamus, quin eadem haec a beatissimo viro tanto cum orbis catholici emolumento inducta precatio, momenti plurimum habitura sit ad levandas nostrorum quoque temporum calamitates.

Quamobrem non modo universos christianos enixe hortamur, ut vel publice vel privatim in sua quisque domo et familia pium hoc Rosarii officium peragere studeant et non intermissa consuetudine usurpent, sed etiam INTEGRUM ANNI LABENTIS OCTOBREM MENSEM coelesti Reginae a Rosario sacrum dicatunque esse volumus. Decernimus itaque et mandamus, ut in orbe catholico universo hoc item anno solemnia Deiparae a Rosario peculiari religione et cultus splendore celebrantur; utque a prima die proximi Octobris ad secundam subsequentis Novembris, in omnibus ubique curialibus templis, et si Ordinarii locorum utile atque opportunum judicaverint, in aliis etiam templis sacrariisve honori Deiparae dedicatis, quinque saltem Rosarii decades, adjectis Litanis Lauretanis religiose recitentur: optamus autem ut ad has preces conveniente populo, eodem tempore vel sacrum ad altare fiat, vel Sacramento augusto ad adorandum proposito, sacrosancta deinceps hostia pius supplicantium coetus rite lustretur. Magnopere probamus, sodalitates a

Rosario Virginis solemnī pompa vīcatim per urbes, accepta majoribus consuetudine, publicae religionis causa procedere. Quibus autem in locis id injuria temporum forte non licet, quidquid publicae religioni ex hac parte detractum est, frequentiore redimatur ad sacras aedes accursu; et diligentiore virtutum christianarum exercitatione fervor pietatis eluceat.

Eorum autem gratia, qui quae supra jussimus facturi sunt, libet coelestes Ecclesiae thesauros recludere, in quibus ipsi incitamenta simul et praemia pietatis inveniant. Omnibus igitur qui intra designatum temporis spatium, Rosarii cum Litaniis publicae recitationi interfuerint, et ad mentem Nostram oraverint, septem annorum itemque septem quadragenarum apud Deum indulgentiam singulis vicibus obtinendam concedimus. Quo beneficio frui pariter posse volumus, quos supplicationibus publicis supra dictis legitima causa prohibeat, hac tamen lege ut eidem sacrae exercitationi privatim operam dederint, itemque Deo ad mentem Nostram supplicaverint. Eos vero qui supra dicto tempore decies saltem, vel publice in sacris templis, vel justas ob causas privatis in domibus eadem peregerint, et, expiatis rite animis, sacra de altari libaverint, piaculo omni et statis admissorum poenis ad pontificalis indulgentiae modum exsolvimus. Plenissimam hanc admissorum suorum veniam omnibus etiam elargimur, qui vel in ipsis beatae Mariae Virginis a Rosario solemnibus, vel quolibet ex octo consequentibus diebus, absolutis pariter salutari confessione animis, ad Christi mensam accesserint, et in aliqua aede sacra pro Ecclesiae necessitatibus ad mentem Nostram Deo et Deiparae rite supplicaverint.

Agite vero, Venerabiles Fratres; quantum vobis curae est et Mariae honos et societatis humanae salus, tantum studete populorum in Magnam Virginem alere pietatem, augere fiduciam. Divino quidem munere factum putamus, ut, vel turbulentissimis hisce Ecclesiae temporibus, in maxima christiani populi parte stet ac vigeat antiqua in augustam Virginem religio et pietas. Nunc vero exhortationibus his Nostris excitate, vestrisque vocibus incensae christianae gentes vehementiore in dies animi ardore sese in Mariae tutelam fidemque recipiant; et adamare magis ac magis

insistant Marialis Rosarii consuetudinem, quam majores nostri non modo uti praesens in malis auxilium, sed etiam nobilis instar tesseræ christianæ pietatis habere consueverunt. Obsecrationes concordēs ac supplices libens excipiet humani generis Patrona caelestis, illudque facile impetrabit, ut boni virtutis laude crescant; ut devii sese ad salutem colligant ac resipiscant; ut vindex scelerum Deus ad clementiam ac misericordiam conversus rem christianam remque publicam, amotis periculis, optatae tranquillitati restituat.

Hac spe erecti, Deum ipsum, per Eam in qua totius boni posuit plenitudinem, summis animi Nostri votis enixe obsecramus, ut maxima quæque Vobis, Venerabiles Fratres, caelestium bonorum munera largiatur: in quorum auspicium et pignus, Vobis ipsis et Clero vestro et populis cujusque vestrum curae concredit, Apostolicam Benedictionem peramanter impertimus.

Datum Romæ apud S. Petrum die 1 Septembris, A.D. MDCCCLXXXIII. Pontificatus Nostri Anno Sexto.

LEO PP. XIII.

DECREE OF THE S. CONGREGATION OF RITES, DATED 10TH DECEMBER, 1883, PRESCRIBING, BY ORDER OF THE POPE, THE ADDITION TO THE LITANY OF LORETTO OF THE INVOCATION *REGINA SACRATISSIMI ROSARII, ORA PRO NOBIS.*

DECRETUM URBIS ET ORBIS.

Ad praesidium columenque militantis Ecclesiae virum sanctissimum excitavit misericors Deus, Dominicum Gusmanum, inclitum Ordinis Praedicatorum conditorem et patrem, qui pugnare pro Ecclesia Catholica aggressus est, maxime precatione confisus, quam Sacri Rosarii Mariani nomine primus instituit, et per se suosque Alumnos longe lateque disseminavit. Admirabilem hanc orandi formulam nobilis instar tesseræ Christianæ pietatis Catholici semper habere consueverunt. Quare vix ac Sanctissimus Dominus Noster Leo Papa XIII. ad opem a Jesu Christo per Mariam Virginem Ejus Matrem praesentibus necessitatibus impetrandam, integrum mensem Octobrem Rosarii precibus in toto Catholico Orbe hoc anno exigendum, encyclicis datis Litteris,

indixit; ubique sacrorum Antistites et fideles populi, supremi Pastoris voluntati obtemperantes, frequentissima Rosarii recitatione pietatis suae et dilectionis erga Dei Matrem peramantissimam splendida argumenta exhibuerunt, certam spem foventes se, eadem Beatissima Virgine opitulante, a caelestium misericordiarum Patre in praesentibus tam privatis, quam communibus Christianae reipublicae calamitatibus efficacius optata subsidia impetraturos.

Jamvero Sanctissimus idem Dominus Noster summo cupiens tum augeri cultum erga ipsam augustam Dei Genitricem hac praesertim orandi consuetudine eidem Virgini gratissima, tum Christifideles ad hoc obsequium Ei praestandum magis magisque excitari, humillimas preces sibi oblatas a Rmo Patre Josepho Maria Larroca Magistro Generali Ordinis Praedicatorum, nimirum ut Litaniis Lauretanis addendam indulgeat Reginae a Rosario invocationem, quae jamdudum apud Dominicianam Familiam in usu est, benigne ac perlibenter excepit. Voluit propterea Sanctitas Sua praecepitque, ut ceteris Litaniarum Lauretanarum beatæ Mariae praeconiis, et hoc in Ecclesia universa in posterum addatur postremo loco, scilicet “*Regina Sacratissimi Rosarii, ora pro nobis.*”

Mandavit praeterea super his expediri Litteris in forma Brevis. Contrariis non obstantibus quibuscumque.

Die 10 Decembris 1883.

D. Cardinalis BARTOLINIUS, *S.R.C. Praefectus.*

L. ✠ S.

LAURENTIUS SALVATI, *S.R.C. Secretarius.*

CONSTITUTION OF HIS HOLINESS LEO XIII., DATED 24TH DECEMBER, 1883, ORDERING THE PERMANENT ADDITION TO THE LITANY OF THE INVOCATION *REGINA SACRATISSIMI ROSARII, ORA PRO NOBIS.*—RECITATION OF THE ROSARY IN CATHEDRAL AND PAROCHIAL CHURCHES.

SUMMARY.

His Holiness addresses an earnest exhortation to the faithful to practise the daily recitation of the Rosary in every Catholic family.

He ardently desires that the Rosary should be recited daily

in every Cathedral Church, and every Feast day in Parochial Churches.

He decrees that henceforth the invocation, *Regina Sacratissimi Rosarii* be added in the Litany of Loretto after the invocation *Regina sine labe originali concepta*.

LEO PP. XIII.

AD PERPETUAM REI MEMORIAM.

Salutaris ille *spiritus precum*, misericordiae divinae munus idem et pignus, quem Deus olim effundere pollicitus est *super domum David et super habitatores Jerusalem*, etsi nunquam in Ecclesia Catholica cessat, tamen experrectior ad permovendos animos tunc esse videtur cum homines magnum aliquod aut ipsius Ecclesiae aut reipublicae tempus adesse vel impendere sentiunt. Solet enim in rebus trepidis excitari fides pietasque adversus Deum, quia quo minus apparet in rebus humanis praesidii, eo major esse coelestis patrocinii necessitas intelligitur. Quod vel nuper perspexisse videmur, cum Nos diuturnis Ecclesiae acerbitatibus et communium temporum difficultate permoti, pietatem Christianorum per epistolam Nostram Encyclicam appellantes, Mariam Virginem sanctissimo Rosarii ritu colendam atque implorandam Octobri mense toto decrevimus. Cui quidem voluntati Nostrae obtemperatum esse novimus studio et alacritate tanta, quantum rei sanctitas vel causae gravitas postulabat. Est enim neque in hac solum Italia nostra sed in omnibus terris pro re Catholica, pro salute publica, supplicatum: et Episcopis auctoritate, Clericis exemplo operaque praeeruntibus, magnae Dei matri habitus certatim honos. Et mirifice sane Nos declaratae pietatis ratio multiplex delectavit: templa magnificentius exornata: ductae solemniter pompae: ad sacras conciones, ad synaxin, ad quotidianas Rosarii preces magna ubique populi frequentia. Nec praeterire volumus quod gestienti animo accepimus de nonnullis locis, quos procella temporum vehementius affligit: in quibus tantus extitit fervor pietatis, ut presbyterorum inopiam privati redimere, quibus in rebus possent, suomet ipsi ministerio maluerint, quam sinere ut in templis suis indictae preces silerent.

Quare dum praesentium malorum sensum spe bonitatis et misericordiae divinae consolamur, inculcari bonorum omnium animis intelligimus oportere id quod sacrae Litterae passim aperteque declarant, sicut in omni virtute, sic in ista, quae in obsecrando Deo versatur, omnino plurimum referre perpetuitatem atque constantiam. Exoratur enim placaturque precando Deus: hoc tamen ipsum, quod se exorari sinit, non solum bonitatis suae, sed etiam perseverantiae nostrae vult esse fructum. Talis autem in orando perseverantia longe plus est hoc tempore necessaria, cum tam multa Nos tamque magna, ut saepe diximus, circumstent ex omni parte pericula, quae sine praesenti Dei ope superari non possunt. Nimis enim multi oderunt *omne quod dicitur Deus et colitur*: oppugnatur Ecclesia neque privatorum dumtaxat consiliis, sed civilibus persaepe institutis et legibus; Christianae sapientiae adversantur immanes opinionum novitates, ita plane ut et sua cuique et publica tuenda salus sit adversus hostes acerrimos, extrema virium conjuratos experiri. Vere igitur hujus tanti proelii complectentes cogitatione certamen, nunc maxime intuendum animo esse censemus in Jesum Christum Dominum Nostrum, qui quo Nos ad imitationem erudiret sui, *factus in agonia prolixius orabat*.

Ex variis autem precandi rationibus ac formulis in Ecclesia Catholica pie et salubriter usitatis, ea, quae Rosarium Mariale dicitur, multis est nominibus commendabilis. In quibus, quemadmodum in Litteris Nostris Encyclicis confirmavimus, illud permagnum, quod est Rosarium praecipue implorando Matris Dei patrocínio adversus hostes Catholici nominis institutum; eaque ex parte nemo ignorat, sublevandis Ecclesiae calamitatibus idem saepe et multum profuisse. Non solum igitur privatorum pietati, sed publicis etiam temporibus est magnopere consentaneum, istud precandi genus in eum restitui honoris locum, quem diu obtinuit, cum singulae, Christianorum familiae nullum sibi abire diem sine Rosarii recitatione paterentur. His Nos de causis omnes hortamur atque obsecramus, ut quotidianam Rosarii consuetudinem religiose et constanter insistant: itemque declaramus, Nobis esse in optatis ut in Dioeceseon singularum templo principe quotidie, in templis Curialibus diebus festis singulis recitetur.

Huic autem excitandae tuendaeque exercitationi pietatis magno usui esse poterunt familiae Ordinum religiosorum, et praecipuo quodam jure suo sodales Dominiciani: quos omnes pro certo habemus tam fructuoso nobilique officio minime defuturos.

Nos igitur in honorem magnae Dei genitricis Mariae, ad perpetuam recordationem implorati ubique gentium per mensem Octobrem a purissimo Ejus Corde praesidii; in perenne testimonium amplissimae spei, quam in Parente amantissima reponimus; ad propitiam ejus opem magis ac magis in dies impetrandam, volumus ac decernimus, ut in Litaniis Lauretanis, post invocationem, *Regina sine labe originali concepta*, addatur praeconium, *Regina sacratissimi Rosarii, ora pro nobis*.

Volumus autem, ut hae Litterae Nostrae firmae rataeque, uti sunt, ita in posterum permaneant: irritum vero et inane futurum decernimus, si quid super his a quoquam contigerit attentari: contrariis non obstantibus quibuscumque.

Datum Romae apud S. Petrum sub annulo Piscatoris die XXIV Decembris An. MDCCCLXXXIII, Pontificatus Nostri Anno Sexto.

TH. Card. MERTEL.

ENCYCLICAL LETTER OF HIS HOLINESS LEO XIII., ON THE ROSARY, AND THE SPECIAL DEVOTIONS FOR THE MONTH OF OCTOBER, 1884.

SUMMARY.

Reference to the Encyclical of last year ordering the recitation of the Rosary during the month of October.—Ready compliance of the faithful.—Reasons for the renewal of the devotions during the present October (1884) explained. A special reason for Italy on account of the prevalence of the cholera.

The Devotions and Indulgences same as for last October.

Distinctly ordered in this Encyclical that when these devotions are held in the forenoon, they ought to be in connection with the morning Mass; when in the afternoon, the prayers are to be recited in presence of the Blessed Sacrament exposed, and followed by Benediction of the Blessed Sacrament.

VENERABILIBUS FRATRIBUS PATRIARCHIS, PRIMATIBUS ARCHIEPISCOPIS ET EPISCOPIIS CATHOLICI ORBIS UNIVERSIS GRATIAM ET COMMUNIONEM CUM APOSTOLICA SEDE HABENTIBUS.

LEO PP. XIII.

VENERABILES FRATRES,

SALUTEM ET APOSTOLICAM BENEDICTIONEM.

Superiore anno, quod singuli novistis, per literas Nostras Encyclicas decrevimus, ut in omnibus catholici orbis partibus, ad caeleste praesidium laboranti Ecclesiae impetrandum, magna Dei Mater sanctissimo Rosarii ritu, Octobri toto cole-retur. In quo et iudicium Nostrum et exempla sequuti sumus Decessorum Nostrorum, qui difficillimis Ecclesiae temporibus aucto pietatis studio ad augustam Virginem confugere, opemque ejus summis precibus implorare consueverunt.—Voluntati vero illi Nostrae tanta animorum alacritate et concordia ubique locorum obtemperatum est, ut luculenter apparuerit quantus religionis et pietatis ardor exstet in populo christiano, et quantam in caelesti Mariae Virginis patrocinio spem universi reponant. Quem quidem declaratae pietatis et fidei fervorem Nos, tanta molestiarum et malorum mole gravatos, non mediocri consolatione leniisse profitemur, imo animum addidisse ad graviora quoque, si ita Deo placeat, perferenda. Donec enim spiritus precum effunditur super domum David et super habitatores Jerusalem, in spem certam adducimur, fore ut aliquando propitietur Deus Ecclesiaeque suae miseratus vicem, audiat tandem preces obsecrantium per Eam, quam ipse caelestium gratiarum voluit esse administram.

Quapropter insidentibus causis, quae Nos ad publicam pietatem excitandam, uti diximus, anno superiore impulerunt, officii Nostri duximus, Venerabiles Fratres, hoc quoque anno hortari populos christianos, ut in hujusmodi precandi ratione et formula, quae *Rosarium Mariale* dicitur, perseverantes, sibi validum magnae Dei Genitricis patrocinium demereantur. Cum enim in oppugnatoribus christiani nominis tanta sit obstinatio propositi, in propugnatoribus non minorem esse oportet constantiam voluntatis, quum praesertim caeleste auxilium et collata nobis a Deo beneficia, perseverantiae

nostrae saepe soleant esse fructus. Ac revocare juvat in mentem magnae illius Judith exemplum, quae almae Virginis typum exhibens stultam Judaeorum repressit impatientiam, constituere Deo volentium arbitrio suo diem ad subveniendum oppressae civitati. Intuendum item in exemplum Apostolorum, qui maximum Spiritus Paracliti donum sibi promissum expectaverunt, perseverantes unanimiter in oratione cum Maria Matre Jesu. Agitur enim et nunc de ardua ac magni momenti re, de inimico antiquo et vaferissimo in elata potentiae suae acie humiliando; de Ecclesiae ejusque Capitis libertate vindicanda; de iis conservandis tuendisque praesidiis in quibus conquiescere oportet securitatem et salutem humanae societatis. Curandum est igitur, ut luctuosis hisce Ecclesiae temporibus Marialis Rosarii sanctissima consuetudo studiose pieque servetur eo praecipue quod hujusmodi preces cum ita sint compositae ut omnia ex ordine salutis nostrae mysteria recolant, maxime sunt ad fovendum pietatis spiritum comparatae.

Et ad Italiam quod attinet, potentissimae Virginis praesidium maxime nunc per Rosarii preces implorare necesse est, quum nobis adsit potius, quam impendeat, nec opinata calamitas. Asiana enim lucis terminos, quos natura posuisse videbatur, Deo volente, praetervecta, portus Gallici sinus celeberrimos, ac finitimas exinde Italiae regiones pervasit. Ad Mariam igitur confugiendum est, ad eam, quam jure meritoque salutariferam, opiferam, sospitatricem appellat Ecclesia, ut volens propitia opem acceptissimis sibi precibus imploratam afferat, impuramque luem a nobis longe depellat.

Quapropter adventante jam mense Octobri, quo mense sacra solemnia Mariae Virginis a Rosario in orbe catholico aguntur, omnia ea, quae praeterito anno praecepimus, hoc anno iterum praecipere statuimus. Decernimus itaque et mandamus, ut a prima die Octobris ad secundam consequentis Novembris in omnibus curialibus templis, sacrariisve publicis Deiparae dicatis, aut in aliis etiam arbitrio Ordinarii eligendis, quinque saltem Rosarii decades, adjectis Litaniis, quotidie recitentur: quod si mane fiat, sacrum inter preces peragatur; si pomeridianis horis, Sacramentum augustum ad adorandum proponatur, deinde qui intersunt rite lustrentur.

Optamus autem, ut Sodalitates Sanctissimi Rosarii solemnem pompam, ubicunque per civiles leges id sinitur, vaticum publicae religionis causa ducant.

Ut vero christianae pietati caelestes Ecclesiae thesauri recludantur, Indulgentias singulas, quas superiore anno largiti sumus, renovamus. Omnibus videlicet qui statis diebus publicae Rosarii recitationi interfuerint, et ad mentem Nostram oraverint, et his pariter qui legitima causa impediti privatim haec egerint, septem annorum itemque septem quadragenarum apud Deum indulgentiam singulis vicibus concedimus. Eis vero qui supra dicto tempore decies saltem vel publice in templis, vel justis de causis inter domesticos parietes eadem peregerint, et criminum confessione expiati sancta de altari libaverint, plenariam admissorum veniam de Ecclesiae thesauro impertimus. Plenissimam hanc admissorum veniam et poenarum remissionem his omnibus etiam largimur, qui vel ipso beatae Virginis Rosario die festo, vel quolibet ex octo insequentibus, animi sordes eluerint et divina convivium sancte celebraverint, et pariter ad mentem Nostram in aliqua sacra aede Deo et sanctissimae ejus Matri supplicaverint.

Iis denique consultum volentes qui ruri vivunt et agri cultione, praecipue octobri mense, distinentur, concedimus ut singula, quae supra decrevimus, cum sacris etiam indulgentiis octobri mense lucrandis, ad insequentem vel novembris vel decembris menses, prudenti Ordinariorum arbitrio differri valeant.

Non dubitamus, Venerabiles Fratres, quin curis hisce Nostris uberes et copiosi fructus respondeant, praesertim si quae Nos plantamus, et vestra sollicitudo rigaverit, iis Deus gratiarum suarum largitione, de caelo afferat incrementum. Pro certo quidem habemus populum christianum futurum dicto audientem Apostolicae auctoritati Nostrae eo fidei et pietatis fervore, cujus praeterito anno amplissimum dedit documentum, Caelestis autem Patrona per Rosarii preces invocata adsit propitia, efficiatque, ut sublatis opinionum dissidiis et re christiana in universis orbis terrarum partibus restituta, optatam Ecclesiae tranquillitatem a Deo impetremus. Cujus auspiciem beneficii, Vobis et Clero vestro, et

populis vestrae curae concreditis Apostolicam Benedictionem peramanter impertimus.

Datum Romae apud S. Petrum die XXX Augusti MDCCCLXXXIV, Pontificatus Nostri Anno Septimo.

LEO PP. XIII.

DECREE OF THE CONGREGATION OF RITES (DATED 20TH OF AUGUST, 1885,) PRESCRIBING THE RECITATION OF THE ROSARY AND LITANY OF LORETTO EVERY DAY IN THE MONTH OF OCTOBER IN THIS AND SUCCEEDING YEARS.

SUMMARY.

Devotions and Indulgences same as in former years. The arrangements also the same. The Ordinary may defer till November or December the performance of these devotions in favour of country people who cannot attend in October.

DECRETUM URBIS ET ORBIS.

Inter plurimos Apostolicae vigilantiae actus, quibus Sanctissimus Dominus Noster LEO PP. XIII., ab inito Summi Pontificatus numero, Ecclesiae ac universae societati, Deo adjuvante, optatae tranquillitati restituendis consulere satagit: luce clarius nitet Encyclica Epistola *Supremi Apostolatus*, 1 Septembris MDCCCLXXXIII., de celebrando toto mense Octobri ejus anni gloriosae Dei Matris Mariae sacratissimo Rosario. Quod sane speciali Dei providentia praecipue institutum est ad potentissimum caeli Reginae praesens auxilium adversus christiani nominis hostes exorandum, ad tuendam fidei integritatem in dominico grege, animasque divini sanguinis pretio redemptas e sempiternae perditionis tramite eripiendas. Tum vero lactissimi christianae pietatis et fiducia in caelesti Mariae Virginis patrocinio fructus in omni loco catholici orbis ex tam salutari opere eo mense collecti tum adhuc insidentes calamitates causa fuerunt, ut subsequente anno MDCCCLXXXIV., die 30 Augusti, aliae accesserint Apostolicae litterae *Superiore anno*, cum iisdem hortationibus et praeceptionibus

pro adventante eo mense Octobri pari solemnitate ritus ac pietatis fervore in beatissimae Virginis Mariae a Rosario honorem dedicando; eo quod praecipuus fructus boni operis et arrha consequutur victoriae sit in inceptis perseverantia. Hisce autem inhaerens idem Sanctissimus Dominus, cum hinc nos hactenus mala multa undique perturbent, inde vero permanent et florescat in christiano populo ea fides, quae per caritatem operatur, et veneratio ac fiducia in amantissimam Dei Genitricem propemodum immensa; eo impensiori studio et alacritate nunc ubique perseverandum vult unanimiter in oratione cum Maria Matre Jesu. Certam enim in spem erigitur fore ut ipsa, quae sola cunctas haereses interemit in universo mundo, nostris [accedentibus] dignis poenitentiae fructibus, flectat denique iram vindicem divinae justitiae incolumitatemque adducat et pacem.

Quapropter Sanctitas Sua quaecumque duobus praeteritis annis constituit de mense quo solemnia celebrantur beatae Virginis Mariae a Rosario, hoc pariter anno, et annis porro sequentibus praecipit et statuit quoadusque rerum Ecclesiae rerumque publicarum tristissima haec perdurent adjuncta, ac de restituta Pontifici Maximo plena libertate Deo referre gratias Ecclesiae datum non sit. Decernit itaque et mandat ut quolibet anno a prima die Octobris ad secundam sequentis Novembris, in omnibus catholici orbis parochialibus templis, et in cunctis publicis oratoriis Deiparae dicatis, aut in aliis etiam arbitrio Ordinarii eligendis, quinque saltem Mariani Rosarii decades cum Litaniis Lauretanis quotidie recitentur: quod si mane fiat, Missa inter preces celebretur, si a meridie sacrosanctum Eucharistiae Sacramentum adorationi proponatur, deinde fideles rite lustrentur. Optat quoque ut a Sodalitatibus sacratissimi Rosarii religiosae pompae, ubi id per civiles leges licet, publice ducantur.

Indulgentias singulas, alias concessas, renovando, omnibus qui statis diebus publicae Rosarii recitationi interfuerint, et ad mentem ejusdem Sanctitatis Suae oraverint, et his pariter qui legitima causa impediti privatim haec egerint, septem annorum ac septem quadragenarum apud Deum Indulgentiam singulis vicibus concedit. Eis autem qui supradicto tempore decies saltem vel publice in templis, vel legitime

impediti, privatim eadem peregerint, sacramentali confessione expiatis et sacra synaxi refectis, plenariam admissorum Indulgentiam de Ecclesiae thesauro impertit. Plenissimam hanc culparum veniam et poenarum remissionem his omnibus pariter largitur, qui vel ipso die festo beatae Virginis a Rosario, vel quolibet ex octo insequentibus diebus, sacramenta, ut supra, pereceperint, et in aliqua sacra aede juxta Suam mentem Deo ejusque Sanctissimae Matri supplicaverint.

Qua de re et illis consulens fidelibus qui ruri viventes agriculture praecepue Octobri mense distinentur, Sanctitas Sua concedit ut singula superius disposita, cum sacris etiam Indulgentiis, eorum in locis, ad insequentes vel Novembris vel Decembris menses, prudenti Ordinariorum arbitrio, differri valeant.

De hisce vero omnibus et singulis Sanctissimus Dominus Noster per Sacram Rituum Congregationem praesens edidit decretum, et ad omnes locorum Ordinarios pro fidei executione transmitti mandavit. Die 20 Augusti, 1885.

D. CARDINALIS BARTOLINIUS, S. R. C., *Praefectus*.

L. ✠ S.

LAURENTIUS SALVATI, S. R. C., *Secretarius*.

DECREE OF THE CONGREGATION OF RITES (DATED 26th OF AUGUST, 1886,) REGARDING THE OCTOBER DEVOTIONS.

SUMMARY.

The special October devotions the same as in former years. The Indulgences also the same.

In Churches or Oratories which are too poor to provide a Monstrance for the Solemn Exposition and Benediction, the Ordinary may allow the substitution of the Ciborium. In this case the Pyxis or Ciborium is to be exposed within the open tabernacle during the Rosary and Litany, and Benediction with the Ciborium is to be given at the end of the devotions.

DECRETUM URBIS ET ORBIS.

Post editas a Sanctissimo Domino Nostro Leone Papa XIII. Encyclicas Litteras *Supremi Apostolatus*, 1 Septembris

MDCCCLXXXIII, et *Superiore anno*, 30 Augusti MDCCCLXXXIV, de propagando et celebrando Beatissimae Dei Genitricis Mariae Rosario, Sacra Rituum Congregatio per Decretum diei 20 Augusti praeteriti anni MDCCCLXXXV, ipso Summo Pontifice annuente et imperante, statuit ut quoadusque tristissima perdurent adiuncta, in quibus versatur Catholica Ecclesia, ac de restituta Pontifici Maximo plena libertate Deo referre gratias datum non sit, in omnibus Catholici Orbis Cathedralibus et Parochialibus templis, et in cunctis templis ac publicis Oratoriis Beatae Mariae Virgini dicatis, aut in aliis etiam arbitrio Ordinariorum designandis, Mariale Rosarium cum Litanis Lauretanis per totum mensem Octobrem quotidie recitetur. Iamvero praesenti anno, qui Iubilaei thesauro ditatur, idem Sanctissimus Dominus Noster exoptans ut quo magis ingruunt publicae et privatae calamitates, eo firmiori fiducia et proposito auxilium ac remedium quaeratur, et per Mariam quaeratur a Divina Misericordia, quae totum nos habere voluit per Mariam; per hoc Sacrae eiusdem Congregationis Decretum Reverendissimos locorum Ordinarios adhortatur, ut juxta memoratas Apostolicas Litteras et Decreta, eorumque tenore in omnibus servato, Christifideles ad huiusmodi pietatis exercitium, Deiparae maxime acceptum, atque gratiarum equidem foecundum, necnon ad Sacramentorum aliorumque salutarium operum frequentiam, omni sollicitudine advocare et alicere studeant.

Confirmando iterum Sanctitas Sua in omnibus sacras indulgentias ac privilegia quae in praecitato Decreto concessa sunt indulgere insuper dignata est, ut in iis templis, seu Oratoriis, ubi ob eorum paupertatem, Expositio cum Sanctissimo Eucharistiae Sacramento, ad tramitem Decreti ipsius, solemni modo, nempe per Ostensorium, fieri haud valeat, eadem per modum exceptionis peragi possit, prudenti iudicio Ordinarii, cum Sacra Pyxide: aperiendo scilicet ab initio ostiolum ciborii, et cum ea populum in fine benedicendo. Die 26 Augusti 1886.

D. Card. BARTOLINIUS, S. R. C., *Praefectus*.

L. ✠ S.

LAURENTIUS SALVATI, S. R. C., *Secretarius*.

DECREE OF THE CONGREGATION OF RITES REGARDING THE OCTOBER DEVOTIONS, 1887.

SUMMARY.

1. The October Devotions for this year will be the same as those of 1886.
2. The same Indulgences also are granted.
3. The Feast of the Rosary is raised to the rite of a double of the second class, for the whole Church.

DECRETUM URBIS ET ORBIS.

Inter densas errorum et scelerum tenebras tamquam spes certa orituræ salutis iam fulget excitata ac reviviscens in christianis gentibus per sacri Rosarii frequentiam erga magnam Dei Parentem pietas et fiducia, quæ omni ævo Ecclesiæ ac societati præsidium fuit potentissimum ad terrenorum infernorumque hostium vires conterendas. Verbum Sanctissimi Domini Nostri Leonis Papæ XIII. per Eius Apostolicas Litteras, præsertim *Supremi Apostolatus Officio* 1 Septembris, MDCCCLXXXIII, ad cunctas mundi regiones prolatum, divini seminis instar cadens in terram bonam, ubique *fecit fructum centuplum*, quamvis alibi, præ nimia cordium duritie, cadens *super petrosa et in spinis*, hactenus conculcatum fuerit et suffocatum. Ubique terrarum fideles suis coadunati pastoribus Rosarii festa mensemque in lætitia et fervore celebrantes, a solis ortu ad occasum, pro errantium salute, pro Ecclesiæ et societatis prementibus calamitatibus Mariam invocarunt, quæ “sicut lumen indeficiens radios evibrans misericordiæ suæ, omnibus elementissimam præbere consuevit, omnium necessitates amplissimo quodam miseratur affectu (*S. Thomas Episcopus Valentin.*).” Neque spes confundit obtinendi victoriam ex eo maxime, quod per admirabilem Marialis Rosarii orandi ritum splendidissimus Deo exhibetur religionis cultus et plena fidei christianæ confessio. Rosarium enim cum omnia Christi Virginisque Matris mysteria suo circuitu involvat, fidem totam complectitur. Jamvero *hæc est victoria quæ vincit mundum, fides nostra* (1 Jo. v.)

Beatissimus Pater, de his vehementer lætatus, eo enixius

omnes Ecclesiae Pastores et universos Christifideles hortatur ferventiori pietate et fiducia perseverare in inceptis, ab augustissima Regina pacis postulantes, ut qua gratia apud Deum pollet, praesentium malorum horrendam tempestatem, everso satanae imperio, depellat, triumphatisque religionis hostibus, exagitata Petri mysticam navem optatae tranquillitati restituat. Ad haec, quaecumque superioribus annis, ac postremo per decretum Sacrorum Rituum Congregationis 26 Augusti MDCCCLXXXVI. de mense Octobri caelesti Reginae a Rosario dicando, decrevit, indulgit et jussit, iterum decernit, praecipit et concedit.

Cum vero festus dies solemnitatis sacratissimi Rosarii singulari iam populorum honore et cultu agatur, qui cultus refertur ad mysteria cuncta vitae passionis et gloriae Jesu Christi redemptoris nostri, ejusque intemeratae Matris; ad hanc succrescentem pietatem magis fovendam, et ad publicae venerationis incrementum, quod jam pluribus particularibus Ecclesiis concessit, solemnitatem praedictam et officium Deiparae a Rosario primae Octobris Dominicae adsignatum, ecclesiastico ritu duplici secundae classis in universa Ecclesia in posterum celebrari mandavit, ita ut non possit transferri ad alium diem, nisi occurrente officio potioris ritus: servatis Rubricis. Contrariis non obstantibus quibuscumque.

De hisce autem praesens praefatae Sacrorum Rituum Congregationis Decretum expediri jussit. Die 11 Septembris anni MDCCCLXXXVII., Sanctissimo Mariae Nomini sacra.

D. Cardinalis BARTOLINIUS, *S.R.C., Praefectus.*

L ✠ S.

LAURENTIUS SALVATI, *S.R.C., Secretarius.*

CORRESPONDENCE.

NATIONALIZATION OF THE LAND.

REV. SIR.—In the following letter I propose to give a brief exposition of the above theory, and to touch upon some of the social and moral questions connected with it. Many popular misconceptions exist with regard to the essence of the theory and these I shall endeavour

to remove. I believe that they have arisen partly from the fact that Mr. George in *Progress and Poverty* abstains too much from practical and concrete illustrations.

The theory of land nationalization is summed up in Mr. George's formula: "We must make the land common property." There is nothing in the terms of this formula to shock received notions regarding justice and property. Land, like other goods, is admittedly capable of transfer and alienation. The land belonging to A to-day may to-morrow by legitimate transfer belong to B. The corporation aggregate called the State may be justly the owner of landed property. Hence there is nothing obviously objectionable in saying we must by legitimate means vest the land of the country in the State.

Here arises the question of prudence. Would it be prudent to invest the State with the undivided ownership of land? One general answer I think cannot be given to this question. If a country is badly governed, if there is no confidence in the administrators of public affairs, surely it would be madness to entrust the State with the sole ownership and administration of land. If the State is represented by a despot who may say with truth, like Louis XIV., *L'etat c'est moi*, it would be clearly unwise to make it the unlimited owner of the land of the country. As a preliminary therefore to entertaining for a moment the idea of nationalization of the land it would be necessary to be able to answer affirmatively the question: Is the government a good one, and does it satisfy the legitimate wishes of the people? The inability to answer this question in the affirmative was no doubt one among the many reasons which hindered the leaders of Irish politics from giving any countenance to Mr. George's theory.

When, however, a government is good, constitutional, and representative of popular wishes and ideas, it may be fairly debated whether it is prudent or not to entrust the State with the sole ownership and management of land. The best way of arriving at a solution on this point seems to be to suppose the end achieved by just means and to endeavour to gauge the results that flow from its achievement. To forecast these results with anything like accuracy it would be necessary to prepare for the purpose special statistical returns. The ordinary financial accounts, however, will serve to illustrate the theory and workings of land nationalization.

Schedule A of the Income Tax represents the annual income from landed property. In the financial year 1884-1885 (United Kingdom) the net amount assessed under this schedule was £175,636,172. If

the land were nationalized this sum would be paid into the treasury. The effect on the Budget would be startling. The estimated Revenue for 1887-88 is £88,135,000. In the hypothesis of nationalization of the land the Chancellor of the Exchequer would probably strike out the following items in this sum, namely :—

Land Tax	...	...	...	£1,065,000
House Duty	...	...	...	1,920,000
Income Tax	...	...	...	14,340,000
				<hr/>
				£17,325,000

Allowing for this reduction the estimated Revenue 1887-88 would then be

From Land	...	...	...	£175,636,172
From other sources mentioned in Budget				70,810,000

Total Revenue of United Kingdom	£246,446,172
---------------------------------	--------------

The total Revenue therefore as compared with the current estimates for the present financial year would show an increase of £158,311,172 a sum which would enable the Chancellor of the Exchequer to pay off the National debt in less than six years.

It is not so easy to estimate the effect of nationalization of the land in the expenditure column of the Budget. It may, however, I think, be assumed that the expense of collecting the new land revenue would not be greater than that of collecting the land tax, house duty and income tax, all which taxes we suppose to be abolished. Let us then assume the expenditure column of the late Budget to remain unchanged. We shall have—

Total Revenue	...	...	...	£246,446,172
Total Expenditure	...	...	...	87,846,294
				<hr/>
Surplus	...	...	...	£158,599,878

There are two ways of treating this surplus. It may be applied to the reduction of the National Debt, or it may be diminished by suspending the revenue from customs and excise. The surplus thus reduced will be £113,707,878, a sum which, if no better means of using it presents itself, may be applied to the reclamation of the waste lands of the United Kingdom.

The financial condition which I have just sketched realises the boon of Free Trade, which has hitherto existed only in the speculations of economists, and gets rid of the justly obnoxious income tax.

As a further illustration of the effects of land nationalization

we can consider the system with reference to the Irish Budget, sketched in the Home Rule Bill of 1886 :

MR. GLADSTONE'S IRISH BUDGET.

<i>Revenue.</i>			
Customs	...	...	£1,880,000
Excise	...	...	4,300,000
Stamps	...	...	600,000
Income Tax	...	...	550,000
Non-Tax Revenue, including Post Office			1,020,000
			£8,350,000
<i>Expenditure.</i>			
National Debt Charge	...	...	£1,466,000
Army and Navy Expenses	...	...	1,666,000
Proportion of Civil Charges	...	...	110,000
Total tribute to England			£3,242,000
Constabulary Expenses	...	...	£1,000,000
Other Civil Charges	...	...	2,510,000
Collection of Revenue	...	...	834,300
Contribution to Sinking Fund	...	...	360,000
Total Expenditure			£7,946,000
Surplus	...	...	404,000
			£8,350,000

Let us now suppose nationalization. The following effects will follow : The Income Tax returns, 1884-85, represent the landed property of Ireland at £12,934,494 (net) annual value. This sum added to the revenue, and income tax being expunged, we have the following receipts :—

From Land	...	...	£12,934,494
From other sources as above	...	...	7,800,000

Total Revenue of Ireland ... £20,734,494

Assuming the expenditure column to remain unchanged, we have an annual surplus of £12,788,494.

An examination of the foregoing figures will clearly show that they represent for the United Kingdom or for Ireland a most flourishing state of the Treasury. Can such a state be brought

about? In other words, is it possible to invest the State with the ownership of all land?

Mr. George answers—Yes. But unfortunately he bases his answer on two propositions, both of which I consider false. The first proposition is:

All private property in land is unjust.

The second is:

The land of a country belongs to the people of the country.

Whether an affirmative answer to the question proposed can be based upon sounder reasons, it is beyond the scope of the present letter to enquire.

ECONOMIST.

ON THE ORAL SYSTEM OF TEACHING THE DEAF AND DUMB.

REV. SIR.—In concluding my observations on the oral system of teaching the deaf and dumb in the last number of the *I. E. RECORD*, I intimated, that I would return to the subject chiefly for the purpose of noticing the popularity of the system, and its extensive adoption as furnishing an argument in favour of its merits.

It is, indeed, popular to a wide extent, but I submit, with all confidence, that mere popularity unsustained by corresponding results is the flimsiest recommendations in favour of any system of a practical character, or having practical pretensions.

Mere popularity does not belong in any way to the domain of argument. It is simply a sentiment responding to a sentiment, deceptive for a time, and all the more so when fanned by benevolent aspirations for the alleviation of a misery afflicting our common humanity. Cicero in designating it as “*aura popularis*” and “*ventus popularis*,” simply announced a fact, with which the world had been familiar from the beginning, as it has been ever since, that mere popularity is but as the passing breeze, the fleeting wind that blows, unless it be backed by experience, and proved by practical results.

No doubt the oral system is popular, and why should it it not? Who would not hail with welcome the prospect of rescuing so many of our fellow mortals from the state of isolation, to which their privations condemn them, and of opening to them the door of admission to the human family at large? The idea of making the deaf to hear and the dumb to speak is captivating in the highest degree, especially when caught up and entertained in all the significance of the terms of its announcement, which would mean lifting them

up to a level, or nearly so, with the rest of mankind, and according to this idea the announcement was in itself sufficient to prompt a trial, and enlist the most earnest zeal, and the most energetic endeavours to confer so great a benefit on so large a class, whose misery had engaged the deepest sympathy. The trial once commenced, and found to have somewhat succeeded in certain special instances, led to the persuasion, that it could be made generally applicable. Imitation followed example, and it became in course of time a popular reproach, that any institution for the deaf and dumb should not adopt a system heralded by so much popular favour. But all this—is it a security against disappointment? Were we to think so, we should be very slightly acquainted with history, and the records it presents of experiments in every field of labour, in which the human mind has exerted its powers of invention and innovation. Philosophy itself starts from a principle one and universal, in which all its votaries agree, and presents a problem, in the solution of which they all profess to embark; but how many systems ancient and modern has not the world beheld differing from each other, each of which had its day, enjoying popular consideration for a time, and then passing away to make room for new theories? In a similar way science begins with postulates, that is to say, self-evident propositions; nevertheless, into what divergences and antagonisms do not men of science drift off in their views and speculations?

No, popularity of itself is no test of any system aiming at practical results. It must prove its merits by experience, and this must be the criterion, by which the oral system is to stand or fall. It is in applying this criterion that I cannot be satisfied with it as a system for general application for the reasons I have adduced, at the same time that I cannot but admire the earnest zeal of its advocates, and their indefatigable efforts in its support.

Father Dawson in bringing his criticisms to a close is pleased to contradict categorically the conclusions, with which I ended my paper of February last. In doing so he would appear to forget, that bare contradictions are of no avail against conclusions logically deduced from distinct premises. The premises must be first overthrown before the conclusions can be legitimately assailed. The respected Chaplain of the Boston Spa Institution will, I trust, therefore, pardon me, if with all due deference I must maintain, that the conclusions, at which I arrived, remain good, and retain all their force, notwithstanding the pointed contradictions he is pleased to advance against them.

To come to an end, the question of educating the deaf and dumb presents three distinct systems, the system of methodic signs, the oral system, and the combined system. The oral system, at best, falls short—very short indeed, of covering the whole case of these poor children of affliction. The combined system is generally disapproved of, and even though admissible in principle, the difficulties to be encountered in carrying it out are too formidable to face them; whilst the time-honoured system of systematic signs provides for the entire class so far as they are capable of being relieved in all the phases their unhappy situation presents to our sympathy on their behalf, whilst appealing, at the same time, to the benevolence of a generous public for the support of the establishments, that persevere in maintaining it with such signal success attested by the happy results they continue to produce.

THE AUTHOR OF "CLAIMS OF THE DEAF-MUTE TO BE
ADMITTED TO THE SACRAMENTS."

NOTICES OF BOOKS.

INDIFFERENTISM; OR, IS ONE RELIGION AS GOOD AS ANOTHER?

By the Rev. John McLoughlin. London: Burns and Oates, &c. 1887.

THE object of this little book, the author informs us in his Preface, "is to show that all religions are not equally right, that one only can be right, that all the rest must be wrong; and having done this, then to point out which *alone* is right among the multitudinous claimants." Comparing this extensive programme with the comparatively small volume before us, we were at first inclined to doubt that it had been accomplished. But as we read our doubts vanished. Without sacrificing clearness, without making his book a string of bald syllogisms, the author has succeeded in showing in a small volume of little more than two hundred pages, all that in his Preface he proposes to show.

The book consists of two parts, preceded by an introductory chapter. The first part is taken up with a direct refutation of Indifferentism; in the second the "notes" or marks of the true Church are pointed out, their necessity proved, and their non-existence in any sect or religious denomination outside the Catholic Church shown by arguments convincing and irrefragable.

In dealing directly with Indifferentism, Fr. McLoughlin is quite at home. In a calm and judicial manner he explains the nature of the error which he has undertaken to combat, puts the chief arguments of its advocates in the fairest and strongest light, and then with merciless logic tears them to shreds, and piles argument on argument to prove that this much-vaunted philosophico-religious system contradicts right reason as well as the express teaching of Sacred Scripture. Arguing against Indifferentism from the commission to teach all nations given by Christ to his Apostles, and from the fact, that in fulfilling that commission, the Apostles had to suffer persecution and even death, he asks—

“But how reconcile the love He (Christ) bore them (the Apostles), and His clear foreknowledge of their life-long martyrdom, with the statement that He is quite indifferent what faith people hold, provided they act consistently with it? Would it not have been cruel on his part thus to doom His special servants, His dearest friends, to those lives of suffering and deaths of shame, if it was a matter of no consequence to Him whether His people worshipped Him according to this creed or that? If men by acting consistently with whatever idea of religion they already held, became sufficiently acceptable to Him, why not leave them as they were, and save the Apostles from such trials in life, and such torments in death?”

From the history of the conversion of Cornelius, the Centurion, another overwhelming proof of the untenableness of the position of the Indifferentists is drawn. Having briefly narrated this remarkable history, he says:—

“Now, here the advocates of Indifferentism are on the horns of a dilemma. *One* of two conclusions they are forced to draw—namely, either God sends His Apostles, and even His Angels, on useless errands, or it cannot be a matter of indifference to Him what religion people profess. If Cornelius knew God, if he feared Him, if he loved Him—if he loved Him, too, in His poor by relieving those who were in distress—if he spent long hours in prayer, if his life was such that he was styled in inspired language a ‘just man,’ why should God send an angel from heaven to him, or why should He send St. Peter from Joppe to Cesarea to bring to him the light of the new Gospel, to administer to him the Sacrament of Baptism, and to receive him and his family into the one true fold.” (Page 48).

In the second part, which treats of the marks of the true Church, there was less room for originality. Yet, even here, Fr. McLoughlin has succeeded in giving to the subject a freshness, which must render this portion of his work interesting to all, and at the same time a simplicity and clearness which brings a somewhat recondite subject within the mental range of his less-instructed readers.

We heartily wish this little book a wide circulation. It has every condition necessary to render a book popular. Its subject is one of absorbing interest for all Christians; that subject is treated in a pleasing and intelligible style; the book is not too long, and, lastly, it is a marvel of cheapness.

D. O’L.

MAYNOOTH COLLEGE CALENDAR. Dublin: Browne & Nolan.

HALF-AN-HOUR is always agreeably spent by past students in looking through the latest Calendar of the College in which they were educated. The Calendar represents the College as it is, and one naturally likes to compare it with what it was in his time, perhaps many years ago.

I have looked through the Maynooth Calendar for the year 1887-8 with mingled feelings of regret and pleasure. When I turned to the list of the College staff I was saddened to miss so many names held in highest respect by old students and long identified with the place; but it is a compensation to note that the present staff is a strong one, and considerably increased in number since my days. The number of Superiors is strengthened by the addition of two Spiritual Fathers who help in the spiritual instruction and training of the students; the Professor of English is relieved from the French Class in order to devote himself exclusively to the teaching of English, and Professors of Modern Languages, Elocution and Sacred Eloquence have been added.

The Programme of Studies too is, I note with great satisfaction, considerably changed for the better. Each divinity student has now thirteen or fourteen classes of Theology every week for four years, besides the usual course of Scripture increased by a special class of "Introduction to Scripture" for 1st year's Theologians, a complete course of Canon Law, and (what I regard as a highly important addition) a weekly class for methodical instruction in the theory and practice of Pastoral Preaching in its various forms.

Old students, like myself, will be gratified to see that the course of English is now spread over the whole seven or eight years. Beginning with the Rhetoricians who have four hours a week for the class of English Language and Literature, the subject is also taught in 1st and 2nd year's Philosophy and then taken up by the Theologians who turn to practical account their knowledge of composition by preparing a sermon every month for the Professor of Sacred Eloquence. These and other changes which I noted are decided improvements.

Turning to the College Roll, it is cheering to see that, in these years of depression, Maynooth shows no sign of decreasing numbers. Maynooth of the present year has a larger number of students attending its halls than even the Maynooth of government-endowment days. The Calendar mentions 524 as the number of students in residence this year. *Prosperere procedere* is the earnest wish of an old student.

P. P.

THE THRONE OF THE FISHERMAN BUILT BY THE CARPENTER'S SON. THE ROOT, THE BOND, AND THE CROWN OF CHRISTENDOM. By Thomas W. Allies. London: Burns & Oates.

Treatises on the Primacy of St. Peter are by no means few and far between. Seasoned theologians, withered and stained with the dust of the schools have handled the subject very carefully. They have brought to bear on it the result of their life-long labours in the field of Christian dogma, and with all the powers of a mind fully matured and enriched with dogmatic lore, they have set forth the true doctrine of the Church on this most important subject and illustrated and proved that doctrine by most convincing arguments drawn from the sacred text, from reason and from history. Nor is the handling of this subject confined to theologians who deal with such topics *ex professo*. Many a 'prentice hand has been tried on it, and it has afforded rich matter for tracts and pamphlets, sermons and lectures. And this is well. It is well to spread the light and the truth though the mode of treatment be not always by the rigid method of those who handle a subject scientifically, and give first an explanation of their doctrine, then a concise statement of same, followed by proofs from Scripture and the Fathers, together with objections and other solutions. Many of the greatest and most important truths of a science can be divested of their technicalities and presented to the ordinary reader in an easily intelligible fashion. This is true of most of the dogmas of the Christian religion. They can be popularised and presented to the ordinary reader in the clearest light and the simplest language. Such style of treatment is often denounced as superficial and occasionally it deserve to be so denounced.

Mr. Allies' work on the *Throne of the Fisherman* must not be classed with the popular expositions or ephemeral works on the Primacy of St. Peter. Though a most readable book it is by no means light reading. The author was too serious and too much in earnest for that; his object was to place before all English readers the Divine Institution of the Primacy and the consequences flowing therefrom. He traces the supremacy of the successor of St. Peter from the words spoken by our Saviour to the Prince of the Apostles, wherein on two occasions before His passion and in another after His resurrection He gave him the keys of the kingdom of heaven, gave him a commission to feed His lambs, to feed His sheep, and the whole Christian flock. "And never" (as Mr. Allies says) "have words been spoken on earth which have had a greater and more continuous

efficacy, through the eighteen centuries and a half they have never been silent; they have never ceased to work upon the hearts of men, and their working has not diminished but increased with each succeeding age.

Mr. Allies naturally places as first factor in the Papal Supremacy its divine institution; as the second factor its recognition by the Church our divine Saviour founded, and as its third factor the continual protection Divine Providence has exercised over it during the many changes of eighteen centuries, and he remarks very sensibly that this recognition by the Church does not create the Primacy but bears witness to it as already created just as all the General Councils of the eighteen centuries have borne witness to its existence. To prove that the Church in the first four centuries recognised the supremacy of the See of Rome, Mr. Allies appeals most effectively to the Council of Chalcedon. If there be, then, any voice which the student of the ancient church may recognise as carrying with it the collected testimony of the first four-hundred years it is the voice of the Council of Chalcedon. This Council not only spoke of St. Peter as the rock and foundation of the Catholic Church and the basis of the orthodox faith, but addressed Pope Leo, the then reigning Pontiff, as the "very person entrusted by the Saviour with the guardianship of the vine," "whose anxiety is to preserve in unity the body of the Church," and "who presided over them as a head over its members." Thus the great General Council acknowledged St. Leo as St. Peter's successor, invested with his supremacy, and bearing all the obligations attached to that supremacy, and this view of the office it is, that is in practice now after a lapse of fourteen hundred years.

In addition to the collective testimony of the Book of the Council of Chalcedon, we have to the same effect, the testimony of numberless Greek and Latin Fathers, who wrote during the first four centuries of the Church. They bear unequivocal evidence to the *Throne of the Fisherman built by the Carpenter's Son*, by which is meant "the continuous and ever increasing influence and work of St. Peter's See, as the instrument by which the Divine kingdom is begun, propagated and maintained."

The present work covers the history of the Church so far as the subject is concerned, down to the pontificate of Leo the Great, and the writer promises to give similar, but distinct pictures, of the action of the Holy See, from the pontificate of St. Leo to the present pontificate of his illustrious and worthy successor Leo XIII. This is a very laborious undertaking, but enthusiasm and love of truth will

lighten and sweeten the labour. We wish the gifted author success, and that the undertaking may equal what he has already achieved; we can scarcely expect that it will surpass it. In a short notice like this it is impossible to do anything like justice to a great work like *The Throne of the Fisherman*. To appreciate it at its full worth it must be read slowly and carefully, and the trouble thus taken will be fully repaid by the revival of latent or long lost information, and by seeing in a new light, the connection and bearing of important events in the history of the early Church.

For many readers the chapter at the end of the work treating of Patristic Literature and St. Leo the Great will have most charms. We sincerely hope that a kind Providence will give time and strength to so earnest a worker for the completion of his great labour.

A. B.

LEGENDS AND RECORDS OF THE CHURCH AND EMPIRE. By Aubrey de Vere. London: Kegan Paul, Trench & Co., 1887.

This latest work from the pen of Mr. de Vere is a direct negative to the popular assumption that the inventive or poetic faculty wanes with years, though the re-assuring powers may be strengthened. For here in this work, we have a valuable preface, which takes a large sweeping view of the progress of civilisation, and the effect of the Church's ministry in combining races in one common sacred pursuit; and then a series of poetic legends, or perhaps, we should rather say, poetised records, of Church and Empire, told with all that consummate skill in rhyme and metre, of which Mr. de Vere is an acknowledged master. It is, however, the least merit of these poems that they present, in an agreeable form, historical events, which in the great science of the philosophy of history, are of supreme importance; but we must add, that Mr. de Vere lifts into the higher world of pure poetry events which we have been accustomed to see in the broad light of recorded facts, and not through the mists of legends which claim rather the attention of the fancy, than the homage of our faith. The *Legends of the Saxon Saints*, and the *Legends of St. Patrick*, dealt almost exclusively with these beautiful episodes, which were allegorical rather than actual; and in which half the charm consisted in the suspense in which they placed us, as to whether we should refuse our intellectual assent to events whose beauty and whose mystery claimed our tenderest admiration and sympathy. In passing therefore from pure legend to history, Mr. de Vere has taken a bold

and forward step; and without actually dramatising his historical events he has brought them before us in very clear melodious language and given them a higher meaning than history does by associating them in a great hidden design to connect what was best in Paganism with the purity and sublimity of Christianity. This is most observable in *Dionysius the Areopagite*, where we witness the blending of Greek culture with Christian morality, and see how the mind of man passes from mysticism of the East to the learning of Athens, and thence to the faith of Rome. In the beautiful stories of SS. Thecla, Dorothea, and Pancratius, we witness the struggle between Roman Paganism and Christianity, and the victory of the latter by the passive suffering of its members; and in *Constantine at Thrace*, and *Constantine at Constantinople*, and in the closing ode, *The Coronation of Charlemagne*, we see the final glory, which made Europe one vast spiritual Empire, under the protection of one vast material Empire, built by the valour of northern barbarians out of what was best and most lasting in the ruins of ancient Rome. That all this forms matter for history and historical novels we know well; that it forms material for rich, sweet poetry we would hardly suspect, if we had not read this book, where all these sublime and tragic events are told in stately verse which gives them a new aspect of sublimity; and yet so great is the influence of one strong personality, we think most readers will turn first, as we did, to the two poems entitled: *St. Jerome's Letter*, and the *Death of St. Jerome*, and they will not be disappointed. The rugged prose of the mighty Saint of Bethlehem, is translated into the most beautiful and harmonious poetry; and the death of the saint, whose whole character was, as he says, stormy and barbaric and tempered only by Christianity, is finely and dramatically drawn.

And yet we do not suppose that this work will be popular. It is altogether too high and exalted, both in design and execution, for such a fate. It does not appeal to the tastes of the present generation. Mr. de Vere, in this and in all his other works, has made a mighty sacrifice. With as perfect a command of the language as any of those writers whose alliterative jingle makes them momentarily popular, and with as true and deep a poetic sense as Wordsworth, the master of modern poets, and his own intimate friend, Mr. de Vere has chosen to pass by subjects congenial to the pagan spirit of our age, and to become what he truly is—a great Christian poet—the great Christian poet of our century. But neither Christian poetry, nor Christian painting nor Christian art of any kind is just now acceptable. An artist, who to-day would produce a Madonna or a St. Catherine with inspiration

equal to that of Raphaelle might hang it in his studio for ever, and never be asked the price. And the poet who adopts Christian subjects, no matter how faultless his work may be, must be content with the consciousness of the intrinsic merit of his work, the possible judgment of posterity, and the consolation of the Laureate :—

“ To have the great poetic heart
Is more than all poetic fame.”

Perhaps if a new generation should arise, such as is foreshadowed in the closing lines of the preface of this book, Mr. de Vere will be read when his contemporaries are forgotten. Meanwhile, his poetry will always be treasured by a few, in whom culture and true poetic taste are quite compatible with Christian enthusiasm for the glories of the Church and its saints ; and at least we may hope that many will be stimulated to enter upon these deep studies in the philosophy of the Christian establishment, in which Mr. Allies has been such a successful worker, and which is partially embodied in these graceful epics which we welcome as an important addition to Catholic literature, and very warmly recommend to our readers.

CORNELII TACITI ANNALIUM LIBER I. Edited, with Notes, by Rev. Edward Maguire, Professor of Ancient Classics, St. Patrick's College, Maynooth. Dublin : Browne & Nolan.

ONE occasionally hears men of middle age half complaining that learning is made so easy and pleasant for boys of this generation by reason of the numerous and cheap manuals published by men of high scholarship. We, however, recognize in this abundance of high class school books one of the healthiest and surest signs of the progress made in education in these latter days.

Professor Maguire's *First Book of the Annals of Tacitus* is among the latest contributions to excellent manuals. In a book of 114 pages, 41 are devoted to the Text, and the rest to Notes. In the Notes the Editor explains very clearly the numerous allusions to Roman history, biography, and constitutional practices, the more difficult grammatical constructions are pointed out and discussed, and admirable tact is shown in the phrases selected for accurate and neat translation. The editing of this book is an instance of how much is gained in securing for such work a ripe scholar who is at the same time practically acquainted with the hints and helps most needed by school boys.

We have no doubt that the students of the Senior Grade Intermediate, for whom this book is intended, will wonder that “ Tacitus has been at all times regarded as a difficult book.”

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

NOVEMBER, 1887.

DR. MIVART'S DEFENCE OF THEISM.—V.

IN previous papers I endeavoured to give an outline of the argument by which Catholic truth may be defended against Materialism in what may be called its positive form. It was proved that "there is and must always have been, underneath, behind, and distinct from matter, an agent which ever works in and through matter, and which created it, if it ever was created." It remains for us to inquire what is the nature of this hidden agent.

This inquiry brings us face to face with another and more subtle form of Materialism, which may be called its negative form, and which is known to modern literature as Agnosticism. Of the Agnostics Herbert Spencer is chief. He admits something distinct from matter,—something, of which we can know only that it *is*, and which, accordingly, he terms the Unknowable. Mr. Matthew Arnold, the literary leader of this school of thought, describes the same something as "the Eternal not ourselves that makes for righteousness."

And verily God is the Unknowable, though in a sense very different from that of the Agnostics. Sophar, the Naamathite, most truly says:¹ "He is higher than the heavens, and what wilt thou do? He is deeper than hell, and how wilt thou know? The measure of Him is higher than the earth and broader than the sea." He is the Infinite, with judgments incomprehensible and ways unsearchable,² whose mind no one knows, save only the Spirit that "searcheth all things, even the abysses of God."³

¹ *Job*. xi. 7-9.

VOL. VIII.

² *Rom*. xi. 33, 34.

³ *1 Cor*. ii. 10.

Nor is it surprising that God should be unknowable to us, in the sense explained; for, do we not find everything unknowable? The motion of a finger, the growth of grass, the very clay on which we tread,—what hidden things they are! Scientists use learned terms; but when all has been tried and said, Nature remains an Isis still; we have but learned the approach to the veil. Far be it from us to rail at science: “may she mix with men and prosper.” Let these defend themselves who deny her due, by restricting her investigations to one region of the unknowable, and that region the most bounded and most barren.

Catholic Philosophy maintains, that, as in the region of the finite unknowable we can trace causes from effects, and from the properties of a substance learn something of its nature, so also we may increase our knowledge of the unknowable Infinite. When Robinson Crusoe saw footprints in the sand, he was safe in concluding that their unknowable cause had, at least, a human foot. Many things are unknowable about the author of the *Iliad*, but Mr. Arnold would be the last to deny that the poem is the result of intelligence. In like manner, from all that we see around us, we can learn something of the hidden agent that is ever at work in and through matter, by whose energy everything is produced.

THESIS III.

“The hidden agent is a person.”

By a *person* the Schoolmen mean (1) a *substance* that is (2) *complete* and (3) *intelligent*.¹ I will ask the reader not to press for formal explanations of these terms,—explanations which would carry us too far, and may be found in ordinary handbooks. Let us proceed at once to the proof.

1. The hidden agent is a *substance*. It does not inhere in and arise from something else, like *roundness* or *colour*; for, in that case, the true hidden agent should be the *something else*. It is manifest that there must be some something self-sustaining at the back of all; nor will it do to place the

¹ Abstracting, of course, from what revelation teaches about the Trinity and about the human nature of our Lord.

earth on a tortoise, and the tortoise again on a snake, unless the snake also be supported or self-supporting.

This substance, whatever it is, is *complete*. It is not a *branch* of something else, which rouses it to energy, and is, so to speak, responsible for its acts, as the intellect is part of a man. Or if it be, there is that very "something else" behind, which is itself the real agent in that case, and to which the acts are to be ascribed. There must be some spring to the machine.

The hidden agent is *intelligent*. This will be plain to any one who has mastered the proof of our second Thesis.

There are two ways of accounting for the fair and orderly world. One is the system of Materialistic Evolution;—that everything has been produced by a series of happy accidents, by blind chance. I have already shown that this cannot be; that matter never could create the smallest force, much less build up these wonderful crystals, those intricate organisms, above all, the intellect of man.

The other system supposes a hidden agent. And as the activity of this agent results in a most uniform, though exceedingly diverse and intricate structure, it is manifest that the hidden agent follows certain lines of operation,—that it carries out a pre-conceived plan. We laugh at the learned men of Lagado with their machine for the production of knowledge; but I would as soon believe such a machine capable of producing the *Aeneid*, or that the Last Judgment was painted by snails on the walls of the Sistine Chapel, as be satisfied that the order of the heavens is the result of chance, or that the human body is but the outcome of a million accidents.¹

And even though a certain blind instinct were sufficient to produce the material world, what about the human soul? No force can do anything that is not in its power; and it is not, and never could be, in the power of any being to produce, even by evolution, a being higher than itself. Moreover, the soul is not evolved but specially created, as has been shown. Forms cannot produce substance, nor can dead

¹ See the whole argument in Dr. Mivart's "Genesis of Species."

matter produce life ; and so, too, nothing could have produced a living intelligence, save what is itself an intelligent living thing.

II. Let us call the other side. 1° Mr. Arnold writes :—¹

“ We venture to ask the intelligent reader whether it does not strike him as an objection to our making God a person who thinks and loves, that we have really no experience whatever, not the very slightest, of persons who think and love, except in man and the inferior animals (?) . . . True, we easily and naturally attribute all operations that engage our notice to authors who live and think, like ourselves. We make persons of the sun, wind, love, envy, war, fortune; in some languages every noun is male or female. But this, we know, is figure and personification. Being ourselves alive and thinking, and having sense, we naturally invest things with these our attributes, and imagine all action and operation to proceed as our own proceeds. This is a tendency which in common speech and in poetry, where we do not profess to speak exactly, we cannot well help following, and which we follow lawfully. In the language of common speech and of poetry we speak of the Eternal not ourselves that makes for righteousness, as if he were a person that thinks and loves. Naturally we speak of him so, and there is no objection at all to our doing so.

“ But it is different when we profess to speak exactly, yet make God a person who thinks and loves. We then find what difficulty our being actually acquainted with no person superior to ourselves who think and love brings us into. Some, we know, make their God in the image of the inferior animals. We have had the god Apis, and the god Anubis; but these are extravagances. In general, as God is said to have made man in his own image, the image of God, man has returned the compliment, and has made God as being, outwardly or inwardly, in the image of man . . . We construct a magnified and non-natural man, by dropping out all that in man seems a source of weakness, and heightening to the very utmost all that in man seems a source of strength, such as his thought and love . . . Then between this magnified man and ourselves we put, if we please, angels, who are men etherealised. The objection to the magnified man and to the man etherealised is one and the same: that *we have absolutely no experience whatever of either the one or the other.*”

¹ “ God and the Bible,” p. 14.

I have italicised the last clause, because it supplies the basis of Mr. Arnold's whole argument, and because at best this basis is but of sand. "We have no experience whatever of a God who thinks:" this is the assertion; and the implication is that we should assent to nothing which we do not experience.

Let us first consider the assertion: "We have no experience of a God who thinks." What does it mean? If it is used to signify that *sense* tells us nothing of the divine intelligence, the remark is plainly beside the question; for, with regard to God, sense tells nothing at all, not even that He exists. If the assertion means that *reason* may not conclude from what sense does experience, that the hidden cause of all things is intelligent, then, indeed, we beg to dissent from Mr. Arnold's teaching.

It is painful to have to insist so often on the utter hollowness of this philosophy of experience, which is here assumed by Mr. Arnold as the undisputed basis of his whole fabric of belief. "We have really no experience whatever, not the very slightest, of persons who think and love, except in man and the inferior animals." What then? Shall we acknowledge nothing but what we experience? Have we any experience of *existence* except in ourselves and in the world around us? And yet even Mr. Arnold proclaims that "God *is*, is admitted."¹ Can he mean that we have sense-experience of the existence of God?

Mr. Arnold not only confesses that "God *is*, is admitted," but makes some other remarkable statements.

1) God is "the Eternal not ourselves that makes for righteousness." Now, to borrow Mr. Arnold's own words, "we venture to ask the intelligent reader, whether it does not strike him as an objection, . . . that we have really no experience whatever, not the very slightest," of the eternal, or of the fountain of right, except in man and inferior creatures. If this reason be conclusive to Mr. Arnold that God should not be made a person, does it not equally prove

¹ "God and the Bible," p. 11.

that He should not be made "the Eternal not ourselves that makes for righteousness?"

2) In support of his doctrine of experience Mr. Arnold treats us to some thoughts on the well-known principle of Descartes, *cogito, ergo sum*:—with which thoughts I should not trouble the reader, were it not for the admissions they contain.

"The philosopher [Descartes] omits to tell us what he exactly means by *to be*, *to exist* . . . What *to think* means, we all know . . . [To Descartes] the terms, *I am*, *I exist*, carry an even more clear and well-defined sense than the term, *I think*. But to us they do not. We are obliged to translate them at a venture into something of this kind: 'I feel that I am alive.'"¹

Much might be said of the "light and sweetness" of a mind to which *I am* means, *I feel that I am alive*;—to which the notions of *thought* and of *life* are more clear than that of *being*. Mr. Arnold tells us of the difficulty he had in finding out what *being* means, and how at last light dawned on him from Dr. Curtius' *Principles of Greek Etymology*. There he learned that *being* means *breathing, growing, standing forth*,—means them, that is, in a blunted and shadowy way now, but meant them, at first, in well-defined reality. When the primitive man wished to predicate blackness of a horse, he said: "the horse breathes (is) black." When he got to the use of abstract nouns, his verb still remained the same, he said: "Virtue breathes (is) fair valour growing (being) praiseworthy."²

Mr. Arnold, it seems, had no difficulty about the meaning of *breathes, grows, stands forth*. Suppose he were to tell us what they mean, I wonder could he do so without using or implying the notion contained under the verb *to be*.

3) See, moreover: "God is, is admitted." *Is* may be translated—"at a venture"—"*feels that he is alive*;" therefore God lives and feels. *Is*, is "not more clear than thinks;" but "He is, is admitted;" whereas we have really no experience whatever, not the very slightest, "that he thinks or loves." What lucidity!

¹ "God and the Bible," pp. 30-31.

² p. 39.

2°. Mr. Spencer is hardly more consistent. In "First Principles" we read:¹

"Duty requires us neither to affirm nor deny personality. Our duty is to submit ourselves with all humility to the established limits of our intelligence . . .

"This, which to most will seem an essentially irreligious position, is an essentially religious one—nay, is *the* religious one, to which, as already shown, all others are but approximations. In the estimate it implies of the ultimate cause, it does not fall short of the alternative position, but exceeds it. Those who espouse the alternative position make the erroneous assumption that the choice is between personality and something lower than personality; whereas the choice is rather between personality and something higher. Is it not just possible that there is a mode of being so much transcending Intelligence and Will, as these transcend mechanical motion? It is true that we are unable to conceive any such higher mode of being. But this is not a reason for questioning its existence, it is rather the reverse. Have we not seen how utterly incompetent our minds are to form even an approach to a conception of that which underlies all phenomena? . . . Does it not follow that the ultimate cause cannot in any respect be conceived by us because it is in every respect greater than can be conceived? And may we not therefore rightly refrain from assigning to it any attributes, on the ground that such attributes, derived as they must be from our own natures, are not elevations but degradations."

Let us see how all this fits into Mr. Spencer's own system. No one can insist more strongly than he on the *existence* of the Ultimate Cause. It is "a necessary datum of consciousness;" and hence "the belief which this datum constitutes has a higher warrant than any other whatever."² Again:

"The consciousness of an Inscrutable Power manifested to us through all phenomena has been growing ever clearer . . . The certainty that . . . such a Power exists . . . is the certainty towards which intelligence has been from the first progressing. To this conclusion science inevitably arrives as it reaches its confines . . . It is the conclusion we are bound to accept without reserve or qualification."²

¹ P. 108.

² Ibid, p. 98.

³ Ibid, p. 108.

An Ultimate Cause *exists*, then; and may be termed Ultimate Cause, or Absolute, or Inscrutable Power,—anything but intelligent. It “cannot in any respect be conceived by us because it is in every respect greater than can be conceived:” and yet “its positive existence is a necessary datum of consciousness.” Surely we conceive it in *some* respect when we conceive it as existing. “We may rightly refrain from assigning to it any attributes whatever, on the ground that such attributes, derived as they must be from our own natures, are not elevations but degradations;” but, if so, why assign it *being*? Do we know of *existence* except from our own and inferior natures?

Mr. Spencer is clear-sighted enough to see the difficulty. This is what he says in reply:

“Very likely there will ever remain a need to give shape to that indefinite sense of an Ultimate Existence which forms the basis of our intelligence. We shall always be under the necessity of contemplating it as *some* mode of being; that is, of representing it to ourselves in *some* form of thought, however vague. And we shall not err in doing this so long as we treat every notion we thus form as merely a symbol, utterly without resemblance to that for which it stands. Perhaps the constant formation of such symbols and the constant rejection of them as inadequate, may be hereafter, as it has hitherto been, a means of discipline. Perpetually to construct ideas requiring the utmost stretch of our faculties, and perpetually to find that such ideas must be abandoned as futile imaginations, may realize to us more fully than any other course, the greatness of that which we vainly strive to grasp.”¹

St. Thomas might almost have written these words,—except for the symbolism. “We shall,” indeed, “be always under the necessity of contemplating [the Ultimate Existence] as *some* mode of being.” Why, then, it may be asked, may we not contemplate it as intelligent? And how can we “treat every notion we thus form as *merely* a symbol, *utterly* without resemblance to that for which it stands?” Can we treat the notion of existence thus? If so, the ultimate cause does not exist for us in reality, but only in imagination. This

¹ “First Principles,” p. 113.

symbolism will not save Mr. Spencer from inconsistency, except it be thorough;—except the notion of existence, like every other notion, be treated as “merely a symbol, utterly without resemblance to that for which it stands.” But, then, what becomes of the “necessary datum of consciousness?”¹

III. It is sad to think that able men should continue to flounder thus, and all through their own conceit, because in their self-satisfaction they will not condescend to examine the system which they pretend to refute. Every hand-book of Catholic Theology explains how existence and attributes are predicated of God. He has them, and yet He has them not. He *is*, and is *wise* and *just* and *powerful*; yet is He not as creatures are, but in a manner of which we can form no just idea; as we can form no adequate notion of His wisdom, justice, or power. Still we are within our right in saying both that He *is*, and that He is *wise*, *just*, and *strong*. Let me explain.

The Schoolmen distinguish three modes of predication,—the *univocal*, the *analogical*, and the *equivocal*. In *univocal* predication the terms retain their proper signification, as when we speak of an infant's *smile*, or of a lion's *strength*. *Analogy* supposes similarity and difference. A term is predicated analogically, when the proposition is true only if the word *like* be understood. We speak thus of a *smiling* landscape, and of the *lion-hearted* king. *Equivocations* are mere puns, and are beside the present question.

It is Catholic teaching, that when we say either that God *is* or *is something*, we make use of analogy. Thus far Mr. Arnold and Mr. Spencer are right. God's existence is not the same as ours, but an inconceivably *infinite* being. His knowledge, justice, and power, are not quite the same as we see in creatures; but infinite in every line. If one were to maintain that God exists only in the same way as we all exist, such a one would contradict the Catholic teaching. If it were said that the wisdom of God is exactly

¹ The reader will see how the old controversy about the nature of universals crops up once more; it is at the root of almost every error, as of all truth.

the same as ours, it would be untrue. And yet God really exists, and is really wise, only in a way altogether superior to our way. There is but an analogy or likeness between them;¹ we have no more claim to be called wise when compared with God, than a meadow has to be called *smiling*, or a brute beast to be thought *intelligent*. So far we are in agreement with Mr. Arnold, Mr. Spencer, and the Agnostics.

IV. 1st. Here the difficulty begins. It is true, according to Catholic teaching, that God really *is* and *is wise*. These are human terms: they are psychologically antecedent to any notion of God. Hence they signify existence and wisdom such as we see in us and around us. But God is *not* as we are; nor *is* He *wise* as we are. How, then, can it be true that God *really* is and is wise?

I would answer thus:—We know what *being* is, such as we see it in us and around us. Thereby we understand what is *nothing*,—the negation of *being*,—“*no being*.” Let us suppose, for a moment, that the principle of causality is universally true. When we state, according to that principle, that, as there is *being* now, there cannot ever have been mere “*no-being*,” we know what is meant. If there was never mere “*no-being*,” there must have been always *some being*, according to another principle—that of contradiction;—which, likewise, we suppose for a moment to be true universally. There must, then, have been always *some being*; though *how* it was, or whether it was the same as the being we see around us, we know not, nor does the principle of causality or of contradiction say.

Similarly, we know what *wisdom* is, such as we see it in us and around us. Thereby we understand what is “*no-wisdom*.” When, therefore, we state, according to the principle of causality, that, as there is wisdom now, there cannot ever have been mere “*no-wisdom*,” we know what is meant. Hence, by the principle of contradiction, there must have been always *some wisdom*; though *how* it was, or whether

¹ There are two kinds of analogy, but it is not necessary to explain them at length.

it was the same as the wisdom we see in us and around us, we know not, nor do our principles say.

This argument supposes, as has been said, the universal, absolute truth of the two principles. It supposes, in the first place, the principle of causality,—that everything positive that begins to be, must come from something that was able to give it being. An extension of this principle is further supposed,—that nothing can be able to give anything that it has not. Hence, whatever of positive reality begins in the creature, must be found in some form in the Hidden Agent that is ever at work. As well expect water from a dried-up cistern, or mathematics from a brute, as think that any agent could give out what was not within.

Everything, accordingly, that is both in us and around us, must be found,—at least *in some form*—in the Hidden Agent that is ever producing all. It is plain that the form of the result and of the agent need not be the same in every respect. If the forms be exactly similar, as when man is born of man, we can apply to both the same term in exactly the same sense. A son is as much a man as his father. When, however, the forms are different, as they may be; when the result has only a portion of the agent's form; we can no longer predicate the terms univocally of both. A house is not its architect, nor is the architect the house; but the architect has in his mind the design that he gave to the house, and is having the same, so far as it goes; though he is having much more, and is having the design in a very superior way. And so God is having all that He gave His creatures,—wisdom, power, being,—only very much more and in His own way.

Our argument supposes, further, the principle of contradiction,—that, if there cannot have been mere “no-being,” there must have been some being. But, as the principle of causality does not require that what is positive in the result should be of the same form exactly as it has in the cause; so neither does the principle of contradiction mean that there must be *being* such as we see in us and around us, if mere “no-being” has to be set aside. Accordingly we admit *being* and *wisdom* in God; nor are we forced in consistency to admit that they are of the same kind as ours.

This is not the place to defend the universal, absolute truth of the principles that underlie this argument; what has been said so often already will apply here.

2°. The objection may be urged. It might seem, that, according to this teaching, God might be said to be *material*. For matter is positive and comes from Him. Therefore He has matter, is having it, or is a material being,—which no Catholic will allow.

The answer to this form of the objection will help to illustrate the principles on which our whole system is based. One of these principles has been already stated as follows: Everything positive that begins to be, must come from something that was able to give it. Negatives, being nothing, require no principle or source of being.

Conformably to this principle we admit and contend that God has in Himself all that is positive in material things, and that He may be denominated accordingly. But inasmuch as the negations of matter require no principle of being, we are not, by the same reason, forced to admit, or even justified in admitting, that He has them. And if He has them not, we are not justified in applying to Him any term that would imply that He has.

But to say that God is material is to ascribe negations to Him. *Material* means *having a body*; and bodies are not wholly positive, but positive and negative combined. A body is a divisible substance. So far as it is a substance, it is positive; whereas divisibility is a negation: it is a want of that further perfection that we find in spirit. Hence, to say that God has a body, implies that he has the defects and negations of His creatures; an implication that is not in the least warranted by the principle on which the Catholic system is based.

3°. The difficulty, however, is not yet exhausted. Modern Agnostics are wont to reason thus:—You admit that God cannot be said to be material, for the reason just assigned, because matter implies negation. Now, should we not, for the same reason, hesitate to call Him a spirit, or a person.

For as, from what we know of spirit, we are assured that matter implies negation; so may it not be true, that, if we knew of some perhaps nobler substances, we should be equally aware that there is negation implied even in our notion of spirit. It is not contended that such higher substances actually exist; but they may, for all anyone can prove. And if they do, would it not seem to them as blasphemous to call the Hidden Agent a spirit, as it does to us to call Him a body? To avoid possible mistake, therefore, let us not think of Him as imaged in any human concept; and if we worship Him, let our worship be one of wonder, "mostly of the silent sort."¹

This form of the difficulty, is most subtle; it gives to adversaries the greatest advantage that a disputant could desire,—the opportunity to criticise, without any liability to prove truths or facts. We have, then, to show that when we call God a spirit or a person, we do not attribute negations to Him,—that we do not predicate of Him a possibly lower form of existence.

We show it thus: A negation might be attributed to a subject in two ways, either *directly* or by *connotation*. It would be directly attributed, if it were formally conceived and known to be a negation; and if it were, nevertheless, said to exist formally in the subject. As if one were to say: injustice is a defect, and A is unjust. A negation would be merely connoted, if the object of one's concept were altogether positive, though known to be finite, and if one were to attribute to the subject this positive entity. In this latter case the negation is indeed attributed in some way; not directly, however, but only because of the limitation of the object in itself.

This distinction can be made clearer by being applied. If one were to call God a body, it would be a formal and direct attribution of negation to Him. Because, in our very concept *body* is formally represented, not only as *limited*, but as partly *negative*. Not so when we call God a spirit. The

¹ See the extract from Mr. Spencer quoted above, p. 967. "Is it not just possible that there is a mode of being so much transcending Intelligence and Will, as these transcend mechanical motion?"

object of our concept is then, as far as it is at all, altogether positive: and if it is accompanied by negation, it is so, not by reason of any part, so to speak, of itself: but because every object of a finite intelligence cannot but be finite. Hence we are taught by our theologians to correct this mode of predication by remembering that when we call God a spirit, we do not mean that He is a spirit such as we know, but of an infinitely higher order. Nay, we are warned by the same authorities, that even when we say that God *is*, we should not think His mode of *existence* such as that with which we are acquainted, but a mode of existence altogether beyond our power to conceive.

Hence the reason which forbids us to call God a body, does not equally forbid us to call Him a spirit. In the first case we directly attribute negation and imperfection to Him; in the second they are only connoted. And we admit that this very connotation should be corrected and guarded against.

4°. But, it may be urged: Is it not wrong to even connote imperfection of Him? If direct attribution of a negation is unlawful, why should indirect connotation be allowed? You speak of correcting the error, but you will not admit that the same process justifies the direct predication. Would it not be better to be thoroughly consistent, and not tolerate even the connotation of error, no matter how corrected and guarded against: as you will not allow, no matter with what safeguards, the direct predication of imperfection with regard to God? If this can only be done by not thinking or speaking of Him at all, let us, then, in purest reverence, not think or speak of Him. And if we must speak of Him, let us "treat every notion we thus form as merely a symbol, utterly without resemblance to that for which it stands."

We reply:—It cannot be. Even though we were to try, we could not but think of Him. The problem of existence cries out for an answer. Some would ascribe all things to a Creator, and forthwith they think of Him. Others may

deny that there is any such being ; and thus they, too, think of Him. Agnostics try to be on their guard ; they will not take either side ; and behold, even then a side is taken, and the Agnostics think of God ! Do they not write whole books about Him ? to prove, forsooth, that we should not write, speak, or think, of Him at all. As long as we are philosophers, which is as long as we are men, with intense curiosity to know the reasons of things,—so long we cannot but think and speak of the first of all reasons, which is God.

And as for treating our notions and expressions as mere symbols, that too is impossible, for they are and must be very much more. Inadequate they are, of course, and in that sense they may be called symbols ; but they are not *utterly* without resemblance to that for which they stand. The principles on which knowledge is based are too objectively real to permit this *utter* inadequacy. They are not *merely* words or even judgments of the mind ; they represent something outside us and independent of us, as of all space and time. And the conclusions which necessarily flow from them are equally real and objective. They may be conceived and expressed inadequately, but not *utterly* so, for that were falsehood ; and these conclusions cannot be false, for they are based on objective reality and truth.

Let us, then, think of God as best we may. And where we fall short, let us acknowledge our errors ; let us correct them, and bow our heads reverently, as we recognize the Infinite.

V. The reader will be grateful for the following extract from Dr. Mivart's little work,¹ which suggested the foregoing train of thought. The Agnostic, Frankland, objects to speaking of the First Cause as a personality, by reason of the anthropomorphism of the expression.

“*Maxwell.* Do you object to such anthropomorphism in speaking of the eternal First Cause, because the term ‘personality’ is below the mark or above it.

¹ “*Nature and Thought*,” p. 185.

"F. I object to it as being shockingly, inexpressibly below the mark.

"M. Capital! Then we are quite at one. I will cheerfully own that it is as much below the mark as ever you like. If you can think of the Eternal Cause in higher terms than human terms, pray do so, but I am certain you cannot. If you refuse to think of the First Cause in human terms, you have but the animal, vegetable and inorganic worlds from which to take your choice. You must then think of it in lower terms than those to which you object. Zoomorphism is much more absurd than Anthropomorphism after all. Surely the rational method is to employ the highest conceptions you can, while freely acknowledging their utter inadequacy. After exhausting ingenuity in arriving at the loftiest possible conceptions, we must regard them as being but accommodations to human infirmity. We may own that they are in a sense objectively false—because of their inadequacy—though subjectively and very practically true. We must of course be careful to remove from our conception all the imperfections we can remove from it, and to regard as infinitely greater and higher, whatever is positive in our conceptions. I am really sick of the nonsense that is talked about anthropomorphism. There is good Mr. Fiske—with his 'Comic Theism,' whatever that may be—who tells us that Theism has been purified by a continual process of what he calls 'deanthropomorphisation.' He forgets that even he has not carried that process out completely, and that there remains even for him one human character to be eliminated from his conception of God, namely, that of 'existence.' That done, we have the non-existing as the absolutely adorable! *Das sein ist das nichts!* The funny thing, too, is that these eternal declaimers against anthropomorphism forget two things. One is that even the old inhabitants of this Abbey were quite familiar with their notion and denied that even existence could be predicated univocally of God and creatures. The other thing they forget is that physical science is full of anthropomorphism, and that every attempt to expel it is necessarily vain. We must always remain men, and have human conceptions of all things we conceive; and it is as easy in religion as in science to recognise this, and guard against any delusions thence resulting. What is necessary is to take the precautions I have just mentioned."

THESIS IV.

“The Personal First Cause is such, that all created intelligences and wills are bound to submit to Him ; nay more, He is such that all possible wills and intelligences should, if created, be bound so to submit themselves.”

Very little need be said in proof of this fourth thesis, other than what has been said already in proof of the second. It will be sufficient to call attention to some special points.

The thesis with which we are now concerned contains two propositions, of which the first deals with actual, and the second with possible wills and intelligences. Let us take these propositions in order.

PROPOSITION I.

“The Personal First Cause is such that all created intelligences and wills are bound to submit to Him.”

This assertion is based on two reasons, one general, the other particular.

I. The general reason is well known. We were made by the great First Cause ; therefore we belong to Him, and should submit to Him. We are His property, entirely in His hands. As He created us, so He can reduce us to nothing, as He every moment reduces many things to nothing. The proof of all this is contained under the second thesis. He can place what conditions He will on our existence ; we have but to submit.

II. The particular reason has two forms, of which one regards the intellect the other the will.

1. Our intellect should submit to the Personal First Cause. For, it has been proved that “there are such things as necessary truths.” These truths do not depend on us ; we do not make them ; if our intellect does not conform itself to them, so much the worse for it. We must submit to them and be guided by them. They do not come from matter ; this also has been already proved. They can, then, have no other origin or basis than the great Hidden Agent. Hence, our intellects, in submitting to these necessary truths, submit to Him.

2. Our will should submit in like manner. For, as there are necessary truths, so is there “a moral order ;” this, too,

we have proved. But morality supposes duty, law, obedience. To whom? To none other than the great Hidden Agent that brought us into being, and that has a right thereby to command our will.

PROPOSITION II.

“The Personal First Cause is such that all possible wills and intelligences should, if created, submit themselves to Him.”

This is a much wider assertion; but it will be seen that it is securely based on the two reasons already given. Let us take the particular reason first:—

I. Not only is it to be admitted that there are necessary truths *for us*, but it is also beyond doubt that the same truths are necessary for every *possible* intellect. The whole burden of our proof has been that first truths are independent of time and space; that they were true before the world began, and should continue true were the whole fabric of creation to collapse; that they are as true in the remotest actual or possible star as they are on earth. It were foolish of me to deny them; and of you, and of any man, and of any intellect. The very Creator cannot make them other than they are. Every possible intellect must submit to them.

So too of law. Not only are certain things right or wrong now for us, but there are things that are necessarily right and wrong,—for me, for you, for all men, for the Creator Himself, throughout all space and time. It were the duty of every possible will to do what Mr. Mill, to his honour, declared himself prepared to do,—to submit to all the pains of hell rather than glorify a wicked Deity. The proof of these things has been already submitted.

II. What is the basis of these laws and truths so absolute and so universal? This brings us to the general reason. It can only be because possible things can never become actual of themselves; they require extrinsic aid. The Hidden Agent must put forth His energy. Whatever His actuality produces, is, as we have seen, bound to submit to Him. Nothing that is merely possible, could become actual without His aid. Hence all possible wills and intellects should, if created, submit themselves to Him. Conversely, every possible intellect and will is bound to His truth and to His

law; this could be only on the supposition that they are either Himself or dependent on Him.

Here I conclude. It was my intention to prove that the "Hidden Agent is without cause;" but that thesis was omitted,—deliberately. For the doctrine of Theism is independent of that proposition. If there be a Being who brought us into existence, and who, by right thereof, imposes on us reasonable obligations, are we not bound to do His will? And if one were to believe in a Being that has a similar right to command the obedience of all actual and possible wills and intellects, should not such a one be entitled to call himself a Theist? You may say that this principle will carry him further. Granted; but the question here is, not whether he should in consistency go further, but whether eternity is involved in the very idea of God. Theism does not involve belief in *all* God's attributes; and I fail to see why eternity or infinity should be more essential than others to the idea of Him.

It was the purport of these papers to call attention to Dr. Mivart's exposition and defence of the philosophy that underlies Christian faith. His spirit pervades them in many places where his name does not appear. There are many other points touched on in his little book, which would repay investigation; I hope that readers will examine for themselves. Dr. Mivart is engaged on a new and fuller work, to which we look forward with eager pleasure; may we hope that it will be accompanied by a promise of new editions of some of his previous treatises? WALTER McDONALD.

CANADIAN SKETCHES.

I.—POPULAR ELEMENTS.

MR. FROUDE'S *Oceana* is very pleasant reading. But then there is so much sack for so little bread in its composition. He visited the various colonies in a six months' tour, "with letters of introduction." Needless to say, he was introduced to every person and everything least calculated to open his eyes to the true condition of the countries and

peoples whom he favoured with the brief sunshine of his presence. They, on their part, seem not to have known the day of their visitation. They did not avail themselves of the opportunities of fame afforded them by the appearance in their midst of a live historian. It is even doubtful that any lasting improvement has been wrought in their manners or institutions by the wise suggestions and profound predictions of this brilliant book maker. In Australia and New Zealand he lived with governors and grandees, and so he is versed in questions that concern sheep and cattle and the "natives." Canada he saw from the American side of Niagara. It was late in the season and—the way was long, the wind was cold, the tourist infirm and old. So he says little (why even little?) of Canada, and admits he knows little about the country. This is the only reliable statement in the work. Altogether he was about as much at home in the colonies and with the colonist as a certain member of the *vieille noblesse* (*riche* with a vengeance!) was at home with "Paddy." It takes an English historian or a French baron to properly understand and describe *savage people*. In these papers, the *sack*—if any be offered—has had its solid accompaniment, at least in the experiences of the writer. They shall be a simple record of personal gleanings and observation, and of impressions formed in a sympathetic mood and amid popular surroundings. These shall be wrought to an idea and synthesised into a statement. There is not in the world a more interesting country, amongst those that belong to the world's newer settlement and civilization, than the vast territory called Canada. It is not really a modern land. Its history leads us back to the very beginnings of western discovery and enterprise. But its history does not begin with those beginnings. There is a continuity between the facts of past and present Canadian story and those which marked certain great dynastic changes in the later period of the history of Europe. The view of Canada as it stands upon the map, and much more the interior view of her social and political conditions, conveys distinct memories of events that moulded the fate of modern France and England. The legitimist cause of Great Britain as of France has had in Canada its

only healthy and happy *dénouement*. The adherents of the Stuarts in Ireland and Scotland found here a refuge. They brought here with them a memory and a passion that belong by no means to the dead past, but are potent, if not apparent, factors in the formation of the character and destinies of the Canadian people.

Here, too, the France of old, the noble and venerable France, has retired, not to die, but to revive. Here is found all that now exists of the race that ceased in old France with the *Grande Monarchie* and with the birth of the *Grande Révolution*. So, the history of Canada is linked in a special and most interesting manner, with events of seventeenth century Europe. All unconscious as it were that the drama of that epoch is over and done with on the original stage, Canada in some sense, repeats its history and happenings. All along the shores of the St. Lawrence, and even through the interior forest lands, from Acadie to Vancouver, the signs and tokens of an old civilization are apparent in the manners and language of the people. The French Canadian hamlet, in all but its material structure, is the peaceful and picturesque *paroisse* of the *Gironde*. Its very *patois* is the unchanged vernacular of Louis Quatorze days. Its *habitants* possess the *taille*, the manliness, and muscle of a people that perished in old France through the passions of the Revolution and the war plague of the Republic and the Empire. They are a hardy and prolific race possessing all the virtues with but few of the vices of the genuine Gaul. They are temperate, thrifty, and self-reliant. They are a power in this new land full of cohesive and expansive energy. Keen they are to comprehend, and adroit to wrest to their own advantage, the free political institutions which, perhaps, they never of themselves would have initiated or adopted. It is nonsense to talk of extinguishing the French Canadian under the pressure of Anglo-Saxon energy and superiority. East or west the Anglo-Saxon never yet extinguished anything that had a spark of real life within it. On the contrary his neutral temperament becomes merged and finally lost in some stronger compost. There is mighty little of the Anglo-Saxon about the Anglo-Indian. In the New England States,

where the purest type of Anglo-Saxon, the Puritan, settled and ruled for a season, and had it all his own way, he has disappeared from the scene. He has been washed out by the tide of better blood, and nothing now remains of him but a marrowless heartless skeleton. In Ireland the Anglo-Saxon—what there was of him—has been effaced. In England, herself, he has perished, or become, as Kingsley remarks, a stupid decrepit creature, cornered into the remotest districts whereto the wave of Celtic blood has not flowed to sustain and vitalize him.¹ The world is well disabused of all that Anglo-Saxon bravado. Races far removed from a Saxon origin have given to Britain a name and fame and footing in the great rendezvous of the world. Whatever was purely Saxon—and that was but little—in the outflow of those populations has been cast aside as useless for all purposes of colonization, or it has been mingled with and moulded by more brilliant and durable elements, as clay is hardened and shaped in the fire.

On the French Canadian the Anglo-Saxon type makes no impression whatever. If the two races had commingled—which they have not—the French would have long ago absorbed the Saxon element, or rather consumed it. What really exists in the Dominion, as a counterpoise to the swarming population of the French province, is the sturdy growth from Irish and Scotch stock in the maritime and Ontario provinces. But even this does not really arrest the advance of the French Canadian from east to west, from Quebec to Manitoba, across the whole Canadian territory. One leaves Montreal and turns his face towards the great

¹ Kingsley makes this statement, if I remember aright, in his *Chartist*. He adds that in the South-Eastern English counties, where alone the real Saxon type survives, the bulk of the peasantry do not know more than 500 words of their own language, words that only represent the grossest and most material ideas and utter only material needs. He says that physically, too, they are a spent race; that Celtic blood alone (he might have added Norman) has saved the Anglo-Saxon from extinction. I (myself) can testify, from extensive observation, that the purely English breed degenerates more rapidly, both in mind and body, than any other in the Colonies whenever they congregate and intermarry in remote places. I have observed particularly the phenomenon of their poverty of language and absence of intellectual ideas. As Dante says of the denizens of a certain infernal circle—“*Han perduto il ben dell' intelletto.*”

English speaking cities of Ontario, and deems he has left the French race and language behind. But lo! he meets them again in full force, and thoroughly at home in Ottawa, the legislative centre of the Dominion. From its lumber yards to its legislative halls the city is redolent of Frenchness. When the writer was last in Ottawa in 1885 a sort of panic possessed the anti-Gallic portion of the community at discovering a sudden tide of migration from French Canada, stretching away north from Ottawa and west to the Red River, binding together the two great settlements of the race by the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans. The bare fringe of the northern St. Lawrence shore is left to the English Canadian. True, upon that fringe, or hard by it, he has built such thriving cities as Toronto and Hamilton, and many more of less note, and he has pushed his outposts west to the newly flourishing city of Winnipeg. But what of that? Behind him, to the right and to the left of him, hemming him from north, east, and west, is the irrepressible French Canadian under his different titles of *habitant* or *métis*. His continuity is really unbroken all along the continent. Even in those English cities and smaller towns that dot the St. Lawrence shores he is an active quantity in the populations. The whole country along a parallel 100 miles north from the river, and the two immense provinces of Quebec and Manitoba that close both ends of the line, are absolutely his. He has flowed over into New England and the Northern United States all along the river line. But of that we have no concern here.¹ In a word he is a nation and a great one. The attempt to belittle him, so often made by the British colonist, would be ridiculous only that it is so utterly senseless

¹The total number of Canadians settled in the United States in 1880 was 610,017. Of these a very large proportion was made up of French Canadians. The old homesteads in Quebec consisting of only a few acres each having become unable to afford a living for the increasing population the younger members of their families emigrated to the United States. They found employment in the factories of the New England States, and being a prolific race they have increased rapidly. Now that Quebec and other parts of Canada have become opened up by railways for settlement an effort is being made to induce the expatriated French in the United States to return and help to build up their own country.—*Canadian paper*, September 10th, 1887.

and unjust. Canada cannot and ought not shut her eyes to the present important position of its population of French descent, any more than she should forget its splendid past which really made the history of her religion and civilization. It seems peculiar to France—or was so when that nation had a character—to retain to the end the spiritual, while losing hold of the political possession of the territories she had discovered or colonized. France has not a territorial foothold in North America to-day, she that once virtually possessed it all, except a rock and a sandbank off the Newfoundland coast called S. Pierre and Miquelon. Nevertheless, from Quebec to New Orleans, the strong traces of her former religious and chivalrous spirit remain. They present to the intelligent observer all, or nearly all, there is of taste, refinement, and poetry in the northern division of the New World.

These French Canadians are a vigorous stock, and there is no sign of decay about the type they reproduce. It is not an unusual thing to find in many of the quiet hamlets of the Quebec province a family consisting of thirty children of the same parents. Even when not reaching such abnormal increase, children abound under every roof-tree. In the New England States, where French Canadians have settled of late years in great numbers, that race outrivals the Irish in its extirpating influence upon the effete Puritan stock. Intellectually they are keen and rapid of perception rather than profound or imaginative. They excel as artisans in every branch of handicraft, notably in those that demand nice discernment, tasteful execution, and a truthful touch. The overseer of a large axe factory in Maine told the writer that in the tempering and welding of the steel edge to the head of the instrument he found no workmen from any land so accurate as they, and he employed them in that special operation to the exclusion equally of Americans and Europeans. Another art they excel in—almost a lost art now in Europe—is wood carving. Nothing can exceed the beauty and tastefulness of the best of their work in this line in church furniture and decoration. Exquisite altar fronts and reredos hand-carved and panelled in the various coloured woods of the country are to be found in the village churches in

Canada, the products of native skill and taste. Those Canadians are a people of great industry and of manifold resource. They are also a very religious people—when at home. But when separated from home influences, and the daily devout practices of family life, they easily fall away from religious observances, even those of obligation. Hence the complaints made of them by many priests in the United States as being negligent and unfaithful Catholics. The French character everywhere seems to require more than any other, external aids to sustain its religious principles and render them practical. The evil complained of in the United States is now, however, being remedied by the solicitude of the Canadian episcopate and clergy in gathering together their emigrated people and providing them with priests of their own race. Hence there are many flourishing Canadian parishes scattered throughout the New England States, and all parts of the great Republic. No race is spiritually improved by emigration. Home is in itself a sanctuary. To leave it is to fly from the soul's best shelter.

Apropos of the effect of emigration, and education also, on the character of the French Canadian, a fact recurs to the writer's mind. Being in Montreal in the summer of 1873, and desirous of visiting the charming retreat of the Jesuits at *Sault aux Récollets*, about ten miles from that city, he walked out a few miles and then hired a French Canadian farmer's horse and trap. The old man himself took charge of the *remise*. On the way we talked of many things that lay within his little world, till at length we got on the subject of schools and education.

To the writer's surprise the old farmer approached that subject with cordial disgust, and finally kindled into wrath. "Education," he cried, "I don't want to hear about education! It has brought malediction on my quiet God-fearing household!" Then, tenderly, and with tears in his voice, he told his woe. "I have a son, him you saw leaning idly on the gate as we left my house. He was the pet and pride of the family. Cheerfully did we all, his brothers and myself and the mother, strive and stint that he should be educated, for his bright parts gave promise of honour to the household.

He was sent to the university. He studied law while we worked the farm content with what *le bon Dieu* sent us. He was 'of the first' in his college. He returned to us filled with pride in himself and contempt of us and our ways. He would not work even at his profession. He went from us to that accursed United States (*ces maudits Etats Unis.*) At the end of two years he came back in rags and misery, idle and worthless as before. You have seen him. His brothers are away in the fields at work. I, too, came thence at your call. He hangs round the gate and saunters about the roads. He does nothing, absolutely nothing. But worse than all, *cher Monsieur*, he has turned from his God. He has not a spark of religion. When we meet at evening, like all Christians, to tell our chaplets, he strides out, if present, with a *Psha!* *Oh Mon Dieu*, he will not even pray to our Holy Virgin! *Vlà c'q'c'est que l'éducation!* There's your *education* for you! Reasoning was thrown away on this old man. He had a lamentable fact before his eyes and in his heart that was not to be conjured away by distinctions of *post hoc* and *propter hoc* or by any other resources of philosophy. Besides, who was the real philosopher in the case, the farmer or the wayfarer? The latter had his doubts at the time which robbed his arguments of all earnestness. The doubts have not grown less with years and experience. When he sees religion wane among the people, in proportion as education, or what goes by the name, increases, he often recalls the old Canadian's ireful invective, "*Voilà ce que c'est que l'éducation!*"

But we must leave the French Canadian and turn to another remarkable type in the social composition of the country.

Next to the French Canadian the Scotch element is the most apparent, because the most concentrated and localized in the new Dominion. The Scotchman indeed, both of the Highland and Lowland variety, is a fixture in the soil and an active figure in the great marts of the country. The Lowland Scotch Canadian is here what he is at home, a shrewd successful man of business. The Highlander in Canada is what he rarely is, or can be, on his ancestral hills, an independent and thriving land cultivator and stock raiser. Both speci-

mens of the Scot preserve in Canada all their national pride while casting off the national poverty on which it is said chiefly to subsist at home. The Lowlanders true to their home character and traditions, take a foremost part in the advance of education and in the practice of the learned professions. They have raised for the encouragement and cultivation of both many of the finest public institutions in the land, in and west from Montreal. But the Highland Scotch colonists and their descendants are, to the Catholic observer, a more interesting and admirable element in the body social of the Dominion. The clans foregather here as they do in the old home, more closely and affectionately perhaps from their new bond of common exile. They have each their recognised chieftain, their Macdonald, their Cameron, M'Gregor, Frazer or Chisholm. They have their allotted townships racy of old highland memories—their Glengarry, their Inverness, their Perth, and Lochaber. Better than all, they have, and preserve, and pride in their old Gaelic tongue and song. Their children's children speak and chant it to-day with the fluency and devotion of their fathers. They are all Catholics, those Canadian Highland Scotch. They are full of that deep, emotional, yet solid and practical faith which seems to be the heirloom of the spiritual minded and loyal Gael. The Highland Scotch in Canada, as at home, are *clannish*. Far from imputing that to them as a vice, or even as a fault, we should consider it one of their chief virtues, and best preservatives of virtue. It is also what lends to their life some of its poetry and picturesqueness, and to their political position in their new home its well ordered and well used influence. The Irish traveller in Canada will often utter the wish that his own race resident there had more of that concentration—clannishness if you will—both in domestic and political life that marks the habits of the gregarious Scot.

On two particular occasions circumstances brought the writer into very close contact with the Highland Scotch of the Dominion, and gave him exceptional opportunities of studying their social and religious life. To relieve and authenticate the generalities he has so far indulged in he will

ask the reader to accompany him successively to the interior and to the Atlantic border of Canada; to localities where the Scotch Celts most do congregate, to Glengarry, in the Kingston diocese, and to Northern Nova Scotia. These are the homes *par excellence* of the Highland emigrant and his descendants. Here in great force are the Macdonalds especially, a fine, dark, handsome race of pure Celts from the highlands of Inverness. They are Catholic to the core. They followed faithfully at home the fortunes of the Stuarts. They are yet full of the pathos inseparable from the memory of that brilliant but luckless line. In the winter of 1873 the writer paid a visit to a former pupil of his in All Hallows, then the pastor of Glengarry, now of Prescott on the St. Lawrence. No one but a Macdonald had ever had the spiritual rule of Glengarry till this young Irish priest, Fr. Masterson, came there. He had to win his way to the confidence and affections of the cautious clansmen. It required no small tact and devotion on his part to succeed in the delicate task. But he did succeed. If ever there was a flock that it was difficult for a shepherd to know individually this was the one. It was necessary to discriminate between hundreds of Macdonalds and never to mistake one for the other in order to entirely satisfy them that the pastor was fit for his position. For this purpose he had to store his memory with endless prenomens. All the colours that can apply to the human complexion, all the degrees of stature and diversities of character that distinguished Red from Black Hugh, Big, from Little Allister, and the sons and grandsons and cousins innumerable of each from each other had to be kept on ready record, for they were called into requisition in his daily intercourse with his faithful flock. Fr. Masterson was equal to the necessities of his position. His power of mental registration was considered phenomenal. No clansman of them all could thread their genealogical mazes better than he. So he was trusted and beloved by those Scots of high degree. It was a pleasant sight on a bright Canadian winter morning—and where is winter so bright, so calm, so exhilarating as in Canada—to see the stout farmers and their families driving in rapidly from every point in their cosy sleighs with each a dashing

span of horses to the white turreted church, the centre point of the parish. There is no town here. It is a wide valley of large farm lands and distant homesteads. The ring of the bells upon the horses' harness before the church door as they shook themselves after their hard trot made glad music in the frosty air. Every sleigh was followed by at least two immense dogs, who quietly jumped in and took possession of the warm rugs and clean straw the moment the passengers vacated the sleighs to enter the church. Woe to the wight who should venture near those vehicles while those trusty watchers lay coiled up within them! There could have been no less than 300 of these sleighs around the church walls during the celebration of Mass, which was attended with the utmost reverence by the congregation. Their air of health and comfort made their presence a joy, while the bright scarves and snow white "clouds" (a warm woollen *bourous*) of the women lent a brilliance and picturesqueness to the gathering. The writer addressed them in English and their pastor briefly in Gaelic, and after Mass the head clansmen came into the vestry to shake hands with and welcome the stranger, and pour invitations upon him. This was Sunday in Canadian Glengarry, and it is the same in all the Highland Scotch settlements of the Dominion. The great object of interest, love, and pride of all the classes throughout the country was "The Vicar," old Fr. John Macdonald, who had held their spiritual rule for over half a century, and who was still living, hale and hearty, in a pleasant cottage in Glengarry. To leave the place without calling on him would have been the one unpardonable affront to the Glensmen. He loved his young Irish successor, and made him beloved and respected of the people. Had an angel from heaven come to rule them and "The Vicar" disapproved of him, that angel would have to quit Glengarry. This fine old priest was, without exception, the most venerable and patriarchal figure the writer ever looked upon. He was nearing his *hundredth* year of age. His massive head and trunk were unbent by years, and sound in every function. Only the limbs that had travelled so many a weary mile, in days when the whole country was but an untracked wilderness, had

yielded to time and fatigue and could no longer bear up the colossal frame. Wallace himself had not passed through more bold adventures than this old Highland chief. He ruled, spiritually, and in a sense politically too, all Canada west of Montreal for half a century. His reign began when all spiritual jurisdiction from Labrador to the Frazer River and beyond, and away south across the border to New Orleans was vested in the See of Quebec "*Omnium (Americae) Ecclesiarum Mater et Caput.*" There were no bishops then in all Western Canada. Father John was Vicar-General, with unlimited jurisdiction over it all. In their highest flights of imagination the Scots, and the Irish too of that time, never went beyond him as an embodiment of spiritual authority. He was "The Vicar." No rival ever appeared on the scene. "His rights there was none to dispute." The reverence and love that centred in him in his old age gave proof of his benign and salutary use of his mighty sway.

The writer will have to reserve his experiences with the Nova Scotia Celts for another paper. There too, something must be said of the various parties and combinations into which the diverse elements of Canadian society have settled and formed. Some of them are imported, some of them are indigenous to the land. All have their bearing upon the main interest of this writing, which though not as yet touched has been kept clearly in view—viz., the condition and prospects of the Irish element and of the Church founded by it in Canada. This we have endeavoured to approach by a process of comparison and contrast. Hence this rough sketch of what may appear at first foreign to our intended picture.

R. HOWLEY.

THE ACT OF PERFECT CONTRITION AND PERFECT CHARITY.—II.

OUR last paper under this heading closed by pronouncing *duration* one of those purely accidental adjuncts which may or may not be associated with the Act of Perfect Charity, but which unquestionably form no part of its essence. It will, perhaps, strike some of the readers of that paper that the theory so uncompromisingly advanced is at variance with the teaching of Ascetic theology and with the teaching of experience as well; and hence it may be desirable to expound at greater length how far and in what sense lapse of time is said to be unnecessary for the maturing and eliciting of an act of charity.

There is no intention of asserting that the process of justification is ordinarily or even frequently perfected *in ictu oculi*, if by the process of justification is meant the whole series of acts which, on the part of God or of man, interpose from the initiatory "divine vocation" to the ultimate infusion of sanctifying grace. On the one hand "*dicendum est posse Deum totam hominis justificationem a prima vocatione usque ad infusionem gratiae et remissionem peccati in uno instanti consummare*"—and this proves that "time" is not an essential element; but, on the other hand, "*dicendum est ordinarie, et quasi ex communi lege, praeparationem peccatoris ad justitiam, per Dei vocationem et actus ipsius hominis, cum successione temporis fieri, atque in ea hunc ordinem servari, quod mutatio incipit a divina vocatione, et paulatim procedit ab imperfecto ad perfectum, donec consummetur ultima dispositio.*" (Suarez, *De Causis Hab. Gratiae*, L. viii., c. xxiii., n. 3.) This necessity of time is at once manifest when we contemplate the conversion of a man who has not yet received the grace of divine faith: "*prius oportet audire res fidei et eas recte concipere, et ipsarum credibilitatem penetrare, quod certe ordinario modo non subito fit. Deinde, concepta fide, non statim habetur contritio de peccatis, imo saepe necesse est ipsa fide uti ad petendum et recogitandum ut ad justitiam perveniatur.*" (*Ibidem.*) Even in the case of the

“peccator fidelis” a dutiful correspondence with the divine call may sometimes involve the assiduous and anxious employment of no inconsiderable time; for, while each step in advance must be the fruit of grace, the measuring out and the communicating of that grace depend absolutely on the independent will of the Holy Ghost “qui ubi vult, spirat.” Our theory, therefore, does not detract from the usefulness or the necessity of spiritual exercises; on the contrary, it recognises the indispensability of all such pious works, whenever, in the designs of God, the process of justification is not of an exceptional character. But it recognises the indispensability of those preparatory acts (and of the “duration” which they require for development) only for the more or less remote approaches to the “ipsa dispositio ultima” which is charity or contrition. When that “dispositio ultima” has once been attained, “dicendum est,” says Suarez, “infusionem gratiae habitualis fieri in instanti terminativo dispositionum praecedentium, et in eodem instanti in quo consummatur proxima dispositio, sive ad dispositionem ultimam paulatim et successive perveniatur, sicut ordinarie fieri diximus, sive tota justificatio subito extraordinario modo fiat.” (*Ibidem*, n. 7.) Neither is it inconsistent with our theory to furthermore admit that in the normal reconciliation of the sinner, and in the ordinary augmentation of grace, those preparatory exercises may spontaneously generate “amor sensibilis,” or that “dolor in sensu” of which St. Thomas speaks, and which constitute the varying degrees of “intensity.” Such specious, and oftentimes truthful, suggestions of successful progress—more especially when they seem to be the outcome of protracted effort—cannot fail to inspire tranquility and confidence. These we do not seek to underrate. Very frequently they come from the Giver of all good gifts; but it would be theologically unsound to infer, from their total or partial absence, that He had withheld the really substantial and immeasurably more precious grace of perfect charity.

The Council of Trent enumerates (Sess. vi., c. 6), in all the detail befitting so vital a subject, the acts which man must perform as his share in the work of justification. It is unnecessary to transcribe that most beautiful chapter: but a

brief examination of all the other acts there specified, will lead, in perhaps the most concise and satisfactory way, to a consideration of that particular one regarding which this paper is directly concerned, and which is the complement and crowning of all the rest.

Naturally, the first and fundamental requirement is the "actus fidei." The Council does not formally and categorically indicate the precise articles of faith upon explicit or implicit belief in which justification essentially rests, but it speaks with sufficient clearness to enable commentators to do so. Accordingly we are told by Suarez (*De Causis Hab. Gratiae*, L. viii., c. xvi., n. 8): "Fides maxime necessaria est, quae et ipsius Dei et Christi, et meritorum ejus, prout nobis ad remissionem peccatorum et justificationem obtinendam utilia sunt, notitiam praebeat . . . Satis est communi plebi fidelium fides expressa mysteriorum quae in Symbolo continentur, cum generali fide implicita reliquorum, credendo, videlicet, vera esse quae Sancta Mater Ecclesia tanquam de fide credenda tenet." A little later on (n. 10) the same theologian further explains: "Fides Dei ut justificatoris per Christum est quasi propria fides justificans. In qua fide includitur [1] recognitio proprii peccati, et [2] quod fuerit Dei offensa, quodque [3] per ejus remissionem et non aliter delendum est, ac [4] quod ad veniam obtinendam ad Deum confugere et peccatum detestari necessarium est, et [5] denique quod vere poenitentibus venia non denegetur." Suarez tersely concludes a long and interesting disquisition by laying down the following practical and valuable principle: "In homine *fideli* recogitatio peccatorum, ut sunt offensa Dei, sufficere potest ad actualem et proximam dispositionem ex parte intellectus, quia illa non habetur sine aliquo fidei actu in quo virtute continentur reliqui, et sufficienter proponitur voluntati objectum, ut se disponat." When we recollect that the "homo fidelis" of this paragraph signifies the man who has once received and never dissipated the grace of theological faith, and when we further recollect that we, unlike the priests of Continental countries, are happily warranted in assuming that no leaven of disbelief or of infidelity exists among our people, the groundwork of many

scruples and of much anxiety is removed by this definite and unassailable rule of conduct.

A short paragraph will give sufficient space to deal with those "acts of the will" which follow the act of faith, and lead up to the immediate consideration of the act of love of God and sorrow for sin. Of these TIMOR is the first named by the Council, which is careful to add that it speaks of "*divinae justitiae timor*" (Sess. vi., c. 6), or, as it explains in another place (Sess. xiv., c. 4, can. 8), "*gehennae et poenarum metus*." As Suarez interprets the Council: "*Est autem praecipue sermo de timore poenae . . . utique vindictivae . . . Timor disponit ad justitiam . . . nam qui timet malum, fugit etiam causam ejus; causa autem mali quod a Deo praecipue timeri potest, est peccatum; ergo si homo verum timorem Dei concipiat, necesse est ut peccatum fugiat, et voluntate sua ab illo avertatur. Item qui ab aliquo malum timet, quaerit placere illi . . . ergo, hac saltem ratione, timor Dei est optima dispositio. . . . In hoc puncto dicendum est timorem et spem aliquo modo in necessitate convenire, nihilominus tamen spem simpliciter magis necessariam esse. Addendum est necessitatem timoris esse moraliter ac regulariter intelligendam, quia, cum Deus vult, facile convertit hominem illuminando intellectum per fidem et attentam considerationem majestatis, et bonitatis ipsius, et gravitate peccati, quatenus offensa illius est, et excitando immediate affectum ad perfectam Dei dilectionem et ad detestationem peccati propter ipsum, et cum spe veniae ab illa obtinendae sine interventu timoris, aut alterius actus voluntatis qui ex ipso nascatur. Hoc saepe a Deo fit.*" This last consideration is of great practical value, particularly in the direction of penitents who have been for some time leading virtuous lives, and to whom the absence of *timor* is not unfrequently a source of alarm. Suarez continues: "In ordine ad justificationem non est specialis actus circa totam materiam SPEI exercere, sed solum circa id quod ad negotium justificationis necessarium est, nimirum, illa duo—*sperare gratiam* ad agendam poenitentiam sufficientem, et *veniam*, si agatur." (*Ibid.* c. xix. n. 8-12). The "PROPOSITUM NOVAE VITAE," required by the Council, "*est aliquo modo necessarium,*

nam in efficaci amore Dei, et in odio peccati absoluto, virtute includitur. An vero sit necessarium, etiam ut esse potest specialis actus ab amore et detestatione distinctus, ab auctoribus controvertitur. Verumtamen judicandum est per se necessarium essu *si memoriae* objectum ejus occurrat, fieri tamen potest in casa ut *implicite in aliis contentum sufficiat*" (*Ibid.* c. xx., n. 19). Finally, as to the mutual relations between *amor Dei* and *odium peccati*, and their separability in the process of justification, Suarez writes: "Censeo in casu et per accidens posse hominem justificari *per solum amorem formalem* Dei super omnia, virtute et voto includentem detestationem peccatorum, etiamsi tunc formaliter actus pœnitentiae non occurrat. Ita S. Thomas et plures theologi . . . Hoc facile est gratiae: *nescit enim tarda molimina Spiritus Sancti gratia*, et ideo, proposito Deo summe diligibili, statim, nullo alio expectato, potest voluntas cum adjutorio gratiae in dilectionem Dei prodire, sicut justus potest diligere Deum ex ejus recordatione, nulla praecedente recordatione priorum peccatorum."

After this dreary and disproportionate exordium, we come—tandem aliquando—to the consideration of the "Motivum Amoris." There is among some theologians an opinion (which Suarez at one time called probable) that perfect charity or contrition might arise from a motive less exalted than *dilectio Dei super omnia*—if, for example, man held sin in supreme hatred because it involved shameful ingratitude towards a God who had been so bountiful a Benefactor; or because it inflicted on Him grievous and deliberate injustice. These same theologians had no doubt of the perfection of that contrition which sprang from unbounded hatred for sin, as being an *offensa Dei*, which sentiment of abhorrence might easily be found even where love and affection for God do not formally exist. We have an illustration of this feeling in the conduct of those political reformers who entertain most cordial dislike for social or political disorder, while all the time they combine and confederate for the abolition of the law, and sometimes even for the dethronement of the law-giver. De Lugo vindicates this opinion from the censure of Vasquez, by intimating that

it was supported "auctoritate theologorum non infimae notae; item ex modo loquendi antiquorum theologorum et SS. Patrum." Furthermore, he says that such "contrition," as a "medicina peccati," is more equitably and mercifully proportioned to human frailty, which, while very frequently leading man to sin, can seldom raise his soul to the level of "dilectio Dei super omnia." He reminds us that in this theory a reverent and worshipful consideration of God is ever present as a motive for reprobating sin, in which it recognises the maximum malum, "etiamsi non adsit motivum dilectionis rigorosae." At the very least, sorrow like this is a self-denying "aversio a seipso" and a turning towards God: it is a reversal and retraction of what man unhappily did by sinning, when he renounced the service of God, and paid homage to creatures. Within the limits of such "contrition" as this it may easily happen that sin would be held in such utter abomination, that, rather than commit it, the "contrite" man would be willing to endure the loss of all earthly goods, and to suffer the infliction of the severest torture. It is certainly a more perfect sorrow than that which springs from hope alone, and, as a disposition to justification, it is far in advance of that "timor servilis" which disavows sin because it shudders at the dread of retribution. Viewed as a theory, it is little wonder that sometimes at least it won the approval of Suarez, and the timorous yet earnest apologetic defence of De Lugo. It asserts the binding force of God's law, and the duty of obedience; it acknowledges that sin ruptures the peaceful relations that should subsist between man and his Creator, and, by a whole-souled repudiation of sin, seeks to repair the breach: and, finally, it seems to satisfy by literal fulfilment all that the prophet Ezechiel required (C. xviii. v. 27) to ensure salvation: "*Cum averterit se impius ab impietate sua quam operatus est, et fecerit iudicium et justitiam, ipse animam suam vivificabit. Considerans enim, et avertens se ab omnibus iniquitatibus ejus, quas operatus est, vita vivet et non morietur.*"

Notwithstanding the apparent intrinsic probability of this theory, we are bound by all the laws of prudence to abandon it, and to hold "cum communi sententia" (as De Lugo him-

self designates it) “contritionem sufficientem ad justificationem debere oriri ex peculiari motivo charitatis, scilicet, *Dei super omnia dilecti*.” The discussion of the last paragraph, however, “clears the atmosphere,” and narrows the area of debate. For it follows that we cannot describe contrition as *perfect*, neither can we rely on it for reconciliation with God, if it hold sin in utter and supreme detestation solely because sin is an act of ingratitude towards our most generous Benefactor, nor because it wantonly disturbs an exquisitely beautiful and divinely organised supernatural system, nor because it is a refusal to render dutiful obedience to the ordinances of the Supreme Monarch, nor yet because it is an abjuration of that allegiance which we owe to God as our Creator, our Redeemer, and our only Hope. We may admit all these claims in all their plenitude, and, influenced by the conscious pressure of these claims, we may have the “*animi dolor et detestatio de peccato commisso, cum proposito non peccandi de caetero*,” and yet, admirable and valuable as those dispositions unquestionably are, something is still needed to complete the “*dispositio ultima*,” which alone is followed by the infusion of sanctifying grace. Our hatred of sin must—in its ultimate principle—be dictated by our knowledge that sin is an abomination in the sight of God, and by the love we bear to His infinite perfections. In other words, it must be born of the “*motivum perfectae charitatis*,” to the discussion of which, exclusively, the remaining periods of this paper shall be directed.

Perfect charity is defined to be the “*virtus theologica qua Deum propter seipsum suasque infinitas perfectiones super omnia amamus, atque nosmetipsos et proximum propter Deum diligimus*.” (Lehmkuhl). St. Augustine, interpreting the *clausula* “*propter seipsum*,” tells us—and is careful to repeat in almost all his works—that it warns us against loving, or serving, or seeking God, “*propter aliud*,” that is, “for any temporal reward, for any reward outside Himself, for any good distinct or different from Himself, but that He may be our good, our beatitude, our recompense.” (Ballerini). And here it may be well to recall to the memory of our readers—although in doing so now, we are anticipating—

that the force of this all-important "propter" is both positive and negative: positive, in indicating the ever essential motive of perfect charity, as the impulse or power that *de facto* moves the soul; negative, in discarding all co-ordinate motives, yet not so exclusive as to exorcise the concomitancy of others that are less exalted, provided these latter exert no more than a secondary or adventitious influence on the will. To exclude them would lead to the errors of Molinos, or to the theory of Fénelon, "*de pura charitate sine ulla admixtione motivi proprii interesse*," which was solemnly condemned by Pope Innocent XII.

According to the characteristically concise and lucid analysis of the act of perfect charity given by Lehmkuhl, the "*affectus quibus actu amamus*" are three, namely, "*Complacentia, Benevolentia et Beneficentia*."

COMPLACENTIA is defined the "*actus quo amans erga perfectiones personae amatae bene afficitur, ejusque bona praesentia ut talia respicit*." It is the production of the intellect and will conjointly. The action of the intellect is indispensable, in order that the divine perfections may be adequately represented to the will by faith, since love presupposes knowledge. No one can be conceived as loving an object the love-worthy qualities of which are unknown to him; and to reveal in some measure the unspeakable loveliness of God and of His attributes is the realistic function of faith: "*Fides est sperandarum substantia rerum, argumentum non apparentium*." It is true that men *in via* can never have more than an imperfect and obscure vision of God; but the divine attributes and essence, seen even "*in aenigmate*," evoke, by their transcendent beauty, the highest love of which man is capable. It is manifest that in proportion to the vividness and life-like reality of the representation, will be the evidence and attestation of the supreme excellence of God. To assist both intellect and will in supplying this fundamental pre-requisite of complacency, theologians suggest a variety of methods; but, remembering that to pursue this subject to any considerable length would be to encroach upon the domain of Ascetic theology, we must be satisfied with referring to it only in so far as may be requisite to illustrate the matter in hand.

While all maintain that the principle which moves us to love God by perfect charity must be the "bonitas Dei ut est in se," it is the common teaching of theologians that this "bonitas," as apprehended in any one of the divine attributes, is an adequate *motivum formale* of perfect love: "Quicquid enim divinum est, summe perfectum et summe amabile est atque ad summum amorem merito nos provocare potest." The divinity manifests itself to man through the divine attributes; it is through them that we are enabled to obtain a glimpse of the divine essence; and, under what conception soever we approach it, it is the divine essence that ultimately fixes and absorbs our amazed and wondering complacency, This is the meaning of what Suarez wrote (*De Essentia Dei*, L. I. cap. x. n. 3): "Attributa divina in re non distinguuntur ab essentia divina. Haec est communis sententia theologorum . . . quatenus in Scripturis dicitur Deus ipsa sapientia charitas, veritas, &c." In the same work (cap xii. n. 3) he says: "Essentia divina est de essentia sapientiae, justitiae et singulorum attributorum, ac proinde necessario includitur in conceptu singulorum." Sometimes our faculties are engaged in contemplating the justice of God or His power, sometimes it is His mercy or His sanctity; it matters little which, for our wondering love does not terminate in the abstract quality revealed to us, but, penetrating what human language would describe as the outer habit or habiliment, it finds a resting place only when it reaches the *Ens Divinum* itself. Let us take, for example, that last-named attribute, and see how the consideration of God's sanctity, as revealed by the Holy Ghost, may lead us on to the making of an act of perfect love.

We have a distinct idea that sanctity signifies *purity without stain*, our comprehension of stainless purity resting ordinarily on the notion which remains to us when, having formed a conception of some estimable earthly object, we have succeeded in eliminating from it every feature that could imply defilement or blemish. But this method of apprehending sanctity, being almost purely negative, conveys little more than an almost impalpable abstract idea, and can afford little aid in raising our souls to the realising

of a living, positive stainlessness. Our conception grows more vivid when we institute the comparison between God and His Angels, which Sacred Scripture suggests, and learn that even "in His angels He found wickedness" (*Job. c. ix., 18.*) But even still, since the objects selected for contrast with God are themselves beyond the reach of our senses, the result of that comparison is sadly imperfect. When, however, the Holy Ghost, describing the sanctity of God, tells us that in its presence the Moon is not pure and the Stars refuse their light, our conception of essential purity becomes at once definite and positive. It cannot be otherwise so soon as we raise our eyes to heaven and picture to ourselves the vision of a Being in the manifestation of whose unsullied splendour even the Moon—raised as it is so far beyond the defilements of the earth, and on whose placid orb the eye can discover no stain—becomes obscured and tarnished and unclean. So, too, our idea of the transcendent brightness of that "purity without stain" is more and more exalted, when we picture to ourselves that, in the presence of its ineffable resplendency, the myriad Stars of the firmament grow pale and vanish. The very exigencies of our intelligence force us to attribute that infinite translucid purity to the Divine Being whose sanctity we are contemplating; and the exigencies of our will can give us no peace till our souls go forth and cling to and rapturously seek to become absorbed in a beauty so unutterably entrancing. This is nothing less than the "*Amor Dei super omnia, propter infinitam bonitatem ejus:*" it is perfect charity: for, while we contemplate the attribute with rapture, our souls are deluged with love for the Divine Substance which that attribute glorifies. A similar reflection on any of the other divine perfections will elicit the same insatiable sentiment of complacency, and lead irresistibly to the same affection of perfect love.

In closing this portion of the paper it will be enough to add, that the least difficult and, for most men, perhaps, the only practicable method of arriving at some approximately adequate notion of God's attributes, is to contrast each with the corresponding quality in His creatures; to divest the latter of their imperfections, one by one: and to

amplify illimitably the created quality from which we have withdrawn whatsoever might be conceived as unworthy of God. The resultant of all this process will indeed be humiliatingly cramped and circumscribed; but, if it be proportioned to each man's gifts of grace and intellect, no one will be held liable for its shortcoming. The idea is admirably expressed by La Croix: "Etiam sic excitari potest in Deum amor: Considera, quid ames; forte istum hominem, quia sincerus est; illum quia beneficus; alium quia justus; alium quia prudens, discretus, circumspectus; alium, quia vir pius est et sanctus, &c. Amas virtutem, quia honesta; potum, quia delectat; opes, quia utiles; florem, quia pulcher, &c. Haec omnia a Deo et in Deo sunt, modo infinitis perfectiore" (*De Char.*, L. ii., n. 151.)

The second essential element in perfect charity is, according to all theologians and spiritual writers, the AMOR BENEVOLENTIAE. As the word itself implies, it is the virtue "qua amans amato bona desiderat" (Lehmkuhl.) The "motivum movens" to this love must always be the living, energising, operative conviction that God is supremely worthy of all love, independently of all His relations with creatures. Should our "benevolence" arise from, *and ultimately end in*, even the most tender and grateful remembrance of His bountiful mercies, or from the expectation that He will requite our love, or from any suggestion of self in any form, our sentiment will be, no doubt, graciously regarded by God, but it will be, nevertheless, imperfect, and, failing to lead to a nobler motive, it is incapable of expanding into true charity. This, as has been already said, does not necessarily exclude the coexistence and concomitancy of considerations that are less disinterested, provided always that they be not permitted to usurp the office of cardinal motive force, which belongs essentially to the "dilectio Deo super omnia propter seipsum." To ban them as if their presence necessarily detracted from the purity of perfect charity, would be to err with Fénelon; to affirm that they *never can* be absent, "quia homo propriam felicitatem in cunctis actibus suis necessario quaerit," would be to assert the doctrine once advanced, but afterwards recalled, by Bossuet. Speaking of this last view, Bouvier

(Vol. v., p. 112) informs us that “in hoc ab omnibus desertus est (Bossuet), seipsum reformavit, et doctrina puri amoris, quam tuebatur Fénelon, generaliter fuit admissa, sive in Gallia, sive Romae, etiam ab iis qui librum ejus damnaverunt.” However, the condemnation of Fénelon’s theory evidently proves that an “admixture of self-interest” is not incompatible with perfect charity: and the teaching of St. Thomas conclusively establishes that, if Bossuet had not so roundly asserted the *impossibility* of man’s ever succeeding in putting off self-interested considerations and devoting to God the undivided fervour of his love, he would not have been, after all, far astray in his original position. “Unicuique,” writes St. Thomas, “erit Deus tota ratio diligendi, eo quod Deus est totum hominis bonum. Dato enim, per impossibile, quod Deus non esset hominis bonum, non esset ei ratio diligendi.” This same doctrine is not obscurely involved in the definition of “divina bonitas” given by Suarez (*De Essentia Dei*, L. i., cap. viii., n. 8): “Præcipue solet Deus denominari bonus ex plenitudine omnis perfectionis, et quatenus ex plenitudine ejus propensus est ad se diligendum et communicandum aliis, quibus bonus esse potest.” As men are constituted, it is this latter phase of the “divina bonitas”—its propensity to enrich others out of its own fulness—that is sure to first attract them; and if it win their love, the “bonitas divina” itself, from which that propensity emanates, will soon be loved *ex motivo charitatis*, for, to love the love of God is not far removed from loving His loveliness. Suarez writes still more directly in another place: “Cum Deus perfecte amatur propter beneficium, potius amatur quia nos amat: hoc autem charitatis est et amicitiae, neque actus hujus ratio objectiva est extra divinam bonitatem, nam amor quo Deus nos amat, ipse Deus est, et summa quaedam perfectio ejus. Item, ipse nos amat quia bonus est: unde, quia amatur eo quod amat, amatur etiam quia bonus est.” St. Liguori (L. vi. T. iv., n. 442) meets the difficulty which will suggest itself to every one, thus: “Non valet dicere quod ille qui diligit Deum propter bonum suum, seipsum diligat non Deum, nam sapienter respondit S. Franciscus Salesius quod si quis diligeret Deum propter bonum suum, et ita affectus est ut

si a Deo nihil speraret, eum nullomodo diligeret, hic utique peccaret quia positive excluderet charitatem . . . Qui vero amat Deum tanquam sibi summum bonum, et excludit omnem voluntatem peccandi, tunc elicit actum bonum supernaturalem, et *licet non habeat charitatem perfectam*, illam tamen non excludit, eamque jam incipit habere et aliquo modo ad Deum se convertit." The all-important "incipit habere charitatem" of the last sentence does not imply the possession of the "initium charitatis" in the sense of Concina and the other rigidists formerly alluded to ; but it signifies that the loving of God "quia nobis bonus," conjoined with the "*amor complacentiae*" (which is pre-supposed), has but to advance one step farther—to abstract the thought of *self*—when it is sure to culminate in loving God "quia in se bonus est." This last is the unalterable "motivum formale charitatis," up to the attainment of which the others lead. As Ballerini expresses it : "objecta aliarum virtutum, gratitudinis, scilicet, religionis, &c., sin minus perfectae contritionis, imperfectae certo motivum sunt aptissimum : imo *facili negotio poenitentes hac via pertrahi ad motivum perfectae charitatis possunt.*"

After this sufficiently discursive digression, we have to briefly consider the "bona" which the benevolence of charity desires to render to God. "Bona Dei," says La Croix, "alia sunt intrinseca, alia extrinseca. Intrinseca sunt infinitae perfectiones quas in se habet, uti Sapientia, Justitia, Æternitas, &c. Extrinseca sunt quae a creaturis fieri possunt, et placent Deo, nempe quod agnoscatur sicuti in se est perfectissimus, quod ametur sicuti in se est optimus, quod colatur, laudetur, adoretur sicuti in se est praecelestissimus," &c. Regarding the "bona" of both orders, Lehmkuhl, condensing the common teaching of theologians, says : "Erga Deum vero benevolentia, quae sola re ipsa possibilis est, circa ejus *externam gloriam*, augmenti et detrimenti capacem, versatur eamque promovere studet. Neque vero neque pleno sensu BENEFICENTIA est, sed potius eam quodammodo imitatur. Haec autem quasi-beneficentia eatenus amoris divini necessaria est, quatenus firmam voluntatem denotat, qua homo *saltem ipse in se* divinam gloriam per mandatorum observantiam promovere paratus est." "Benevolence," therefore, implies

“wishing joy” to God in the fruition of His infinite glory; the offering of felicitations on His privilege of eternally feasting His eyes on His own ineffable beauty; and lowly, worshipful congratulation on the endlessness and unalterability of His supreme sway. It lovingly protests that our hearts are made happy in the knowledge that this absolute plenitude of happiness can, through all unending ages, suffer no diminution, no overclouding, no limiting of the faculty to confer and necessitate beatitude worthy of an infinitely perfect God. It goes further, and, applying itself to the consideration of how it may prove the genuine and unaffected sincerity of those protestations of love, it becomes *affective efficax* and, as far as may be, *effective efficax* as well. It labours to remove from the soul all that could be offensive to the presence of God, and devises against future offence such anxiously and affectionately contrived provisions as give assured promise of stability in His service.

“TUſC ADIABO DEUM PERFECTE ſi Deo velim iſta bona, ideo, quia Deo bona ſunt . . . Si orem et quantum eſt in me, impediam, ne offendatur, quia propter infinitam bonitatem ſuam, id eſt, propter illas infinitas perfectiones quas habet, digniſſimus eſt non offendi, ſed ſuper omnia amari, coli, honorari.” (La Croix.)

C. J. M.

THE BROWN SCAPULAR AND THE CATHOLIC DICTIONARY—II.

IN a former paper on this subject we gave the character of Lamoy and his writings. We showed that he was animated by a spirit of bitter hostility to the Holy See, canonized saints, religious orders, and Catholic devotional practices; that his facts were often groundless, his arguments unsound, his conclusions false, and we may add too that his works have, nearly all, been condemned by the Holy See.

As the difficulties raised in the second part of the article on the Scapular in the *Catholic Dictionary*, are drawn from

this poisoned source, we might dismiss the subject summarily by stating that they have no solid foundation, and are unworthy of serious consideration.

For the satisfaction, however, of our readers, we purpose to take up each point separately, examine its merits, and ascertain its value.

The writer in the *Catholic Dictionary* says :

“As to the fact of the apparition to St. Simon Stock, it is accepted by Benedict XIV., Papebroch, and Alban Butler on the faith of a ‘Life’ of the Saint by Swaynton, who was his secretary, and wrote the story of the apparition at his dictation.”

It is a high compliment, no doubt, to Swaynton that the apparition is believed on his authority by such grave writers as Benedict XIV., Alban Butler, and a critic so severe as Papebroch.

The writer seems here to imply, however, that these grave authors accepted the truth of the apparition on the sole authority of Swaynton. Such cannot be the case, as in their writings they refer to other motives and authorities in support of their belief. Thus Benedict XIV., in his work *De Festis* (T. 2, cap. 70, et seq.), as well as in his work *De Canoniz. Sanct.* (L. 4, p. 2, cap. 9, n. 10) refers to the authors of the *Vinea Carmeli*, *Spec. Carm.*, *Clavis aurea* and the *Scap. Marianum*. Alban Butler, in his life of St. Simon, says that Benedict XIV. and Fr. Cosmas de Villiers refute Launoy on the testimonies of several ancient writers of the order.

That Papebroch had other motives for believing in the apparition and the devotion of the Scapular, besides the authority of Swaynton, is evident from passages in his reply to Fr. Sebastian of St. Paul’s strictures on him. In this work he thus writes :—

“Quod ad Deiparæ verba attinet, de qualicumque ordinis habitu, in quo moriens æternum non patietur incendium; ego in illis nullam video difficultatem. Ea enim Patres Carmelitæ tam commode exponunt, ut facile evadant omnem justam reprehensionem . . . Improbus porro sit qui neget, multis Romanorum Pontificum gratiis ac privilegiis ornatam, multis etiam divinis beneficiis comprobatam fuisse, istam Scapularis Mariani devote gestandi religionem.” (V Art xx., n. 28.)

Alban Butler in his life of St. Simon says in reference to the devotion of the Scapular:

"Several Carmelite writers assure us that he (St. Simon) was admonished by the Mother of God in a vision, with which he was favoured on the 16th of July, to establish this devotion."

We may conclude, therefore, that these authors had other motives, besides the authority of Swaynton's life of the saint, for their belief in the apparition to St. Simon.

The writer says that the Carmelites refused Papebroch a sight of this life. This does not seem to affect very much the matter under consideration, but we may add that if they thought he would treat it as he did other portions of their history to which he had access, they were perfectly justified in doing so.

The writer continues thus:

"Next, to understand the force of Launoy's arguments for regarding this passage in the 'Life' if it be authentic, as an interpolation, we must remember that the miracle is represented as gaining immediate notoriety."

Here the writer casts a doubt on the authenticity of this life without giving any reason for so doing. He then gives Swaynton's, or, as he calls him, pseudo-Swaynton's words. Why pseudo? Is he not as real as any personage that figures in history? He is quoted and alluded to by several historians who have written on the Scapular, and his life is recorded in the *Bibliotheca Carmelitana*, amongst the distinguished men of the Carmelite Order. These are Swaynton's words:

"The story running through England and beyond it, many cities offered us places in which to live, and many nobles begged to be affiliated to this holy order, that they might share in its graces, desiring to die in this holy habit."

The writer then adds:

"If so, the silence of the Carmelite authors for more than a century after is remarkable."

Whilst not admitting that the silence of Carmelite authors for more than a century after, is a valid argument against a fact that was received generally, not only throughout

England, but also in other countries, we deny that they were silent on the subject for more than a century after.

St. Simon Stock died on the 16th of May, 1265, at the Carmelite Convent of Bordeaux, whilst on his visitation there, and not in 1250, as is represented in the *Catholic Dictionary*. Not only Swaynton, his cotemporary, but other Carmelite authors, relate the story of the vision within the century after the saint's death, as we shall show further on.

The writer in the *Catholic Dictionary*, using Launoy's argument, says that Ribotus, Provincial in Catalonia (about 1340), in his ten books on the institution and remarkable deeds of the Carmelites, ignores it.

True, he is silent about it, because it did not come within the scope of his work. He wrote an apology for the Carmelites on questions at that time disputed, namely, the antiquity of the order, its hereditary succession from the Prophet Elias, its confirmation, title, &c., which facts were to be proved by the testimony of the ancient writers from whom he quoted, and not by the recent heavenly-given benefit of the Scapular, concerning which there was at that time no controversy. The same may be said of the silence of the other Carmelite authors quoted by the writer from Launoy, viz., Chimilensis, or rather, Chimetensis and others. They wrote on the origin of the order, its founder, its succession from the Prophet Elias, its title, confirmation, &c., which were questions in their time disputed. But it did not come within the aim of their works, nor would it promote the end they had in view to treat of the recent and undisputed fact of the vision to St. Simon. Papebroch gives a similar reason for his silence concerning the vision when reproached by Fr. Sebastian of St. Paul, for not mentioning it in his notice of the saint's life. These are his words :

“Importunus est qui mihi vitio vertendum putat, quod de B. Simone breviter agens in *Majo*, maluerim tacere de Scapulari . . . Importunissimus porro est, quisquis putat, debuisse me late excurrere in commendationem praedictae devotionis, cum id alienum sit ab operis nostri instituto.” (*Resp. ad Exhib.*, &c., Pars. 2, p. 381.)

The writer seems to attach great importance to the

silence of the great English Carmelite theologian Waldensis, for he says :

"Strangest of all, Waldensis, a Carmelite, an Englishman, and writing in England (*De Sacramentalibus*) tries hard to prove the religious habit a sacramental, and speaks particularly of the Carmelite habit and the form which it is given."

To this we answer that it would have been altogether outside the question were Waldensis, in his controversy with the heretics on the sacraments and sacramentals, to allude to the vision to St. Simon, which they would not admit. He wrote, no doubt, about the Carmelites and the holy habits or garments of religious in general, but it was more to defend them against the attacks of the heretics, than to explain their privileges. Hence in his work on Sacramentals, chap. 25, he mentions some of the rules of the Carmelite order, and proves that monastic rules are not repugnant to the Gospels as Wickliffe contended. In the 89th chapter he defends the antiquity of the Carmelite order, and the title of Brothers of the Blessed Virgin, both of which questions were impugned by Wickliffe. In the 92nd chapter he writes of and defends the holy habits or garments of religious in general, against which the same heretic declaimed. It would seem that this was a fitting occasion for alluding to the vision in which St. Simon received the scapular from the Blessed Virgin. But as his adversary rejected all such visions, Waldensis prudently omitted any reference to it, and instead had recourse for his proofs and illustrations to the Holy Scriptures, such as the hem of our Lord's garment, the cloak of Elias, and the like, the miraculous power of which Wickliffe would not dare deny. Hence it is easy to understand why Waldensis makes no allusion to the vision of St. Simon in his controversies with the Wickliffites.

But granting that some Carmelite historians are silent about the Scapular, that is no argument against its authenticity as long as there are other Carmelites equally trustworthy who mention it in their works. If that kind of argument were valid, many most important events, both in sacred and profane history, might be denied or called into question. Thus the mission of the Archangel Gabriel to the Blessed

Virgin, to announce to her that she was chosen by God to be the Mother of the Messiah, is recorded by St. Luke in his gospel, whilst the other Evangelists make no mention of that august event. Would it, therefore, be lawful to call it into question? The institution of the Rosary by St. Dominick is narrated by many writers, and yet the great Dominican authors St. Thomas, Durandus and Cajetan make no allusion to it in their works. Is it, therefore, of doubtful origin? We could illustrate this subject by many other examples from both sacred and profane history, if space would permit. But it is unnecessary, as the weakness of such reasoning is evident to all.

The next statement in the article in question is as follows :

“The vision is mentioned, apparently for the first time, so far as is known for certain, by Grossus, a Carmelite of Toulouse, in his *Viridarium* (1389),” then by Paleonidorus. (*Antiq. Ord. Carm.* vi. 8, apud Launoy).

We now proceed to show that there are many Carmelite authors antecedent to the time of both Grossus and Palaeonidorus, who relate the vision to St. Simon.

First of all it is related by the saint himself in a letter addressed to all his brethren. This holy man, by the angelic purity of his life and his great devotion to the Mother of God, merited this heavenly favour. We are told that at the early age of twelve years, he retired into the solitude of the desert and there for twenty years led a most austere life. Having been divinely inspired to embrace the rule of the Carmelite order, some members of which at that time had arrived from the Holy Land, he sought and readily obtained admission amongst them. He was sent to the University of Oxford to make his ecclesiastical studies, which he did with great success, and in due time was admitted to Holy Orders. At a general Chapter held at Aylesfort, Kent, in 1245, he was unanimously elected General of his order, which he ruled with great prudence for twenty years. On the authority of this holy man, a canonized saint of the Church, who was chosen on account of his great wisdom to be Prior General of his order, we have the story of the apparition of

the Blessed Virgin. He was not one likely to be deceived or to deceive others.

His order being greatly persecuted, he constantly prayed to his holy Patroness to protect it and give it some mark of her special favour. In answer to these prayers she deigned to give him the Scapular as a badge of her special protection.

The next who relates this vision is Swaynton, the saint's secretary, confessor and companion in his visitations. We are told by Pitsæus in his work *De Scriptoribus Angliæ*, (p. 346), that he was an English Carmelite, a Doctor of Theology and Professor in Oxford, afterwards taught sacred literature in Bordeaux, and was distinguished in every branch of knowledge. His life is written in the *Bibliotheca Carm.* (T. 2, p. 603). We there read that he was author of many works on sacred subjects, and amongst others he wrote a life of St. Simon in which he records the vision. The passage in which it is related is too long for insertion here, but may be seen in the *Spec. Carm.* (T. 1, pars. 3, N. 2077). It will be sufficient to quote a few points.

Swaynton tells us that the saint narrated to his assembled brethren, the apparition, saying amongst other things :

"Fratres charissimi, benedictus Deus qui non dereliquit sperantes in se, et non sprexit preces servorum suorum . . . Cum effunderem ultimam meam in conspectu Domini, quamvis sim pulvis et cinis ; et in omni fiducia Dominam meam Virginem Mariam deprecarer, quod sicut volebat uti appellari Fratres suos, monstraret se Matrem, eripiendo nos de casu tentationum et aliquo signo gratiæ nos recom-mendo erga ipsos, qui nos persequuntur . . . Apparuit mihi cum grandi comitatu, et tenendo habitum ordinis, dixit : *Hoc erit tibi et omniis Carmelitæ prædicatione. In hoc moriens, æternum non patietur infernum* . . . Fratres, conservando verbum istud in cordibus vestris, set agite electionem vestram certam facere per bona opera et nunquam deficere ; Vigilate in gratiarum actione pro tanta misericordia, orantes sine intermissione, ut sermo mihi factus clarificetur ad laudem sanctissimæ Trinitatis, Patris, Jesu Christi, Spiritus Sancti et Virginis Mariæ semper benedictæ."

Swaynton here relates a miracle effected through the instrumentality of the Scapular, the day after the vision. The saint, accompanied by Swaynton, was journeying to Winton, where there was a man named Walter, who had led a very wicked life and was now dying in despair. The dean of the

church of St. Helen, at Winton, brother of the dying man, besought the saint to come to him and endeavour to procure his conversion. The saint accordingly came, and having prayed, laid on him the holy Scapular. The dying man was immediately changed. He sought pardon for his sins, begged to receive the sacraments, and died a happy death. In gratitude for this conversion the aforesaid dean founded a Carmelite monastery at Winton.

This miracle was the happy occasion of the further confirmation of the vision. The report of it having reached the ears of the Bishop of Winton, he sent for the saint, and questioned him as to the power of the Scapular, &c. Having satisfied himself as to the truth of the apparition, he ordered the narrative to be committed to writing, and authentically signed and sealed. (*V. Spec. Carm.*, T. 1, pars. III., p. 519.)

In the year 1348, less than a century after the death of St. Simon, we have another Carmelite author, William of Coventry, relating it in his work *Scutum Carmelitarum*. His words are :

“S. Simon de Anglia Generalis Ordinis sextus, qui Dei gloriosissimam Genitricem jugitur deprecabatur, ut Carmelitarum Ordinem, qui speciali gaudet ipsius Virginis titulo, aliquo communiret privilegio Cui Beatissima Virgo cum multitudine Angelorum, apparuit, scapulare ordinis in benedictis suis manibus tenens et dicens: *Hoc erit tibi et cunctis Carmelitis privilegium; quod in hoc moriens, aeternum non patietur incendium.*” (*V. Bibliotheca Carm.* T. 2, p. 759.)

In the same century (1360) John Wilson, in his *Martyrologium Anglicanum*, thus writes :

“Decima sexta Maii Burdigalis in Guasconia, depositio S. Simonis Confessoris et Generalis Carmelit. in Anglia; quo orante B. Virginem Mariam, illa apparuit ipsi cum comitatu Angelorum ferens scapulare sui ordinis in manibus et dixit: quod quicumque mortuus fuerit in isto ordine salvus erit.” (*V. Biblioth. Carm.* T. 2, p. 759, et *Spec. Carm.* T. 1, pars. III., pp. 521 et 529.)

The Scapular is also alluded to by Pope John XXII., who was elected in the year 1316, fifty-one years after the death of St. Simon. In his Bull “*Sacratissimo uti Culmine*,” or as it is called the Sabbatine Bull, he informs us that the Blessed Virgin appeared to him and told him that they who enter

the holy order and wear the sign of the holy habit (the Scapular) shall enjoy certain privileges. John was favoured with this vision as a reward for his great devotion to the Mother of God, and in answer to his prayers to her, that God would avert the evils with which the Church was menaced and deliver him from his enemies. This vision and promise corroborate and confirm the promise made to St. Simon in favour of those who wear the Scapular.

The next Carmelite writer who refers to the Scapular is John of Hildesheim in his *Defensorium Ordinis Dei Virginis Mariae de Monte Carmeli*, written in 1370. Although this work treats chiefly of the ancient history of the order, in some verses of the last chapter, he thus alludes to St. Simon, the Scapular, and its prerogatives.

“Dat superna professis commoda vitæ
Est salvificus Prior; est et vita superstes
Stat pro signo de subveniundo sodali.”

(*V. Spec. Carm.* T. 1., pars. 2, p. 159.)

The Carmelite author who next gives us an account of the vision is John Grossus, who flourished in 1389. According to the writer in the *Catholic Dictionary*, he was the first apparently to mention it, as far as is known for certain. We have seen, however, such is not the case, as others before him, at least equally authentic, have alluded to it. This author, in his work *Viriderium*, gives a brief outline of the life of St. Simon, in which he thus relates the vision:

“Whilst devoutly praying to the glorious Virgin Mary, Mother of God, she appeared to him surrounded by a multitude of Angels, holding in her hand the Scapular of the Order, and saying, ‘*This shall be taken and be all Carmelite a privilege: he who dies in this habit shall be saved.*’”

He then adds these verses:—

“Si ordinis in signo moritur quis jure benigno
Solvitur a penis, truiturque locis peramanis
Hoc impetravit Simon a Virgine chara
Postea migravit scandens ad gaudia clara.”

After him we have in 1430, Thomas Bradley, an English Carmelite, who was appointed Bishop of Dromore in Ireland by Pope Eugene IV. He was also Apostolic Legate. In the

second chapter of his tract *De fundatione, &c. Ordinis Fratrum Glorios. Dei Genitricis Virginis Mariae de Monte Carmeli*, he thus refers to the vision :

“Erat tunc vir sanctus in religione praedicta, Simon Stock nomine natione Anglicus, qui Dei gloriosam Genitricem jugitur deprecabatur, ut Carmelitarum ordinem, qui speciali gaudet ipsius Virginis titulo, aliquo communiret privilegio . . . Cui Beatissima Virgo cum multitudine Angelorum apparuit, scapulare . . . in benedictis manibus suis tenens et dicens: Hoc erit tibi et cunctis Carmelitis privilegium, quod in hoc moriens æternum non patietur incendium.”

Balduinus Leersius, a Carmelite writer who flourished in 1460, also refers to the vision in the fourth chapter of his *Collectaneum Exemplorum*. His words are :

“S. Simon sextus Generalis Ordinis, Vir Magnæ abstinæ et devotionis, specialiter ad Beatam Virginem Mariam: multis in vita clarens miraculis: sæpius Virginem Gloriosam Dei Genitricem, ordinis Carmelitarum Patronam singularem, deprecabatur humiliter et attentius, ut titulo suo insignitos pariter communiret privilegio . . . Quodam ergo tempore dum devote oraret, Virgo gloriosa Mater Dei cum multitudine Angelorum ei apparuit, Scapulare in manu tenens et dicens: *Hoc erit tibi signum et cunctis Carmelitis privilegium: in hoc habitu moriens salvabitur, &c.*, ei Scapulare tradidit. (*V. Spec. Carm.*, T. 1, pars. 3, p. 367.)

Again we have the Carmelite, Peter Bruyne, Prior of the Convent of Ghent. In the sixth chapter of his *Tabulare Ordinis Fratrum, &c.*, which was printed in 1474, he thus refers to the Scapular:—

“Itaque indui Scapularibus aspiciamus Carmelitas: qui, sancto tradente Simone Stock, Virgineis tentum manibus Scapulare (quando suæ devotionis in Virginem Mariam, veluti cujusdam præmii præludio, Mariam etiam aspexerat) mirum in modum alacres induendum susceperunt.” (*V. Spec. Carm.*, T. 1, p. 2, p. 209.)

The next important witness we shall quote is Arnold Botius, a Carmelite of Ghent, a renowned theologian, philosopher, orator and poet, who flourished in 1480. He is thus described by the Abbot Trithemius in his book on ecclesiastical writers:

“Arnoldus Botius, natione Teutonicus, Ordinis Fratrum Beatae Mariae semper Virginis de Monte Carmeli, Conventus Gandensis; vir in divinis scripturis studiosus et eruditus et in sæcularibus litteris egregie doctus, Theologus, Philosophus, Orator et Poeta praeclarus ingenio acutus, eloquio disertus, vita et conversatione devotus.”

In the sixth chapter of his *Speculum Historiale*, written in 1494, this author alludes briefly to the vision of the Blessed Virgin to St. Simon and his receiving from her hands the Scapular. But in his larger work *De Patronatu Bmar. Virginis Mariæ*, he devotes a whole chapter, the tenth, to St. Simon, the Vision, his reception from her hands of the Scapular and its privileges.

The last author we shall quote is John Palaeonydorus, a Carmelite of Mechlin, who published in 1497 a history of the Carmelite order entitled *Fasciculus Tripartitus*. In the third book, seventh chapter, of that work, he gives an account of the Vision of St. Simon, in which he received the Scapular from the Blessed Virgin as a sign of privilege to all Carmelites. He also records the fame which this apparition gained, not only in England, but also in foreign countries, and the numbers of distinguished persons who sought to be invested with the holy habit.

There are many other writers, Carmelites and others, who in different ages of the Church have given us histories of this vision, but we abstain from mentioning them, as we have already, we hope, attained our object, which was to meet the objection in the *Catholic Dictionary*, viz., "The vision is mentioned apparently for the first time, so far as is known for certain, by Grossus, a Carmelite of Toulouse, in his *Viridarium* (1389), then by Palaeonidorus (*Antiq. Ord. Carm.* vi. 8, apud Lannoy, published in 1495." We have shown that there are many other trustworthy writers who have related the vision to St. Simon before Grossus and Palaeonydorus.

The writer thinks it right to add, however, that the Carmelites claimed the support of an anonymous MS. in the Vatican, said to have been written early in the fourteenth century.

This document, although spoken of thus lightly is of the highest authenticity. It was rigorously examined and approved of by learned Cardinals. It was examined and read in 1635 by the most illustrious Horatius Justinianus and exhibited to the judges of the Holy Office. After a diligent examination they found that its authenticity could

not be shaken, and consequently approved of it by their decree, as is related by Irenæus of St. James in his theological tract, cap. 1, § 5 (*V. Exhibitio errorum*, &c., by Fr. Sebastian of St. Paul, art. 20, p. 550).

There are other old MSS., ancient verses, seals, &c., which prove the constant belief of the faithful in the devotion of the Scapular. In an old MS. which belonged to the Carmelite convent of Mechlin, written in 1484, and containing memorials of the order, there is an epigram on some of its saints, in which St. Simon and the Scapular are thus alluded to :

“Anglicus iste Simon petit a Christi Genitrice
Praesidium matris ac Scapulare suum.”

V. Vinea Carmeli, p. 560.

In a convent of the Blessed Virgin near Alost in Flanders, founded about 1351, there was an old seal of the order, possessed from the time of the foundation, on which was represented a figure of the Blessed Virgin in the act of giving the Scapular to St. Simon (*V. Spec. Carm.*, pars. iii., p. 521.)

Another important piece of evidence in favour of the vision is an old canonical Office of St. Simon, written in 1435, in the books of the choir of the Carmelite Convent at Bordeaux, where the body of the saint was buried. It was used there in manuscript for many years, and afterwards printed at Bordeaux in 1580. In this Office there is frequent mention made of the privileges of the Scapular, particularly in the hymns and prayer. In the sixth lesson of Matins there is a full description of the apparition (*V. Vinea Carmeli*, p. 430, where a copy of it may be seen.)

The writer says, “No Catholic, Launoy as little as anyone, doubts the utility and piety of the institution.” It is very magnanimous, no doubt, on the part of Launoy and his admirers to admit so much, after having done their utmost, though in vain, to prove that it is of doubtful authenticity.

As to the danger, alluded to, of abuse by a misplaced confidence in the Scapular, we have no fear. Such, too, was

the impression of so weighty an authority as Papebroch, who thus expresses himself on the point :

“Neque nata sint (sicut calumniantur nonnulli) stolidam fiduciam ingerere peccantibus adipiscendae salutis, quomodocumque ducatur vita.” (*V. Resp. ad Exhib. errorum*, &c., art. 20, n. 28).

Instead of tending to cause any neglect of the more important duties of religion, it promotes their observance ; for the rules of the Sodality enjoin in a special manner such essential virtues and good works as prayer, purity, fasting, mortification, the reception of the sacraments, &c. It is known, too, that it exercises a most salutary influence on those who wear it, as they hold themselves bound, in a special manner to imitate the virtues of their holy Patroness, and to avoid everything unworthy of one wearing her holy Scapular.

Much more might be said in favour of this devotion did the space at our disposal permit. We hope, however, we have attained our present purpose which is merely to meet the difficulties raised against this devotion by the article in the *Catholic Dictionary*.

JOHN E. BARTLEY, O.C.C.

BOSSUET AND CLAUDE.

THE conference of Bossuet with Claude dates from a distance as a fact of history, but it must be ever interesting, more especially to ecclesiastics, to witness, even in history, a polemical encounter between two champions, who in their respective spheres ranked so high amongst the celebrated men who adorned the age in which they lived, and of whom the “great nation” is so justly proud.

The portrait of the illustrious Bishop of Meaux is drawn by Massillon in describing him as “a man of vast and specially favoured genius, of a candour that ever characterizes great souls, and minds of the highest order, the ornament of the Episcopate, in whom the clergy of France will for ever feel honoured, a Bishop in the midst of a court, a man

possessed of all sorts of talent, and informed in all the sciences, the Doctor of all the Churches, the terror of all the sects, the father of the seventeenth century, who wanted only to be born in the primitive ages to have been the light of councils, the soul of the assembled fathers, to have dictated the canons, to have presided at Nice and Ephesus." And the author of the life of Madame de Maintenon, speaks of the great prelate in the following eulogistic terms:—

"Led within the sanctuary by his learning and virtue, he was its ornament and oracle. He comes before us at once a controversialist, an orator, a historian, preceptor of the great dauphin, displaying in these various capacities all the depth and elevation of genius, of which the most highly gifted individual is capable. At times, running over the whole world he collects gold and flowers to embellish his writings, whilst again ascending on high he appears associated in a manner with the intelligences of heaven. Too noble to be ambitious, he sought only the merit and happiness of serving men of talent, whilst too rich in his own renown he wanted neither the honours of the ministry nor the purple to add to its lustre. He annihilated the heretics, whom he combated, and gave back life to the dead in pronouncing their panegyrics, and giving more expansion to his genius when he condensed it than when he extended its powers, he comprised the history of the universe in a few pages, in which the majesty of his style fully responded to the sublimity of the subject."

Such is a brief view of the great man, the Eagle of Meaux, whom we are to witness descending into the arena of controversial strife.

Nor was his antagonist an ordinary combatant. He was, in his day, the hero of his party, the Calvinist sect or Huguenots, as they were called in France. The son of a Protestant minister, he was brought up by him in the midst of the religious controversies that raged at the time. Having been ordained minister at the age of twenty-six, he taught theology with great success at Nimes for eight years. Subsequently he came up to Paris, and settled at Charenton, a short distance from the city, where he remained till the revocation of the edict of Nantes, when he passed on to Holland where the brilliancy of his talents attracted universal admiration, and merited for him a handsome pension from the Prince of Orange in the closing years of his life. In his

writings he combated the most distinguished men of his time, a period remarkable in history for the great intelligences that adorned it. Possessed of a subtle and penetrating mind, he combined with an extensive and varied erudition a singular dexterity in disputation, together with a mode of expression at once close, animated, and cogent, and his various works attest in him the qualities of a dialectician of the highest order.

The conference was occasioned by a Mademoiselle de Duras, a lady belonging to an ancient and distinguished family, and especially distinguished in the reign of Louis XIV., on account of the high posts occupied by her several brothers in the army as also in various departments of the civil administration of the country, and she herself had the honour of being lady of the bedchamber to the Duchess of Orleans, at the same time. She was brought up a Calvinist, but becoming dissatisfied with the pretensions of the sect, and yielding to the grace vouchsafed to her from on high, she turned her thoughts towards the Catholic religion. Like other converts she had doubts and difficulties of conscience to overcome, and it occurred to her, that she should be greatly helped to their solution by hearing them discussed by leading men on both sides: and she fixed her mind on Claude as a representative authority of the Calvinist party, and on Bossuet so celebrated at the time for his many eminent qualities, and especially for his ability, as a controversialist in the interests of the Catholic Church. She had her wishes accordingly conveyed to the illustrious prelate, who replied that he was quite willing to meet M. Claude, if he could think the conference would conduce to the spiritual good of the lady in question. So encouraged, Mademoiselle de Duras through the kind offices of the Duke de Richelieu obtained his Lordship's consent to come up to Paris on an appointed day, towards the end of February, 1678, and meet the hero of Calvinism on the following day.

Here we may be allowed a passing reflection to consider how far in general public discussions on controverted points of religion serve to be of advantage in clearing up difficulties, dispelling doubts, and producing convictions on the side

of truth in the minds of those, who assist at such interchanges of argument between men of superior powers of debate. There seem to be reasons for and against the practice under different circumstances. For, occasions may occur, when a Goliath comes forth from the camp of the Philistines, and insultingly calls aloud, "*choose out a man of you, and let him come down, and fight hand to hand.*" (1 Kings, xvii. 8.) In such a case the faithful would, no doubt, be put to shame, and sorely scandalized, whilst a triumph would be given to the enemy, unless there were a David to come forward, who *putting on the armour of God may be able to resist in the evil day*, (Ephes. vi., 17) and "*fight the good fight*," in order to maintain the faith in all its purity and integrity as confided to the Church of God by her Divine Founder. On the other hand, a public discussion on religious subjects before a promiscuous audience, little, if at all, accustomed to regular disputation, would be likely to do more harm than good. The manner of the disputants more than the logical force of their reasoning would make impression, and as a result prejudices might be deepened on the side of error, whilst the simple faithful, together with being pained by the irreligious, not to say blasphemous, dealings of the adverse party with truths and practices dear and sacred to them, might be, moreover, disconcerted by objections set out with a show of plausibility, as we all know how liable minds untrained in dialectic practice are to be influenced and led astray by mere sophistry, which they are unable to unravel. In such circumstances the maxim, "*magna est veritas et praevalerebit*," would have but little chance of being realised; and after all it is not in accordance with Catholic principles to commit the issues of religious discussion to the ability of individual disputants, and the verdict of an indiscriminate assembly; and I believe experience is wanting to attest any advantage resulting to religion from displays of the kind; rather do we find the Apostle's words of admonition to his beloved Timothy too well warranted: *Contend not in words, for it is to no profit, but the subverting of the hearers.* (2 Tim. ii. 14).

But the conference undertaken by Bossuet with Claude was quite of a different character. There was question of a

particular soul seeking the truth in fear and trembling for her own salvation. Her difficulties were confined to particular points, which she had already anxiously discussed in her own mind, and she was therefore quite prepared to hear them argued by persons she had reason to believe ably competent to deal with them exhaustively. The audience besides was to be strictly select, composed only of a few friends on either side, so that the interchanges of argument were sure to be conducted with all the sobriety of temper, and mutual deference so favourable to the elucidation of the subjects to be treated of, whilst Mademoiselle herself would be at liberty to propose any difficulties or obscurities she might have in her own mind for a more complete exposition, so as fully to satisfy herself respecting them.

On coming up to Paris, Bossuet, in accordance with a desire communicated to him on the part of Mademoiselle de Duras, repaired to her residence, in order to hear from her the particular subjects she desired to be discussed in the conference of next day, and the interview, which Bossuet himself relates, is most interesting, and at the same time, most useful, if not necessary, for a clear understanding of the conference itself.

Having received the illustrious prelate with all the respect due to his dignity, and personal character, she opened her mind to him briefly, and in all simplicity by telling him, that the subject she wished to have cleared up with her minister, for it would appear she had already consulted Claude upon it, was the authority of the Church, which to her mind comprised all other points of controversy as regards the Catholic Church.

Having heard her statement Bossuet immediately observed, that she had good reason for confining herself principally, if not exclusively, to the question, which embraced every other question, as she herself had so well remarked; whereupon he proceeded to enlarge upon the authority of the Church, in order to give her a clearer and fuller idea of the article, as the cardinal point of controversy between the Catholic Church and the various Protestant communions.

He noticed, in the first place, that in defence of their position

the ministers boasted, that their belief in the fundamental truths of the Christian religion was beyond all dispute, that the Catholics believed all the doctrines they professed, whilst, on their side, they did not believe all the Catholic Church believed and taught, and they therefore pretended that in holding to all that was fundamental in the Christian religion they rejected only what the Catholic Church had added thereto, and from this they maintained, that they stood upon sure and incontestable ground.

Mademoiselle de Duras here remarked, that she had frequently heard these assertions made by her ministers, whereupon he continued his explanations, saying he would only notice, for the present, that far from admitting that they believed all that was fundamental in the Christian religion, he insisted, that there was one article, and a fundamental one, which they did not believe, namely, the Church as being *universal*. It is indeed true, he observed, that they profess to believe this article in saying in their liturgy, "*I believe in the Catholic, or Universal Church,*" in the same way as the Arians of old, the Macedonians, and Socinians said in words: "*I believe in Jesus Christ and in the Holy Ghost;*" but that as these heretics are justly accused of not believing in reality what they profess to believe in words, because they do not believe as they should, that is according to the true meaning of the articles in question, so also, if it be shown, that the modern sects do not believe in the manner they ought the article of "*the Catholic Church,*" it should inevitably follow that they reject a *fundamental article* of the Christian faith.

Hence came the necessity of understanding what is really meant by the term "*Catholic Church,*" and it should be insisted upon, that in the exposition of the Creed, destined as it was from the beginning to be a standard of orthodoxy for all Christians, the expression should be taken in its most natural and literal sense, and as Christians had always understood it, that is, a society professing to believe the doctrine of Jesus Christ, and governed by His Divine Word, and as making this profession necessarily external. That this should be the natural and proper signification of the word "Church," the signification by which it was known by the

whole world, and used in ordinary conversation, he would look for no other witnesses than the members themselves of the so-called Reformation. For, as in the various prayers of their liturgy they speak of the discipline of the Church, of the faith of the Church, of the pastors and deacons of the Church, they do not assuredly mean the prayers of the predestined, nor the discipline of the predestined, but the prayers, the discipline, and the faith of all the members united in the external and visible society of the people of God; and when they say of an individual, that he edifies or scandalizes the Church, all this is unquestionably meant in reference to an external society in the same way. He pursued this demonstration in the form of baptism used by them, in the obligations prescribed to the god-parents, in their confession of faith, as also the distinction they lay down between what they recognize as the Church of Christ, and a society unduly assuming that title, asserting the rule in Article xxviii. of their confession of faith, that where the Word of God is not received, and where there is no obligation professed of submitting to it, and where, moreover, there is no use of sacraments, it cannot, properly speaking, be said that there is a Church at all in such circumstances. From these references, and the everyday usages of the Calvinist body he drew the inference, that the proper and natural signification as applied by themselves to the word "Church," is that it is a visible and external society of the people of God, amongst whom, although there be *hypocrites and reprobates*, as the confession of faith, Article xxviii., significantly asserts, still their malice cannot, as they say, efface the title of Church; that is, in other words, hypocrites and reprobates mixed with the people of God cannot deprive them of the title of Church, provided always, that it be invested with the external signs of professing the Word of God, and of using the Sacraments, as the same Article so distinctly requires. From all this he concluded, that in the common acceptance of all Christians, comprising even the Calvinistic communion, the word "Church" is taken to mean this external and visible society of the people of God, so much so, that when it is used in any other sense it is qualified by some expression to that effect, as for instance, when

St. Paul, speaking of the heavenly Jerusalem, calls it a church, but adds immediately the distinguishing words: "*Of the first born, who are written in the heavens,*" &c. (*Heb. xii. 23*).

Following up still further the signification of the word "church," he took account of its etymological import, which in the Greek language has the simple meaning of an assembly, leaving its object or purpose to be determined by the circumstances under which it was employed, as for example, where it is said, "*the assembly was confused—a lawful assembly—he dismissed the assembly*" (*Acts xix. 32, 39, 40*), the word used both in Greek and Latin is what is also used to denote a church in English. Hence both Jews and Christians used the expression in a religious sense, meaning the assembly or society, or communion of the people of God professing to serve Him. In the Septuagint version of the Old Testament, translated into Greek long before the coming of Christ, out of more than fifty passages, where the term is employed, there is not even one, in which it does not denote an external visible assembly of some sort, and there are very few, in which it means any other than a visible external assembly of the people of God. Christians have taken the expression from the Jews, and employ it to signify the assembly, or congregation, or society of the followers of Christ, professing His doctrine, and regulating their lives according to His law. Going back, therefore, to the original use of the word its meaning is fixed in that acceptation; and in more than a hundred passages of the New Testament, where it is used, there are scarcely two or three in which the reformers strive, but strive in vain, to wrest it to any other signification. An example is furnished by St. Paul, where writing to the Ephesians he speaks of our Divine Lord, as "*presenting to Himself a glorious Church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing, but that it should be holy and without blemish*" (*v. 27*). They pretend this description cannot apply to a visible Church, or to a Church on earth, since the Church, in that sense, so far from being without stain, has need of saying constantly "*forgive us our trespasses.*" But manifestly this is far from being the Apostle's meaning, for observe, the

Church, of which he speaks is the Church as described in the same place, "*which Christ loveth, and delivered Himself up for it, that he might sanctify it, cleansing it by the laver of water in the Word of life.*" Surely the Church, that Christ loved, proving His love by shedding His blood for her—surely the Church that He sanctified by baptism in the Word of God—surely this was no other than the external visible Church He established here on earth, "*without spot or wrinkle,*" because holy in Himself, as her Founder, holy in the doctrine He confided to her, holy in her sacraments and the other means of sanctification, which make holiness one of her essential characteristics and attributes. By all means the predestined are a portion, and the most noble portion of the Church, but they derive their sanctification from the prayers of the Church, from the doctrine of the Church, from the Divine Sacrifice the Church every day celebrates, and the sacraments she constantly administers, and they are, therefore, included in, and by no means separated from, the visible and exterior Church of Christ, though their personal sanctity may be invisible and unknown in the same way as the sinfulness of the hypocrite and the reprobate is also invisible. Yes, by all means the Church, of which St. Paul speaks, is without stain or wrinkle, because in her teachings she has neither error of doctrine nor corruption of morals, and she contains within her bosom the elect of God, who, although sinners here on earth find in her communion external means wherein "*they are washed and sanctified and justified in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the spirit of our God.*" (1 Cor. vi. 11).

We have here, perhaps, the only passage in which it can be pretended with any kind of plausibility, that the word "church" taken by itself signifies any thing other than the external visible society of the people of God, and it is manifest that it should be understood like all the rest. But supposing, that this and two or three other passages of doubtful import, or different in meaning from the others, which are so clear and numerous, their interpretation should be governed by the latter according to the rules of scriptural criticism.

But does not our Sovereign Teacher Himself, Jesus

Christ, teach us that we are to understand the Church in this sense? Is it not in this sense He Himself speaks of it where He says, "*tell the Church, and if he will not hear the Church, let him be to thee as the heathen and publican*" (Matt. xviii. 17), and where also addressing Peter, He says, "*thou art Peter; and upon this rock I will build my Church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.*" (Ibid. xvi. 18). Beyond all doubt the Church here meant is no other than the Church in its visible external form, for there can be no question of an invisible Church consisting of the predestined, for they are beyond the power of the devil by the fact of their predestination, and it would be quite unnecessary and superfluous to give any assurance in their regard, that the gates of hell should not prevail against them. It was, therefore, the visible external Church our Divine Lord meant in His promise, and we are left to admire the invincible force of that promise, which has so secured the society of His followers, that feeble though it has been from the beginning, humanly speaking, in comparison with the infidel world from without, and rent so often by heretical disturbances from within, there has not been a moment in its history, in which it has not stood forth to be seen as "*the light of the world,*" and "*the city seated on a mountain,*" to be seen by all mankind. (Matt. v. 14.)

Having insisted at such length on the visible and external character of the Church, he asked the lady why her ministers were unwilling to admit this interpretation of the Christian Church, and he went on to say, that they were forced by necessity into an opposite teaching, because when their Church was being established, its founders saw no Church on earth to enter into communion with, but breaking with the Catholic Church they invented the idea, that she had become so deformed and disfigured by errors and abuses as to have lost, in course of time, her primitive visible and external form, and continued her existence in an invisible manner, as a hidden society, consisting of God's elect, and that their work was to bring it forth pure "*without spot or wrinkle,*" out of this hidden state, and so present it to the world, as the reformed Church of God, according to which idea they would have the world believe that they were from

the beginning without suspension or interruption at any period of their existence, from the days of the apostles.

The silliness of this pretension of an invisible Church he had no difficulty in exposing by a lucid interpretation, and an irresistible application of the Scripture passages usually adduced to prove the indefectibility of the Church, and he concluded his argument by saying "thus the work of Jesus Christ on earth is everlasting; the Church founded on Peter's profession of faith is everlasting, and will confess that faith, *'even to the consummation of the world;'* her ministry will be everlasting; she will loose and bind to the end of time; she will continue unceasingly to teach all nations; her Sacraments, that is, the external livery, with which her Divine Founder invested her, shall continue to be always administered, maintaining the Communion exterior and interior of the saints until His coming. The continuance of the Church and the ecclesiastical ministry have no other limits."

To strengthen his argument still more he added, that the doctrine of the Catholic Church on the subject was so true, that the Presbyterian ministers, who deny it, do not deny it altogether, that is to say, their synods act in a manner to make it be understood and felt, that like the Catholic Church they exact an absolute submission to the authority and decrees of their Church, in proof of which he pointed out to Mademoiselle de Duras four articles in their Book of Discipline printed at Charenton, where M. Claude was minister, having for object to maintain order and submission to authority amongst their communion. The first he took from Chapter v. of the Consistories, Article xxxi., which enacts as follows:

"Discussions as to doctrine should be decided, if possible, by the Word of God in consistory, if not, the matter is to be brought before the colloque (a special kind of tribunal), thence to the provincial synod, and lastly to the national synod, where the entire and final decision is to be taken according to the Word of God, to which decision, should anyone refuse obedience point by point with an express condemnation of his errors, he is to be cut off from the church."

This ordinance, he observed, pointed to an authority visible, accessible, and exercising supreme jurisdiction

in deciding all doctrinal disputes amongst the members of their Body, or what they call their Church, thereby accepting the term "church" like all other Christians in its simple natural signification.

He appealed further to the same Book of Discipline, referring to the letter of deputation, which the several churches dispatch to the national synod couched in the following words:—

"We promise before God to submit to everything, that shall be decided in your holy assembly, persuaded as we are, that God will preside thereat, and conduct you by the Holy Ghost unto all truth and justice by the rule of His Word."

On this oath, he observed, that it could not be grounded on a mere human presumption, but must have its sanction from an express promise, of which they affect to assure themselves, on the part of the Holy Ghost, which was going fully as far as the Catholic Church in her general councils.

He, moreover, referred to a third enactment in the same Book of Discipline respecting the sect of Independents, who asserted that each particular Church should govern herself without any subjection to any authority beyond herself. This pretension was pronounced as formally condemned in the synod of Charenton as injurious to Church and State alike, opening the door to all sorts of irregularities and extravagances, and granting licence for instituting as many religions as parishes.

On this, he remarked, that on the principle of private judgment, a fundamental tenet of the Reformers from the beginning, no matter how many councils they held, the doctrine of the Independents was still incontestable, and warranted not only the establishment of as many religions as parishes, but as many as there were individuals. In contradiction, therefore, of the cherished principle of private judgment, they were of necessity compelled to adopt the obligation required by the Catholic Church of submitting to authority in matters of doctrine, and consequently induce the inference, that the Church must

always be a visible public institution or society bound together by the exercise of authority, on one side, and the obligation of obedience and submission, on the other.

Finally he appealed to a resolution of the national synod of Sante-Foi, naming four ministers, who were to repair on their behalf to an assembly, where they were to treat with the Lutherans about a common formulary of faith, having full powers to that effect according to the commission entrusted to them in the following terms: "To decide every point of doctrine, and all other matters submitted to consultation, and to agree to the confession of faith that would be adopted without even previous communication with the several particular churches, if there should be no time for doing so." From the terms of this commission he drew two conclusions, one, that the entire synod, national as it was, committed their faith without reserve to four individual members of their body, a far more extraordinary thing than that individuals should submit to the entire Church, whilst, in the second place, the synod showed, that they were very unfixed in their faith, since they consented to have its form of profession changed, and changed in points so important as those that separated the two parties, including with the rest the doctrine of the Real Presence. Did they expect the Lutherans would come over to them? In that case there would be no change needed in their formulary of faith, so that what was aimed at was, that each party retaining their own inward sentiments, both parties might agree as to a common outward confession, a result to be attained only by adding to, or taking from, their respective formulas even in essential points, at the same time that they would have the world believe, that these formulas so pieced and patched, were in strict accordance with the pure Word of God.

Mademoiselle de Duras here observed, that having already read his treatise, entitled *Exposition of the Doctrine of the Catholic Church*, she quite understood the difficulties he put forward, and not being able to see through them herself, she desired to hear what answer M. Claude would give to them, as well as what he would say on other points regarding the authority of the Church.

He then passed on to notice, that whilst the Calvinists acted in all regards as if the Church was infallible, it was nevertheless, certain that they denied this infallibility, and he added, that it was a fixed and settled principle with them, that every individual, ignorant though he might be, was obliged to believe, that he could understand the Scripture better than all the Councils, and the entire Church besides. She appeared astounded at this statement, when he further affirmed, that there was yet a circumstance more startling, which was, that there was a certain conjuncture, when one was obliged to doubt if the Sacred Scriptures were inspired or not, if the Gospel was a truth or a fable, if Jesus Christ was an impostor or a doctor of truth. She was quite appalled on hearing these extraordinary assertions, whilst he went on to affirm that these obligations of doubting, fearful as they certainly were, resulted as necessary consequences from their doctrine respecting the authority of the Church, and he felt quite certain, that he would force M. Claude to admit them. He then proceeded to explain the reasons for what he had just advanced, and he placed before her eyes the absurdity of their position in denying, on one side, the obligation of believing without examination what the Church decided, whilst on the other, they found it necessary for the purpose of maintaining order to assert for their Church an absolute submission to her decrees and decisions.

Mademoiselle de Duras intimated to him, that she quite understood his explanations, recollecting that she had seen them in his *Exposition*, and that so far she did not know what to say in reply, but she could scarcely believe her ministers to have no answer to give to them.

At this juncture the Countess de Roye, Mademoiselle's sister, entered, and announced the startling news, that M. Claude, who was to meet the Bishop next day, had received an order not to do so, and that he was, therefore, obliged to decline the engagement. The withdrawal of this order, and the further steps preliminary to the conference, I must reserve for another paper not to occupy too much space in the present number of the RECORD.

THE AUTHOR OF THE "CLAIMS OF THE UNINSTRUCTED DEAF-MUTE TO BE ADMITTED TO THE SACRAMENTS."

LITURGICAL QUESTIONS.

I.

CASE OF DIFFICULTY IN DETERMINING THE MASS TO BE SAID.

"On the Feast of St. Mel I was to celebrate in a private house a 'Month's Memory' Mass for a member of the family. By mistake the violet vestments used on the previous Sunday were brought, and I could not get other vestments conveniently. What Mass should I have said? Whether should I have said (1) the Mass for the preceding Sunday—Septuagesima; (2) the Mass of St. Mel; or (3) the Mass for the Dead? "M."

It is true, as our correspondent implies in his question, that the Rubric which says "*Paramenta altaris celebrantis et ministrorum debent esse coloris convenientis officio et missae diei secundum usum Romanae Ecclesiae*," does not impose a grave obligation. With reference to this Rubric St. Alphonsus writes: "*Bene tamen censent Sporer et Quarti hanc Rubricam non obligare sub gravi, nisi scandalum adsit Addit Sporer, satius esse quocumque die facere Sacrum in quolibet colore quam illud omittere, hinc recte dicit a fortiori excusare omnem rationabilem causam.*" (L. 6, 378, dub. 5.)

Now we take it that the inconvenience of procuring other vestments justified our correspondent in the case mentioned in disregarding this Rubric, and consequently that it was lawful for him to use the violet vestments either in a Requiem Mass or in the Mass of St. Mel. And here we may remark that the use of violet vestments in a Requiem Mass on ordinary occasions has no sanction from the rubrics. It is true, that on All Souls' Day in a church in which the Forty Hours' Adoration is going on, violet is the colour to be used, but this is a special provision for a special case.

A moment's reflection should have convinced our correspondent that he could not say the Mass of Septuagesima Sunday. A Mass *de tempore* can never be celebrated as a Votive Mass, and consequently can never lawfully be celebrated unless when prescribed by the Rubrics.

Equally evident is it that our correspondent would not have been justified in saying a Requiem Mass. The Feast of St. Mel is of double major rite—and the only case in which a private Requiem Mass is permitted on such a feast is on the day of interment when the corpse is present. On the third, seventh, or thirtieth day after death or interment *private* Requiem Masses have no privileges, and consequently can be celebrated only when the Rubrics permit the ordinary Requiem Mass.

II.

COMMEMORATION ON THE FEAST OF THE PATRON.

“When the Feast of a Patron of a Church or of a Religious Order is observed on a Sunday, should the commemoration of the Sunday be made *sub una conclusione* with the Prayer of the Feast?”

“INQUIRER.”

No; any commemoration made in the Mass by reason of *occurrence*, as in the case mentioned, has a distinct conclusion, even on the most solemn Feasts.

III.

THE PRAYER “A CUNCTIS” IN THE MASS.

1. “In a parish from time immemorial dedicated to the Blessed Virgin and St. Brigid, is it necessary in the chapels of the workhouse and convents to insert the name of any saint at the letter *N.* in the Prayer, *A cunctis*?”

“SUBSCRIBER.”

2. “When the church to which a priest is attached is dedicated to the Blessed Virgin and St. James, should he make a commemoration of St. James in the common commemoration in the Office, or insert the name of St. James in the Prayer, *A cunctis*?”

“J. F. D.”

As these two questions bear on the same matter, we will answer both together. We understand “Subscriber” to mean that the Blessed Virgin and St. Brigid are the joint Patrons of the principal church of the parish. Now, when the Prayer *A cunctis* is said in a church which has a Patron, the name of the Patron is, of course, to be inserted at the letter *N.* If the church has more than one Patron the names of all are inserted, provided the church has been dedicated

to all alike. If, however, one of them is regarded as the principal Patron, then the name of that one only should be mentioned.

To these rules there are two obvious exceptions. First, if the Patron be one of those whose names are given in the Prayer, the name is not to be repeated at the letter *N*. Secondly, if the Mass be that of the Patron, his name is not mentioned in the Prayer at all, since his intercession has been already invoked by the proper Prayer. In both these cases the celebrant is free either (*a*) not to insert any name at the letter *N*.; (*b*) to insert the name of the Patron of the diocese, or of the Patron of the place (*Patronus loci*); or (*c*) to substitute for the *A cunctis* the Prayer *Concede*, which is given in the *Orationes ad diversa* immediately before the *A cunctis*.

But when Mass is celebrated in a chapel or oratory having no Patron, then not the Patron of the church of the parish in which such chapel or oratory is situated, but the Patron of the diocese, or of the place is to be named in the *A cunctis*. This has been clearly laid down in a reply of the Sacred Congregation of Rites, dated September 12th, 1840, to a question almost identical in terms to No. 1. :—

“Sacerdos celebrans in oratorio publico, vel privato quod non habet Sanctum Patronum vel Titularem, an debeat in Oratione *A cunctis* ad litteram *N*. nominare Patronum vel Titularem Ecclesiae parochialis intra cujus fines sita sunt dicta oratoria, vel Sanctum Patronum Ecclesiae cui adscriptus est, vel potius ulteriorem nominationem omittere?”

Resp. “Patronum civitatis vel loci nominandum esse.”

By the *Patronus loci* as the Sacred Congregation stated on the same occasion in reply to a further question, “intelligendus est praecipuus Patronus tantum vel dioecesis, si habeatur, vel oppidi similiter.” It seems clear, therefore, that in the cases mentioned by “Subscriber” the name of the Patron of the diocese is to be inserted in the *A cunctis*, although De Herdt (*Sac. Lit. Praxis*, vol. i., n. 84, 4°). limits the insertion of the name of this Patron to the case in which there is a custom of making a commemoration of him in the office.

From what has been already laid down, the answer to

question No. 2 may be easily deduced. For if the Blessed Virgin is the principal Patron of the Church, her name only is to be mentioned in the *A cunctis*, and as it is mentioned at the beginning of the Prayer, it is not to be repeated at the letter *N*. If, however, St. James is equally as much principal Patron of the Church as is the Blessed Virgin, his name is to be inserted at the letter *N*., since, as has been already stated, the names of all the Patrons are to be mentioned in this Prayer when all are equally principal. What holds for the insertion of the names in the *A cunctis* holds for the commemoration in the *suffragia sanctorum*, that is, if St. James be only a secondary Patron no commemoration is made of him, if he be a principal Patron a commemoration is made.

IV.

SHOULD THE ANTIPHON OF THE BLESSED VIRGIN BE ALWAYS SAID TWICE IN THE OFFICE?

“DEAR SIR,—A question has arisen among some priests, and they would like to have your opinion upon the matter in dispute.

“How many times should the Antiphon of the Blessed Virgin be recited by one who says the entire Office without any interruption—from Matins to Compline inclusively? One maintains that it should be said twice, once immediately after None, and again after Compline. The other maintains that once only—after Compline—is sufficient.

“Very respectfully yours,
“M.”

We are of opinion that the Antiphon of the Blessed Virgin should be said but once in this case.

The Rubric runs thus: “Dicuntur (Antiphonae B. Mariae) autem extra chorum tantum in fine completorii, et in fine Matutini dictis Laudibus, si tunc terminandum sit Officium, alioquin si alia subsequatur Hora, in fine ultimae Horae.” This Rubric contains two directions; the first orders the saying of the Antiphon at the end of the Compline in *every case*, even though the Office for the Dead, or Matins for the next day should follow immediately; the second orders it to be said at the end of Lauds, if the recitation of the Office is to conclude there, and if not there, why then at the end of the Hour where the recitation does close.

From this it seems plain that in the case you make of the continuous recitation of the whole Office, the Antiphon is not to be said before Compline, unless you suppose that Vespers and Compline are not Hours. The important words of the Rubric are “in fine ultimæ Horæ” (in qua terminandum est Officium). Vespers and Compline are Hours, and in the case stated Compline is the first Hour at which the recitation of the Office ceases. Guyetus, the greatest authority on such points, seems to be clearly of this opinion. He writes: “Extra chorum prædicta terminatio (Ant. B. Mariæ) locum habet duntaxat in fine Laudum, si ibi terminat quis Officium. Quod si pergat ulterius, dicto Versu *Fidelium animæ*, statim subditur principio Primæ *Pater*, &c. Ibidem si post Primam immediate sequatur Tertia, et post Tertiam Sexta, &c., adeo ut *quo primum vice* post Laudes terminatur Officium impendatur prædicta terminatio tota.”—(Lib. iii., cap. xix., q. 4, *De Forma Officii*.)

V.

EXTENDING THE CORPORAL AT BEGINNING OF MASS.—CARRYING THE CHALICE TO THE ALTAR.

“Will you kindly give place in the RECORD for the two following questions:—

“1. Is it right to extend to the full the corporal at the beginning of Mass? As far as your correspondent knows, it is the usual practice to leave one fold of the corporal, unextended till the Offertory?

“2. What is the authority for turning up on the chalice the front part of the veil, when the chalice is carried to or from the altar? It perhaps looks smart, but old ways ought to be respected, if not wrong.”

*Answers:—*1. Yes, it is correct to extend the corporal in full from the beginning of Mass. This is supposed in the Rubric of the Missal which describes what is to be done “Tunc ascendit ad medium altaris, . . . extrahit corporale de bursa quod extendit in medio altaris.” (*Ritus servandus in Cel. Missæ*, ii.) The custom of leaving the front division unfolded till the Offertory was introduced into this country

from France or Belgium, where it is still, I believe, followed. It was intended by this means to meet the danger of sweeping away the minute particles which may remain on the corporal, if the veil rests on the front fold. But this danger can be met consistently with the observance of the Rubric by not allowing the veil to hang so far down as to touch the corporal. This is what is done in Rome and other countries where the corporal is fully extended from the beginning of Mass.

2. I am not aware of any authority founded on the Rubrics for the practice you describe of turning the veil back so as to hold it with the hand laid on the chalice. Some priests coming from Rome bring the custom with them, but the Roman Rubricists like Baldeschi, Martinucci, Foppiano, &c., do not support or allude to any such practice.

D. O'LOAN.

THE CHURCH ABROAD.

HOW TO ADDRESS FOREIGN ECCLESIASTICS AND LAYMEN.

WE have been requested to explain in an early number of the *RECORD* the various forms in which letters are addressed to ecclesiastics and to some classes of the laity in the foreign countries with which we are brought more or less into communication. The curious mistakes which foreigners sometimes make when writing to people in this country are not unfrequently commented upon, and the foreign newspapers that speak of Lord Parnell and Lord Healy and Sir Gladstone, are said not to be worthy of imitation, at least in these apparently unimportant details.

In these matters, as in many others, fashion has a good deal to say, and the forms of courtesy which are always such excellent things in themselves, and which tend so much to elevate and dignify the intercourse of life, are only too often modified by change and by that tyrannical usage—

“*Quem penes arbitrium est et jus et norma loquendi.*”

The philosophy of change in such matters is not, we believe, very

deep or far to seek. One feature of it has been exquisitely touched by Manzoni in his *Promessi Sposi*. It is in one of the last conversations between the good and simple Agnese, and that very worldly-minded philosopher Don Abbondio, who takes such narrow-minded views of the duties of life, but yet who is not wholly devoid of a sort of circumscribed shrewdness which stands him in his narrow sphere.

"Benissimo," disse Don Abbondio, "e io vi servirò; e voglio darne parte subito a sua Eminenza."

"Chi è sua Eminenza?" demandò Agnese. "Sua Eminenza," rispose Don Abbondio "è il nostro signor Cardinale Arcivescovo, che Dio conservi."

"Oh, in questo mi sensi," replicò Agnese, "che sebbene io sia una povera ignorante, le posso certificare che non gli si dice così; perchè quando siamo state la seconda volta per parlargli, come parlo a lei, uno di quei signori preti mi tirò da parte e m'insegnò come si doveva trattare con quel signore e che gli si doveva dire 'Vossignoria Illustrissima' e 'Monsignore.'"

"E adesso," rispose anche Don Abbondio, "se vi dovesse tornare a insegnare, vi direbbe che gli va dato dell' 'Eminenza:' perchè il Papa, che Dio lo conservi anche lui, ha prescritto, fin dal mese di giugno, che ai Cardinali si dia questo titolo. E sapete perchè sarà venuto a questa risoluzione? Perchè l' 'Illustrissimo' che era per loro e per certi principi, adesso vedete anche voi, che cosa è diventato, a quanti si dà! E che volevate fare? Toglierlo a tutti? Richiami, rancori, guai, dispetti e per soprappiù continuar come prima. Dunque il Papa ha trovato un buonissimo ripiego. A poco a poco poi si comincerà a dar dell' eminenza ai vescovi; poi lo vorranno gli abati, poi i prevosti; perchè gli uomini son fatti così. Sempre vogliono andare innanzi, sempre innanzi; poi i canonici."

"E i curati," disse la vedova.

"No. No"—ripresero Don Abbondio, "i curati a tirar la carretta del 'reverendo' fino alla fine del mondo. Non abbiate paura che gli avvezino male i curati. Piuttosto non mi stupirei che i cavalieri i quali sono assuefatti a sentirsi dar dell' illustrissimo, a esser trattati come i cardinali, un bel giorno volessero dell' eminenza anche loro. E se la vogliono, vedete, troveranno chi gliene darà. E allora il Papo che si troverà allora, penserà qualche altra cosa pei cardinali."

We shall commence now with the French, which, perhaps, we have most occasion to use, and which is best known besides even outside of France. We shall take in order the "super-scription" or outward address on the envelope, the address, "en

vedette" at the commencement of the letter, and the "subscription" or conclusion in its various forms.

The envelope or outward address of any ordinary gentlemen who has no particular position or title may be written as follows, for instance :—

Monsieur N——,
30 Rue St. Honoré,
Paris.

In former times it was customary to commence the address with the preposition *À*—*À Monsieur*. It is still placed before certain titles such as *À Sa Sainteté*, but it is now generally suppressed before *Monsieur*, *Madame* and *Mademoiselle*. Nor very long ago in France it was rigorous etiquette to double the *Monsieur*, *Madame* and *Mademoiselle*, and to write *Monsieur Monsieur*, &c. Most people now-a-days avoid the repetitions which seem to become more and more antiquated. Yet there remains a fair number of persons who, faithful to the old traditions of French politeness, stick to the customs of their early years and are not blamed by any one.

Taking the ecclesiastical hierarchy in order, when addressing a letter to a Cardinal we write, *e.g.* :—

A Son Eminence
Le Cardinal Langénieux,
Archévêque de Rheims,
Rheims,

Aisne.

To an Archbishop who is not a Cardinal we write, *e.g.* :—

A Sa Grandeur
Monseigneur Richard,
Archévêque de Paris,
Paris.

To a Bishop we write, *e.g.* :—

A Sa Grandeur
Monseigneur l'Evêque d'Orléans,
En son Palais Episcopal,
Orléans,
Loiret.

In the last mentioned case we might place in the second line the name of the Bishop, and proceed as in the case of the Archbishop and *vice-versa*.

The address to a Canon is as follows, *e.g.* :—

Monsieur l'Abbé Maynard,
Chanoine de Poitiers,
Poitiers.

If writing in the diocese in which the Canon lives, we should write :—

Monsieur le Chanoine Maynard,
Poitiers, &c.

A Vicar-General is addressed, *e.g.* :—

Monsieur l'Abbé Lagrange,
Vicaire Général d'Orléans,
Orléans.

The address to a Parish Priest is, *e.g.* :—

Monsieur l'Abbé N.,
Curé de Saint Goddard,
Rouen.

A Curate is addressed, *e.g.* :—

M. l'Abbé N.,
Vicaire à Saint Roch,
Paris.

A Superior of a Seminary is addressed, *e.g.* :—

Monsieur le Supérieur
du Grand Séminaire,
Bourges (Cher) .

A priest of a religious order is addressed "Au Révérend Père N., &c.

The Abbot of a Monastery is written to :—

Au Révérend Père N.,
Abbé du Monastère de N., &c.

In the case of the Laity a Cabinet Minister is written to, *e.g.* :—

A Son Excellence
Monsieur le Ministre de la Justice,
Paris.

Counts, Marquises, Viscounts, Barons are addressed "Monsieur le Comte," "Monsieur le Marquis," "Monsieur le Viscomte." "Monsieur le Baron," &c., as for instance :—

Monsieur le Comte de Mun,
Chateau de N., &c.

Merchants, traders, shopkeepers, when addressed on matters of business generally get the qualifications of their office, as for instance:—

Monsieur N.,
Négociant,
Rue du Bac, *or*
Monsieur Chertier,
Chasublier
Rue Férou.

The language of the French Bar has been seriously modified in modern times. The old respectable “Maître” and “Messire” have passed away. Judges are written to:—

Monsieur N.,
President du Tribunal N., &c.
Counsellors are addressed, *e.g.*:—
Monsieur N.,
Avocat,
Paris.

And those universal gentlemen called “Notaires” who interfere so largely in the business life of poor official-trodden France, are addressed, *e.g.*:—

Monsieur N.,
Notaire,
Bourg, Ain.

This much, we imagine, is sufficient for the envelope address or superscription. We shall now turn to the second part of our task, viz, to give the forms employed at the opening or commencement of a letter, the words which are written “in view” or *en vedette* in the first line. The Holy Father himself is addressed, “Très Saint Père.” When *we* would employ the words, “May it please your Eminence” in addressing a Cardinal, the French use the simple word *Eminence*. This, however, is of late years falling into desuetude and the more deferential expression “Eminentissime Seigneur” is almost universally substituted for it. This latter expression is of Italian origin, and was introduced to France through the pulpit. Great preachers when speaking in presence of a Cardinal opened their discourses with the words, “Eminentissime Seigneur,” and thence they passed into epistolary use. The old form “Eminence” is still sometimes used. It is invariably used in conversation with a Cardinal when we address him directly; where in direct conversation we say “Your Eminence,” the French say simply “Eminence.” Of course when it is part of a phrase that follows they would then say, “Votre Eminence,” as *e.g.*,

"Your Eminence knows," &c., "Votre Eminence sait," &c. The Papal Nuncio is addressed "Excellence." Archbishops and bishops and prelates of the Pope's household are addressed "Monseigneur." In the body of a letter addressed to an archbishop or to a bishop, when we use the words "Your Lordship" the French use the words "Votre Grandeur" there being no distinction in this respect between archbishops and bishops. In conversation the French say always "Monseigneur." The title "Votre Grandeur" is not given to Domestic Prelates. Neither is it given to Mitred Abbots to whom we should say "Votre Révérence." One Bishop writing to another with whom he is on intimate terms often uses the form, "Mon cher Seigneur." We address a Vicar-General, "Monsieur le Vicaire Général." Of course a bishop who knows him or an intimate colleague in the ministry might address him by his name, "Cher Monsieur N." A Canon is addressed "Monsieur le Chanoine." The Rector Magnificus of Louvain University should be addressed "Monsieur le Recteur," and in the body of the letter "Votre Magnificence." This would be the proper title of the rectors of Catholic Universities in France, but on account of their present position it is not used.

When writing to an aged and venerable ecclesiastic with whom we may be acquainted we might use the form "Monsieur et très Vénéré Père" or "Très Vénéré Monsieur."

The Superior of a Seminary is addressed "Monsieur le Supérieur" and a Professor or (as they are generally called) a Director of a Seminary is addressed "Monsieur le Directeur."

A Parish Priest is addressed "Monsieur le Curé," or if a person is slightly intimate, "Cher Monsieur le Curé." The Bishop or Vicar-General of the diocese can address him "Mon cher Curé." A Curate is addressed "Monsieur le Vicaire." Chaplains are addressed "Monsieur l'Aumônier," or "M. le Chapelain" according to the institution in which they serve. Chaplains of Convents, Hospitals, and all charitable institutions of poor children, &c., are called "Monsieur l'Aumônier" and Chaplains of literary institutions, lyceums or even private families are for the most part termed "Chapelains." Yet we not unfrequently hear of "l'aumônier du Lycée," "L'aumônier du Château," &c. When we do not know the title of an ecclesiastic, it is quite correct to write "Monsieur l'Abbé." Indeed this is the title which is generally given to clerical professors, although of course it is by no means confined to them. All secular ecclesiastics who wear a soutane, even those who have not yet received the tonsure may be addressed, "Monsieur l'Abbé." It

is not only quite polite, but has an air of distinction when used by well-bred persons who have a true idea of the respect due to the priestly character, whereas persons who have little reverence for the clergy often use it and even pronounce it in a manner that conveys something excessively trivial and worthless.

The ordinary form of addressing a layman, corresponding to our "Sir," and "Dear Sir," is "Monsieur," "Cher Monsieur." In olden times the King of France not being able to confer titles upon all his subjects, but at the same time, anxious to show the great respect which he entertained for each individual citizen, made a rule that his own eldest son should be called "Monsieur," and his eldest daughter "Madame." Hence we have in Paris in the old Latin quarter the "Rue de Monsieur," and the "Rue de Madame." Since that time it has been always deemed perfectly polite to address any gentleman who has no special title, or of whose special title we are ignorant, by the simple title, "Monsieur." When people have special titles, however, they should be given, as, for instance, when writing to a Minister of State, he should be addressed, "Monsieur le Ministre," and spoken of in the course of the letter, as "Votre Excellence." Dukes, Counts, Marquises, Viscounts, Barons, are addressed, "Monsieur le Duc," "Monsieur le Conte," "Monsieur le Marquis," "Monsieur le Baron," &c. In conversation it would not, however, be necessary to repeat "Monsieur le Duc," or "Monsieur le Marquis," at every moment. "Monsieur" used in the polished sense above given to it is quite polite provided the full title be repeated from time to time. People who are intimate often write, "Monsieur et Cher Ami." The editor of a newspaper is addressed, "Monsieur le Rédacteur." Some distinguished laymen who have made great names for themselves either in the political world or in the world of literature, art or science might get some very special qualifications before the word "Monsieur." For instance, it would be quite proper, especially when writing from a foreign country, to address such men as the late Monsieur Louis Veuillot, of the *Univers* or the present distinguished Catholic leader, M. Chesnelong, or M. Jules Simon, as "Illustre Monsieur," or "Très illustre Monsieur." It is also becoming the usage to address gentlemen who have acquired a certain reputation not quite so great, but still much above the ordinary, as "Très Honoré Monsieur." When writing to a Prefect of a department, we say, "Monsieur le Préfet." Unlike the German usage, however, his wife is not "Madame la Préfète," which is regarded as a vulgarity in France. Unmarried ladies, whatever be their rank,

are always addressed simply, "Mademoiselle," unless they belong to a family of a prince, when they are addressed, "Madame." A member of the Upper House of Parliament is addressed, "Monsieur le Sénateur," and a member of the Lower House, "Monsieur le Député." Physicians and surgeons are, "Monsieur le Docteur." This title is never given to persons who have taken their degree in theology or philosophy.

We shall now finally add a few indications regarding the conclusions of the letter. In the epistolary communications of ancient Greece and Rome, this was exceedingly simple; in Greek, "χαίρε," and in Latin, "Vale." Modern civilisation has introduced more elaborate endings. During the great revolution in France an effort was made to do away with the expressions of regard with which letters are now usually concluded, and to substitute for them the short compliments of "Salut et Fraternité." Fortunately they were no more successful in that attempt than in the more recent one of making "Citoyen" take the place of "Monsieur."

The most polite form of ending a letter is to offer one's "sentiments de considération," or "de haute considération," or "de parfaite considération," or "de considération distinguée," or, finally, "de haute et respectueuse considération."

It must be remembered, however, that the use of these expressions is confined to certain well-defined circumstances. The words "considération" and "estime" mean much the same thing in French, (the latter word corresponds entirely to our word "esteem.") Yet "considération" implies something much more noble, more elevated, and more distinguished. Hence it supposes in the person to whom it is addressed a rather elevated position in society, and on the part of the person who uses it that he should be at least the equal in position of the person to whom he addresses it. It is generally addressed in the ecclesiastical world to Bishops, Vicars-General, Canons, and Parish Priests of important parishes by their equals in the hierarchy. The inferior of a Bishop and *a fortiori* of an Archbishop or a Cardinal would, therefore, write not "considération" but "profond respect," *e.g.* :—

« Permettez moi de vous offrir, Monseigneur, l'hommage du profond respect avec lequel,

« Je suis,

De Votre Grandeur,

Le très humble serviteur," &c.

In the former case the termination would be, *e.g.* :—

“ Je vous prie de recevoir, Monsieur, l’assurance de la parfaite considération avec lequel,

“ Je suis

Votre très humble et dévoué serviteur,” &c.

We should not forget to mention that the word “ Daignez ” is most suitable in the conclusion of a letter to a Bishop, an Archbishop, and a Cardinal, *e.g.* :—

“ Daignez recevoir, Eminentissime Seigneur, l’hommage du profond respect avec lequel j’ai l’honneur d’être,

“ de Votre Eminence,

le très-humble et très-obéissant serviteur.”

To an Archdeacon, a Vicar-General, a Dean, or a Parish Priest, a proper form might be :—

“ Veuillez recevoir les sentiments de respectueux dévouement avec lesquels je suis,

“ Monsieur l’Archidiacre, &c.,

Votre très humble serviteur,” &c.

Persons who are intimate and who are in habitual correspondence often write simply “ tout-à-vous,” with the signature. The expression “ agréez l’assurance,” &c., used to be very frequent, but the word “ agréez ” is commencing to sound rather vulgar, and to be confined almost exclusively to business people. When writing on matters of business to shopkeepers, traders, &c., the French often use the form “ Recevez, Monsieur, mes salutations empressées ;” or if we wish to make it still more polite, “ Recevez, Monsieur l’expression des sentiments d’estime avec lesquels je suis,” &c. Another modification would be “ haute estime,” or “ sincère estime.” When writing to persons we wish to oblige we could say, “ Croyez, Monsieur, à l’entier dévouement avec lequel je suis,

“ Tout-a-vous,” &c.

Other qualifications of “ dévouement ” might be “ respectueux,” “ affectueux,” “ cordial.”

Of course the relative position and degree of intimacy of the correspondents might modify the conclusions almost indefinitely. We have given the principal ones which come into most general use. In a future number of the RECORD we shall endeavour to give the corresponding forms in German and Italian. Indeed, we feel that we owe an apology for obtruding these details upon the readers of the

RECORD. We should not have thought of doing this ourselves, but as we stated at the outset, we were requested to do so by an eminent Irish prelate who, though fully conversant with these various languages, yet humbly confesses that even he is sometimes at a loss for the proper form to use. We trust that this may save us from the imputations of "bad taste," which might justly be cast upon us if we were to volunteer to anybody information of the kind.

J. F. HOGAN.

CORRESPONDENCE.

THE ECONOMIC DOCTRINE OF MR. HENRY GEORGE.

SIR—I rejoice to find Mr. Henry George's doctrine discussed in your pages. Nothing can well be more interesting and important than the doctrine itself, and the man is inspiring so much enthusiasm in New York that he may possibly be elected Secretary of State before the year is out. It seems unwise, therefore, that there should be such profound silence here about the man himself and his teaching. The mere papers of news, the Irish National organs, and the religious journals, are alike empty of either criticism or information. Let thanks then be given to you, Sir, and to "Economist."

But, would not your contributor have done better to begin at the beginning. He makes our mouths water for all those millions of revenue, and yet has nothing to say about the lawfulness of the system which would give them to us. Ought he not first to examine principles, and then come to practice and details? Let him attack those two propositions named in the end of his interesting letter. His views about the second of them I should be very eager to study. Does the land of a country belong in his opinion to the angels? Or to the *pecora campi*?

If we do leave, like "Economist," the consideration of what may be philosophically true, or theologically lawful, for the consideration of what may be politically prudent, I am sure most people would be of opinion that it would not be expedient to make the National Government the direct administrator or "agent" of the land of the

country. I think Mr. George does not use the word "nationalization" throughout the whole book, *Progress and Poverty*. I am sure that his proposal in the region of practical politics is the "single tax" system, that is to say, a tax on land values (not on land, which would be different). And the word "parochialization" or "baronialization" would better express his meaning than "nationalization." This is worthy of special note by "Economist," who will perceive that the present enormous expenses of tax gathering would be done away with by the single tax system. Of course the revenue from customs and excise would be needless. Lastly, if I may say it without seeming very wild, I would ask "Economist" not to take it for granted, either that there is an obligation to pay off what is called the National debt, or that those who now live on it would need to continue to live on it in more prosperous times.

A PRIEST IN ENGLAND.

DOCUMENTS.

DECREE OF THE S. CONGREGATION OF INDULGENCES ON VARIOUS POINTS RELATING TO THE BLESSING OF SCAPULARS AND THE INDULGENCES AND PRIVILEGES OF SCAPULAR CONFRATERNITIES.

SUMMARY.

1. The making of the sign of the cross and the sprinkling with holy water will not suffice for the blessing of scapulars. The prescribed form must be used.

2. For admission into the Scapular Confraternities a form of words must be used.

3. For admission into the Confraternities it is enough if the conditions of initiation are substantially observed.

4. When one is enrolled in different scapulars on the same occasion a separate blessing and form of admission are required for each scapular, unless the priest has a special indult permitting him to use a common form for all scapulars.

In all cases each scapular must be composed of two pieces of cloth, hanging, one on the breast, the other between the shoulders.

It will not suffice to have different scapulars sewed to the front of one and the same piece of cloth. The string, however, may be common to all.

5. Persons receiving and wearing the blue or red scapular do not form **Confraternities**.

6. Members of the **Confraternities of the Holy Trinity, Mount Carmel, and Seven Dolours** do not gain by a visit to the confraternity church all the indulgences attached to a visit to the church of the religious Order to which the scapular belongs.

7. This is illustrated by reference to the devotions of the **Forty Hours, Masses, Offices, Preaching, &c.**

8. In places where there is no church of the Order or Confraternity, a member may gain by a visit to the parochial church the indulgences attached to a visit to a church of the Order or Confraternity.

9. A priest who has received faculties to receive persons into the Confraternity of the Holy Trinity can communicate all the privileges especially in places where there is no church of the Order or Confraternity.

10. This decision also applies to the **Calced and Discalced Carmelites** in reference to the Confraternity of Mount Carmel.

11. The Plenary Indulgence to be gained on one Wednesday each month by members visiting a church of the Carmelites in the way laid down by Benedict XIII. in his Brief "*Alias pro parte*" is authentic.

12. The Plenary Indulgence granted by Popes Honorius III. and Nicholas IV. can be gained only once a year, as decided by S. Cong. on the 15th March, 1852.

13. Any approved confessor can, in the absence of the director of the Confraternity, give the General Absolution to members of the Confraternity of Mount Carmel *in articulo mortis*.

DECRETUM S. INDULGENTIARUM CONGREGATIONIS.

Die 27 Aprilis 1887.

Postquam Romani Pontifices benigne indulerunt ut sacerdotes tum saeculares tum regulares facultate potirentur simul benedicendi imponendique quinque Scapularia nempe SSmae Trinitatis, B. Mariae Virginis de Monte Carmelo, Immaculatae Conceptionis et septem Dolorum ejusdem B. Mariae Virginis, nec non rubrum Passionis D. N. J. C., nonnullae exortae sunt quaestiones et difficultates circa modum supradictae facultatis exercendae. His accesserunt dubia

nonnulla quae respiciunt communicationem ecclesiis Confraternitatum SSmae Trinitatis, B. Mariae Virginis de Monte Carmelo, ac septem Dolorum omnium Indulgentiarum, quae ecclesiis Ordinum ejusdem nominis sunt adnexae, nec non commutationem visitationis ecclesiae eorumdem Ordinum, sive Confraternitatum, ubi ea desit, in visitationem ecclesiae parochialis. Alia demum sunt proposita dubia, quae agunt de reciproca communicatione Indulgentiarum et Privilegiorum Confraternitatum SSmae Trinitatis, et B. Mariae Virginis de Monte Carmelo sive a Fratribus Calceatis, sive Excalceatis utriusque Ordinis erectarum; ac in specie de Indulgentiis visitantibus ecclesias Ordinis Carmelitici, aliquibus anni diebus concessis, et de generali absolutione in mortis articulo impertienda confratribus et consororibus s. scapularis Carmelitarum.

Quae omnia Fr. Pius Seerburg Ordinis Capuccinorum concionator in Conventu Monasteriensi Provinciae Rhenano-Vestphalicae suorum confratrum nomine, qui sacris Missionibus operam impendunt, sequentibus dubiis huic S. Congregationi Indulgentiarum et SS. Reliquiarum propositis complexus est :

I^m. An ad validitatem benedictionis sufficiat signum Crucis manu efformatum super scapulare absque ulla verborum pronuntiatione, et aquae benedictae aspersione ?

II^m. An receptio in confratrem valeat, si fiat simplici intentione concepta animo, ac verbis nullis adhibitis ?

III^m. An declaratio s. Congregationis de servandis substantialibus in adscriptione fidelium Confraternitati B. M. V. de Monte Carmelo debeat etiam, atque eodem sensu, intelligi quoad cetera scapularia ?

IV^m. An pro induendo fideles quinque scapularibus, totidem etiam benedictiones, impositiones ac receptiones requirantur, vel unica tantum, et quae sufficiat ?

V^m. An suscipientes et gestantes scapulare caeruleum B. M. V. Immaculatae, aut rubrum Passionis D. N. J. C. Confraternitates constituent ?

VI^m. An in ecclesiis Confraternitatum SSmae Trinitatis, B. M. V. de Monte Carmelo ac septem Dolorum acquiri valeant omnes Indulgentiae, quas lucrantur fideles visitando ecclesias Ordinum respectivorum ?

Et quatenus affirmative :

VII^m. An communicatio istiusmodi valeat etiam quoad certas devotiones in ecclesiis Ordinum haberi solitas, uti orationem 40 horarum, missas, officia divina, litanias, Dei verbi praedicationem, etc., quando quis iisdem devotionibus intersit in ecclesia respectivarum Confraternitatum ?

VIII^m. An in locis, ubi nulla adest ecclesia neque Ordinis neque Confraternitatis SSmae Trinitatis, aut B. M. V. de Monte Carmelo vel a septem Doloribus, fideles qui sunt adscripti Confraternitati SSmae Trinitatis erectae etiam a Fratribus calceatis, vel Confraternitati B. M. V. de Monte Carmelo, aut septem Dolorum, acquirere respective possint omnes Indulgentias adnexas dictarum ecclesiarum visitationi visitando ecclesiam parochialem?

IX^m. An sacerdos, qui facultatem obtinuit a Fratribus Calceatis recipiendi fideles in Confraternitatem SSmae Trinitatis, valeat communicare praeter Indulgentias, quae reperiuntur in Summario approbato pro Confraternitatibus erectis a Fratribus calceatis, etiam eas, a praedictis diversas quae reperiuntur in summario approbato pro Confraternitatibus erectis a Fratribus Discalceatis, ac vice versa, in locis praesertim ubi proprii Ordinis, aut Confraternitatis ecclesia non existit?

X^m. An idem sit constituendum de gratiis et Indulgentiis, quae sunt concessae Confraternitatibus erectis a Fratribus Calceatis aut Discalceatis Ordinis B. M. V. de Monte Carmelo?

XI^m. An constet de authenticitate Indulgentiae Plenariae quae concessa fertur pro unaquaque feria quarta ejusque anni hebdomadae christifidelibus visitantibus ecclesiam Ordinis B. M. V. de Monte Carmelo?

XII^m. An constet de authenticitate Indulgentiae Plenariae, quae traditur concessa ab Honorio III. et Nicolao IV. pro unaquaque anni die, in qua visitetur ecclesia Ordinis praedicti?

XIII^m. An omnibus confessariis ab Ordinario approbatis indulta sit facultas impertiendi Absolutionem generalem confratribus et consororibus B. M. V. de Monte Carmelo in articulo mortis constitutis, quoties deficiat sacerdos potestate praeditus munia directoris Confraternitatis exercendi?

Emi et Rmi Patres in Congregatione generali habita in Palatio Apostolico Vaticano die 25 Martii 1887 rescripserunt?

Ad I^m. Negative, sed benedictio danda est juxta formulam praescriptam, ad normam Decreti 18 Augusti 1868.

Ad II^m. Negative.

Ad III^m. Affirmative.

Ad IV^m. Affirmative ad 1^{am} partem: Negative ad 2^{am}, nisi ex speciali Indulto S. Sedis, et ea formula, quae in eodem conceditur, et ad mentem. Mens est, ut qui sacerdotes utuntur Indulto Apostolico induendi christifideles quinque scapularibus non benedicant scapularia, nisi ea sint distincta, id est vere quinque scapularia, sive totidem sive

duobus tantum funiculis unita, et ita ut cujuslibet scapularis pars una ab humeris, alia vero a pectore pendeat, non vero unum tantum scapulare in quo assuantur diversi coloris panniculi, prout ab hac S. Congregatione jam cautum est.

Ad V^m. Negative.

Ad VI^m. Negative.

Ad VII^m. Negative.

Ad VIII^m. Affirmative ex Brevi Pii Papae IX. 30 Januarii 1858 pro Confraternitate SSmae Trinitatis, et ex Brevi ejusdem Pontificis 45 Januarii 1855 pro Confraternitate B. M. V. de Monte Carmelo; et supplicandum SSmo pro extensione indulti ad Confraternitatem B. M. V. a septem Doloribus.

Ad IX^m. Affirmative, facto verbo cum SSmo.

Ad X^m. Affirmative.

XI^m. Ex deductis non constare nisi de Indulgentia Plenaria in una ex quartis feriis cujuslibet mensis et juxta modum expressum in Brevi Benedicti XIII "Alias pro parte" 4 Martii 1727.

Ad XII^m. Negative, sed Indulgentia plenaria in casu ita intelligenda est, ut semel in anno tantum ab unoquoque christifideli acquiri possit, sicut in una Maceraten. 15 Martii 1852 Confraternitatis SSmae Trinitatis.

Ad XIII^m. Affirmative.

Facto vero de iis omnibus relatione in audientia habita ab infra-scripto Secretario die 27 Aprilis 1887, Sanctissimus Dominus Noster Leo Papa XIII responsiones Patrum Cardinalium approbavit, et ad dubium VIII benigne annuit pro petita Indulti extensione, quo in locis ubi nulla adest Ecclesia neque Ordinis Servorum B. Mariae Virginis, neque Confraternitatis septem Dolorum, qui sunt eidem Confraternitati adscripti, acquirere valeant omnes Indulgentias dicti Ordinis ecclesiis adnexas, visitando respectivam parochialem ecclesiam.

Datum Romae ex Secretaria ejusdem S. Congregationis die 27 Aprilis 1887.

FR. THOMAS M. Card. ZIGLIARA, *Praef.*

ALEXANDER Episcopus Oensis, *Secret.*

DECREE OF THE CONGREGATION OF RITES REGARDING THE ALTAR OF EXPOSITION ON HOLY THURSDAY.

SUMMARY.

1. The Altar of Exposition used on Holy Thursday is representative not of the burial of our Divine Lord, but of the institution of the Blessed Eucharist.

2. When the word "Sepulchre" is found in the decrees of the Congregation of Rites applied to this altar, the Congregation merely adopts the common description of the altar, and does not intend to convey that it represents the burial of our Lord.

3. It is not allowable to furnish the altar with emblems of mourning or memorials of the burial of Christ.

DECRETUM S. RITUM CONGREGATIONIS SUPER ALTARI EXPOSITIONIS
IN FERIA V. MAJORIS HEBDOMADÆ.

ROMANA.

Academia Liturgica Romana, in altero ex suis conventibus pertractavit quaestionem "an Altare in quo FERIA V. in Coena Domini augustissimum Eucharistiae Sacramentum publicae Fidelium adorationi exponitur, quod vulgo *Sepulcrum* nominatur, dici possit et haberi tamquam Christi sepulcrum representans." Academiae Censores, perpensis quae ad rem habentur in Caeremoniali Episcoporum, Missali Romano et in Decretis editis a Sacrorum Rituum Congregatione, unanimi voto censuerunt ejusmodi Altare habendum et esse revera representativum, non sepulturae Domini, sed institutionis augustissimi Sacramenti.

Placuit vero hanc sententiam judicio Sacrorum Rituum Congregationis subicere, ac simul ab ea edoceri quid sentiendum sit de certo modo exornandi praedictum Altare, qui in aliquibus locis in usu est. Quamobrem praefatae Academiae Moderator, suo atque Academicorum nomine, Sacrae Congregationi humillime sequentes proposuit quaestiones :

1°. "An Altare in quo FERIA V. majoris hebdomadae publicae adorationi exponitur augustissimum Sacramentum, licet in capsâ reconditum, sit representativum sepulturae Domini, an potius institutionis ejusdem augustissimi Sacramenti?"

2°. "An quoties Decreta Sacrae Rituum Congregationis nominant *sepulcrum* vel locum *sepulcri* idem Altare, designaverint illud esse repraesentativum Dominicae sepulturae, an potius vulgari tantum denominatione uti voluerint?"

3°. "An praeter lumina et flores, liceat ad exornandum praedictum Altare adhibere Crucem cum panno funereo, vel Christi demortui effigiem, vel scenicas decorationes, statuas, nempe Beatissimae Virginis, Sancti Joannis Evangelistae, Sanctae Mariae Magdalenae et militum custodum, picturas, arbores aliaque ejusmodi?"

Sacra vero Congregatio ad relationem infrascripti Secretarii,

rebus mature perpensis, et inhaerendo Decretis jam alias editis in Lauden. die 22 Januarii 1662; in Alben. die 8 Augusti anni 1835; in Narnien. die 7 Decembris anni 1844; et Salten. die 26 Septembris anni 1868; et consideratis quae deducta fuerunt ab altero ex Caeremoniarum Apostolicarum Magistris in Salten. respondendum censuit:

Ad. I. *Negative ad primam partem: Affirmative ad secundam.*

Ad. II. *Negative ad primam partem: Affirmative ad secundam.*

Ad. III. *Negative, et flores non disponendos esse, ac si Altare esset in viridario.* Atque ita declaravit et servari mandavit.

Die 14 Maii 1887.

D. Cardinalis BARTOLINIUS, S.R.C. Praefectus.
LAURENTIUS SALVATI, S.R.C. Secretarius.

S. CONGREGATION OF THE COUNCIL REGARDING THE OBLIGATION OF A PARISH PRIEST TO OFFER MASS FOR HIS SEPARATE PARISHES.

SUMMARY.

The parish priest charged with the pastoral care of two distinct parishes is bound to say Mass for each parish on the suppressed holidays, unless he is legitimately dispensed from the obligation.

NIVERNEN. MISSÆ PRO POPULO.

Die 5 Martii, 1887.

Sess. 23, cap. I. de Reform.

Compendium facti. Episcopus Nivernensis sacratissimo Principi exposuit: "in sua dioecesi plures adesse parochos, quibus, ob sacerdotum penuriam, duplicis paroeciae cura incumbit; atque a longo jam tempore, sive ob legis ignorantiam, aut oblivionem, sive potissimum, recentioribus hisce annis, ob redditus omnino insufficientes secundae paroeciae, cujus cura pergrave onus sine proportionato beneficio secum fert, invaluisse morem non celebrandi missam pro populo hujus secundae paroeciae diebus festis in Gallia jam suppressis."

"Ideoque rogavit, I. An data vera indigentia parochorum suae dioecesis, in supra enunciatis casibus, lex canonica de applicatione missae secundae paroeciae diebus festis in Gallia suppressis urgeri debeat, vel potius usus contrarius tolerari possit."

2. "In casu, quo talis usus aboleri deberet, Episcopus orator a

Sanctitate Sua indultum imploravit apostolicum, virtute ejus facultas ipsi concedatur, nomine Sanctae Sedis, pronuntiandi absolutionem et condonationem super talibus omissionibus."

DUBIUM.

An rectores duarum parocciarum in diebus festis suppressis possint a celebranda missa pro populo favore alterius parocciae dispensari, et a praeteritis omissionibus absolvi in casu.

Resolutio. Sacra C. C. re cognita sub die 5 Martii, 1887, censuit respondere: "Praevia absolutione quoad praeteritum, pro gratia dispensationis quoad futurum ad quinquennium, facto verbo cum SSmo."

S. C. C.

NOTICES OF BOOKS.

COMPENDIUM THEOLOGIAE MORALIS. Redactum a Fr. Gabriele De Varceno, Two vols. Editio Octava. Augustae Taurinorum, A.D. 1887.

That Fr. Varceno's *Compendium*, should, in about adozen years pass through eight successive editions is we think a very high testimony to its merit. He proposes to give a systematical summary of the moral teachings of Thomas En Charnes, Scavini and Gury, and whenever these writers disagree he professes to adopt the view that seems to him most in harmony with the teaching of St. Alphonsus Liguori. To this design we think Fr. Varceno has faithfully adhered. And the result is, that while his *Compendium* cannot be said to contain anything that is new to ordinary theological students, it puts forward clearly, simply, and systematically, a very sound, and practically safe, and reliable course of Moral Theology. Fr. Varceno's reasons are necessarily brief, but they are always clear, and generally satisfactory. We notice that in the treatise on the *Obligations of States*, Fr. Varceno deals at considerable length with those points that have special reference to the Religious Orders. This is explained by the fact that he is himself a Capuchin, and Professor of Theology in his own order, and that, moreover, his work is primarily intended for his own students. This feature of the work renders it specially useful to members of religious communities, and will we think

recommend it, also, to such secular priests, as are, in the exercise of their ministry, brought into contact with religious. The author is also connected with several Roman Congregations; and with the skill of an expert he embodies the most recent Roman decrees into his work. But the Censure Treatise is, we believe, far and away, the best part of Fr. Varceno's *Compendium*. In treating of censures *in specie*, he takes up section after section of the *Apostolicæ Sedis*, and gives, what we believe to be, an excellent commentary on its text. There is no mistaking his opinions, so clearly does he state them, and he quotes, as he proceeds, the very best theologians as bearing out his conclusions. Here we think he has been eminently successful, and the book would be more than worth its price, and would richly repay perusal for this part alone. J. M.

THE LIFE OF ST. CUTHBERT. By the Venerable Bede. Translated from the Original Latin, by the Rev. Joseph Stevenson, S.J.; under the direction of the late Right Rev. John William Bewick, Bishop of Hexham and Newcastle. London: Burns & Oates (Limited). New York: Catholic Publication Society Co. 1887.

This *Life* is divided into forty-six chapters; each chapter relates some incident in the saint's career, beginning with his youth, and continued till the end of his life; and though some of the events related appear within the ordinary operation of the natural law, as we read on to the end we feel that a specially supernatural influence overshadowed the great saint from early youth till death. The *Life* concludes with an account of a few miracles, properly so called, which were performed through the intervention of the saint in his dying moments and after death.

Every thing that appeals to the best affections, and found in the other costlier and more voluminous *Lives*, is found in this: for all subsequent *Lives* are substantially only an enlargement of the body of facts recorded by Venerable Bede.

This priceless little volume, the subject of our notice, does not of course, as being written by a contemporary of St. Cuthbert, allude to the wanderings of his body, nor to its far-reaching influence in the creation of cities and sees through the north of England; but as a *Life* of the saint it is unsurpassed. The material finish of the little volume is as faultless as the literary.

Our gifted author, in dealing with the superstitious practices to which the newly converted resorted in order to stave off death, uses

amulet as a translation for *alligaturas*, and says that this in a corresponding passage of Bede's History is equivalent to *phylacteries*. It occurs to me that *ligature* would more accurately give the meaning than *amulet*, which generally implies suspension rather than *ligature*. Besides, if, as there is reason to think, *phylacteries* during the Middle Ages had the same material as those in the days of the Gospel Pharisees—a piece of parchment on which some characters were written—this was not essential to a *ligature*. For this may have been made of grass or cloth. Thus some old canons forbade: “*Ligaturam in herbas vel quolibet ingenio malo incantaverit et super Christianum ligaverit* ;” again, “*fileteria diabolica vel erbus vel sacino (sacum) suis vel sibi impendere* ;” and once again, “*praecantationibus sive in characteribus, vel in quibus-cunque rebus suspendis atque ligandis*.”¹

We may be hypercritical, but if so it is because of the faultlessness of the valuable *Life of St. Cuthbert*, for which we predict many a new edition before the next century.

S. M.

THEOLOGIA MORALIS. Auctore Augustino Lehmkuhl, S. J.
Vol. 1. Editio 4^a, ab auctore recognita. Freiburg:
B. Herder.

The fourth edition of the first volume of Fr. Lehmkuhl's excellent *Moral Theology* is now for some months in the hands of clerical readers. We welcome its appearance with a feeling of keen satisfaction. That four issues from the press of a work so full on modern questions and points of acknowledged difficulty, so scholarly and scientific throughout should be called for within a period numbering fewer years, speaks highly for the earnestness with which the study of Moral Theology is being pursued as well as for the manifest merits of Fr. Lehmkuhl's Text-book. The changes in this edition on details are judicious and pretty numerous. We trust the author will at some future time expand one or two treatises that are at present somewhat too condensed. When his method has become familiar we are confident he will be a universal favourite with students of the “*ars artium*.” Fr. Lehmkuhl's work is a marked advance on previous class-books.

MEMOIR OF FATHER FELIX JOSEPH BARBELIN.

By Eleanor C. Donnelly.

More than once before now we had the pleasure of commending to the public a work from the ready pen of this gifted writer. Every fresh effort seems to distance its predecessors in grace and usefulness.

¹ Wasserschleben, *Die Bussordnungen der abendlandischen Kirche* pp. 240, 394, 545.

The "Life of Father Barbelin" must prove a choice literary event to the reader. He will follow its course with the feeling of intense interest that is generally associated with reading a work of clever fiction. Yet from first to last it is a description of a priest's ministry among his people! But his pastoral visits were discharged in the spirit of an apostle, and both time and place enhance the narrative. Fr. Barbelin came to Philadelphia when our holy religion could not show its head in public without provoking ignorant riot. He lived to see the city studded with the stately forms of almost numberless Catholic institutions. In this grand transformation he added a part of saintly heroism. It is therefore fortunate that the work of describing his life and labours has fallen into such eminent hands.

P. O'D.

WHERE WAS ST. PATRICK BORN? By Rev. Sylvester Malone,
M.R.I.A. *Dublin Review*, October, 1887.

This is a remarkable essay. It contains a notable discovery as to the meaning of the famous word, *Beneventaberniae*, by which St. Patrick describes in his *Confessions* the town where lived his father, Calpurnius, the site of *Beneventaberniae* has been, however, a subject of learned discussion among Patrician writers up to the present. As we have no doubt that this essay will have an important bearing on this controversy in future, we shall summarize its most salient points for the benefit of the readers of the I. E. RECORD.

To appreciate fully the scope and contents of the article, it is useful to bear in mind that the writers of the *Lives* of our National Saint aimed at harmonizing them with the "Confession" of the Saint. In this the Saint states that his father dwelt in *Beneventabernia*, where he was made captive. Many of the *Lives* and their scholiasts explain these words by "the plain of tents or encampments," while the biographers of the present century see in them, besides the encampments, a reference to some "river's mouth." The ancients and moderns have substantially accepted the division of the words in the Confession into Bonevem or Benevem Taberniæ. The first article in the *Dublin Review* undertook to show that the statements and hints in the old *Lives* were not consistent with France or Scotland being the Saint's birth-place, but England or Wales, and that, besides, their rendering of the Saint's words in the Confession were not consistent with a translation from either the Irish, British, or Latin language. The present article complements the former by showing that the condition of society of Kilpatrick, claimed as the Saint's

birth-place by ancients and moderns was inconsistent with the oldest Lives, and the statement in the Confession. Furthermore, and in this its absorbing interest lies, the article insists that the reading in the *Book of Armagh* and its rendering by the biographers are faulty, and maintains that the words in the Confession should be read as *Beneventa Burri* or *Burria* which means the town of Usk in Wales.

Various instances of a wrong division of syllables occur in the *Book of Armagh*. Thus, two brothers who met in combat are represented as burying their "wood of contention in *terra more campi*," instead of *terram ore campi*. And the Bollandists' Life of our Saint exhibits a deeper corruption than *Tabernia* in the words *thabur indecha*. The article goes to show that *ha* in the last word was faintly separated from the next word which appears as *ut* instead of *haut* in the phrase *haut procul a mari nostro*. The article suggests how it happened that the scholiast and old Lives were quoted in favour of Alelyde; but whether their authority was fairly or otherwise quoted it should weigh only as dust in the balance against the testimony of the Saint himself. The article sums up by showing on the one hand that violence is offered to the historical context, and to the reading and rendering of the words found in the Confession to support the theory of a Scottish birth-place. On the other hand, it is contended that text and context necessitate the adoption of Usk, or rather Caerleon on the Usk, and that there are focussed the statements and hints in the Lives—the tower in which he was born, the Roman encampments, the not far-distant Irish sea, the proximity of the Senate house, the presence of a well organized Catholic Church, and the fabled abode of giants.

SERMONS FROM THE FLEMISH. Translated by a Catholic Priest.

We wish once more to draw the attention of the clergy to these excellent sermons. The first series—"The Sundays of the Year"—is now complete in seven volumes. They contain a mine of spiritual wealth, and are admirable in clearness of treatment, solidity of instruction, and practical suitability to the wants of every age and rank.

THE IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

DECEMBER, 1887.

POPULAR SPEAKING AND PREACHING.

“Pronunciatio est vocis et vultus et gestus moderatio cum venustate.”—*Tull.*

A WELL-KNOWN writer once conceived the strange conceit of dividing the entire human species into two groups—those who can play the fiddle, and those who cannot play the fiddle. Perhaps, with greater reason we might divide mankind into those who live chiefly by reason, and those who live chiefly by sense. The latter will be found to be in the overwhelming majority, and to represent over ninety-nine per cent. of the whole race. In most persons the purely intellectual powers are not nearly so fully developed as the more animal powers of feeling and emotion. And though it is often imagined by the unreflecting portion of mankind that both they and the multitude generally are influenced and moved by reason rather than by sentiment, yet nothing could really be further from the truth. Man, for the first seven years of his life, is entirely directed and controlled by feeling, and is so little under the dominion of reason that he is not even held responsible for his actions by either the civil or the moral law. It is only when he advances beyond this age that reason slowly dawns, and he begins to weigh and judge for himself. But feeling is still dominant, and an appeal to motives of pain and pleasure is found more efficacious in enforcing obedience than any appeal to pure reason. And this natural propensity to follow one's emotions rather than one's sober judgment remains in most persons, not merely when reason has developed, but even unto old age and decrepitude. Hence to be successful, popular, and impressive,

as an orator, preacher, or writer, and to obtain a power over the masses, it is far more necessary to be able to put things graphically and vividly, than logically and tersely. To attract attention by a brilliant style, to amuse them by strange conceits of oratory, to excite their curiosity by lucid yet unfamiliar metaphors, and to win their good will by the thousand arts of a practised rhetorician, is a far more effective way of gaining the suffrage of a mixed audience than to lay down the truth according to the most rigid laws of logic and good sense.

The fact is that men yield far more readily to their feelings than to their convictions. To follow reason often needs an effort, and a hard struggle with the most rooted inclinations of the heart. But to follow feeling is the natural instinct of man, and the spontaneous impulse of every creature. Who, therefore, succeeds in enlisting the feelings on his side, will carry the bulk of the people with him, and be the champion of the hour, far more certainly than the most skilful dialectician that ever lived, unless he can work on the feelings also. Let us exemplify this truth from real life. Is it not a fact that ninety-nine persons out of a hundred will bestow an alms far more readily on a poor starving man who meets them in the street and turns his piteous eyes upon them, than upon an individual twice as wretched and impoverished whose want and hunger are merely attested by another? Yet this is not according to reason. On the contrary, reason would suggest that the poorer man should be the recipient of the gift rather than the less poor; but solely because the latter has not been able to appeal so forcibly to feeling, the alms is bestowed upon the beggar whose misery is witnessed rather than upon the beggar who in reality has most need of it. This truth is so well recognised that a practised pleader will do his utmost to make up for such deficiency by the most graphic and harrowing description of the absent sufferer whose cause he wishes to espouse. He will describe in glowing language and in the most minute detail the horrors of hunger. He will depict the look of despair on the sufferer's blanched face; the scraggy and emaciated limbs, the eyes bulging out of

their sockets, the tongue dry, parched, and protruding, the sense of abandonment and hopeless fear at the approach of an agonizing death. To bring out the misery of the situation into still greater relief, and to fill his audience with feelings of greater commiseration, he will go on to contrast the penury and destitution of this unhappy sufferer, with the opulence, the comforts, and the luxuries that are enjoyed by so many thousands of this world's favourites. Nor will he stop here. He will seek to arouse feeling still more deeply by a fervent appeal to parental instincts. "What would be your feelings," he will ask, "if such a man were a son of yours." He will entreat his hearers to put themselves in the situation of a mother or a father witnessing the sufferings of a son. Nor will it satisfy him that it should be a son—it must be more—it must be an only son, a beloved child, a favoured one. Thus period after period will flow on, each one stirring and exciting more and more deeply the emotions of the audience, till at last they will pour out their feelings in generous donations. Yet, observe, in all this there has been little appeal to reason. The whole force of the charge has been directed against the citadel of the heart, and it has been taken by assault with the happiest of results. Indeed, the masses care very little about closely reasoned discourses. If the preacher touches on the deeper mysteries of life, or seeks to reason out the foundations of Christianity, few of his hearers will be able to follow him, or to feel any interest in what to them is so much learned nonsense. If a man be popular, if he can manage to win the favour and enthusiastic admiration of an audience, he need not trouble much about his arguments. Indeed, he will hardly be believed in the wrong, however illogical his discourse, provided it be a little beyond the average mental reach, and flattering to the opinions of his audience. We have heard such a one in a lecture-hall cover an objector with confusion, and score the most complete and decisive victory before a large audience, by merely exclaiming with an emphasis and peremptoriness which seemed to embody the strength of fifty arguments:—Nonsense! Humbug! Fiddle-sticks! Indeed, metaphysics, like the higher forms of music and painting, need an

education and a training which the great multitudes neither have nor can be expected to have. The consequence is that they do not even see the force of many of the profoundest objections raised against some of the articles of our faith; and if they cannot rightly estimate the full force of the objections, how much less can they be expected to appreciate the value of their solutions. Close reasoning needs close application and concentration of mind, and such qualities are rarely found in persons who form the great bulk of a casual audience. Hence, it is not the metaphysician, nor the calm reasoner, nor the deep thinker that makes the successful and telling speaker, but the imaginative, the sensitive and the quick-witted. If, indeed, we examine the most popular speakers of modern times, we shall find that a lightness and airiness of style, a pleasant and familiar language, a vein of humour, and a sense of the ludicrous, are general characteristics. There may be great power and depth of mind also; and there often are. We do not deny that; all we affirm is that these are no necessary conditions of success, and may be dispensed with. In many, solidity of proof and strength of argument are by no means conspicuous characteristics. But it needs little penetration to see that any such want is amply supplied by greater powers of sympathy, a livelier imagination, a sprightlier wit, and a more careful attention to voice and gesture; while if the speaker be a bit of a buffoon, he will only add to his popularity and draw a larger crowd. Perhaps this is why some may still be found so ready to follow out the injunctions of an old divine of the sixteenth century to a young bachelor of arts:—"Percute cathedram fortiter; respice Crucifixum torvis oculis; nil dic ad propositum, et bene prædicabis."

There is no doubt but that it is the mere casing—the mere *entourage*—of a sermon that chiefly draws. The dramatic attitude, the depth of passion depicted upon the facial lines, the play of the arms and hands, which interpret the feelings, the tremor of the voice, the inflections and alterations of tones, and the look of sorrow, joy, surprise, that is expressed in the eyes, would be enough of itself to attract notice and arrest attention. When to this is added not merely a

pleasant voice and gracious manner, but also a readiness of expression, a fluency of language, and a good presence, one may say—if not “*nil ad propositum*”—at all events nothing very remarkable or profound, and yet be classed among the most popular of preachers.

Well do we remember one who began his missionary career with the firm determination to take the greatest pains with his sermons. He considered nothing so deserving of attention and careful study. Being an excellent theologian and university man (for he was an Oxford convert), his efforts were eminently successful. That is to say, his sermons were profound, well reasoned, full of true doctrine, and sound sense. Priests would come and listen to his words with special delight, and speak of his theological essays—for such they seemed to be—with unfeigned pleasure. But the people? They cared little about his most carefully prepared disquisitions. He, on his part, was somewhat mortified; but he felt he must change his tactics. The people, he urged, don't want arguments, they want conclusions. They will come where they may be amused as well as instructed; where they may contemplate familiar truths if you will, but contemplate them in a new dress; where they may hear them put in a striking way, with a wealth of metaphor and interesting illustration. What puts an audience to sleep is not the matter, but the manner of a discourse. What was the result? He altered his method. He came down from his professorial chair, and spoke familiarly to the half empty benches. But, as he continued to adopt the familiar style, the benches became every Sunday better filled, and people began to delight in “such a charming orator.” He no longer knit his discourses together with iron bands of irrefragable logic and steel rivets of hard reasoning; he gave up all attempts at explaining the profounder dogmas of the faith; he never sank into the depths of metaphysics, nor gave answers to difficulties which only one in fifty could appreciate. He opened out a vein of fancy; he indulged in imagery and illustration; he caught the passing event as it flew by, and made it exemplify the truth he wished to convey. He spoke of the last great crime known to the poor through the *Police News*, and to the rich

through the society papers, and used it to enforce a lesson or to point a moral. He began to trust more to feeling than to reason, and waxed warm with indignation or swooned away with emotion, as the occasion served. At one time his voice would re-echo angrily through the aisles, or sound stern and menacing like the rumble of a distant storm; at another it would be choked with emotion or broken by irrepressible sobs. He compelled the audience to weep and to laugh in turns, and to thrill under his touch as a Stradivarius in the hands of a Paganini. The smart sayings, the epigrammatic distichs, even the witticisms which he introduced into his sermons, proved far more attractive than all the sound sense and real learning that characterised his earlier productions. In *Tit Bits* and *Great Thoughts* and *Things not Generally Known* he discovered mines of inexhaustible treasures, by the aid of which he was able to bespangle his discourse with the most interesting and delightful illustrations which startled and aroused the listening crowd. At such moments, indeed, even the somniferous pricked up their ears, and the most indolent smiled and looked pleased, a result which was not without its effect upon the reverend preacher himself, who felt encouraged if not intoxicated with his success, however indefensible may have been some of the means employed in securing it.

It was not so much that the anecdotes were new or unknown; it was rather that they were told with such an exquisite touch of pathos, and given with so natural a rendering. Even those who had spelt them out painfully but yesterday at their kitchen firesides, hardly recognised them in their new dress, and were as charmed as the rest. In this way the reverend preacher began to gain an ascendancy over the hearts of the people which he had never before possessed, and became one of the greatest pulpit favourites of the day. Crowds flocked to hear him. He filled churches wherever he was announced, and persons who would not go ten yards to hear another, would go ten miles to hear him; and, what may perhaps seem at first sight yet more singular, he made many converts by his harangues. We say at first sight, because on maturer reflection this should hardly

be deemed a matter of surprise. For there are multitudes of persons who fall away from the practice of their religion merely through lethargy and indolence, and not at all from any seriously reasoned-out conviction. Since, therefore, it is not their lack of discrimination, but their weakness of purpose which has resulted in their fall, it is not their intellects that want illuminating, but their feelings and emotions that want rousing. Now such preachers as the above begin by exciting the curiosity of the indolent, and then very little effort is needed to induce them to come to the church. Once there, they fall under the spell, and soon grow sensible of an ardour and a fervour which are as invigorating to their consciences, as they are new to their experience. They are moved by the earnestness of the appeal, and anxious to satisfy this fresh born desire for a better life and higher aims. And to whom will they go so naturally as to the man whose voice has stirred an echo in their hearts? Or if not to him, at all events to one of his *confrères*. Their change of life may not be a matter of conscious reason at all; but a mere sense of satisfaction, which must always arise from the full perception of the truth, between which and the mind there is a very strong natural affinity. The motives may be utterly worthless, yet a man of small reflective powers may arrive at a very certain truth by a wholly irrelevant process; like the old lady of Camperdown who became a Catholic, or as she styled it, "a Romanist," because "she felt bound to admit that the Romanists must be right, since St. Paul wrote his Epistle to the Romans." If such be the case, it requires no great effort to believe that a popular preacher, such as we have described, may not only fill churches, but may likewise brace up many lukewarm Catholics, and convert many well-disposed unbelievers, and thus do much good for religion in the land.

II.

The only question is how far this emotional preaching may advantageously be cultivated. It may perhaps be contended that to move hearts and to stir up seared consciences is the very end of preaching; that this end is fully obtained by the sensational style. *Ergo*, etc., Q.E.D.

Great stress has been laid upon this point; and it is, of course, an argument which would be quite unanswerable did the end justify the means. But since none will go so far as to allow that, the question still awaits an answer, and may perhaps be discussed to some purpose. Though to arouse the indifferent is, no doubt, one of the great objects a preacher must propose to himself, yet not any or every means may legitimately be employed. The drum and bugle of the Salvation Army, and the comicalities of such men as Moody and Sankey for instance, will find no countenance with us, even though many a lukewarm heart has been kindled and set on fire by their martial strains. At least, so it has been affirmed. A story is also told with all the appearance of truth, of a priest in a small hamlet in the Tyrol, who drew his scattered flock together, when every other means had failed, by playing a series of variations on the cornet after the Gospel of the Sunday Mass in place of the usual sermon. When the church had been filled by means of the sweet melody, he began little by little to address a few words, and then a short exhortation, and finally to instruct and convert the people with some success. Still it would hardly be a precedent to follow, and few would be bold enough to advocate such a course even for the best possible purpose. But to come down to the more ordinary sensational sermons, which one hears from time to time in our largest churches. Are they preached in the style that is best suited to the dignity and solemnity of the divine message which it is the duty of the preacher to deliver? Is not the additional *clat* and the increased popularity dearly purchased by the loss of seriousness and sobriety? Who would expect to hear divine warnings and truths of the most vital interest presented in a way to make men merry? Or who can bring himself to believe that our Divine Lord or His Apostles would ever have condescended to flavour their discourses with a verse from a comic song, or the refrain of the last street ditty? Yet such startling methods are not altogether obsolete, and examples of them might be instanced from preachers of the day did we not wish to avoid all personal allusion. The intense importance of the lessons to be taught and the wholly

unparalleled gravity of the interests at stake would seem to suggest more seriousness and self-restraint, and to demand an altogether different treatment. And though a preacher might not please so many, nor excite so easily those emotions and sensibilities which all like to have stirred, he would, nevertheless, leave upon them a deeper and more abiding impression, and his audience, if not so large, would probably be far more intimately convinced of the paramount importance of their religious obligations.

Yet it is a difficult matter to decide, and many advocates will be found for the more flippant and glittering style, as well as for the more serious and solemn. Those especially who are by nature frolicsome and frisky, and whose minds are in a constant state of flutter and excitement, and who are born actors and mimics, and have acquired a certain facility of amusing and diverting their friends in private by a thousand humorous extravagances, will certainly find plenty of specious reasons to defend a more or less loose style of oratory in the pulpit. Their drolleries and ludicrous sketches, their flippant remarks and pungent sayings, in a word, all those humorous qualities which win for a man the reputation of a *farceur*, and make him a favourite in society, will, of course, be thought valuable auxiliaries even in propounding the eternal truths of the Gospel. How far such an opinion may be accepted and acted on, we are not prepared to say; the only fallacy that needs combating is that its attractiveness is of itself a sufficient justification. This would be a deplorable mistake, and might lead to the countenancing of many other forms of attraction which would be most certainly undesirable.

There is a danger of making one's greater or less popularity a criterion of true merit. So long as one can gain a patient hearing and draw a large audience one is disposed to feel satisfied. If experience proves that men will listen to Fr. Simkins for an hour and a half without any symptoms of weariness, while poor Fr. Timkins cannot rivet their attention for more than half that time, we are at once disposed to conclude not merely that Simkins is the more interesting preacher of the two, which would probably be true, but also

that he is the more instructive and profound, which would probably be untrue. Indeed the majority of people are not drawn by what is intrinsically best. In spiritual, no less than in material food, they think more of what is palatable than of what is nourishing.

Take at haphazard a thousand ordinary Catholics as they stream forth from kitchen and cellar, from shop and store, from factory and mill. Consider their condition of mind after six days of monotonous drudgery and close application to trade or business, and ask yourself how many will go out of their way to clamour and push at the church door to get a good place to listen to Sober Erudition. For one who desires merely to be instructed, a dozen will desire to be aroused, enlivened, and entertained as well. Indeed the instructive element is taken for granted. All sermons are, to their minds, instructive. This is not, therefore, a matter in which any great distinction can be drawn. Their attention is rather directed to distinctions of manner, delivery, and style. They will go where they may get their feelings worked upon, and curiously enough not only where they may be amused and entertained, but even where they may be horrified, frightened, saddened, or pained.

George Ramsay, the philosopher, very justly remarks that "clergymen who terrify their audience are generally more popular than those who deliver sensible but cold discourses. Such fiery preachers are much run after because they excite emotion, though, if their hearers were to bring home to themselves what is said, many ought to feel rather uncomfortable." Indeed it is much the same thing as in reading. A novel or romance which sets on edge all the emotions of the soul is sure to have the widest circulation, and to meet with the most enthusiastic reception. There is a positive pleasure, not only in the inward rising of admiration and sympathy for some successful and gallant hero, but even in the tears shed over the unhappy and perhaps tragic fate of a less successful favourite. Well do we remember coming once upon a young lady, crumpled up on a sofa, and sobbing over a story of the day, yet drying her eyes in delicious agony that she might see to read on, and so keep her heart steeped in the sweet bath of sorrow.

Well, the same kind of satisfaction is often sought in listening to a sermon, and if the preacher only possesses the art of touching his hearers on the quick he will be in high requisition. It is difficult to understand exactly why people find so much pleasure in the exercise of their feelings of fear, horror, compassion, sorrow, or surprise; but that the pleasure is considerable can hardly be doubted, and this fact must be taken into account by any one who has to address a large gathering.

Why is Lord Randolph Churchill such a popular speaker? It is not because he is an able man: for there are many men we might point to who possess as much ability without possessing anything like as much influence; and who are as learned and as good politicians, yet whose speeches are neither listened to nor reported as his are. The difference lies in the way he has of putting things; in the fantastic illustrations which he employs, and in that peculiar form of humour in which he so freely indulges. Indeed his anecdotes, personal allusions, and racy style, serve as floats to what is more weighty, and, like the pollen on the seed, bear many a strong argument and telling fact to sink and fertilize in remote parts of the country which they would otherwise never reach; and so it will ever be so long as man remains what he is. The speaker who can put the lessons he wishes to teach in a manner to please and amuse will be listened to and applauded, while the dry scholar of twice his knowledge and ability will be left to hum and haw to vacant benches and empty churches.

This essay has already outrun its proper limits, so that little room remains for any practical suggestions. Let us then content ourselves with the following:—

Our first duty, it appears to us, is to bear in mind the words of Demosthenes, viz., “eloquence is as much in the ear as in the tongue;” and to seek therefore to realize more fully the condition of mind and the special psychological character of our people, so as to employ a method and style which may reach and move them. Too many of us, by a very natural mistake, aim at what is best *in se*, and not at what is best *ad finem*.

Secondly, we should do well to inform ourselves as far as possible upon all subjects of general interest, so as to keep ourselves supplied with abundant material for striking, apt, and *new* illustrations, which are equally useful to attract as they are to enlighten an audience.

Thirdly, we should attach a far greater importance than is generally done to the clear interpreting of our words. The words we speak are, in themselves, like the words in a book—often obscure to the uninitiated. It is the expression of the face, the attitude of the body, and above all the tone and inflection of the voice, that are the skilled interpreters and expositors of their precise meaning. What “more light” is to the material eye, in studying the anatomy of an *Amœba*, that “tone and gesture” are to the mind’s eye, in studying the truths of divine teaching—they illuminate and bring out into prominence a thousand vital points and details of structure which would otherwise escape observation, and make no impression.

Fourthly, all excess, or unseemly trifling, or too great familiarity, should most carefully be avoided, lest we detract too much from the dignity of the pulpit, which, in these days especially, seems rather to need sustaining and fortifying.

Lastly, we must be on our guard against the danger of seeking merely or even mainly to please; and should constantly bear in mind that neither the fulness of a church nor the enthusiasm of a congregation can be a true criterion of the spiritual worth of a sermon, as weighed in the balance of the sanctuary, since both may sometimes result from very trivial causes indeed.

Such are our conclusions. How far they may be endorsed by our *confrères* in the ministry we cannot say. For our own part we gladly submit them to their wider experience, deeper knowledge, and maturer judgment.

JOHN S. VAUGHAN.

RECENT AUGUSTINIAN LITERATURE.

IT is quite taken for granted by the unbelievers of the day, that the world has so completely rejected the great doctrines of Christianity, that controversies on religious, or as they would call them, sectarian topics, are utterly unknown; for that now-a-days no one is in the least degree interested in the subtleties of theological discussions, which at one time set empire against empire, and engaged the best faculties of the ablest thinkers throughout Europe. The contempt so freely lavished on the metaphysical discussions that were held throughout the universities of Europe in the Middle Ages has broadened into a disdain for the supporters of doctrines, which to mediæval theologians, and indeed, to all Christian believers, were absolutely incontrovertible; and it is supposed that outside the walls of Catholic colleges, which with rigid conservatism still cling to scholastic forms, no one feels the least interest in the ghosts of past and buried controversies. Thus in the September number of the *Nineteenth Century*, Mr. Justice Stephen says:—

“The doctrine of the Trinity, for example, has ceased to interest the great mass of mankind, and it is difficult to imagine in these days a controversy about original sin or the sacraments attracting much attention.”

In flat contradiction to this theory comes the fact, that within the last year, no less than seven publications have issued from the British and American press, dealing with the life and doctrines of St. Augustine; and following this series comes review after review, treating exhaustively of these publications and the many most interesting questions they deal with and suggest. Nor are these questions altogether of that purely metaphysical nature that would be tolerated and even welcomed by the freethinking spirit of the age. For it admits there is one subject it has not quite tired of, that is, the existence of a Supreme Being, and the abstruse questions that cluster around the great central mystery of the universe. These it is always prepared to discuss, especially as they lead out from the company of musty Christians, and into the society

of glorious Greek heathens, and the mystics of the majestic East. But the main subjects discussed in recent Augustinian literature are such antiquated and commonplace controversies as those which agitated the world in St. Augustine's time—controversies with Manicheans and Pelagians about Divine predestination and human freewill, between necessarians and supporters of liberty; and, alas! there is not a word about the dialogues of the divine Plato, but a great deal about the *Institutes* of half-forgotten Calvin. Still more singular is it that three of these publications have come to us from America, and that, as a writer in the *Church Quarterly Review* for July tells us, "while the price to which the Parker Society's series has sunk appears to prove that the Reformers are but a drug in the market, and the library of Anglo-Catholic Theology stands, we fear, at a figure not much higher, the Fathers afford material for repeated publishing speculations." It is quite clear the world is not so enlightened after all. The scorn of Pascal,¹ and the sarcasm of Reman² have not been quite so deadly as was supposed. Or, perhaps there is something in these old Fathers and their despised controversies not quite so obsolete and worthless as the wits of France and the pamphleteers of England would have us suppose.

The most ambitious of these works on St. Augustine are the Hulsean Lectures for 1885, embodied by the writer, W. Cunningham, B.D., Trinity College, Cambridge, in a work which bears the title, *St. Austin and His Place in the History of Religious Thought*. The most useful and interesting to us is the *Historical Study of St. Augustine, Bishop and Doctor*, written by a Vincentian Father, and already favourably noticed in the RECORD. The former has been subjected to a good deal of unflattering criticism. The latter has passed through the Reviews, not only unscathed, but frequently and warmly recommended, and, we hope, will soon be issued in a second edition. Perhaps the learned author will pardon us if we call his attention to a remarkable exemplification of the truths conveyed in that chapter of his book in which he

¹ *Lettres Provinciales*, II.

² *New Studies of Religious History*. Art. *The Congregations "de Auxiliis."*

lays down certain rules which must be observed by professional or other readers of the works of St. Augustine.

It has passed into the ordinary canons of criticism that the works of any great author, ancient or modern, must be studied in their entirety, with such light as contemporary publications throw upon them, and with a fair amount of deference for the opinions of those commentators, who, from one motive or another, have made these works the study of their lives. The violation of any of these canons is apt to lead to singular mistakes; and it will be found that nearly half the books of the world are written to support arguments in favour of certain views which are supposed to be contained in the great works of the world's literature. The subjectivity, to use a hackneyed word, of our minds is so strong, that we are continually projecting our own ideas on the page we are supposed to be studying with illumination independent of that which is cast by other minds; and language is so very flexible, particularly when it embraces abstract and indefinite ideas, that we can derive from almost any author texts to support doctrines which we know very well would be most repugnant to that author's mind. We know that Bacon in the English school, Reid in the Scottish school, and Descartes in the french school of Philosophy, have been the originators of ideas, which have been pushed to conclusions which they would have decidedly condemned; and to ascend higher, it is well-known that St. Paul has been cited in support of most contradictory doctrines—to-day he is a Calvinist, to-morrow an idealist, and the climax has been reached by proving him a pantheist from the words, "*in ipso enim vivimus, movemur et sumus.*" Now, there never was an author that required to be studied with keener discrimination than St. Augustine. His mind was so subtle, and he analysed ideas in such a manner that none but the strongest and best trained intellects can follow him; and then he was essentially a dialectician, and possessed such a phenomenal power over the Latin tongue, that he uses phrases and expressions that actually bewilder in their apparent contradictions. Even that little work, his *Confessions*, which apparently was thrown off without premeditation, and, therefore, should be

marked by all the directness and simplicity of a plain categorical statement, is in reality a philosophical treatise containing the pith and marrow of all he had thought and read, and full of those transcendental ideas which have been the despair of those who have attempted to analyse and explain them. The neglect of these primary rules, and let us add, the absence of real theological training, which is common to all Protestants, have led the Hulsean lecturer into many serious errors. Some of these have already been noticed in the *Tablet* for February, 1887, particularly the assertion, which probably will astonish some readers, that the Church of England fully represents, and has always represented, St. Augustine's teaching. But anyone who has had the least acquaintance with contemporary history in England will know that one of the most exasperating features of Ritualism in England is, that in the face of history, in defiance of contemporary declarations on the part of the Anglican bishops, and contemporary decisions of the Ecclesiastical Law Courts, it proclaims the identity of the English Church of to-day with the Apostolic Church and the pre-Reformation Church in England, and maintains doctrines which are reprobated by the Bishops and three-fourths of the Anglican Communion, and uses ceremonies which are condemned by its formularies, and prayers which are declared blasphemous and rites which are declared idolatrous. But long before the English Church had advanced so far in apostacy from itself, and irreconcilability with Rome, (for the nearer it approaches us in externals, the farther is it removed in spirit), the appeal to the Fathers was a favourite one. It was made by all the great High Churchmen of the past, it was made by the Oxford men in the time of the great revival, with the result that they passed directly into union with the Catholic Church. But until some one can define what the English Church is, and declare authoritatively its teaching, the assumption of its identity with any other community can neither be contradicted nor refuted. It is not a concrete body about which anything can be affirmed or denied. One section of its members proclaims its dogmatic adhesion to every doctrine and ceremony of the Catholic Church, if we except

that of Papal Supremacy. Another, representing a good deal of the best thought and feeling of the communion, is quite content to exercise a civilising influence on the masses by the example of irreproachable lives, and the preaching of a secular ethical system, without committing itself to any dogma whatsoever, leaving even the personality of God open to the choice of its followers. "If some very distinguished members of the Church of England," says Mr. Justice Stephen, quoted above, "living or lately dead, could be, or could have been put into a witness box, and closely cross-examined as to their real deliberate opinions, it would be probably found that they not only acknowledged the truth of principles advocated by Mr. Mivart, which, indeed, most of them notoriously and even ostentatiously did and do, but were well aware that they involved all the practical consequences which are pointed out above; yet some of them held, and others still hold, an honoured place in the Church of England, and without giving any particular scandal, discharge in it duties of the highest importance, and give advice, and make exhortations which are highly appreciated by a large number of important persons." To say, therefore, that the English Church represents the teaching of St. Augustine, is to make the latter responsible for "wide divergencies" of belief, a devout Catholic to-day, to-morrow a Socinian or Agnostic. But when the lecturer takes the other side, and instead of telling us what the Church of England teaches, declares the actual opinions which he supposes St. Augustine held, declares, for example, that St. Augustine considered unity no essential mark of the Church, and knew absolutely nothing of the Sacrifice of the Mass, he comes boldly out into the open and it must be admitted that he is very brave. And when he says that the "*libertas indifferentiae*" is a Pelagian doctrine, and that man has no such liberty, and that this is the teaching of St. Augustine, we can bring him down, even in this abstruse and most difficult matter to the words of the great Doctor himself, and to the exposition of these words which was made by his followers and commentators. To select a few sentences out of thousands, in his dialogue with Evodius about free will, he uses the following

words:—"Si natura vel necessitate iste motus existit, culpabilis esse nullo pacto potest" (Lib. iii., cap. 1); and in the following chapter comparing the motion of the will to that of a stone which is cast, he says:—

"Veruntamen in eo dissimilis est, quod in potestate non habet lapis colibere motum, quo fertur inferius; animus vero, dum non vult non ita movetur, ut superioribus desertis, inferiora diligit: et ideo lapidi naturalis est ille motus, animo vero iste voluntarius."

And again:—

"Audi ergo primo ipsum Dominum ubi duas arbores commemorat, quarum mentionem ipse fecisti: audi dicentem, aut facite arborem bonam, et fructum ejus bonum, aut facite arborem malam, et fructum ejus malum. Cum ergo dicit, aut hoc facite, aut illud facite, potestatem indicat, non naturam. Nemo enim nisi Deus facere arborem potest; sed habet unusquisque in voluntate aut eligere quae bona sunt, et esse arbor bona; aut eligere quae mala sunt, et esse arbor mala. Hoc ergo Dominus dicens, aut facite illud, aut facite illud, ostendit esse in potestate quid facerent." (*In Actis cum Felice, Manichaeo* Lib. ii., cap. 4).¹

We pass here from the lecturer to the *Church Quarterly* reviewer, who is inclined to differ from Mr. Cunningham in his opinion of St. Augustine's Rule of Faith, for he states that the latter took the Sacred Scriptures for the recorded and established representatives of Divine Truth on earth, adding that, "although Church authority is to him the immediate practical medium by which he obtains access to Scripture, and is led to believe it, yet every element and constituent of Church authority, whether the individual teaching of Fathers, or the united voice of Councils is to him capable of mistake. It is Scripture alone in which he has decided to find no error." This is rather a strange assertion about the saint, who declared that he accepted the Scriptures only from the hands of the Church; and it is more strangely supported by the quotation given in the note from the Saint's letters to St. Jerome. This note is simply a distinction which St. Augustine draws between the Canonical books of Scripture and those which were considered doubtful or apocryphal, or were the works of individual writers—"Fateor

¹ St. Hilary (in Psalm ii.), St. Optatus (Lib. adv. Parmen. vii.), St. Bernard (*de Gratia et lib. arb.*) agree with St. Augustine

charitati tuæ solis eis Scripturarum libris qui jam *Canonici* appellantur, didici hunc timorem honoremque deferre, ut nullum eorum auctorem scribendo aliquid errasse firmissime credam. Et si aliquid in eis offendero literis quod videatur contrarium veritati, nihil aliud quam vel mendosum esse codicem, vel interpretem non assecutum esse quod dictum est, vel me minime intellexisse, non ambigam. *Alios* autem ita lego ut quantalibet sanctitate doctrinaque praepolleant, non ideo verum puto quia ipsi ita senserunt; sed quia mihi vel per illos auctores Canonicos, vel probabili ratione, quod a vero non abhorreat persuadere potuerunt.”¹

It is quite clear that here there is no distinction made between Scripture and Church authority, but between the Canonical books and the works, however learned, of individuals; and it would rather appear that St. Augustine favoured the absolute authority of the Church in these matters when he acknowledges two classes of books, those called Canonical, which are presented to the faithful with the supreme *imprimatur* of the Church, and in which the saint says, “firmissime credam;” and those whose contents can only be accepted when there is proof of their consonance with the teaching of the Canonical books, “quia mihi vel per illos auctores Canonicos vel probabili ratione quod a vero non abhorreant persuadere potuerunt.” But let us hear St. Augustine himself in that very book which the reviewer has cited, but not quoted, (*Lib. contra Faustum*, xi.) “Si non de aliqua particula, sed de toto audies contradicentem et clamantem, falsus est; quid ages? quo te convertes? quam libri a te prolati originem, quam vetustatem, quam seriem successionis testem citabis? Nam si hoc facere conaberis, et nihil valebis; et vides in hac re quid Ecclesiae Catholicae

¹ The quotation, as given by the *Church Quarterly* reviewer, and quoted accurately in the text, is, however, truncated. For St. Augustine adds, “Nec te, mi frater, sentire aliud existimo; prorsus, inquam, non te arbitrator sic legi tuos libros velle, tanquam Prophetarum vel Apostolorum;” which bears out still more fully our contention, that no contrast was intended between Scriptural and Church teachings, between which no discrepancy can exist; but between the writings of individuals, even those to whose learning and sanctity St. Augustine bears such warm testimony, as in his *Opus Imperfectum*, iv., 112, and the inspired teachings of Scripture and the teachings of the infallible Church.

valeat auctoritas, quae ab ipsis fundatissimis sedibus Apostolorum usque ad hodiernam diem succedentium sibimet Episcoporum serie et tot populorum consensione firmatur." And again, "Quisquis falli metuit obscuritate quaestionis, *Ecclesiam de illo consulat*, quam sine ulla ambiguitate Sacra Scriptura demonstrat," (Lib. i., *contra Cresconium*, c. 33); and that well-known expression, "Ego vero Evangelio non crederem, nisi me Ecclesiae Catholicae commoveret auctoritas," (cap. 8, *contra Epistolam Fundamenti*.) We shall not dwell on the statement that St. Augustine's belief in the Sacred Scriptures arose from his determination to recognise some authority, and in the "circumstances of inability to criticise which existed for him in the ignorance of the original languages, and the possibility of error in the particular MSS. to which he had access." But it is in just these particular cases that St. Augustine recognises the necessity of a living and infallible authority, and, therefore, reposes his final faith in the *magisterium* of the Church. And as to the superior, advantages we possess in the facilities for studying Scripture critically by aid of philological and exegetical research, they have resulted in an issue which was very far from the lofty faith and sublime hope of St. Augustine—the rationalism of modern Europe.

In the same way the reviewer, whilst doubting about Mr. Cunningham's success in proving logically that the Calvinistic doctrines are quite different from the Augustinian, lapses into some mistakes. He cannot understand, for example, in what the Augustinian doctrine of man's inability to work out his own salvation differs from the Calvinistic doctrine of man's total depravity, forgetting that inability to perform supernatural acts without the efficacious help of the Most High is very different from the incapacity to receive such help owing to the total depravity of nature. He ignores the distinction made by Catholic theologians between positive and negative reprobation—the former abstracting altogether from the malice of the sinner, and insisting that the reprobate were created with a view to eternal punishment; the latter, meaning the prescience of God foreseeing the commission of sin, and the necessary subsequent punishment.

“Providentia summi Dei, non fortuita temeritate, regitur mundus,” says St. Augustine, “et ideo nunquam esset istorum aeterna miseria, nisi esset magna malitia;” and again in another place, “omnis poena, si justa est, peccati poena est, et supplicium nominatur.” (Lib. iii., *de lib. arb.*, cap. 18.) As to the case of Pharaoh, and the words of St. Augustine, of which the Calvinists have made so much, “Operari Deum in cordibus hominum ad inclinandas eorum voluntates, quocunque voluerit, sive ad bona pro sua miseria, sive ad mala pro meritis eorum;” a sufficient explanation is found in the words of St. Thomas, when speaking of this passage he says :—“Nam ad bonum inclinat hominum voluntates directe et per se, tanquam auctor bonorum; ad malum autem dicitur inclinare, vel suscitare homines occasionaliter; in quantum scilicet Deus homini proponit vel interius, vel exterius, quod quantum est ex se, est inductivum ad bonum; sed homo propter suam malitiam perverse utitur ad malum.” (*Epist. ad Rom.* c. ix., 17.) And again, “Deus instigat hominem ad bonum, puta regem ad defendendum jura regni sui, vel ad puniendum rebelles; sed hoc instinctu bono malus homo abutitur secundum malitiam cordis sui. Et hoc modo circa Pharaonem accidit; qui cum a Deo excitaretur ad regni sui tutelam, abusus est hæc excitatione ad crudelitatem.”

With the conclusions, however, of the reviewer, we can almost entirely agree. The principal conviction which the study of Augustinian doctrines has brought home to him is, that where the doctrine of predestination is too exclusively regarded, without any application of external sacramental aids, it can only result in a morbid Pharisaism, which placidly condemns the larger portion of mankind to eternal punishment, or a still more morbid despair, which ends in a total disregard of duties which even the natural law imposes. For it is clear that the recourse to the sacraments ought to imply a belief that there is a necessity for spiritual assistance derivable from external sources, and a corresponding belief that such sources can adequately supply what is wanting to the weakness of nature. And though prayer must always have a very large place in any scheme of spiritual economy,

as being one of the easiest and readiest means of approaching our Maker, still we require some facilities of access to channels of Divine Mercy, whence grace will infallibly flow to us, if no obstacle is raised by the perversity of nature. We will not stop here to ask the reviewer what spiritual assistance a merely commemorative ceremony such as the "Lord's Supper" can impart; and what other sacrament is provided for adults in ordinary Protestantism? But when he traces the infidelity which unhappily does exist in Catholic countries to a multiplicity of sacramental forms, that is, to too many visible means of approaching the Unseen, we cannot quite follow him. The same old fancy has struck the mind of another writer, whose latest work, *Natural Law in the Spiritual World*, has attracted considerable attention in this country and in America. In two chapters of this work entitled "Semi-parasitism" and "Parasitism," Professor Drummond traces the apostasy of Catholics to the fact that "the Catholic Church ministers falsely to the deepest needs of man, reduces the end of religion to selfishness, and offers safety without spirituality. . . . No one who has studied the religion of the continent upon the spot has failed to be impressed with the appalling spectacle of tens of thousands of unregenerate men sheltering themselves, as they conceive it, for eternity, behind the Sacraments of Rome." The Professor draws a parallel from Nature, in which he compares ordinary Catholics to those parasitical animals, which deriving strength and safety from superior organisms rarely develop into healthy conditions of life, and never put forth those organs which belong to their nature, and which are provided by necessary laws as a means of sustenance or defence. And although he is careful to state that the teachings of the Catholic Church do not promise safety or moral perfection except to those who correspond with the graces of which she is the depositary, yet he breaks out constantly into angry invective against the system, and places in the same category of contempt the Evangelical who believes in

¹ Page 329, *Natural Law in the Spiritual World*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.

his unconditional salvation through the merits of the atonement, and the Catholic who trusts for his salvation to the efficacy of prayer and the sacraments. But a more acute thinker would perceive that there is this wide distinction, that the Evangelicals trust implicitly in the merits of redemption to the positive exclusion of all merit and of all effort on our part, these latter being to them but "filthy rags," whereas the Church most positively insists that in most of the sacraments the grace received is proportioned to the state of the soul which receives it. It is the obvious distinction of grace received *ex opere operantis* and *ex opere operato* which is so familiar to Catholic students, but quite unknown to the Protestant professor. But the parallel between organic and spiritual life is in these chapters carried a little too far. For either the professor admits the supernatural, and then he must of necessity admit the operation of grace either in the Catholic or Evangelical sense, and thus he admits external assistance apart from internal effort and uncontrolled by it; or, what is more likely, he denies the supernatural element altogether in the spiritual life, and speaks of ordinary natural laws in the development of moral and mental energies. In this latter case, the analogy between the lower organisms and the human mind does not hold, because the contention is that organs and powers are developed by a principle of natural law which adapts organisms to their necessities. This supposes a struggle for existence, and a contest of the weaker with the stronger powers of Nature. But abstracting from the supernatural, what contest goes on in man that can develop and strengthen his *moral* powers? No doubt his *mental* energies are developed in his struggle against Nature, and he puts forth strength that will save him against the uncontrolled forces which seek his destruction. Thus he ascends from the flint-fire and the friction-fire of the forest to the patent stove and electric lamp of civilisation, and from the coracle or canoe to the steamboat. But morally speaking, there being no danger, there is neither struggle nor contest, therefore no development, and therefore he must remain the primitive barbarian, rather enervated, but not at all exalted by his sense of safety in civilisation. The

application of natural law to the spiritual world is here, therefore, entirely at fault, and, indeed, we might say that the whole work is fanciful rather than logical. But writers of this kind must always break a lance with the Catholic Church; it adds to their honour to be defeated.

Apart, therefore, from the perversities of individuals for which no system can be held responsible, it would be difficult to conceive a more perfect supernatural system, and one better accommodated to spiritual necessities and spiritual growth than that which is presented by the Church. It holds the golden mean between the extremes of Evangelicalism and Rationalism. It neither promises salvation without effort nor salvation without assistance. It neither preaches vicarious sanctification nor human perfectibility. But after declaring the high moral precepts that are contained in the absolute commandments of the Most High, and the counsels of perfection in the Gospels, it leads its members by individual effort on their part, and by the strength supplied by the sacraments to such possibilities of perfection as are compatible with the limits of a fallen nature. It allows grace and free will to work harmoniously. They are the centripetal and centrifugal forces that keep the soul in its perfect orbit round the central sun of its existence. It does not encourage pride or overweening consciousness in our own powers; neither does it paralyse effort by promising absolute security through the merits of the Redemption. To say, therefore, that "Roman Catholicism opens to the masses a molluscan shell. They have simply to shelter themselves within its pale, and they are safe," is palpably absurd. And so is the typical case which the professor gives of the Catholic convert who said:—"I used to be concerned about religion, but religion is a great subject. I was very busy. A Protestant, my attention was called to the Roman Catholic religion. It suited my case. And instead of dabbling in religion for myself, I put myself into its hands. Once a year I go to Mass." This is not serious reasoning at all. It is *bouffonnerie*. To whatever causes, therefore, the infidelity of Catholic countries is attributable, it certainly cannot be traced to the sacramental system in the Church. A system that has been

adopted by such minds as St. Augustine and St. Thomas, and which has produced those marvels of sanctity, who have been raised by the veneration of the people, or by the voice of the Church in thousands upon her altars, cannot be so enervating as our Protestant friends would have us suppose. It is the only system which is in strict accord with the words of Holy Scripture—the only one that can adapt itself with ease to those difficult passages that seem to be irreconcilable in Holy Writ, the only system that meets the wants of men when pride is weakened—

“ And the helpless feet stretch out
To find in the depths of the darkness
No footing more solid than doubt.”

And there are only two classes that can possibly reject it. The religious fanatic who believes he has got “religion,” and attributes a play of emotions to the breathing of the Spirit of God; and the Rationalist who rejects all supernatural agencies, and thinks that man can raise himself by unaided effort to the full stature of moral perfection. The emotional and exciting religion of the former, however repulsive to refined minds, will always find adherents amongst the classes, who prefer a play of feelings to that elevation of mind and heart towards God which is taught by the Catholic Church; the latter will command the assent of that large and ever-growing class, which with intolerant pride strives to match its puny strength against “principalities and powers, against the rulers of the world of this darkness, against the spirits of wickedness in the high places.”

We have been tempted into this rather discursive paper by the pleasing fact that Augustinian doctrines are to-day commanding the attention and reverence of so many thoughtful men throughout the world. And it is a satisfaction to know that the *Church Quarterly* reviewer adds an unbiassed testimony to the excellence of the Catholic work (*A Historical Study*), and its superiority in all biographical respects to the other publications we have mentioned. This book, therefore, must become the standard work on St. Augustine, and we have thrown out the above hints in the hope that they may catch the eye of the learned author, and perhaps elicit from

him an explanatory chapter in the shape of an "Appendix." Nor should we be surprised to find that in time a good deal of Augustinian literature will cluster around this work which has come to us so modestly, and has been received in so welcome a manner. For the subject is practically inexhaustible. The writings of St. Augustine touch on all those problems that will ever have a lasting influence on the human mind. Mr. Cunningham skimmed in one sentence a subject that could be easily built into a treatise, when he said:—"Just as it is true that he may well be compared to Descartes in regard to the problems of the certainty of knowledge, so it is true that he seems to have anticipated Kant in proclaiming the true freedom of the will;" and a whole library might be constructed out of his suggestions, just as devastating heresies arose from the misinterpretation of his words. If it were true that he anticipated Descartes and Kant, the philosophy of the present would possess very little that would be original, and the philosophy of the future would have but a limited field for research. This is but saying that the best intellects of the world have been employed, consciously or otherwise, in seeking to make clear those mysteries that would never have dawned on the human mind but through the illumination of the Holy Spirit.

P. A. SHEEHAN, C.C.

MEMOIR OF DR. PATRICK COMERFORD, O.S.A.,
BISHOP OF WATERFORD AND LISMORE, 1629-
1652.

IN presenting to the readers of the IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD for the month of August last a notice of "N. D. De Miséricorde," in connection with a memoir of Dr. Robert Barry, Bishop of Cork and Cloyne, a notice of Dr. Comerford, his intimate friend and companion in exile, seemed necessary. Happily the materials to fulfil this task are abundant owing to the labours of His Eminence Cardinal Moran and the

Rev. C. P. Meehan, who have in their valuable works, brought before the public the life of this eminent Confessor of the Faith and distinguished ornament of the Order of St. Augustine.

In this notice I will collect materials from all available sources so as to present as clear, concise and full a memoir as possible.

The family of Comerford was established in the Co. Wexford since the time of Strongbow. It, with many other Anglo-Norman families, settled in Wexford at this period and spread itself into the adjoining counties of Kilkenny and Waterford. The Comerfords of Callan, Co. Kilkenny, were Palatine Barons of Dungannon. Lord Desart is now the owner of the property they possessed. In Callan Protestant church, originally belonging to the Canons Regular of St. Augustine, is a mural tablet with the arms of the family. In each of the three counties the Comerford family held good positions, as well as in the city of Waterford.

Nicholas Comerford, uncle of the subject of our present notice, studied at Oxford, where he took out his degree in 1562. Returning to Waterford, his native city, he was ordained priest. Refusing to conform to the new religion, he went to Louvain, where he was honoured with the degree of Doctor of Divinity. From there he went to Madrid where he joined the Society of Jesus and died after composing several works, which showed him to be a man of high intellectual culture. His brother, Robert, father of the future Bishop, was an opulent merchant of Waterford who claimed descent, through his mother, from the Walshes. His wife was Anastasia White, who was closely related to the Butlers; so that from both sides they were allied with the best families of Waterford. No doubt they took great care of the education of their children, which devolved, principally, on the mother. At an early age Patrick, who was born about the year 1586, determined to embrace the ecclesiastical state. His father having died when he was young, the home of his widowed mother was always open to receive and shelter the devoted priests who suffered for the Faith. They in turn instructed her son in the rudiments of learning and trained his heart to piety.

One of these, Father Dermod O'Callaghan, an active, zealous priest, who had taken great pains to restore the churches of the city to Catholic worship on the death of Elizabeth, was pursued with special enmity by the heretics and was obliged to fly to the Continent. He was mainly instrumental in establishing the Irish College at Bordeaux in the year 1603, Cardinal de Sourdis, Archbishop of that city, providing the necessary funds, and drew up for its direction rules and statutes which he got approved of by the Holy See. Young Comerford accompanied his preceptor to Bordeaux, where, one of its first pupils, he distinguished himself in humanities and proved himself a clever writer of Latin verse. Owing to weak health, he was obliged to return home. When his health permitted, he set out again, for Lisbon, where he studied philosophy. At the completion of his studies in philosophy, he maintained a public thesis in that branch of learning which won him universal applause.

After this he entered the novitiate of the Hermits of St. Augustine at Lisbon and took in religion the name of Patrick "Ab Angelis," and having made his religious profession, he was sent by his superiors to their house at Angra, in the island of Terceira, capital of the Azores. He there professed rhetoric for four years. At the close of that term he was recalled to Portugal and studied theology at Coimbra. At its close he defended a thesis comprising the entire cycle of divinity. He was a poet as well as an orator, and was remarkable for his great stature and suavity of manners. Though young, he was deemed fit to fill the professor's chair in any of the departments of science then cultivated. He was secretary to the Provincial of his order in Portugal, and councillor for the Azores. Having attained his twenty-fourth year, Comerford was ordained priest in the year 1610, and, as his services were required in Brussels, he went to that city, where he was appointed on his arrival to a professorial chair in the convent of his order. He taught there philosophy and theology. Summoned from there to attend a general chapter of his order in Rome, he was made definitor and procurator of his order in the Eternal City. He was appointed by Pope Paul V. Perpetual Prior of Callan in

Ossory. On his way back to Ireland he visited Florence where he received the degree of Doctor in Theology. Having arrived in Ireland, Father Comerford applied himself to the care of his priory and administered the sacraments to the people under his care, acting under the sanction of the illustrious Dr. Roth, Bishop of Ossory. He also consoled and encouraged the people of Waterford who were suffering under the tyranny of the penal laws.

Fr. Comerford's labours were soon to be transferred to another sphere. Already there was a question at Rome of appointing him to the vacant Bishopric of Derry, as appears from a letter from the Earl of Tyrconnell, November 18th, 1628, preserved in the Irish College, Paris, who, for local, not personal reasons, opposed the appointment. Providence had other designs for him which were brought about by strange and unforeseen circumstances. His brother being captured by pirates was taken by them to Morocco. Fr. Comerford set out for Spain, secured the aid of the Trinitarian monks, and with moneys collected among his friends, had the consolation of seeing his brother released on the payment, however, of a large ransom. On landing in Spain, his brother was very soon carried off by the plague. This, however, did not dishearten the good priest, for it is recorded that he procured from the Moors the release of one hundred slaves.

After passing some time in Spain, Fr. Comerford proceeded to Rome on business of the Augustinian Order. He had not been long in the Eternal City when on the petition of Laurence Lea, V.G., on behalf of the clergy of the united dioceses of Waterford and Lismore, he was promoted by Pope Urban VIII. to the pastoral charge of those sees, the late Bishop, Dr. Walsh, having died in 1578, and also the Cistercian Abbot of Iniscaunacht or *de Suir*, who died before the receipt of the papal brief nominating him to that see. On March 18th, 1629, in the Church of St. Sylvester on the Quirinal, he was consecrated Bishop by Cardinal Bentivoglio, assisted by two other bishops. Luke Wadding, his fellow citizen, and whom he styles his "very loving and kind cousin," assisted at the ceremony, as also a large assemblage of the Irish exiles then in Rome.

On the occasion of Dr. Comerford's consecration, Christopher Chamberlain, alumnus of the Irish Seminary, Rome, composed a small 12^{mo} vol. with the following title and dedication. A copy of this is in the Archives of the Dublin Franciscans:—

Titulum.

Coronatae • Virtuti • Revmi • D.
Patritii • Quemerfordii • ex • sacro •
Eremit • D • Augustini • ordine.

EPISCOPI.

Waterfordensis • et Lismorensis •
Inaugurati • plausus •
Seminarium • Hibernorum • de • urbe.

Dedicatio.

Patritio • Quemerfordo •
Viro • ad • religionis • ornamentum • nato •
Ad • Ecclesiae • emolumentum • destinato •

Qui

Ingenio • scientiarum • omnium • capaci •
Animo • dignitatis •
Virtutis • merito • patriae • voto •
Bonorum • omnium • applausu •
Ad Sacri • honoris • verticem • evectus • est •
Qui • muneri • amplissimo •

Parem • adferens • eruditionem •
Parem • eruditioni • pietatem • adjungens •
Inter • summos • doctrina • enitet •
Inter • doctos • autoritate • eminet •
Inter • utrosque • pietate • emicat •
Qui • reciproca • et virtutis • luce • honorem •

Et • honoris • virtutem • illustrat •
Ut • magis • tamen • honor • virtute •
Quam • virtus • honore •

Videatur • ornata •
Virumq • dignitati • non • dignitatem •
Collatam • viro •
Publica • foelicitas • aggratuletur.

De Courcey, another student of the same house, wrote the following on the armorial bearings of Dr. Comerford,

The symbolism of the double cross, the rose and thorns, were almost prophetic.

“In Quemerfordii gentilitia Stemmata Epigramma”

Quid tibi cum canibus, quid vult crux bina rosarum,
Quae praefers signis, vir venerande tuis ?
Symbola quippe tuae sunt haec et in se virtutis,
Officii summam continere tui ;
Nam canis (ut veterum monstrant enigmata) vatem
Qui summi novit pandere sacra notat,
Significat doctum, vigilem, gratumq fidelem,
Denotat obsequium, militis umbra canis,
Quid Rosa spinarum stimulis circumdata? virtus
Obsessa innumeris, quae solet esse malis.
Haec tibi quam juste quadrant Insignia, praesul,
Cui, populi sacrum pandere dogma datur,
Cujus onus Christi tutari fortiter arcem,
Hostis et adversas vi cohibere minas,
Cujus inoffenso virtus splendore nitebit,
Sit licet innumeris obtenebrata malis.

(I may remark that these armorial bearings are not those of the Comerford family, and must have been selected by Dr. Comerford himself.)

Dr. Comerford set out for Ireland soon after his consecration, having had previously an audience of Pope Urban, who charged him with special care of the Augustinian Order in Ireland, and appointed him Apostolic Vicar-General of the Regular Canons of St. Augustine in this country. Returning to Waterford, Dr. Comerford laboured strenuously for the faith, and such was his success in refuting heretics that he was called, like his father in religion, St. Augustine, *Malleus Haereticorum*. During the Confederation he published a controversial work which he composed at that time. His life was often exposed to risk from the pursuit of the enemies of the faith, and he had often to seek for safety in concealment or flight. When the Catholics of Waterford joined the movement of 1641, and Atherton, their bitter enemy, ended his career by a disgraceful death on the scaffold, Dr. Comerford restrained the violence of the populace who were disposed to execute summary vengeance on those Protestants at whose hands they had suffered, not for disloyalty to the State, but for fidelity to the religion of their forefathers.

Being summoned to assist in framing the oath of associa-

tion and establishing the Confederation in Kilkenny, he took an active part in all those preliminaries, and was one of the first of the Irish Prelates to declare that the war which the Catholics were about to wage, was not only just in the sight of heaven, but necessary for the welfare of the Irish Catholics.

In 1641 the Supreme Council, of which he was a member, succeeded in reducing the fort of Duncannon, and he was restored to the temporalities of his see, which had been so long in the hands of Anglican intruders. He lost no time in reconciling the Cathedral Church of the Holy Trinity, and replacing the altars and sacred furniture which had been removed by the reformers. He was assisted by the generosity of the people of Waterford in the necessary moneys for this object. He restored the ritual of the Church in her ceremonies, and so exactly were they performed that the nuncio attested he had no where seen the usages of Rome so faithfully reproduced. By pontifical authority, the bishop attached to the Cathedral, the Church of St. Catherine, of old belonging to the Canons Regular of St. Augustine, and in exchange gave to the religious of his Order the Chapel of the Blessed Virgin, hitherto dependant on the Cathedral. This was a happy change for the good bishop, but, alas, one of short duration. We shall retrace our steps a little, and see what Dr. Comerford's feelings were on his coming to Ireland as bishop. He had spent the greater portion of his life in Portugal and her colonies, or in Brussels, where the Catholic religion was free and exempt from poverty and persecution.

Dr. Comerford on his return to Ireland, wrote from Waterford to Fr. Luke Wadding, 29th November, 1629 :—

“It is the moistiest, the stormiest, the poorest. and the most oppressed country that I saw since I left it until I returned . . . As for trading or stirring in mercantile affairs, which is the support of this kingdom, it is so much forgotten that scarce a man doth know of what colour is the coin in this miserable island. The dearth of the two last years, the universal sickness, the oppression of soldiers, besides other incumbrances, have made Ireland to seem to be in very deed a land of ire. At sea a merchant cannot navigate two days when he is taken by a Hollander, or a Dunkirk, or a French pirate, or a hungry Biscayner. The weather is so rainy and drowsy continually, that it doth imprint and indent in a man's heart a certain saturn quality of heaviness, sluggishness, lazyness, and perpetual sloth. Our (Lord) Deputy is gone for England, and in his stead do govern

the kingdom the Lord of Cork and the Lord Chancellor. What is their mind we know not yet, but if they will not expel us out of the kingdom, I know not what other punishment can they inflict upon us, for money or means they cannot find in any place in Ireland."

"Patrick of Waterford" writes, "*e loco Mansionis Nostrae*," March 12th, 1631, to Luke Wadding, his "very loving and kind Cousin":—

"The country here doth begin a little to respire after the tedious wars, dearth, and sickness with which it was afflicted all these six years past. As yet we see no great persecution since the peace was proclaimed, although we may not presume much upon this little toleration, fearing such another devastation and desolation as came upon us the last year. This, your native place, *caput exerit undis*, as if it were after a long storm; and if any place of the kingdom have any stirring or trade, this will not overslip it."—*Wadding MSS.*

These extracts give us an idea of Dr. Comerford's feelings on his arrival, and after some stay in Waterford. He had also other difficulties. The Protestant bishops, Boyle and Atherton, by levying fines for recusancy and other means hindered the priests in the discharge of their duties. Notwithstanding all their efforts he succeeded in governing his flock, and held synods of his clergy, confirmed numbers of the young by day and night, either in private houses or in the woods, where he had to betake himself to perform those functions without interruption. The change was a great one to the bishop, from this secret performance of his duties and thwarted by persecution to an open one, free and surrounded by the full ceremonial of the Church. To obtain this for the entire island, and also a Catholic viceroy for the people, the majority of whom were Catholic, was the object of the nuncio and also of Dr. Comerford, who was one of those who most strongly supported the nuncio's policy. On the nuncio's departure from Kilkenny he spent many months of the year 1647 in Waterford with Dr. Comerford. The excommunication pronounced by the nuncio he caused to be strictly enforced in his diocese. The churches were placed under interdict and the celebration of Mass was forbidden. On a remonstrance being forwarded to him by the members of the Supreme Council, he returned a firm and dignified reply and paid no heed to their threats to deprive him of the temporalities of his see. The nuncio having established himself in Galway and finally taken leave

of the country, and Cromwell having taken possession of Waterford, Dr. Comerford was ordered to quit the country within three months. He set sail for S. Malo, where he arrived in August, 1650, but, on the way, was twice seized by pirates and stripped of everything he had. Writing to the Archbishop of Fermo, on the 23rd of March, 1651, he states that after his exile from Ireland "the few priests who had survived the pestilence and concealed themselves among the remnants of the Catholics, were banished . . . I hear the plague has begun its ravages again, and is carrying off the few Catholics that remained. Since my departure my nephews, Paul Carew and John Fitzgerald, and several others have died. The same tale of misery comes to us from Dublin, Wexford, Kilkenny, Ross, Clonmel, and the adjoining districts." He writes from S. Malo, 3rd March, 1651, to Rinuccini, stating he suffers from much debility, that though suffering many inconveniences he will remain here until the end of the war. If things succeed well he will return to his diocese at once; if badly, he knows not where to go. He, with his friend Robert Barry, Bishop of Cork, went to Nantes where they were received with great joy, and the States of Brittany made ample provision for their support. His chequered life was soon to end.

Worn out with sorrow and suffering he resigned his soul into the hands of his Master on Sunday, March 10th, 1652. His remains were interred in the Cathedral Church of Nantes, in the chapel of St. Clair, where his obsequies were celebrated with great pomp. Ten years subsequently, when the same vault was opened to receive the remains of Dr. Barry, his body was found quite incorrupt.

EPITAPH OF DR. COMERFORD.

[From the Rinuccini MSS., *Spic. Ossor.*, Page 89, Vol. 3.]

Quid hic stas viator?
 Lactum aliquid quaeris
 abi
 Funus narro
 acerbum, indignum, lachrymabile.
 Aliquid priscum?
 Heu pietas, heu prisca fides
 Alumnum hic vestrum et parentem
 Vindicem et martyrem
 situm agnoscite
 Patricium Comerford

Waterfordiensem juxta ac Lismoriensem
Praesulem Illustrissimum
domo Ibernium, genere nobilem, eruditione spectabilem
Doctorem Laureatum
Saceri Eremitarum S. Augustini ordinis et instituti
Olim clientem, lumen et columen egregium
Visitoris munere in eodem perfunctum non semel.
Quid tunc ?
Illum, illum haereticorum malleum, schismaticorum
fulmen, vitiorum clavum, patrem patriae, centum
olim captivorum vindicem et assertorem
longe meritissimum
Illum verbi divini praedicatione Apostolum
exilii patientia martyrem
pietatis studio confessorem
Virtutis inclytae, fidei invictae, constantiae immobilis.
Quid, inquam, rogitas ?
Ah, quoniam alios nunc vultus, aliaque ora contueor,
dicam confidentius.
Catholicae veritatis defensorem fortissimum
Libertatis Ecclesiasticae vindicem acerrimum
Sedis apostolicae propugnatorem strenuissimum
Britannia major expulit
Britannia minor excepit
Deinceps vel hoc solo nomine major futura :
Patriam fugit
Etenim nulla fides terrae et crudelibus Anglis
Naanetos venit
Nimirum sunt haec sua praemia laudi
Sunt lachrymae rerum et mentem mortalia tangunt.
At O rerum vices !
Finiis alterius mali
Gradus est futuri.
Excidium patriae, exilium attulit innocentiae
Hoc denique exitio vitae fuit.
Quippe luctu et maerore calamitatis
Publicae et privatae
Suorum civium, suorum ovium
Civis optimus, pastor bonus
Infra paucos menses confectus exstinguitur
Extinctum
Venerabilis insignis hujus Ecclesiae decanus et
Canonici celebri pompa et funere extulerunt
Et antiquo illustrissimorum Praesulum sepulchro considerare
Conclamatum est, abi
Votisque modo et precibus fave
Avunculo benemerenti, nepotes maerentes,
Patritius Haquet et Nicolaus Geraldinus
Sic parentebant.

This epitaph, however, from any tradition at Nantes, does not appear to have been inscribed on the tomb of Dr. Comerford. What the inscription on it was, up to the time of the great French Revolution, when it suffered the fate of so many others from profane hands, appears from the following extracts :—

Archives Municipales, Série gg, Registre de la Paroisse de St. Nicholas—Sépultures—1646-1655, fol. 171, (Nantes.)

“ Le quatorzième jour de mars mil six cent cinquante deux a esté commencée une octave à haulte voix pour defunct Monseigneur l'illustre et Reverendissime Père en Dieu Messire Patrice Comerford, vivant evesque de Waterford et de Lismore en Hybernie, frère religieux de l'ordre des Eremites de Saint Augustin. Lequel decedé en la communion de notre mere Sainte Eglise le Dimanche dixiesme des diets mois et an, et le mardy ensuivant, son corps fut solennellement inhumé en l'Eglise Cathédrale de Saint Pierre du diets Nantes.

“ J. BOULLERY, *Recteur.*”

“ Le vingt et uniesme jours de mars mil six cent cinquante deux a été fait le service d'octave de defunct Messire Patrice Comerfort, vivant evesque de Waterford et de Lismore.”

Archives du Chapitre de la Cathédrale de Nantes (Registres des Conclusions Capitulaires.)

“ Le Lundy treizième jour d'Octobre, 1670, Messieurs Boylesve, DuBrail, Le Bigot, Carisve, Toublane, tous Chanoines.

“ Le Chapitre a fait delivrer à un prestre hybernois un extrait de la conclusion du lundy ije Mars 1652, touchant l'enterrement d'un evesque d'Irlande en cette eglise.”

The author of *L'Histoire lapidaire de Nantes*, in manuscript, has seen the tombs of Dr. Comerford and Dr. Barry in the Chapel of S. Clair, Cathedral of S. Pierre at Nantes, and copied the inscription. That of Dr. Comerford on a brass (*Table de Cuivre*) was as follows :—

“ Ici repose très Révérend père en Dieu Patrice de Commersford, évêque de Waterford et de Lismore en Irlande. Persécuté dans son pays par les factieux d'Angleterre, il se retira en France, ou il trouva sûreté et protection. Plein de confiance dans les bontés de l'Eternel, il vécut avec patience et supporta les malheurs de cette vie avec résignation. Il mourut l'an du Seigneur 1652.

“ Archives du Chapitre de la Cathédrale de Nantes (Conclusions Capitulaires.)

“ Du Vendredi. 29me Octobre, 1779.

“ Présents messieurs, de regnon Doyen, de chevigné archidiaire de Nantes, de la tullais archidiaire de la Mée, soldini chantre dignitaire

de paris, de remaceul, phelipon, de vay, de charbonneau, bouissineau, de héré, de melient, doriard, de juge irvoi, tous chanoines.

“Aiant ce jour été présenté à la compagnie une requête tendante à ce que la plaque sur laquelle est inscrit l'épitaphe de monsieur de Comersfort, évêque de Waterford et de Lismore, inhumé du moi de mai de l'année mil six cent cinquante deux, dans le caveau de messieurs les évêques de Nantes ne fut point confondue avec le carrelage, mais mise dans un lieu apparent, pour perpétuer la memoire du dit seigneur évêque; le chapitre faisant droit sur la ditte requête a consenti et consent que la susdite plaque soit et reste placé comme elle l'étoit cy devant dans un lieu apparent et addossée au pilier de la chapelle de la sainte épine pour y rester a perpétuité.”

I have done my part in reviving the memory of these noble confessors of the Faith, Dr. Comerford and Dr. Barry. Their sufferings for the Faith and devotion to the Blessed Virgin has merited for them the grateful memory of the people of Nantes. Many other glorious Confessors of the Faith in Ireland remain without their history being recorded. I would humbly submit that if each priest did a little, we should soon have materials for a history to edify and to instruct.

PATRICK HURLEY.

THE ORAL SYSTEM OF TEACHING THE DEAF AND DUMB.

THE interest that has been taken by some of your readers must be my apology for asking to be allowed to address you again regarding the charges that have been brought against the oral system by the distinguished author of “Claims of the Uninstructed Deaf-Mute to be admitted to the Sacraments.”

He has issued a rejoinder in the September and October numbers of the RECORD. Your readers will scarcely look upon it as a reply; for he declines to notice, much less does he meet any of the arguments or instances by which I endeavoured to clear the oral system from the charges he brought against it. He alleges as his reason that “Father Dawson would seem to rely but little, or rather not at all on my personal experience or knowledge.”

I think your readers will see his mistake. What I complained of throughout was that he had advanced his observations without basing them or confirming them on his personal experience and personal knowledge. So true is this, that in his four letters, extending over forty-five pages of the RECORD, he gives only one small instance regarding the oral system from personal knowledge.

However, since he maintains that his original statements remain good and retain all their force, I will endeavour again to meet them.

His observations included two most grievous charges against the teachers and patrons of the oral system.

1st. "The teacher *has* to expose his entire chest and neck to the view of his pupils, so that the latter, partly by sight and partly by manual feeling, may observe how the vocal organs are exerted from the lungs upwards."

"Female deaf-mutes are doomed it would seem to undergo the same process as males, whether in separate or mixed schools."

"Religious communities *are thereby* excluded, and it is not seen how female teachers can avail themselves at all of such training."

2nd. "The oral system does not pretend to concern itself much about the religion of its pupils." In the oral schools there is a "sad void."

Thus did the writer, addressing himself to an exclusively Catholic audience, cast suspicions regarding morality and religious instruction against the religious communities that teach, and the bishops and ecclesiastics that are responsible for all the Catholic oral schools in Europe. I do not think there has been found a Catholic in this century who has ventured to issue publicly such imputations against religious or ecclesiastics. To my knowledge his words were understood by readers in their worst sense, and carried with them the weight of conviction by virtue of the high reputation of the name whose signature attested them.

He seemed to place too much confidence in the words of other writers; for, grave as these charges were, they were merely asserted, without a shadow of proof, or explanation, or experience to support them.

In my reply, I was not satisfied with declaring them from my experience of the system, both in the school at

Boston Spa and the other oral schools in England, to be absolutely false, but I showed at considerable length physical reasons why the objectionable practice he described was not only not necessary, but useless and even detrimental to the process of acquiring true tone of voice, and therefore that it could not be part of the oral system.

A grain of fact is worth a ton of speculation, and surely the living fact that the children in Catholic oral schools throughout Europe are being taught to speak without those exposures, and are being brought up in the full knowledge and practice of their religion, ought to have outweighed any ideas that he might have formed from reading the *International Review* or other pamphlets.

In the whole of my reply I was careful to make no assertion which I did not know to be true from personal knowledge. How different is the motive of credibility in my opponent. He does not profess to lay before us what he has seen, or knows to be a fact, nor even what he has read; but merely "observations that were suggested by the perusal of the *International Review on the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb*." If he had collected together facts and statements out of the *Review* and presented them to us as he there found them, we should all have derived instruction from them; but observations arising from them, like comments on the Bible, must not claim to have the high authority of the original.

When, therefore, I dispute the truth of his observations, I am not, as he would represent, guilty, in my zeal for the oral system, of overlooking the high authority of the *Review* and its respectable committee; but I am asserting my personal knowledge against his deductions. The inference of course is, that his observations are not correctly drawn; and I shall show that in the one instance in which he specially gives a reference, viz., the subject "le toucher," there is nothing in the *Review* that suggest the idea of, much less insists on, the necessity for the evil practice which he describes with so much colour. *Ex uno disce omnes.*

Moreover, in his September letter he gives us nothing from personal knowledge, but a mass of extracts carefully selected according as they would suit his purpose. Given a

brief, and a collection of speeches expressing various opinions, such as will be found in the Reports of the Conferences of Teachers of the deaf and dumb, it is not difficult to make a selection that will appear to establish a good case. But a judicial mind would require to know the value of the opinions cited: and if they were out of date, or strongly partisan, he would not allow them to be of much weight.

Now the oral system of teaching the deaf and dumb, as applied to a *whole* school, is of late growth. Each step in this difficult art has had to be discovered by experiment, so that difficulties and defects that existed thirty, twenty, and even ten years ago, have since been removed. During the period of its development discussion ran high and bitter between the adherents of the sign system, and the advocates of the oral system. It is therefore necessary before accepting any testimony on the subject, to consider both the date and partisan character of the utterance. In fact, on the question of what can and what cannot be done under the oral system, the testimony to be of any value at all must be drawn from the experiences of the present day.

What then is the general value of that collection of extracts wherein your correspondent, with one exception, avoids all contemporary evidence; draws the greater part of his support from the Report of the Conference held in London ten years ago, when the system was comparatively so little known in England that not a single English school had yet adopted it; neglects the Conferences held in 1881 and 1885; draws no evidence from Catholic oralists; none from the oral schools on the Continent; quotes statistics fifty years old to show what proportion of children can *now* be educated under the oral system; and even presses into his service the experiences of Weld and Day, who made their tour of inquiry forty years ago.

I appeal to your readers, is this the policy of a person who wishes the public, in the interests of the deaf and dumb, to know what can be done to lessen their sad affliction? Does it not rather argue a determination to discredit the oral system and its teachers. Such certainly is the tendency of his letters, and the effect of his calumnies, if unrefuted, would be anything

but beneficial to the deaf and dumb. For by discrediting the managers that adopt the oral method, he is directly withdrawing public confidence and public support from those institutions.

Let us now examine his rejoinder on the subject of the objectionable practices. I challenged him to say that any Catholic institution used them, or to name any respectable authority that insisted on their necessity. He is silent about any Catholic institution; but for the justification of his serious charge against all the teachers of the oral system, he refers us to the *International Review*, and to two statements by Mr. Arnold, one in the *English Quarterly Review*, and the other in the Report of the Brussels Congress.

Fortunately, I have all three by my side. He says, "the practice occupies a large space in the *International Review*, being continued in several numbers of that periodical as an accredited adjunct of the system."

These words would lead one to suppose that the process was being continually urged by a number of responsible persons. But what is the fact? After careful examination of all the numbers, I find the only thing of any moment is an essay on "le toucher" in the first three numbers of the *Review*, viz., April, May, and June of 1885, by Marius Dupont, and another short one in the following December. Your readers will be surprised to hear that there is not even mention or suggestion of the all-important point, "exposure of the chest." The dissertation is on the use of the sense of touch in its widest sense, including also sensation, and aims at showing, at least theoretically, the extent to which it may be used for acquiring correct articulation. M. Dupont would have the pupils train their sense of touch to such delicacy as to be able not only to perceive the resonance of the chest, the vibration of the bones of the head, the movements of the larynx, and the currents of air from the mouth, but to be able to distinguish the different characters of these vibrations, movements and currents, when caused by different vocal sounds.

The sense of touch is to be applied, not to the exposed chest, not in the way of manual feeling, and making the

fingers pursue the action of the vocal organs, from the lungs upwards, but in noticing the general resonance of the chest. This, of course, can be done without any disarrangement of the dress, and as its object is to learn the production of *voice*, it is only required in the pupil's earliest days.

The other authority advanced by your correspondent is, "Mr. T. Arnold, who advocates the practice not only at home in England (*Quarterly Review*, Oct., 1886), but also at the International Congress at Brussels, and who sustains his views on scientific principles, which he developed extensively on the occasion."

Your readers will be again surprised to learn that in neither of those places is there any mention of the all-important point "exposure of the chest."

In the first reference, which is an article not written by Mr. Arnold, but by Mr. A. Farrar, who often quotes him, the word chest is only once mentioned. I extract the full sentence to prove that Mr. Arnold's intention goes no further than M. Dupont:

"So in order that the learner may have *voice* suggested to him, Mr. Arnold would make a large use of touch, to enable him to compare his own sounds with those of his teacher—in the case of 'a' touching each other's glottis and chest."

In the second reference, Mr. Arnold's dissertation before the Brussels Congress, the chest is never once mentioned. It is a scientific dissertation on the sense of touch and sensation in relation to sound-vibrations, and partakes much more of the nature of an essay on physics than an instruction upon the practical teaching of articulation.

If such then are the grounds upon which my opponent says he charges the oral system with requiring improper practices, I think we may justly charge him with grossly misrepresenting his text book, and with throwing out a most serious imputation against sacred persons on most slender grounds. And if his comment on this, the gravest of all his points, is so unfaithful to the text-book, his other observations may justly be regarded with suspicion until their truth is confirmed.

The religious, whose charity urges them to devote

themselves to the education of the deaf and dumb, have undertaken a work which requires more patience and tact than that of any other teachers. Truly do they deserve our gratitude and consideration. Your correspondent, however, without a kind word for those whom he had wounded, closes his rejoinder on the above subject with these remarkable words :

“ I referred to it chiefly to point out how it excluded, *so far as it was employed*, female teachers and female pupils from all participation in the oral system, and of course *to that extent* narrowed its application.”

Yes! If that saving clause “so far as it was employed” had been inserted in the February letter it would have taken all force out of the objection. For it would have implied that the objectionable practices might or might not be employed, that they were not essential to the system, and therefore that there was no fear of their being used in any Catholic institution.

But I cannot believe that any such qualification was intended by him, for his words were absolute, “the teacher *has* to expose,” “religious communities *are* thereby excluded.” Nor can I think that even now he shows any modification of his original accusation, for the last words of this remarkable sentence, “and to that extent narrowed its application,” if I rightly understand them, take all meaning out of the earlier part. If these words mean that the *touch practice* in its objectionable form narrows the application of the oral system to the cases in which it is employed, he is still affirming that it must be employed wherever the oral system exists.

I will now consider whether my opponent has produced any better defence of his second great charge against the oral system, viz.; that it is “unsuited to impart religious instruction.”

In February he said, “the oral system does not pretend to concern itself much about the religion of its pupils;” and he spoke of there being a “sad void” in this respect in the oral schools.

This sweeping assertion casting such a slur upon the bishops, priests, and religious communities who were

concerned in, and teaching the Catholic oral schools throughout Europe, was put forth without the slightest attempt at proof, reason, or illustration. It was not an abstract question or a matter of scientific discovery, but it deeply affected the character of individuals, and deserved to be firmly met. I declared it to be a calumny that showed the writer's ignorance of what is done in Catholic oral schools. Would any priest show the slightest consideration for a person who publicly dared to declare that the ordinary Catholic schools in England and Ireland are so conducted that the children cannot be instructed in their religion, and that the managers do not concern themselves much about it? Such a statement would alone convince us that he had neither visited nor made himself acquainted with what is done in those schools. I might have claimed to have replied to a bare statement by a bare denial; but flattering myself that his representation would be quashed for ever by the logic of facts, I explained in detail how the children at Boston Spa were being thoroughly instructed in the truths and practices of their religion. I brought our children before him, showed them answering questions in catechism and doctrine every Sunday, receiving instruction daily, frequenting the sacraments regularly, and confraternities holding meetings every Sunday. But how does he receive this living testimony? With a sneer, he seems to say, "Don't believe him, the thing is impossible;" for after quoting the words of my statement, he says: "In accepting this statement from Father Dawson, we have simply to believe that by extraordinary zeal and exertions he has made the *impossible* possible, in overcoming the difficulties which *all* others find *insurmountable*." (The italics are my own). I confess, I was not prepared for this kind of argument—it is magisterial indeed, but neither courteous nor logical. I repeat that the children at Boston Spa are thoroughly well instructed in their religion, and that the instruction is given by the oral method.

What he writes upon this subject in his rejoinder, on pages 837 and 838, is full of the same kind of high-handed declaration without proof. But the readers of the RECORD will not allow assumptions to stand for proof. He says,

“I object to the oral system as being unsuited to impart religious instruction. I find nothing short of a consensus on this all-important point. The advocates of the oral system even in Germany as well as in America admit and confess it.”

May we not be astonished at seeing these three statements so boldly proclaimed without any attempt to prove that it is unsuited for religious instruction, without showing that there is this consensus, and without giving the name or words of a single oralist in support of what he affirms. If he had favoured us with references, we might have found them to be as misunderstood, or as as groundless as those which were supposed to have proved that the system was immoral.

Three times in that paragraph on page 837, he repeats that the oralists “yield,” and “confess,” and “admit,” the necessity of signs for religious instruction. He is utterly wrong. I challenge him to produce the name of a single oralist who admits the necessity.

My opponent asserts that the oral system is unsuited for religious instruction; nay, he uses the words “impossible” and “insurmountable.”

Where I ask is the difficulty? Why does he not *show* that it is impossible? We all receive our instruction through the medium of language of one kind or another. Every language is but a system of signs representing ideas. These signs may reach us through the ears, as is the case with spoken words; or through the eyes as is the case with writing, oscillations of a telegraph needle, manual alphabet, signs, movements of lips and other visible organs of speech, &c., &c. But where a person is trained to any one of these systems of language, whether it is English or Latin, hieroglyphics, writing, shorthand, manual alphabet, speech that can be heard, or speech that can be seen, it is to him a means of receiving and conveying ideas, impressions, and knowledge.

Would any one say that French or Russian was unsuited for religious instruction; still more foolish would it be to say that spoken language was less suited than signs. How do ordinary people receive their religious instruction? Is it

not by word of mouth? And how is it that we understand the instruction? It is because we know the meaning of the words that are used. Similarly does our deaf-mute through the sense of sight see and understand the words of his instructor; and I can vouch for it that such words convey to our pupils a more definite, correct, and spiritual impression, than signs used to do.

There is another most important factor in the religious education of the deaf and dumb which is quietly ignored by your correspondent though it is the very foundation upon which, with so much ability and charity for these afflicted people, he built up the "Claims of the Uninstructed Deaf-Mute to be admitted to the Sacraments." In that estimable work he has shown that a deaf-mute, without any instruction at all can by merely living in a Catholic home, imbibe sufficient knowledge of the supernatural to be fit to receive even the Sacrament of Holy Eucharist. But the advantages of a deaf-mute who is living in a religious house are greater than he would have at home. He there breathes the very atmosphere of religion. In the chapel, the solemnities of Mass and Benediction, the beautiful statues and pictures, and above all the reverence and pious demeanour of his teachers and schoolmates, teach him the presence of some Power superior to all, yet unseen. Religious emblems, religious practices, and religious motives are pressing upon him at every turn, so that it is impossible that he should not be imbibing a strong religious sense, and a not inconsiderable idea of the supernatural world. He is thirsting to know what is this unseen Power. What do these statues and pictures mean? What is the crucifix? Who died? Why did He die? Presently the answers are unfolded to him. The child is eager to know and believe. The explanations fall on prepared soil. No matter whether they are in English or German, in signs, writing, or spoken words, they are eagerly caught up; and difficulties in doctrine have no existence where there is such confidence and simplicity of faith. Just as religious instruction is given to ordinary children by word of mouth, and no instructor would dream of trying to give more correctness to their ideas of an

immaterial thing by substituting a sign for a word, so does the deaf child under the oral system see the words spoken by his teacher, and grasp the ideas that those words represent.

Notwithstanding the incredulity of my opponent, I assure your readers that children trained by the oral method do understand what is spoken to them. Almost all their instruction in every subject is given by word of mouth. When therefore verbal instruction can be assisted by a free use of pictures, and illustrated by stories from history and instances from every day life, it seems unreasonable to doubt that these children can be instructed in and properly impressed by the truths of religion.

Let me now examine the testimonies which my opponent produced in apparent support of his assertion that the "oral system is unsuited to impart religious instruction." I must remind your readers that though he said that "the advocates of the oral system admit and confess, and yield the necessity of signs for religious instruction," he does not produce the name of a single one who does so, though he quotes whole pages from those who were interested in the retention of the sign system.

The only testimony which on examination seems to bear upon the exact question is that of our own revered founder, Mgr. de Haerne, who at the London Conference ten years ago, in support of the *combined* method, said "the eyes were much used in religious instruction, even at Berlin, because it is not enough to speak to the mind, you must also speak to and from the heart." Now, your readers will observe that Mgr. de Haerne does not say that the signs are necessary for religious instruction, but simply that they are used in some schools. Again, the reason which he gives, viz., "that we must speak to the heart," cannot be regarded altogether as requiring a system of signs; for everyone can and does by their manner and visage speak to and from the heart when occasion requires by adding expression to their words, not by using signs in place of words. Indeed, for the positive teaching of religion, signs are quite inferior where words are understood; and for the sentimental teaching of religion, emotion and passion could be expressed only by such natural

accompaniments as are in no way opposed by the oral system. So that these words of Mgr. de Haerne do not in any way support my opponent.

The Rev. M. Joseph Lemann is evidently no oralist, but a stout defender of the sign method. Yet he does not venture to say that the oral method is unsuited for religious instruction but that "with the help of the language of signs, the knowledge of this august sacrament (Holy Communion) is imparted with greater certainty to their understandings, its truth reaches them in a manner more profound and impressive." I may ask whether this priest had had a fair experience of religious instruction by the oral method. For our experience at Boston Spa of twelve years under the sign system, followed by five years under the oral system, gives the verdict already in favour of the latter.

In further support of his statement he "refers me to the Report of the London Conference in 1877." I have the report by me, and I have no hesitation in saying that whatever testimony can be drawn from it is of little value on the point under discussion for the following reasons:—

1. This Conference of the teachers of the deaf and dumb in England was held ten years ago, at a time when the oral system had been so lately introduced into the country that no public school in England had yet adopted it, except the three small schools that had lately been founded by foreigners. The English teachers therefore at that time had not had sufficient experience of it as a system to be competent to give a judgment.

Since that time, so many have changed their opinions that now most of the English schools have adopted the oral system.

2ndly. Those who touched the subject, of whom the Rev. S. Smith was the most prominent, did not ground their remarks on the difficulty of imparting religious instruction to children in institutions, but to adult deaf-mutes who had either had no education, or were conversant only with the language of signs. This objection would have special force in the mind of this clergyman; for he had for a long time been the acknowledged missionary of the adult deaf-mutes in

London, for whose benefit he held regular services in a chapel specially provided for them in Oxford-street. Since the death of this truly charitable man, his son, who is head-master of the public institution at Bristol, has adopted the oral system for his school.

3rdly. Evidence of the unsuitability of the oral, or indeed of any other system of education for imparting religious instruction in a Protestant institution, does not prove what might be the result of the same in a Catholic institution. What is there in a Protestant institution that compares with the atmosphere of religion that presses upon a child in a Catholic school, where there is the habit of prayer, religious motives, presence of the Blessed Sacrament, and where his teachers are devoting themselves mainly and unceasingly to turning his heart towards God and his holy law?

With regard to the other objections raised by my opponent against the oral system, it was never my intention to say much. My interest in this correspondence is centred in those two points which, from a Catholic point of view transcend all others, viz., morality and religious instruction. I will, however, venture to throw a little light on them, so that your readers may be in a better position to see how far those objections exist against the oral system at the present time.

First objection.—*More time is required, as compared with the sign teaching school.*

This I consider to be the best and almost only real objection that can be raised against the oral system. Signs are so much more quickly learned than words, that the sign system has the advantage over the oral system of being able to impart an amount of knowledge in less time; so that a pupil might perhaps acquire as much *knowledge* in the first four years under the one, as in six years under the other. But there is no doubt that the orally taught deaf-mute acquires a more correct knowledge of language as it is spoken and written. As explained in my letter of July, the language of signs has altogether a different mode of thought from that of our ordinary spoken language; the ideas are mostly in the reverse order, and there is an absence of all connecting words, cases, tenses, number, conjugation, prepositions, &c.;

so that the sentences of a deaf-mute trained by the sign system are often so up-side-down and defective in words, that they cannot be understood. Whereas the deaf-mute who is accustomed to seeing language only as it is spoken and written, acquires the idioms and general mode of thought and expression of that language. Hence arises his superiority over the other, even in the matter of knowledge; for though the sign-taught deaf-mute leaves his school with a greater stock of knowledge, the other has in greater perfection the instrument for increasing his knowledge year after year. Not only does his art of lip-reading enable him to acquire much by seeing the conversation or speech of others, but having a better acquaintance with language he will be better able to read books—which of course are an unlimited storehouse of information. I would compare the two pupils to two young men who start in life, one with £1,000 and a slow business, the other with only £500 but a much better business. In time the latter will be the richer man.

On the point of time, my opponent glories in the short period in which pupils under the sign system can be prepared for the sacraments. “They are able to come to confession before twelve months, and make their First Communion before eighteen months.” (Does he mean eighteen months from entrance, or from the first confession?) Of course the superiors of the children here alluded to will be the best judges of what is best in their case; but my own opinion would generally discountenance rapidity in this matter. Where a priest has to deal with children who may soon leave his school, he will try to bring them to the sacraments early; but where children are fixed to remain for some time under his care, their abiding reverence for the sacraments, and habit of carefully preparing themselves ever afterwards before receiving them, will be best secured by allowing time for the growth of a solid religious feeling, and a longing for these heavenly gifts. With us in England an early First Communion would work great mischief, for when that great act has been accomplished many parents care little for the further education of their children and begin to agitate for them to return home and earn money.

I sympathize deeply with the authorities of Cabra on account of the practice mentioned by your correspondent of some Boards of Guardians in Ireland removing their children after three years. It is a grievous evil, which I am happy to say is never experienced by us in England.

Second objection.—*The oral system requiring a longer time, also entails a proportionate increase of expense.*

This objection is made the most of by my opponent who assumes two years as the extra time required, and £20 a-year the cost of each pupil.

The objection is specious rather than real. If the child were not in the institution, his maintenance would still be a burden on the parents or guardians. But it is not an unmixed evil, for the extra two years will have been a gain to the pupil himself, inasmuch as he not only carries away with him another faculty, that of lip-reading, and probably also of speech, but the lengthened stay in a religious house will have more firmly established his moral and religious training.

Third objection.—*Endless divergences in the views of its teachers and advocates.*

I cannot see that variety in detail can affect the truth of a principle. The divergences are perhaps less than the objector supposes. All advocates of the oral system agree in requiring that language shall be learnt from the lips, not from signs, and in rigidly excluding, at least in the school-room, any system of sign language or the use of a sign in place of a word. Scarcely any forbid the use of the natural motions that are in use amongst ordinary people, such as waving the hand to a person to shut the door, pointing to a thing which you wish to be brought to you, &c., &c.

Fourth objection.—*The oral system is wanting in adaptability to a very large number of deaf-mutes who can be taught by the sign system.*

Your correspondent proves this with, I suppose, mathematical accuracy from printed statistics. Contemporary evidence, however, is for him a dangerous rock, and therefore he keeps clear away from it.

But his readers will, I am sure, not allow themselves to

be drawn into the same grievous error when they know the date of his statistics. He has unearthed them from a book of Mgr. de Haerne's, printed thirty-two years ago, who there gives them on the authority of Mr. Weld, as the results obtained in two institutions during the period between 1826 and 1845, that is to say, between forty-two and sixty-one years ago! There is no fear that anyone will accept statistics of sixty years ago in condemnation of an art that has been advancing ever since that date. There will always be found a number of deaf-mutes who, on account of their defective intelligence, will under any system of education require exceptional treatment. They form a class apart, and scarcely any children would be in that class in an oral school that would not also be in it in a sign-teaching school. Our present statistics at Boston Spa show that out of a total of sixty boys and sixty girls there are four quasi-imbeciles on each side of the house, and that all the rest, except four boys and three girls, or one in sixteen, are following the ordinary course.

Fifth objection.—*It is cruel and unnatural to deprive a deaf-mute of his natural language which is that of signs.*

The answer to this is easy. The deaf-mute is never *deprived* of his natural language. Their natural aptitude for expressing themselves by signs, and of quickly becoming conversant with even any conventional system of signs, is so great that no length of exile from signs can impair it. Our opponents allow this when they allege that the deaf and dumb who have been educated under the oral system on leaving school fall back upon signs and finger alphabet.

It is well to bear in mind that the true position of a deaf-mute is that of a foreigner in a strange land. He has a language of his own, but he *has* to mix with those who use quite another language, and it is with them that throughout life, and for the business of life, he has to be able to converse.

Is it then cruel to take ordinary means during a few years of childhood, that his future prosperity and happiness may be the better secured? If so, I would say it were also cruel to make children sit and study so many hours of the day in a school at a time of life when their whole nature is **urging them to be in the open air and at play.**

A letter has reached me this morning from Mr. Elliott, whose opinions, as expressed at the London Conference of 1877, were the principal evidence which my opponent brought forward in condemnation of the oral system. By virtue of his ability, energy, and prudent judgment, he holds the foremost position in England amongst the teachers of the deaf and dumb. With painful conscientiousness he studied the question of the two systems. When to these advantages is added the vast experience of 25 years' headmastership of the largest institution in England, your readers will welcome the expression of his opinions as more valuable than those of perhaps any other living authority. With his permission I give his letter in full, and here tender my heartfelt thanks to him for this favour:—

“ 4, GROSVENOR-TERRACE, MARGATE,
“ 14th November, 1887.

“MY DEAR MR. DAWSON.—In answer to your letter, I have no difficulty at all in repeating what I said at the last Conference, in 1885, viz., that my opinions in regard to the oral system have been considerably modified from those I expressed in 1877. In 1882, in a paper I read to the Conference of that year, I recommended that in view of the results which had been shown at Milan, ‘thorough and impartial trial of the system’ should be made in this country. The committee of the institution over which I have the honour to preside endeavoured to carry out this recommendation so far as their own school was concerned, and were so much satisfied with the results obtained that they passed a resolution upon which we are now acting, that ‘all capable of being taught by the oral system should be in future taught by it.’

“In reading the extracts from my paper of 1877, to which you call my attention, with the light which more extended and intimate acquaintance with the oral system has given me, it seems to me that at that time I judged of it more by its results as a medium of intercourse than a medium of education. ‘This is the common view that is taken of it by those not personally and intimately acquainted with it in its latter aspect. Its real value lies in its superior educational efficiency. Because a certain proportion of those who are educated orally fail to speak in pleasing tones and with invariable intelligibility, or require some words and sentences to be reiterated when a communication is made to them, the system which produces such results is held to have failed. The real point, however, as regards the two systems is this—by which does the intelligence of the deaf become the better developed, and by which are their intellectual faculties the more effectually trained as the result of a proper period of education. Making every allowance for what ‘signs’ and the manual alphabet can do

in this direction, my later experience leads me to give the answer decidedly in favour of the oral system. If a deaf child can be got to understand spoken utterances, and to answer in the same way, he must be qualifying himself to use ordinary language as an ordinary child does; and if this process be persistently and consistently carried on throughout the whole course of his education, he will approximate to a hearing child who has had an equal period of a similar training. And if he, by this means can accomplish that hitherto immensely difficult task to the deaf, the use and understanding of ordinary and idiomatic language, what obstacle is there in his way to the attainment of any degree of eminence in literature, science, and art for which his natural capacities may fit him? Now, an average deaf child, well taught, *can* understand his teacher speaking to him in the various stages of his progress in the language appropriate to each, and without the intervention of 'signs,' and thus 'language' becomes the medium of his intellectual training. And language must be in itself a more effectual means of such training than signs, or we who hear would adopt the latter in our own case; and my pupils exemplify this, for they are generally far more intelligent as orally taught than their sign-taught predecessors were. Then as a means of intercourse in the world; supposing in after school periods—and this is an extreme supposition—the speech of an orally and properly taught pupil is wholly unintelligible, he can in this case, equally with the sign-taught, resort to writing, or if he and his friends prefer it, and in the society of his own class, to 'signing' and finger-spelling. Both these latter means he acquires very easily. My contention is only that signs and finger-spelling should be banished as agencies of instruction with those orally taught. I need not enter upon a consideration of the conditions necessary for complete success; but I may say that if these are so attenuated as to be inadequate to produce a fair amount of ability in speaking and lip-reading, in the earlier years of instruction, I should consider the sign system to be the one which on the whole it would be the wisest to follow. I find, in regard to religious instruction, that provided it be graduated according to the child's knowledge of language and capability of understanding, there is no greater difficulty in imparting it than by signs. In the latter periods of instruction, where the language is more fully developed, as it is by the oral system, points can be elucidated by ordinary spoken or written language, which it is difficult, if not impossible, to convey by our rude undeveloped 'sign language.' And there is no question that for mere learning by rote, the lessons in spoken words are learned with much greater facility than when the separate letters of the words are spelled on the fingers. I admit that until there is ability to combine the separate sounds into words no definite religious instruction can be given. But the observance of outward forms and ceremonies, as in the case of the hearing, have their value as educative agencies. I see no reason to forbid a judicious participation in these, nor the presentation of facts and stories by pictures, or even by natural

signs. The sign system can really do little, if any more, than the oral at this early stage.

“For the majority, and with such conditions as your Church can so well supply in the devoted labours of ‘the religious,’ I think the system which teaches by speech is the superior system. For the semi-intelligent and those who must necessarily have only a very inadequate period for instruction, signs, as following up what has already been begun by the child himself, may produce more immediate effect than a system of instruction which cannot commence real education until a means of communication has been effectually established.

“I am, very truly yours,

“RICHARD ELLIOTT.”

I cannot conclude my share in this discussion without expressing my admiration for the excellent results that have been attained under the sign system by the Christian Brothers and Dominican Nuns at Cabra. I was pleased to see them stated so fully by your correspondent in February, for I knew every word to be true. It was my privilege to be present at the public examination in the Rotunda in 1881, and I came away with the conviction that in the matter of education, as well as perhaps in all other matters, it stood first among all the public schools for the deaf and dumb in the kingdom. What the same teachers would have effected under the oral system is an interesting problem. In a few years time, there will probably be some data from which to form a judgment; for Mr. Walsh, who was for many years the head-teacher at Cabra, became head-master of the institution at Bombay in 1883, and though none knew better than he the power of signs, he has there adopted the oral system.

In concluding this controversy, I trust that your correspondent will permit me to express my regret at having been called upon to enter into it. I did so with all respect to him whose great zeal and learning require no commendation of mine, and solely in the interests of the deaf and dumb whose sad affliction surely demands all Christian sympathy.

I thank the Editor of the RECORD for kindly allowing me so much space in his valuable magazine, and must express my regret and apology that I have not been able to make the subject more interesting to its readers.

EDWARD W. DAWSON,

Chaplain of St. John's Institution, Boston Spa.

HAYNES' OBSERVATIONS ON THE STATE OF IRELAND IN 1600.

[The manuscript volume which contains these *Observations* is a royal quarto, bound in vellum, comprising ninety-two pages of *The Description of Ireland as it is in hoc anno 1598*, and fifty four pages of *Haynes' Observations on the State of Ireland in 1600*—both specimens of the same exquisite penmanship. It bears on the first page the autograph of Father Betagh, after whose death it passed, with *The Irish Warr of 1641*, the *Macariae Exercitium*, and his other MSS. to his distinguished pupil, Father Kenny, by whom it was deposited in Clongowes Wood College. From the watermark of the Dutch firm of *Blauw*, established in 1756; from the autograph of Father Betagh, who died in 1811; from “*sunt*” put for “*sinit*” in “*non sunt esse feros*;” and from “*quid*” put opposite an obscure word, “*dim*;” I gather that our transcript was made between the years 1756 and 1811, by a scribe unacquainted with Latin, not from the original, but from a copy written by one learned in the Latin tongue. Where the original is I know not; but I have ascertained from Mr. John M. Thunder's MS. *History of the Ancient Kingdom of Meath*, that among the MSS. of James, Duke of Chandos, No. 1751, there was a second copy, perhaps the original, of the companion treatise, *The Description of Ireland, and the state thereof in 1598*; and I hope this learned gentleman, or some of my readers, will be able to discover the original or other copies of the *Observations*.¹ These are six or seven times shorter than Spenser's *Vier*; and they are so like it, that either Haynes has given an abridgment of Spenser's MS. or taken his *Observations* from the same source—thus exhibiting the bare and grim skeleton, which the “Poet of Poets” merely draped with the Coan vesture of his “pure English (undefiled?).” Haynes was, to all appearance, an Englishman, and a rather extreme coercionist, who thought

¹ Transcripts of the Clongowes MS. are in the Royal Irish Academy, and the British Museum.

that "the best of all ways" to improve Ireland was to plunder, starve, and murder the Irish. Yet his treatise contains, in such a short compass, so many curious things about Ireland, that it invites editorial attention, and may excite the interest and sometimes the astonishment of the Irish reader. In his defence, I will state, in the words of Spenser, that Ireland was then "*as it was handled*, a land of war;" and I may say of him what Mr. Hales writes of Spenser: "He was not in advance of his time in the policy he advocates for the administration of Ireland. He was far from anticipating that policy of conciliation, whose triumphant application it may perhaps be the signal honour of our own day to achieve. The measures he proposes are of a vigorously repressive sort; they are such measures as belong to a military occupancy, not to a statesmanly administration . . . Such proposals won not an unfavourable hearing at that time. They have been admired many a time since."¹

I have not meddled with the spelling, and as little as possible with the punctuation; but I have appended some short notes, which I hope will be useful. The English notes, for which no reference is given, have been taken from Spenser's *View of the State of Ireland*.]

EDMUND HOGAN, S.J.

CERTAIN PRINCIPALL MATTERS CONCERNING THE STATE OF IRELAND, COLLECTED BREIFLIE OUT OF SONDRIE WRITERS AND OBSERVED AFTER SOME OPINIONS.

THE evils that principally afflicte the quiett estate and coõmon weall of Ireland are of three kyndes, viz. :

In the Laws, Customes, and Religion.

The Irishe doe especiallie regarde a Lawe of their owne called the Brehon² Lawe, nothinge at all affectinge or obeyinge the Laws or Statutes of Englande.

The Brehon Lawe is a certeyne rule of righte unwritten and delivered by tradicion from one to another, and there is in it y^t. sometyme greate sheue of Equitie. But in manie things not agreable with the Lawes of God, nor man.

¹ Memoir prefixed to Mr. Morris' edition of Spenser's works, p. lii.

² brehoon; *ruirde bpuemon*, seat of a judge (*Bk. of Armagh*). Our Lord is called "the true Brehon," in *ripbpuchem* (Stokes' *Ir. Glosses*, p. 46.)

Brehon what
yt meaneth. As when a man is murdered, the Brehon that is the Judge, will by his Power and authoritie compownde between the Murtherer and the Friendes of the partie murdered, that for some recompence which they call Iriach,¹ the Murtherer shall go without punishment, which causeth manie vyle Murthers in that Countrey.

This Lawe is at this daie in manie places used, for that there be manie places in Irelande, where the Lawes of Englande yett never tooke place; and where they seeme to yeld a kind of subieccion to the English Authoritie, they use this Lawe privelye, where all Irishe dwell togeather who conceale amongst themselves manie crimes that never come to the knowledge of the Englishe Governors.

Ireland sub-
mitteth to in Parlyament unto Kinge Henry 8, and did
H. 8. acknowledge him their liege Lord, and yett, as some say, they received their anciente priviledge and their seignories inviolate by S^r. Anthony S^t. Leger, then Lo. Deputie.

But because a good course and sounde establishment of the good Lawes that were made was not contynued amongst them, they tooke their old Libertie and brake into newe disobedience; and the posteritie of them that yelded themselves doe nowe utterlie refuse to obey, because they saie that nowe holdeth but a personal Estate which they call Thamistry,² that is for Life onlie, which is Thamist, because they are admitted to their Lande by Eleccion of the Country, and therefore are not bounde to obeye that their Predecessors doe.

The Lawes of Englande being unpossessed on the Irishe, did not worke the intended effecte, beinge the Englishe and the Irish are of differente dispositions, customes and behaviour, and, therefore, the Lawes oughte to be made accordinge to the inclynacion of the people.

¹ breaghe; *breat*, judgment; *eric* is a fine for bloodshed.

² tanistih; *tánaire* or *tánaire*, successor elect; *tánaire teacht* or *olighe tánaire*, law of succession; *tánaire*, he succeeded (*Chron. Scot.* pp. 6, 8); *tanaire* means "secundus" in Zeuss, p. 309.

Licurgus Licurgus knowinge the Lacedemonians to be most bente to Warre made Lawes for the Trayning of them in the same even from their Cradles.

Solon And yett Solon perceavinge the Athenians inclyned unto Warre, made Lawes to trayne them upp in Learninge and Science, so that to bringe Irelande to Civilitie there must be Lawes made to reduce them to a more civill course of Life first, and then the Lawes of Englande will be the better received amongst them.

The presence of the prince amongst a Stubborn People is the greatest meane to bringe them to conformitie, for his worde more prevayleth then the Sworde of an inferryor Magistrate.

The nature of the Irysh is never to yield as longe as he can stande by his own strength, and when he is brought to misery by power, he then croucheth and humbleth himselfe, suing for favor till he begett newe power, and then betaketh out againe into his former mischief.

The waie therefore to bringe them to obedience is to keepe them in contynuall Subjection.

If the Lawes of Englande had beene fullye Executed and followed, in the tyme of the conquest by Strongbowe in King H. the 2^d. tyme, amonge the Iryshe as that was then amonge suche Englishe as were planted in their steade that fledd, It might have wrought great good amorge them; But after their Submission the Englishe used them as Vassalls and made their owne Willes a Lawe to keepe them to Civilitie.

They contynued thus as vassalls and under subieccion and force by the English untill the Controversie of the Two Royall Houses of Lancaster and Yorke, when the nobles, that had possessions in Irelande, came to helpe the parties whom they favored of the Two Howses and to save their possessions in Englande; and when the men of greatest power were gone, the Irishe brake oute into newe Rebellion and gayned a Libertie by their Sworde and a Superioritie over the Englishe that were before their Lordes.

Theis Countries especiallie were thus
perverted and revolted after the
departure of the Englishe.

Munster.

The Landes aboute Leugh Loghur.¹

Arloe & the Bogge of Allon.

All the Landes in Conaught.

1. In LEMPSTER.² Borderinge on the Oollners.³

Elbonora.⁴

Orourk's Contrye.

2. In ULSTER.

All the Landes neighbouringe unto
Glanmalor⁵ mountains unto Shile,
Lagh and Polomotes.

All the Countries neere unto Tyr-
connell, Tyrron, Tertelagh, and
the Scottes.

The Irish Fugitives thus retorninge and subduinge theis
partes, yt followed that by little and little they became
maisters of muche of the Inland. Soe that afterwards
Ed. 4th sente the Duke of Clarence his Brother to redress
theis wronges, and onlie cooped them upp in Certeyne
narrowe Corners. But subdued not them untill he was
called home by practise of wicked ones aboute the Kinge and
so made awaie, and then the North parte of the Countrie
merely revolted againe, and sett upp O'Neill for their Cap-
taine, a man before of slender power or Accompte.

And about Thomonde there arose one of the OBryen's
called Murrough, who with a Trowpe of the vileste Irish
prevayled soe farre, that he came through the Countrie pre-
vaylinge, att least⁶ proclaymed himselfe Kinge of all Irelande,
and was amonge them soe called, wherefore yt was denye⁷
into 4 or 5 kingdoms att once, unlesse it were when Edward

¹ Slew Loghir, Slisbh Luchps.

² Leinster, Laign (*Bk. of Armagh*).

³ culuers; O'Mores? O'Connors?

⁴ Mointerolis; muntepsolar in Leitrim.

⁵ Glanmalceerih mountains unto Shillelagh, unto the Briskelagh and
Polmonte; Gleann-maolughps.

⁶ at last.

⁷ divided.

LeBruz made himsele Kinge in Edw^d. 2. tyme, who continued soe but one yeare, and was overcome by the Lo. John Bremingham who was sente thither by the Kinge.

The olde English Pale when LeBruze invaded the Countrey was chieffie in the North from the pointe of Don Luce and beyonde into Dublyn, having in the midst of yt Knockfergus, Belfast, Armagh and Carlingford, which are now the most outbounds and abandoned places in the Englishe Pale.

The Englishe Pale stretcheth now butt to Dundaske,¹ towarde the North. The old Pale was a most fruitfull countrey, the Ornament of the Lande, and yelded unto the Kinge of Englande 30000 Marks of old money by the yeare, besides manie thowsande men able to serve in the Warres, and and where besides manie other Commodities as Woodes and Timber Trees fitt for Shippinge, a thinge materyall and to be regarded.

The Countrey beinge in a dangerous waye by their Rebellion to cast off all obedience of late yeares were yett curbed and kept back by the grave devyses and politique carriage of the most noble Lo. Graye.

At sondry tymes before that manie particular partes of the Realme were indangered and disturbed as the Country of the Birnes and Tooleys² near Dublyn by the outrages of Feagh MacHugh.

The Countries of Carlow, Wexford, and Waterford by the Cavenaghes.

The Countries of Liex,³ Kilkenny, and Kildare by the Moores.

The Countries of Cavan and Louth by Oreilies, Kelges, and others.

The Countries of Offalie, Meath, and Longford by the Conhurs.

The Comon Lawes of Englande not fitt in all points for Irelande; one cause is, for that Tryalls are to be Made by xii Jurates, who beinge Irishe as most must of necessitie bee,

¹ Dundalk.

² Tooles; O'Tuathail.

⁴ Kellyes

³ Leis, Leisighir.

they care not of an Oath to deceave the quene or an Englishman of his right, and therefore another course must be had for Tryall or this in better sorte provyded for.

This inconvenience extendeth to the preiudice of the Quenes right in Attaynder, Wardshipps, Escheates, all pleas of the Crowne and inquiries whatsoever.

An Irishman, yea almost anie, will forswear himself for his Lordes, and hold and maintayne yt not onlie Lawfull but Commendable and as a dutie.

To remove this inconvenience, yt must not be done by extreme punishments but by working in them a more rype understandinge of the truth with the feare and knowledge of God.

The Excepcions which the comon Lawe alloweth to followe doth also muche hurte in Irelande, because he maie challenge the inquest without shewinge anie cause, whereby through the partiall dealinge of suche as he shall wyne into his Jurye the malefactor is most comonlie acquitted.

Another mischiefe is this, that where the common Law cannot execute an accessory in Felonie, one that receiveth stolne Goodes without the apprehension of the principall, It falleth out in Irelande, that the Rebelle or outlaw stealeth and bringeth it unto another Gent. or Husbandman of good worth, who, beinge apprehended, imprisoned, arraigned and indyted, cannot be put to death because the principall is not taken, and see the Theefe and receavor encouraged, the people disturbed, and the Quene abused.

And this cannot be reformed by Acte of Parliament there, because yt must be done by the Piers, Gent., Freeholders, and Burgesses of that place, who will never consent to anie Acte preiudiciall to themselves or their Friends.

There is another thinge much hinderinge her Majesty's Revenewes, and which giveth Scope to Traytors and Rebells to preserve their Landes unto their Heyres, notwithstandinge they fall to Treasons or Rebellions, and that is, because they make over and convey their Landes to ffeoffees in trust which standeth good, notwithstanding their notorious crymes whereby their Landes are to come to her Majestie.

And by that meanes fugytives beyonde the Seas

mainteyne themselves with the profitts of their Lands here, which should in right come to her Majestie.

It is unfitt in Irelande, that an Irishe should have the Warde or marriage of any there, because they make them fitte for all wickedness and disloyalties, and yett in regarde of the Knights service the comon Lawe alloweth yt and casteth yt upon them.

There are also certeyne places of priviledges and Counties Pallantyne, which at the conquest were graunted both to good uses and upon good consideracion to men deservinge the trust; but now are converted to the danger of the State of the Lande, as the Countie of Tipperarye or Tiperay, the onlie Countie Pallantyne in Irelande, is abused soe as yt is the receptacle of all evill doers and of such as spoyle the rest of the Countrie.

The Townes Corporate have suche priveledges and Liberties, as howsoever afore they were thought fitt, are nowe most intollerable—as that they shall not be charged with Garrisons, they shall not be forced to travell out of their Franchises, they maie buy and sell with Theeves and Rebelles; all Fynes and [Amercyments] laied upon them redownde to themselves againe, and are bound to noe other Governor then their owne, what then can there be more dangerous to this State of Irelande, then the Tolleration of theis Liberties.

Besides manie idle and frivolous Statute Laws, there be some verie inconvenient, as making a Distresse for Debte to be Felonie, yf the distresse prove unlawfull, and that whiche maketh Coyney and Livery to be treason. Coyney¹ is mans meate and Livery² is Horse meate, whiche the Lords were wont to take of their Tennants by an Ordinarie Custome, and now by this Statute they are inhibited and indaingered. Besides this kinde of Tennant's service there are this, Cuddy,³

¹ coynye; "placing men upon the country" (Dimmok). *σο παρ κομμηεσθ τῆς πια μῆμεν*, "he gave quarters to his men" (*Four Masters*, 1462). Ware is wrong here; κομμηεο, billeting (*Chron. Scot. passim*).

² Liverye; an English word. Cf. "βησπορη, ὑβηρη, η̄ κύρη εσρέου" (*O'Connell's Dirge*, lxxx.); it is food for horse, "horse meat."

³ cuddeehih; *curo orohche*, share of the night supper.

Coshrey,¹ Bonnaght,² Straght,³ Jordin,⁴ and manie other like first supposed to be brought by the Englishe.

There is a custome called the Custome of Kincoughishe,⁵ which was a Statute that provided that every head of every Sept and everie cheiffe of every kinredd or Famelie should be charged with anie treasons, Felonies, or other haynous crime of this Sept or kyndered.

This State is dangerous, because yt strengtheneth the head of this Sept and cheiffe of the kynne, who by pretendinge a power over them, by this State may comande them to evill or good, especially the people beinge iuclyned to evill and not to good, to Rebellion and not obedience.

Customes. Ireland was first inhabyted as yt is supposed by the Scythians in the North partes, by the Spanyards in the West, by the Gaules in the Southe, and by the Brittaines in the East towards Englande. Of theis nations they have taken and retayned sondrie Customes to this daye.

After the manner of the Scythians, they use to keepe and pastur their Cattle on the Mountaines in heardes and followe them, makinge their abode upon the Mountaines, and live by the Milks of their kyne and the Whitemeates the most parte of the Yeaer, and this kinde of usage they call Bollinge,⁶ and the Herdes and Herdesmen Bollegh.

Nowe this kinde of Bollinge or followinge their heardes breedeth enormities to the Countrey's. For yf there be anie Malefactor or outlawe, he can betake himselfe amonge their Bolleys, and soe live and doe mischiefe without Suspicion or

¹ cosshirh; cóirp, a great feast; "feasts at Easter, Christmas, etc." (Dimmok).

² bonaght; buana, a billeted soldier, buana ar gach tigh; buansacht, quartering—buansacht na tóchtannach ar phospaib Eirenn.

³ straght; pp. tch, pp. tch, a tax.

⁴ Sorehim; from rapughim, I extort, exceed; or rapasach, exemption: "An allowance over and above bonnacht, which the Galloglas exact" (Dimmok). Taxatio quater in anno imposita libere tenentibus (Ware). "Teignie are reare-suppers, or drinking in their chambers after or before dinner and supper" (Dimmok). Cf. o'eighéanagh "reare," last; or teime fire.

⁵ kin-cogish; I think, cin-chómhphogur, críme of relationship. Cf. a chin for a plaich (*Brehon Laws*, iv., p. 243). Davies is wrong here.

⁶ bolles = herds and houses for cattle. buaile, fold, cow-house; buallacht, a drove of cows; buschaille, of a cow-boy (*Bk. of Armagh*).

punishment, besides manie Stealeges¹ are made of Cattle and received of theis Bolleys, and manie murders and mischeifes are done by suche as follow theis Bolleys.

The wearinge of theire Mantles and of their long Hayre, which they call Glibbs,² they have also from the Scythians, and the Mantle is a Weede which carryeth with it manie inconveniences; for yt is a Cloake for a Theeffe, and because they weare yt over head and Eares downe to their Feete a wicked villaine may goe throughe a Towne unknowne and under yt carrye anie offencyve weapon to murder and do mischeiffe. The Glibbe or longe Bushe of Hair serveth a wicked doer to cover his countenance when he will not be known, and yf he will make himself more unlike himselfe then before he may cutt yt of and then he is not the man.

Another custome they have from the Scithians and that is to yeld and give a terrible outery at their cominge and wyninge of Battell, and crye uppon some valyannt Captaine or Soldier deceased, to breade the more Terror unto their Foes, and therefore call "Ferragh, Ferragh,"³ whereby they remember a Kinge or great Leader which fought and was fortunate against the Pictes, called Fergus or Feragus. Manie other rites and customes they reteyne to this daie which the Sciths did, with their shorte bowes and shorte arrowes with the shorte and barded heades, theire broade Swordes, their goinge to Battell without Armour.

And as the Scithians swore coñonlie by their swordes and by Fire as by two principall matters of vengeance and Bloodshed, Soe doe the Irishe Connjure and charme theire Swordes by makeinge a cross on the Grounde with them, and thrustinge the pointe into the Grounde before they goe to Battaile holdinge yt a meane of better Successe; likewise they sweare by their Swordes, manie suche Supersticious rites they

¹ stealthes.

² a thick curled bush of hair hanging down over their eyes; ḡlib, pl. ḡlibeanma; shown in Albert Dürer's sketch of Irish soldiers.

Farrih, Farrih; I think this is feararoh, act, fight, "do" (or die), which O'Brien mistranslates "act like a man."—fearar cath; a battle is fought (*Chron. Scot.* 320). See thirty Irish war-cries in *Ulster J. of Arch.* No. 11, as fúmréog, the ash-tree (L. Delvin); lámh lároir (O'Brien, MacCarthy, FitzMaurice); fearbhac, the hawk (O'Carroll), etc.

yet observe, which argueth them originally to proceede of the Scithians.

They likewise have the Fire and the Sunne in greate reverence: Soe have the Northern people, who are much troubled with Cold and Darkness: And contrarywise the Moores and Egyptians, because the heate of the Sonne annoyeth them, they, when the Sonne riseth, curse and damne yt as their notable Scourge and plague.

The Scithians likewise when they would combyne themselves together to doe mischeiffe they would drinke a Bowle of Bloude together, and soe doe the Northernne Irishe as Buchinan reporteth.

The Scithians use to sweare by the Kings hand, the Irishe use to sweare by the Lordes hande as Olaus Magnus affirmeth.

The Scithians did also use to Seeth the Flesh in the Hyde, and soe doth the Northern Irishe yett, and to Boyle the beaste livinge as the North Irish doe.

Manie other suche Customes they have from the Scithians. The Spaniards did onlie use to weare their Bearden on their upper Lipp, and cutt off that which grew on the chynne; and soe did the Irishe till a Statute was made against yt.

Amonge the Spaniards the Women had the trust of house-hold Affayres, and men of matters in the Feild, manie Spanishe tricks are yet used among the Irishe, as the Women ryde on the wronge side of the Horse, and the Bards came from the Gaules, as Cæsar saith, and from the Britton, and not altogether given over amonge them to this daie.

Their longe Dartes came from the Gaules, Their Wickare Targetts and longe Swordes.

The Gaules were won'te to drinck their Enemies Bloud, and to painte themselves with it, and soe were the old Irishe wonte to doe.²

(To be continued.)

¹ "An Englishman shall not use a beard upon his upper lip alone, and the said lip shall be once shaved at least in every two weeks; the offender to be treated as an Irish enemy" (Act of 1447). This Act was repealed in 1635. Portraits of Irishmen are given by Albert Dürer, a copy of which is in the British Museum; also by Ware, *Ilib. et Antiqq.*, p. 59; London, 1654.

² This is erroneous.

THEOLOGICAL QUESTIONS.

NEGOTIATIO AND THE ANNEXED CENSURE.

REV. DEAR SIR,—You are aware of course that in the year 1872, Pius IX. added to the Excommunications contained in the Bull *Apostolicæ Sedis*, a new one which concerned missionaries in America and Japan. Rather the Holy Father renewed the Excommunication contained in the Bulls or Constitutions of Urban VIII. and Clement IX. As much controversy has arisen regarding this Excommunication, and regarding those who are comprehended in it, I will respectfully ask your opinion on certain points. I will, however, before asking your opinion say that I have read the *Acta Apostolicæ Sedis* by Avanzini; also the Commentary on the Excommunications, by Penachius; also one by Bucceroni; and a treatise on Canon law, by the Faculty of St. Sulpice. I have, moreover, the opinion of more than one Professor of Theology. As I find these men divided in certain points, I would ask you kindly to treat the whole matter in the IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD.

As you are aware this Excommunication is important, as it obliges clerics to restitution, so that no one who has been engaged in *Negotiatio* and gained *lucrum* thereon can be absolved until he makes restitution of the *lucrum*.

Now let me ask, and the question is for practical purposes—

1st. How is the *Negotiatio* which is forbidden defined?

2nd. Does it include *real estate*? Very often persons—priests purchase property in cities of the U. S. in order to gain money. Property increases in value, and they purchase in the hope of becoming *millionaires*. Are such persons excommunicated? I might have remarked that the property in most instances remains unimproved until sold. In other words no change takes place in the property until sold, if even then.

3rd. Who incur the Excommunication? Do priests ordained *titulo missionis*? Do bishops? What do the words "*Quomodolibet Morabuntur*" mean?

4th. Is the *venditio* of the thing purchased necessary in order that the Excommunication be incurred? Or does the *emptio cum intentione lucri* suffice in order to bring one under the Excommunication?

In putting these questions, I may perhaps as well tell you that in our diocese there are many priests who have speculated on property.

They bought "lots" on which to build houses. Rather they bought "lots" not with the intention of building on them, but with the intention of selling them to persons desirous to build or speculate on them for a higher price. I have no doubt but that they bought in *bona fide*, and that consequently they cannot incur the Excommunication. Now I would like to know are they bound to restitution? A question was proposed to the Sacred Congregation, in the 18th century, regarding the matter as it concerned religious priests, and the answer was that persons who sold at a higher price, having purchased in *bona fide*, did not incur the Excommunication, but that that they were obliged to restore the *lucrum*—that is to say, if they became aware of the existence of the law of Excommunication before the *conclition*. This Decree I found in a book called *La Vida y honestad de los Clerigos*.

5th. What, therefore, is a priest to do if such priests with a knowledge of the law come to him to confession? Is he obliged to debar them from the Sacraments? If they retain the property with the intention of selling it at a future time, can he absolve them? Or are they bound in conscience to give or rather to sell the property at once, and make restitution of the *lucrum*, if *lucrum* there be?

These are a few of the questions which I would ask you kindly to answer in the IRISH ECCLESIASTICAL RECORD, so that American priests may know the law by which they are bound. Very many receive the RECORD. I can assure you that many souls are lost because of *Negotiatio*.

P. II.

Before directly replying to the important questions proposed by our correspondent, it may be well to give extracts from the Papal Constitutions which impose the censure and penalties here under consideration. They are not accessible to all; and no one can come to an independent conclusion on this subject until he has carefully examined their purpose and meaning. The Decree of the S. R. U. Inquisition only declares that the enactments of Urban VIII. and Clement IX. are still in force, notwithstanding what is said in the Bulla *Apostolica Sedis* about the discontinuance of pre-existing censures. Urban VIII's Constitution was published in 1633. It creates no difficulty for our correspondent as it does not touch the secular clergy. On the matter at issue it runs thus:—

"Religiosis omnibus cujuscunque Ordinis, et Instituti, tam non

mendicantium, quam mendicantium etiam Societatis Jesu, eorumque singulis tam in praedictis locis nunc existentibus, quam in futurum ad illa mittendis, omnem et quaecunque mercaturam, seu negotiationem, quocunque modo ab iis fieri contingat, sive per se sive per alios, sive proprio, sive communitatis nomine, directe, sive indirecte, aut quovis alio praetextu, causa aut colore interdicimus, et prohibemus sub excommunicationis latae sententiae poena ipso facto incurrenda, ac privationis vocis activae, et passivae, officiorum, ac graduum, et dignitatum quarumcunque, etiam inhabilitatis ad ea et insuper amissionis mercium et lucrorum ex iis; quae omnia a superioribus Religionum, ex quibus delinquentes existent, reservanda erunt ad usum Missionum quas eadem Religiones habent, et habiturae sunt in futurum in praedictis Indiis, et non in alios usus; eisdem superioribus districte prohibentes sub iisdem poenis ut in hoc invigilent, et contra delinquentes ad praedictas poenas procedant, sublata iisdem facultate hujusmodi delinquentibus aliquid ex dictis mercibus et lucris quantumvis minimum remittendi aut condonandi?"

Although allusion is made in this stringent Decree to the migration of missionaries from America to the East, its special prohibition of *negotiatio* regards that avocation as pursued in the East alone. Obviously, too, Urban VIII. speaks only of missionaries sent out by religious orders to preach the Gospel and administer the Sacraments. Neither limitation, however, remained after the Clementine Constitution.

We are told by Clement IX. that he was moved to legislate on this subject by the way in which the provisions of Urban VIII's enactment were being evaded or disregarded. As if, however, to make sure at the second attempt, the new Constitution extended the censure far beyond its former limits. America, north and south, was included; seculars as well as regulars come under the penalty; and clerics not enjoying the title of "missionaries," equally with those who received the name, were declared subject to the provisions of this enactment. It was published in 1669, and contains the following provisions:—

"Omnibus, et singulis personis ecclesiasticis, tam saecularibus, quam regularibus cujuscunque status, gradus, conditionis, et qualitatís, ac cujusvis Ordinis, Congregationis, et Instituti, tam Mendicantium quam non Mendicantium, etiam Societatis Jesu, et earum cuilibet, quae ad Insulas, Provincias, Regna Indiarum Orientalium, et praesertim provinciam Societatis Jesu de Japone nuncupatam, et in partes Americae, tam Australes quam Septentrionales a Sede Apostolica, vel Congregatione Venerabilium Fratrum nostrorum

S. R. E. Cardinalium negotiis Propagandae Fidei praepositorum, aut ab earum superioribus sub nomine Missionariorum aut quovis alio titulo pro tempore missae fuerint, aut in illis partibus quomodolibet morabuntur sub excommunicationis latae sententiae ac privationis vocis activae et passivae, et officiorum, dignitatum, graduum quorumcunque per eas obtentorum, et inhabilitatis ad illa, et alia quaecunque in posterum obtinenda, nec non amissionis mercium et lucrorum omnium ipso facto incurrendis, ac aliis Nostro, et Romani Pontificis pro tempore existentis vel praedictae Cardinalium Congregationis arbitrio imponendis, poenis tenore praesentium destitute prohibemus pariter et interdicimus, ne mercaturis et negotiationibus saecularibus hujusmodi quovis praetextu, titulo, colore, ingenio, causa occasione, et forma, etiam semel, per se, aut median-
tibus ministris, seu aliis personis subsidiariis, directe vel indirecte . . . qualitercunque se ingerant, vel immisceant. Ac ex nunc prouti ex tunc . . . lucra quaecunque . . . in usus, et commodum pauperum, Hospitalium, Seminariorum Ecclesiasticorum, ac Operariorum (non tamen Religionum Congregationum, et Societatum, etiam Jesu, seu Instituti eorundem, qui in praemissis, vel circa ea deliquerint, sed aliorum non delinquentium harum serie applicamus, qui teneantur consignare merces et lucra hujusmodi locorum Ordinariis . . . vel Apostolicis Vicariis seu Provincialiis."

It will be observed that a single transgression against this law entails the penalty of excommunication. What wonder that its interpretation should be anxiously canvassed, or, looking to the vast change in ecclesiastical organization in America since it first appeared, as well as to the natural intricacy of the subject, that its present application strikes different minds in different ways? For ourselves, we should much prefer learning the views of American Canonists on the questions raised by our correspondent to explaining our own. This especially holds with reference to his all-important consideration of what custom may have determined. We shall be glad if by our remarks some one of those who are more intimately acquainted with the working of the law in America should be induced to throw further light on the matter at issue.

I.—"How is the *Negotiatio* which is forbidden defined?"

As a general definition we can give nothing better than to say that the forbidden *Negotiatio* consists in making oneself through ownership a medium for exchanging property between man and man with a view to gain on the transaction.

The proceeding, however, which is by name condemned in special Canons, is that in which a person buys with the intention of selling at a dearer rate without change in the goods or property. But obviously, any other form of barter is as objectionable in this connection as buying and selling. Besides, although *cambium* or money-exchange, which our writers not uncommonly speak of as a distinct kind of *Negotiatio*, long escaped a formal condemnation, it really has nothing in its favour to put it on a different footing from the more cumbrous exchange of ordinary goods or rights, and accordingly, as a matter of fact, it was declared to be a branch of genuine *Negotiatio* by Clement XIII.

A complete act of the *Negotiatio* so far described will bring down the censure of excommunication on the missionaries and others for whom this penalty was intended. But there is some room for doubt when we come to consider another species placed in large measure under our general definition, and usually considered by modern Canonists as a second kind of this forbidden avocation. It is that in which one buys to sell at a profit, after change, improvement, or manufacture of the thing purchased, has been effected through an agency or means, hired or bought for that purpose. From various decisions of the Sacred Congregation, and from the opinions of approved writers, it is plain that the general prohibition against *Negotiatio* has been made to apply to this species. What wonder? Is not the improvement here under consideration brought about mainly by an exchange also, or a series of exchanges, and not by art, handiwork, or resources, independently, and previously possessed by the person in question as his own. If one be skilled in carving, he may buy the rough marble, fashion it according to his fancy, and sell his statues. But whether skilled or unskilled, he may not employ an artist on bought material for the purpose of selling works of art at a profit over the price of marble and rate of wages. Similarly, a priest may buy cattle to fatten them on his own land and sell at a profit; but under the general law he may not take land for a season and buy stock for it with the same intent. Now the question arises whether the *Negotiatio* thus prohibited

would entail the penalties already mentioned on missionaries in America and the East. It is, no doubt, difficult to find any door for escape. The wording of the law with respect to *Negotiatio* is very comprehensive, and, moreover, the phrase *seu mercatura* is added. Hence, we think judgment, in all probability would go against the delinquent *in foro externo* if the case came up for trial before an ecclesiastical court. But as this sort of traffic is not strictly the *Negotiatio* which is so often forbidden in the Canons, we consider the censure somewhat doubtful, although the prohibition under sin be certain enough. D'Annibali, however, we are bound to add, holds that the words *seu mercatura* are fully verified wherever the material is *naturaliter mutata*, as in the case of animals, by opposite comparison with painting or carving.

II.—“ Does it include real estate?”

We are not aware of any valid reason for excepting real property.

III.—“ Who incur the excommunication? Do priests ordained *vicariis Missionis*? Do Bishops? What do the words *quomodolibet morabuntur* mean?”

In the first place Bishops, as such, are not exempt from this Decree. The text of law declaring on their behalf a privilege of not being the subjects of censures unless when specially mentioned, speaks only of suspension and interdict. Hence, as the penalty in question is that of excommunication, imposed without restriction on account of dignity, bishops seem liable to incur it equally with priests.

Secondly, these special constitutions do not affect natives of America at all. They seem to have in view none but priests from Europe. In the third place, they would appear to have no application in dioceses which do not need to draw on any European country to recruit the ranks of the sacred ministry. On this and the preceding inference, we submit the reasoning of Avanzini:

“ Utraque enim constitutio contra eos dirigitur, qui titulo fidei propagandæ aut quomodolibet promovendæ ex Europa in dicta loca transeunt, ibique negotiationibus, et mercaturis distracti scandalum indigenis pariunt luerum quaerentes Quamobrem si ecclesiastica Hierarchia in illis locis constitueretur vel constituta

esset ita ut dioceses canonice institutae ad normam sacrorum canonum regerentur per clerum indigenum, neque amplius Missionariis Europaeis indigerent ejusmodi peculiaries constitutiones per se cessarent cum cessaret earum materia quae in missionariis consistit ex Europa desumptis."

Lastly, in our opinion the phrase "quomodolibet morabuntur" may be fairly restricted to those who have temporary missions or transitory employment in a diocese. *Morari* we think, in a penal statute, is not to be construed so as to apply to those who through affiliation or otherwise are of the *clerus diocesanus*, that is, to those who are permanently attached to the mission in a particular diocese or vicariate. And thus the subjects of these penalties are reducible to a comparatively small class.

IV.—"Is *venditio* of the thing purchased necessary in order that the excommunication may be incurred, or does *emptio cum intentione lucri* suffice?"

The censure is imposed for a single violation of the law but, to be incurred, the transaction must be complete. This, we think, it is not until the design of selling is carried into effect. The question of guilt is an entirely different matter.

V.—"What therefore is a priest to do if such priests come to him to confession, &c.?"

Hitherto, we have attempted little more than to interpret the law as it was enacted. Our correspondent's last question bears on its concrete application in the present. He does not, of course, speak of those penitents who would intend pursuing a line of conduct so unworthy as to amount to mortal guilt under the divine law or the general law on *Negotiatio* as binding in a particular place. He alludes rather to those who purpose completing an act, which, as above, is forbidden to them in particular under pain of excommunication, or who, at least, would appear to come under the words of Clement IX's Decree. Well, if at the present time they be truly liable to incur the penalties of that Decree, it is obvious enough that that *lucrum* and its *seeking* must be surrendered before a confessor can give absolution. But the difficulty is to know whether a particular penitent is in truth the subject

of this law or not. For how does the censure stand as viewed in connection with existing customs?

The general prohibition against *Negotiatio* is founded in the natural law. Such occupation consumes the time intended by God for spiritual concerns, it fosters a worldly, if not an avaricious spirit, and scandalizes the faithful who have a right to receive edification instead. For these reasons the Church from an early age has interdicted *Negotiatio* to priests, and the tendency of her decisions on new issues as they came forward under this heading at different times is decidedly in the direction of enlarging the compass of the forbidden occupations. Still, if the evils which *Negotiatio* usually brings with it be absent, as might be readily conceived in particular places with regard to some of the things prohibited, the ecclesiastical law might plainly suffer some abatement owing to contrary custom.

Now the same would appear true in respect of the special legislation in force for America and the East. Contrary custom might set aside the penalties of excommunications and restitution, whatever is to be said about the guilt of the condemned proceedings. We suggest these considerations because the Decree of 1872 does not interfere with existing customs. Its purport is to declare that the Constitutions of Urban VIII. and Clement IX. are in force notwithstanding what is said in the Bulla *Apostol. Sedis* about censures not enumerated therein. The Constitutions of those Popes have not been withdrawn, but, beyond a declaration to this effect, the Decree of the Inquisition gives them no force different from what they possessed before Pius IX. legislated on censures. Accordingly, if custom had set aside the obligations we are discussing before 1872, there is no room to suppose a revival of them as springing from the Decree of that year. Hence, no matter how much we reprobate the unpriestly practice of *Negotiatio* the penalties of censure and restitution are not incurred in the circumstances we have contemplated, that is, when a long custom of general non-observance can be clearly established. It is for those who know the facts, as they exist in different parts, to speak on the actual condition of things. Of course, the Bishops or Vicars Apostolic, are

the safest referees for our correspondent on the question how the Constitutions of Urban VIII. and Clement IX. have been observed. The late American Council, we notice, whilst vigorously enforcing the general law against *Negotiatio*, does not allude to the special legislation we have been considering. Perhaps the state of things in which these constitutions would apply no longer exists within the great Republic.

P. O'D.

LITURGICAL QUESTIONS.

CARRYING THE CHALICE TO THE ALTAR.

In our last number (November, p. 1035) in reply to a correspondent who asked "what is the authority for turning up on the chalice the front part of the veil, when the chalice is carried to or from the altar," we said that we "were not aware of any authority founded on the Rubrics for the practice."

As this answer has been called in question by more than one subscriber, it will be useful to quote the only passages in the Rubrics which refer to the covering of the chalice with the veil and the carrying of the chalice to or from the altar. They are the following:—

1. "Ponit super illud (*os calicis*) patenam . . . et eam tegit parva palla, tum velo serico; super velo ponit bursam." (*Ritus serv. in celeb. Missae* N. 1.)

2. "Sacerdos . . . accipit manu sinistra calicem ut supra praeparatum, quem portat elevatum ante pectus, bursam manu dextra super calicem tenens." *Ibid.* 2.

3. "Quibus omnibus absolutis . . . sacerdos accipit sinistra calicem, dextram ponens super bursam, ne aliquid cadat." *Ibid.* xii., 6.

Now in these passages of the Rubrics which describe the mode of carrying the covered chalice, there is no allusion to the practice mentioned above, and for this reason we said that it is without foundation in the Rubrics.

We are, however, much obliged to our correspondents

who have pointed out an inaccuracy in saying that Baldeschi does not support the practice. He does in the following passages:—"Prepara poscia il calice, avvertendo . . . che la parte anteriore del velo sia rivoltata sopra la borsa." (*1st*. I., n. 6.) And again: "Salito all'altare porra il calice dalla parte dell' Evangelio, e subito con ambe le mani calera abbasso il velo ripiegato sopra la borsa." (*1st*. III., n. 26.) Martinucci also, though he makes no allusion to the practice when describing the carrying of the chalice, supposes it to be followed, as is shown by the following: "Ascendat ad altare: calicem statuet versus cornu Evangelii, utraque manu demittet calicis velum quod reflexum erit super bursa." *Lib. I., cap. xviii., n. 24.*

One of our correspondents adds that it is the general practice in Rome to fold the anterior part of the veil over the Burse.

In Rome the veil is usually much larger than the one in use in these countries, and covers the chalice almost equally on all sides.

ED. I.E.R.

II.

THE PREFACE TO BE SAID ON THE FEAST OF THE MOST HOLY REDEEMER.

"What Preface should have been said on 23rd ult., the Feast of the Most Holy Redemer? The *Ordo* says *de Nativitate*, the Missal *de Cruce*?"

P.P.

The *Preface de Cruce* as the Missal directs. The direction given in the *Ordo* is an oversight of the compiler, or, more probably, a misprint. If our correspondent takes the trouble of looking at the *Ordo* for 1886, he will find that it agrees with the Missal.

III.

CONSECRATING THE HOST ON THE GLASS LUNETTE.

"Where the glass lunette is still preserved is it lawful to consecrate on the glass?"

When a sufficient reason exists for preserving this form of lunette, we are of opinion, that, if care be taken to keep the lunette on the corporal over the altar stone, there is nothing wrong in consecrating the Host on the glass of it. The lunette should, of course, be opened as well during the consecration as during the offertory.

CORRESPONDENCE.

THE ECONOMIC DOCTRINE OF MR. HENRY GEORGE.

REV. SIR,—It appears to me that Catholic writers have not been so silent regarding Mr. George as your correspondent, “A Priest in England,” in the last number of the *RECORD*, seems to think. Mr. George’s theory that private property in land is unjust, is discussed and refuted in the September number of the *Month*.

Mr. George’s second position, namely, the land of a country belongs to the people of the country, is not fully discussed anywhere. The principles, however, which determine this question are treated of in the *Lyceum* for October and November. It is easy, in the case of any particular country, to decide in whom is vested the ownership of land. For instance, it will, I presume, not be disputed that the five million peasant proprietors in France who have holdings under six acres, are the owners of their plots. In Ireland, since the Land Act of 1881, a great portion of the land is held by a system of joint ownership on the part of landlord and tenant. Another portion, for example, the portion purchased under Lord Ashbourne’s Act, is owned by the occupying farmers.

Those who hold that the land of a country belongs to the people of the country exemplify the saying: “the wish is father to the thought.” They may indeed contend that all land should be held by State ownership; but while striving to bring about such a result they implicitly admit that the ideal is not yet attained, and that the actual owners of land are precisely those persons whom the civil law and the common opinion of mankind recognise as the owners.

ECONOMIST.

 THE CHURCH ABROAD.

THE Italians deal largely in superlatives, and in this they are fairly rivalled by the Germans. Both have far more expansive terms in their addresses than we have. English speaking people are comparatively matter-of-fact in their epistolary language, and it is one of the merits of the classic age of Louis XIV. that, during his reign, the French language was reduced to almost philosophical exactness.

The language of a country is a great factor in its national life, and whatever may be said of the seventeenth century in France, it cannot be denied that it was during that great period that the French language was brought to that high degree of perfection which has

gained for it a world-wide prestige, and which still turns the attention of peoples in all parts of the world, from their early youth, towards the country where it is spoken. The fathers of French literature, Fénelon, Molière, Boileau, made a careful study of the Grecian models and strongly recommended them to their contemporaries.

“Vos exemplaria Græca

Nocturna versate manu, versate diurna.”

Grecian classics are like the edifices of Grecian architecture. In the latter we find very little useless decoration. The necessary parts are simple but well proportioned, and if there are sometimes fluted pillars and elaborate capitals, these ornaments are confined to the parts of the building which are absolutely necessary in its composition. There is nothing there to satisfy any fanciful imagination or romantic caprice. Everything is subservient to the utilitarian principle and must satisfy the stern demands of reason. In Gothic architecture, on the contrary, ranges of slender columns ascend into the skies. The immense vaults terminate in ogival arches that point still higher. Everywhere we have windows, carving, tracery, and a thousand kinds of ornamentation which to an ordinary observer, though they may seem very beautiful in themselves, appear to serve no practical purpose whatever. This romantic profuseness which came to France and Italy through Spain and Provence from Arabia, and found its way by still more devious paths into Germany, crept into the literature as well as the architecture of these countries. In France it was effectually clipped of many of its soaring propensities by Fénelon and Boileau, who submitted it to the ordeal of the Gallic file, and brought it definitely under the sway of reason and common sense. In this task they were powerfully assisted by that educated and highly cultured society which the king fostered around him, and which, whatever may have been its merits and demerits from another standpoint, in this respect, at least, conferred a lasting advantage on the country. In these polished circles philosophy became fashionable. As they reasoned their thoughts so they reasoned their language, and as under the influence of Descartes and Pascal they laid aside many cherished notions, and made a “*tabula rasa*” on which to reconstruct the whole edifice of life and thought, so under the guidance of M. Dacier and the academicians, and the patronage of the great writers they took up this question of language. And as they were anxious that their ways and manners of life should live after them as models for their countrymen, so too they were ambitious that the language spoken by them should be such as future ages might be compelled to sanction. Old expressions that have so much of the vagueness of romance in

the writings of the good Sire de Joinville, of Froissart, and of Cardinal d'Ossat were brought into use again, but their windings were cut short, and their overgrowths paired down to a classic regularity. Each word was consecrated to a definite logical meaning which it has always since retained, and which notwithstanding the nonsensical aberrations of the literature of which Victor Hugo was the ornament, it is likely to retain for centuries yet to come.

This purifying process was not applied, as far as we are aware, in any organised or systematic form either to the Italian or German languages. Both of these were formed by the poets, and they are still to a great extent what the poets made them. German especially remains wholly unsubdued, and enjoys to the full its Gothic freedom and intricacy of design. It is true that Protestantism retarded its natural development for over two hundred years. Until the latter end of the eighteenth century its literature is almost a complete blank, if we are to except the immoral effusions of Hans Sachs, the cobbler of Nuremberg and poet of the Reformation, and a few elegant pages of Martin Opitz, in the commencement of the seventeenth century. In more recent times its great writers have been poets, and the conditions of modern German life, and of the double empire in which it is spoken have not favoured its perfection.

Italian has had a longer literary record than German, yet it has not been so ably managed as the French. The grammarians and academicians who flourished under the Medici and the Visconti, and around the Papal courts of Nicholas V. and Eugene IV. devoted all their attention to Greek and Latin. Poggio, Politian, and Pico della Mirandola wrote almost exclusively in these languages, and about them. In the fifteenth century Lascaris, who was himself a Greek, revived Italian interest in his native tongue, and the Scaligers who could have done much for Italian got lost, like so many others, in the rage for the old classics.

We do not wish in any sense to deny, or to make little account of the beauties of these languages. We should as readily reject the incomparable grandeur of some of the first cathedrals in the world; but we think that for perspicuity and terseness of expression, and for logical clearness not only as regards the highest conceptions of human thought and the most intricate reflections of mind, but also as regards the ordinary and most commonplace duties of the world, French has decidedly the advantage. We believe that amongst other details of the every day business of life, it has the advantage even in this matter of addresses with which we are at present occupied.

We are bound to apologise for this lengthened introduction to so

simple a subject. We shall now give the Italian forms, following the same order as in our last part, and commencing with the envelope address.

A Cardinal would be addressed, *v.g.* :—

A Sua Eminenza Rev^{ma}.

Il Signor Cardinale di Sanfelice,
Arcivescovo di Napoli,
Napoli.

Another form which is now also much used would be, *v.g.* :—

All' E^{mo}. e Rev^{mo}. Signore
Il Signor Cardinale Gaetano Alimonda,
Arcivescovo di Torino,
Torino.

The superlatives are almost always contracted E^{mo}., R^{mo}.; one, however, is sometimes written in full and the other contracted :—

All' Eminentissimo Rev^{mo}. Signore
Il Signor Cardinale G. Simeoni,
Pref. della Sac. Cong. della Propaganda,
Roma.

The patriarch of Venice if he were not a Cardinal would be addressed :—

All' Eccell^{mo}. Rev^{mo}. Signore,
Monsignor Domenico Agostini,
Patriarca di Venezia,
Venezia.

But of course as Mgr. Agostini is a Cardinal he would get the title "Eminentissimo." It may be noticed also that the All' at the commencement is sometimes left out, though it is more generally used. A Papal Nuncio would be addressed as follows, *v.g.* :—

A Sua Eccellenza Rev^{ma}.
Monsignor Giacomo Rotelli,
Nunzio Apostolico in Parigi,
Parigi.

An archbishop may be addressed as follows, *v.g.* :—

All' Eccel^{mo}. Rev^{mo}. Signore
Monsignor Salvator Magnasco,
Arcivescovo di Genova,
Genova.

In former times the titles "Eccellenza" and "Eccellentissimo" were exclusively reserved to Papal Nuncios and delegates, and to the Patriarchs of Venice, but we suppose on Don Abbondio's prin-

ciple they have now been for a considerable time applied to bishops also, and latterly they are freely given to domestic prelates. Hence a bishop is generally addressed also, *v.g.* :—

All' Eccel^{mo}. Rev^{mo}. Signore
Monsignor Geremia Bonomelli,
Vescovo di Cremona,
Cremona.

A prelate of the Pope's household is generally addressed, *v.g.* :—

All' Eccel^{mo}. Rev^{mo}. Signore
Monsignor Luigi Tripepi,
Prelato Domestico di Sua Santità,
Via delle quattro Fontane,
Roma.

The title "Eccellentissimo" is generally given to the prelates who are not bishops, but who hold high offices in the principal Congregations at Rome. This is natural enough, but the practice is spreading to the ordinary "Monsignores," and we think it is better to confine one's self in these cases to the "Ill^{mo}. Rev^{mo}," which is often recognized as quite enough even in the case of bishops.

A Vicar-General would be addressed, *v.g.* :—

All' Illustrissimo Rev^{mo}. Signore,
Monsignor Enrico Giovannini,
Vicario Generale di Bologna,
Bologna.

In Italy almost every Vicar-General is a Monsignore; if he were not we should only have to substitute "Il Signor" for "Monsignor."

A Canon would be written to, *v.g.* :—

All' Ill^{mo}. Rev^{mo}. Signore,
Il Signor Adeodato Orlandi,
Canonico della Cattedrale di Orte, &c.

Of course, the "Signore" need not be doubled, but in Italy it is at present more polite to double it. We could also write, and those who live in the diocese, and who are acquainted with the Canon always do write :—

All' Ill^{mo}. Rev^{mo}. Signore
Il Signor Canonico Orlandi, &c.

But no more than in the case of the French "Chanoine" is there any hard and fast rule. A Parish Priest would be addressed, *v.g.* :—

Al Molto Reverendo Signore,
Il Signor Antonio Bartolini,
Parroco di San Girolamo,
Firenze.

A Curate is addressed :—

A Sua Reverenza,
Il Signor Francesco Gastaldi,
Vicario alla chiesa di San Marco,
Venezia.

Indeed, in both these cases the superlatives "Ill^{mo}." and "Rev^{mo}." are very freely given, and it is better, especially for a foreigner, to sin on the side of generosity than otherwise. We should not forget to say, that in the diocese of Naples and of Palermo, and in a good part of the Peninsula besides, the title "Don" is commonly given to priests. It is not quite the same as the French "Dom," as in "Dom Guéranger," "Dom Couturier." The latter is a contraction of "Domine," which was the title the Cæthusian and Benedictine monks gave one another in the Middle Ages. The Italian "Don" is of Spanish origin, though, perhaps, ultimately it has the same derivation. Hence, we could write for instance :—

All' Ill^{mo}. Rev^{mo}. Signore,
Don Domenico Tinetti,
Direttore dell' *Unità Cattolica*,
Torino.

Doctors of Divinity in Italy get the title of "teologo" theologian. Hence, Don Margotti, the late distinguished editor of the *Unità Cattolica*, was always addressed :—

All' Ill^{mo}. Rev^{mo}. Signore,
Don Giacomo Teologo Margotti.

A Priest of a religious order is generally addressed,

Al Molto Reverendo Padre, or *A Sua Paternità*.

The latter is especially used when writing to people who are in authority in the community. A Clerical Professor in a University College or Lyceum should be addressed, *v.g.* :—

All' Ill^{mo}. Rev^{mo}. Signore
Il Signor Professore Vespignani, &c.

With regard to the Laity, Royal Princes are addressed,

A Sua Altezza Ill^{ma}.

A Minister of State or an Ambassador,

A Sua Eccellenza Ill^{ma}.

A Marquis,

All' Ill^{mo}. e Oss^{mo}. Signore.
Il Signor Marchese Crispolti,
Direttore dell' *Osservatore Romano*,
14, Via del Nazareno,
Roma.

Any ordinary gentleman might be addressed :—

A Sua Signoria Ill^{ma}.

Il Signor N——.

All' Illustrissimo Signore,

Il Signor N——

It would be impossible to go through all the forms. There are so many variations of them that we are obliged to confine ourselves to those in most general use.

Passing to the second kind of address, at the commencement of a letter, the Holy Father is addressed (if His Holiness allows a letter to be delivered to him), "Beatissimo Padre." A Cardinal is addressed, "Eminenza." This form is still in very general use, especially in letters that are more or less private and familiar. Cardinals are often addressed by bishops and persons of high rank, "Eminentissimo Signor Cardinale." People of less importance would require something more elaborate on formal occasions such as :—

Emo. e Rmo. Signor Cardinale,

or,

Eminenza Illustrissima

Emo. e Revmo. Signor Cardinale.

Another form which is now general enough even among higher ecclesiastics is :—

Emo. e Remo. Signor Mio Ossmo.

The Ossmo. here being a contraction not of "Ossequiosissimo" as at the end of a letter, but of "Osservandissimo." Papal Nuncios, Archbishops, and Bishops are addressed: "Eccellenza" or "Eccellenza Illma." The same title, as we have said, is often given to Domestic Prelates, but we believe that with the exception of a few who hold important offices in the government of the Church, such as those who are Secretaries to the Congregations, or Auditors of a "Nunciatura," it would be better to confine oneself to "Monsignor Reverendissimo," or "Illmo. e Revmo. Monsignore," as even Bishops are often addressed in that way. Archbishops are sometimes addressed: "Illmo e Revmo Monsignor Arcivescovo." Bishops and prelates could also be addressed: "Molto Illustre Monsignore," or "Illmo. e Revmo. Signor Mio Ossmo." A Vicar-General would be addressed, if he were not a Monsignore: "Illmo. e Revmo. Sig. Vicario Generale," or "Egregio Signor Vicario Generale." A Canon might be addressed: "Molto Illustre Signor Canonico." A parish priest: "Molto Reverendo Signor Curato." A curate: "Caro Signor Vicario." A professor: "Caro Signor Professore." If they are in any way distinguished in science, literature, etc., the Italians willingly put them in the

superlative. Priests of a religious order are generally addressed: "Molto Reverendo Padre," and spoken of in the course of the letter as "la Sua Paternità." In lay circles a prince is addressed: "Altezza." A minister of State or an ambassador: "Eccellenza." A Grand Duke: "Serenissimo Signor Mio Ossmo." Marquises, Counts, Barons, etc.: "Illustrissimo Signor Marchese," "Illmo Signor Barone," etc. Ordinary lay gentlemen might be addressed: "Pregiatissimo Signore," or "Pregiatissimo Signor N.," or "Illustre ed Onorevole Signore" (if there is any particular reason), also "Stimatissimo Signore," or simply "Caro Signore." An author or distinguished writer or artist is often addressed: "Chiarissimo Signore." As the more familiar forms of address do not concern us we shall now give a few of the forms in which letters are terminated. It is here that the Italians display in full all the richness of courtesy in which they take such natural pride. A letter or memorandum addressed with permission to His Holiness could be terminated:

"Prostrato in terra bacio alla Santità vostra i beatissimi piedi e mentre ardisco esprimere i miei più profondi sensi di venerazione e di filiale affetto oso protestarmi

di Vostra Santità

Umil^{mo}, dev^{mo}, ubbed^{mo}, figlio."

A business letter to a Cardinal might be terminated,

"Chiedendo senza, Eminentissimo Signore, del fastidio che le do, Le bacio umilmente la mano e passo a dirmi col più profondo ossequio

di Vostra Eminenza Rma.

Umil^{mo}, dev^{mo}, servo."

The form which priests generally use is something as follows:—

"Rassegnandole i miei più profondi sensi di venerazione le bacio le lembe della sagra porpora e mentre imploro la sua benedizione paterna mi protesto

Di Vostra Eminenza Eccel^{ma}.

Umil^{mo}, dev^{mo}, ed ubbed^{mo}, servitore."

A simpler form would be

"Aggradisca, Emo e Rev^{mo}, Signore, l'espressione dei più profondi miei rispetti con che le bacio riverente la mano ed ho l'onore di protestarmi.

Di Vostra Eminenza Eccel^{ma}. Ill^{ma}.

Umil^{mo}, dev^{mo}, ubbed^{mo}, servo."

A letter to an archbishop might end as follows:—

"Assicurandole, Ill^{mo}, Rev^{mo}, Mgr. Arcivescovo, della mia

profonda venerazione e baciandole devotamente le mani mi rafferma

Di Vostra Eccellenza Rev^{ma}.

Umil^{mo}, dev^{mo}, oss^{mo}. servo."

If we had to write to a bishop the end might be

"Approfitto poi di questo incontro per confermarle, Ill^{mo}. Rev^{mo}. Monsignore, i sensi dell' ossequio e della profonda riverenza con che le bacio la mano e mi soscrivo

Di Vostra Eccellenza Rev^{ma}.

Umil^{mo}. dev^{mo}. servitore."

The form to a domestic Prelate is much the same as to a Bishop, but if we do not wish to give the title of "Eccellenza" at the end, we should say,

Di Lei, Monsignore Rev^{mo},

Umil^{mo}. Devot^{mo}. Servitore."

A letter to an ordinary Priest might end,

"Colgo, allo stesso tempo, molto reverendo Signore, l'occasione di professarmi coi sensi di piena stima ed ossequio.

di Vostra Reverenza

Umil^{mo}. Dev^{mo}. Servitore."

A distinguished lay gentlemen could be addressed as follows:—

"Aggradisca, Ill^{mo}. Signor Mio Oss^{mo}, l'espressione dei miei sensi di considerazione e d'alta stima onde mi soscrivo

Di Vostra Signoria Ill^{ma}.

Umil^{mo}. Rev^{mo}. Servitore."

We imagine that these general indications will be quite sufficient. The relative position and degrees of intimacy of the correspondents would make these forms vary "ad indefinitum." We could not give all the shades or difference, but most of them might be derived from the examples given.

The Italian superlatives may have their drawbacks, but the sentiments of respect which they convey, and on which they lay so much stress, are not only good but necessary. The Catholic Church, which is a model to civil society, in all that concerns the intercourse and dignity of life, has not only sanctioned those marks of deference and respect, but in one form or another has consecrated them by universal practice. The system which brought them to such a degree of refinement is the antipodes of that which comes to us from another quarter and loudly proclaims that "one man is as good as another." We are glad to think that the creed of which these words are the text, has had little success in Ireland. In the wholesome social sifting which

our country is now undergoing, it is well that a distinction is being made between those who are worthy of respect and those who are not. There is nothing more detrimental to the true spirit of respect, which the Church has always fostered, than that it should be confounded either with a spirit of base hypocrisy and self-interest or of servile fear. Under the new state of things for which we all are longing in this country, we are confident that there shall be no such confusion; but that while the conventionalities of life shall always be observed towards those who differ from us, the old spirit of mutual regard, of loyalty and devotion, for which the Irish people were always remarkable, will be as conspicuous in the future society of Ireland as it is in all the grades of the hierarchy of the Church which is the pattern and the model of respect not only for Ireland but for the whole world.

J. F. HOGAN.

DOCUMENT.

SACRED CONGREGATION OF INDULGENCES.

SUMMARY.

The Members of Institutes or Religious Congregations who have taken either perpetual or temporary vows, cannot become Associates of the Third Order of St. Francis.

DECRETUM.

VERONENSIS DE ADSRIPTIONE SODALITUM INSTITUTORUM RELIGIOSORUM
TERTIO ORDINI SECLARI S. FRANCISCI ASSISIENSIS.

Divina charitate ac animarum zelo succensus S. Franciscus Assisiensis præter primum et secundum Ordinem Minorum Claustrarium, tertium quoque Ordinem instituit pro personis in sæculo degentibus, ut et ipsæ pro sui status conditione ad tramitem consiliorum evangelicorum vitam componerent.

Innumera vero virtutum ac pietatis monumenta, quæ per tot sæcula Christifideles in Tertium Ordinem adsciti reliquerunt, nec non recentius aucta erga seraphicum Patrem devotio causa fuere, cur etiam religiosorum Institutorum sodales eidem Tertio Ordini adscribi expetiverint; et jam inde ab anno 1860 sub die 3 maii Ministro generali totius Ordinis Minorum tributa est facultas recipiendi in Tertium Ordinem franciscalem alumnos supradictorum Institutorum eisdem quoque concessio ex Brevis 7 aprilis 1867 speciali privilegio visitandi Ecclesiam vel Sacellum proprii Instituti, quoties ad

lucranda Indulgentias visitanda foret Ecclesia primi vel secundi Ordinis Seraphici.

Quamvis autem SSmus Dominus Noster Leo Papa XIII edita Constitutione Apostolica "Misericors Dei Filius" die 30 maii 1883 ejusdem Tertiæ Ordinis legem novaverit attamen quum nihil omnino mutatum, immo integrum remanere voluerit quod attinet ad præfati Tertiæ Ordinis, qui sæcularis dicitur, naturam, dubium oriebatur, an alumni religiosorum Institutorum, quibus singulari Dei munere datum est nuncupatis votis ad perfectiorem vitam contendere, amplecti quoque valerent Institutum Tertiæ Ordinis sæcularis S. Francisci.

Quare Emus et Rmus Episcopus Veronensis, instantibus nonnullis e sua diœcesi confessariis, ad omnem in hac re hesitationem e medio tollendam, S. Congregationi Indulgentiarum sequentia dubia dirimenda proposuit :

I. Utrum omnes utriusque sexus qui sunt membra alicujus religiosi Instituti, vel Congregationis, aut a Summo Pontifice aut ab Episcopo approbatæ, in qua vota emittuntur sive perpetua sive ad tempus, possint adscribi in Tertium Ordinem S. Francisci Assisiensis.

Et quatenus *Affirmative*.

II. Quibus conditionibus id illis liceat ?

Emi et Rmi Patres responderunt in generalibus Comitibus apud Vaticanum habitis die 25 junii 1887 :

Ad I^m *Negative*, facto verbo cum Sanctissimo.

Ad II^m Provisum in Primo:

Facta vero de iis omnibus relatione in audientia habita ab infra-scripto Secretario die 16 julii 1887, Sanctissimus Dominus Noster Leo Papa XIII, Patrum Cardinalium responsiones ratas habuit et confirmavit.

Datum Romæ ex Secretaria S. Congregationis Indulgentiis sacræque Reliquiis præpositæ die 16 julii 1887.

FR. THOMAS M. CARD. ZIGLIARA, *Præfectus*.

✠ ALEXANDER, Episcopus Oensis, *Secretarius*.

NOTICES OF BOOKS.

TALES OF EVENTIDE. Office of the *Ave Maria* Notre Dame, Ind.

THE fact that the tales have all appeared in the *Ave Maria* (from which they are now reprinted) is a guarantee of their pure and healthy tone.

Though written for children, many of them are calculated to arrest the attention of readers of advanced age, and some of them in simple language teach deep lessons, lessons that the wisest of us might learn with advantage.

CANONICAL PROCEDURE IN DISCIPLINARY AND CRIMINAL CASES OF CLERICS. A systematic Commentary on the *Instructio S. C. Epp. et Reg.*, 1880. By Rev. Francis Droste; edited by Rev. Sebastian S. Messmer, D.D., Professor of Theology. New York: Benziger, Brothers, 1887.

THE form of Canonical trial appointed in 1884 for deciding Criminal and Disciplinary Ecclesiastical Causes of priests in the United States, was taken, with slight modifications, from the famous Instruction (*L'Ordinario*) sent in 1880 to the Bishops of Italy. In this Instruction the Holy See permits a Summary Procedure, somewhat new in form, to be used in Criminal Cases, where it would be inexpedient to observe all the formalities of an ordinary trial. The summary process thus sanctioned was manifestly suited to the wants and conditions of modern society, and as a consequence seemed destined to receive approval for a wide area in the Church. Foreseeing this, Father Droste, of Paderborn, wrote a short commentary on the Instruction, with a view to explaining in a simple way its practical application. His work, after a time, was translated into English. But for many reasons the book required recasting before one could say of it that it was well adapted as a hand-book on the Criminal Law which is now applied in the States. The task of re-arranging, modifying, enlarging, and adapting has been well discharged by the author of the volume before us. Dr. Messmer looks upon the Instruction of 1880 as establishing a new form of procedure, differing *quoad formam*, from the old summary trial. This, no doubt, is one of his reasons for not speaking of his compilation as a commentary on the Const. "*Cum Magnopere*" of 1884. Where these two documents differ, he is careful to point out the fact in a suitable manner.

To one not familiar with books on Canon Law, it will seem strange to find an author like Dr. Messmer speak of the long process he describes as a Summary Trial. The phrase, of course, only implies that some of the less needed formalities of an ordinary trial are dispensed with. It does not mean that the accused will be treated summarily, as some of the adversaries of the Church have thought or feigned. Dr. Messmer's book contains in a short space much excellent matter on the subject of Ecclesiastical Trials, and will, we are sure, be eagerly scanned for the new procedure.

P. O'D.

274.1505

I 68

ser. 3

V ~~VIII~~

UNIVERSITY OF FLORIDA



3 1262 09628 1836